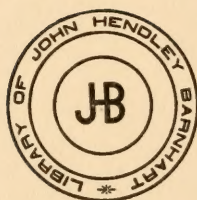


58.714.121

B631





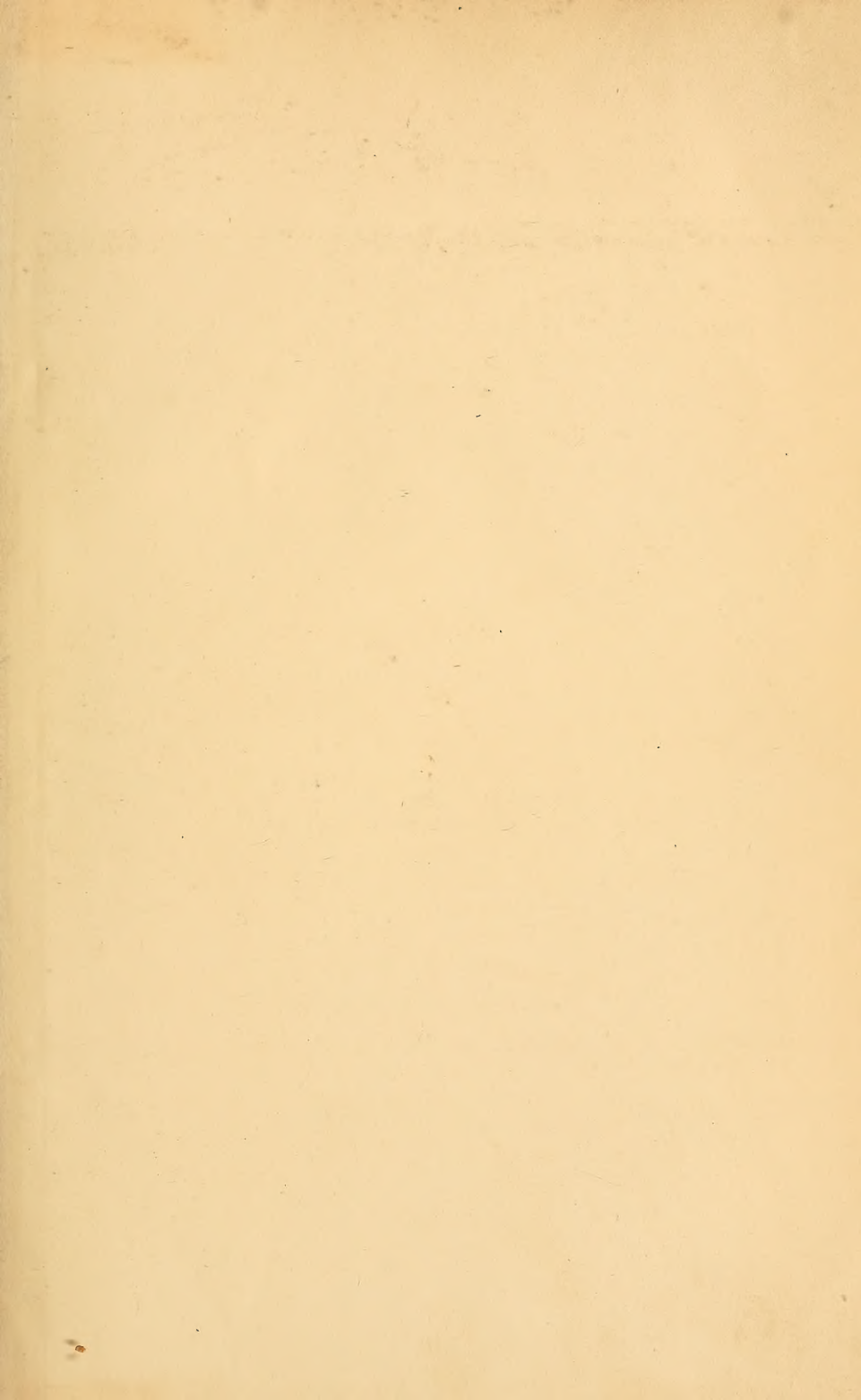


MAP  
ENGRAVED AND PRINTED FOR  
**BOLTON'S**  
HISTORY OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY,  
N. Y.  
By J. B. BEERS & CO., N. Y.  
1881.









Pedigrees in vol. 1:

98. Van Cortlandt.

239. Morgan.

247. Lawrence.

248. Pinckney.

254. Ward.

498. Disbrow.

514. Philipse.

677. Allaire.

706. Dainby.

716. Sands.



THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
THE SEVERAL TOWNS, MANORS, AND PATENTS  
OF THE  
COUNTY OF WESTCHESTER,  
FROM  
ITS FIRST SETTLEMENT  
TO THE  
PRESENT TIME.

*Carefully Revised by its Author.*

---

BY THE LATE REV. ROBERT BOLTON,  
AUTHOR OF THE "GUIDE TO NEW ROCHELLE," AND  
A MEMBER OF N. Y. HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

EDITED BY THE REV. C. W. BOLTON, NEW ROCHELLE.

---

VOLUME 1.

*"It is the privilege of History to impart the experience of age, without its infirmities; to bring back things long obscured by time, or sinking into oblivion; and enable us to form some reasonable conjectures of what may happen to posterity"*—POULSON'S HIST. OF HOLDERNESS.

---

NEW YORK:  
CHAS. F. ROPER, 27 ROSE STREET.  
1881.

W5  
B64  
1881  
V.1

---

Copyright by C. W. BOLTON, 1881.

---

*Cadmus Press,*  
27-29 ROSE STREET, NEW YORK.



## THE PREFACE.

---

**I**N presenting to the public "The Revised History of Westchester County," left nearly completed by the Author, the late Rev. Robert Bolton, I assume no responsibility for its contents, nor any credit in its authorship. The Author published The First History in 1848, after gathering all the information then in his power. Soon after its appearance a large amount of extra information was placed at his disposal, and many corrections kindly sent to him. He determined at once to commence a revision of it, and had been so doing up to the day of his death, 29 years in all. He had re-written more than two-thirds of the original book, adding thereto many very valuable old documents and bringing the work down to that time. All that I have had to do was to finish up little unimportant points, and conduct it through the press.

If I were to assert that there were no errors I should be presenting to the public what no other man has ever done, *a perfect book*. There must be errors, but they are unimportant. No serious error, I believe, will be found.

There never was a more careful compiler of History than my late brother. He always asked for proof, and then well weighed it. His book will be his monument; he wore himself out in its completion. And I regret that he does not live to give the whys and the wherefores that thousands of its readers will propound.

The Rev. Robert Bolton, the Author of this History was born in Bath in the county of Somerset England, on the 17th of April 1814, and was baptized by his grand-father, the Rev. William Jay, in Argyle chapel, Bath. (His father, the Rev. Robert Bolton, was born in Savannah, in the State of Georgia, but married in England and resided there for several years.) He was the oldest of thirteen children, and came to this country with his father on his return in 1836. He first studied medicine in

England, but it did not suit his tastes. Afterwards he became a farmer, and resided at Bronxville, East Chester ; moved to New Rochelle, then to Tarrytown where he took charge of the Irving Institute, (now occupied by Prof. Jackson), from there he removed to Bedford, having charge of the Institute in that town for many years, and finally removed to Lewisboro.

He was ordained deacon in the Protestant Episcopal Church in October, 1868, and priest in June 1869. He was settled over the parish of St. Johns, Lewisboro, his only charge ; and died October 11, 1877, at Pelham Priory and was buried in the family vault under Christ church, Pelham.

He became a walking, living history of the county ; and we deeply regret that so much has perished in his death, for he had other plans, and other purposes which he intended to present to the public.

I acknowledge, with pleasure and gratitude, the valuable assistance I have received from the Rev. Chas. Baird, D. D., historian of Rye ; Edward F. Delancey, Esq. ; Geo. H. Pell, Esq. ; Fordam Morris, Esq. ; Josiah Mitchel, Esq., and the Rev. O. R. Willis, of White Plains, who has compiled the Flora Table for this work. And I also take this opportunity of returning thanks to all those kind friends who have in any way assisted my late brother in the present Revised Edition.







## INTRODUCTION.

---

AT the period of the Dutch discovery the *Mahicanni* resided on the east shore of the Hudson River. "These were the *Mankikani* and *Mahikans* of De Leat, the *Mahiccanders*, *Mohickanders* and *Nahikanders* of the Dutch, the *Manhikanss* *Mahikans*, or *Mohegans*, according to Professor Ebeling, and the *Mohegans* or *Muhhekanew*, (the original name of Mohegans.) According to the English the *Mohiccans*, *Mahiccon*, and lastly *Mahiccans*, were all one people; originally a branch of the Delaware nation. The Mahiccans and Delawares both say they were once one people."<sup>a</sup> "The best information (says Mr. Heckewelder) which I could procure of the extent of the country the *Mahicanin* inhabited, was from an aged and intelligent man of this nation, whose grandfather had been a noted chief. His report was as follows, to wit: 'When I was a boy, my grandfather used to speak much of old times: how it had been before the white people came into this country, (that is the State of New York, in which the relator was born,) and what changes took place since, from time to time. The western bounding line of the *Mahicanni* was the river *Mahicamittuck*, which the white people now call the 'North River.' Our towns and settlements extended on the east side of this river from *Thuphane* or Tuphanne, (a Delaware word for *cold stream*, from which the whites have derived the name Tappan,) to the extent of tide water up this river; here was the uppermost town. From thence our towns were scattered throughout the country on the smaller rivers and creeks. Our nearest neighbors on the east were the *Wampano*.'"<sup>b</sup>

"The country between the banks of the Connecticut River<sup>c</sup> and the Hudson, (says Mr. Bancroft,) was possessed by independent villages of the *Mohegans*, kindred with the *Manhattans*; whose few smokes once arose amidst the forests on New York Island."<sup>d</sup> Mr. Schoolcraft informs us that "The *Mohegans* and the *Minci* were two tribes, of Algonquin

---

<sup>a</sup> Moulton's Hist. of New York, 226.

<sup>b</sup> Moulton's Hist. of New York, part i. 227.

<sup>c</sup> *Connecticoota*, meaning Long River, was the Indian name, says Judge Benson.

<sup>d</sup> Bancroft's Hist. U. S. A., vol. iii. 239.

lineage, who inhabited the valley of the Hudson between New York and Albany." *Mohegan*, (continues the same authority,) is a word, the meaning of which is not explained by the early writers; but if we may trust the deductions of philology, it needs create little uncertainty. In the *Mohegan*, as spoken at the present time by their lineal descendants, the *Stockbridges of Wisconsin*, *Maitshew*, is the name of the *common wolf*. It is called, in cognate dialects of the Algonquin, *Myegan* by the Kenistenos, and *Myengun* by the Chippewas, Ottâwas and Pottowattomies. In the old Algonquin, as given by La Hontan, it is Mahingan, and we perceive that this was the term employed by the early French writers for the Mohegans. In the language of the Indian priests or medais, a mystical use of the names of various objects in the animated creation is made, in order to clothe their arts with the degree of respect and authority, which ignorant nations are ready to pay to whatsoever they do not fully understand; in other words, that which is mysterious. Thus, in the medicin songs of the Objibwas, a wolf is called, not Myeengun, the popular term, but Mohhwag. It is believed the priests of the ancient Mohegans made similar distortion of their words, for similiar ends, and that the terms Moh hi Kan and Moh hin gan, used by the early French missionary writers for this tribe, furnish the origin of the term. The term itself, it is to be understood, by which the tribe is known to us, is not the true Indian; but has been shorn of a part of its sound, by the early Dutch, French and English writers. The modern tribe of the *Mohegans*, to whom allusion has been made, called themselves MUHHEKANIEW. This is, manifestly, a compound declarative phrase, and not a simple nominative, and is equivalent to the phrase, "I am a Mohegan." It is in accordance both with religious custom, and the usage of the Indian priesthood, to infer a unity of superstitious practices in nearly affiliated tribes. In this manner the word "Mohegan" was used to denote, not a common wolf, but the *caries lupus*, under the supposed influence of medical or necromantic arts. In other words, Mohegan was a phrase to denote an enchanted wolf, or a wolf of supernatural power. This was the badge or arms of the tribe, rather than the name of the tribe itself. And this, also, it may be inferred, constituted originally, the point of distinction between them and the Minci, or WOLF TRIBE PROPER. The affinities of the *Mohegans* with the *Minci*, or *Moncess*, on the west banks of the Hudson, and through them with the *Delawares*, are apparent in the language, and were well recognized at the era of the settlement."<sup>a</sup>

The universal name the *Monseys* have for New York, (says Mr. Heckewelder) is LAAPHAWACHKING, or the *place of stringing beads*.

<sup>a</sup> Proceedings of N. Y. His. Soc. 1844, 57.



The Mohegans were again sub-divided into numerous bands, each known by a distinctive name. Among these, inhabiting the County, may be enumerated the SIWANOYS, who occupied the northern shores of the Sound "from Norwalk to 24 miles to the neighborhood of Hellgate." How far they claimed jurisdiction inland is uncertain.

The MANHATTANS had their principal settlement on New York island, and from thence north to the bounds of Yonkers, nearly opposite Tappan. The WECKQUASKECKS possessed the country "lying between two rivulets called *Sint Sincks* and *Armonck*, lying between the East and North rivers."

The SINT SINCKS occupied the present town of *Ossin-ing*, and its immediate vicinity.

The KITCHAWONKS claimed the lands bordering the *Kitchawan* or *Croton River*, and as far north as St. Anthony's Nose in the Highlands.

The PACHAMI and WAPPINGERS possessed the Highlands.

The TANKITEKES, "resided in the rear of Sing Sing."<sup>a</sup>

The principal Indian villages appear to have been as follows:

Nappeckamak,	Kestaubaiuck,
Weecquæsguack,	Kitchawan,
Alipconck,	Sackhoes,
Sinck Sinck,	Kekisconck,
Nanichiestawck,	Betuck-quapock,
Momoronuck,	Pasquashic.
Noapaim.	

"The three prominent Indian names for the Hudson River (says Mr. Schoolcraft) are 'The Mohegan,<sup>b</sup> Chatémuc,<sup>c</sup> and the Cahotatea."

Like their neighbors, the Indians of Westchester were in subjection to the Iroquois, and acknowledged it by the payment of an annual tribute.

#### A GENERAL DESCRIPTION OF THE COUNTY.

In giving a history of the County, it appears proper to begin, with a recital of the act framing the same, entitled "An Act to divide the Province of New York and dependencies into Shires and Counties, etc."

"Having taken into consideration the necessity of dividing the Province into respective Countys, for the better governing and settling

<sup>a</sup> O'Callahan's Hist. of N. N., 210.

<sup>b</sup> Mohegan River.

<sup>c</sup> "Shaita, in the cognate dialect of the Objibwa, means a pelican." "Ue is the ordinary inflection for locality."—Mr. Schoolcraft's Paper, Proceedings of N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1844. "The great white pelican (*P. trachyrhynchus*) was formerly numerous on the Hudson and other rivers and lakes of this State. At the present day it has entirely disappeared, and I do not know of its existence even as an accidental visitor."—Nat. Hist. of N. Y. by James De Kay.

courts in the same, be it enacted by the Governor, Council and the Representatives, and by the authority of the same, that the said Province be divided into twelve Countys as followeth: The *County of Westchester*, to conteyne West and Eastchester, Bronx-land Fordham, Anne Hook's Neck, Richbells, Miniford's Islands, and all the land on the maine to the eastward of Manhattan's Island as farre as the government extends, and the Yonkers' land, and northward along Hudson's River as farre as the Highland."

"This bill having been three times read before the governor and Council, is assented to the first of November, 1683."<sup>a</sup>

Westchester County was represented in the first Legislative Assembly of the Colony, which met at New York on the 9th of April, 1691;<sup>b</sup> and it has constituted one County to this time, having been organized as such by the General Acts of 1788 and 1801. It is situated on the east side of the Hudson, immediately north of New York County; bounded north by Putnam and Dutchess Counties; east by the State of Connecticut; southerly by Long Island Sound and East River; west by Haarlem River and the Hudson River, or by New York County, the State of New Jersey, and the County of Rockland in this State. The area may be 480 square miles—307,200 acres—situated between 40° 47', and 41° 22' north latitude, 103' east, and 32' east longitude from New York.

The County is thus described by William Smith, the historian, of New York, in 1756.

"Westchester County is large, and includes all the land beyond the Island of *Manhattans* along the *Sound* to the *Connecticut* line, which is its eastern boundary. It extends northward to the middle of the Highlands, and westward to *Hudson's* River. A great part of this county is contained in the manors of *Philipsburgh*, Pelham, Fordham, and Courtlandt, the last of which has the privilege of sending a representative to the General Assembly. The county is tolerably settled. The lands are in general rough but fertile, and therefore the farmers run principally on grazing. It has several towns, *Eastchester*, *Westchester*, *New Rochelle*, *Rye*, *Bedford*, and *North Castle*. The inhabitants, are either *English*, or *Dutch* Presbyterians, Episcopalians, Quakers, and *French* Protestants. The former are the most numerous. The two Episcopal missionaries are settled at *Rye* and *Eastchester*, and receive each £60 annually taxed upon the county. The town of *Westchester* is an incorporated borough, enjoying a mayor's court and the right of being represented by a member in Assembly."

<sup>a</sup> Provincial Laws of N. Y., County Clerk's Office, Queen's Co., L. I. The above act was confirmed on the 1st of October, 1691.

<sup>b</sup> In the person of John Pell, Esq. On the 20th of Oct., 1685, James II. appointed John Pell, John Palmer, William Richardson, Joseph Horton, sen., and Joseph Theale, Justices of the Peace in the County of Westchester.

SCHEDULE OF THE NUMBER OF THE INHABITANTS IN THE COUNTY OF WESTCHESTER FOR 1790,  
TAKEN FROM THE TOWN RECORDS OF BEDFORD.<sup>a</sup>

No. of Heads of Families.	Townships.	Free White Males of 16 years and upwards.	Free White Males under 16 years.	Free White Females, including Heads of Families.	All other Free Per- sons.	Slaves.	Aggregate Total.	More Fe- males than Males.	More Males than Fe- males.
13	Morrisina.....	43	17	41	2	30	133	.....	19
170	Westchester.....	279	212	421	49	242	1,203	.....	70
102	Eastchester.....	174	160	320	11	75	740	.....	14
31	Pelam (or Pelham).....	45	31	84	1	38	199	8	.....
152	Yonkers.....	265	220	458	12	170	1,125	.....	27
213	Greenburgh.....	330	323	616	9	122	1,400	.....	37
109	New Rochelle.....	170	130	277	26	89	692	.....	23
33	Scarsdale.....	73	53	113	14	28	281	.....	13
65	Manaroneck.....	108	98	171	18	57	452	.....	35
162	Rye.....	258	154	427	14	123	986	5	.....
192	Harrison.....	242	230	453	35	54	1,004	.....	9
75	White Plains.....	130	100	218	8	49	505	.....	12
303	Mt. Pleasant.....	501	422	909	8	84	1,921	..	14
400	North Castle.....	608	593	1,205	43	29	2,478	4	.....
420	Bedford.....	618	622	1,182	10	38	2,470	.....	58
186	Poundridge.....	247	270	538	7	.....	1,062	21	.....
260	Salem (now Lewisboro).....	366	326	7-8	14	19	1,453	36	.....
180	N. Salem.....	266	239	509	15	28	1,058	4	.....
189	Stephen (now Somers).....	343	297	612	7	38	1,297	.....	28
262	York (now Yorktown).....	389	381	771	28	40	1,609	1	.....
326	Courtlandt.....	484	452	905	25	66	1,932	.....	31
		5,939	5,330	10,958	357	1,419	24,003	79	390

The foregoing is a schedule of the numbers of the heads of families and inhabitants of the County of Westchester by the respective towns as taken by the Deputy Marshall in pursuance of an ordinance of Congress taken the current years 1790 and 1791.  
<sup>a</sup> Bedford record No. 4.



## THE POPULATION OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY.

TOWN.	1846	1875	1880
Bedford.....	2,725	3,744	3,732
Cortlandt.....	6,738	11,928	12,664
Greenburgh.....	3,205	10,928	9,862
Eastchester.....	1,369	8,294	8,737
Harrison.....	1,039	1,431	1,494
Lewisboro.....	1,511	1,550	1,614
Mount Pleasant.....	2,962	5,411	5,450
Mamaroneck.....	780	1,425	1,863
New Castle.....	1,495	2,242	2,297
New Rochelle.....	1,977	4,678	5,277
North Castle.....	2,010	1,818	1,818
North Salem.....	1,228	1,583	1,694
Ossin- <i>ing</i> <sup>a</sup> .....	3,312	8,533	8,769
Pelham.....	486	1,538	2,540
Poundridge.....	1,427	1,000	1,044
Rye.....	2,180	5,369	6,577
Scarsdale.....	341	529	614
Somers <sup>b</sup> .....	1,761	1,600	1,638
Westchester)			
West Farms) <sup>c</sup> .....	5,052	6,560	6,789
White Plains.....	1,155	2,757	3,168
Yorktown.....	2,278	2,650	2,481
Yonkers.....	2,517	17,232	18,924
		103,564	109,036

Present population, 109,050.

"The County of Westchester comprises a very important section of this State; washed on the west by the Hudson, on the south by the East River and Long Island Sound, it enjoys very superior advantages for trade and commerce, with a fine soil for agriculture, and a charming diversity of surface and of elegant situation; while its contiguity to the great commercial metropolis of North America, completes a proud superiority of geographical position. The north-west corner is considerably broken by the south-east border of the Highlands, of a mountain character; and a range of hills of moderate height extends from York Island toward the north-east extremity, on which are situated the heights and hills much known in the Revolutionary war, particularly in the year 1776. Besides Harlem, Hudson and East Rivers, forming the boundaries, there are several small streams that afford many mill seats.

<sup>a</sup> Name changed to Ossin-*ing* in 1846. See Sess. Laws, chap. 30, sec. 5.

<sup>b</sup> Part of Somers annexed to Newcastle. See Laws of 1846, chap. 249.

<sup>c</sup> West Farms erected from part of Westchester. See Sess. Laws, 184, chap. 279.

Peekskill Creek and Croton River, which rise in Dutchess and Putnam counties, run south westward across the north western part of Westchester County to the Hudson. Saw Mill River runs from Mount Pleasant to the Hudson at Yonkers; and Bronx River, the largest, Hutchinson's and Mamaroneck Rivers run south into the East River. Byram River runs from Westchester, principally in Connecticut, and forms two miles of the State boundary from its mouth in East River, which receives some other small streams from the south-east angle of Westchester County, direct across the south-west angle of Connecticut."

"The soil of this County admits of no general character, except that its tillage is productive to the agriculturist. The style of its agriculture is in the first order, if we except Dutchess. The lower part has considerable of ornamental farming and gardening, where are the seats of men of opulence, cultivated with much taste." The manufactures are numerous. White Plains and Bedford are the half shire towns. "Tarrytown, Sing Sing, and some others, are charming positions on the Hudson, where are small villages and landings with considerable trade. Tappan Bay, a wide place in the Hudson, is here three miles in width, where crowds of shipping are constantly seen passing in opposite directions, exhibiting a most elegant display of commercial activity."<sup>a</sup>

"The County of Westchester is based on primitive rock called hypogene, or granite gneiss, long ridges of which intersect the county, with here and there small veins of iron ore and quartz. Large numbers of granite boulders are found here, both inland and on the coast; also some fine quarries of white marble, and two silver and gold mines at Sing Sing and Peekskill." According to the late geographical survey the principal minerals are, white marble, iron ore, galena, sulphate of barytes, copper, iron and zinc, oxide of manganese, green carbonate of copper, serpentine, calcareous spar, phosphate of lime, hydrate and carbonate of magnesia, quartz, drusy, calcedony, agate, jasper, hyroxene, hornblende, asbestos, actynolite, homolite, hyderous anthophyllite, felspar, stilbite, garnet, epicote, chenite, tourmaline, sphene, vandquelemite, magnetic pyrites, chromate of iron, red ochre and red chalk.

The natural growth of wood is very extensive, especially upon the higher lands. Among the principal varieties may be enumerated the White Oak, (*Quercus Alba*,) Red Oak, (*Quercus Rubra*,) Pin Oak, (*Quercus Paluster*,) and the Black Oak, (*Quercetron*;) the White Elm, (*Ulmus Americana*;) Red or Slippery Elm, (*Ulmus Fulva*,) and the

<sup>a</sup> See Spafford's *Gazetteer* of N. Y.



Witch Elm, (*Ulmus Montana*;) the Plane or Buttonwood, (*Platanus*;) the Ash, (*Traxinus*;) Basswood, Lime or Linden, (*Zelia*;) Beach, (*Tagus*;) Birch, (*Betula*;) Maple, (*Acer*;) Locust, (*Robinia*;) Chestnut, (*Castanea*;) Walnut, (*Juglans*;) Hickory, (*Carya*;) the Whitewood or Tulip, (*Liriodendron*;) Dogwood, (*Cornus*;) Hemlock or Spruce, and the Red Cedar, (*Juniperus*.)

"This County suffered severely during the Revolution. The whole southern part was marked by the marches, works of defence, or skirmishes and battles of hostile armies; and, indeed, the active operations of the war in 1776 were principally confined to this region, and in the Autumn to this County—and the two armies were in full force, constantly on the alert, and under the eyes of their respective Commanders-in-Chief. And this, too, was probably the most interesting period of the war, though attended with no exploits of very brilliant fame. The British with a numerous army, and a powerful marine, were in possession of New York, while Washington, with an inferior and badly supplied army, dispirited by the affair of Long Island, was merely manœuvring to keep them in check. The battle of White Plains, October 28th, will long be remembered, as will the dismal prospect of that year, when the Patriot Fathers of America had still the courage to declare Independence, and assert the rights of nature and of nations.<sup>a</sup> But though the morning sun of Declared Independence arose thus in a cloud,—while yet it was morning, Princeton, Trenton and the plains of Saratoga enjoyed a broad refulgence, diffusing new spirits over the nation. And it were well worthy the attention of every American youth to study the history of that war, and thus learn the price paid for Independence; the better to know how to appreciate its value. Nor ought we to forget that the privileges so dearly purchased, can only be preserved to our posterity, by that zeal for our country which governed the conduct of our fathers, now descended to the grave."<sup>b</sup>

"The County of Westchester," says Mr. N. P. Willis, "has been made the scene of, perhaps, the best historical novel of our country, and, more than any other part of the United States, suffered from the evils of war. The character and depredations of the "*Cow-boys*" and "*Skimmers*" whose fields of action were on the skirts of this "NEUTRAL GROUND," are familiar to all who have read "the Essay" of Mr. Cooper. A distinguished clergyman<sup>c</sup> gives the following very graphic picture of Westchester County in those days:—

<sup>a</sup> July 4th, 1776.

<sup>b</sup> Spafford's *Gazetteer* of N. Y. Upon the evacuation of New York by the British forces, Nov. 25, 1783, the Governor of the State and Commander-in-chief were escorted by a body of *Westchester Light horse, commanded by Captain Delavan*."—*Editor*.

<sup>c</sup> Dr. Timothy Dwight's *Travels*, 3d vol.

"In the autumn of 1777, I resided for some time in this County. The lines of the British were then in the neighborhood of King's Bridge, and those of the Americans at Byram River. The unhappy inhabitants were, therefore, exposed to the depredations of both. Often they were actually plundered, and always were liable to this calamity. They feared every body whom they saw, and loved nobody. It was a curious fact to a philosopher, and a melancholy one to hear their conversation. To every question they gave such an answer as would please the inquirer; or, if they despaired of pleasing, such a one as would not provoke him. Fear was, apparently, the only passion by which they were animated. The power of volition seemed to have deserted them. They were not civil, but obsequious; not obliging, but subservient. They yielded with a kind of apathy, and very quietly, what you asked, and what they supposed it impossible for them to retain. If you treated them kindly, they received it coldly; not as a kindness, but as a compensation for injuries done them by others. When you spoke to them, they answered you without either good or ill nature, and without any appearance of reluctance or hesitation; but they subjoined neither questions nor remarks of their own; proving to your full conviction, that they felt no interest either in the conversation or yourself. Both their countenances and motions had lost every trace of animation and feeling. The features were smoothed, not into serenity, but apathy; and, instead of being settled in the attitude of quiet thinking, strongly indicated that all thought beyond what was merely instinctive, had fled their minds for ever.

"Their houses, in the meantime, were in a great measure scenes of desolation. Their furniture was extensively plundered, or broken to pieces. The walls, floors, and windows were injured both by violence and decay; and were not repaired, because they had not the means to repair them, and because they were exposed to the repetition of the same injuries. Their cattle were gone. Their enclosures were burnt; where they were capable of becoming fuel; and in many cases thrown down, where they were not. Their fields were covered with a rank growth of weeds and wild grass.

"Amid all this appearance of desolation, nothing struck my eye more forcibly than the sight of the high road. Where I had heretofore seen a continual succession of horses and carriages, life and bustle—lending a sprightliness to all the environing objects—not a single, solitary traveller was seen, from week to week, or from month to month. The world was motionless and silent, except when one of these unhappy people ventured upon a rare and lonely excursion to the house of a neighbor no less unhappy; or a scouting party, traversing the country in quest of enemies, alarmed the inhabitants with expectations of new injuries and sufferings. The very tracks of the carriages were grown over, and obliterated; and where they were discernible, resembled the faint impressions of chariot wheels said to be left on the pavements of Herculaneum. The grass was of full height for the scythe; and strongly realized to my own mind, for the first time, the proper import of that picturesque declaration in the Song of Deborah: 'In the days of Shamgar, the son of Anath, in the days of Jael, the highways were unoccupied, and the travellers walked through by-paths. The inhabitants of the villages ceased; they ceased in Israel.'"<sup>a</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> American Scenery, by Bartlett and Willis.



The subjoined account of the County, in 1780. is taken from Dr. Thacher's Military Journal:—

“The country which we lately traversed, about fifty miles in extent, is called “NEUTRAL GROUND;” but the miserable inhabitants who remain are not much favored with the privileges which their neutrality ought to secure to them. They are continually exposed to the ravages and insults of an infamous banditti, composed of royal refugees and tories. The country is rich and fertile; and the farms appear to have been advantageously cultivated, but it now has the marks of a country in ruins. A large proportion of the proprietors having abandoned their farms, the few that remain find it impossible to harvest the produce. The meadows and pastures are covered with grass of a summer's growth, and thousands of bushels of apples and other fruit are rotting in the orchards. We brought off about two hundred loads of hay and grain; and ten times the amount might have been procured, had teams enough been provided. Those of the inhabitants of the neutral ground who were tories, have joined their friends in New York; and the Whigs have retired into the interior of our country. Some of each side have taken up arms, and become the most cruel and deadly foes. There are within the British lines banditti, consisting of lawless villains, who devote themselves to the most cruel pillage and robbery among the defenceless inhabitants between the lines; many of them they carry off to New York, after plundering their houses and farms. These shameless marauders have received the names of *Cowboys* and *Skinners*. By their atrocious deeds, they have become a scourge and terror to the people. Numerous instances have been related of these miscreants subjecting defenceless persons to cruel tortures, to compel them to deliver up their money, or to disclose the places where it has been secreted. It is not uncommon for them to hang a man by the neck till apparently dead, then restore him, and repeat the experiment, and leave him for dead. One of these unhappy persons informed me, that when suffering this cruel treatment, the last sensation which he recollects, when suspended by the neck, was a flashing heat over him like that which would be occasioned by boiling water poured over his body; he was, however, cut down; and how long he remained on the ground insensible, he knows not. A peaceable, unresisting Quaker, of considerable respectability, by the name of Quincy, was visited by several of these vile ruffians: they first demanded his money, and after it was delivered they suspected he had more concealed, and inflicted on him the most savage cruelties in order to extort it from him. They began with what they call scorching, covering his naked body with hot ashes, and repeating the application till the skin was covered with blisters; after this they resorted to the halter, and hung the poor man on a tree by his neck, then took him down, and repeated it a second, and even a third time, and finally left him almost lifeless.”<sup>a</sup>

Westchester County under the late constitution formed the Second Senatorial, and Assembly Districts; under the present, she constitutes the Seventh Senatorial with Rockland, and is divided into two Assembly Districts.

---

<sup>a</sup> Thacher's Military Journal, 232.

## JUDGES OF THE COUNTY.

John Pell . . . . .	1688	William Jay . . . . .	1820
Caleb Heathcote . . . . .	1700	Isaac Requa . . . . .	1820
William Willett . . . . .	1721	Jonathan Ferris . . . . .	1820
Frederick Phillips . . . . .	1730	William Miller . . . . .	1820
Isaac Honeywell . . . . .	1734	Edward Kemeys . . . . .	1821
John Thomas . . . . .	1734	St. John Constant . . . . .	1822
Lewis Morris, Jun. . . . .	1738	Ezra Lockwood . . . . .	1822
Samuel Purdy . . . . .	1744	Henry White . . . . .	1823
William Leggett . . . . .	1752	John Townsend . . . . .	1825
Nathaniel Underhill . . . . .	1755	Nehemiah Brown, Jun. . . . .	1831
John Thomas . . . . .	1765	Aaron Vark . . . . .	1833
Robert Graham . . . . .	1778	Joseph A. Constant . . . . .	1838
Stephen Ward . . . . .	1778	George Case . . . . .	1843
Gilbert Drake . . . . .	1778	Albert Lockwood . . . . .	1845
Ebenezer Lockwood . . . . .	1778	Robert J. Hart . . . . .	1846
Jonathan G. Tompkins . . . . .	1778	John W. Mills . . . . .	1851
Ebenezer Purdy . . . . .	1797	Albert Lockwood . . . . .	1857
John Waters . . . . .	1802	Robert Cochran . . . . .	1867
Caleb Tompkins . . . . .	1808	Silas D. Glifford <sup>1</sup> . . . . .	1871

## CLERKS OF THE COUNTY.

Edward Collier . . . . .	1688 to 1691
Joseph Lee . . . . .	1691 to 1698
Benjamin Collier . . . . .	1698 to 1707
John Clapp . . . . .	1707 to 1711
Daniel Clark . . . . .	1711 to 1722
William Forster . . . . .	1722 to 1732
Benjamin Nicoll . . . . .	1745 to 1746
John Bartow . . . . .	1760 to 1764
Richard Hatfield . . . . .	1777 to 1800
Thomas Ferris . . . . .	1807 to 1815
Elijah Crawford . . . . .	1815 to 1820
William Requa . . . . .	1820 to 1821
Nehemiah S. Bates . . . . .	1821 to 1829
Nathaniel Bayles . . . . .	1829 to 1833
John H. Smith . . . . .	1833 to 1837
Chauncey Smith . . . . .	1837 to 1839
Charles A. Purdy . . . . .	1839 to 1843
Munson I. Lockwood . . . . .	1843 to 1849
Robert R. Oakley . . . . .	1849
John J. Jenkins . . . . .	1855
Hiram P. Rowel <sup>2</sup> . . . . .	1855
Chauncey M. Depew <sup>3</sup> . . . . .	1867

<sup>1</sup> Re-elected.<sup>2</sup> Re-elected each subsequent term.<sup>3</sup> Appointed, *vice* Rowel deceased.



William W. Pierson <sup>1</sup>	1867
J. Malcone Smith	1857
John M. Rowel	1875

## SHERIFFS OF THE COUNTY.

Thomas Wheeler, under the Dutch,	1654 to 1664
Resolve Waldron, High Sheriff of the North Riding,	1664 to 1670
Robert Coe . . . . . ditto " "	1670 to 1671
John Manning . . . . . ditto " "	1671 to 1672
Benjamin Collier, High Sheriff of Westchester County,	1688 to 1692
Rodger Barton . . . . . October 14,	1702 to 1706
Nicholas Cooper . . . . .	1733 to 1837
Isaac Willet . . . . .	1737 to 1766
Lewis Graham . . . . .	1766 to 1768
John de Lancey . . . . .	1768 to 1769
James de Lancey, Jun., last of the Colonnial,	1769 to 1775
John Thomas . . . . . January 6,	1778 to 1780
Jesse Hunt . . . . .	1780 to 1781
John Thomas . . . . .	1781 to 1785
Jesse Hunt . . . . .	1785 to 1788
Thomas Thomas . . . . .	1788 to 1792
Samuel Haight . . . . .	1792 to 1796
Elias Newman . . . . .	1796 to 1799
William Barker . . . . .	1799 to 1806
Daniel Delavan . . . . .	1806 to 1807
St. John Constant . . . . .	1807 to 1810
Elijah Ward . . . . .	1810 to 1811
St. John Constant . . . . .	1811 to 1814
Lyman Cook . . . . .	1814 to 1815
Zabud June . . . . .	1815 to 1818
Lyman Cook . . . . .	1818 to 1821
Ward B. Howard . . . . .	1821 to 1823
John Townsend . . . . .	1823 to 1826
Alan McDonald . . . . .	1826 to 1829
David D. Webbers . . . . .	1829 to 1832
Aaron Brown . . . . .	1832 to 1835
Joseph H. Anderson . . . . .	1835 to 1838
Amos T. Hatfield . . . . .	1838 to 1841
Joseph Lyon . . . . .	1841 to 1844
William H. Briggs . . . . .	1844 to 1847
James M. Bates . . . . .	1847
Benjamin D. Miller . . . . .	1849
Alsop H. Lockwood . . . . .	1852
Daniel H. Little . . . . .	1855
William Bleakley, Jr. . . . .	1858
Leemon B. Tripp . . . . .	1861

<sup>1</sup> Appointed *vice* Depew, failed to qualify.

Darius Lyon . . . . .	1864
John Bussing . . . . .	1867
Robt. F. Brundage . . . . .	1870
Ziba Carpenter . . . . .	1873
Robt. F. Brundage . . . . .	1876
Jas. C. Courter . . . . .	1879

## SURROGATES OF THE COUNTY.

John Bartow . . . . .	1754 to 1768
Caleb Fowler . . . . .	1791 to 1778
Richard Hatfield . . . . .	1778 to 1787
Philip Pell . . . . .	1787 to 1796
Elias Newman . . . . .	1796 to 1800
Samuel Young . . . . .	1800 to —
Edward Thomas . . . . .	— to —
Samuel Young . . . . .	1807 to 1808
Ezra Lockwood . . . . .	1808 to 1815
Henry White . . . . .	March 16, 1815 to 1819
Samuel Young . . . . .	July 8, 1819 to 1821
Ebenezer White, Jun. . . . .	Feb. 17, 1821 to 1823
Jonathan Ward . . . . .	1823 to 1839
Alexander H. Wells . . . . .	1839 to 1844
Frederick I. Coffin . . . . .	1844 to 1847
Lewis C. Platt . . . . .	1847 to 1852
Robert H. Coles . . . . .	1855
Silas D. Gifford <sup>a</sup> . . . . .	1862
John W. Mills <sup>b</sup> . . . . .	1862
Owen T. Coffin . . . . .	1870

Deputies from Westchester County to the Provincial Congress, met at New York, May 23d, 1775:—

Gouverneur Morris	Philip van Cortlandt
Lewis Graham	James Holmes
James van Cortlandt	David Dayton
Stephen Ward	John Thomas, Jun.
Joseph Drake	Robert Graham

William Paulding.

Members of the New York Convention from Westchester County for deliberating on the adoption of the Constitution of the United States, assembled at Poughkeepsie, June 17, 1788:—

Lewis Morris	Philip van Cortlandt
Philip Livingston	Thaddeus Crane
Richard Hatfield	Lott W. Sarles.

<sup>a</sup> Appointed *vice* Coles, deceased, Jan 16, 1862.

<sup>b</sup> Re-elected each subsequent term.



Delegates from Westchester County to the Convention met at Kingston, Ulster County, to frame the Constitution of the State of New York, April 20th, 1777 :—

Pierre van Cortlandt  
Gouverneur Morris  
Gilbert Drake  
Lewis Graham

Ebenezer Lockwood  
Zebediah Mills  
Jonathan Platt  
Jonathan G. Tompkins.

Delegates from Westchester County met in Convention for framing the late Constitution of the State of New York, November 10th, 1821 :—

Peter A. Jay,

Peter Jay Munro,

Jonathan Ward.

Delegates from Westchester County met in Convention, for framing the present Constitution of the State of New York :—

John Hunter,

Aaron Ward.

*A List of the Officers chosen in the several districts of the South Battalion of Westchester County, (except Westchester,) A. D. 1775.*

#### YONKERS.

John Cock, Captain.

John Warner, 2d Lieutenant.

William Betts, 1st Lieutenant.

Jacob Post, Ensign.

New officers to be chosen for this company, no commission issued.

#### EASTCHESTER.

Stephen Sneden, Captain.

Daniel Sersing, 2d Lieutenant.

Thomas Pinckney, 1st Lieutenant.

William Pinckney, Ensign.

Commission issued, dated September 20.

#### NEW ROCHELLE,

*And Manor of Pelham.*

Joseph Drake, Captain.

James Willis, 1st Lieutenant.

David Guion, 2d Lieutenant.

Commission issued and dated 20th September.

#### PHILIPSBURGH

*Upper Company.*

Abraham Ledew, Captain.

John Belyea, 2d Lieutenant.

Benjamin Brown, 1st Lieutenant.

John Oakley, Ensign, (son of Isaac.

Commission issued September 2, delivered to Mr. Paulding.

## PHILIPSBURGH.

*Tarrytown Company.*

Abraham Storms, Captain.	Joseph Appleby, 2d Lieutenant.
George Combs, 1st Lieutenant.	Nathaniel Underhill, Ensign.
Same date, delivered to Mr. Paulding.	

## PHILIPSBURGH.

*East Company.*

David Storms, Captain.	Gilbert Dean, 2d Lieutenant.
Benjamin Vermilyea, 1st Lieutenant	Gilbert Requaw, Ensign.
Same date delivered to Mr. Paulding.	

## PHILIPSBURGH..

*Lower Company.*

Isaac Vermilyea, Captain.	Isaac Honeywell, 1st Lieutenant.
	Dennis Lent, 2d Lieutenant.
Dated September 20, delivered to Mr. Paulding.	

## MAMARONECK AND RYE.

*Except the Upper End of King Street*

Robert Blomer, Captain.	Ezekiel Halstead, 2d Lieutenant.
Alexander Hunt, 1st Lieutenant.	Daniel Horton Ensign.

## SCARSDALE, WHITE PLAINS,

*And Brown's Point.*

Joshua Hatfield, Captain.	Anthony Miller, 2d Lieutenant.
James Verrian, 1st Lieutenant.	John Falconer, Ensign.

## HARRISON PRECINCT,

*And the Upper End of King Street.*

Henry Dusingberry, Captain.	Caleb Paulding, 2d Lieutenant.
Lyon Mills, 1st Lieutenant.	Gilbert Dusingberry, Ensign.

## NORTHCASTLE.

*East Company.*

Benoni Platt, Captain.	Abraham Knapp, 2d Lieutenat.
David Hobby, 1st Lieutenant.	Jonathan Guion, Ensign.

## NORTHCASTLE.

*South Company.*

Benjamin Ogden, Captain.	Caleb Merritt, Jun., 2d Lieutenant.
Jeremiah Hunter, 1st Lieutenant.	James Brondige, Ensign.



In Newcastle, North Company, there were not persons sufficient in number who had signed the association, to make officers of; so that nothing was done.

## BEDFORD.

*Eastern District.*

Lewis McDonald, Jun., Captain.  
James Miller, 1st Lieutenant.

Henry Lord, 2d Lieutenant.  
Jesse Miller, Ensign.

## BEDFORD.

*Western District.*

Eli Seely, Captain.  
Hezekiah Grey, 1st Lieutenant.

Ephraim Raymond, 2d Lieutenant.  
Gabriel Higgins, Ensign.

## POUNDRIDGE.

Joseph Lockwood, Captain,  
Noah Bouton, 1st Lieutenant.

William Fansher, 2d Lieutenant.  
Gilbert Reynolds, Ensign,

## SALEM.

*South District.*

Abijah Gilbert, Captain.  
Jacob Haight, 1st Lieutenant.

Sands Raymond, 2d Lieutenant.  
Joseph Cooley, Ensign.

## SALEM.

*Northern District.*

Thaddeus Crane, Captain.  
Jesse Truesdale, 1st Lieutenant.

Ezekiel Hawley, 2d Lieutenant.  
Ebenezer Brown, Ensign.

*A List of the Officers chosen in the several districts of the North Battalion, of Westchester County.*

## MANOR OF CORTLANDT.

The District late commanded by Francis Lent.

James Kronkhyte, Captain,  
Abraham Lamb, 1st Lieutenant.

Staats Degrete, 2d Lieutenant.  
David Penore, Ensign.

The District late commanded by Bartow Underhill:—

Gilbert van Cortlandt, Captain.  
Daniel Haines, 1st Lieutenant; signed the association the day he was chosen.  
James Teller, 2d Lieutenant.  
Hermanus Gardiner, Sen., Ensign.

The District late commanded by Jeremiah Drake :—

Gilbert Lockwood, Captain.

John Drake, 1st Lieutenant; signed the association the day he was chosen.

Joshua Drake, 2d Lieutenant; the like.

Peter Carman, Ensign; the like.

The District late commanded by Joseph Strang :—

John Hyatt, Captain.

John Drake, 1st Lieutenant.

Obadiah Purdy, 2d Lieutenant.

Joseph Horton, Ensign; signed the association the day he was elected.

Commission issued, dated September 20.

The District late commanded by Ebenezer Theall :—

Andrew Brown, Captain.

John Crissey Miller, 2d Lieutenant.

Samuel Haight, 1st Lieutenant.

Solomon Purdy, Ensign.

Commission issued, dated September 20.

The North Division of the District, late commanded by Levi Bailey :—

Nathaniel Delavan, Captain.

Titus Runnells, 2d Lieutenant.

Thomas Nichols, Jun., 1st Lieutenant.

Abraham Purdy, Ensign.

Commission issued, dated September 20.

The South Division of the same District :—

Gideon Selah, Captain.

Caleb Hobby, 2d Lieutenant.

Samuel Lawrence, 1st Lieutenant.

Abram Todd, Ensign.

The Company commanded by David Montross refused to choose officers.

---

*A List of Officers chosen in the several Districts of the North Battalion of Westchester County.*

Manor of Cortlandt, the District late commanded by Francis Lent :—

James Kronckhyte, Captain,  
Staats Dregrete, 2d Lieutenant.

Abram Lamb, 1st Lieutenant,  
David Penore, Ensign.

The District late commanded by Bartow Underhill :—

Gilbert van Cortlandt, Captain.

Dan. Hains, 1st Lieutenant; signed the association the day he was chosen.

James Teller, 2d Lieutenant.

Hermanus Gardiner, sen'r, Ensign.



The District late commanded by Jeremiah Drake:—

Gilbert Lockwood, Captain.

John Drake, 1st Lieutenant; signed the association the day he was chosen.

Justus A. Drake, 2d Lieutenant; the like.

Peter Carman, Ensign; the like.

The District late commanded by Joseph Strang:—

John Hyatt, Captain.

John Drake, 1st Lieutenant; commission issued dated Sept. 20.

Obadiah Purdy, 2d Lieutenant.

Joseph Horton, Ensign; signed the association the day he was elected.

The District late commanded by Ebenezer Theall:—

Andrew Brown, Captain.

Samuel Haight, 1st Lieutenant.

John Crissey Miller, 2d Lieutenant; commission issued dated Sept. 20.

Solomon Purdy, Ensign.

## LEWIS MORRIS APPOINTED BRIG. GENERAL 25TH JUNE, 1778. (COUNCIL MINUTES A. No. 1, p. 21-22.)

Field and Staff Officers.	Captains.	First Lieutenant.	Second Lieutenant.	Ensigns.	Associated Exempts.
Thomas Thomas, Col Gilbert Budd, sen'r, Lt. Col Thaddeus Crane, Maj Edward Thomas, Adj Tim'y Brundage, 2d Maj David Hobby, Maj. Mar. 3, 1780 (Two companies consoli- dated May 28, 1778, p. 54 Two comp. consol., p. 54 Isaac Smith, Adjut. p. 251 James Hammond, Lt. Col of Jos. Drake's Regi- ment formerly Rich'd Garrison, 2d Maj Isaac Requesaw, Adj Jonathan Horton, Major 25th June, 1778	Richard Sacket, Gre- nadiers Josiah Miller Marcus Moseman Ebenezer Scofield David Purdie Jesse Trusdale David Hobby Jacob Purdy John Thomas, jun'r Caleb Lawrence Moses St. John, 29th Sept. 1780 Gilbert Lyon, do George Comb Daniel Martling Gabriel Requesaw Jonas Arser Israel Honeywell	Joseph Miller, Gre- nadiers Zephaniah Miller Silas Miller Jonathan Londer Jos. Dowlittle Gilbert Lyon William Wright James Miller Abraham Miller Isaac Clark, 29th of September, 1780 Wright Carp'nter, do Corn's van Tassell Gershom Sherwood John Baker John Oakley Teunis Lent	Moses St. John, Gre- nadiers Nathan Canfield Gabriel Higgen David Fanshler Josiah Hays Abraham Smith Wright Carpenter David Lyon Thomas Carpenter James Brundage Isaac Miller, 29th of September, 1780 William Moshier, Nath'l Tucker, 29th June, 1781 Hez'iah Miller, 19th Nov., 1781 Jacob van Tassell John van Wart William Veal Henry Lambert Daniel Williams	Benj. Ambler, March 8, 1780 Hezekiah Miller Ely Tyler Samuel Lewis David Smith Abijah Wallace William Mosier Nathaniel Tucker John Faulkner Uria Wallace, N'r 5, 1778 Samuel Banck, Nov. 8, 1781 Benj. Ambler, Nov. 18, 1781 Timothy Miller, do Thomas Buice Peter Pawling Jonathan Knot Benjamin Brown Stephen Sherwood	Gideon Seely, Capt, Sol'mon Close, 1st Lt Tytus Reynolds, 2d Lt. April 23d, 1779 Ebenezer Slawson, Capt Sam. Bouten, 1st Lt Zepha. Mills, 2d Lt. October 19, 1779 Joseph Benedict, Lt. Col Ebenezer Slawson, Maj. Mar. 3, 1780 Enoch Mead, Adj. Joel Bouten, 2d Maj. 10th July, 1782, p. 249
					28th May, 1778, p. 52. 16th June, 1778, p. 75.



## WESTCHESTER COUNTY. (COUNCIL MINUTES A No. 1, p. 22.)

Field and Staff Officers.	Captains.	First Lieutenants.	Second Lieutenants.	Ensigns.	Captains and sub-alterns to be officers of the companies of their respective beats, page 93
<i>Samuel Drake</i> , Col. John Hyatt, Lt. Col. Nathaniel Delavan, Major Isaac Pointier, June 25, 1778 Robert Lang, 2d Major, do	James Cronckhyte Ebenezer Boyd John Drake Samuel Haight Henry Strang Ephraim Lockwood San. Lawrence, (resigned,) p. 315 Samuel Delavan Jas. Taylor Abraham Buckhout Feb. 27, 1779 Ab'ns Smith Heady, do do Samuel Delavan, (Horse,) do John Drake, Grenadiers, do Benjamin Chapman, Feb. 17, 1780 Daniel Bouton, Mar. 4, 1780 Samuel Lewis, do	Benj. Dyckman John Mandevill Abraham Smith Daniel Mordine Daniel Delavan Isaac Keeler Joseph Benedict Andrew Baker John Kudney Jacob van Wart, F'y 27, 1779 Wm. Colear, do David Ferris, do John McKeel Horse, do Ezekial Hyatt, jun. Grenadiers, do Ebenzer Avery, Ap. 10, 1782, p. 243 Benajah Brown, do do Josiah Hayley, Feb. 17, 1780 Gilbert Reynolds, 4th March, 1780 Benj. Brown, do Eben. Avery, Ap. 10, 1782, p. 243 Benajah Brown, do do	Hermanus Gardinear David Ferris Obadiah Purdy Solomon John McKeel Daniel Purdy Nath'l Reynolds, jun Jacob van Wart Joseph Veal, jun Adam Montross, F'y 27, 1779 Elvan Purdy, do Major Drake, do James Archer, do Uriah Wallace, Horse, do Elijah Scott, Grenadiers, do Abn. Fanshar, April 10, 1782, p. 243 Isaac Northrup, Feb. 17, 1780 David Smith, March 4, 1780 Abn. Fanshar, 10th April, 1782	John Porter Major Drake Henry Carman Isaac Clark James Archer Wm. Rogers Enoch Benedict John Montross Isaac Vermulier, jr Isr'l Underhill, F'y 27, '79 John McCreery, do Dennis Kennedy, do Jacob Carpenter, do Jac. Vermilie, Cor. do J. Carman, 3d Lt. Gre'ts, do Jas. Hunt, 29 J'e, '81 Joshua Drake, do Austin Reynolds, do Jesse Seymors, April 10, 1782, p. 243 Nat'l Lockw'd, do do J. Chapman, F'y 17, '80, p. 166 E Avery, Mar 4, '80, p 177 Jehiel Bouten, do., p. 178 Benj. Benedict, do., p. 178 J Seym're, 10 Ap. '82, 243 Nathan Lockwood, do. do	25th June, 1778, p. 90.

*Intituled List of Field Officers for Westchester County, Sept. 12, 1775.*

(Endorsed on the back, "An Old Letter on Military Returns," Sec. Stat. Office, fol. 26, 1775, page 13.)

*Commissions issued, dated October 14, 1775.*

FIELD OFFICERS NOMINATED BY THE COMMITTEE OF WESTCHESTER CO.

*First Regiment.*

Joseph Drake, Colonel.  
James Hammond, Lieutenant.  
Moses Drake, 1st Major.  
Jonathan G. Graham, 2d Major.  
Abraham Emmons, Adjutant.  
Theophilus Bartow, jun'r, Quarter Master.

*Second Regiment.*

Thomas Thomas, Colonel.  
Gilbert Budd, Lieutenant-Colonel.  
Ebenezer Lockwood, 1st Major.  
Thaddeus Crane, 2d Major.  
Jonathan G. Tompkins, Adjutant.  
John Thomas, 2d Quarter Master.

*Third Regiment.*

Pierre van Cortlandt, Colonel.  
Gilbert Drake, Lieutenant-Colonel.  
Joseph Strang, 1st Major.  
Ebenezer Purdy, 2d Major.  
John Cooley, Adjutant  
Isaac Norton, Quarter Master.

---

THE WESTCHESTER GUIDES.

*During the Revolution.*

John Pine,  
John Odell,  
Abraham Dyckman,

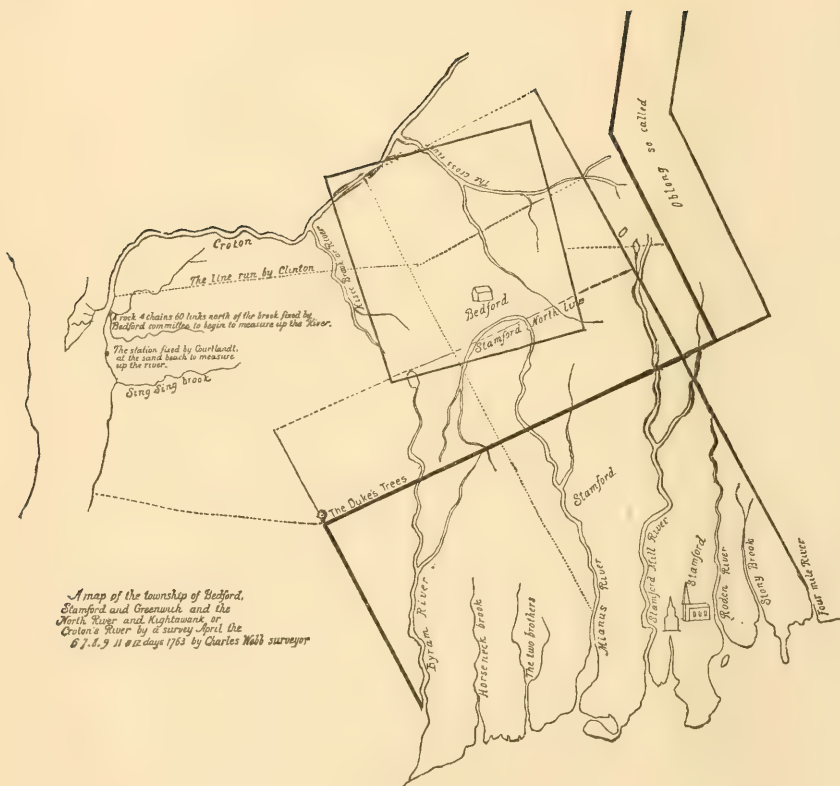
Michael Dyckman,  
James Oakley,  
Frederick Martin Post,

Isaac Odell.









MAP OF BEDFORD.



THE  
REVISED HISTORY  
OF THE  
COUNTY OF WESTCHESTER.

---

THE TOWN OF BEDFORD.

This town forms in shape nearly a square, each of its sides being six miles in length. The name is derived from the town of the same title in Bedfordshire, England, from whence the early settlers came. The earlier etymology of its name in the Saxon language was **Bedanpond**, "more eminent," says Camden, "for the pleasantness of its situation, and its antiquity, than for either beauty or largeness."\*

Among the Mohegan Indians Bedford formed a portion of the sachemdom of Rippowam, which extended eighteen miles north of Stamford, on the "Manunketesuck," or Sound, also eight miles east and west of the same.

"Within this territory," we are informed, "were traces of at least four distinct clans." "On the west side, with his seat not far from where the line now separates Stamford from Greenwich, was the bold and warlike Mayaro, with his vindictive band of warriors, already experienced in the conflict, both with the savage and civilized foe. Whence they had come, or how many they might count, we shall never know."

Further to the east, with his princely residence overlooking both the bays which enclosed the finest headland of Rippowam, was Wascussue, Lord of Shippan. Not so spirited as Mayaro, he seemed to linger with a handful of his tribe, in a sort of princely repose upon the fair field which his more youthful arm had won, unwilling to leave the charming heritage, which in his sadness he saw now for the first time seriously invaded.

Still farther towards the rising sun and beyond the lovely Noroton bay, was the empire of Piamikin, whose deed of alienation makes him

---

\*Camden's Britannia.

sagamore of Roatan, and whose jealous eye guarded the territory and fishing grounds, away out to the waters of the babbling Rowalton (Five Mile River).

On the north of these sea-washed domains lay the more extended realms of Ponus. From his ancestors he had received the wooded hills and brook-washed vales that stretch far away to the north until they are lost in the forests, even among the Mohawk tribes, which even the red men did not claim—a wild border ground between the eastern and western tribes, and he hoped to hand them all over to his idol, Powahag, the bright-faced son of his first born Onox. But the old patriarch of his wasting tribe, saw his warriors fade and perish as if touched with the power of his own decay, and he yielded gracefully to the stern necessity. He lived, as we shall see presently, to sign with his own hand the deed which forever alienated from himself and heirs, “all the uplands, meadows, and grass, with the rivers, and trees,” that had once been his rejoicing and his pride.\*

Upon the 1st of July, 1640, Nathaniel Turner, agent, in behalf of the people of Quinipiacke (New Haven), “bought of Ponus, sagamore of Toquams, and of Wascussue, sagamore of Shippan (the other Indians consenting thereto), all the ground belonging to the said sagamores, except a piece of ground which Ponus reserved for himself and the other Indians to plant upon.” This purchase embraced all the land sixteen miles north of the Sound. The Indian name of the tract was Rippowams.†

“The consideration was twelve coats, twelve hoes, twelve hatchets, twelve glasses, twelve knives, two kettles, and five fathoms of white wampum.” The liberty of hunting and fishing on the land was reserved by the Indians.‡ The above sale was confirmed to the inhabitants of Stamford on the 11th of August, 1655, by Ponus, and Onox his eldest son: “extending sixteen miles north of the town plot of Stamford and two miles still further north for the pasture of their cattle; also eight miles east and west, (the same as paid for before); and as a further recompense, four coats of English cloth was given them.§ This grant, which embraced nearly the whole township of Bedford, “was offered by the New Haven Colony (the same year) to a company of dissatisfied men at Weathersfield, Conn., who, looking about for a new home; but

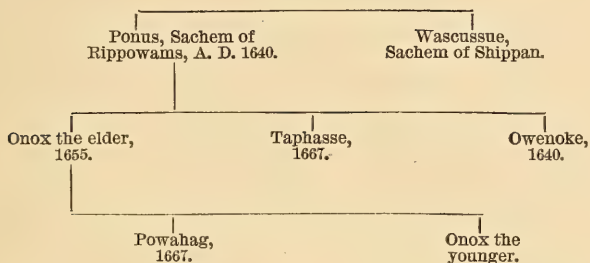
\*Huntington, *Hist. of Stamford*, p. 102-3.

†On the 30th of October, 1640, Mr. Andrew Ward and Mr. Robert Coe, on behalf of themselves and twenty other planters, purchased Rippowams of New Haven, for £33 sterling. Lambert's *History of New Haven*, 176.

‡Lambert's *History of New Haven*.

§Huntington's *Hist. of Stamford*.

no settlement was effected under this deed, and it is only of interest as fixing the earliest date at which any part of the present town of Bedford passed out of Indian possession."\* Ponus Street, New Canaan, denotes, there can be no doubt, that Sachem's residence, as well as Onox's Ridge, that of his son and successor. There was also a path called Ponassest† in the town of Norwalk, Conn., as early as 1687. The following table will show the descent of Ponus for three generations.



Sometime subsequent to the Indian sale in 1655, the old township of Bedford was emphatically styled "Catonah's land," after the Indian chief and proprietor of that name; hence we deduce the origin of the local term "Cantitoe," which yet survives in the northern part of the town. The termination "oe" denoting the place of that Sachem's residence. Catonah must have assumed the supremacy over these lands about 1680, for his first conveyance to the proprietors of the "Hop Grounds" bears date 23d December that year. Some connection doubtless existed between Catonah and his predecessor Powahag or Penaghag, but what it was is hard to determine at this distant period. About 1700 Catonah or Catoona and Coll confirmed to the English (inhabitants of Stamford) all the previous grants of territory, "westward as far as Bedford," and acknowledged the receipt of "considerable and valuable sums of money;" and beside all this make special mention "of deeds or grants made to the English by Taphasse, Ponus, Penchayo, old Onox, young Onox, a deed to Captain Turner and also a deed by Hawatonaman, which the Stamford records have not preserved."‡ In a conveyance to John Belden, of Norwalk, and others, Sept. 30th, 1708, Catonah styles himself "Sachem of the Ramapo Indians within his majesty's province of New York," and this is the last we hear of him. Wachamane was probably his son and successor in the Sachemdom.

\*Address of Joseph Barratt, Esq., 4th July, 1876. Recorder Catonah, July, '77.

†E. Hall's Hist. Rec. of Norwalk, page 82.

‡Huntington's History of Stamford.



A bold eminence lying to the north of Bedford village retains the aboriginal name of Aspetong or Aspicung (Indian terms for an indigenous variety of an odoriferous grape); while another on the west, covered with luxurious woods and visible from all parts of the surrounding country, still bears the title of its aboriginal proprietor, Nanama, one of the six great sagamores who (we shall see presently) sold land half a mile square lying west of the old Hop Grounds in 1692. Two roads in the western part of the town traverse the Indian paths of Potiticus and Suckebouk, the former leading to Cohansey, a wild and romantic spot west of Broad Brook, and almost under the shadow of Nanama. Here was a famous spring of water, and here the Indians continued to reside down to a late period of our Colonial History.

Amawalk lot is a fine knoll situated near the banks of Stony Hill River, in the immediate vicinity of which are the "pits," a sandy plain surrounded by woods and marshy ground, almost bordering on the Beaver Dam River, both these places were favorite sites for Indian lodges. Patomus Ridge lies a little farther eastward, upon which stood a cluster of wigwams, in 1692. Armonck, Comonck, or Kahomesug, sold by Catoona and other Indians to the proprietors of the Hop Grounds in 1683, is situated in the south-west part of the town. Cornelius Van Tienhoven (an early Dutch authority) in describing the bounds of the Indian territory of Wechquaesqueck, says, "This land is situate between two rivulets called Sintsinck and Armonck lying between the East and North River.\* The term Armonck† (here alluded to) is supposed to have been the original Indian appellation for the Byram River, whose springs rise from the Comonck hills in this town, sometimes called Cohamong ridge;‡ the last syllable *onck* or *ong*, when taken in connection with the rest of the word, denotes "the place or locality where shells are manufactured into wampum." From this we infer that the seawan (the specie currency of the natives) was once manufactured in large quantities upon the banks of the Byram or Armonck, while the whole county of Westchester was denominated "Laaphawachking," or "place of stringing beads."

"QUAUHAUG is an English corruption of the Indian word *Poquauhock*. The New England and Long Island Indians called the round, hard-shell clam *Poquau*, and added the termination *hog*, *huog*, *hock* or *haug*, to signify the plural. In old works on New England and New

\*O'Callagan's Hist. of New Netherland, vol. 1, p. 240.

†Amochk in the Delaware tongue signifies Baaver. Essay of a Delaware Indian, &c., by David Zeisberger, Phila, 1776.

‡Rec. of 60. Road's Register's office, p. 1.

Netherland History these clams are called *Poquauhock*, *Poquauhaug*, &c. The English (*not* the Indians), by omitting the first syllable reduced the word to *Quauhaug* or *Quahaug*, the latter being the mode of spelling usually adopted by the early New England and Dutch writers. ROGER WILLIAMS does not use the word "Quauhaug," nor does he allude to the corruption. The following is his description of "Poquauhock": 'This the English call *hens*; a little thick shell fish which the Indians wade deep and dive for; and after they have eaten there—in those which are good, they break out of the shell, about half an inch of a black part of it, of which they make their 'Suckauhock,' or *black money*, which is to them precious. 'Seawan,' or 'Seawant,' was the general name applied by the Indians to their currency made from shells. Wampum or *White money* was made from the stem or stock of 'Meteahock' (Periwinkles). This was their silver. 'Suckanhock was made from the purple portion of the shell of 'Poquahock.' This was their *gold*. Both the Dutch and English, however, soon began to drop the distinctive terms. Hence we find 'Wampum' or 'Wampom' used to designate the Indian money without regard to color. In making their 'gold,' the Indians broke from the 'Poquauhock' a 'Quauhaug' about half an inch of the dark purple portion of the inside and converted it into beads of the diameter of a large straw, and about one third of an inch in length. Before the introduction of awls and thread from Europe, these beads were bored longitudinally with sharp stones and strung upon the sinews of animals. 'Their Merchandise,' said Josselyn, in speaking of the Indian commerce, 'are their beads which are their money; of these there are two sorts: blue beads and white beads; the first is their gold, the last their silver; these they work out of certain shells so cunning that neither Jew nor Devil can counterfeit; they drill them and string them and make many curious works with them to adorn the persons of their sagamores and principal young men and women, as belts, girdles, tablets, borders for their women's hair, bracelets, necklaces, and links to hang in their ears. Prince PHILLIP, a little before I came from England, had a coat on and buskins set thick with these beads in pleasant wild works—and a wide belt of the same;—his accoutrements were valued at twenty pounds.' With this Seawan, commonly called Wampum, the Indians paid tribute, redeemed captives, atoned for murders and other wrongs, and purchased peace with their more powerful neighbors as occasion required. It was the seal of a contract and the oath of fidelity. In the form of a belt it was sent with all public messages, and sometimes—marked with curious hieroglyphics—was preserved as a record of important transactions between rival tribes. A message sent without

the belt was spurned as an empty word. The return of a belt was understood as the rejection of an offer or of the terms accompanying the same. A string of 'Seawan' was sometimes delivered by the orator in public council at the close of each proposition as ratifying the speaker's truth and sincerity. Strings of 'Wampum' were occasionally tied around the neck of a white dog, and the animal thus decorated was fastened to a pole and offered up as a sacrifice to 'THALONGHYAWAAGON,' the upholder of the skies. Long Island was called 'Seawan-Hacky,' the Island of Shells. Immense quantities of Seawan were manufactured there. In the extensive shell-banks left by the Indians, a whole shell is rarely found, nearly all having been more or less broken in the process of making 'wampom.' The French at one time made unsuccessful efforts to circulate a porcelain counterfeit. The Dutch manufactured great quantities from the genuine material—their superior mechanical facilities giving them much advantage over the Indians. The Dutch valued three purple beads at one Stuyver (penny)—double the price of the white beads.

"According to LOSKIEL, 'Wampum' or 'Wampom,' signifies in the language of the Iroquois a 'muscle.' 'These muscles,' he says, 'are chiefly found on the coast of Virginia and Maryland, and are valued according to their color, which is brown, violet, and white. The former are sometimes of so dark a shade that they pass for black, and are double the price of white. Having first sawed them into square pieces about a quarter of an inch in length and an eighth in thickness, they grind them round or oval upon a common grindstone. Then a hole being bored lengthways through each, large enough to admit a wire, whipcord, or thin thong, they are strung like beads and the string of 'wampom' is complete. Four or six strings joined in one breadth and fastened to each other with fine thread make a belt of 'wampom,' being about three or four inches wide and three feet long, containing, perhaps, from eight or twelve fathoms of 'wampom' in proportion to its requisite length and breadth.'

"One of the most celebrated 'wampom' belts known to have been wrought by the Indians was presented to WILLIAM PENN by the Lenni-Lenape-Sachems on the occasion of the famous Treaty of 1682. The writer has in his possession a *fac-simile* of this belt. The original belt was presented to the Pennsylvania Historical Society by GRANVILLE JOHN PENN, Esq., May 25th, 1857. It is of the very neatest workmanship. Its length is twenty-six inches, and its breadth nine inches. It consists of eighteen strings woven together—formed entirely of small beads strung in rows. In the centre there is a rude, but striking representation,



worked in dark violet beads—of two men, one somewhat the stouter, wearing a hat; the other rather thin, having an uncovered head. The figures stand erect, with hands clasped—symbolic of the contract which will always live in History as—‘Not sworn to, but never broken.’

“The use of ‘Quauhaug’ in the form of a wampum belt was the most solemn purpose to which the Indians devoted the precious shell.

“For more than one hundred years after the settlement of New Netherland and New England it served as a circulating medium in the affairs of trade and was received with equal good faith by the Indians and Whites.

“Until within quite a recent period wampum was manufactured in Suffolk County, Long Island. As late as the Summer of 1831, several bushels were sent from Babylon to be used by the Indians of the Western Territories for the purpose of conventions and treaties. Although Quauhaug is technically a plural—custom and usage long established and now sanctioned by the best writers have made it a singular word.”\*

The great Indian settlement of this town was called “Nanichiastawack,” which occupied the southern spur of “Indian Hill,” sometimes called the “Indian Farm,” and “Stony Point or Hill,” stretching toward the north-west. There is a most romantic approach to the site of mountain fastness, by a steep, narrow, beaten track opposite the Stamford cart path, as it was formerly denominated, which followed the old Indian trail called the “Thoroughfare.” There is a tradition current in the neighborhood that the south side of this hill was the scene of a bloody fight between the early settlers and the aborigines. Mrs. Martha Holmes, an aged inhabitant of Bedford, living in 1848, remembered as far back as 1765 to have seen several mounds at the foot of this hill, a little south of the old school house, which were pointed out to her as the graves of those who fell in the conflict; while another tradition says that a stream of blood ran down on the south side of the hill, and many bones were afterwards interred there. The truth is that a bloody fight actually took place here between a hundred and thirty Dutch troops, led by the redoubtable Capt. John Underhill (who had fought under Maurice of Nassau, Prince of Orange, in the Low Countries), one full moonlight night in February, 1644, and a tribe of the Sinaroys Indians, on which occasion seven hundred of the latter perished amidst the flames and surroundings of “*Nanichiastawack*.”†

It appears that “the campaign of 1644 was opened by an expedition

\*An “Indian Talk” about Quauhaug and Wampum, by Reuhkwehhehnweh, New Rochelle, July 13, 1860. Taken from *New Rochelle Pioneer*, July 15, 1865.

†Some say the village of “Petuguepaen.”

that scoured Staten Island in the hope of meeting the tribes of that region; but they found no Indians to contend with, and returned after only a few days' absence, with no other booty than a few hundred schepels of corn.

A messenger from Stamford arrived at the fort, bearing the head of the Indian chief Mayano, and reporting that a large body of hostile Indians was encamped near Greenwich. A detachment of one hundred and twenty men was sent off by water. They landed at Greenwich and after marching all night without meeting the enemy, halted at Stamford. It was evident either that the Indians had been warned of the expedition, or that the story of the encampment was false. The troops had been sent mainly on the representations of Captain Daniel Patrick, of Greenwich, and to him the disappointed Dutchmen looked for an explanation. On a Sunday afternoon, during the hour of service, a Dutch soldier met the captain at Stamford, and, after stating that the troops had been deluded, openly charged him with treachery. The captain threw back the insult with some rough words, and spat in his accuser's face; but as he turned on his heel the Dutchman drew a pistol and shot him dead.

Some Stamford men, who seemed nettled at the taunts of the Dutch, volunteered to discover the place where the Indians lay concealed. Four scouts went out, who soon returned, and conducted a party of twenty-five to an Indian village, where about twenty savages were killed; and an old man, two squaws, and some children made prisoners. The old man offered to show the Dutch the way to Wetquescheck, an Indian stronghold consisting of three castles constructed of plank five inches thick, nine feet high, and braced all around by heavy timbers, pierced for small arms. Sixty-five men, under the command of Lieutenant Baxter and Sergeant Cock, following the old man's guidance, cautiously approached the castles, expecting a formidable resistance; but, to their surprise, they found the stronghold deserted. The over-prudent Indians had retreated, leaving the Dutch to burn two of the castles, a small quantity of stores, kill one or two men, and take a few women and children prisoners.

Meanwhile Pennewitz, of Long Island, one of the oldest and most experienced chiefs in the country, and who, in the first war, had proposed to slaughter the Dutch in a single night, was secretly acting a hostile part, and had already killed a number of Christians and burnt numerous barns. It was therefore resolved to send a force of one hundred and twenty men towards Heemstede (Hempstead), the English under command of Underhill, the Dutch under Peter Cock, and all

under the general supervision of La Montagne. The advance guard, having killed an Indian spy, waited until the main body came up, when the troops were formed in two divisions, and an attack was made at the same time on Matsepe (Maspeth) and a smaller village near at hand. In a few hours over a hundred Indians lay dead upon the field, while, on the part of the Dutch and English, the loss was only one killed and three wounded.

On the return of this expedition, Captain Underhill was dispatched to Stamford in quest of information relative to the Indians of that region. Meeting the same guide who had led the Dutch forces astray in the Greenwich expedition, he learned that nearly a thousand Indians were assembled not far off, to celebrate one of their festivals. The guide, anxious to redeem his reputation, offered to lead the Dutch to the Indian rendezvous, in order to prove that the former mischance was not his fault. Captain Underhill, in reporting these facts to Kieft, advised an immediate attack. A force of one hundred and thirty men was dispatched in three yachts, under the Captain's command.

It was now mid-winter. The earth was covered with snow, and the little army, after landing at Greenwich, passed a dreary night in the midst of a howling storm. Early next morning the troops took up their line of march in a north-westerly direction, and steadily but slowly advanced all day long, trudging through the deep snow, creeping over stony hills laid bare by the sweeping winds, and wading over half frozen streams. By eight o'clock they arrived within a league of the Indian village, and halted to rest and arrange the plan of battle. The village, which had been carefully arranged for winter quarters, lay snugly ensconced in a low mountain recess, completely sheltered from the bleak northerly winds, and consisted of a large number of huts disposed in three streets, each about eighty paces long. As the Dutch approached they found the Indians prepared to receive them, whereupon Capt. Underhill gave orders to charge sword in hand. His men rushed in and tried to surround the huts; but the savages, who seemed this time to act with some degree of military skill, deployed in small bands, and fought with such vigor that in a few moments thirteen of the soldiers were disabled.

The contest, however, did not long continue. The Dutch, though greatly inferior in numbers, were vastly superior in skill, weapons, discipline, and powers of endurance, to their brave, but weak, half-starved, and poorly armed adversaries. The Indians were soon pressed so hard as to be obliged to make for their huts, where they still kept up the fight by discharging arrows through loop holes. Nearly two hundred of



their number lay dead upon the snow; but the survivors still fought on with the desperation of men who understood the merciless character of their assailants, and preferred death to a captivity that might end in torture. Underhill now gave orders to fire the huts. The Indians tried every way to escape; but they were by this time completely surrounded, and, finding it impossible to break through the lines, they quietly retired with their wives and children to the blazing huts, and whole families submitted to the flames rather than die by the sword. They would not even gratify their enemies by the least sound that might betray anything like pain or terror; although more than five hundred Indians, many of whom were women and children, miserably perished on that awful night; not one was heard to cry or scream.

The Dutch victory was complete. Large fires were built, for the air was intensely cold; the wounded were dressed, sentinels were posted, and the weary troops bivouacked on the battle ground for the remainder of the night.

How terrible the change that a few hours had brought upon the Indian village, which, at the setting of the sun, lay so peacefully in that mountain gorge, surrounded by the pure, untrodden snow!

The village now a smouldering ruin—the snow trampled and scattered by many a desperate struggle—crimsoned, too, with blood, and holding in its cold embrace hundreds of ghastly forms—what more desolate picture could Revenge itself have desired to behold than the ruined homes, the broken weapons, the gory scalps, and the grim faces of the dead, which the full moon disclosed as her silvery rays streamed upon the mountain slope and floated down the valley!\*

O'Callaghan thus details the action in his history of the N. H.: "On his return from Heemstede, Capt. Underhill was ordered to Stamford, to obtain particulars of the whereabouts of the savages. He brought word back, that they were encamped some five hundred strong in that direction, and that the old guide urged the forwarding a body of troops immediately thither, as he was desirous, on the one hand, to prove that the former ill-success of the Dutch was not his fault; on the other hand anxious for protection, as his life was in constant danger.

"One hundred and thirty men embarked accordingly, under Capt. Underhill and Ensign Van Dyck, in three yachts, and landed the same evening at Greenwich.† But a severe snow storm having set in, detained them at that settlement the whole of the night. The weather,

---

\*Sunday Lines, Manhattan Papers No. 10, by Jan Vogelanger.

†They probably landed on Greenwich Point, called by the Indians *Mouakewego*.

however, moderated towards morning, when the party set forward and arrived soon after at the foot of a rocky mountain,\* over which some of the men had to crawl, with considerable difficulty, on their hands and feet. The evening, about eight o'clock, brought them to within a few miles of the enemy. Their further progress was, however, now impeded by two rivers, one of which was some two hundred feet wide, and three in depth. It was considered best to remain here awhile, in order to refresh the men, and to make arrangements for the coming attack. After a rest of a couple of hours, the party again set forward at ten o'clock. It was full moon, and the night so clear—'a winter's day could not be brighter,'—that the Indian village was soon discovered at a distance. It consisted of three rows of houses or huts, ranged in streets, each eighty paces long, and backed by a mountain which sheltered it from the north-west wind.

"But the Indians were as much on the alert as their enemy. They soon discovered the Dutch troops, who charged forthwith, surrounding the camp, sword in hand. The Indians evinced on this occasion, considerable boldness, and made a rush once or twice to break the Dutch line, and open some way for escape. But in this they failed, leaving one dead and twelve prisoners in the hands of the assailants, who now kept up such a brisk fire that it was impossible for any of the besieged to escape. After a desperate conflict of an hour, one hundred and eighty Indians lay dead on the snow outside their dwellings. Not one of the survivors durst now show his face. They remained under cover, discharging their arrows from behind, to the great annoyance of the Dutch troops. Underhill now seeing no other way to overcome the obstinate resistance of the foe, gave orders to fire their huts. The order was forthwith obeyed; the wretched inmates endeavoring in every way to escape from the horrid flames, but mostly without success. The moment they made their appearance, they rushed or were driven precipitately back into their burning hovels, 'preferring to be consumed by fire than to fall by our weapons.'

"In this merciless manner were butchered, as some of the Indians afterwards reported, five hundred human beings. Others carry the number to seven hundred; 'the Lord having collected most of our enemies there to celebrate some peculiar festival.'

"Of the whole party, no more than eight men escaped this terrible slaughter by fire and sword. Three of these were badly wounded. Throughout the entire carnage not one of the sufferers—man, woman, or child—was heard to utter a shriek or moan.

\*Supposed Stony Hills, a mountainous ridge north of Bedford.

"This expedition having been crowned with complete success, the wounded, fifteen in number, were attended to, and sentinels posted to prevent surprise. Large fires were then kindled, as the weather was still excessively cold, and the conquerors bivouacked during the remainder of the night, on the field of battle. They set out next morning on their return in good order, 'marching with great courage over that harassing mountain, the Lord enduing the wounded with extraordinary strength,' and arrived at Stamford at noon, after a march of two days and one night, during which they had little repose and less comfort. The English received the soldiers with friendly hospitality, proffering them every possible kindness. Two days afterwards the detachment arrived at Fort Amsterdam, where a public thanksgiving was ordered for the brilliant success which attended the New Netherland arms.<sup>a</sup>

"The late punishment (continues the same authority) inflicted upon these Indians, and the approach of Spring, made them desirous of peace, and they therefore solicited the intervention of Capt. Underhill to procure a cessation of hostilities.

"Mamaranack, chief of the Indians residing on the Kicktawanc, or Croton River, Mongockonone, Pappenoharrow from the Weckquaesqueecks and Nochpeem, and the Wappings from Stamford, presented themselves in a few days (April 6, 1644), at Fort Amsterdam, and having pledged themselves that they should not, henceforth, commit any injury whatever on the inhabitants of New Netherland, their cattle and houses, nor show themselves, except in a canoe, before Fort Amsterdam, should the Dutch be at war with any of the Manhattan tribes, and having further promised to deliver up Pacham, the chief of the Tankitekes, peace was concluded between them and the Dutch, who promised on their part not to molest them in any way, but to allow them to cultivate their fields in peace; and as a guarantee of their sincerity, surrendered several of their prisoners."<sup>†</sup>

A path like a sheep walk leads up from the site of this memorable battle field to the top of "Indian Hill," which commands a very enviable view, being a wonderful assemblage of mountain, hill, and dale, woodland and water hardly equalled. The prospect is bounded to the south-east and east by the waters of the Sound, and light blue shores of Long Island, whither the Indians of yore carried on their fishing excursions in the Summer season; to the north and north-west far away for hundreds of miles, extend the Green Mountains, and still nearer to the west the majestic Highlands, bordering on the Hudson, from whence

---

(a) General Van. N. N.

(b) O'Callaghan's Hist. of N. N., p. 300-3.



came the dreaded Mohawk, above which towers the mighty Dundenburg, in olden times abounding in game which the Indians hunted for pleasure and subsistence, which, together with the beautiful valleys of the Myanos and the Muscoota or Beaver Dam and Cohamong hills, form a noble and extensive outline. The Myanos River (probably so named after the bold and warlike Mayano Sachem of Petuquapaen, killed by the celebrated Captain Daniel Patrick, Patroon of the Manor of Greenwich in 1643)\* for three or four miles below the village is bordered by what is called the "River Hills," which are extremely picturesque and romantic; in some places its rocky and wooded banks are almost precipitous, one spot in particular called "Crow Rock," soon after which the landscape expands and the Myanos, released from its narrow bed, widens and continues its course until lost in the "Manunketesuck," or Sound near Cos Cob.

What had become of the descendants of the warlike Ponus does not appear; but in the year 1680 the "Hop Grounds," which were situated at the north end of the Stamford bounds, belonged to the Sachem Katoonah and other Indians, all which is shown by the following grant, under which it may be truly said the settlement of Bedford was actually begun:

Stamford, the twenty-third day of December, one thousand, six hundred and eighty.

Witness these presents that we whose names are under written namely Katoonah Rockahway Sepotah Iovis Tomacoppah Kakenand, we doe for orselves our heirs executors administrators and assigns and for and in behalfe of al other proprietors of the land commonly caled the hopp-ground; we say we doe hereby sel Alinate asigne and set ouer from us or heirs executors Administrators and assigns for ever a certaine parsel of meddow and upland commonly called and known by the hoppground which land lyes at the north end of Stanford bounds: as it is already bounded with markt trees only the west line to be extended: southward til it shall meet with a southwest line drawn from three markt white oaks standing very neere together at the southeast corner of the s'd land we the above named doe hereby sel Alinate and assigne and set ouer from us the land above specifyd with all the rights and privildiges thereunto belonging for euer, unto Richard Ambler Abraham Ambler Joseph Theal Daniel Weed Eleazer Slawson John Wescot Jonathan Petit iohn Cross iohn Miller Nicholas Webster Richard Ayres William Clark ionas Seeley ioseph Stevens Daniel iones, Thomas Pannoyer, iohn Holms iunr, beniamin Steuens iohn green senr, david waterbury Sam weed ionathan kilborn, them their heires executors administrators assigns for euer quiatly to posese and injoy without molestation by us or ours or any by our means or procurement, moreouer we ye above men-

---

\*Patrick was killed by a soldier at Capt. John Underhill's house in 1644. He married Annetje Van Beyeren, and by her had one son who afterwards claimed his father's land at Greenwich.

tioned Katonah Sepotah iovis Tohmocapph, Pannaps Kakenand doe bargin and hereby grant full liberty of timber and herbedge for them and there creatures upon our aineant lands for euer and doe hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction for the land above sd' in witness of truth we have caused this bill of sale to be made and hereto set our hands and seals the day and date aboue written;

signed sealed & deliver	Katoonah * mark
ed in the presence of ioshua	rockaway    mark
Knap David Water-	Sepotah ¶ mark
bury taco 0 his mark	iovis § his mark
poading — mark	Tomopoh X mark
	Pannaps ‡ mark
	Kakenand † mark

The above bill of sale is acknowledged by the grantors the indians by their seueral names i say acknowledged before me.

RICH. LAW, Comis'.

Stanford Decembe 23, 1680.

Stanford 23d. decembe, 1680.

Then payd unt y e indians specified in this within bill of sale for the purchase as follows

twelve Indian cotes	09-0-0	
six blankets	09-0-0	
300 gilders wampan	16-0-0	entered upon
two yard red brod cloth	2-5-0	record 26 of
six yard red coton	1-10-0	Feb'e 1694-5
more by expenses	8-01-0	Abraham Am-
total	46-16-10	bler recdr <sup>a</sup>

This purchase of the "Hop Ground" probably included about 7,700 acres.†

<sup>a</sup> First Book of Bedford Rec., p. 129. The original is in the possession of Hon. John Jay of Bedford.

† From an ancient memorandum found in the town record it is supposed that this first purchase of the hopground, as it was called from its natural product, included about 7700 acres. The 'cotes,' blankets, 'brod cloth,' 'red coton,' wampum, or current funds of the time, and the somewhat mysterious entry of 'more by expenses, 8 pounds, 1 shilling,' corresponding perhaps, to the 'contingent expenses' of modern committee-men, only made up the moderate total of 46 pounds, 16 shillings. But real estate was not high in those days, though it seems to have been looking up, for it was only in 1624 that the whole city and county of New York was sold for twenty-four dollars.—Address of Jos. Barrett, July 4, 1876. Recorder, Katonah, July 7.

The same year the following charges were expended on account of the "Hop Ground":

The amount of charges expended upon the account of and for ye "hopp ground" in the year 1680

Rich. Ambler	06-04-06	The proportion and how these men	
Abra. "	06-00-00	paid	
Jos Theals	04-00-00	Jos. Hunt	02-00-00
Dan. Weed	06-00-00	Nickolas Webster to }	
Dan. Wescot	05-00-00	Richd Ambler	02-00-00
Jo. "	05-00-00	Abra. Ambler to }	
Jonah Petit	09-00-00	Jo Miller	02-00-00
Jo. Cross	02-06-04	Eli Slason X X	01-12-06
		David Waterbery	00-07-06
Total is :	43-10-10		
ye sum paid purchase as above was		Joseph Theale payd }	02-00-00
Forty shillings each person.		by Sa Weed	
		Dan Weed payd by }	01-00-00
		Thos Parroyer	
		by Rich Ayres	03-00-00
		Dan Wescot by }	02-00-00
		Will Clark	
		by Jonas Selly 2 lb }	03-00-00
		by Tho panoyer 1 lb }	
		Dan Wescot by }	02 00-00
		Ben Stevens	
		Jonah Pettit payd }	01-00-00
		by Gren	
		Jos Stevens	02-00-00
		Kilborn	02-00-00
		Dan Jones	02-00-00
		Jo Cross : pd by }	00x07-00
		Eli Slauson x }	

By the following document it appears that the proprietors began their settlement by holding their first meeting at Stamford from whence they all came.

Stamford 10 March : 16<sup>80</sup><sub>81</sub>.

by vote the proprietors of the "hop grounds" doe chuse and appoynt and fully empower Jos Theale Abra Ambler John Miller Daniel Jones: and John Cross to be theire committee to lay out the town plot both for situation and also to lay out the house lots and one lotment to every proprietor in the field or the East side of the plains: and three of the aforesaid men have full power to act in ye premises and it shall be in the discretion of these men to make each man's lot proportionable; in



quantity what it wants in quality it is also agreed by the parsons: above that noe man's house lot shall be less than three acres: but more if the land will allow it: Further it is agreed by the proprietors aforesd that the committee above named shall have full power to lay out or leave a convenient lot in the town plot for the use of the town and also in the field a lot proportionable with the other lots for the use of the town upon the 17th March: <sup>80</sup>/<sub>81</sub> the committee above named went and after meausure of Land: and laying out the street they proceeded to lot and the lots were as follows:

Riard Ambler 16	Will Clark 18
Abra Ambler 8	Jonas Sely 17
Jos Stevens 20	Da Jones 20
Joseph Theale 5	Thos Panoyer 12
Daniel Weed 21	Ben Stevens 11
Elea ; Slauson 13	Jo Homes 15
Joe Wescot 19	Jo Green 1
Jonah Pettit 22	David Waterbury 10
John Cross 4	Sa Weed 7
John Miller 3	Jonah Kilborn 2
Nicke : Webster 9	
Rich : Ayres 14	

22: March, 16<sup>80</sup>/<sub>81</sub>; the proprietors agree that what the committee had done in laying out ye town plot, and the house lots, shall stand; and the place they reserved for the town common, and the town lot to be as they laid it out, and the meeting house shall be set upon the common so laid out among the rocks called Bates; his Hill.

2: By vote, the proprietors agree to receive John Bates, Nathaniel Cross, proprietors with them, they enjoying a full proportion of charges with which that is part, and what shall be further expended upon the said land, and they to hold their house lots and their field lots, after those that were already granted to be laid out.

3. By vote the proprietors agree it shall not be in the power of any proprietor to sell, exchange or any other way alyenate his propriaty in the said hop grounds without the approbation and consent of the maine part of the proprietors; upon the penalty of forfeiting his right to ye said proprietors:

4ly. By vote the proprietors doe chuse, apoynt and fulley impower Joseph Heals, Abraham Ambler, John Bates, John Miller and John Cross as theire committee to lay out all their plaines and meadows, westward and eastward of the town plot already layd out; and on other lands and meadows they see convenyant; unto the propriators now in being; the comity to order the said lands; in laying it out according to their discesion.

5ly. By vote the proprietors agree that David Waterbury shall have liberty to rune his homlot fence to the rock, commonly called Bates his

Hill, and shall have ye use of the town land between his lot and the said Hill provided the said David: always maintaine A good gate or bars and liberty is reserved for the town to fetch stones or other nesesaries out of the said town land reserved.

Ye same March: '81. the committee apoynted ——— work of laying out the field land and meadow and after. — of ye land and laying the cart-ways they cast lots first for the east field: 2ly. for ye meadows: 3ly. for the plains and the lots being solemnly drawn were as follows:

	Field lots:	Meadows:	plains:
Rich: Ambler	17	10	1
Abra Amble.,	12	22	19
Jos. Theals,	4	8	7
Dan. weed,	6	6	5
Elea: wescot,	15	2	4
Jo- wescot,	10	14	21
Jonah: Pettit,	19	11	18
John cross,	11	24	12
John Miller,	16	15	24
Nicke: Webster.	14	23	3
Rich. Ayres,	1	9	23
Jonas Seely,	13	4	2
Jos. Stevens,	2	21	6
Dan: Jones,	18	13	17
Tho: Panoyr,	8	7	13
Jo- Stones,	21	20	11
Ben. Stevens,	5	11	10
Jo- Green,	20	5	22
Dauid Waterbury,	7	1	9
Sa- Weed,	3	18	15
Jonh. Kilborn,	22	12	14
Jonn Bates,	23	16	16
Natha: Cross,	24	19	20

The first official notice or recognition of the settlement of the town appears to be the following grant from the General Court of Connecticut Colony, at Hartford in 1681.

“ At a general court held at Hartford May 12, 1681.

This court being moved to grant liberty to erect a platform upon the hopp-ground & ancient lands about Twelve miles to ye northwards of Stamford doe grant their request & appoynt Captain Richard Olmstead, Lieut Jonath Bell Lieut

Jonathan Lockwood and Mr. Joseph Theal to be a committee to entertain such persons as shall plant there & to manage, order & dispose of ye affays of that plantation according to their best skill as may best aduance ye wellfar and groth of ye said plantation & they ear tacke care yt there be sutable loot laid out for the first minister of ye place & a loot for ye ministry to be and belong to ye ministry forever. This is a trew copy tacken out oi the Records of Harford.

Vera Copia

Hartfrd  
Janry 21st, 1696.

Test. Eleazar Kimberly

Secretary."\*

Upon the 11th of October, 1681, the proprietors of the Hop ground agreed that no one might be admitted as an inhabitant, nor should have power to sell or exchange the land that might be allotted to him, nor should he have any voice in disposing of lands, but that any inhabitant on paying forty shillings should have an equal share with the proprietors in all the undivided land. "The settlers seem to have feared the accumulation of large tracts of land in the hands of single individuals. Hence, each man had a home lot of three acres which was to be forfeited if not built on in three years in the town, and a lot in the 'east field' or the great 'north plain,' and also some 'meadow land.'"<sup>a</sup> "In December, 1681, Samuel Barrett, Taebariah Roberts and Thomas Carfield commenced to inhabit only.† This man Roberts was chosen town clerk, afterwards Justice of the Peace and for many years prominent in nearly all the affairs of the town."§ He was also a bitter opponent of the Church of England as we shall have occasion to show presently.

"In December, 1681, Joshua Webb is received as Inhabitant, in case they shall agree with him to build a grist mill in ye place." "A committee was appointed to confer with Joshua Webb, and a mill and a dam were built by him and the town jointly, he to furnish the iron work and the town to cart and furnish the timber and mill-stones," and the mill when finished is to be the sd Joshua Webb's, his proper right and tytle, only he is not at any time to sell, alienate or any other ways dispose of ye said mill; except it be to him or them that the town shall appoint and the said Joshua doth binde himself; and his; to finde the town at hop-ground with good meale, they finding good corne; the tole as in the law expressed."||

\* Address of Joseph Barrett July 4th, 1776, copied from the original document preserved among the old papers of John Holmes are of the original pioneers, now in possession of John C. Holmes, Esq., of Cross River, Lewisboro.

<sup>a</sup> Address of Joseph Barrett, July 4, 1876. Recorder, Katonah, July 7th.

†The following will serve as a sample of the vote by which new settlers were received into the colony. The date is "December 1681. They give unto William Sturdeuant upon his acceptance and submitting to their order of reseuing Inhabitants: they give him a house lott containing three Acres, and six Acres of land in the east feild: and three acres of meadow: he paying twenty shillings to ye company and to take twenty rod of fence in ye coman field for euer."—Address of Joseph Barrett.

§Address of Joseph Barrett, July 4, 1876.—The Recorder, Wm. A. Miller and J. T. Lockwood editors, &c.

|| Ditto.



"This mill stood on Myanos road about a quarter of a mile, or less, above where James Miller's mill now stands. In 1701 the town "doth agree to buy" the mill of Richard Webb, son of Joshua, for the use of the town, for the sum of fifteen pounds. Another mill seems to have become necessary at this time, for in November 1701, "the town by a maigor vote doth agree that their corn mill shall be set upon beuer dam Riuer at the first conuenient place below dauids broock: and that there shall be thirty acres of land layed out to the mill and to lye to it foreuer that the lawful oners of the mill shall enjoy the said thirty acres of land foreuer, not else." And very stringent "artickells of agreement" were entered into with John Dibell to build the mill, he is in the former case to "finde the town with good sofsiant meall, they finding good sofsiant corne" and he to have both mill and "thirty acres of land" foreuer. This was on the site where Cox's mill now stands.

There is some reason for believing that this was the old mill removed to the new site. In October 1703, a little special legislation for the miller became necessary. "The town by maigor vote agreeth and ordereth that every munday shall be the day for the miller to attend to grind for the town and what corne or grain is brought to the mill to be ground within the 24 hours what is not ground within ye time aforesaid the miller is to attend to grind it next day."\*

At a court of election holden in Hartford, May 11th, 1682, the following license was granted to the people of the Hop ground:

"Upon the petition of the people of the Hop ground, this court doth grant them the privilege of a plantation and do order that the name of the town be henceforth called Bedford, and this court doe appoint Joseph Theall to be the present chief military officer for the train band of Bedford, and Abraham Ambler is also empowered by this court to grant warrants, to swear officers and witnesses, and to joyne persons in marriage according to law, and they doe free the sayd towne of Bedford from county rates, for the space of three years next ensuing.<sup>b</sup>

In 1683, Catoonah Sagamore and other Indians, convey to the proprietors of Bedford the land and meadow of Kohamong, lying South-west of the "Hop ground."

### INDIAN DEED.

Witness these present that we Katoonah, Saggamore and Papiag his son Tadaquid, Queranoy and Chickhoag, we proprietors of the land and middow at Koamong have for ourselves and for the rest of ye Indians which are proprietors of the said land and middow at Koamong Commonly so-called have sold and by these presents doe sell, alienate, assign and set over from us and every one of us, and in the name and behalf of the rest of the proprietors of ye land and middow at Koamong and all our heirs executors, administrators and assigns forever unto the proprietors of the town of Bedford, in the colony of

\*Address of Joseph Barrett, July 4, 1876. Copied from the Recorder, Katonah, July 7th.  
b. Cour. Col. Rec. Hartford vol. iii., fol. 131-134.

Conecticot, them, their heirs, executors, Administrators and assigns for ever, A certain parsell of upland and middow as it is already marked by us Katoonah, Saggamore and Papiag, his son tangaquid, queraway and chickhoag unto ye proprietors of Bedford and theirs, which land and middow lyes at the South-west of the bounds of the said proprietors of Bedford, bought of ye Indians as appears by a former bill of sale, this above land and middow, with all the rights, title and priviledges thereof, wee doe make over from us and ours and from all those claiming right and title and theirs.

for ouer unto the forenamed propriators of Bedford and doe acknowledge to have received full satisfaction for the said land and middow from the propriators of the town of Bedford and doe promise and engadge that the propriators of Bedford shall quietly poses and enjoy the same land and middow without molestation by us or any of ours for euer, as witnes our hands in Bedford the second day of may, one thousand six hundred eighty and three; thus under written :—

This bill of sale signed and delivered }  
in the presence of us. }

JOHN GREEN,  
JOHN BATES,  
NICKOLAS WEBSTER,

His  
KATO O NAH.  
mark.

His  
PA O PIAG.  
mark.

His  
TANDA O QUID.  
marke

His  
QUERA O NOY.  
mark.

His  
CHICK O HEAGO,  
mark.

This above bill of sale is acknowledged by the grantors, each of them before me.

Bedford, the 2d day of }  
May, 1683. }

ABRAHAM AMBLER,  
Comisionated.

This bili of seall is entred in the publick records of Bedford; p: 115.

By me, ZACHARIAH ROBERTS,  
Recorder.

May 1st, 1702.

By the settlement of the colonial boundaries, November, 1664, Bedford fell within the jurisdiction of Connecticut, the line between the two colonies commencing from the east point of Mamaroneck River, where the fresh water falls into the salt at high water mark, north north-west to the line of Massachusetts. On the ground that this decision was erroneous, a further agreement was concluded at New York, 28th of October, 1683, between the governor of Connecticut and certain persons appointed to act with him, by which it was stipulated that the line between New York and Connecticut should begin at Byram River,

at the east point, called Lyon's Point, and so up along the said river to the country road, west eight miles from Lyon's Point, and then twelve miles east north-eastward, thence in a line parallel to the North River and twenty miles distant therefrom, to the south line of Massachusetts. The whole matter being left subject to the King's ratification. By this settlement Bedford would have been transferred to New York, but the King's death unfortunately took place on the 6th of February, 1685, before its completion, in consequence of which the whole matter was again left open for a long and angry discussion which soon ensued.

In 1685, the General Court of Connecticut issued an order to the effect that all towns should take out patents, in due form, and that there should be legal evidence of their rights. In "Tenway 1687-8" there were 18 men at a town meeting who voted "that every one here present at the town meeting shall have a pees of land containing four akers added unto their former dividends for theyr faithfulness at the attending of townè meetings." Before the 28th of January, 1688, the Town ordered that as much money should be raised as may be necessary to pay for a patent. The annual meeting in March, 1690, chose a "clark, two sezars," (assessors) two fence "vewars," and two "souairs," (surveyors). In 1691 they made "chois of Daniell Simkins for head man for ye town of Bedford, to end any contravercy between indians and inglish according to the best of his skill." In 1693 the "round swamp on the south sid of Aspicung" was given to David Clason, for his four acres of "burnory land."

The names of the inhabitants, including the resident proprietors of Bedford in 1692, number thirty-one, and were as follows:

John Grum,  
Joseph Miller,  
Joun Holmes,  
John Miller,  
Mrs. Wildman,  
Mr. Dunham,  
Zachariah Roberts,  
John Webb,  
Stephen Clason,  
Stephen Holmes,  
Abraham Ambler,  
John Miller, Jr.,  
John Ambler,  
Daniel Jones,  
Thomas Astor,

N. Miran Clark,  
John Holmes, Sr.,  
Richard Ayres,  
John Holmes, Jr.,  
Abraham Wildman,  
Isaac Dunham,  
Jeremiah Andrews,  
Richard Wescote,  
Daniel Simpkins,  
William Clark,  
John Brown,  
Jonathan Miller,  
David Mead,  
Caleb Webb,  
David Clason,

John Higgins.



Upon the 25th May, 1692, Catonah, Noname, Wappomaham, Wenenanopoage, Chickheog and Pommeshacon, sell to Daniel Simpkins, of Bedford, a certain piece of land lying west of the bounds of Bedford, to say half a mile square, as it is already marked and laid out by the Indians, and bounded as followeth, viz.: East by the bounds of Bedford, and south by a brook coming off from the west ridge, and west and north as it is marked by the aforesaid proprietors.

Witnessed and delivered in )  
the presence of us. }  
STEPHEN HOLMES, and  
JOHN BROWN.

His  
CATO  $\bowtie$  NAH.  
mark.

His  
PUMMESE,  $\bigcirc$  CHAM.  
mark.

His  
NO  $\angle$  NAME.  
mark.

His  
WEMEWANA  $\approx$  POGE.  
mark.

His  
CHUCK  $\approx$  HEAG.  
mark.

\*Bedford Town Rec. vol. ; p. 829.

In 1692 we find the proprietors of Bedford treating with Connecticut for a general patent for their township. The general Court however did not choose to grant their request until five years after, as we shall have occasion to show presently—again in 1692 at the October session of the general Court Mr. Underhill of Rye and Zachary Roberts of Bedford, were in attendance and the Court granted them an allowance for their expenses in coming; to be paid at stanford out of the county rate.<sup>a</sup>

February 10th, 1695, the town ordered that the rates shall be issued according to the following valuations, viz:<sup>b</sup>

Each head or person	-	-	-	£12	0	0
" Ox,	-	-	-	-	4	0
" Cow,	-	-	-	-	3	0
" Horse,	-	-	-	-	2	0
All improved lands,	-	-	-	-	0	15
All improved meadow with fence,	-	-	-	-	0	10

In March, 1695-6, we find Governor Fletcher of New York, writing to Governor Treat concerning sundry persons in Rye and Bedford who desired to have their land titles confirmed.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Public Rec. of Conn. Vol. iv, p 83.

<sup>b</sup> Bedford Town Rec.

<sup>c</sup> Boundary letters, Hartford, fol. 10, letter 137.

At a meeting of ye governor and council, held at Hartford, January 19th, 1696, protection was granted to the towns of Rye and Bedford, as members of their corporation; and on the 10th of May following, Daniel Simpkins was appointed ensign for the latter town. January 21st, 1696-7, Rye and Bedford applied to be united to Connecticut, upon which that colony concluded to receive them.<sup>a</sup>

In a letter from Governor Fletcher, to the authorities of Connecticut, dated April 5th, 1697, the former complains about the latter's receiving Rye and Bedford, and thus withdrawing them from the obedience of New York.<sup>b</sup>

To compel the refractory towns into obedience, Governor Fletcher issued a proclamation upon April 15th, 1697, in which he required Rye and Bedford to return to their allegiance.<sup>c</sup>

April 19th, 1697, Governor Fletcher states that Major Sellick had interfered in favor of Connecticut, with fifty armed men.<sup>d</sup>

In reply 30th of April, 1697, Connecticut disclaims the use of violent measures, and refers the whole matter to the King.

Governor Fletcher and council, in answer to Connecticut, May 10th, 1697, entitles the reasons of the latter *subterfuges*, and complains of her making a disturbance in time of war. In conclusion, Connecticut may rest assured that New York will use all lawful means to reduce the people to obedience.<sup>e</sup>

From the following document it appears that in 1696,<sup>f</sup> the action of the Council of Connecticut was favorable towards the inhabitants of Bedford in granting these requests, and that, that action was approved by the general court in May, 1697:

May, 1697.

To the Hon<sup>rd</sup> Govern<sup>r</sup> and Gen<sup>l</sup> Assembly sitting in Hartford.

Whereas God by his providence orders all things: Att a Generall Court held in Hartford May the 11th, 1692, upon the petition of the people of Hopground the Court did see cause to grant them the priviledg of a plantation as doth upon record appear—And in the year 1684, there was a conditional agreement made between Colon<sup>l</sup> Dougan of New York and some of the heads of the freemen of this Corporation which proved almost our undoing for severall years together there was almost a c among us, because they cutt off Rye and Bedford from this Colonie. Some said they were under New York, and some said they were not, but for peace sake we submitted to, and paid rates to New York—But if so be that Connecticut and New York could have made a firme bargain without

<sup>a</sup> Bound. letters, fol. 10, p. 138.

<sup>b</sup> Bound. letters, 140.

<sup>c</sup> Bound. letters, 141.

<sup>d</sup> Bound. letters, 141-2.

<sup>e</sup> Bound. letters, No. 144. Bound. letters, 145.

<sup>f</sup> Printed Col. Rec. of Conn., Vol. iv, p. 192.

the King, then we should have been at quiet, but them that know any thing know that it could not be. Then seing a copie that came from the Kings court at Whitehall, dated Aprill the 19th, 1694, and the records of England being searched, it was found that the Charter of Connecticut stood good and firme to the freemen of this Corporation, their heirs and associates, which we well knew that we were part of by the dividing line that was firmly confirmed to this government, then Jan<sup>ry</sup> the last petitioning the Govern<sup>r</sup> and Councill for protection they granted our request as may appear to this Assembly, therefore we request for what favour we can have from the Hon<sup>ble</sup> Court at this time for our growth and increase, as we may be beneficiall to the honour of God and the good of the country. Written in behalf of and upon the request of the inhabitants of Bedford.

Your most Humble Servant

ZACHARIAH ROBERTS.<sup>a</sup>

The following memorandum of the quantity of land in each purchase —was found in a blank leaf of a book of laws and orders of Connecticut Colony (or MS.) 1697.

	Farthing,	Acres,	Qurt. Rents.
old Purchase,	18415,	7693,	19, 3, 7-3.
New " "	14376,	5990,	14, 19. 6.
N. W. Corner,	6865,	2865,	7, 3, 8-1.
N. E. " "	4266½,	1736,	4, 8. 10. 2.
Vincent & Dibble,	4266½,	1736,	4, 8. 10. 2.

Upon the 1st of May, 1697, the town petitioned for a patent embracing ten miles in length, from the north end of Stamford bounds to ten miles northward into the woods and eight miles wide. The petition was granted on the 21st of May, and the following patent issued.

### BEDFORD PATTENT.

Whereas, the General Court of Connecticott Colony Assembled May 13th, 1697, hath granted unto the proprietters Inhabitants of the Towne of Bedford al thoss Lands both Meadows, Swamps and uplands within these abutments viz. Scutherly on the bounds of the Townshipp of Stanford. Westerly on the Wilderness. Northerly on the Wilderness, and Easterly on the Wilderness or Land not layd out. Every of which sides is Six Miles in Length to witt. from the East side Westerly and from the South Side Northerly and is a Townshipp of six miles Square or Six miles on Every Side, which s<sup>d</sup> Lands have been by purchass or Otherwise, Lawfully Obtainyd of the Indian Native proprietters and whereas the afoars<sup>d</sup> Proprietors Inhabitants of the Towne of Bedford have Humbly desired of the Gov<sup>r</sup> and Company assembled in Court May 13, 1697, as afoars<sup>d</sup> that they may have a Pattent for the Confeirmation of the afoars<sup>d</sup> Lands so purchased and Granted to them and which they have stood Seized and Quietly Possessed of for many years Last past without interruption.

Now for a more full Confeirmation of the afoars<sup>d</sup> Track of Land as it is butted

<sup>a</sup> Kindly furnished by Charles J. Hadley, Esq., Conn. State Library, Hartford. Presented by Hon. Robt. C. Winthrop.



and boundd aforesaid unto the present proprietors of the said Township of Bedford in their possession and Injoyment of the premises Know Yee that the said Governour and Company Assembled in Gen<sup>l</sup> Court according to the Commission Graunted them by his Maj<sup>s</sup><sup>ty</sup> Charter. Have Given Granted & do by these presents Give Grant Rattifie and Confeirme unto Jno. Miller Sen<sup>r</sup> Danie Simkins Zachariah Robbert, Cornelius Seely Jeremiah Andrews Jno. Westcoate Jno. Miller Jun<sup>r</sup> Jno. Holmes Jun<sup>r</sup> and the rest of the present proprietors of the Township of Bedford, their Heires and Successors Associates Assigns for Ever the afores<sup>d</sup> Parcell or tract of Land of Six miles Square Containing aboute Twenty and three Thousand acres within the boundaries above mentioned together with all the Woods Meadows Pastures Ponds Waters Rivers Planes Fishings Huntings fowlings Mines Mineralls Quarries and precious stones upon or within the said Graunt of lands and all other Proffitts and Comodities thereunto belonging or in any ways Appurteineing and doe also graunt unto the afores<sup>d</sup> Jno. Miller Dan<sup>r</sup> Simkins Zach. Roberts Cornelius Seely Jerr. Andrass Jno. Westcoate Jno. Miller Jno. Holmes and the Rest of the proprietors Inhabitants of Bedford their Heirs Successors and assignes for Ever that the afores<sup>d</sup> Tract of Land shall be for Ever hereafter Es<sup>med</sup>, reputed bee an Intire Township of it selfe to have and to Hold the said Tract of Lands and premises with all and singular their appurtenances with the privillidges and Immunetyes Franchizes & Huaditamuts herein Given and Granted unto the said Jno Miller, Danl. Simkins, Zach. Robberds, Cornelius Seely, Jerr. Andrews, Jno. Westcoate, Jno. Miller Jun<sup>r</sup> Jno. Holmes and all others the Proprietors, Inhabitants, of Bedford, their Heirs and Successors and to the only proper use benefitt and behoofe of them and every of them their Heirs Assigns Successors and and Associates for Ever According to the Tenour of his Majestie's Manner of East Greenwich in the County of Kent in the Kingdom of England in Free and Common Lonage and not in Cappita nor by Knights Service yelding therefore and paying to our Sovereigne Lord the King his Heires & Successors his dues according to Charter. Always provided that nothing herein contained shall extend to, or be understood or taken to Impeach or prejudice any Right, Title, Interest, Claime or Demands which any person or persons hath or have or Claime to have of into or out of any part of the said Townshipp seittuated within the Limitts above mentioned according to the Laws and General Customs of this Colony but that all and Every Such person and persons may and shall have, hold and Injoy the same in such manner as if these presents had not been had or made. In Witness whereof we have caused the seale of the Colony to be Hereunto Affixed this one & Twentieth day of May in the year of our Lord One Thousand Six Hundred Ninety and Seaven and in the 9th year of the Reigne of our Sovereign Lord William by the Grace of God and England Scotland, France and Ireland, King Fidei Defender &c.

Bo order of the Gov<sup>r</sup>

ROBERT TREATE, *Governor.*

ELEAZER KIMBERLY, *Secretary,*

The above written with that or the other side is a true Copy of the Original being therewith Compared this 2d day of May, 1697.

P<sup>r</sup> Me.

E. K a

From the town records it appears that in 1697, Zachariah Roberts<sup>a</sup> was allowed by the town, three shillings a day, and half his expenses, and the town further ordered that every man should pay him two pounds of flax for his expenses in going to Connecticut about the said patent.

In answer to Governor Fletcher's letter of May the 10th, the Governor and general assembly of Connecticut reply May 19th, 1697, that they consider the arguments of New York weak and unsatisfactory, and are therefore, determined to protect these people.<sup>b</sup>

May the 31st, 1697, Governor Fletcher and council find just fault with Connecticut for using "such a stile," and assert that Connecticut gave up these towns by arrangement, in 1683, and made no claim to them for twelve years or more, New York is therefore determined to pursue her duty.<sup>c</sup>

Governor Fletcher addressing the Lords of Trade, the same year, says:—

"Some time before I came down from Albany, two small towns of Rye and Bedford in West Chester County that ly next to Connecticut being much in arrearies of taxes have revolted to Connecticut who countenance them notwithstanding I found there at my arrival part of this province, and so have continued till now, which is contrary to a stipulation made between the Collony and Coll. Dougan An" 1683 under the hands and seals of their Gov<sup>mt</sup> and assistants: I am loath to make warr upon any of His Majesties subjects and therefore lay this matter before your Lordships: They have invaded us with a Capt<sup>a</sup> and fifty men armed with Fuzees on Horseback, to disturb the election of a representative, pursuant to the King's writt at the town of Rye. I never found them so forward to give assistance to albany, upon the approach of the enemy, notwithstanding my frequent application & the Royal Commands, that did oblige their obedience." (New York, Col. M.S.S., vol. iv, 276.)

Upon the accession of Lord Bellamont to the government of New York, April, 1698, we find Connecticut sending a delegation to congratulate him. In a letter dated May 6th, Lord Bellamont expresses his thanks and good will towards Connecticut, and encloses a letter from the Lords Commissioners of Trade, in regard to Rye and Bedford; he also denies their reasons for countenancing those towns in their revolt.<sup>d</sup>

The Earl of Bellamont writing to the Lords of Trade 13th of May,

<sup>a</sup> "In 1697 they sent the inevitable Zach. Roberts to confer with Governor Treat of Connecticut about being settled under the colony, and paid him 3 shillings a day "for himself and his horse, and paid half his expence." After his return Roberts had another town meeting and got an allowance for back-pay in the shape of an assessment of two pounds of flax on each man in the town." Address of Joseph Barrett, July 4, 1876—Recorder Katonah. July 7. 1876.

<sup>b</sup> Bound. letters, No. 147.

<sup>c</sup> Bound. letters, No. 149.

<sup>d</sup> Bound. letters, No. 146.

1699, says, "your Lordships have sent me no orders about the towns of Rye and Bedford which revolted from this Province (to avoid paying taxes) to the government of Connecticut: to which town said government has noe colour or right. (New York, Col. M.S.S., London, Doc. vol. iv, p. 517.)

In reply, May, 1698, the deputy governor and assistants express the kindest and most friendly feelings towards his excellency, but cannot answer concerning Rye and Bedford until Governor Winthrop's return.<sup>d</sup>

Upon the 29th of March, 1700, King William the third gave his approbation and confirmation to the agreement and survey of 1683 and 1684, whereby Rye and Bedford were included in New York.

"In November, 1699, the town received a great acquisition in Mr. Copp, of Norwalk, a surveyor and quite a scholarly man for that time. He was at once given a "home loot, twenty acres of out land, sixteen of plow land and four acres of meadow land." He was also to have "the use of ye towne loot and ye towne land and meadow in ye feild this next yeare, without they want of it for a minestar." The next month "the town by a maigor not chuse Mr. John Copp to put things to vote in theyr town meetings if he is presant."

They also bought of "ye said Copp" a "grindle stone" for which they paid the modest price of "six acres of pastur land." For a while he quite eclipsed Zachariah Roberts. The next week they elected him town Treasurer, and put him on a "committy" to agree with the Indians for the land westward of the town. This committee arranged with the Indians for the "west purchase," included in the deed of Sept. 6, 1700, and it may have been incident to the negotiations that we find this entry on "Aprill 15, 1700. The town by a maigor vote doth agree y<sup>t</sup> if they fortify, it shall be John Holmes senrs hous, and ye house y<sup>t</sup> was Joshua Webb's desesed." It does not appear that it became necessary to fortify.

The west purchase was made and "every man y<sup>t</sup> hath land in ye town hath liberty to put in a head," or share.—There were 36 of these head rights, of which Col. Jacobus Van Cortlandt had 8, Zach. Roberts, 3, John Copp, 2, John Holmes, Jr., 2, and the rest one. The land was then surveyed by Copp and laid out into 36 lots of 50 acres each (for the small field plan seems to have become exploded) which were subsequently drawn for by lot. One of the town books consists of the records of this "west purchase" or "new purchase," and is in the neat handwriting of Copp—Proprietors Clerk. It shows how he first laid out two highways ten rods wide from Broad Brook west to the Kisco Brook,

<sup>d</sup> Bound. letters, No. 148.



and then laid out his fifty acre tracts on each side of them. This book was accompanied by a map, which cannot now be found. The two ten rod highways were the one leading from S. C. Sutton's to Mt. Kisco and the nearly parallel one a mile south leading over Knapp's Hill, nearly in a straight course to Kisco Mountain. The present "swamp road" running south from Simeon Woolsey's was at this time laid out as a "four rod highway," but the liberal views of John Copp and his employers did not prevail with their successors and there are now but ordinary roads with occasional wide spots. There was also a quantity of rough land bounded "northerley by ye highway y<sup>t</sup> passes under Nonames Hill, called Frederick's path," (which I take to be the road leading from the Four Corners to Mt. Kisco). The division of the "west purchase" was not fully concluded until 1738.<sup>a</sup>

On the 31st of July, 1741, John Copp, of Norwalk, in the County Fairfield and Colony of Connecticut, in New England, for and in consideration of ye sum of 650 pounds, New England money bills of credit of ye old tennure, received of Moses Fountain, of Bedford, in Westchester County, in the Province of New York, the receipt whereof I do hereby acknowledge and myselfe therewith fully satisfied and contented, have given, granted, &c., viz., the following described parcels of land, being upland lying upon Bates hill, so called, containing about 8 acres, &c., bounded northerly by Richard Holmes' land, westerly by undivided land, southerly by the top or brow of said hill, and easterly by the land formerly granted to the builders of the meeting house and the land exchanged with the Town, &c.<sup>b</sup>

There was for many years after this date a great extent of common or town land, where the people pastured their cattle. It is probable that they also pastured lands not yet bought of the Indians. A brander for the town was therefore appointed and the cattle were marked with the owner's mark, and such entries as the following begin to appear on the town records: "Zachariah Roberts maketh entry of his ere marck for his marckeble creatures, namly a swallow forck on ye toop of each ere." "John Miller senr macks entry of his ere marck for his marckeble creatures namly one half penny on the under sid of the offe ere & a slit on the toop of the neer ere." These marks are found on record as late as 1813.

On the 13th of March, 1700, the town sold to John Johnston one hundred acres of land for £56, and some months after Crosse's vineyard for £8. On the 6th of Sept. 1700, Katonah Sagamore and other

<sup>a</sup> Address of Jos. Barrett July 4, 1876—Recorder Katonah, July 7.

<sup>b</sup> No. 3 of Bedford Town Books, p. 61.

Indians, chief proprietors of the lands about Bedford, made a conveyance confirming to the inhabitants of Bedford a purchase made twenty years before, supposing that they had received their pay to their full satisfaction for ye lands and all the timber and feed on said lands "within ye bounds, as follows, namely: to begin where Beaver Dam River and Cross River meets and so to run on ye nor-west side of a brook called miry brook, and then to run cross the hills west on ye west side of Cisqua meadow until it meets the river called Cisqua River and a great swamp, and so to run up the brook and by marked trees to the North Birum pond, and so to ye south end Cohansey, and then to a great red ash tree formerly marked by ye Indians for Bedford's southermost bounds, which stands on the west side of the west turn of Meanous River."

Signed, sealed & delivered }  
in the presence of us: }

ZACHARIAH ROBERTS,  
JOHN HOLMES,

His  
KOTO ✕ NAH.  
Mark.

His  
CACA ✕ RACO.  
Mark.

His  
WACK ✕ EMANE.  
Mark.

His  
MANGA ○ KORN.  
Mark.

His  
ARA ∞ TORN  
Mark.

His  
SI ∞ MON.  
Mark.\*

On the 10th day of October, 1700, the General Court of Connecticut released Bedford from all allegiance.

October, 1713, Connecticut appointed certain Commissioners to meet those of New York in fixing the line. A final agreement and conclusion took place between the Commissioners at Dover, in Dutchess Co., May the 14th, 1731, by which Bedford and Rye were forever hereafter included in ye province of New York.

The following grant and confirmation, under the hand of Catonah, occurs on the 24th of July, 1700:

Katonah, Sagamore and chief proprietor of ye land about Bedford, have formerly sold unto the inhabitants of the town of Bedford a certain tract of meadow land and upland northard from ye town and joining to their first pur-

\*Bedford Rec., vol. 1., p. 160.

chase, which tract of land is bounded by a small brook east, which runs near ye west side of Potiticus path, and west by Beaver Dam River, northerly by ye Cross River, and south by Bedford's land. This above-named tract of land Catonah have sold from me and mine, or any Indian or Indians laying claim thereunto, to ye inhabitants of Bedford, for a valuable consideration in hand, already received, to my full satisfaction, &c.

Signed, sealed and delivered }  
in presence of us. }  
BENJAMIN HAIT, and  
ABRAHAM FINCH.

His  
KATO X NAH.  
mark.

His  
TOYE > BEAKEEP.  
mark.

His  
RAROH ≈ QUOSH.  
mark.

At a town meeting held in Bedford, Oct. 4th, 1701.

"The town by a maiger vote doth order the Committee to proceed with the Indians about purchasing ye lands westward of ye old purchase, and now marked the old purchase, formerly bought of the Indians November 3d, 1701. The town doth also agree that ye land westward of the first purchase shall be paid by beads, and every hand that payeth the Indians for it shall have every one of them an equal share, according to what they pay. At the same time a committee is chosen by vote, consisting of Zachariah Roberts, John Holmes, Jun., and Jonathan Petit, to see ye Indians satisfied for ye lands formerly bought of them, which is west of the first purchase."

Upon the 4th of November, 1700:

"The town by a maiger vote doth devise and impower Mr. John Tomson & Zachariah Roberts, Senr., to go to New York & cleer up our rits and priveledges in order to attaine a patten to conforme to us our rits, titles & priveledges, & theyr chardges to be payed out of the above said bargaen.<sup>a</sup>

At a town meeting March 13th, <sup>1700</sup>1701.

The town of Bedford, by a maiger vot doth reseve Mr. John Tomson, late of Lunden, now trader in Stanford, an inhabitant in to ye town among us; & do give, grant and sell to him an hundred acres of land on the north sid of the highway yt gos to Daniell Sinkings plain, bounded by the brook or indian line west, as it shall be layd out by the comitye, and if it is not all to be had there then to mack it up elce where as convenient as may be, for: 56: fifty-six shillings, all ready payd to the town, and he is to mack enprovements for ye space of three yers.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 4th of Feb'y, 1702, the town of Bedford sold to John Dibble, Crosse's vineyard purchase for £18; on the 16th of March following,

<sup>a</sup> Bedford book of ord., Rec. mss., p. 41.

<sup>b</sup> Distr.

John Dibble agrees to sell 100 acres of the same to Jacobus VanCourtlandt, &c.

By a grant dated April 20th, 1702, Katonah and Wackemane convey to the Inhabitants of Bedford all that tract of land, within the following bounds, viz:—

“To begin where Beaver Dam River and Cross river meet and then to run across the south-westerly on the west side of Cisqua meadow, until it meets the river called Cisqua River and a great swamp, and so to run up the brook and by marked trees to the north end of Byram pond, and so to the north end of Cohamong pond, and then to a great red oak tree formerly marked by the Indians for Bedford southermost bounds which stands on the west side of the west turn of Meanau's River, and this above said land, we Katonah and Wackemane do sell for us, our heirs, &c., to the Inhabitants of Bedford.

Signed sealed and delivered }  
in presence of us,

ZACHARIAH ROBERTS,  
and JOHN HOLMES.

His  
KATONAH.  
mark.

His  
WACKEMANE.  
mark.

His  
ARATATOMA.  
mark.

His  
SIAMON.  
mark.

His  
CARAROE.  
mark.

His  
MANGAKOM. \*  
mark.

Upon the 4th of January, 1703-4, Katonah, Sagamore and Wackemane chief proprietors of the lands about Bedford, have sold, and by these presents doe sell, &c., unto John Dibble of Bedford, in the county of West Chester, &c., a certain tract of upland and meadow, &c., all within ye bounds hereafter named and bounded by marked trees, from one branch of Beaver Dam River southward of Stone Hills, and to run westward of Stone Hills, northward by marked trees until it meets with a brook coming out of Stone Hills, and so to be bounded by ye said brook until it meets the Cross River, and bounded by the said Cross River until it meets a small brook, and then bounded on the westward by Bedford's cross vineyard purchase, southerly and eastwardly until it meets ye

\* From the original, in possession of the Hon. John Jay.



aforesaid branch, which tract of land thus bounded we Catonah and Wackemane for us, our heirs, &c., have sold to the above said John Dibble, &c.

Signed sealed and delivered }  
in presence of us, }

JOHN MILLER,  
JOHN THOMSON,  
JOHN BARTLETT.

His  
CATONAH.

mark.

His  
WACKEMANE.

mark.

His  
MANGOCAM.

mark.

His  
CACRECA.

mark.

His  
MANAQUI.

mark.

His  
SI MON.\*

mark.

The same year we find John Dibble and wife conveying to Jacques Van Courtlandt 700 acres of land lying in Bedford, called the Vineyard Purchase, besides a certain parcel of meadow and upland in ye bounds of said Bedford, first purchased, with marked trees northerly, eastwardly by a small brook which runneth into Cross River, and northerly by the Cross River, and southerly by the Cross River, containing about 400 acres.

In 1703, the town granted John Thomson formerly a London merchant but lately of Stamford, a tract of land on condition that he should pay forty shilling, "and to bring up four hundred sheep and lambs next summer and let them to ye inhabitants of ye town for two bits in money or one pound and halfe of flees wool as the sheep afords it yearly."

Upon the 5th of May, 1703, Catonah Sagamore and Wackemane, for themselves and in behalf of any other Indians concerned, sell to Zachariah Roberts of Bedford, all that land between Bedford bounds and Muscotah River which lyeth between Cisqua River and ye Cross River, for the several particulars hereinafter named.

This is ye truth of ye bargain test.

ZACHARIAH ROBERTS, Sen.

10 pieces of eight which is paid,  
6 shirts,  
4 dozen coats,  
2 blankets,  
1 broad cloth coat,  
4 lbs of powder,  
4 hatchets,  
2 gallons of rum.<sup>a</sup>

\* From the original in the possession of Hon. John Jay. Bedford Book of Public Rec. vol. i, p. 181.

<sup>a</sup>Town Rec. of Deed, vol. i, p. 69.

July 24th, 1703, Catonah and Wackemane sell to Jacobus Van Cortlandt of the city of New York, and Zachariah Roberts, senr., of Bedford, a certain tract of upland meadow and swamp, all within ye bounds hereafter named, that is to say to begin where Beaver Dam River and ye Cross River meets, and so to run westwardly by Bedford's marked trees, until it comes to a black oak tree marked upon a high hill, and then to run west to Cisqua River, and then down said River until it runs into Muscotah River and then to keep ye south side of Muscotah River until it meets the aforesaid river, and to keep the said Cross River until it meets ye aforesaid Beaver Dam River, &c. The Indians acknowledge that they, the Indians, have received all our pay to our full satisfaction.

Syned sealed and delivered }  
in the presence of us. }

NATHAN CLARK,  
JOSEPH HUNT,  
ZACHARIAH ROBERTS.

His  
CATO  $\bowtie$  NAH. (L.S.)

mark.

His  
WACKE  $\circ$  MANE. (L.S.)  
mark.

His  
MUS  $\sqcap$  TATO.  
mark.

His  
MEQUA  $\approx$  COM.  
mark.

His  
CACO  $\infty$  PORO.  
mark.

His  
WAP  $\sqsubset$  APO.  
mark.

His  
MAN  $\lhd$  TORO.  
mark.

His  
AN  $\curvearrowright$  HOOCK.  
mark.

Town Rec. of Deeds vol. i. 70.

In 1700, after the decision which left the town within the province of New York, the people began to again agitate the matter of getting their patent confirmed, and sent John Thomson and Zach. Roberts to New York, which was then the capital, on that mission; but nothing came of it until May 14, 1702, when they empowered "Mr. Capt. Peter Mathews to git our patent and privileges conferred to us the town of Bedford as soon chep and easy as may be," and they promised Mathews a "gratitude of land" for his services. So the next year they gave him 300 "akers on the south sid of the road that goeth from bedford to hutsons

Riur and so by the place whair Wainpas wigwam was." Upon this the enterprising Zach. Roberts got the town to vote him a large tract near the west boundary, "on condision that he goeth to New York and ioynes with, and is helpful to Captain Peter Mathews." It appeared that Zach. Roberts helped to "git" the patent and got his land, and in "Ogust" of that year Mathews asked for and obtained 700 acres more, and in 1707, 200 more, making 1200 acres in the southwest corner of the patent, that is, in the vicinity of Mount Kisco.<sup>a</sup>

The patent was granted to the inhabitants of Bedford by Queen Anne on the 8th day of April, 1704. The grantees yielding and rendering to the Crown therefore the sum of £5 per annum.

This Quit Rent was annually paid in New York, and mention of its being levied and collected is occasionally found in the minutes of the Town meetings.<sup>b</sup>

#### ROYAL PATENT FOR BEDFORD.

"Whereas the general court of Connecticut on the 13th day of May in ye year of our Lord Christ, 1697, hath granted unto the proprietors, inhabitants of the town of Bedford, then within that colony, all those lands, &c., in their abutments, viz: southerly on ye bounds of the township of Stamford, westwardly by ye wilderness, north on ye wilderness, and eastwardly on ye wilderness or land not laid out, every of which sides is six miles in length, which said lands have been by purchase or otherwise lawfully obtayned of the native Indian proprietors thereof, &c., and the governor and company of the said colony assembled in general council by virtue of their charter afterwards to wit, ye 21st day of May, in the ninth year of King William, did give, grant, ratify and confirm &c., unto John Miller, sen., Daniel Simpkins, Zachariah Roberts, Samuel Seeley, Jeremiah Andrews, John Westcoate, John Miller, jun., and John Holmes, jun., and the rest, &c. The aforesaid parcel of land six miles square the privileges of being one entire township by patent.

We have given, granted, &c., to our loving subjects, Zachariah Roberts, sen., John Holmes, sen., Cornelius Seely, sen., Zachariah Roberts, jun., Cornelius Seely, jun., John Miller, jun., Jonathan Miller, John Holmes, jun., David Miller, Richard Holmes, Jonathan Holmes, David Holmes, Capt. Peter Mathews, Col. Jacobus Van Courtlandt, Obadiah Seely, Stephen Claeson, John Westcoate, jun., Richard Westcoate, Nathan Clarke, Joseph Hunt, Richard Ayres, Jeremiah Andrews, Joseph Palmer, David Mead, John Dibble, Daniel Jones, John Clapp, Thomas Howard and Vincent Simpkins, their heirs the said tract of 23,000 acres, called ye town of Bedford, &c. Witness our right trusty and right well beloved cousin, Edward Vicount Cornbury, Captain General and Governor in chief of our province of New York and New Jersey, and ye territories and tracts of land depending on them in America Admiral of the same, &c., in council at Fort Anne, New York, the 8th day of April, in the third year of our reign A. D. 1704.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Address of Jos. Barrett July 4, 1876. Recorder Katonah, July 7.

<sup>b</sup> Mr. Barrett says it was thus paid until 1767.

<sup>c</sup> Albany Book of Patents, vol. vii 271.

In the spring of 1714 a rate was levied on ye proprietors of ye township of Bedford, in proportion to their several properties therein, for ye raising ye sum of £50 for ye discharging of her majesties dues of quit rent for ten years.

The proportion of Col. Jacobus Van Cortlandt for 2565 acres in ye north west corner of ye patent lands was	£6 08 06
For his vineyard purchase, 607 acres	1 10 05
For his right in Dibble's purchase, 762 acres	1 18 00
For his right in ye new purchase	2 13 04

The following document is extracted from a manuscript volume entitled "the receipt book of the quit rents of Bedford, paid from 1714 to 1767."

"Received of Mr. Jonathan Miller and Joseph Seeley the sum of fifty pounds, proclamation money, being in full for ten years quit rent for the town of Bedford to the 25th of March last.

T. BYERLY, Coll.<sup>a</sup>

Witness my hand this 1st day }  
of May, A. D. 1714. }

£50, procl. money.

Upon the 12th of October, 1705, John Dibble, by a bill of sale, conveyed all his right, title and interest in the town of Bedford to Jacobus Van Cortlandt. This individual subsequently became invested in the rights of Jonathan Miller on the 15th of October, 1713, and Zachariah Roberts, on the 13th of October, 1717.

The last Indian deed for lands in Bedford bears date 23d of January, 1722, wherein Lackawawa and Peparinuk and Moses, Indian natives and owners of ye land on ye north side of Cross River, in ye bounds of Bedford, for ye sum of twenty pounds, conveyed to Joseph Seely and his heirs, &c., "being on ye north side of ye Cross River, so called, and bounded as follows: Easterly by a brook that runeth into sd river, westerly by a brook yt runs to ye Cross River, northerly by two black ash trees, southerly by ye above Cross River, &c.

Sealed and delivered in presence of

JOHN WESTCOTTE,  
ANDREW MILLS,  
ZACH. MILLS.

His  
SI ♂ MON  
mark.

His  
WITH ♀ AMS.  
mark.<sup>b</sup>

His  
WACKA ♂ MAWA.  
mark.

His  
PAPA ♀ RINUK.  
mark.

His  
SI ♀ MON.  
mark.

<sup>a</sup> Copied from original, in possession of Hon. John Jay.

<sup>b</sup> Bedford Rec. vol. ii. p. 111.



This last deed marks the end of Indian rule in Bedford. It is the only one of the "nine" deeds which is not signed by Katonah Sagamore. Hence it is to be inferred that he died between 1704 and 1722, and was spared the pain of seeing the last of his happy hunting grounds pass out of the possession of his race. Tradition tells us, that he lies buried beside his favorite wife on the heights of Cantitoe (Katonah's own land), and two immense boulders on the farm of Henry E. Pellew, Esqr., are shown as marking the spot, where, with his face towards the rising sun, lies all that was mortal of the great chieftain."<sup>a</sup> Katonah may have been the son of Powahag or Powahay the eldest son of Onox, and left issue at least two sons, who figure in the Bedford conveyances, viz., Papiag and Wackemane.

A remarkable feature about these Indian deeds of Bedford is, that with the exception of the first one, no consideration of great value is in any case named. The bargains were usually made "to the full satisfaction" of the grantors; and the doubtful phraseology leads to the suspicion that some of the early settlers had the knack of making easy bargains with the red men when they were in good humor. In many of their bounds, except wherestreams were followed, these deeds are indefinite, and it is believed that in some cases parcels of land were included in two or more deeds, and other parcels were left out entirely. They could afford to be careless about a few acres at the prices of those times."<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 23d of June, 1736, "the land to the north of Cross River was divided by lot among the twenty-nine proprietors of Bedford."

Among the largest landed of the proprietors of Bedford was Jacobus Van Cortlandt, son of Hon. Oloff Stevens Van Cortlandt and brother of Stephanus Van Cortlandt, Lord of the manor of Cortlandt (which lordship embraced the upper portion of the town). This individual had purchased lands here from the Indians and settlers as late as 1714, so that his estate, as we shall have occasion to show presently, when divided in 1743, amounted to 5,115 acres.

On the 10th of April, 1738, Jacobus Van Cortlandt devised "all his tenements and hereditaments situated within the patent and township of Bedford to his son Frederick Van Cortlandt, of Yonkers, and his three daughters: Margaret, wife of Abraham Depeyster; Anne, wife of John Chambers, and Mary, wife of Peter Jay, the parties giving mutual leases and releases to one another."<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Address by Joseph Barrett July 4th, 1876, Recorder Katonah July 7th.

<sup>b</sup> Hist. sketch of the town of Bedford delivered by Joseph Barrett, 1876. Record Katonah July 7.

<sup>c</sup> Co. Rec., lib. G., fol. 208.

Frederick Van Cortlandt, one of the above devisees, obtained a release from the following freeholders of Bedford on the 21st of September, 1741 :

Hezekiah Roberts,	John Holmes,	Daniel Holly,
John Miller,	Jonathan Westcoat,	Nathan Clark,
Joseph Seely,	Richard Westcoat,	Moses Fountain,
Jonathan Holmes,	Daniel Miller,	John Miller,
Zachariah Mills,	Richard Holmes,	Samuel Miller,
Jonathan Seely.	Daniel Haight,	Samuel Barras,
Ebenezer Holmes,	Philip Ayres,	Ebenezer Owen.
Jonathan Miller,	Vincent Simpkins.	

From an original map, drawn up by Samuel Purdy, surveyor, it appears that a partition of Jacobus Van Cortlandt's estate took place in 1743. To Frederick Van Cortlandt was allotted 1,424 acres ; to Abraham De Peyster, 1,110 acres ; to John Chambers, 1,282 acres ; and to Peter Jay, 1,299 acres.

Upon the death of Peter Jay, Esq., in 1782, his share fell to three sons, Peter, Frederick and John. The latter was subsequently invested with a large portion of the original allotment.<sup>a</sup>

By the decease of the Honorable John Jay, in 1829, his son, the late William Jay, Esq., became the sole proprietor of the Bedford estate, which since his death has passed to his son, the Hon. John Jay ; the Hon. John Jay, therefore, is the only descendant of Jacobus Van Cortlandt that owns a foot of the original patent in the town of Bedford. Abraham De Peyster sold to various individuals. The descendants of the ancient proprietors of the Hop grounds (resident in Bedford) are still very numerous, viz.: the Greens, Millers, Holmes, Roberts, Amblers, Clarks, Ayres, Westcoats, Simpkins, Meads, Webbs, Clasons and Higgins.

NEW YORK, 2d Nov., 1785.

DEAR SIR: Mr. Taylor, the Bearer hereof, waits upon you with a petition which we propose to present to the Superior Court of Common Pleas for Westchester Co., in order to have commissioners appointed, agreeable to a late act of Assembly, to divide the lands of the late Mrs. Chambers, at Bedford, among her Devisees. They are now in a neglected, ruinous Condition, and until divided and properly attended to, will continue to decrease in value. I intend to go to Bedford next week, in order to see this Business put in a proper train. Be pleased to sign the Petition and return it to Mr. Taylor.

Mrs. Jay joins with me in desiring you to present our best Compliments to Mrs. De Peyster and the rest of the Family.

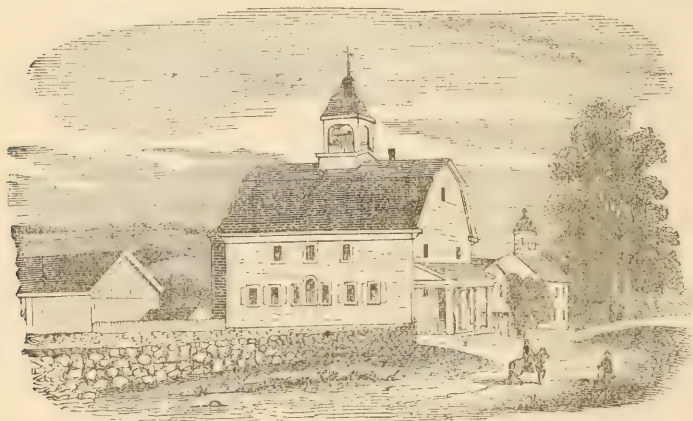
I am, Dear sir, your most ob't serv't,

(Signed.) JOHN JAY.

MR. JAMES DE PEYSTER, Jamaica.

<sup>a</sup>. The following letter of Chief Justice John Jay to James DePeyster shows that the lands of Anne Van Cortlandt, daughter of Jacobus, and wife of Judge John Chambers, and sister of Mary Jay, mother of the writer, had not been divided as late as 1785.

The village of Bedford is delightfully situated a little north of the Mehanas River, in a large and fertile vale almost environed by high hills. The surrounding country, is well wooded, and watered by several streams tributary to the Croton. The principal of these are the Myanos the Pepemighting, misnamed the Kisco, the Cisqua or Beaver dam, and the Peppeneghek or Cross River. Bedford was for a long time a half shire town with White Plains, (which is located sixteen miles south), but within a few years last past, the courts have been held entirely at the latter place.



Court House, Bedford.

"The present Court House was built in 1787. Courts had been held in Bedford in the Presbyterian Church to that date, and Bedford continued to be a half shire town of the county until 1868. The Board of Supervisors frequently met at Bedford about the end of the last century. In 1723, Richard Holmes, collector of this town, was "required forthwith" to collect a tax upon the "freeholders, Residents, Inhabitants and Sojourners" within the town of Bedford for the purpose of "finishing ye Court-House and Gaol in ye County." This Court-House was probably the one at Westchester, for White Plains was not made the County seat until 1758. The tax for this town amounted to the enormous sum of two pounds one shilling and nine-pence."<sup>a</sup>

As early as 1680 the proprietors of the Hop-ground (then residing at Stamford) appointed a committee "for the purpose of laying out a town spot, and house lots, the latter to consist at least of three acres each, also a town common, field or park, was directed to be laid out." At

<sup>a</sup> Address by Joseph Barrett, July 4. 1876, Recorder, Katonah, July 7.

this period the Hop ground formed a part of Stamford township within Fairfield county, and was therefore under the jurisdiction of Connecticut. In 1681 the general court of that colony ordered the laying out of a plantation at the Hop ground.

On the 11th of October, 1681, the proprietors of the Hop ground appointed a committee to lay out and divide the residue of the land at the Hop ground. It was also agreed to receive eleven inhabitants in order to form a town, and a committee appointed to go and view the land for the purpose of laying out a cart way to the Hop ground.

"Upon the 11th of May, 1682, the general court ordered that the name of the town be henceforth called *Bedford*."

Bedford has for a long period been celebrated for its schools. "The Bedford academy was one of the first Institutions chartered by the Regents of the University after their incorporation in 1784, but is not now subject to their supervision."<sup>a</sup>

The Bedford Female Institute, which is situated on a beautiful hill, (formerly known as part of the "East Field") surrounded by a grove of forest trees, is an incorporated institution and under the control of a board of trustees, subject to the Regents of the University. "In 1813 the town voted to comply with the State act providing for common schools and elected the requisite board of Commissioners and Inspectors. Since that time the town has maintained (besides the Academies and Seminaries already alluded to) fifteen public schools and has been fully up to the average rural towns in matters of education."<sup>b</sup>

"Bedford yields nothing that is interesting in a business point of view. Before the construction of the Harlem Rail Road there was quite a lively traffic carried on by means of stages along the Boston post road which passes through the villages between New York and Danbury."

Accommodations for travellers have always been had from a very early period—"as early as 1698 a hotel became a necessity; and Cornelius Seely, sen, was chosen as keeper of the "Ordinary" "to give entertainment according to law."<sup>c</sup>

The next mention of taverns is nearly a hundred years later when six "Inns" were alluded to for which the license fees were 2 pounds and 10 shillings each."<sup>d</sup>

A large hotel still occupies the site of Seely's tavern in the village, (kept by Robert J. Jimmerson) which affords excellent accommodations

<sup>a</sup> Address of Joseph Barrett.

<sup>b</sup> Address of Joseph Barrett, July 4, 1876.

<sup>c</sup> Ditto Bedford, M.S.S. p. 32.

<sup>d</sup> Address of Joseph Barrett, July 4, 1876.



to parties visiting the town for the salubrity of its air or the beauty of its scenery.

The old burying ground of the Town is situated on the declivity near the Methodist meeting house in the village directly under Bates's hill—This spot was formerly a part of the "common" (of which only "the green" now remains), laid out in 1681.

Tradition says that the Indians at one time interred their dead here. It is quite certain, however, that the white settlers used it from the beginning for burying their dead. April 7th, 1784, it was voted at a town meeting "That the Burying Ground be fenced in agreeable as it was laid out for or sett apart for Burying the dead." Again it was "voted that James McDonald, Philip Peck and James Trowbridge be a committee to superintend the work and see that it be done."<sup>a</sup>

Occasional notes in the town records refer to repairing the fence by setting new posts &c., until 1802, the care of it was made over to the Presbyterian Society; this continued three years, when the town voted to raise by subscription money to build a stone wall about the ground; afterwards it was the practice to rent it "for the pasture of sheep and calves only."<sup>b</sup>

The ground contains many curious memorials.

The	Sacred	W. W.
Decea	to the memory of	here lies the
sed	COL. LEWIS McDONALD ESQ.	body of Thomas
Thomas	and Sarah his wife	Woolsey
Woolsey	being a native of North Britain	also
born in	borne at Strathspey 1709	Jacob Brian
the year	and departed this life 24 July, 1777.	son of Thomas
A. D., 1665.		born Sept. 1773 ob. 1760.

The first religious society organized at Bedford in 1680-1 was Congregational, at that time the established religion of the Colony of Connecticut—so that it was a kind of Church and State affair, for the town at regular meetings transacted all the business of a religious nature.<sup>c</sup>

The proprietors of the Hop Ground appear to have made early provision for the erection and support of a church, for, on the 22d of March, 1680, the "proprietors agree that what the committee had done in laying out ye town plot and the house lots shall stand, and the place they reserved for the town common, and the town lot to be as they laid it out and the meeting-house shall be set upon the common so layed out, namely, the rock called Bates his Hill."

<sup>a</sup> Bedford Town Rec, Book ii, p. 4.

<sup>b</sup> Address of Joseph Barrett, July 4, 1876.

<sup>c</sup> Hist. of Presb. Ch. Bedford, by Rev. P. B. Heroy.

In 1681, the General Court, held at Hartford, instructed the committee then residing in Stamford, who had been appointed to lay out a plantation at the hop ground, "to take care that there should be a suitable lot laid out for the first minister of the place, a lot for the minister forever."

The first minister of the Congregational society who preached in Bedford was the Rev. John Prudden who, in 1675, the General Courts of Connecticut ordered to resume his settlement in Rye. It would appear that he came from where he had formerly preached for some time. In the town we have this minute:

"Dec. 2d, 1681. They agree to give Mr. priddon, of Gemeco, (Jamaica,) a call to be a minister in this place. Joseph Theale the chief military officer of the train band of Bedford is chosen to goe to Mr. priddon to declare their mind in order to his coming among them as above; and Abra. Ambler who was appointed by the Court at Hartford to grant warrants to officers & witnesses, and to join persons in marriage, is desired so write to Mr. priddon in their name and behalf:" Mr. Prudden accepted their invitation and came and preached for them some time."

Mr. Prudden was a son of the Rev. Peter Prudden, who came to New Haven in company with the celebrated John Davenport and had charge of the church in Westerfield, Conn., in 1638. John was born at Milford, Conn., Nov. 9th, 1645, to which place his father had removed, with a few of his congregation, in 1640, and began the settlement of that town. He graduated at Harvard College in 1668, and was twenty-five years of age when he came to Jamaica,"<sup>a</sup> March 6th, 1670. From Jamaica he went to Rye in 1675, and came here as we have seen in 1681. He subsequently returned to Jamaica, and "on the 23d of Aug., 1692, received a call from the First Presbyterian Church of Newark, N. J., to succeed Mr. Pierson, which he accepted. He continued minister of this church until Jan. 9th, 1699, when for some cause, not now known, he was dismissed. He died at Newark, Dec. 11th, 1725. His epitaph is as follows:

Here lies the body  
OF THE  
REV. MR. JOHN PRUDDEN  
minister of the Gospel,  
who departed this life 11 Dec., 1725,  
AGED 80 YEARS.

"He sustained a worthy character as a man of sense and religion, though he does not appear to have been a popular preacher. His de-

<sup>a</sup> Hist. of Presb. Ch. Jamaica, L. I., by Jas. M. Macdonald, p. 21.

scendants are numerous and reside chiefly in Morris Co., N. J.; some of whom are said to have been distinguished as worthy and useful members of society."<sup>a</sup>

Jan. 28th, 1688, the Rev. Thomas Denham was called and settled in Bedford, and the town ordered that £20 be raised for his salary. He was son of John Denham, deacon, and one of the first purchasers of Dartmouth; preached at Sheepscott in Massachusetts colony (now in Maine), and suffered great losses in the destruction of that settlement in 1675 during King Philip's war. He came to Rye in 1677 and remained till 1684. Says a historian, "He was advanced in life when he came and was held in great respect by the people here who gave him proprietary rights, which descended to his son Isaac who became one of the principal men of the place. Mr. Denham had preached a long time in the town of Rye previous to his settlement here." This was evidently his last settlement, for it is reported that he died in Bedford after a few months' labor, aged 67. His will is said to be on record in the Court House at White Plains, and his grave is on the hillside in our old graveyard in the village.<sup>b</sup>

During the next eight or ten years the people seemed to be supplied with the labors of intelligent laymen in carrying on the Sabbath and conducting their religious services.

September 23d, 1689, the town by vote agreed that "in case Mr. Abram Ambler, senr, will come up and carry on the Sabbath as God shall enable him, we will give him the sum of £20 a year as long as he shall perform the work among us." October 15th, 1689, we have this minute which somewhat modifies the former vote:

"At a town meeting the town doth agree to build Mr. Abram Ambler Senor, a frame forty foote long & twenty-two foote wide and to set it up fit for clabording & shingling and to rais it up by the last of March to come after the deate thereof & the house above mentioned is to be teen foote & a half between ioyns and the frame above mentioned is to be set up upon the consideration that Mr. Abraham Ambler, Senor, will com up as often as he can conveniently to cary on the Lord's day amongst us one year yt he may settle with us." May 14th, 1690, seven months after the former vote, at another town meeting we have the following minute: "The town doth by vote chuse Zachariah Roberts for to cary on the Sabba th day whill they can be otherways provided."

Jannewary, 1694, we have this vote: "The town by vote doth agree that as much land e meadow as can be spaired e not predigious to highways yt lyeth one the norwest sid of whipping-post brook shall be kept for a ministar e to be disposed to now man els but a minister."

<sup>a</sup> Hist. Presbyterian Ch. Jamaica, L. I., by Jas. M. Macdonald.

<sup>b</sup> Hist of Presbyterian Ch. Bedford, by Rev. P. B. Heroy.

October 16th, 1694, the town agreed to buy a house and lot of John Ambler for a parsonage, "provided his price do not exceed £25." In all probability, the spot on which the Presbyterian church (built in 1872) now stands is a part of this original purchase.

"February 21st, 1694-5. The town by uote doth chois John Holmes, Sen., Zachariah Roberts, John Wascott e Daniell Jones to carry on the Sabbath day according to theyr descresion whill they ear other ways provided. 2ndly. The town doth by vote mack choice of Cornelus Selly to carry on the Lord's day along with ye others chosen e yt in Daniell Jones roome.

March 21st, 1698. The inhabitance of the town of Bedford by a maiger uote doth order e agree yt. every acre of land e meadow within the bounds of Bedford that is alooted unto pertickler persons; both improved e not improved; that is to say, what every man doth possess for their one; that man or parson shall pay three pence an acre yearly for evry acre towards the maintaining of a minister amongst us.

2nly. The town by a maigor uote doth order that this above said uote shall be presented unto the Jenarall Court at Herford, that it may be established as a law for the town of Bedford." Their supplies all seemed to leave them, and "ieneuary 9th, 1698-9: the town by a maigor uote doth order that there shall be a request made to the minstars of the county to inquire for us, e to acquaint us where we may be likely to ataine to a ministar and for his encuredgment we do agre upon serious consideration for his incuredgment to give him a house loot e forty acres of land e medow; e thurty pounds a yer in curant provision pay. February 8th, 1698-9. The town by a maigor vote doth agree to improve the town loot this year in the town way towards the maintainance of a ministar e to mack theyer fence, now belonging unto ye house loot e euery inhabitant to mack theyer equall sharis up with good sofsiant fine rail fence as it shall be layed out by ye townes men e it is to pass the vewars;—e the town dos agree to plow, plant e tend the loot in a way of a town rate, e if any refuse or nedgleckt to dew theyr shair of fence up by the fifteenth of march next to come shall pay four shillings a rood to the town men as they may have it dun up as above said.

"16th of December, 1692, David Mead was chosen by the town to keep the town drum, to keep it in repair and to beat it when necessary, and to be allowed 10 shillings yearly."

Prior to the use of bells in New England, the meetings were summoned by beat of drum, or the blowing of the conch shell: to this practice the poet alludes:

"New England's Sabbath day,"  
Is heaven-like, still and pure,  
Then Israel walks the way  
Up to the temple's door:  
The time we tell,  
When there to come,  
By beat of drum,  
Or sounding shell.



In 1699 the town votes to exchange with Stewhen Clason 4 acres of swamp and give him 4 acres of upland if he will "beat the Drum until this day twelve month," the town to keep the drum in repair.

November 14th, 1699. The town by a maigor uote doth grant yt Mr. Copp shall have the use of ye towns land e medow in ye feild this next year without they want it for a ministar."

Their efforts for a minister were successful, for before the close of the year we find these records:

desember; 26 1699: The town by a maigor uote doth agre to give unto Mr. Joseph Morgan upon his comming to carry on ye ministry amongst us, seuerall particklars as followeth for his settlement:

1ly to give him all yt rit of land e medow which the Town bought of Mr. Ambler e of his son John upon the condisions of his comming and macking his abood three years with us.

2nly To build him a hous two story high, twenty-seven foot long e twenty on foots wid with a leantu e a chamber chimibly e the condishans that if Mr Morgan liveth e dyeth with us the house shall be his on e his ayers for euer, e otherwise if Mr. Morgan see cause upon any acount to leave us he shall pay to the town the ually of the chardg yt by an acount taken there of shall be giuen.

3ly To giue him for maintenance for the first year forty pounds in good currant prouision paye and plant and mannure four acres of Land.

4ly To maniage for years following and till ten acres of Land for winter grain—the produce of ye same for him yerly=& twenty pounds in good currant prouision paye and more hereafter as god shall inable us if he stands in need thereof—two pounds of the same to be Delivered at Stamford or horse neck, if he Desires it.

5ly. To cut and cart to his Dore all his fire wood from yeare to yeare.

6ly to transport him and his famely to bedford or to be at ye charg theire of.

Jenen 1st. The town by a magor uote ses caus to repeall part of the first and second uote passed desember 26th, '99, e to resarue the hous e the whole homestead to themselves, except Mr. Joseph Morgan liueth & dyeth with us.

2ly. The town by a maiger uote, doth chuse e mack chois of Mr. John Copp. Stephen Clason, John Miller, iuner, Richard Wascott, David Mead for theire commitie, for to agree with Mr. Joseph Morgan for his settlement at Bedford acording to the acts of the town, e to tack the caire of ye whole manigment for his maintinance in case he commeth to dwell with us.

Joseph Morgan was the grandson of James Morgan, who settled in Conn., 1647, with the first settlers. He was the son of Joseph Morgan, born in New London Nov. 6th, 1672, and was graduated at Yale College. During the first year of his settlement he was ordained by the ministers of Fairfield County, and preached a sermon, according to the custom of that time. June 12, 1700, he was indicted under the act of 1693 for settling a ministry, but was acquitted. Two years after, 1702,

he received the degree of Bachelor of Arts, as one of the first class of graduates of Yale. When he commenced preaching, contrary to the practice of the times, he used notes, but some of his brethren protested so strongly that he quickly abandoned them. Having ministered at Bedford and during part of the time in the neighboring town of East Chester for nearly four years, he removed to Greenwich, Conn., and preached there till 1708. "It seems that in 1705, to encourage and sustain Mr. Morgan, the right had been granted to him to build a mill at the mouth of Coscob River, now known as Davis's mill. He built the mill and went to live near it that he might manage it in person, and see that his *people's grists* were *well ground*. The congregation, after a while, thought his zeal in this matter was rather greater than they had bargained for, especially as his position down at the mill made him inaccessible to the people, and rendered his visits among them angel-like, 'few and far between.' Finding remonstrance, however, vain, they first referred the case to the neighboring ministers, to say what should be done. This showed forbearance on their part. Meanwhile, the good brother, as he had to take his salary, according to the custom of those early times, in grain, and a short allowance at that, thought it wise to stick to his mill. Whereupon the *Horseneck* people, never wanting in spirit when spirit was called for, grew impatient. They sent their committee, Ebenezer Mead, Joshua Knapp and Caleb Knapp, chief men among them, to press the question to an immediate decision, whether Mr. Morgan would quit personally attending his mill (adding this, perhaps, to all other objections, that a white dress was not in character for a Congregational minister), and attend to the parish. If he would not, they were to strike off his official head at a blow, and provide a successor. Now the inventions of our day are wonderful, especially in the line of sharp-cutting machines, mowers, reapers, etc.; but our congregations, I will venture to say, have invented no instrument for disposing of refractory ministers that can go ahead of this ecclesiastical guillotine of 1708. Matters were now brought at once to an issue. Mr. Morgan decided to abide by his mill, and the committee decided to consider the pulpit vacant and provide a successor." He left there, and settled in Freehold, N. J., 1709. In September, 1728, complaints were made against him to the Synod that he practiced astrology, countenanced promiscuous dancing, and transgressed in drink. But these complaints were dismissed for want of proof. He left Freehold and went to Hopewell and Maidenhead. Here he was again charged with intemperance, and was suspended from the ministry; but he was finally restored through the kindness of some of his brethren. He published many of

his sermons and treatises on other topics. He preached a funeral sermon on the death of his son, Joseph, who was graduated at Yale in 1723, and died one year after. His text, Ps. cxxxvii. 1, and Job x. 2. Nothing is heard of Mr. Morgan after 1740. His name disappears from the minutes of Synod. In 1702-3, the people called the Rev. John Jones, and here we have the first regular call on the part of the people to a minister, and his reply in his own words, which have come down to us as a precious relic of nearly two hundred years ago:

"Desember 7th, 1702, the town by a unanimitis uote doth Mr. John Jones thanks for his labors with us the day past in ye work of ye ministry, and if ye sd Mr. Jones according to our unlighted desires continueth in ye work aforesd three months among us, then we, ye sd town, will pay him ye sum of teen pounds in money or equivalent to money upon ye account of our furdur acquaintance, he with us & we with him in order to settle him, ye said Mr. Jones with us, if we & he agree at ye three months' end." Mr. Jones, his answer:

To my christian friends and neighbors, the inhabitants of ye town of Bedford, after dew salutations to you premised; wishing grace, marcy and peace from God ye Father & from ye lord Jesus Christ, may be multiplyed towards you & yours, these lines are to intermate yt yours I received from ye hands of your worthy messengers, Mr. Roberts, justice of ye peace, Mr. Miller and Mr. John Holmes.

I unfainedly bless God and thank you for your grateful acceptance of my labors in ye ministry among you yesterday, and do desire yt you and I may be more and more faithful in eury good work to ye glory of His name and our mutuall edification and comfort, and I do here furdur intermate yt I have no objection to make to your proposalls for my encouragement in ye work of Christ among you, but accept them humbly and thankfully, and shall by ye Lord's help, without whome I can do nothing, ingadge in your seruice, yt God as I appryhend calls me unto for a quarter of a year among yourselves, begging your prayers that I may grow in gifts and grace and yt my poor labors may be blessed for ye promoting of ye spirituall and eternall wellfair of your precious and emortal souls, which will be to me great joy and comfort which is in all haste, from your friend and servant, for Christ's sake.

JOHN JONES, from my study  
Bedford, Desember 7th, 1702.

A true copy received from Mr. Jones which I received and entered.

ZACHARIAH ROBERTS,  
*Clark.*

After the three months had expired, it seems that the people desired to continue Mr. Jones as their minister, as we learn from the following recorded correspondence:

Feb. 15th, 1702-3, the town by a unanimous vote doth agree to give unto Mr. John Jones minister of ye gospell, all yt right of land and

meadow with ye house and home loot which ye town bought of Mr. Ambler upon ye account yt sd. Mr. Jones settle with us in Bedford and carryeth on ye work of ye ministry among us—and forty pounds a year for his maintenance in speshe as followeth—that is to say—winter wheat at 4s. 6d. pr bushell, ry 3s. pr bushell, flax 6d. pr pound, beef one penny half-penny pr pound, pork two pence half-penny pr pound. And in case Mr. John Jones continueth with us until he be settled and ordained in gospell order amongst us, then ye above sd house, land and medow to be his owne for him & his forever; as witness our hands thus underwritten: Zachariah Roberts Clark, John Miller, John Holmes, sen'r, Cornelius Seely, John Holmes, Jr., Richard Holmes, Richard Wescott, Nathan Clark, Cornelius Seely, Junr., Jonathan Holmes, David Miller, John Wescott, David Holmes, Zachariah Roberts, Jun'r, Joseph Hunt, Jno. Dibbell, Thomas Howard, Joseph Palmer.

## REV. JOHN JONES' REPLY.

TO THE INHABITANTS OF BEDFORD.

*My Good Friends:*

These are in answer to your unanimous motion made unto me respecting the work of the ministry to be carried on in your place; that having endeavoured at Due consideration of the motion I apprehend encouridgment on the one hand And Discouridgment on the other; encouridging To me Are my own Affection. Altho unworthy According to my poor capacity in that way to be serving the interest of my Dearest Lord and Master. And if I may be profitable to the eternall good of Precious and Immortall Soules, with which is to Be Added in Relation to your Place, your unanimous Agreement, And good Affection manifested During my Late Short Abode with you. And your universal Desires of my further Improvement in that Sacred Employment with you; Discouridgeing to me is the uncertain face of things with Respect to the government's allowance and appropriation of my improvement freed from any Impositions which I doe comply with, however in fine my thoughts are these, that soe long as I may Diserne the Providence of God going Before, Guiding and Directing me continuing your good Affections to my Service, And Reasonable Encouridgement and Support, preventing and Diverting any snares or yoke uneasy to my conscience, your Precious and Dear Souls, To Be Diligent in the ministerial Improvement Among you. And to Banish all thoughts of the neglecting you, or Deserting the Spirituall work and Employment by you desired, this I conceive the Present needful, from your Affectionate friend and Enclined to Be According to Power—which (with thankful acceptance of your late Proposals for my Encouragement In Christ's Service Among you) is All from your Absent friend And Servant for Christ's Sake—

JOHN JONES.

Given in Att a Publick  
Town Meeting at Bedford  
upon their Desires of my  
Answer

Aprill ye 2d 1703

J. J.

November 30th, 1703, the town by a maijor vote doth make chois of Jonathan Miller, Nathan Clark John Holmes Jr. and Jonathan Holmes



to take a list and make Mr. Jones his this year's rate and to gather it for him.

March 5th 1704-5 the town by a maijor vote chuseth Nathan Clark, Colleccter to geather Mr Jones, his half year rate.

John Jones was the eldest son of the Rev. John Jones "a man of some note in the early history of the New England churches," pastor of the Congregational society at Fairfield, Conn. He was born at Concord in 1639 and graduated at Harvard College<sup>a</sup> after preaching there a short time finally went to Greenwich.

Very little is known of the history of the Presbyterian Church in Bedford for the next sixteen years; in the meantime the church had changed its form of government, from that of Independent to that of Presbyterian. Who supplied the people with the gospel, we have not been able to find out; but God preserved and fostered the little band of Christian men and women, while they planted their feet upon the good sound scriptural principles of Presbyterianism: Here they stood, fortified by faith and prayer, until God heard and answered, and sent them from far over the sea a man after His own heart, to break unto them the Bread of Life.

*May 3d, 1720.*—Rev. William Tennent was invited here to preach the gospel. It is not certain whether he was ever regularly installed—probably not, as he united first with the Presbytery of Philadelphia after he left here—for he remained here only a short time. The church, in all probability, belonged at this time to the Presbytery of Long Island, which numbered but two or three ministers, and it was not convenient then, as now, to hold a meeting of the Presbytery. Mr. Tennent was born in Ireland in 1673, where he received a liberal education at Trinity College, Dublin, and where also he entered the ministry of the Protestant Episcopal Church and afterward became a dissenter and a Presbyterian from conviction. He was first settled in East Chester, New York. From there he came to Bedford, and from Bedford, after a little more than a year's labor, he went to Bensalem and Smithfield churches, in Pennsylvania. From there he accepted a call to Neshaminy, 1726, where a rich man, by the name of Logan, a relative of his, gave him fifty acres or land, on the Neshaminy Creek, on which to locate and carry on a school, which he had already commenced. Here he built a small house, about twenty feet square, mostly of logs, rudely

<sup>a</sup> The will of Rev. John Jones Pastor of the Church of Fairfield in New England is recorded in that place. In it he mentions his wife Susanna, six children, John Eliphalet, four daughters, Sarah Wilson, widow, (Ruth Jones), Rebeckah Hull, Elizabeth Hill. To his eldest son John Jones, he leaves part of his library to whitt the works of St. Augustine, Chrysostom, and other Authors usually called the "Father's." Mr. Gold and Mr. Pell of Fairfield were appointed overseers there on Jan'y 17th, 1664. Fairfield Book of Rec. vol. ii p. 5, 1665, 1675.

shaped, cut out of the woods from the very spot where the house was erected; and being skilled in the Latin language, so as to speak and write it almost as well as his mother tongue, he continued his school, and educated some of the first and most eminent ministers that ever adorned the American pulpit. This was called the Log College, out of contempt, by its enemies. Every vestige of it has long since passed away, but this was the germ whence sprung Princeton College, with all its vast influence and renown, giving character in a great measure to the intelligence and usefulness of the learned men in this country. Mr. Tennent continued till the close of life in Neshaminy, where he died May 6th, 1746, aged seventy three years.

While Mr. Tennent was settled in Bedford, through the munificence and liberality of the people, he became possessor of some land, which his son Gilbert, in his last will and testament, gave to the Trustees of the Presbyterian Society of Bedford; for on the records of the town we find the following minute:

“May 16: 1749. Gilbert Tennent of Philadelphia in the Colony of Pennsylvania, Gentlemen; Son and heir at law unto Rev. William Tennent, formerly of Bedford in Westchester County, in the Colony of New York, but lately of Neshamina, in the Colony of Pennsylvania, deceased, for the promoting and supporting of the Gospel of Jesus Christ according and under the Presbyterian Discipline, in the above said Bedford, gave to John Holmes, John Miller and Zebediah Mills, trustees, and their successors, several pieces of land formerly possessed by his Reverend Father for the use and support of the ministry.

#### DEED OF GIFT TO PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.

To all those people to whom these presents shall come sendeth greeting. Know yee, that I, Gilbert Tennent, of Philadelphia, in Colony of Pennsylvania, gentleman, son and heir-in-law unto Rev. Mr. William Tennent, formerly of Bedford, in Westchester County in the Colony of New York, but lately of Neshamina, in the Colony of Pennsylvania, deceased, have for divers good reasons to me there unto moving, but more especially for the promoting and supporting the Gospel of Jesus Christ according to and under the Presbyterian Discipline in the above said Bedford, given, granted, quitted, devised, enfeofed, quit claim and make over unto John Holmes and John Miller, Esqs., Zebediah Mills, yeoman, all of the above said Bedford as hereafter mentioned, formerly possessed by my Reverend Father, viz., one house and home lot containing by estimation about ten acres; two lots in the east field containing eight acres each; one piece on the south side of Mahanns River, containing by estimation twelve acres; three acres on a plain called South Plain; one acre and a quarter in a meadow called Theal's meadow; one and a half acre in a meadow called David's Hill meadow, two acres and a half in a meadow called the great meadow, &c., &c.

Dated 16th May, 1749.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Bedford's Records, Book No. 3, p. 99.

From time to time the Trustees have sold the land belonging to the parsonage, which formerly consisted of a large Tract, for the more profitable use of the minister, until there is not more than eight or ten acres left at the present date, May 27, 1874."

After Mr. Tennent, in 1721, there is no certainty as to who preached here until 1740, when the Rev. Robert Sturgeon was minister in Bedford. He was a native of Scotland. He left his native place under some embarrassment and came to New England, and was licensed by a council greatly to the regret of Cotton Mather, by reason of his conduct here and at home. He is said, in President Stile's Papers, to have been settled in Bedford, N. Y., for twelve years. But here seems a discrepancy in the history of those times, for the Presbytery of New Brunswick installed here, in 1743, the Rev. Samuel Sacket. This would hardly seem probable if Mr. Sturgeon still sustained any relation to the people; but, says Mr. Webster, the historian, when so many other ties were sundered rudely, even this unbrotherly act may have been committed. Mr. Sturgeon was present in 1745, at the first meeting of the Synod of New York, as a member of the New York Presbytery. His name is not mentioned after 1750, and where he finally settled and died we have not the means at hand of knowing.

The next minister of the Presbyterian Church was Rev. Samuel Sacket, son of the Rev. Richard Sacket, minister of the Second Society of Greenwich in 1717, who was, in all probability, installed pastor here by the Presbytery of New Brunswick. He acted also as a sort of missionary in this part of the country, and in 1747 Crumpond obtained his services for half of his time; he supplied Salem, also, and Peekskill. In December 1749, he was released from his labors in Crumpond, now Yorktown, and gave the whole of his time to Bedford; but resigned the care of the Church here in April 4th, 1753, the affections of the people being alienated from him after ten years' labor. He left here and settled at once over the Church of Hanover in Cortland Manor. He was dismissed from here on April 1st, 1760, and the next year was installed again in Crumpond. The Church Missionary of Hanover, immediately wrote to England that the new light preacher had left them. Mr. Sacket had a great deal of trouble with his brethren in the Presbytery, as he differed widely from them in both the doctrines and government of the Church. He preached for twenty years in Yorktown or Crumpond, and finally died there June 5th, 1784. His tomb in the cemetery bears record that he was judicious, faithful, laborious and successful in his ministry.

On the resignation of Mr. Sacket in 1753, the Rev. Eliphalet Ball was called as pastor, and was installed Dec. 31st, 1754. He created quite

a division and difficulty in the church, and was finally dismissed Dec. 21st, 1758. He died in Balston in 1797. After one year's vacancy, Dec. 13th, 1769, the Rev. Samuel Mills was installed pastor of Bedford Church, and remained until May 18th, 1786, when the Presbytery of Dutchess County met and dissolved the relation between him and the church, and the same day installed the Rev. John Davenport as pastor of the Church. But Mr. Mills, though nominally pastor of the church from 1769 to 1786, was absent from the charge for several years—having been driven from Bedford by the distressing circumstances attending the war. In the meantime, their former pastor, Rev. Eliphalet Ball returned and assumed the supply and charge of the church, and remained in this connection till 1784 when he was dismissed. Mr. Ball having spent four years at Amity, in Woodbridge, Conn., removed to Saratoga County New York, 1788, taking with him a part of his Bedford congregation. The settlement for a long time was called Ball Town, now Ballston.

Mr. Ball was the stated supply of this church in the stormy times of the American Revolution, when the people were struggling for their independence. When the old church, built in 1680, was burned to the ground, having stood an hundred years, and having proved amiable to the hearts of the people of God for a century, they stood silently by and saw it reduced to ashes by the British army under Lieut. Col. Tarleton. An old veteran still lingering among us, almost ninety years old, remembers having heard her mother say she saw the smoke of the old church rising to heaven, as sweet and holy incense, as the timbers yielded to the devouring element, though living a mile and a half distant. Mr. Ball saw his own house (the parsonage), his church, and the entire village reduced to ashes by the British troops; but he lived to see a new house of worship built on a more commanding spot, and no doubt on a larger scale; so that the latter house exceeded the former in its external proportions, if not in the internal manifestations of the spirit of God. We have reason to believe that the records of the church kept in the parsonage were destroyed with it, as we have no records of the church preserved until after peace was declared.

The elders of the church when the second house of worship was built, were Ebenezer Miller, Jacob Smith, Moses St. John, and soon after were added Eli Tyler, Justus Harris, Peter Fleming, Stephen Benedict and Joseph Owen.

Rev. Samuel Mills, who was nominally the pastor of the church, though not present continually from 1769 to 1786, was the son of Rev. Zedediah Mills, of Ripton. He was graduated at Yale College in 1765. In 1782 he was preaching at Patterson (then Fredericksburg), and there he



continued till 1789, when he joined the Anabaptists and was dismissed from connection with the Presbytery. He died in 1815.

In 1783, Capt. Lewis M. Donald gave to the Presbyterian Society the land on which the second house of worship was built. Here is the deed of gift as recorded in the town records:

#### DEED OF GIFT FOR SITE OF SECOND PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.

"To all christian People to whom these presents shall come, Greeting. Know ye that I Lewis M. Donald, formerly of Bedford in Westchester Co., state of New York but now a Resident of Long Island, for certain causes me thereunto moving & out of Love & Affection for the Encouragement of Virtue and the propagation of the gospel, do hereby Bequeath & give unto the Presbyterian Society of Bedford in county & State abovesaid & to their Heirs & Successors forever, as long as they shall Remain a Society and as long as they shall stand in Want of a House of Public Worship or a Spot of Ground to Erect a House of Worship thereon, one half acre of Land, Situate & Lying & being in the Township of Bedford in the County & State aforesaid, Bounded (as follows. Lying on an Eminence above the spot of ground where the former meeting House stood) Easterly by the Road that Runs from the Town to Cantito, Westerly, Northerly and Southerly by my own Land which land was purchased of John Eliot. Reference being had to the original conveyance to have & to hold the above Bequeathed & given Spot of Land with all & singular the rights and privileges thereunto belonging—to the above mentioned Society, to their Heirs and Successors, agreeable to the above mentioned Terms and Conditions, and also I the said Lewis M Donald, do for myself, my Heirs and assigns, Covenant with the said Society, their Heirs & successors, that at and until the Ensealing of these presents, I am well seized of the Premesis as a good indefeasible Estate in fee simple and have good Right to Dispose of the same in manner & form above written, & the same is free of all Incumbrance whatsoever, and furthermore I, the said Lewis M Donald, do by these presents bind myself & my Heirs to Warrant and defend to the above Coveanted premises to the said Society, their Heirs & successors against all claims and Demands Whatsoever, in Testimony & confirmation of which I have hereunto set my Hand & seal this the sixth Day of August in the year of our Lord christ one thousand seven hundred and Eighty & three and the Seventh year of our Independence.

LEWIS M DONALD. \*\*\*

in the presence of

STEPHEN CORNWELL

MARY CORNWELL."

On the back of this old document we have this record:

"Be it Remembered that on the 14th day of June 1792, personally appeared before me, Ebenezer Lockwood Esquire, first Judge of the Court of Common pleas in & for the County of Westchester, the within named Lewis M Donald the granter to the within deed of gift and acknowledged that he signed & sealed

& Delivered the same as his free & Voluntary act & Deed and having Examined the same and finding no material mistake, Erasure or Interlineation Do allow the same to be recorded.

EBEN LOCKWOOD."

The records of the town inform us that the town meeting of 1784 and 5 were held in the meeting house. The judges of the court of common pleas and the supervisors of the county held their meetings May 9th, 1786, in the Presbyterian meeting-house in Bedford, so that we have conclusive proof that this second house of worship was built where it now stands, but which has been vacated by the people for one larger and more commodious, built on the ground owned by the church next to the parsonage.

In 1785 the Presbyterian Society was incorporated by the name of the Trustees for the Presbyterian Church and Congregation of Bedford, to be governed in Discipline and Worship according to the Directory of the now established Church of Scotland. The first Trustees elected were Zebediah Mills, Israel Lyon and Joseph Owen. These were men, no doubt, who were prominent in erecting the church in 1789.

The next minister called here was Rev. John Devenport, May 18th, 1786. He was born in Philippi, New Jersey, Aug. 11th, 1752, graduated at the college of New Jersey, in 1769, and studied theology partly under Dr. Bellamy and partly under Dr. Buel, of East Hampton, Long Island. He was ordained by the Presbytery of Long Island, and served the congregation of Southhold as stated supply for two years. From Southhold he came to Bedford, and settled May 18th, 1786, and remained here a faithful and godly minister for five years. Leaving here, he was called to Deerfield, New Jersey, and settled there Aug. 12th, 1795. He remained there ten years, and was dismissed on account of failing health. He finally became a home missionary in Western New York, and died in Lysander, July 13th, 1821, an amiable and excellent man.

In June, 1792, Rev. Isaac Foster was settled here, and remained not more than two years. We are in possession of the original subscription list, with the amount promised by each subscriber for the support of Mr. Foster for one year, commencing March 22d, 1792, in *£. s. d.*, and here we find the names of ancestors of families still residing in Bedford—the Millers, Mills, Holmes, Clarks, Lyons, Benedicts, French, Ambler, etc. Mr. Foster remained probably two years and left, as tradition reports, with his name and that of his wife in bad repute. But we know nothing of the place whence he came, or whither he went, or where he died. Then came a most excellent man, the Rev. Samuel Blatchford, who preached here for some time as stated supply, refusing

to settle permanently. He was an Englishman, and was invited here by a committee appointed by the church, from Topsham, England, to settle here with the people in Bedford. He resigned his charge in Topsham, and sailed at once for this country. The captain of the vessel on which he sailed was present and heard his farewell sermon in Topsham, and so deeply was he affected by it, that he immediately offered to take him and his family at a greatly reduced price, that he might have the benefit of his instructions during the passage; though previous to that, the price talked of was so much beyond Mr. Blatchford's means that he almost regretted having projected the enterprise. He left his native shores on the 19th of June, 1795, and arrived within the Hook at New York on the 1st day of August. Without any unnecessary delay he made his way to Bedford, the anticipated field of his labors, but several adverse circumstances occurred in connection with his arrival here which occasioned his disappointment and even despondency. The most mortifying thing of all was, that one of the individuals with whom he had corresponded informed him that, as his arrival had been delayed beyond their expectations, they had actually filled the place, and a Mr. Benedict was engaged to supply the pulpit for one year. When Mr. Benedict, however, came to understand the circumstances of the case, he generously insisted on withdrawing in favor of Mr. Blatchford; but the result was that they were both retained to supply alternately the congregations of Bedford and Poundridge. At the next meeting of the Presbytery of Hudson, to which the congregations then belonged, Mr. Blatchford, giving assent to the Presbyterian Confession of Faith and form of government, was appointed the sole supply for Bedford, as many Sabbaths as convenient for him. But in 1796 he received a call to Greenfield, Conn., in the church that was formerly in charge of the Rev. Dr. Dwight. In 1797, he was invited to the church at Stratford (now Bridgeport), to preach for them six months with reference to a final settlement. He was finally installed here and remained for a number of years both as a preacher and a teacher in an Academy built by his special request. In 1804 he was invited to take charge of the Churches of Lansingburgh and Waterford, in the State of New York, where he remained for seven years and died March 17th, 1828, in the sixty-second year of his age and the forty-first year of his ministry. Dr. Nott, president of Union College preached his funeral sermon. He was the father of seventeen children, of these, seven died before him; two of his sons were ministers, one a physician, and one a lawyer—all respectable and useful in their professions. After Mr. Blatchford left, the Rev. Josiah Henderson of Martha's Vineyard, was called as pastor and installed over the church by the Presbytery of

Hudson, Nov. 15th, 1798, and remained just five years. He was dismissed Nov. 3d, 1803. The elders of the Church were then Moses St. John, Justus Harris, Ely Tyler, Peter Fleming, Joseph Owen and Stephen Benedict, all most venerable, pious men. Rev. Ebenezer Grant succeeded Rev. Mr. Henderson and was installed Sept. 20th, 1804. He preached here for seventeen years. He was a native of New Jersey and came here from the Presbytery of New Brunswick. He was a faithful, good man, but his labors were not abundantly blessed. At his death, the session of the church made this record to their deceased pastor:

"Be it remembered that on the 6th day of September, 1821, the Rev. Eben. Grant, having fulfilled his ministry, closed the scene of life, and sleeps with his fathers, being buried in the town of Bedford, in the burying ground in the village."

Rev. Dr. Isaac Lewis, of Greenwich, preached his funeral sermon from Rev. xiv : 13. "And I heard a voice from Heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors; and their works do follow them." His remains lie beneath the green sward under the cliff, where the ground is terraced gradually up to the overhanging rocks, and on the broad marble slab marking this interesting spot, the sculptor has engraven these words:

Sacred  
to the memory of the  
REVD. EBENEZER GRANT,  
17 years minister of the  
Presbyterian Church in Bedford,  
who departed this life September 6, 1821,  
Aged 48 Years.

—  
"Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from henceforth:  
yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors;  
and their works do follow them."—REV. xiv : 13.

There is not an individual member of the church living, who was present when Rev. Mr. Grant was installed here. Officers and private members have all passed away. And there is only one member of the church living who followed their beloved pastor to his grave and saw his remains deposited in their mother dust. Our fathers, where are they? and the prophets, do they live forever? Only a few months elapsed before the church was again supplied with a pastor. April 16, 1822, the Rev. Jacob Green was called and installed pastor of this church, and remained here a faithful standard-bearer, a consistent, godly and acceptable



preacher for twenty-seven years. Mr Green was a graduate of Rutger's College, N. J., and studied theology at the Princeton Theological Seminary, which he entered the first year it opened, in 1812, and remained two years. He was a native of Hanover, N. J., and was first settled in Suckasunny, N. J. Leaving this, his first charge, he was afterwards appointed a domestic missionary in Western Virginia, where he was married. From this field, he was called to take charge of the Presbyterian church of this place, April 16, 1822. Mr. Green was the nephew of the venerable and distinguished Ashbel Green, one of the former Presidents of Princeton College, and author of some valuable theological works. The labors of Mr. Green in the church, as many now living are ready to bear witness, were greatly blessed. The church by his fidelity was greatly enlarged, and many new plans were adopted for its greater efficiency at home and in the foreign fields. He loved the cause of missions, and frequently had young men in his family, boarding or educating them, while they were preparing for the ministry at home or abroad. He was greatly beloved by his brethren in the ministry, and held in high esteem by the executive of all our benevolent boards and directors of our seminary at Princeton. God never blessed him with any children; but many look up to him as their spiritual father, and many in the congregation bear his honored name. After more than a quarter of a century pastorate here, and marrying the children that he had baptized, and burying nearly all the congregation to whom he preached when he first came among them, alienation and dissatisfaction arose that almost broke his heart. He was dismissed by Bedford Presbytery from this charge, June 25, 1848. A kind providence provided for his faithful servant. The Governor of the State of New York sent him an appointment, previous to his leaving Bedford, to act as chaplain in the State prison at Sing-Sing. Completing his appointment here, his health becoming impaired, he supplied a few churches in Presbytery for a short time; but the time for his departure came and he laid down his commission as a minister of the gospel and resigned his ransomed spirit to God who gave it, in Sing-Sing, September 1851, and was buried in their beautiful cemetery to await the glorious reward of the Resurrection Morn. The Venerable Dr. Spring of New York, who has recently gone to meet him, preached an appropriate sermon on his funeral occasion—his wife still survives him.

May 1, 1848, the Rev. David Inglis was called to take charge of this church; and was installed here October 26, 1848. He was a young man about twenty years of age, recently from Scotland, of great promise for usefulness, having preached a short time previous to his coming here in the

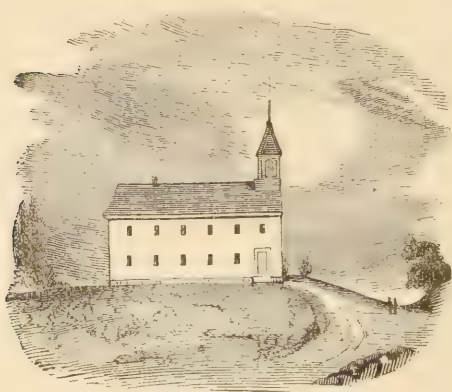
lower part of this county. He removed to Montreal in Canada East, in June, 1852, from thence to Hamilton in Canada West. Here he remained sixteen years; and in the summer of 1861, was elected by the Synod, to a Professorship of Theology in Knox College, Toronto, on Lake Ontario. In August, 1872, he received and accepted a call on the Heights of Brooklyn, New York, succeeding the Rev. Dr. Bethune, where he still remains. December 1, 1852, the Rev. David C. Lyon was called and installed as pastor of this church. Mr. Lyon was a native of New York, graduate of Union College in 1842, studied Theology at Princeton, and graduated in 1845, was ordained as an evangelist by the Presbytery of Ogdensburgh, July, 1846; preached his stated supply at Covington, New York, removed to Mineral Point, Wisconsin, and was thence called to Bedford. He was dismissed from here, and was appointed a Synodical Missionary for the State of Wisconsin. From thence, he was called to the Presbyterian church Winona; but, in a few years he resigned his charge there, and returned to what seemed a more congenial field of labor—a Synodical Missionary; and there he is to-day, exploring the waste and destitute portions of the country. For his successor, see List of Pastors.

To this church is attached a commodious parsonage and glebe of ten acres.

In 1871 the old church "showing some marks of decay, and rendered inconvenient as a house of worship for its large and prosperous congregation," it was determined to rebuild on a new site. Whereupon, Mr. Francis A. Palmer and wife, nobly offered to build a new house of worship and present it unincumbered to the Society. This generous offer was gladly accepted, and on June 29, 1871, the corner stone of the new edifice was laid by Mr. Palmer, the donor, on the lot next to the parsonage. It was dedicated 15th of August, 1872. The new church is a fine gothic edifice of wood, with two towers in front and lecture room in the rear, costing \$50,000. It contains a good toned bell and organ.

#### A LIST OF PASTORS OF THE CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH, BEDFORD.

INSTALL OR CALL.	MINISTERS OR PASTORS.	VACATED BY.
Dec. 2, 1681.	REV. JOHN PRUDDEN.	Resigned.
Jan. 28, 1688.	REV. THOMAS DENHAM.	"
Dec. 26, 1699.	REV. JOSEPH MORGAN.	"
Dec. 7, 1702.	REV. JOHN JONES.	"



Presbyterian Church, Bedford.

## LIST OF PASTORS OR MINISTERS OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, BEDFORD.

INSTALL OR CALL.	MINISTERS OR PASTORS.	VACATED BY.
May 3, 1720.	REV. WILLIAM TENNETT.	Resigned, - - 1721.
" " 1740.	REV. ROBERT STURGEON.	" - - 1743.
" " 1743.	REV. SAMUEL SACKET.	Dismissed, Apl. 1, 1760.
Dec 31, 1754.	REV. ELIPHALET BALL.	" Dec. 21, 1758.
Dec. 13, 1769.	REV. SAMUEL MILLS.	" May 18, 1786.
May 18, 1786.	REV. JOHN DAVENPORT.	Resigned, - - 1795.
June, 1792.	REV. ISAAC FOSTER	" - - 1—.
June, 1795.	REV. SAMUEL BLATCHFORD.	" - - 1796.
Nov. 15, 1798.	REV. JOSIAH HENDERSON.	Dismissed, Nov. 3, 1803.
Sept. 13, 1804.	REV. EBENEZER GRANT.	By death, Sept. 6, 1821.
April 16, 1822.	REV. JACOB GREENE.	Dismissed June 25, 1848.
May 1, 1848.	REV. DAVID INGLIS.	Resigned, - - 1851.
May, 1857.	REV. PETER B. HEROT.	By death.
" 1880.	REV. J. H. HOYT.	Present Pastor.

Bedford, in the Colonial times, constituted one of the three precincts of Rye parish. This was brought about by the act of the New York Assembly, passed 24th of March, 1693, (confirmed, A.D., 1697,) which annexed Bedford to the parish of Rye. It appears, however, that both Rye and Bedford endeavored for a time to avoid its provisions, by declaring themselves separate from New York, notwithstanding the agreement of 1683, by which they had been surrendered to that Province. Accordingly, in January, 1697, they applied to be admitted to Connecticut; upon which that Colony concluded to receive them. But in 1700, King William the Third gave his approbation and confirmation to the settlement of 1683, whereby they were ever included in New York.

Under the act of 1693, the Church of England (which had been guaranteed her freedom under Magna Charta, upon which the common law is founded,) was settled throughout the Province and became therefore entitled to the public encouragement, leaving the Dissenters at liberty to maintain a minister of their own persuasion, but obliging them to support the clergyman settled by law. Surely Independents or Congregationalists had no right whatever to complain of this; for, while under the laws of Connecticut, they taxed Churchmen without mercy and all others to support their established religion and blue-laws, and that too without representation. This, the Church in all her plenitude of power, never practised; for all tax-payers might be represented at parish meetings, if they so desired it. In consequence of the Church being settled by law, all lands set aside at public town meetings for the provision of a minister, all glebes and parsonages voted for their habitation and maintenance, and all meeting houses raised by public tax or distress on the people, unless particularly named, became vested in the ministry settled by common law and coeval with its existence.<sup>a</sup>

Pursuant to the act of assembly, a meeting of the parishioners was held at Rye, Feb'y 28th, 1695, when Deliverance Brown and Isaac Denham were chosen vestry-men for Bedford. In 1711, this precinct paid towards the rectors support and poor of the parish, £5, 55.

At a town meeting held at Bedford, Oct. 4th, 1702, we have the following minute:—

"The town doth by a maiger vote desire that they may be by themselves as to maintain one amongst them selves e theyr desire is that they may be clear from y<sup>e</sup> former aekt of ye assembly of being ioyned to rye e memerinock and the town doth desire mr. Jacobus van Cortlandt to present theyr desire e pertision to the genarall asembly e ye town is willing to satisfie sd Cortland for his trouble.<sup>b</sup>

In a summary account of the state of the Church in the Province of New York, as it was laid before the clergy convened at New York, Oct. 5th, 1704, it is therein stated that:—"There is an Independent church at Bedford, where the minister designs to leave them; they are well affected to the Church, and it is hoped when he is gone they will be in communion with her."

It appears, however, that although many of the inhabitants might have been well disposed towards the Church yet the ubiquitous Zach-

<sup>a</sup> In 1680 the proprietors of Bedford laid out a town lot or parsonage land to be set apart for a minister (without naming to what particular denomination he should belong) of said town; contrary to law, this land which of right belonged to a minister settled by the common law, was given at a town meeting in 1704 to one John Jones a violent Dissenting minister "to encourage him to settle and preach among them." The parsonage land seems to have embraced 40 acres in 1699.

<sup>b</sup> 1st Book of Bedford Rec., p. 10.



ariah Roberts, Justice of the Peace and keeper of the town records, was determined otherwise, and stirred up the Dissenters to oppose the newly inducted rector, Thomas Pitchard; so that when Joseph Morgan resigned, they called one John Jones—so determined were they to free themselves from New York in the ministry.

From the first report issued by the venerable Propagation Society, in 1704, we learn:—"That since their incorporation, June the 10th, 1701, they had appointed the Rev. Alexander Stuart, missionary at Bedford, with a salary of £50 per annum, besides two sums of £20 and £15 for books.

To this appointment Mr. Pritchard (who was inducted into the rectory of Rye, in April, 1704) thus alludes in a letter to the Secretary:—"I perceive by the account of the Society, that one Mr. Stuart is recommended to Bedford, and £50 per annum allowed him; whereas Bedford is a part of my parish, as settled by an act of Assembly, so that he can't be inducted there. Hoping, therefore, that the Society will be so condescendingly pleased to allow it me, as also to send per next conveniency, the £15 worth of books, of which mention is made in the account. The Society would do very well, if in their great wisdom they think it fit, to recommend Mr. Stuart to Hempstead, upon Long Island, where they stand very much in need of a minister."

The following extracts from affidavits, (in the Secretary of State's office) show very plainly however, that every effort, stratagem and threat was made by the Dissenters, to prevent Mr. Pitchard's taking possession to this portion of his benefice:—

"BENJAMIN WRIGHT of Bedford in the County of Westchester, yeoman, aged 22 years or thereabouts, being sworn before Thomas Wenham, Esq., one of the gents of her Majesties Council for ye Province of New York, and one of ye Judges of the Supreme Court of Judicature for the said Province, saith, that since Mr. Pitchard has been appointed minister of ye towns of Rye and Bedford in the County of Westchester, this deponent has endeavored to prevaile with the inhabitants of Bedford to encourage the said Mr. Pritchard to preach and perform the duties of divine worship as used in the Church of England among them, whereupon the inhabitants of ye said town of Bedford became so incensed, that by their ill-treatment and threats, they have forced this deponent to remove with his family from thence, and deterred the members of ye said Church from speaking anything in its favor. And this deponent further saith, that one Zachariah Roberts of Bedford, a Justice of Peace in ye said County of Westchester, went to the inhabitants of ye said town to prevail with them to sign an instrument or writing whereby to oblige them not to pay ye said minister anything, and likewise that the said Zachariah Roberts at a town meeting, called by him for that purpose, got such an act of the town passed accordingly, which act this deponent saw, being presented to the view of the persons there present by ye

said Zachariah Roberts, which town act the said Zachariah Roberts afterwards burnt, and this deponent believes that he cut it out of the records or books of ye said town. And the deponent further saith that the said Zachariah Roberts hath refused (tho' a Justice of Peace) to take any affidavits in behalf of ye Church of England, the Queen and this Government, and when persons have offered to make such affidavits he has said he would take none against his neighbors and himself, and that they might tell my Lord so, &c. The rancour and malice of said Justice Roberts being so violent that this deponent has been told by the said Robert's wife, that she dares not so much as mention the name of Mr. Pitchard or any other Church of England-man for fear of her husband's passion. And this deponent further saith, that he hath been told by the said Justice Robert's wife, that her husband has razed or altered the records of ye said town, by striking out the name of one Thomas Howard in an assignment of a bill of sale, and putting his own name on in the room of it. And this deponent further saith, that he hath been informed that there was formerly a parcel of land bought by the said town of Bedford, to be laid apart for a minister for the said town, which said parcel of land was within a year last past given at a town meeting to one John Jones, a Dissenting minister in the said town for an encouragement to him, to settle and preach among them."

"JOHN THOMSON of Bedford, In ye County of Westchester, gentleman, aged 40 years and upwards being sworn before Thomas Wenham, &c., saith, that there having been no divine service according to ye ceremonies and usages of the Church of England in the said town of Bedford, the said deponent hath often gone to the Dissenting meeting in that town, where he hath heard one John Jones, as the minister of the Dissenting Congregation, preach, and hath heard him frequently in a very bitter and inveterate manner reflect on the present Constitution and Government of the Church of England, and particularly this deponent heard him say, that he cared not for the said Church of England, and in his sermon he used, to the best of this deponent's memory, these words, viz: come out of her (meaning ye Church of England) my people lest ye partake of her plagues, comparing likewise the said Church to ye Church of Rome, and saying at other times, likewise in his sermon to his congregation, ye are in a dangerous government, where they do not pray nor serve God, and that he would preach reprobation and defiance of principalities and powers, and that ye, speaking to his congregation, may tell 'em so at York, for yt he did not care for my Lord—and this deponent further saith, that being one day with the said Mr. Jones at the house of one Zachariah Roberts, at Bedford aforesaid, this deponent heard the said John Jones say, he would burn the Church of England books, &c.,

The two preceding depositions were read in Council, May 8th, 1705. Messrs Roberts and Jones failing to give satisfactory explanations thereof, were bound over to answer to the Supreme Court. (Council Minutes.)<sup>a</sup>

"In December, 1681, Samuel Barrett, Zachariah Roberts and Thomas Canfield were received as inhabitants. This Roberts was soon chosen town clerk, afterward Justice of the Peace, and for many years appears

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Hist. of New York, vol. iii, 933-5.

prominent in nearly all the affairs of the town. He seems to have been a very dissenting Dissenter. He had a quarrel with the Rev. Thomas Pritchard, the first Church of England Rector, in 1705. He lived near David's Hill, a few rods west of where the Baptist Church now stands, and gave his lands along David's brook to his sons Zach. Jr. and Hezekiah. What was the origin of the names of David's Hill and Brook I am unable to say, but they are found in the earliest records; and in 1700 "the town by a maigor vote doth order and agree that ye land round dauids hill shall be sequestered for the towns' use and for digging stones so it shall have a soficiant cartway and driftway round the hill and not to be disposed of to any pertickler parson what som euer." This shows the origin of a lane, still open, west of David's hill. Other votes setting apart sequestered lands for "ye people of the town to dig stones for ever," are found."<sup>a</sup>

Minutes.—Upon the 21st day of June, 1705, we find the irascible dissenter, Zachariah Roberts and Mary, his wife, conveying three hundred acres of land lying within the "Town or Liberties of Bedford," to "Thomas Pritchard, Missionary and Rector at Rye and Bedford, and Anne, his wife." Either the Supreme Court's decision, in his case for slander, or the prospect of handling the sum of one hundred pounds sterling, had produced a wonderful change in our Justice of the Peace:—

"This indenture made the 21st day of June, in the fourth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lady Anne, by the grace of God of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith, etc.—between Zachariah Roberts of Bedford, in the County of Westchester, in the province of New York, Esquire and Mary, his wife, on the one part, and Thomas Pritchard, Missionary and Rector of Rye and Bedford, in the County and province of New York, and Anne, his wife, on the other part, Witnesseth that the said Zachariah Roberts and Mary, his wife, for and the consideration of the sum of £100 sterling, to them in hand paid already by the said Thomas Pritchard and Anne, his wife, before the ensembling and delivery thereof, the receipt whereof they the said Zachariah and Mary, doth hereby acknowledge themselves therewith to be fully satisfied contented and paid and therefrom and thereof and of and from all and every part and parcel thereof doth hereby, acquit, release, exonerate and discharge forever the said Thomas Pritchard and Anne Pritchard, their heirs, executors, administrators and assigns forever in manner and form following—all that or a certain parcel of upland meadow and swamp, situate lying and being within the town or liberties of the said Bedford, being part of that land that Coll. Van Cortland and the said Zachariah Roberts heretofore purchased of the Indians, the said parcel of lands hear by granted, being bounded on the south east corner by a young white oak tree marked with green or eight notches or crosses, and thence running one hundred and ten rods northward along the Indian path which

<sup>a</sup> Address of Joseph Barrett, July 4, 1876.

leads to Musscoota and thence runs westward on the said path in length one hundred rods, south in breadth at each end one hundred and ten rods amounting to three hundred acres be it more or less, being bounded eastward by the great Indian path, southward by the Town's new purchase, so called, and on the eastward and northward by the pond of the river also one sixth one and thirtieth part or one head right in the new purchase of Bedford, so called, and also one head right of land in new purchase, so called, which John Sampson formerly purchased from Richard Holmes and conveyed or assigned afterward to the said Zachariah Roberts together with all woods and underwoods, etc., etc.

Sealed and delivered }  
in presence of }

JOSEPH PURDY,  
RICHARD STANTON.<sup>a</sup>

ZACHARIAH ROBERTS,  
MARY  $\bowtie$  ROBERTS.  
Mark.

The Rev. George Muirson in one of his earliest reports to the venerable Propagation Society says:—"Rye is a large parish, the towns are far distant, the people were some Quakers, but chiefly Presbyterians and Independents. They were violently set against our Church; but now, blessed be God, they comply heartily. I find that catechising on the week days in the remote towns and frequent visiting is of great service."

The quota furnished by this division towards the rector's tax in 1725, was £16, 52. Mr. Wetmore writing to the Society in February, 1728, says:—"That there are three meeting houses in the parish, one at Bedford, built for and used by the Presbyterians, &c. They have had a Presbyterian minister, they gave him a house and farm to work upon, and £40 per annum; but finding it not sufficient to support him with a numerous family, he has left them, and they have now settled another young man to whom they give the same allowance. There are at Bedford about eight or ten families of the Church, and the rest Presbyterians or Independents."

"The Dissenting" teachers "officiate without qualifying themselves according to the Act of Toleration, so that the people are supposed to do and say what they please about religion, under a notion, that the laws of England relating to religion don't extend to the Plantations." In 1731, he writes:—"That the people of Bedford, who are most rigid and severe of all, came very generally to Church, when I was last among them, and many that never before were at Church." Again in 1744, he informs the Society:—"That at Bedford and North Castle there were four hundred families belonging to the cure, &c." The same year the parishioners addressed the following letter to the Society:—

<sup>a</sup> No. 4 of Bedford Town Books, p. 495.



## PARISH OF RYE—TO THE SECRETARY.

(EXTRACT.)

*"Province of New York, Bedford, March 6th, 1744.*

REV. SIR,

The parish of Rye includes the large town of Rye, the town of Mamaroneck, the manor of Scarsdale, and a precinct called White Plains, besides Bedford and North Castle, in which two last places are near four hundred families, and no teacher of any sort in North Castle, but a silly Quaker-woman, and at Bedford one of the most enthusiastic Methodists. Mr. Wetmore comes amongst us but once in two months, and very few of us can go to the parish church at Rye, many living twenty miles distant, and most of us twelve or fourteen miles; so that for the most part there is very little face of religion to be seen amongst us, and our children are apt to fall in with the customs of those amongst us that have little or no religion, and spend the Lord's day in diversions and follies, which we cannot prevent tho' we much dislike. Mr. Wetmore, our minister, freely consents we should endeavour to procure another as an assistant to him, and we are willing to contribute as far as we are able.

Reverend Sir,

Your most obed't and humble servants,

LEWIS McDONALD,

DANIEL SMITH,

ARTHUR SMITH.<sup>a</sup>

In answer to this application, the Rev. Joseph Lamson, A.M., was appointed assistant to Mr. Wetmore in officiating to the inhabitants of Bedford, North Castle and Ridgefield. In his first report to the Society, he writes:—"That he officiates by turns at these three places to full congregations." But his income proved too small for his support, and he removed by the Society's permission to Fairfield in 1747. In Mr. Wetmore's report for 1753, he acquaints the Society, "that his congregation at Bedford is large and flourishing, and that the disposition of those that oppose the interest of the Church in that place seems changed for the better. The New Light minister is removed from Bedford, and there are some hopes of the people uniting with North Castle towards supporting a minister in the Holy Orders of our Church, to officiate alternately among them." And it clearly appears from his subsequent reports to the Society, that this precinct continued, upon the whole, in a state of gradual improvement until the time of his death, which took place in May, 1760. The following inscription occurs on a monument, to the memory of his wife, Althea, to be seen in the old burying ground at Fairfield, Conn.:

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, (Hawks.)

IN MEMORIAM  
OF  
MRS. ALTHEA LAMSON,  
Wife of the Rev. Joseph Lamson,  
and daughter of the Rev. JAMES WETMORE,  
the Rector of Rye, in the New York Province.  
Who departed this life ye 8th of Feb'y, 1766,  
AGED 44 YEARS.

Their daughter Anne was also interred at Fairfield, where there is a monument to her memory.

In the Spring of 1762 the precincts of Bedford and Northcastle were visited by the Rev. George Dibble, Rector of St. John's church, Stamford and St. George Talbot, Esq. Here the former preached and baptized several children.<sup>a</sup> At this time there appear to have been several families professors of the Church of England. Mr. Talbot subsequently devised in trust, the sum of six hundred pounds, (for the use and benefit of the churches of Northcastle and Bedford,) this amount appears to have been in possession of Lewis Macdonald and others, trustees under the will of Mr. Talbot.

"From letters received by Dr. Auchmuty, Rector of Trinity church, and Mr. Livingston (executor of the late Mr. St. George Talbot,) dated December 8th, 1769, it appears that the heirs at law leave no method untried to defeat the purposes of Mr. Talbot's will; and, by evasive practices in law, the cause is still undetermined."

In 1771, Mr. John Livingston informs the Propagation Society, that with regard to Mr. Talbot's will the attorneys have judged it expedient to come to an agreement with the heirs of Mr. Talbot, by which the executors should pay them £1300, in full for their claim and demand on the real and personal estate. It will be seen, however, that the Church did not receive the legacy until the year 1803.

Mr. Punderson, who succeeded Mr. Whitmore in 1762, died Anno Domini 1764, and was followed by the Rev. Ephriam Avery in 1765.

From this period nothing worthy of especial importance appears in the Society's Reports relative to Bedford. Mr. Avery's death took place soon after the exciting scenes of the Revolution had commenced, and during the subsequent years the whole parish of Rye suffered considerably from the confusion that attended the Revolutionary war. The Parochial Church was destroyed by fire, and the parishoners dispersed in every direction.

Upon the 19th of April, 1789 the present parish was incorporated

<sup>a</sup> See Parochial Registers of St. John's church, Stamford.



At a vestry meeting holden on the 8th Dec<sup>r</sup>, 1806, it was resolved "that the residue of the bequest of St. George Talbot be appropriated towards defraying the cost of the building a church in Bedford." The Hon<sup>ble</sup> John Jay, Chief Justice of the United States, took an active part in the construction of this edifice and was a constant attendant upon the services held therein until the year of his death, 1829.

In 1804 it was resolved by the Vestry, "expedient to call and settle a minister without further delay; the Episcopalians of North Salem and Stephentown joined with Bedford in endeavoring to effect it. It was agreed between them, "that the minister should perform divine service in the different towns of Bedford, New Castle, North Castle and Stephentown, so often as should be in proportion to the amount of their annual subscriptions." In all these places Churchmen manifested the sincerity of their professions by subscribing liberally to the support of a minister.

Upon the 30th of July, 1804, the Vestry called the Rev. George Strebeck as rector of the United Churches. He officiated in Bedford and its vicinity from August, 1804, to March, 1805, when he resigned, and accepted the rectorship of St. Stephen's church, New York. At a vestry meeting held on the 8th of December, 1806, it was resolved, "that the residue of the bequest of St. George Talbot be appropriated towards defraying the cost of building a church at Bedford."

In 1809 the Rev. Nathan Felch was called as minister of the united parishes. The next year he reported to the Diocesan Convention:—

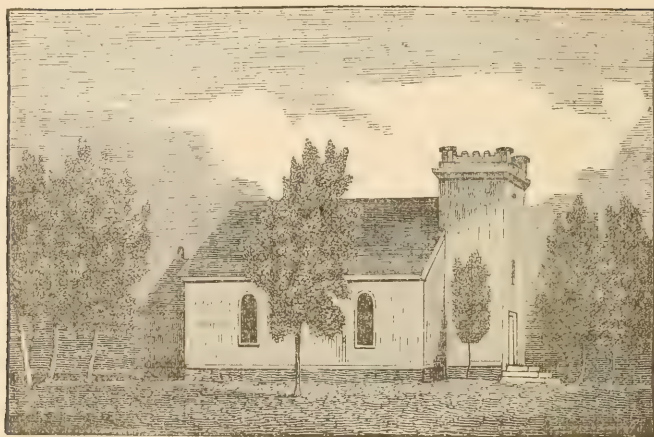
"That the Episcopal Church in Bedford is in a very flourishing state; the congregation is numerous, respectable and devout: an attachment to all the rites and forms of the Church is continually increasing among them; and as this attachment increases, so veneration for, and delight in sober, rational and scriptural piety and virtue increases."

Mr. Felch resigned his charge in 1813, and was succeeded by the Rev. George Wells, A.M., in 1816, for whose successors, see list of Rectors.

St. Matthew's church is situated in the northern part of a small scattered hamlet, about half a mile north of the village of Bedford. It is a neat structure of brick, erected in 1807, and consecrated the same year by the Rt. Rev. Benjamin Moore, D.D. It has been recently thoroughly repaired, and the interior somewhat remodelled.

The communion silver was the united gift of Mrs Banyar and Anne Jay, (daughters of the late Hon. John Jay, Chief Justice of the United States) on the 29th of October, 1810. The service books were presented by the late Mrs. Ann Raymond, of Bedford. The bell was purchased by subscription in 1874. To this church is attached a rectory and glebe.





St. Matthew's Church, Bedford, erected A. D. 1807,

### MINISTERS AND RECTORS OF BEDFORD.

INST. OR CALL.	INCUMBENTS.	VACAT. BY.
	1704, REV. ALEXANDER STUART, A. M., Clericus, resig.	
18th June, 1745,	REV. JOSEPH LAMSON, A. M., Clericus, resig.	
	1796, REV. THEODOSIUS BARTOW, Presb., resig.	
30th July, 1804,	REV. GEORGE STREBECK, Presb. resig.	
	1809, REV. NATHAN FELCH, Deacon, resig.	
16th June, 1816,	REV. GEORGE WELLER, A. M., Deacon, resig.	
	1819, REV. SAMUEL NICHOLLS, Presb., resig.	
12th Aug., 1833,	REV. ALFRED PARTRIDGE, Presb., resig.	
	1855, REV. EDWARD BRENTON BOGGS, D.D., Presb., resig.	
	1867, REV. LEA LUQUER, Presb., present incumbent.	

The burying ground adjoining the church contains memorials to the families of the Jays, Amblers, Guions, Olmsteads, Collyers, Raymonds, Parks, Gardeners, Banks and McNultys.

Number of families in 1853, belonging to the parish, 50. Number of souls, 200. In 1875, Number of families, 47.

### THE SOCIETY'S SCHOOLMASTERS AT BEDFORD AND NORTH CASTLE.

TIME OF APP'T.	SCHOOLMASTERS.	SALARY.
1728,	Flint Dwight,	£15 per anum.
1745,	William Sturgeon, B. A.	"
Number of Catechists in 1853, 4; and Catechumens, 30.		
1875,—	"	30.

To the parish is attached St. Mary's church in the middle patent of North Castle, which was incorporated upon the 29th of December, 1851, Benjamin Smith and Samuel Brown, church wardens. William Henry

Hobby, William Downs, Samuel Lounsbury, Oliver B. Finch, Henry Hobby, Joseph H. Hobby, David M. Johnson and Henry Downes, vestrymen. The Church edifice, erected in 1853 at a cost of \$1600, was consecrated to the service of Almighty God, on the 22d of September of that year, by the late Rt. Rev. Jonathan M. Wainwright, D.D., LL.D. At present, services are performed here by the rector of Bedford, every Sunday afternoon. The bell was presented by St. Matthew's church, Bedford.

Within the adjoining Hamlet near the Episcopal church, at the junction of the Sing Sing and Bedford roads stands the Baptist church. The Baptist Society was first organized Sept. 22d, 1798; seven of its members having received legal letters of dismissal from the Baptist church in Stamford, to form a new Society under the pastoral charge of Elder Jones. On the 8th of May, 1802, Elder Ezra Fountain was elected pastor of the church, an office which he held with great acceptance for thirty-five years. Mr. Fountain was descended from the Fountains of Stockingham, Devonshire, England. The first member of the family who emigrated to America about 1650, was a merchant of opulence, who lived to the age of a hundred years. In the church of Mysborough in the county of Devon, England, are several monuments to members of this family; among others is one to the memory of Sir John Fountain, of whom there are some fragmentary sketches extant. The emigrant left two sons, the eldest of whom was Moses, a man remarkable for his piety, and who also lived to over a hundred years; the youngest son Moses, had two sons, Moses and Mathew, who died without issue at the age of one hundred and four, the latter was a British officer of some distinction previous to the Revolutionary war, but removed from Bedford to Eastchester with the refugees and there died from the bite of a fox, aged fifty-six. He left four sons, Stephen, Aaron, Ezra and James, besides two daughters. Ezra the third son, the pastor of this church was born on the 20th of May, 1743, and died Oct. 25th, 1840, and was interred on his own farm at present occupied by John A. Miller in this town where a monument has been erected to his memory containing the following epitaph written by himself.

“A dying preacher I have been,  
To dying sinners such as you;  
A dying preacher I remain,  
To all who come my grave to view.”

It may be truly said of this good man “Though dead he yet speaketh.”

By his wife, who was a Tyler, he had first, James, M.D., of the New York University, the father of Hosea, M. D., of Somers; Elias, Jabez, Husted, C. Horton and Ezra James. The second son was Hosea, and thirdly the late Tyler Fountain of Peekskill.

Mr. Fountain was succeeded in the pastoral charge by Elder Charles H. Underhill, who continued for two years. Their successors have been Samuel Covel, and Elder Nathan Reed.

Union Academy of Bedford occupies a prominent situation Southeast of the Baptist church. Its principal is Alexander G. Reynolds.

Near the Hamlet are situated the residences of William P. Woodcock and Milton Robertson, Esq. To the North-east lies the Hook farm, the property of Francis A. Palmer, Esq., (formerly belonging to Col. James Holmes). Upon the 5th of April, 1774, James Smith and Mary, his wife, sold to James Holmes, "all that messuage lying in Bedford called the Hook, containing seventy-three acres.

Col. James Holmes was the son of John and Jemima Holmes; his father John Holmes was a respectable farmer, a man of extensive real and personal property, a large proportion of which descended to him from his father John Holmes, who emigrated to this country from Beverly, Yorkshire, in England, about the year 1660, and was one of the original proprietors and settlers of this town. John Holmes, father of the said Col. James Holmes, held many civil and military appointments. He was for many years a town clerk, Justice of the Peace, and Captain of the Militia, which appointments he held till the time of his death.

During the French war between France and Great Britain, in 1757-8, Col. James Holmes volunteered in the service of his country, and was in the great and destructive battle under the command of General Abercrombie, in which were nineteen hundred men killed and wounded. After the conquest of Canada he returned to Bedford.

Upon the commencement of hostilities between America and Great Britain, he was appointed by the New York Convention one of a committee of three, viz.: Col. James Van Courtland, Capt. Montgomery, (afterwards Gen. Montgomery,) and himself, to proceed to examine the heights about Kingsbridge, and report where it would be advisable to fortify. They performed this duty and reported satisfactorily. The same convention ordered four regiments to be raised. The first was given to Alexander M'Dougal, the second to G. Van Schaick, the third to James Clinton, and the fourth to James Holmes. These regiments were immediately advanced to the northward. In 1777, he retired from the service of his country, owing to certain circumstances which had tended

to dampen his military ambition, and returned to his farm. In the spring of 1778, he was arrested by order of the committee of public safety, and conveyed to Bedford.

He subsequently accepted the appointment of Lieut. Colonel of the corps of West Chester County Refugees, in the British service; in this corps he remained till the end of the war. Colonel James Holmes died at New Haven, July, 1824, leaving issue by his wife Tamar, two daughters; Tamar, who married James Ronalds, father of William R. Ronalds, Esq., of New York; and Sally, the wife of Jeremiah Lounsberry of this town.

The village of Bedford was burnt July 2d, 1779, during the Revolutionary war by a party of British Light Horse under the command of Lieut. Col. Banastre Tarleton<sup>a</sup> on their route to Fairfield, Conn., and much valuable property destroyed in its immediate vicinity. But the inhabitants remained firmly attached to the interests of their country. Mrs. Nancy Sarles testified Oct. 12th, 1846 that, in the Revolutionary war, her father lived in Bedford a mile and a half from the village on the road to White Plains. His name was Samuel Lyon and he was an active Whig and Committee man. When the British burnt Bedford they advanced by the upper or West road and entered after daylight. The party consisted of several hundred composed of leather-caps and refugees all of whom were mounted. The refugees did all the mischief, plundering and burning, while the leather-caps kept guard, then finally retreated by the White Plains road. The militia were all out in the direction of Stamford except a picket guard which the enemy attacked and dispersed killing one man. When they arrived at our house they were constantly asking for bread and we gave them all we had, they then set fire to the house and retreated. The cry was "Fire the house boys and be off." I endeavored to extinguish the fire, but it had made too much headway—just then a party of American militia came to our assistance and helped to save some things that were in the house. The leather caps, or regulars (who I think were Hessians) came here in order to support the refugees. Col. Holmes' house, occupied by Benjamin Hayes, was also burnt on this occasion.<sup>b</sup> Capt. David Miller of Bedford aged eighty, Oct. 31st, 1846, says, "My father, when Bedford was burnt, was a militia captain and lay with his company east of the village—he had occupied a house on the Stamford road a little south of Mr. Jonathan

<sup>a</sup> Col. Tarleton, afterwards General Sir Banastre Tarleton, Bart, born in Liverpool, Aug. 21st, 1754 was intended for ye law, commanded ye advanced guard of the patrols which made General Lee prisoner. Stirring activity made him popular and he was M. P. for Liverpool 22 years—was married but died childless Jan'y 23d, 1833. Gents Mag. Part I. p 273.

<sup>b</sup> Extracts from "Life of James Holmes, Esq.," printed in 1815.



Miller's but, fearful of a surprise, he moved up further into a neighboring wood. He afterwards found that the refugees, when they entered Bedford made directly for his house to take him prisoner, so well were they informed of his whereabouts. The British party were mostly refugees and commanded by Col. James Holmes who belonged to Bedford and was formerly an officer in the American service, but thinking himself ill-used in not being promoted, when others, less deserving than he, were, had gone over to the British and received the commission of Lieutenant Colonel. All the houses in Bedford were burnt except one or two, belonging to persons friendly to the royal cause. Holmes, after the war, returned here. Stephen Ambler on this occasion was too late in escaping from the enemy; trusting too much to the fleetness of his horse, he was overtaken and killed.

Oct. 31st, 1846, Jonathan Mills of Bedford aged eighty-three says, that on the day Pound Ridge was taken, "I was out driving cattle for my father and neighbors, to a place of safety but unfortunately I conducted them right into the hands of the enemy whom I met on my return; they took all the cattle, but after driving them for some distance let them go, so that we obtained them again. Col. Holmes, I think, commanded the party who burned Bedford, and directed his own house to be fired first—well knowing that he would be paid for it. There were one or two companies of militia posted to guard the roads east of the village; a portion of the refugees attempted to reach Middle Patent for the purpose of burning the houses of some Whigs there who were obnoxious to the enemy, but when they came to Mahanus River about half a mile from the village on the Middle Patent road they found the bridges destroyed and the streams too deep and muddy to cross." Oct. 29th, 1846, Silas Sutherland of Middle Patent testifies that when Bedford was burnt they fired on their retreat the following houses: Israel Lyons', John Ferris', Peter Lyons', Andrew Sniffins', and a house occupied by Ichabod Ogden where the militia had quarters, and which was afterwards owned and occupied as a tavern by John Smith.

Nov. 2d, 1846, Mrs. Patty Holmes, aged ninety-four, says: "We were kept in constant state of alarm in Bedford during the Revolutionary war. Frequent reports were abroad that the Refugees were at the village; when Pound Ridge was burnt, news arrived that the enemy was coming. An old man named Andrew Miller took his gun to bed with him; the same night the refugees arrived and carried him off, gun and all, to New York—where for sometime he was kept in the sugar-house, till finally his daughters went down and procured his discharge. When the enemy returned from Pound Ridge they burned the house

owned by Col. Holmes, who had gone below to join the British some-time before. I think that the meeting house also was burnt the same day, namely, Friday, July 2nd, when they burnt Bedford nine days afterwards, a widow woman begged them to spare her house, to which they consented—but finding a brace of pistols up stairs, they fired it. The French army lay in Bedford one night, but the cavalry went on without halting. We were all much pleased to see them, as they came for our protection. Col. Holmes was a clever man, very spirited in speaking, he could not forget his treatment for advancing money to pay his men, which was not refunded, or not paid without great difficulty.”

Nov. 2nd, 1846, James Fountain testified, “I am in my seventy-ninth year and remember the battle of White Plains. One Stephen Baxter, from North Salem, who had received a commission of Captain, was here with the refugees at the burning of Bedford. I think they were all refugees that burnt Bedford, about a hundred or a hundred and fifty in number. I saw them pass, as they advanced by the North Castle church road. Benjamin Hayes kept a tavern at this time in Bedford and his house (owned by Col. Holmes) was for some reason burnt.” Col. Armand the Marquis de la Rouerie was for some time stationed at North Castle and Bedford.

On the 15th of July, 1779, General Heath having ascertained that the enemy’s shipping had gone down towards New York, moved his troops and took a strong position between Ridgfield and Bedford, sending out patrols of horse and foot on all the roads.<sup>a</sup>

On the evening of the 29th of December, 1780, (writes General Heath,) a party of the enemy from Delancey’s corps, consisting of about one hundred infantry and fifty horse, came up to North Castle where after a short halt they proceed towards Bedford new purchase. Capt. Pritchard who was posted at Bedford with a company of Continental troops, and some militia, immediately advanced towards them, attacked their van, who retreated, as did their main body. Capt. Pritchard pursued them as far as Young’s. It was said that one of the enemy was killed and several wounded who were carried off in a wagon. Four oxen, and between thirty and forty sheep were re-taken, and eight or ten head of cattle were driven off; but the captain sustained no injury.<sup>b</sup>

Upon this affair, James Lyon, of Bedford, aged eighty-seven, Nov. 17th, 1846, says: “I belonged to Capt. Moseman’s company of militia and went out with him on several occasions in pursuit of refugees and cow-boys, who had stolen our cattle and sheep. Once, when Capt.

<sup>a</sup> Heath’s Memoirs, page 270.

<sup>b</sup> Heath’s Memoirs, p. 268.

Pritchard was with us, we pursued them to the vicinity of Clarke's Corner.<sup>a</sup> We had a severe skirmish and recovered part of the cattle.

Isaac Daniels, of Chestnut Ridge, aged eighty-six, Oct. 28th, 1846, relates: "I served for two years under Capt. Marcus Moseman (I believe), in Col. Thomas' regiment. I was in several skirmishes. One of the Kipp's, of De Lancey's Corps, came up to Bedford and drove off a great number of cattle; Capt. Moseman's Company and other volunteers pursued; I think Moseman accompanied us, but am not certain; he was reported to be rather timorous; Ephraim Knowlton was our Lieutenant, and a good officer; he was with us at this time; we pursued on the road leading to North Castle church, overtook the refugees five or six miles below, when we fired upon Kipp's party, and they abandoned the cattle or most of them; we followed on very fiercely, and were soon after joined by Lieutenant James and three privates of Sheldon's regiment; all at once, as we gained the top of an eminence, we came upon the main body of the enemy's horse, who were waiting for us over the crest of the hill; they instantly charged. Lieutenant James was badly wounded in the arms and head, and taken prisoner (shortly after paroled); one horseman was dismounted, joined us and escaped; but the other two were taken; Thadeus Seely, a private in our Company, was wounded and taken prisoner; none of our company were killed, and no others wounded; they did not pursue us very far; we re-took about fifty head of cattle and escaped by taking to the woods; there were about fifty or sixty of us beside Sheldon's Horse; Capt. Pritchard was not with us at that time. On the morning of the 16th, 1781" (continues the same authority), "the enemy made an incursion from Morrisania, towards Bedford, and took Lieutenants Carpenter, Wright and Peacock, and five other inhabitants, prisoners; burnt five houses, plundered and stripped several other inhabitants, and returned; they were pursued by Capt. Pritchard, but could not be overtaken."

"Some personal incidents are worthy of being recorded here. David Williams, one of the captors of Major Andre, was a citizen of this town. We are glad to see that the bones of this good man have been removed from Livingstonville, in Schoharie County, N. Y., to Rensselaerville, Albany County, where it is proposed to mark the place by a suitable monument. Another citizen of Bedford, whose name is given in a note to one of the late editions of Cooper's "Spy" as Elisha H.—and it has been suggested that the "H" probably stands for Haines or Holmes—

<sup>a</sup> Clarke's Corners were about six miles from New Castle church, formed by the intersection of the Tarrytown and Bedford roads: consists of three corners, viz.: the White Plains and Pine's Bridge having joined the Bedford and Tarrytown roads half a mile or more north.—McDonald MSS., in possession of Geo. H. Moore, Esq.

is said to have been the most important secret agent employed by Washington during the war."

On one occasion the American officer commanding at Bedford, where there was a depot of provisions, received a note signed E. H., warning him that an attack was about being made by the British forces. The officer sent the paper to Washington who was stationed near the Hudson, who returned it with the endorsement, "Believe whatever E. H. may tell you. George Washington." This paper fell into the hands of a British officer who sent it to Sir Henry Clinton. Sir Henry sent for "E. H." and after some conversation on other topics showed him his own note with Washington's endorsement, and said, "whose hand writing is that?" The man replied, "It is that of Elisha Hadden, the spy whom you hanged yesterday." The calm self-possession of the man quieted Sir Henry's suspicions; and E. H. left the presence of the British Commander, and never visited him again. It was from a citizen of Bedford, Mr. Jay, that Fenimore Cooper, during one of his visits to our town, learned the simple facts in the career of Enoch Crosby, upon which our great novelist based his "Harvey Birch, the spy of the neutral ground," a romance which has been translated into the languages of modern Europe, and also, it is said, into Turkish and Arabic.

His informant had been a member of the New York Committee of Safety, in the beginning of the revolution; and Enoch Crosby had been the most skillful and faithful of his agents, passing with the Americans as a British Spy and incurring constant and great dangers. This member of the Committee of Safety having been appointed to a foreign mission, reported to Congress before his departure the important services rendered by this agent, and a sum of money was voted as a compensation. When in a secret interview at night he was offered the gold, he declined it with the remark, "that it was not for gold that he had served his country."<sup>a</sup> Thus it appears that Bedford did her part in her heroic days.<sup>b</sup>

A short distance only from the middle Patent road are some singular rocks, one of which from its peculiar shape is called the "Turtle Rock." Looking beneath this curious freak of nature, a beautiful view may be had of the Cochaumag hills, while far off in the West the hill Nonama rises in great splendor. The hilly road West of the village, leading to Mount Kisco, or "Bedford New purchase," passes "Lounsberry Hill" (laid down in General Washington's military map as "Knapp's Hill") the top of which is said to be the highest ground in Westchester County. From the summit of this hill the prospect is uncommonly extensive and

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Memoirs, page 274.

<sup>b</sup> Address of Honble John Jay, July 7th, 1876.—The Recorder, Katonah.



open. The whole country looks like a map unfolded to the sight; the innumerable enclosures mark a rich land thriving under the hand of the cultivator.

One of the most prominent objects in the immediate vicinity of Bedford village, is the round hill called Aspetong, celebrated for its beautiful views of the surrounding country; its summit affords a favorite resort for parties during the summer season.<sup>a</sup>

A short time since Joseph Reynolds of Bedford, while hunting on the Aspen Ledge, saw and killed a beautiful wildcat; two others escaped.

The road proceeding north from the village descends into the valley of the Beaver dam, (Cisqua,) watered by a beautiful stream of the same name, which rises in the adjoining town of Poundridge. In its progress to the Croton, the Beaver dam is fed by the waters of broad and muddy brooks. By the process of gauging, in 1833, (at a fair minimum,) the Beaver dam and Broad Brook yielded four million nine hundred and sixty-three thousand four hundred and eighty gallons per diem.<sup>b</sup>

The former stream appears to have been in a peculiar manner the haunt of the beaver; hence the origin of the name Beaver dam. This timid animal, (says Van der Donck,) "always constructed its dwellings over running streams, having apertures in the lower stories which communicated with the water, from which they could more easily retreat under water to places of safety which they have always prepared near their houses; these consist of a hollow or hole entwining under water from the side of the stream whereon their house is erected, and adjoining under the bank into which they retreat on the approach of danger, wherein they seem to be so safe and secure that no person can molest them. Eighty thousand beavers (the same authority asserts,) were

killed annually, during his residence of nine years in the New Netherlands."<sup>c</sup>

The beaver's favorite food was the bark of the willow, birch and maple trees, which still flourish on the banks of the Cisqua, (Beaver dam). Rising above the banks of this stream on the west is an extensive ridge called the "Deer's Delight."

It appears that the old road laid out to the vineyard purchase in 1739, "extended north from Harris's mill at the west side of Cantatoe ridge on the east side of the "Deer's Delight," and so through to the purchase."<sup>d</sup>

---

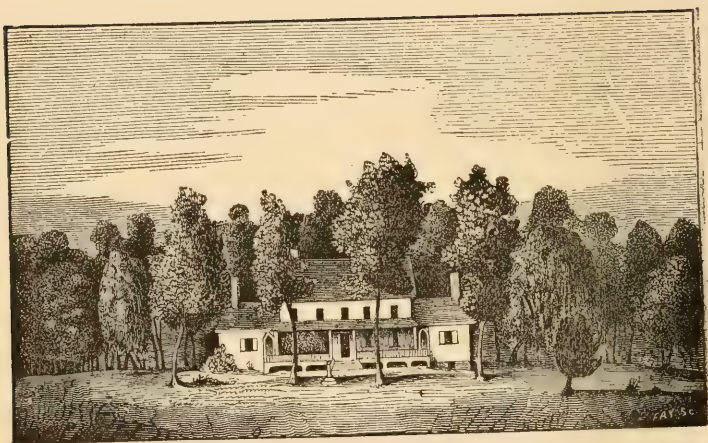
<sup>a</sup> 11th May, 1772, John Farnam conveys to James Holmes a lot of land lying in Bedford near a place called Aspetong.

<sup>b</sup> Report of Water Commissioners.

<sup>c</sup> Van der Donk's Hist. N. N. New York Hist. Sec. collect.

<sup>d</sup> Book of Co. Roads, Co. Clerk's office, lib. L. A. D. 1728.





RESIDENCE OF HON. JOHN JAY, BEDFORD.

Deer must have been very numerous here in 1656, for the same authority just quoted says, "the land abounded with them every where, and their numbers appear to remain undiminished; we seldom pass through the fields without seeing deer more or less, and we frequently see them in herds; there are also white bucks and does, and others of a black colour. The Indians aver that the haunts of the white deer are much frequented by the common deer, and that those of the black species are not frequented by the common deer."<sup>a</sup>

The wolf appears to have abounded in proportion to the other wild game. So destructive had this ferocious animal become in 1694 that the town of Bedford offered "twenty shillings bounty for the killing of wolves."

In the northern part of the town, called "Cantatoe," the place of Katoona's residence, is situated the "Jay homestead;" for four generations the residence and estate of the Jay family, and descending to them from their ancestor Jacobus Van Cortlandt who purchased it of the Indian Sachem Katoonah, in 1703. Here the Hon. John Jay spent the latter part of his life. The house is delightfully situated on a gentle slope backed with high and luxuriant woods. The surrounding scenery is exceedingly picturesque, particularly on the west overlooking the Pepe-mighting or Kisco, and Ketchawan or Croton valleys, and the hills bordering on the Hudson—among which is the bold Dunderberg, looking, from this spot, like an inverted bread tray; a sunset view from the ground west of the house is uncommonly grand, and once seen can never be forgotten. The interior of the mansion, which is elegantly furnished, displays on its walls a large and valuable collection of cabinet pictures, and family and historical portraits; among them are the following, viz: In the hall, George Washington, by Trumbull; John Adams, by Trumbull; Thomas Jefferson, after Stewart by Ames; James Madison, by the same; De Witt Clinton, John Jay, as Chief Justice; Judge William Jay, by Huntington; John Jay, by the same; President Dwight, of Yale College; Stephen Pelolquir, Mayor of Bristol, who married Frances daughter of Pierre Jay.

In the parlors: Augustus Jay, Esq., born at La Rochelle in France, 1665; came to New York, 1697—in evening and full dress—copy from an old French picture; the late Mr. William Jay, by West; and the late Judge William Jay as a young man, by Vanderlyn.

The dining-room contains: Judge Egbert Benson, by Stewart; Stephen Van Renselaer, Lt. Governor, by Stewart; Alexander Hamil-

<sup>a</sup> Van der Donk's N. N.



ton, by Trumbull; William Livingston, Governor of New Jersey as a boy; Judge William Jay, by Wenzleu; Mrs. John Jay, (Sarah Livingston) wife of Chief Justice John Jay and daughter of William Livingston, Governor of New Jersey, with her children William and Sarah, pastel by Pine; Mrs. H. G. Chapman and child, by Stone; the late H. W. Field, by Nims. Busts of Chief Justice (after a model of Carracio), by Frazee.<sup>a</sup>

Judge William Jay, by Kunzte, and Peter Augustus Jay—in the Library—a photograph of Sir Benjamin West—an unfinished painting of the Negotiation of the Treaty of Peace at Versailles in 1783, with portraits of Jay, Adams, DeFranklin, Temple Franklin, Secretary of the Commission, and Henry Laurens of South Carolina.

Pastel of Josiah Field, and various engravings and portraits of the family—including Mrs. Maria Banyer and Miss Anne Jay. Among other relics preserved here is the Philipse Family Bible (which came through the Van Cortlandts, Jacobus Van Cortlandt having married Eva Philipse) printed at Amsterdam 1657 by Paulus Aertsz Van Ravesteyn, and the Book of Common Prayer and administration of the Sacraments, &c., printed by John Baskett of London, M. D. ccxxiv. Among the entries in the former are the following, “29 Sept., 1698. William 3<sup>rd</sup> by letters patent granted to Augustus Jay all the rights and privileges of a native born English subject.”

“4th March, 1686, the Governor of New York granted to Augustus Jay letters of denization for the Colony.” “Augustus Jay was admitted to the freedom of the city of New York by the Mayor and Aldermen on the 27th of January, 1700.” “Augustus Jay 1726—born March 23, 1665—died 10th of March 1751.” In the west end of the house, now used as the library, expired the venerable Chief Justice Jay, on Tuesday the 17th day of May, 1829. “The Hon. John Jay, LL D., was the eighth child of Peter Jay, of Rye, and Mary Van Cortlandt; he was born on the 12th of December, 1745, and in 1753 was put to school at New Rochelle. He was graduated at King’s College, New York, in 1764, after which he studied law; was admitted to the bar in 1768, and acted as secretary to the Commissioner for running the boundary line between New York and New Jersey. He was a prominent member of the Congress of 1774, and of that of 1775, and in 1776 assisted in framing the Government of New York. He was elected Chief Justice of that State in May, 1777, and resigned that office in 1779, when elected President of Congress. In September, 1779, he was appointed Minister to Spain; was one of the signers to the definitive treaty of Peace at

<sup>a</sup> Frazee executed several busts of Jay from the model of Carracio for the Supreme Court, one of which was ordered by Congress.

Paris in September, 1783; and returned to America in 1784, having been previously appointed Secretary of State for Foreign affairs. He became Chief Justice of the United States in 1789, and in 1794 was appointed Minister to England; was Governor of the State of New York from 1795 to 1801, after which he retired from public life."<sup>a</sup>

A writer truthfully says, "He was one of the wisest statesmen and purest patriots of the days of the war of Independence, and our country has no purer name inscribed on the list of her worthies." The Supreme Court of the State being in session in New York, at the time of his death, the gentlemen of the bar held a meeting and adopted the following resolutions: "Resolved that the members of this bar are impressed with deep grief upon the decease of their illustrious brother John Jay. They find however, a consolation in the reflection, that his conduct through a long and useful life, has given a lustre to our profession, and to this bar; and that while his character for private virtues and public worth has justly endeared him to the nation, his patriotism, his great talents as a statesman, and his great acquirements as a jurist, his eminent purity as a Christian, and his probity as a man, all unite to present him to the public as an example whose radiance points to the attainment of excellence."

The memory of this great and good man will be embalmed in the heart of every true friend of liberty, virtue and the honor and prosperity of the State of New York and her civil institutions, and as long as the history of this State and Nation shall be known and read.<sup>b</sup>

#### ANECDOTE OF JOHN JAY.

One of the purest of American statesmen was John Jay. He was a patriot in the highest sense of the much-abused word. But he was more than a statesman, and was gifted with a higher virtue than patriotism, for he was a Christian. A paragraph in a letter written to his wife when about retiring from the governorship of New York, discloses the nature of the man. "A few years," he writes, "will put us all in the dust, and then it will be of more importance to me to have governed myself than to have governed a State."

The self-sacrificing character of Mr. Jay's patriotism was exhibited by his acceptance of the office of Minister to England to negotiate the treaty of 1794. The bitter feelings between Great Britain and the United States, created by the Revolutionary War, were so strong as to interfere with the commercial prosperity of the youthful nation. Mr. Jay, among other statesmen, recognized that it was necessary that a treaty should be made with England. Urging his views upon some friends, he said that so intense was the popular hostility towards the English, that the Minister who should negotiate the treaty would be an object

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Col. Hist. of N. Y., vol. viii: p. 469.

<sup>b</sup> Seammonds Political Hist. of N. Y., Vol. ii, p. 810.

of public execration. A gentleman remarked that he had good reasons for thinking Mr. Jay would be selected by President Washington for that position. "If my country demands the sacrifice," replied Mr. Jay, "I am ready."

Mr. Jay was appointed. He went to England, negotiated the treaty, which, though much opposed, was at last ratified by the Senate. But Mr. Jay was for years an object of strong popular hostility.—The *Boston True Flag*, text June 24, 1876.

In the same room died on Thursday, Oct. 14, 1858, his second son, Judge William Jay. He was born June 16, 1779, graduated at Yale College in 1807, and studied law at Albany; but having injured his eyes by intense study, relinquished his practice and retired to Bedford. Upon the death of his father in 1829, he acquired the Bedford estate. He was for several years one of the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas for Westchester County. His life was principally devoted to philanthropic labors, and he went to his rest like a stock of corn, fully ripe.

By his wife Augusta McVicker, he had one son the Hon. John Jay, and five daughters, Anna, who married the Rev. Lewis P. W. Balch, D.D., Cannon of Montreal Cathedral; Maria who married John F. Butterworth; Sarah Louisa, who married Alexander M. Brenan, M.D., and Eliza and Augusta the successive wives of Henry Edward Pellew, Esq.

Surrounding the house are ornamental grounds tastefully laid out in flower-beds and shrubbery, and to the left is a fine kitchen garden and green-houses.

Opposite the homestead in the Katonah wood is situated the handsome stone residence of Henry Edward Pellew, Esq. (grandson of Edmund Edward Pellew, Viscount Exmouth, England,) brother-in-law of the Hon. John Jay.

A little East of the Jay homestead, flows Spruce Creek, the former division line between the "Vineyards" and the "Dibble" purchases.

North and East of Cantetoe lies the valley of the Peppeneghek or Cross River, celebrated for its picturesque beauty; on this romantic stream is situated the Jay Mills, now owned by the Hoyt brothers.

Katonah is a thriving village in the North-west corner of Bedford, situated near the junction of the Croton and Cross Rivers. Upon the latter stream are located several mills and manufactories. The Cross River or Peppeneghek is said to discharge at the rate of nine millions one hundred and forty thousand four hundred gallons per diem.

The settlement contains two churches, a Methodist Episcopal and

Presbyterian, Rail Road and Telegraph station, Post Office and several stores.

The Methodist Episcopal church which is a new edifice, was erected in 1878, and was incorporated on the 25th of January, 1837; Norman William Miller, Walter P. Lyon, Joseph Wilson, Joel W. Miller and Noah Smith, Trustees.<sup>a</sup>

The Peppeneghek and the Cisqua intersect a mile to the eastward. Previous to the erection of the Croton dam, the shad fish annually ascended the river to Katonah or Wittlockville, a distance of nearly thirty miles from the Hudson; trout are taken here in great abundance. The several tributaries of the Kitchawan or Croton in this town supply a great abundance of mill seats. There is also a small stream that runs north from the village of Bedford to Long Island Sound (to which we have already alluded) called Myanos River. The mills are numerous and more than equal to the wants of the inhabitants. The general surface of Bedford is elevated, though broken by small hills, and valleys, has very little of waste ground. The arable, pasture, and meadow lands, are in very just proportion for a good farming country, and the whole is well watered by springs, brooks, and rivulets, the latter of a good size for mills; the summits of the hills afford many extensive and interesting prospects, but the hills are stony and hard to till, though they yield good crops of grain, grass, and all the common fruits."

In the vicinity of Bedford sulphuret of iron, and the oxide of iron occur in beds of sand, also quartz, and slate are found in numerous localities.

---

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. B. 69.





# THE TOWN OF CORTLANDT.

---

This town formerly belonged to the great manor of Cortlandt, which also comprehended the present townships of North Salem, Somers, Yorktown and a large portion of Lewisboro'. The name itself is derived from the the ancient family of the Van Cortlandts', the mesne Lords, and first grantees from the Indians. Under the Mohegans or "enchanted wolf tribe," Cortlandt-town appears to have been divided between the two chiefs of Sachus and Ketchawany—the former of whom exercised jurisdiction over the lands of Weshqua, Canopus, Wenneebus, Appamagh-pogh and Meahagh, a territory extending from the south side of Verplanck's Point to St. Anthony's nose in the Highlands, whilst the latter held authority over the lands of Kitchawan, lying south of Verplanck's Point, including Senasqua neck, (Teller's Point,) and the small island of Oscawana.

The Indian villages in their order were, first, Kitchawonk, situated near the mouth of the Croton, so-called from the original name of the river, viz: "Kitchawan," a term which is descriptive of "a large and swift-flowing current." Croton, the present name of the same stream, is said to have been adopted from an illustrious Sachem of that name who resided here at an early period.

"The first name of importance above the island (remarks Mr. Schoolcraft) is Croton—a name of classic sound, but unquestionably derived from the Indian, though a corruption of the original, and not originally applied by them to the River.

In a deed dated 1685, which is quoted by Judge Benson, the river is called Kitchawan. "Croton as stated by the same authority is a cor-

ruption of the name of a chief who lived and exercised his authority at the mouth of this stream. It is clearly a derivative from Kenotin or Knoten, or as it is oftener used (without the prefix), Noten, meaning in either case the wind or a tempest. It is a man's name still common in the west and north."<sup>a</sup>

The Indian castle of Kitchawan (according to tradition) occupied a commanding position on the neck proper, overlooking the Croton and Haverstraw bays, a little northwest of the manor house. This site was chosen for the purpose of protecting the fisheries, and overawing the neighboring tribes. A variety of Indian weapons are occasionally found in the neighborhood, consisting principally of battle-axes, javelins and arrow heads. The Indian burying ground is situated near the entrance of Senasqua Neck, (Teller's Point.) The sachem of Kitchawan in 1641, was Metsewakes.

"Upon the 10th July, 1641, appeared before the counsel, the following chiefs summoned by Oratan, chief of Hackinkesacky, agreeably to the conversation with him on the 27th of May, viz., Sowanare, chief of Weckquaeskek, and Metsewakes, chief of Ketchawangh, alias Slauper Haven; they expressed a desire to live on friendly terms with the Dutch, and to detach themselves from the Esopus Indians."<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 22d of April, 1643, the chief of Hackinkesacky was delegated by the Indians of Kitchawan to conclude a peace with the Director General.<sup>c</sup>

In 1644, Mamaronack was chief of the Indians residing on the Kitchawan.<sup>d</sup>

A. D. 1645, Aepjen chief sachem of the Mohegans signed a treaty of peace in behalf of the Kitchawanghs.<sup>e</sup>

On the 15th of September, 1663, occurs the name of Meghtesewakes, chief of Kitchawan; and in 1699, that of Sackama Wicker.

The next Indian village north of the Croton, was Sachus or Sackhoes, which stood near the site of the present village of Peekskill. The chief of this place in the year 1682, was Sirham.

The early Dutch maps place the villages of Keskisko, (a name that partly survives in the Kisco River,) Pasquashic, and Noapain south of the Highlands.

The Wappinger Indians occupied the region of St. Anthony's nose and the Kittatenny mountains, (Highlands.)<sup>f</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Pro. N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1844, 100.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. ii. 220.

<sup>d</sup> O'Gallaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 302.

<sup>e</sup> N. Y. Hist. Soc. Coll. N. Ser. vol. i. 276.

<sup>f</sup> Moultons's History of New York, p. 221.

The Indians are said to have been very numerous in and around Peekskill as late as 1740, especially during the fishing seasons.<sup>a</sup>

At an early period, Teller's Point or neck passed from the native Indian proprietors to William and Sarah Teller. "The point of peninsula, (says Judge Benson,) the northern chop of the bay or entrance into the Croton River, the Skippers called Sarah's Point, the Indians gave it to William and Sarah Teller, husband and wife, and she survived him."<sup>b</sup>

#### INDIAN DEED OF SENASQUA.

On the 3d of June, 1682, occurs a sale from the Indian proprietors, Ackemak, Jangheor, Nawakies, Wattatane, Kaegara, Pewengen, Askawanes, Siggeres, Owarrewie, Arronjsack, Serram, Geckawock, Garbanck, Awoejhackias, Armawain, Ogkan, Nennafarick, Wapeken, Sepaacktan and Awemaracktow, to Cornelius Van Burgum, consisting of all that parcel neck or point of land, with the marsh, meadow ground or valley thereto adjoining and belonging, situate, lying, and being on the east side of the North or Hudson's river, over against the Verdrida Hooke, commonly called and known by the name of Slaupers Haven, and by the Indians Navish, the meadow being by the Indians called Senasqua, being bounded by the said river and a certain creek called or known to the Indians by the name of Tanrackan and Sepperak, and divided from the main land by certain trees marked by the Indians, together with half the said creek, &c., &c., for and in consideration of a certain sum or quantity of Wampum and divers other goods, paid by Cornelius Van Burgum.<sup>c</sup>

It is certain that sometime prior to 1748, Sarah Teller held the neck as tenant at sufferance under the Van Cortlandt family. A branch of the Teller family was early connected with the Van Cortlandt's by marriage, Andrew Teller in 1671, having married Sophia, daughter of the Right Hon. Orloff Stevenson Van Cortlandt.

The common ancestor of the Tellers was a Dutch clergyman of some distinction in the New Netherlands.

Upon the 30th of July, 1667, occurs an act of the English Governor and his council, concerning William Teller and his children, wherein the payment of eighty-five beavers is enforced as his daughter's share besides other portions to his remaining children; one of these was a son named Andries.<sup>d</sup>

The names of Jacob Teller en zyn huys vrow (and his wife) occur in the church books of Sleepy Hollow.

Upon the 14th of July, 1800, the heirs of William Teller, conveyed part of the neck to Elijah Morgan of Cortlandt-town; 6th of November,

<sup>a</sup> This is stated on the authority of Mr. Mandville of Peekskill.

<sup>b</sup> Benson's Mem. of the State of N. Y., 47.

<sup>c</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. p. 182.

<sup>d</sup> Surrogate's office, New York, 30.



1804, Elijah Morgan, Jr., and Ann his wife, re-sold the same to Robert Underhill; on the 16th of August, 1804, Robert McCord and wife conveyed another portion of the neck to Robert Underhill; upon the death of the latter individual, the whole became vested in his two sons, the present proprietors of Croton Point.

In 1683, the Hon. Stephanus Van Cortlandt, purchased of the native Indian proprietors the territory of Meahagh, (Verplanck's Point,) and the lands east thereof called Appamaghpogh, as follows:

#### INDIAN DEED OF MEAHAGH.

To all Christian people to whom this present writing shall come, Pewemine, Oskewans, Turham, Querawighint, Siecham, Isighers and Prackises, all Indians, true and rightful owners and proprietors of the land hereinafter mentioned as for themselves and the rest of their relations send, greeting, KNOW YE that for and in consideration of the sum of twelve pounds in wampum and several other merchandises, as by a schedule hereunto annexed more at large, doth and may appear to them the same Indians in hand paid before the ensealing and delivering thereof, receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, and for other divers causes and considerations, they, the said Indians have granted, bargained and sold, aliened, enfeofed and confirmed, and by these presents do fully, clearly and absolutely grant, bargain, sell, alien, enfeof, and confirm unto Stephanus Van Cortlandt of the city of New York, merchant, his heirs or assignees forever, all that certain tract or parcel of land situate, lying or being on the east side of the Hudson River, at the entering of the Highlands, just over against Haverstraw, lying on the south side of the creek called Tammoesis, and from thence easterly in the woods to the head of the creek called Kewightahagh, and so along said creek northerly to the Hudson River, and thence westerly to the utmost point of the said tract of land, and from thence southerly along said Hudson River to the aforementioned creek, Tammoesis, which said tract or parcel of land known by the Indians by the name of Appamaghpogh and Meahagh, including all the lands, soils, meadows and woods within the circuit and bounds aforesaid, together with all, and singular the trees, timber-woods, under-woods, swamps, runs, marshes, meadows, rivulets, streams, creeks, waters, lakes, pools, ponds, fishing, hunting, fowling and whatsoever else to the said tract or parcel of land within the bounds and limits aforesaid, is belonging or in any wise appertaining without any restriction whatsoever, TO HAVE AND TO HOLD the said parcel or tract of land, and all and singular and other the premises and every part and parcel thereof unto the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assignees, to the sole and only proper use, benefit and behoof of him, the said Stephanus his heirs and assignees forever, and they, the said Indians do for themselves, their heirs and every of them consent, promise and engage, that the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt his heirs and assignees shall and may from henceforth and forever lawfully, peaceably and quietly have, hold, possess and enjoy the said tract or parcel of land, and all and singular the other the premises with their appurtenances without either let, hindrance, disturbance or interruption of or by them, the said Indian proprietors, or their heirs or any other person or per-

sons claiming, or that shall hereafter, shall or may claim, by from under them or either of them, and that they shall and will upon the reasonable request and demand made by the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, give and deliver peaceable and quiet possession of the said tract and parcel of land and premises, or of some part thereof and in the room of the whole under such person or persons, as by the said Stephanus Van Courtlandt shall be appointed to receive the same, in witness whereof the said Indians Pewemind, Oskewans, Turham, Querawighint, Siecham, Isighers, and Prackises, the Indian owners and proprietors aforesaid, have hereunto set their hands and seals in New York, this twenty-fourth day of August, in the thirty-fifth year of his majesties reign, Anno Domini. 1683.

Signed and delivered in presence  
of us, Francis Rambolett, Gulian  
Verplanck.

This is the mark of ☉  
Pewemind,

This in the marke of ☪  
Oskewans,

The mark of ☪

Siecham,

This is the mark of ☪

Isighers,

The mark of ☪

Prackises,

The mark of ☪

Turham,

The mark of ☪

Querewighnit.

A schedule or list of goods paid by Stephanus Van Cortlandt, in his deed expressed.

8 guns,	12 shirts,
9 blankets,	50 pounds of powder,
5 coats,	30 bars of lead,
14 fathom of Duffels,	18 hatchets,
14 kettles,	18 hoes,
40 fathoms of black Wampum,	14 knives,
80 fathoms of white Wampum,	a small coat,
2 ankers of rum,	6 fathom of stroud water cloth,
5 half vats of strong beer,	6 pair of stockings,
6 earthen jugs,	6 tobacco boxes.

This purchase was afterwards confirmed to Stephanus Van Cortlandt to be holden of his majesty and his successors in common soccage according to the tenure of East Greenwich in England, the patentee paying yearly therefore (as a quit rent,) two bushels of good winter wheat.

The following year Thomas Dekay, Richard Abramsen, Jacob Abramsen, Sybout Harche, Jacob Harche and Samuel Dekay, "obtained liberty and license to purchase of the Indians, (each of them,) three hundred acres of land, lying and being in the high lands by the north of

Stephen Van Cortlandt's land, which is called by the Indians, Wenebees, lying between two creeks, over against the Thunder hill, (Dunderburgh,) on the east side of the river, &c. Signed Thomas Dongan."<sup>a</sup>

The same year Thomas Dekay, Richard Abramsen, Jacob Abramsen, Sybout Harche, Jacob Harche, and Samuel Dekay, purchased of the Indians, Sirham, Sachem of Sachus, Pannskapham, Charrish, Askewaen, Pewinenien and Sickham, eighteen hundred acres of land, "situate on the highlands north of Stephanus Van Cortlandt's land, which is called by the Indians Wenebees, &c."

The above grantees on the 21st of April, 1685, made a second purchase of land from the same native proprietors consisting of:





#### INDIAN DEED OF SACHUS.

"All that tract or parcel of land situate, lying and being on Hudson's River at a certain place called by the Indians Sachus, and stretching by the north side of Mr. Stephanus Van Cortlandt's land to the said river to another creek, and so runs up said creek in several courses to a certain tree marked with R, and from the said marked tree southerly by marked trees all along to a marsh to another marked tree, marked R, west, up to the aforesaid creek which lies by said Mr. Stephanus Van Cortlandt's land, &c., &c."

Here followeth the schedule or particular of wampum and goods paid for the said land.

100 fathoms of white wampum,	15 bottles,
60 guilders of silver,	15 pair of stockings,
8 fowling pieces,	12 coopers knives,
8 blankets,	5 bullet moulds,
10 match coats,	15 axes,
8 brass kettles,	15 hoes,
6 stroud water coats,	40 knives,
50 yards of stroud water,	2 rolls of tobacco,
15 shirts,	3 lead ladles,
40 bars of lead,	100 Indian awls, <sup>b</sup>
15 earthen jugs cont. 50 lbs powder,	20 tobacco boxes,
1000 fish hooks,	200 needles,
3 pistols,	2 swords,
100 tobacco pipes,	8 coats,
1 anker of rum,	4 half vats of beer.

Signed sealed and delivered in the presence of Brant Schuyler, Levinus V. Schayck, George Brewerton.

The mark of  Weskhewen Sachem,  
The mark of  Tupaine,  
The mark of  Amterone,  
The mark of  Shaphame.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. fol. 189, date of license, 6th of March, 1684. The principal part of the above purchase is now covered by the farm of John McCoy.

<sup>b</sup> Used in purforating wampum.

<sup>c</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. vol. v. 87.

A third sale from Sirham, Indian sachem of Sachus, and other Indians, occurs on the 25th of June, 1685, to Jacobus Dekay, &c.

### INDIAN DEED OF WISHQUA.

"Of all that tract or parcel of land, situate and being on the east side of Hudson's River, commonly called and known by the name of Wishqua, beginning at the great creek, called by the Indians John Peake's creek, it being in the mouth of the west side of the said creek and so running up along the said river to another small creek and fall, including all fresh and salt meadows within the said bounds, together with all. &c., &c., for the value of four hundred guilders, seawant."<sup>a</sup>

The Indian territory of Sachus was subsequently confirmed by Royal Patent on the 23d day of December, 1685, Teunis Dekay and his associates in the following manner :

### THE ROYAL PATENT OF SACHUS.

Thomas Dongan, Lieut. Governor and Vice Admiral of New York, and its dependencies, under his majesty James the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, defender of the faith, &c., Supreme Lord and proprietor of the colony and province of New York, and its dependencies in America, &c. To all whom this shall come, sendeth greeting; whereas, Teunis Dekay, Richard Abramsen, Jacob Abramsen, Sybout Harchie, Jacob Harchie and Samuel Dekay, all of the city of New York, have by virtue of my order lycense, bearing date the 6th day of March, Anno Domini, 1684-5, according to the law and practice of the said Province, for a valuable consideration purchased of the natives and Indian owners, their right, title, interest, clayme and demand of, in and to all that certain tract or parcel of land herein after mentioned and expressed, for their own proper uses and behoofs as by the Indian deed of sale, bearing date the 21st day of April, A. D., 1685, remaining upon record in the secretary's office of the said province may more fully and at large appear; and whereas Samuel Dekay, one of the purchasers is since deceased, and Jacobus Dekay his father hath since his decease desired that his said purchase and share may be confirmed unto his grand sonne, Jacob Dekay, to him, his heirs and assigns for ever. Now know ye that by virtue of my commission and authority devised unto me, and power in me residing, in consideration of the quit rent, hereinafter received, I have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do give, grant, ratify and confirm unto the said Teunis Dekay, Richard Abramsen, Jacob Abramsen, Sybout Harchie, Jacob Harchie, and Jacobus Dekay, jun., all that certain tract or parcel of land situate, lying, and being on Hudson's river, at a certain place called by the Indians Sachus, and stretching by the north side of Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his land up to the said river, to another creek, and so runs up said creek in several courses, to a certain tree marked with T R, and from the said marked trees southerly by marked trees all along to a marsh, to another tree marked with T

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. Vol. v.



R, west of the aforesaid creek which lyes by said Stephanus Van Cortlandt's land, including all the meadows both fresh and salt within said bounds containing in all 1800 acres, or thereabouts, together with all, and all manner of rivers, rivulets, runs, streams, waters, feedings, pastures, woods, underwoods, trees, swamps, moors, marshes, meadows, easments, profits and commodities, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, and all other appurtenances whatsoever, to the said tract or parcel of land within the bounds and limits, aforesaid belonging, or in any wise appertaining to have and to hold, the said tract or parcel of land, and all and singular other the premises unto the said Tennis Dekay, &c., their heirs and assigns for ever, to their sole and only proper use, benefit and behoof, of them the said Tennis Dekay, &c., and their heirs and assigns forever to be holden in free and common soccage according to the tenure of East Greenwich in the County of Kent in his majesties kingdom of England, yielding, rendering, and paying therefor, every year, for the use of our Sovereign Lord the King's majesty, his heirs or successors in such affair or affairs, as by him or them shall be appointed to receive the same, ten bushels of good winter merchantable wheat, yearly, on the five and twentieth day of March, at the city of New York. And for the better preserving the title of the above recited parcel of land and premises I have caused these presents to be entered in the secretary's office, of this province. Given under my hand and sealed with the seal of the province at Fort James in New York, the 23d day of December, A. D., 1685.<sup>a</sup>

THOMAS DONGAN.

The above patent, commonly called "Ryck's Patent," passed by purchase to Hercules Lent, as appears by certain releases, the first bearing date 20th of April, 1715, wherein Jacob Abramsen, of ye upper Yonckers, one of the original patentees, for the consideration of £150, confirms Hercules Lent, yeoman, in all his right, title and interest in ye patent called Ryck Abramsen's Patent.<sup>b</sup>

The Rikers or Rycke's Lents and Krankheys "were of common origin in Germany and located at a very remote period in Lower Saxony where they enjoyed a state of allodial independence, at that day regarded as constituting nobility. They there possessed the estate, or manor of Rycken, from which they took their name, then written Von Rycken, indicating its territorial derivation." "Hans Von Rycken, the lord of the manor, and a valiant knight with his cousin, Melchior Von Rycken, who lived in Holland, took part in the first crusade to the Holy Land, in 1096, heading 800 crusaders in the army of Walter the Penniless. Melchior lived to return, but Hans perished in that ill-fated expedition." "In time the descendants of Melchior Van Rycken extended themselves from Holland to the region of the Rhine and into Switzerland." "In the Spanish war Capt. Jacob Simons de Rycke, a wealthy corn merchant of Amsterdam, and a warm partizan of the Prince of Orange, dis-

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. Lib. & fol. 114 to 117, Co. Rec. Lib. I. p. 145.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec., Lib., E., 157.

tinguished himself by his military services." His son Jacob de Rycke was probably the father of "Abraham de Rycke who emigrated to this country in 1638, as he received in that year an allotment of land from Gov. Kieft, for which he afterward took out a patent, dated Aug. 8, 1640. He died in 1689, leaving his farm by will to his son Abraham. By his wife Girtie, daughter of Hendrick Hermensen, he had nine children—Ryck Abramsen of Cortland manor who adopted the name of Lent; 2, Jacob, born 1640, died young; 3, Jacob born 1643, united with his brother Ryck in purchasing Ryck's patent. This grant was indeed in the manual limits; 4, Hendrick, born 1646, died young; 5, Mary, born 1649, married Sibout H. Krankheyt of Cortlandt manor; 6, John, born 1651, his descendants are to be found in New Jersey; 7, Aletta, born 1653, married Capt. John Harmense of the manor of Cortlandt; 8, Abraham, born 1655; 9, Hendrick, born 1662."

"Ryck Abramsen Lent, eldest son of Abraham Rycken, married Catrina, daughter of Harek Siboutsen, and in 1685 with others purchased of the Indians an extensive tract of land, north of Cortlandt, called "Sachus." He settled upon this tract, which thence took the name of Ryck's Patent. He served as an elder in the Sleepy Hollow church; was much respected and died at a good old age. His will was made March 30, 1720, and was proved March 28, 1723. His children were Elizabeth, marr. Thomas Heyert, Abraham, Ryck, Harek, Mayant, marr. Thos. Benson and Catharine, marr. to Joseph Jones."<sup>a</sup>

On the 29th of December, 1729, Sybout Harchie Krankhyte, Hercules Johnse Krankhyte, and Jacobus Krankhyte, release to Hercules Lent "a certain tract of land on the east side of Hudson's river, at a certain place called by the Indians, Sachus, and is bounded on the north, east, and south, by the manor of Cortlandt, and on the west by Hudson's river, aforesaid containing 1800 acres, reference being had to a certain patent granted by Thos. Dongan, &c., &c."<sup>b</sup> The following receipts are for quit rents, due on the Ryck Patent :

Received of Mr. Philip Van Cortlandt, three hundred and eighty bushels of wheat for thirty-eight years quit rent, due to his majesty from the within patent, and in full for the said time. Witness my hand this 28th day of December, 1726.

ARCHIBALD KENNEDY, *Rec. Gen.*

Received of Hercules Lent, twenty bushels of wheat for two years quarter upon the within tracts in full to the 25th of March last. Witness my hand this second of May, 1729.

ARCHIBALD KENNEDY, *Rec. Gen.*

<sup>a</sup> Annals of Newtown by James Riker, Junr.

<sup>b</sup> The original document is in the possession of Mr. Nathl. Bedle, of Peekskill.

In A.D. 1766, Hercules Lent, of Ryck's Patent, bequeathed his lands by will to his children in the following order:

*"Item.* I give and devise to my son Jacob, all that farm he now lives on, containing 350 acres, lying and being, &c., on the south-east part of a tract of land formerly granted to my father, Ryck Abramsen Lent and others, which is commonly known by the name of Ryck's Patent, and by the Indian name of Sackhoses, to have and to hold, &c. To my son Hendrick, all that farm I now live on, containing 350 acres, in the south-west part of Ryck's Patent.

To my son Abraham, all that land he lives on, containing 350 acres, adjoining to Hudson's river, and on the south side of the aforesaid devised to my son Hendrick.

To my grandchildren, Abram Lamb, Jane Lamb, Ira Lamb, Rachel Lamb, and Rachel, wife of James Lamb, (the father and mother of the said children,) all that part of my lands and meadows situate, lying and being in Orange county, by Hudson's river, known by the name of Stony Point. To my daughter Catharine, wife of Hendrick de Ronde, lands by Stony Point."<sup>a</sup>

The descendants of the testator are still numerous in Cortlandt-town. Hercules Lent, a great grandson of the patentee, holds a portion of the patrimonial estate and occupies the family homestead. On the west bank of the Annsville creek was situated the property of John Krankhyte, consisting of 300 acres.

The lands of Kitchawan, in this town, were conveyed by the native Indians in 1686, to Thomas Dongan, Captain General, and Governor-in-chief, and Vice Admiral in, and over, the Province of New York and territories depending thereon, in America, under his majesty James II, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, defender of the faith, &c.

To all whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas, Emigent, Askewans, Penarand, and Tagehkint, natives and principal owners of the tract of land commonly called or known by the Indian name of Ketchtawong, did in and by their certain deed or writing, under their hands and seals, bearing date the day of August now last past, for the consideration therein mentioned, grant, bargain, sell, alien, enfeeble and confirm unto me the said Thomas Dongan, my heirs and assigns, all that tract or parcel of land situate, lying and being on the east side of Hudson's River, within the county of West Chester, beginning at Kechtawong Creek, and so running along Hudson's river northerly to the land of Stephanus Van Cortlandt, from thence to the eastwardmost end of the said Van Cortlandt's land and from thence to a great fresh water pond called Keakates, and from the said pond along the creek that runs out of the said pond into Kitchtawan creek, and so downward on the south side of the said creek to Hudson's river, including all the land, soil and meadow within the bounds and

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's Office, N. Y., No. 25, 337.

limits aforesaid, together with, &c. And whereas I, the said Thomas Dongan, in and by a certain deed under my hand and seal, bearing date 12th day of October, did grant and sell over unto John Knights, of the city of New York, all my right and title in the same, &c.

I do, by these presents, ratify and confirm the same to John Knights, this 20th day of March, 1686.

Upon the 20th of April, 1687, we find a conveyance from John Knight, gent., to his Excellency, Governor Dongan, of the same territory, called Kichtawong.<sup>a</sup>

It will be seen hereafter that the royal patent of the manor of Cortlandt recites "sundry grants," made by Governor Dongan to the patentee. One of which was doubtless the above conveyance. Col. Stephanus Van Cortlandt subsequently received a confirmation for the same, from the Indians, bearing date August the 8th, 1699.

#### INDIAN DEED OF KEWIGHELOCK.

"We, Sachima, Wicker, sachem of Kightawonck, Koraghfall, Awoghran, Moninghme, a squaw, Marackenegh, a squaw, Poking, a boy, Wighquekameeck, Queen, a boy, Massarectt, Howogarint, Johnny Taparinock, Oghgniawe, Orraragpuock, Pagkerngkinck, Ravisson, Mighegaroe Tapugh, a squaw, Tappawalhigh, a squaw, Aratissanck Maentigrookass, his Kapoaghpurmin Sawappawall, all right, just, natural owners and proprietors of all the land hereinafter mentioned, lying and being within the bounds and limits of the mariners of Cortlandt, &c. &c., have sold, for a certain sum of money, all that tract and parcel of land situate, lying and being in the manor of Cortlandt, in West Chester county, beginning on the south side of Kightawonck Creek, and so along the said creek to a place called Kewighecock, and from thence along a creek called Peppeneghek, to the head thereof, and then due east to the limits of Connecticut, being the easternmost bounds of said manner, and from thence northerly along the limits of Connecticut aforesaid to the river Mattegtecoc ten miles, and from thence due west to Hudson's river, together with all the lands, soils, &c., &c.

Sackima wee,	Her mark I Tapahuck, a squaw,
sachem of Kichtawank, N	The mark of O Sawappen, a squaw,
his mark,	" R Arahstant,
Corachpa, P	" X Maantick,
Wechrepua, A	" A Kakiskagin, a squaw,
Monrechro, M	" D Ackparum, a squaw,
a squaw,	" V Ockququrie,
Manackawagh, a squaw, H	" D Oranack Rank,
Pooghkink, a lad 15 years of age, B	" S Paghkinekink
signer of the rights of his father,	" R Rawefen,
	" O Michhacharo,
	" J O Papruch, a squaw,
	" W Wighquach kanno,
	" N Quez, a youth 13 years old,
	" I Masacott,
	" K Koocparen,
	" C Jonyeo,
	" P Taparmuck.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of John Nanfan, A Depeyster, James Graham, A. Livingston."<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A., 121.

<sup>b</sup> Book of Indian deeds, Alb. warrant for survey, Lib. I., 88.



The Hon. Stephanus Van Cortlandt being now vested in the fee simple, the whole territory was by royal charter erected into the lordship and manor of Cortlandt, which, according to actual survey, contained eighty-three thousand acres. It is said that the governor's fees on this occasion amounted to three hundred pieces of eight.

Over the extensive forests of Cortlandt (celebrated for their fat venison,) the lord of the manor was constituted, "the sole and only ranger, to have and enjoy all the benefits and perquisites, &c., that of right doth belong unto a ranger according to the statutes and customs of the realm of England." In fact there was a paramount right in the superior lord for the range of deer within the manor, as parcel of the forest; a right which might consist with free Chace and Warren on the mesne lord.

The Lords of Cortlandt had power to hold one Court Leet, and one Court Baron in their territory for the collection of fines, &c., to which the several wards in the manor owed suit and service.

The lords of Cortlandt also enjoyed the extraordinary privilege of sending a representative to the provincial assembly.

The whole manor was by the feudal tenure of paying therefor yearly to the Crown, upon the feast day of the Annunciation of the blessed Virgin Mary, the rent of forty shillings.

#### THE ROYAL CHARTER.

Gulielmus Tertius Dei Gratia, Angliæ, Scotiæ, France et Hibreniæ, Rex. fidei defensor, &c., &c.

"To all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas, our loving subject, Colonel Stephanus Van Cortlandt, one of the members of our Council of our Province of New York, &c., hath by his petition presented unto our trusty and well beloved Colonel Benjamin Fletcher, Captain-General and Governor-in-chief of our said Province of New York and territories depending thereon, in America, &c., prayed our grant and confirmation of a certain parcel and tract of land situate, lying and being upon the east side of Hudson's river, beginning on the north line of the manor of Phillipsburg, now in the tenure and occupation of Frederick Phillips, Esq., one of the members of our said Council, and to the south side of a certain creek called Kightawanck Creek, and from thence by a due east line, running into the woods twenty English miles, and from the said north line of the manor of Phillipsburgh upon the south side of the said Kightawanck Creek, running along the said Hudson river northerly as the said river runs into the north side of a high hill, which high lands, commonly called and known by the name of Anthony's nose, to a red cedar tree, which makes the southernmost bounds of the land now in the tenure and occupation of Mr. Adolph Phillips, including in the said northerly line, all the meadows, marshes, coves, bays and necks of land and peninsulars that are adjoining or extending into Hudson's river within the bounds of the said line, and from the

said red cedar tree another due easterly line running into the woods twenty English miles, and from thence along the partition line between our Colony of Connecticut and this our Province, until you come into the place where the first easterly line of twenty miles doth come—the whole being bounded on the east by the said partition line between our said Colony of Connecticut and this our Province, and on the south by the northerly line of the manor of Phillipsburgh to the southward of Kightawanck Creek aforesaid, and on the west by the said Hudson's river, and on the north from the aforesaid red cedar tree by the south line of the land of Adolph Phillips, and also of a certain parcel of meadow lying and being situate upon the west side of the said Hudson's river, within the said high lands over against the aforesaid hill called Anthony's nose, beginning on the south side of a creek called by the Indians Sinkapogh, and so along the said creek to the head thereof, and then northerly along the high hills, as the river runneth, to another creek called Apinnapink, and from thence along the said creek to the said Hudson's river, which certain tract of land and meadow our said loving subject is now actually seized and possessed thereof, and doth hold the same of us by virtue of sundry grants heretofore made unto him by Col. Thomas Dongan, late Governor of our said Province, and whereon our said loving subject hath made considerable improvement, having been at great cost, charge and expense in the purchasing the said tract of land and meadows from the native Indians, as well as in the settling a considerable number of families thereon, and being willing to make some further improvement thereon, doth by his said petition further request and pray that we would be graciously pleased to erect the aforesaid tract of land and meadows within the limits and bounds aforesaid into a lordship or manor of Cortlandt, which reasonable request for the future encouragement of our said loving subject, we being willing to grant: *Know ye*, that of our special grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto our said loving subject, Stephanus Van Cortlandt, all the aforesaid certain parcel and tracts of land and meadow within their several and respective limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and every of the messuages, tenements, buildings, barns, houses, out-houses, stables, edifices, orchards, gardens, inclosures, fences, pastures, fields, feedings, woods, underwoods, trees, timber, swamps, meadows, marshes, pools, ponds, lakes, fountains, waters, water courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, streams, brooks, creeks, harbors, coves, inlets, outlets, islands of meadow, necks of land and meadow, peninsulas of land and meadow, ferries, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, and the fishing in Hudson's river, so far as the bounds of the said land extends upon the same, quarries, minerals, (silver and gold mines only excepted,) and all other the rights, members, liberties, privileges, jurisdictions, pre-eminences, emoluments, to the afore recited certain parcels or tracts of land and meadows within their several and respective limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging or in any ways appertaining or accepted, reputed, taken, known, or occupied as part, parcel or member thereof, to have and to hold all the afore recited certain parcels and tracts of land and meadows within their several and respective limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and every of the messuages, tenements, buildings, barns, houses, out-houses, stables, edifices, orchards, gardens, enclosures, fences, pastures, fields, feedings,

woods, underwoods, trees, timber, swamps, meadows, marshes, pools, ponds, lakes, fountains, water, water-courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, streams, brooks, creeks, harbors, coves, inlets, outlets, islands of land and meadow, necks of land and meadow, peninsulas of land and meadow, ferries, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, and the fishing on Hudson's river as far as the bounds of the said land extends upon the said river, quarries, mines, minerals, (silver and gold excepted,) and all other the rights, members, liberties, privileges, jurisdictions, pre-eminences, emoluments, royalties, profits, benefits, advantages, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever to the afore recited certain parcels or tracts of land and meadow within their several and respective limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging or in any ways appertaining or accepted, reputed, taken, known or occupied as part, parcel or member thereof unto the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assignees, to the sole and only proper use, benefit and behoof of him the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assigns forever; and, moreover, *know ye*, that of our further special grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, we have thought fit, according to the request of our said loving subject, to erect all the afore recited certain parcels or tracts of land and meadows within the limits and bounds aforesaid into a lordship and manor, and therefore by these presents we do for us, our heirs and successors, erect, make and constitute all the afore recited certain parcel and tracts of land and meadows with the limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and every the above granted premises, with all and every of their appurtenances, into one lordship and manor to all intents and purposes; and it is our royal will and pleasure that the said lordship and manor shall, from henceforth, be called the lordship and manor of Cortlandt; and further, know ye, that we, reposing especial trust and confidence in the loyalty, wisdom, justice, prudence and circumspection of our said loving subject, Stephanus Van Cortlandt, and to the heirs and assignees of him the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, full power and authority at all times forever hereafter in the said lordship and manor, one court leet and one court baron, to hold and keep at such time and times, and so often yearly as he or they shall see meet; and all fines, issues and amercements at the said court leet and court baron, to be holden in the said lordship and manor, to be settled, forfeited, or employed, or payable, or happening at any time to be payable at any time by any of the inhabitants of or within the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt, or the limits and bounds thereof, and also all and every of the powers and authorities herein before mentioned, for the holding and keeping the said court leet and court baron from time to time, and to award and issue out the customary writs, to be issued and awarded out of the said court leet and court baron, to be kept by the heirs and assigns of the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt forever, or their or any of their stewards, deputed and appointed with a full and ample power and authority to distrain for the rents, services and other sums of money, payable by virtue of the premises and all other lawful remedies and means for the having, possessing, receiving, levying and enjoying the premises and every part and parcel of the same, and all waifs, estrays, wrecks, deadlands, goods of felons, happening, and being forfeited, within the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt, together with all and every sum and sums of money, to be paid as a

post fine, upon any fine, or fines, to be levied of any land tenements, or hereditaments within the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt, together with the advowson, and right of patronage, and all, and every, the church and churches erected or established, or hereafter to be erected, or established in the said manor of Cortlandt; and we do by these presents constitute, and appoint, our said loving subject Stephanus Van Cortlandt, and his heirs and assigns, to be our sole and only ranger of the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt, and to have, hold, and enjoy, all the benefits, perquisites, fees, rights, privileges, profits and appurtenances, that of right doth belong unto a ranger according to the statute, and customs of our realm of England, in as full and ample manner, as if the same were particularly expressed, in these presents, anything to the contrary hereof in any ways notwithstanding; and we likewise do further give, and grant, unto the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, and to his heirs and assigns, that all and every the tenants of him the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, within the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt, shall and may at all times hereafter, meet together, and choose assessors within the manor aforesaid, according to such rules, ways, and methods, as are prescribed for cities, towns and counties within our said province by the acts of General Assembly, for the defraying the public charge of each respective city, town, and county aforesaid, and all such sum or sums of money so assessed and levied to collect, and pay, and dispose of for such uses as the acts of General Assembly shall establish and appoint; and further, of our said special grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we do, by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto our said loving subject, Stephanus Van Cortlandt, and to his heirs and assignees forever, that the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assignees, shall and may, from time to time, from and after the expiration of twenty years next ensuing the date of these presents, return and send a discreet inhabitant in and of the said manor, to be a representative of the said manor in every Assembly after the expiration of the twenty years, to be summoned and holden within this our said Province, which representative so returned and sent shall be received into the House of Representatives of Assembly as a member of the said house, to have and enjoy such privileges as the other representatives returned and sent from the other counties and manors of this our said Province, have had and enjoyed in any former Assemblies holden within this our said Province, to have and to hold, possess and enjoy all and singular the said lordship and manor of Cortlandt and premises, with all their and every of their royalties and appurtenances unto the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assignees, to the sole and only proper use, benefit and behoof of him the said Stephanus Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assignees forever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors in free and common soccage, as of our manor of East Greenwich, in our County of Kent, within our realm of England, yielding, rendering and paying therefore yearly and every year forever unto us, our heirs and successors, at our city of New York, on the feast day of the Annunciation of our blessed Virgin Mary, the yearly rent of forty shillings current money of our said Province, in lieu and stead of all other rents and services, dues, duties and demands whatsoever for the afore recited tracts and parcels of land and meadow, lordship and manor of Cortlandt and premises. In testimony whereof, we have caused the great seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed: witness our said trusty and well-beloved Colonel Benjamin Fletch-



er, our said Captain-General and Governor-in-chief of our Province of New York and the territories depending thereon in America, and Vice-Admiral of the same, our Lieutenant and Commander-in-chief of the militia and of all the forces by sea and land within our Colony of Connecticut, and of all the forts and places of strength within the same, in council at our fort in New York, the 17th day of June, in the ninth year of our reign, Anno Domini, 1697. Benjamin Fletcher, by his Excellency's command. David Jamison, Secretary.<sup>a</sup>

The following receipt for manorial quit-rent is endorsed, on the Royal Patent:

Received in quality, as Receiver General of this Province, this 16th day of August, 1720, of Mrs. Gertrude Van Cortlandt, executrix of Stephanus Van Cortlandt, deceased, the sum of eight pounds proclamation money in full of quit-rents, for all the lands lying within the Manor of Cortlandt, to the 25th day of March last, pursuant to the within patent, as witness my hand.

J. BYERLY, Collector.

Stephanus Van Cortlandt, first lord of the Manor of Cortlandt, was the son of the Hon. Oloff Stevensen Van Cortlandt, immediately descended from one of the most noble families in Holland, their ancestors having emigrated thither, when deprived of the sovereignty of Cortlandt.<sup>b</sup>

The orthography of the surname is properly Corte-landt; the first syllable Corte or Korte, meaning in the Dutch language short;<sup>c</sup> the second, landt, (land) literally the short land, a term expressing the peculiar form of the ancient Duchy of Courland in Russia.

Courland in Russia, (says Schieutzler,) formerly constituted a portion of Livonia, but was conquered by the Teutonic Knights in 1561. It subsequently became a fief of Poland. After the fall of the power it remained for a short time independent under its own Dukes, but in 1795 it was united to Russia.<sup>d</sup>

In the early part of the seventh century, we find the Dukes of Courland engaged in the Military service of the United Netherlands. The Ducal troops are said to have rendered great assistance in the reduction of the towns of Kaverden and Minden.

The coat armor of the Van Cortlands as recorded in the Hall of Records at Amsterdam in Holland, and as given by Burke and likewise as brought by the family to this country in 1637, are the following:—Arg. the wings of a wind-mill soltier-ways sa, voided of the field, five estoiles or etoiles gu.—Crest—surmounting the helmet of a King or Prince of the Blood Royal; an estoil or etoile gu. between two wings

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb., No. vii., 165.

<sup>b</sup> Burke's Landed Gentry of England, vol. iv., 241.

<sup>c</sup> The use of the letter K in this word is modern, the C ancient.

<sup>d</sup> Schuitzler, La Russia, p. 585.

Right Hon. Steven Van Cortlandt, (Courland, or Dukes of Courland), who — Catharine, nat. 1566,  
served with distinction in the military service of the United Provinces, died at Cortlandt,  
in 1609; ob. at Cortlandt, South Holland. South Holland.

Right Hon. Oloff Stevensen, or Oloff Stevens Van Kortlandt, as he subsequently signed his name; nat. at Cortlandt, in South Holland, 1600; a privy counsellor, of the State Govt. of Holland, Burgomaster, or Chief Magistrate of the great town of Wyck te Dauerstede, or Wyk by Durstede, Holland, Province of Utrecht, Netherlands, in 1641-2.	Annetje Loockermans, of "Turnhout," sister of Govert Loockermans, mar. 1642, ob. 1669.
---	--

Right Hon. de Heer Stephanus—Gertrude Schuyler, da of Fil- Van Cortlandt, first Lord of the Manor of Cortlandt. Mayor of New York. Nat. 7th May, and bapt. 10th May, 1643, ob. 25th Nov., 1700	Johannes. nat. 1648, bapt. Oct. 25th, 1648, ob. 1667.	Jacobus, nat. 7th July, bapt. 7th July, 1653: an- cestor of the Yonkers branch	Eva, da of Frederic Philipse.	Mary, nat. 80th July, 1645, bapt. July, 1645	Col. Jeremiah Van Rensselaer, Patroon of Rens- selaer Wyck	Sophia—Andrew nat. 31 Teller May, 1651 bapt. June	Catharine—Col. John De nat. 25th Witt. or, Jan Oct. 1652, der Vall, mar. bapt. Jan. Nov. 3d, 1675. 5th, 1653 2. Frederick Phil- ipse, mar. Dec.	Cornelia—Brant nat. 21st Schuyler Nov., 1655, ob. Feb., 18th, 1689
---	--	--	-------------------------------------	---	---	--	--	---

<p>Johannes, or John Van Cortlandt, nat. 24th Oct., 1672; bapt. Oct. 25th, second Lord of the Manor of Cortlandt</p> <p>Philip Verplanck, _Gertrude of Verplanck's Point, Westchester Co.</p>	<p>Anna Sophia VanSchalck mar. 1695</p>	<p>Oloff, or Oliver, nat. 26th Oct., 1678, ob s. p. 1708; bapt. Nov. 6, 1678</p>	<p>Philip, nat. 9th Aug., 1683, ob. 21st Aug., 1746, bapt. 22d Aug., 1688, will proved 1748</p>	<p>Catharine de Peyster, mar. 1710, da. of Abraham de Peyster, bapt. Aug. 16th, 1686, will dated 1766</p>	<p>Stephen _Catalina Staats nat. 11th August, 1685</p>	<p>Gyshert, nat. 1688, ob. s. p. bapt. 7 Oct., 1688</p>	<p>Margaret, nat. 2d July, 1674, = 1 Samuel Bayard bapt. 29th</p> <p>Margaret _Hon. Gen. Thomas Gage, the father of Henry Lord Gage</p>	<p>Gertrude, nat. 15th Jan., 1681, o bapt. February 23d, 1681.</p> <p>Maria, nat. 4th April, = 1 Killian Henss 2, John</p>	<p>Gertrude, nat. 10th Oct., = Col. Be</p> <p>Elizabeth, nat. 1691.</p> <p>May, 1693, and bapt. Skinn</p> <p>Elizabeth, nat. 1691.</p>	<p>Catherine, nat. 24th June, = Anne 1696, and bapt. July 1st</p> <p>Elizabeth, nat. 24th = Rev. Will</p> <p>May, 1693, and bapt. Skinn</p> <p>Elizabeth, nat. 1691.</p>	<p>Cornella, nat. 30 = Col. John July, 1698 Schuyler.</p> <p>Gen. Philip Schuyler</p>
---	---	--	---	---	--	---	---	--	--	--	---

Stephen Van Cortlandt, nat. 26th Oct., 1710, ancestor of the Eng- lish branch, ob. Oct. 17th, 1766	= Mary Walton Ricketts, mar. 1738, da. of Wm. Ricketts, 1st cousin to Wm. Henry, father of Viscount St. Vincent, in the county of Northesk	Abraham, nat. 19th Oct, 1713, ob. s. p. æt. 30 88	Philip, nat. 29th Feb., 1715, ob. s. p. æt. 30	John, nat. 9th Sept., 1718, ob. s. p. æt. 29	Pierre, nat. 10th Jan., 1721, ob. 1st May, 1814, first Lieut. Governor of the State of New York	Joanna Liv- ingston nat. 28th August, 1722, ob. 16th Sept., 1808, da. of Gilbert Livingston	Carharine, nat. 26th June, 1725, killed by the bursting of a cannon on the King's birth- day, June 4th.	John Van = Miss Bayard Cortlandt	Philip	Samuel	John Abeel = Anna
								John = Miss Cuyler	Stephen = 1. C. Rutgers = 2. S. Beekman		
								James Hester	Hester James Elliot	John Van Rensselaer	Hannah Gertrude Philip

Col. Philip, nat. Nov. 10, 1739, ob. May 1, 1814, he was an officer in the British army during the Revolutionary war, had 23 children among those who reached maturity	Catharine, da. of Jacob Ogden, by Elizabeth Bradford, who claimed Earldom of Bradford, mar. Aug. 2, 1762, ob. Feb. 1820	Will. Rick- etts nat March 18, 1742	Elizabeth Kortwright	Catharine, nat. August 26th, 1745; ob. an in- fant	Stephen Van Cortlandt	James H. Van Rensselaer
--	---	--	-------------------------	---	-----------------------	-------------------------

Brig. Gen. Philip Van C. Gilbert, nat. 6 April, 1757, ob. s. p. 12 Nov., 1786	Stephen, nat. 13 February, 1760, ob. s. p. 29th August, 1775	Major Gen. Pierre = 1. Catharine nat. 29 Aug., 1762, Clinton, of Cortlandt town, = 2. Anne member of Congress, ob. 1848	Catharine, nat. = Theodosius P. Van Wyck 4th July, 1751. ob. 29th Sept, 1829, æt. 78, 2 mos., 9 days	Cornelia, nat. = Gerard G. Beekman 2d Aug, 1753, ob. 14th Mar., 1847, æt. 94	Anne, nat. = P. S. Van Rensselaer 1st June, 1766, ob. 1855	Gertrude, nat. 26 June, 1755, ob. 9 December, 1766
---	--	---	--	--	--	--

Col. Pierre Van Cortlandt, heir of his uncle Philip, and first proprietor of the estate in fee simple = Catharine Beck, da. of Theodoric Romeyn Beck, Esq., M. D., of Albany

Pierre James Stevenson Theodorick Romeyn Catharine T. R. The Rev. John Rutherford Mathews, mar. 1878. U.S. Navy Anne Stevenson

George Warrington — Emma — her cousin Catharine — Clement C. Anna Maria, — Lieut. Col. James  
died young W. H. Warrington Eliza, m. Moore, of Drummond Baller  
1814 New York Elphinstone

Their eldest son Wm. Baller  
Fuller Elphinstone, 15th Lord  
E. and one of the Queen's Lords  
in waiting

William Ricketts — 1. Miss Storms  
— 2. Sarah Cornell —  
—  
— Catherine — S. Forshay  
— Rachel — John Ryder  
— Mary — Willets Marshall  
— Julia — David Ryder  
— Oliver — C. Hyatt, da. of Joseph R. Hyatt — James — Elizabeth d. at. 25 years  
— Oscar, drowned — Stella — Ida — Sarah, ob. 16 yrs — Josephine — Pierre B.

Philip — Mary Banker — — — — — Eliza — her cousin William Ricketts  
 — — — — — Catharine — First cousin, John Van Cortlandt  
 — — — — —  
 Stephen — John — First cousin, William — Susan  
 ob. s. p. — Catharine Ricketts — Chad-  
 — — — — — eagree  
 — — — — —  
 — — — — — Hannah — Ira Purdy  
 — — — — —  
 — — — — —  
 — — — — — Ellen — 1st — — — — —  
 — — — — — Maria — — — — — Lee  
 — — — — — Emily — Bradley B.  
 — — — — — Catharine, s. p. — — — — —

—Maria — Gilbert Mont  
rose



elevated; that on the dexter side arg., the sinister, sa motto—*virtus sibi munus*—Another family of that name in Holland bears for a crest “the arms or wings of a wind-mill.—The helmet of a King or Prince of the Blood Royal proves beyond a doubt the descent of this family from the old reigning Dukes of Courland. The estoile or star may be a mark of cadence borne by the third son, during the lifetime of his father.—  
[EDITOR.]



Ducal Arms of Courland.

The Ducal arms of Courland or Cortlandt are:—“arg, a lion, rampant, gu. ducally crowned or, for Courland, charged on the breast with an escutcheon, on which are placed the arms of the reigning Duke. Supporters.—Two lions ducally crowned, or, the whole within a mantle lined ermine, surmounted with a ducal crown.

The ancient Dukes of Courland appear to have been represented in 1610 by the Right Hon. Stevensen Van Courland or Cortlandt, then residing at Courland or Cortlandt, in South Holland, whose son Oloff Stephensen or Oloff Stevens Van Kortlandt, as he subsequently signed his name; was Burgomaster, or, chief magistrate of Wyck Duurstede<sup>a</sup> or Wyck by Durstede one of the five principal towns in the Province or Lordship of Utrecht in the Netherlands, 1635-6. The latter was born at Cortlandt in South Holland about 1600.

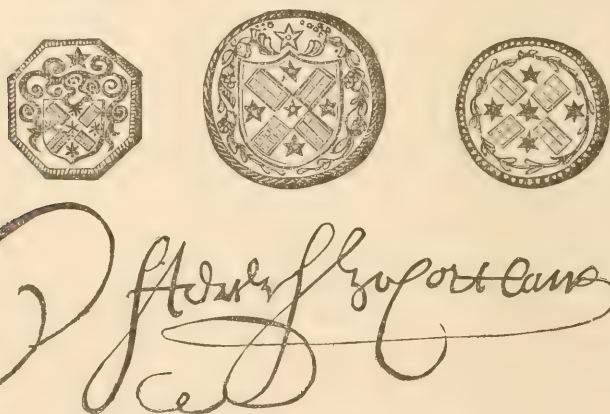
Like his illustrious ancestors, Oloff Stephensen Van Cortlandt chose the military profession; as early as 1637 we find him attached to the military service of the Dutch West India Company. “He is said to have been also a privy councillor of the States General of Holland and acted as secretary of this Government to the Governor of New Amsterdam.”

“He comes to New York in 1637,” “and in the summer of that year he was transferred to the civil service as commissary of cargoes.” On

<sup>a</sup> (Wyck bie Duurstede,) prov., and 13 M. E. S, Utrecht a town, cap. dist., on the Rhine where it gives off the Leck. Pop. 2, 413.



the 26th of February, 1641-2, he married Anneken Lookermans of Turnhout,<sup>a</sup> now in Belgium, daughter of Govert Lookermans. In 1648 Oloff Stephensen Van Cortlandt left the Dutch West India Company's service and embarked in business at Brouwer straat. He was a politician of influence, and was Colonel of the Burghery or City train bands in 1649. In 1650 he was president of a body called the "nine men," representing the citizens at large; as such, he opposed the policy of Governor Stuyvesant with considerable effect. Stuyvesant retaliated by turning the "nine men" out of their pews in church, and tearing up the seats. Mr. Van Cortlandt became one of the most considerable men in the city of New York, or New Amsterdam, as it was then called, and acquired a large property, amongst which was a plot on the west side of Broadway 238 ft. front extending to the North River and adjacent to the present Courtlandt St."<sup>b</sup> "In 1654 he was elected schepen



Autograph and Seals of Oloff Stevensen Van Cortlandt.

of the city, and in 1655 appointed Burgomaster, which office he filled uninterruptedly to the close of the Dutch government. His place of residence was in Brouwer straat (now Stone street). He had the character of being a worthy citizen, and a man most liberal in his charities."<sup>c</sup> Among the wealthy citizens of New Amsterdam in 1654, occurs the name of Oloff Stevens who contributed the sum of 150 guilders towards

<sup>a</sup> The record of the marriage of Burgomaster Van Cortlandt is February 26, 1642. Oloff Stephensen of Wyck te Duurstede, (Wyk bie Duurstede, a village of the Netherlands, 13 miles south-east of Utrecht,) to Anneken Lookermans of Turnhout now in Belgium, 25 miles east of Antwerp. See atlas pub. by Laurie and Whittle, No. 53, Fleet St., London, 12 May, 1794.

<sup>b</sup> Valentine's Hist. of the City of N. Y., Putnam's.

<sup>c</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. of N. N.

putting the city in a state of defence.<sup>a</sup> In a tax list for the city of New York, A.D., 1674, the estate of Oloff Stevensen Van Cortlandt is assessed at 45,000 guilders; his eldest son's, Stephanus, at 5,000 guilders.<sup>b</sup>

In 1664 the name of Oloff Stevensen Van Cortlandt, occurs as one of the six commissioners appointed to meet the English Deputies at Governor Stuyvesant's house in the Bowery, to treat concerning the surrender of the colony.

Oloff Stevens Van Cortlandt died sometime subsequent to 1683, leaving issue by his wife Annetje Lookermans, two sons and four daughters, viz: Stephanus, Jacobus, (ancestor of the Van Cortlandts of Yonkers, Maria, who marr. Jeremias Van Rensselear, Catharine, who marr. first John Dewal, secondly, Frederick Philipse; Cornelia, who marr. Baronet Schuyler; and Sophia, who married Andrew Teller.

The Hon. De Heer Stephanus Van Cortlandt, eldest son of Oloff, was born at the family mansion on Brouwer straat, New Amsterdam, 7th of May, 1643, and baptised in the Ref. Dutch church on the 10th of May, 1643. This distinguished personage was the first Mayor of New York, born in America. Upon the death of his brother-in-law, Jeremias Van Rensselaer in 1675, he became one of the three administrators of his estate, during the minority of Killian Van Rensselaer, (then twelve years old). He engaged in the mercantile profession on the present north-east corner of Pearle and Broad streets. His first appointment as Mayor was at the age of 34 years, and was a high compliment to his intelligence. He was sworn in Chief Justice of the Province 5th of October, 1700. He was also a member of the Governor's Council, and a Colonel in the Provencial militia. On the 14th of January, 1696, he was elected senior warden of Trinity church, New York. As a compensation for large sums of money advanced to the government he obtained, as we have seen in 1697, a Royal Charter for Lordship and Manor of Cortlandt. After a life of honesty, fortitude, and charity, he died 25th of November, 1700, leaving by his wife Geertruy or Gertrude, eldest child (Guysbert having died in infancy) of Filyp Pictersen Van Schuyler, and Magritta Von Sleenckenhorst, eleven children, who intermarried with the DePysters, DeLanceys, Beeckmans, Schuylers, Skinners, Bayards, Johnsons and Van Rensselaers.

On the 14th of April, 1700, Stephanus Van Cortlandt made and published his last will and testament as follows:—

<sup>a</sup> M. S. vol. City Rec. N. Y.

<sup>b</sup> Moulton's sketch of New Orange, 1669, Stephanus Van Cortlandt in behalf of Oloff Stephanus Van Cortlandt his father, applied for Letters Notary on Dan'l Whitehead, late of Masbeth Kills, town office, N. Y., vol. i, p. 74.

## WILL OF STEPHANUS VAN CORTLANDT.

Know all men by these presents, that, I, Stephanus Van Cortlandt, of the city of New Yorke, merchant, being distempered in body, but of good, sound and perfect memory, praised be Almighty God therefore do make, publish, and declare: this my last will and testament, (this 14th day of Aprill, in the year of our Lord God and Saviour Jesus Christ, one thousand seven hundred, in the twelfth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord William Third, King of England, Scotland and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c.) in manner and form following, that is to say, I bequeath my soul into the hands of the Almighty God my Heavenly Father, from whom I received it, and by whom of his meer grace I trust to be saved and received into His eternall rest, through the meritts of my dear Saviour and Redeemer Jesus Christ. My body, in hopes of a joyfull resurrection, I committ to the earth, to be buried in such decent manner and form as any Executrix hereafter named, shall think fit and convenient and touching the Distribution of what temporal Estate it hath pleased God to endow me withal in this world, I dispose of the same as folloeth That is to say *IN PRIMUM* I will that all such Depths as I shall happen to owe to any Person or Persons at my Decease shall be truly Paid by my Executrix.

ITEM I devise and bequeath unto my eldest son Johannes Van Cortlandt (After the decease of my beloved wife) all that Neck and Part of my land on the East Side of Hudson's River at the Entering of the Highlands just over against a certain place called Haverstroo and is known by the Indians by the name of Moanagh being to be Separated and Divided from my other lands on that side of the river called Appamapagh by a certain Creeke called Moanagh and bounded on the other side by the other side of the Creeke that runs between my land and the land of Rich Abrams and others together with the meadows that lies on the said Neck and all the buildings and other improvements made or to be made on the said land according to the agreement by mee made to the several persons now settled therein (which agreement my will is that my said Executrix, my said son and overseers herein after named, shall take care and se that the same be fully observed, performed and kept according to the true intent and meaning thereof). To have and to hold the said Neck of land and premises with the appurtenances to the said Johannes my Son and his heirs forever.

ITEM.—I do give Devise and Bequeath all my other houses, lands, mills, tene-ments, pastures, meadows, and their appurtenances and other Real Estate whatsoever—and where so ever it be (after ye Decease of my s<sup>d</sup> dear wife) unto my Eleaven children by name, Johannes, Margaret, Ann, Oliver, Mary, Philip, Stephannus, Gertrude, Elizabeth, Katherine and Cornelia and to such other children as it shall please God to bless me with (who is and are to share and Inheritt with those above named) to have and to hold to them their heirs and assigns respectively, and it is my Desire and Appointment that the same houses, lands, and premises be Either Equally Divided amongst them my said children, or that they hold or enjoy the same in Common Amongst them as my s<sup>d</sup> children and provisors and guardians hereafter named shall judge and think most effectually and proper for their best advantage, use, and benefit.

ITEM.—It is my will and appointinent and Direction that upon a Division of my s<sup>d</sup> houses lands and mills and other Real Estate my Sons accord<sup>s</sup> to their priority of Birth shall have the first choyce alwayes allowing to the value of

those parts they shall choose that the respective party and persons of my children may be made Equall in worth one to another.

ITEM.—I will and Direct that in case after the Decease of my s<sup>d</sup> Dear wife itt should so happen (which God prevent) that if any of my sons should be visited by the hand of God by any Distemper, sickness or accident and thereby or otherwise be rendered uncapable or unable of making a proper choyse for themselves then my overseers to whose prudence and Descretion I leave the full management of this matter; have power upon such division of my reall Estate afores<sup>d</sup> such Lott and part thereof and to assign, allow, divide and lay out to such of my sons soe visited as they shall judge most fitt and proper for his or their shares, maintanance and support.

ITEM.—I give and devise and bequeath to every one of my said children and such other child or children itt shall please God to bless me with, that is to say to those who are not already provided for, in this manner by me and what in my life time shall not by me be thus provided for, a lott of ground within the city of New York for the building a convenient dwelling house in w<sup>ch</sup> it is my Desire my Executrix with the Advice and consent of my said overseers shall allott, laye out and possess them of respectively as each of my sons attain the age of one and twenty years and my Daughters as they attaine to those years or be married to have and to hold them my said children respectively and to their heirs and assignes for ever.

ITEM.—I give and bequeath to every one of my children not already provided for in this manner by mee, or that in my lifetime shall not by me be thus Provided for the sum of one hundred and fifty pounds apiece, Lawful money of New York, to be paid them respectively out of my personal Estate by my Executrix to my sons respectively, when they shall attaine to the age of one and twenty years, and to my daughters when they respectively attaine to that age, or be married, together with such household stuff to each of my said children as my Executrix shall see fit and convenient.

ITEM.—It is my Will and Desire and Appointinent that if any of my said children shall happen to dye, that is to say, any sons before they attaine respectively to the age of one and twenty years, and my daughters before they respectively attaine that age or be married, then neither the said Lott of ground nor the said one hundred and fifty pounds shall be given, laid out or allowed them or either of them.

ITEM.—It is my Will and Desire, and I do hereby Declare and Ordain that if it shall so happen (which God forbid) that by Warr, Losses, Bankrupts or other inevitable misfortunes, my personall Estate shall be soe lost or diminished that my Executrix cannott reasonably pay the said Several legacies of one hundred and fifty pounds to each of my said children, then it is my Will and Desire that She only pay soe much to each of my children as she shall find herself able to pay and shall judge convenient, leaving the same wholly in such case to her maternall love and good discretion. And I do hereby Will, order and Declare that in such case, what each child or children shall have less than my other children in this manner already provided for, have had after the desease of my said dear wife, shall be suplyed and made good to them out of my Real estate before any division therein to be made as aforesaid, so that their said portions may be made alike and Equall.



ITEM.—I give and Bequeath to my well beloved wife, Guertruydt Van Cortlandt, if she continue my widow, all and singular my personal and mixed Estate and Moveables whatsoever and wheresoever within this Province of New York or elsewhere, be the same in Goods, Whares, cattle, depts, Linen, woolling, plate, Jewells, or of any other nature or kind whatsoever. And I do hereby make my said Beloved wife Gurtruydt Van Cortlandt, sole Executrix of this my last Will and Testament who (it is my Desire and Will) shall out of my mixed and personall Estate, pay, satisfie and Discharge all my Just Depts, and also my Funeral Charges.

ITEM.—I will ordaine and Devise that my s<sup>d</sup> wife my Executrix shall have the custody and care of the Education and bringing up of my said Children and During her widowhood shall have, take and receive to her own use, the full and whole rents, Issues and Profitts of all and every parte of my said houses, lands, mills and other such Estate whatsoever, without giving or rendering any inventory or account thereof to any person whatsoever, and it is my Will and Desire and Request that she, my said Executrix, do out of the same, and my personal Estate provide for, maintaine, Educate and bring up, all such of my children as at the time of my Death shall be under the age of one and twenty and unmarried, until they attain the said age of one and twenty yeers or be married.

Provided, always, that in case my said wife shall think fit to marry again, that is my Will, Desire and Determination, that she shall give an exact and perfect Inventory of all my personall Estate then in being to my Overseers, the Guardians of my children herein after named or the survivors or survivor of them and in such case, my Debts being first truly paide, I give, Will, Devise and Bequeath the one Equall third parte of all my said personall Estate to my said wife for her and also an equal third parte of the rents, Issues and Profitts of all and singular my said houses, lands, mills and Real estate for and during her naturall Life, and further it is my Desire, Will and Direction that in case of my wive's re-Marriage she shall have the choice or election of my houses which she shall like best to live in, she allowing the rent of the same house unto her third part of the rents and profitts of my Real Estate hereby Bequeathed her.

ITEM.—If it should so happen that my wife afores<sup>d</sup> should re-marry then I give and Bequeath two thirds of my personall Estate and two thirds of the rents, Issues and Profitts, of my houses, Lands, Mills and Real Estate, to all my children as aforesaid during the naturall life of my said Wife Equally to be divided amongst them. In case it should so happen that any of my said Children should come to dye, that is to say, any of my sons before they attaine the age of one and twenty years, or any of my daughters before they attaine the same age unmarried, then it is my Desire, and I do hereby Order and Direct that their share of my Real Estate herein before Devised shall Devolve and Come to my surviving children and the heirs of the Bodyes of such of my sons who shall dye after their attaining the age of one and twenty years and the heirs of the bodye of such of my daughters as shall be married.

ITEM.—In case it should so happen that all my children should dye, the sons before they attaine the age of one and twenty, and my daughters before they attaine that age or before marriage, and my wife happens to marrie at all, then it is my will and desire, and I do hereby order, bequeath and devise that my said wife do have and enjoy all my estate Real and Personal or mixt, during her

natural life, and that after her decease the one full and equal half or moyety thereof shall devolve, come and be enjoyed by my rightful heirs and the other half to and by the right heirs of my beloved wife aforesaid. ITEM, I do will, order and determine, and in case it should so happen that my said beloved wife shall dye before my sons come to the age of one and twenty years or before my daughters attaine to that age or be married then it is my desire and appointment that all such of my sons as at the decease of my said wife, shall become to the age of one and twenty years, and all such of my daughters as at her death shall be under that age and unmarried, shall be maintained and educated by my sons till they come to the age of one and twenty years or my daughters until they come to that age or are married, out of the rents, Profitts and ishues of my houses, lands and real Estate, and also out of the same shall be provided for and advanced and equall with my other children which accounting the lott of Ground, the one hundred and fifty Pounds and household stuff before mentioned Intended for each of my children, I do Estimate to amount unto the Value of £500 New York money, to each child besides the parte and share of my reall Estate herein Before Deposed and Devised. Lastly, I do hereby Constitute, Declare and appoint my said Beloved Wife my Executrix together with my Brother Jacobus Van Cortlandt, my Brother Brant Schuyler and my Cousin William Nicholls to be Guardians, Tutors and Overseers over my said children and to see that this my Will relating to them and each of them be duly, fully and truly Executed, performed and accomplished according to the just, true and Genuing Intent and Meaning thereof. In Testimony whereof, I the said Testator have hereunto sett my hand and seale in the presence of the Witnesses whose names are under written the day, month and year first before mentioned.

Signed, sealed and declared to be The last Will and Testament of the above named Stephanus Van Cortland in the presence of

THO. WENHAM, RIP VAN DAM, JOHN ABEEL, RICHARD STOOKS, ANDREW TELLER, JUR. <sup>a</sup>	}	STEPHANUS VAN CORTLAND. {L. S.}
--	---	---------------------------------

The above will was proved 7th of Jan. 1701.<sup>b</sup>

The will of Geertruy or Gertrude, his wife, bears date Oct., 1718, and was proved. Upon the 23d of December, A. D., 1706, Oliver Van Cortlandt, one of the devisees of Stephanus, published his last will and testament, in which he devised all his right, title and interest, of and into his portion, to his ten surviving brothers and sisters, by which they became seized in fee of Cortlandt's Manor as tenants in common.

In the year 1730, (November 13th,) the aforesaid children and devisees drew up articles of agreement for the division of the Manor. Upon the 29th of May, 1733, a division was made of that part of the Manor situated north of the River Croton. It was not, however, until Novem-

<sup>a</sup> Rec. of Wills, Surrogate's Office, N. Y., No. 2, 1682-1692, Pp. 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83.

<sup>b</sup> Rec. of Wills, Surrogate's Office, N. Y., No. 2, 1682-1692, pp. 84.

ber the 4th, 1734, that a final partition, and division, of the Manor took place between the surviving children and grandchildren of Col. Stephanus Van Cortlandt, when they gave to each other releases in due form of law in severalty, viz :

Philip Verplanck and Gertrude, his wife ; Mary Melin ; Samuel Bayard and Margaret, his wife ; Andrew Johnson, and Catharine, his wife ; Stephen de Lancey, and Anne, his wife ; Philip Van Cortlandt ; John Schuyler, and Cornelia, his wife<sup>a</sup>, and William Skinner, and Elizabeth, his wife.

The original partition deed is in the possession of Pierre Van Wyck, M.D., of Sing Sing.

“NUMBER OF ACRES IN THE MANOR OF CORTLANDT.

FRONT LOTS.		
No. 1.	1255	Philip Van Cortlandt.
2.	932	P. V. Planck,
3.	1886	——— Skinner.
4.	1447	Stephen Van Cortlandt.
5.	1220	John Miller.
6.	1720	De Lancey.
7.	1027	Mary Bayard,
8.	808	Mr. Schuyler.
9.	1233	Andrew Johnson.
10.	2764	Mrs. Beekman.

---

14,333 front lots.

32,887 north lots.

28,765 south lots.

7,128 south of Croton.

---

83,113 acres in Manor divided.

3,000 acres in Pound Ridge.

100 acres in Parsons Point.

---

86,213”<sup>b</sup>

The share of each heir amounted nearly to 8,000 acres.

By this partition of the Manor, the following lots were laid out to the devisees in Cortlandt town, viz :

River lot No. 1, to Philip Van Cortlandt ; No. 2, Philip Verplanck, who married Gertrude, only daughter and sole heiress of Johannes Van Cortlandt, one of the original devisees.

<sup>a</sup> The father and mother of Gen. Philip Schuyler.

<sup>b</sup> Copied from original document in the possession of Pierre Van Wyck, M.D., of Sing Sing, another Partition Deed for the Manor of Cortlandt dated Dec. 14th, 1733, occurs among the Van Wyck MSS.

No. 3, William Skinner, who married Elizabeth Van Cortlandt. This individual "was the first rector of St. Peter's church, Perth Amboy; his real name was MacGregor, and he was among those of that clan, proscribed after the rebellion of 1715; he had received a superior education, and was endued with a strong mind; having received holy orders, he was appointed missionary to Amboy, in New Jersey, 1721, and died rector, A. D., 1757."<sup>a</sup>

No. 4, Stephen Van Cortlandt; No. 5, Mr. Melin; No. 6, Stephen de Lancey; No. 7, Margaret Bayard, widow of Samuel Bayard; No. 8, Mr. John Schuyler; this lot had been sold prior to partition. North lot No. 1, Andrew Johnson. We have previously shown that Verplanck's Point, (by the will of Stephanus Van Cortlandt) passed to his son Johannes or John, whose daughter Gertrude married Philip Verplanck.

In the year 1734 we find Philip Verplanck, of Cortlandt's Manor, and Gertrude his wife only daughter and heiress of Johannes Van Cortlandt, the eldest son and heir of Colonel Stephanus Van Cortlandt, late of the city of New York, deceased, and John Lent, of the said manor, in the other part, bargaining, selling, devising and leasing unto the said John Lent,

"All that certain neck or tract of land and meadow, situate, lying and being in the Manor of Cortlandt, being bounded on the east by the land commonly called Appemagh-pogh, and a certain creek, Meanagh on the north by the land now belonging to Hercules Lent, and on the south and west by Hudson's River, containing 1000 acres, the lessee yielding and paying therefor the yearly rent of one pepper-corn on the feast day of St. Michael, the Archangel."<sup>b</sup>

Above Verplanck's Point extended the patent of Hercules Lent, bounded on the north by Magregaries Creek.

Lot No 9 was the property of Andrew Johnson, Esq., who married Catharine, eighth daughter of the Rt. Hon. De Heer Stephanus Van Cortlandt. This individual who resided at Perth Amboy in New Jersey, was descended of the Johnson's or Johnston's of Armandale, County of Dumfries; derived from Sir John de Johnston, Knt., one of the guardians of the West marches in 1371.<sup>c</sup>

No. 10 was the portion of Gertrude Beekman, fifth daughter of Rt. Hon. De Heer Stephanus Van Cortlandt, who married Col. Henry Beekman. This lady who was born 10th October, 1688, and died 1777, possessed the highlands north of Peekskill creek. Gilbert Van Cortlandt, by his will bearing date 17th of Sept., 1784, and proved 8th of

<sup>a</sup> Whitehead's East Jersey under the Proprietors.

<sup>b</sup> County Rec. Lib. G. p. 681.

<sup>c</sup> The arms, crest and motto of this family show plainly that they were defenders of the borders in olden time are a saltire sa., on a chief gu., two cushions or crest a spur erect betw. two wings or straps and buckles gu., mottoes—*Nunquam mon paratus*, and I make sure.



June, 1798, "bequeathed to his loving brother Pierre Van Cortlandt, and his heirs and assigns, all my real estate which was devised to me by my aunt Gertruyd Beekman, being front lot No. 10, called Anthony's Noos and 340 acres being the land bought of Andrew Johnston, Esq., deceased, situated on the south side of Peekskill, called No. 6, &c.<sup>a</sup>

The division of the Manor, east of the river lots in the town, consisted of lot No. 1, distinguished by the name of the south lot, the property of Philip Van Cortlandt, Esq., also, a north lot No. 1, the property of Andrew Johnson, Esq.; No. 1, south of the Croton, belonged to Philip Van Cortlandt, from whom it passed to the Hon. Pierre Van Cortlandt. The following advertisement dated March the 18th, 1762, relates to the sale of the above lot. "Conditions of sale of the South lot No. 1, 978 acres of land situated in the south-west corner of Cortlandt Manor, and corner of north lot No. 6, belonging to the estate of Philip Van Cortlandt, Esq., deceased, above mentioned, sometime posted in the *New York Gazette*, and now to be sold at public vendue, pursuant to an act of General Assembly, passed for the purpose and agreeable to, to a map hereunto annexed, Pierre Van Cortlandt, surviving executor of Philip, deceased, will give a title agreeable to the act of the Assembly, &c. The lands are to be sold to the highest bidder, and the purchase money to be immediately paid as soon as the deeds are given. Dated, Manor of Cortlandt, at the ferry-house near the mouth of Croton River.<sup>b</sup>

The will of Stephen Van Cortlandt, son of Philip, and grandson of Stephanus, bears date 7th of June, 1754. His wife was Mary Walton, daughter of William Ricketts of Westmoreland, Island of Jamaica, and Mary Walton of New York. His sons were Philip and William Ricketts, and a daughter, Catharine, who died young.

ITEM.—I do hereby give, devise and bequeath unto my said son Philip Van Cortlandt, all that my farm and plantation lying and being in the Manor of Cortlandt, now in the tenure and occupancy of Jacob Cornwell, to have and to hold the same farm and plantation to him, the said Philip, and to his heirs and assigns forever. ITEM.—I do hereby give and bequeath unto my said son Philip, my large silver tankard marked with the family coat of arms, to him, the said Philip; and to his heirs and assigns forever, &c., &c.

This will was proved and administered 24th of May, 1757, Surrogate's Office, N. Y., Lib. xx, 1273.

Upon the 30th of March, 1762, John de Milt and Susannah his wife, conveyed to Pierre Van Cortlandt two tracts of land, the first being a part of lot No. 6, and the second, lot No. 1, south of the Croton. The

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's Office, N. Y., Lib. xlii: 410.

<sup>b</sup> Copied from original document in possession of the late Philip G. Van Wyck, Esq.

heirs of the above grantee still hold lot No. 1. Lot No. 2 belonged to Oliver de Lancy, and lot No. 3 to John Watts.

Philip Van Cortlandt the eldest surviving son of Stephanus was born on the 9th of August, 1683. He married Catharine de Peyster, and on the failure of heirs, male, to his elder brother John, continued the line of the family. Upon the death of Philip,<sup>a</sup> (which took place 21st of August, 1746,) his property became divided among his six children, viz., Stephen, Abraham, Philip, John, Pierre and Catharine. Stephen, the eldest, married Mary Walton Ricketts. Their descendants at present reside in England, and have intermarried with many members of the British nobility.

The fifth son, Pierre Van Cortlandt, ultimately became the oldest surviving representative of the Van Cortlandt family in America, and the heir at law of the entail.

Upon the breaking out of the revolutionary war, Pierre Van Cortlandt was appointed president of the committee of public safety, and was subsequently elected Lieutenant Governor of this State. Throughout the

<sup>a</sup> The will of Philip Van Cortlandt bears date Aug. 1, 1746. In which he gives and devises "all that my three farms or lots of land described in the map or survey of the Manor of Cortlandt, by the south lot No. 1, to wit, the farme where Johannes Bachies lives on, and the farme where Johannes Snock, Blacksmith, lives on, and the farme where Andrews Miller now lives on, each farme to contain 250 acres adjoining to each other, with all rights, privileges, &c., belonging, &c., first during the tenure of his natural life; remainder to James De Lancey, Esq., and Peter DeLancey, gentlemen, both of New York, and the survivors of them and the heirs of such survivor for and during the life of my said son Stephen, to the intent to support the contingent Remainders in this my will after limited so that the same may not be destroyed but in trust nevertheless to permit and suffer him my said son Stephen to possess the said farms and premises with the appurtenances and to receive and take the rents, issues and profits thereof to aid for his own use during his natural life and from and after his decease, then I devise the said three farms to the first son of the Body of my son Stephen, lawfully issued, (whether then born or unborn) and to the heirs, male, of the body of such first son lawfully issuing, and for default of such issue, then likewise to the second, third and any other son of my said son Stephen successively, and in their order the one after the other as they shall be in seniority of age and priority of birth and the several and respective heirs, male, of the Body and bodys of every such second, third and other son or sons (the eldest of such sons and the kins, male, of his Body being always preferred and to take before any of the younger sons and heirs, male, of his Body) and in case of all such issues, male, failing, then I do give and devise the said three farms, &c., unto my second son Abraham, on the same conditions." Then to his third son John and from him to his fourth son Pierre. "And in default of such issue, male, of all my said sons, then I devise the remainder in fee of the three said farms, &c., unto my own right heir, male, &c." "To his second son Abraham, he bequeaths his dwelling house and joined thereto belonging fronting Stone street, New York, wherein he now lives, &c., also all that last part of the fourteen farms called or known by the name of my north lott (No. 6,) in the Manor of Cortlandt as the same as described in the map or survey from No. 1 to 7, also the farm where John Jurree Seer now lives on to contain 250 acres adjoining to each other, &c., on the same conditions as before mentioned from Abraham to Stephen, from Stephen to John and from John to Pierre, "all failing to his right heir, male," Three farms in the Manor of Cortlandt known as No's 8, 9 and 10. "To his fourth son Pierre, he devises all that my house and farm or lott of land described on the map or survey of the Manor of Cortlandt, known by the name of south lott (No. 1,) being the East River lott, from Teller's Point, extending all along Croton River together with the Ferry-house and Ferry thereunto belonging, including the farm where David Brown now lives, and also a lott of land on the east side of Croton River in the Manor of Cortlandt, known by the lott (No. 1) now in possession of Peter Williams and the widow of Hendrick David, the whole as it is conveyed to me also four farms in the Manor of Cortlandt in north lott (No. 6) No's 11, 12, 13 and 14." "And that all and every of my said four sons Stephen, Abraham, John and Pierre, and the heirs, male, of their respective Bodys, shall and may from time to time and at all times hereafter at all fitting seasons in the year have full and free liberty, leave and lysence to Hunt, Fish and Fowl near, about, in and upon Croton River, when and as often as they shall think fitting. This Will was proved 17th of Nov., 1748, Surrogate's Office, N. Y., Lib. xvi, p. 375. The fishing rights of the Van Cortlandt's are said to have extended two miles, i.e., from Deer Island in the river Croton to the marked rock on Crawbuckey Point near Sing-Sing.

trying period of the revolution, he appears to have been the principal administrator of the State government, (George Clinton being necessarily engaged in the military duties.) His patriotic zeal rendered him so obnoxious to the enemy, that the British Governor set a bounty on his head.

The following obituary notice of this illustrious individual occurs in the *Gazette* of May 17, 1814:

"Pierre Van Cortlandt, early took an active part against every oppression of the English government upon the colonies. He was chosen into the first Provincial Congress, was a member of the committee which formed the constitution of this State, and was honored by the suffrages of his country at the first election under the new government the station of lieutenant governor, and continued to be elected to that office for eighteen years successively. He was the friend and confidant of that great patriot, George Clinton. In the revolution he shared the fate of the friends of their country; his family were obliged to abandon their homes in the Manor of Cortlandt, and take refuge in the interior. Firm and undismayed in adversity; the ill success of our arms was a stimulous to greater exertions. He was one of those who, relying on the justice of their cause, put their trust in God and stood firm at the post of danger. In prosperity he was not too much elated, but held a temperate and uniform course, having in view only the independence of the United States and the safety of his country.

"In the Senate of this State he presided with dignity and propriety, nor ever suffered his opinion to be known until called upon constitutionally to decide; and his vote was then given with promptness, uninfluenced by party feelings, and evidencing the convictions of a sound and honest mind. In the year 1795 he declined a re-election as lieutenant governor, and retired into private life."

The Hon. Pierre Van Cortlandt died on the morning of the first day of May instant, at his seat at Croton River, in this town, in the 94th year of his age, leaving issue by his wife Joanna Livingston, Philip, Gilbert, Stephen, Pierre, Catharine, Cornelia, Anne and Gertrude.

Philip, the eldest son, was born in the city of New York on the first day of September, 1749. This individual was brought up at the Manor House on the Croton, and subsequently received a liberal education in the vicinity of Coldingham, N. Y. He was admitted to Kings College (now Columbia) in 1754, graduated B. D. 1758, and received two A. M. degrees in 1761.

At the early age of nineteen he commenced business as a land surveyor; he had also the management of an extensive flouring mill and country store. Soon after the destruction of Lexington and Concord (by the British troops) he threw up business, and agreeing with his patriotic father in sentiment, determined by an appeal to arms, to obtain

either liberty or death. In this intention he was strongly opposed by his tory relations, who used every effort to induce him to join their standard. Governor Tryon at the same time forwarded him a major's commission in the Cortlandt militia. This document he subsequently destroyed, and received in lieu thereof a lieutenant colonel's commission in the Continental service, bearing date June, 1775, signed John Hancock, President of Congress. He continued to hold the above command in the 4th New York regiment until November the 28th, 1776, when he received from General Washington a colonel's commission in the 2d New York regiment. In this capacity he served at the battles of Stillwater and Saratoga. In both of these actions the New York regiment suffered severely. In the winter of 1778 he was ordered to protect the frontiers against the depredations of Brant, the Indian chief, who had destroyed much valuable property and murdered several of the defenseless inhabitants. In pursuance of these orders Col. Van Cortlandt marched to Laghawack, where he posted his command. Soon afterwards having received fresh orders from the commander-in-chief, he was on the eve of marching when Brant, supposing he had left the neighborhood, prematurely set fire to an adjoining village. The colonel immediately started his whole command in hot pursuit. Upon the first tidings, however, of their approach, Brant fled to the neighboring hills. In his diary Gen. Philip Van Cortlandt remarks, "As I approached him (Brant) he being on the hills, and seeing me leaning against a pine tree waiting for the closing up of my men, ordered a rifle Indian to kill me, but fortunately he over-shot me, the ball passing three inches over my head. I then pursued him, but could not overtake him, as he ran through a large swamp."

In the year 1779-80, Col. Van Cortlandt was a member of the court that tried Gen. B. Arnold for improper conduct. His own views of the matter are thus recorded in the his diary: "Gen. Arnold being under arrest for improper conduct in Philadelphia, while he commanded there, I was chosen one of the court-martial, Maj. Gen. Howe, President. There were also in that court four officers who had been at Ticonderoga when Col. Hazen was called on for trial, &c.; we were for cashiering Arnold, but the majority overruled, and he was finally sentenced to be reprimanded by the commander-in-chief. Had all the court known Arnold's former conduct as well as myself he would have been dismissed the service," &c.

In the year 1780 Col. Van Cortlandt was selected as one of the colonels to command a regiment of infantry under Major General La Fayette. A letter is still preserved in the family from the Marquis de La Fayette



to the Colonel, dated Light Camp, 16th September, 1780, and the following from the Commander-in-Chief to Col. Van Cortlandt:

SIR:—You will take charge of the clothing, the boats, entrenching tools, and such other stores as shall be committed to your care by the quarter-master-general; with these you are to proceed (Sir in the order they are mentioned) to Springfield by the way of Suffern, Pompton, the Two Bridges, and Chatham. When you arrive at Springfield you will put yourself under the order of Major Gen. Lincoln, or any other your superior officers commanding at that place. You will also, if occasion should require it, alter the above route agreeably to orders from either Major General Lincoln or the quarter-master-general.

You will be particularly careful to collect all your men that are in proper condition to march, and will use your best endeavors to prevent desertion.

Given at King's Bridge this 25th day of August, 1781.

GEO. WASHINGTON.

At the battle of Yorktown, in Virginia, Col. Van Cortlandt appears to have served on picket guard: for his conduct on this occasion he was advanced to the rank of Brigadier General. To his care the commander-in-chief entrusted 700 British and Hessian prisoners of war, which he conducted in safety to Fredericksburg. During the spring of 1782 his camp on the Flat Fields was visited by General and Lady Washington.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the suspension of hostilities Gen. Van Cortlandt retired to the Manor House at Croton; he was afterwards chosen one of the commissioners of forfeitures, and represented for sixteen years this district in Congress, declining re-election in 1811. Gen. Van Cortlandt accompanied the Marquis de La Fayette in his tour of the United States in 1824. The general died at his house on the Croton November 21st, 1831, and with him expired the entail. By his will he bequeathed to his brother, Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt, 600 acres; to his three sisters, Anne Van Rensselaer, Cornelia Beekman, and Catharine Van Wyck, 200 acres each; and his western lands to his nephew, the late Philip G. Van Wyck of Sing Sing. The latter gentleman afterwards inherited his mother's portion consisting of 200 acres on north lot No. 1, south of the Croton, together with 112 acres north of that river.

Peekskill, the principal town in Cortlandt town, is beautifully situated at one of the most picturesque points on the Hudson and east shore of the Bay of the same name. This place commands every advantage of river navigation, besides an extensive inland trade, of which it forms the depot.

By the Mohegan Indians the place was called Sachoes, a term de-

<sup>a</sup> Extracts from Gen. Philip van Cortlandt's diary in the possession of his nephew, the late Philip G. van Wyck, Sing Sing.

rived from the adjoining lands. The small stream intersecting the village was called by them Magrigaries.

The Dutch first denominated the village Peekskill from Jan Peek, one of their early navigators, who, mistaking the present Annsville creek for the proper passage through the race, ran his yacht ashore on the former. Here he subsequently erected a habitation and spent the winter.

The earliest settlement in this neighborhood commenced one mile north-east of Peekskill, on the property of Capt. John McCoy. The landing place was then at Pemart's dock, near the head of the tide waters of the creek.

On the 8th day of August, 1745, occurs a sale of land from Andrew Johnson and Isabella his wife, daughter of Stephanus Van Cortlandt, to Caleb Hall and Palatiah Haws, consisting of a part of lot No. 2, situated in great front lot No. 9, beginning on south side of Peck's creek, containing 351 acres, excepting 16 acres of land conveyed by said Johnson to Mrs. Gertrude Beeckman.<sup>a</sup>

Fifteen years subsequent to the above sale, Andrew Johnson conveys to Caleb Hall, Joseph Travis and Palatiah Haws, "lands situated at a place called Peekskill."<sup>b</sup>

In the year 1764, Birdsall, Nathaniel Brown, Joseph Travis, and Capt. Isaac Conklin, commenced the settlement of the present village. At that early period there was little or no business transacted here. The first store was erected by Daniel Birdsall in the vicinity of middle dock, near the mill of Andrew Johnson, Esq. Captain Swim is said to have sailed the first sloop from Pemart's dock, A. D. 1773.

From its earliest settlement, the growth of Peekskill has been gradual, and its population has increased according to the development of its resources. The population in 1870 was 6,560. The present number will probably exceed 7,000. The village was incorporated in 1839; but prior to this, in 1827, the fire department was organized and an engine purchased. Nathaniel Bedell was the first foreman of the company. The fire department consists now of five independent companies, constituting two hundred men under Chief Engineer George E. Craft, Esq. The village government was organized in 1839 under the style and title of the "Corporation of the Village of Peekskill" by the election of Capt. F. W. Riqua, Frost Horton, Daniel D. Smith, James Taylor and Morris Depew, as Trustees. Capt. W. Riqua was elected by the Board the first President of the village.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. G., p. 403.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. H., p. 344.

<sup>c</sup> The present officers are: Stephen D. Horton, President, Andrew Uken, William D. Southard, William H. Hunter, E. F. Bedell, J. H. Kingsbury and Jas. H. Robertson, Trustees; Stephen Lent, Clerk.

The streets, which are macadamized and kept in good repair, were first lighted with gas on the 1st of December, 1856. The pride of the town is her water works—the Campfield—so-called on account of the reservoir, which is located on an eminence that was undoubtedly the camping ground of the soldiers of a revolutionary fort stationed near by. The water furnished by these works is of a pure quality and in unlimited quantities, pumped from the Peekskill Creek, which takes its rise in Putnam County and flows over a clear gravel bottom down through the mountains, supplied by tributaries from innumerable springs. The works are situated in a romantic ravine about two miles north of the village, from whence, by ponderous pumps, worked by the power of the water on turbine wheels, the supply is forced to a reservoir of 26,000,000 gallons capacity, at an elevation of 376 feet above tide water. The water furnished by these works, for all practical purposes, is absolutely pure, the microscope having failed to detect impurities in any portions submitted to its tests, while it possesses the peculiar property of cleansing steam boilers from rust, and leaves no deposit in evaporation. The pressure varies in different parts of the town from 100 to 175 lbs. to the square inch, and forces water through a one inch nozzle thirty feet higher than the tallest steeple. In case of fire the danger now is in doing more damage with the water than will be accomplished by the flames. Fire protection is afforded by 75 hydrants so placed that, with few exceptions, all the property in the village is reached. The works were completed in 1875, and in all respects, viz.: economy in construction (\$141,000), quality and quantity of water and substantiability, they will ever remain as an enduring monument to the Board of Water Commissioners under whose supervision they were constructed from plans submitted by Chas. E. Fowler, Esq., the engineer. The Board consisted of Reuben R. Finch, George W. Robertson, Chas. F. Southard, Wm. S. Tompkins, and Gilbert T. Sutton. The following named gentlemen constitute the present Board: Geo. W. Robertson, Ardenus R. Free, Chas. F. Southard, Wm. S. Tompkins and John Halstead.

Superintendent—Chas. R. Swain.

The town is well situated for purposes of education, furnishing, as it does, facilities for communicating daily and almost hourly with the great city of New York. There are two union free school districts in the town. The amount expended, the pupils taught and the number of teachers are about the same in each district, and the schools are efficiently and economically managed, the annual expense in each school being about \$5,000. A principal and seven assistants are employed in each, and the average daily attendance in each is about three hundred.

The Peekskill Military Academy is delightfully situated upon Oak Hill, a high eminence overlooking the surrounding country and commands an extended view of the ever changing scenery of the Hudson.

The Academy was built with a capital stock of \$7,000, subscribed by the inhabitants of Peekskill, and is under a Board of Trustees and the Regents of the University of the State of New York. The building, originally erected in 1835, and enlarged within the past twenty years by various important additions, is surrounded by over six acres of ground and many fine old trees, and presents one of the most attractive and prominent objects of note in the town. It is, too, to no little extent, associated with its local history, for during its forty years successful career, many prominent citizens have been educated within its walls and many more from distant parts; and we find among its 1,800 of either teachers or taught, the names of some well known throughout our State, viz: Gen. J. W. Husted, Hon. C. M. Depew and others. It was for thirty years, until 1873, under its well known principal, Albert Wells, Esq., and has since that date been conducted by Col. Charles J. Wright, A. M., and Robert Donald, A. M., associate principals. At present it has one hundred students, among whom even Japan has a representation. The present valuation of its property is about \$75,000. The following is its Board of Trustees: Hon. Owen T. Coffin, president; S. R. Knapp, secretary; N. Dain, treasurer; Messrs. Edward Wells, O. V. Crane, Coffin S. Brown, William P. Raymond, F. W. Requa, D. F. Clapp, J. B. Brown and D. S. Herrick.

Prof. Unterreiner and Mr. Glen, having leased Searle's Academy, are making arrangements for the establishment of a first-class high school, which will be opened in September. The building, which is large and commodious, occupies an elevated position and commands a fine view of Hudson River scenery. The school and recitation rooms are large and pleasant, with high ceilings, well ventilated, and built with a proper regard to the health and convenience of both teachers and students.

Besides these institutions, there are the St. Gabriel's school, (Episcopal), the Seminary of Our Lady of Angels, (Roman Catholic), and Miss Germond's school for young ladies.

The near proximity of Peekskill to New York city makes it easy of access by the Hudson River Railroad all the year around, and in the summer by steam boats. Some seventeen trains daily leave Peekskill going north and south, whilst ten leave New York City for Peekskill.

Here is the market centre of an extensive manufacturing country, but the chief business is the manufacturing and working of iron. The history of the iron business in Peekskill may be said to have begun fifty years



ago, when Stephen Gregory commenced melting iron in a crucible for the purpose of making plow castings. His place was located on Main street, on property now occupied by Southard, Robertson & Co. (The People's Stove Works.) He was succeeded by Wyley, Conklin & Co., who, in 1826, commenced the erection of new buildings, put in machinery, and largely increased the business.

The plow works of Wyley & Conklin having been sold to Henry Robinson, the manufacture of grates and mantles for dwelling houses was commenced. Mr. Robinson was succeeded by Thos. Southard, dec'd, in 1840, who commenced the manufacture of stoves. Some eight or ten years afterwards, upon the death of Mr. Southard, the present firm of Southard, Robertson & Co. came into possession, and the imprint of the People's Stove Works may now be found upon work of their manufacture all over the land.

In the winter of 1826-27, Seth Hoyt erected part of the buildings now known as the Peekskill Plow Works and commenced the manufacture of plows and plow castings on an extensive plan. A few years afterwards Mr. Hoyt died and the property was purchased by Truman Minor and Frost Horton, who, in 1835, formed a co-partnership under the firm name of Minor & Horton, and three years afterwards the firm became Minor, Horton & Co., who commenced the erection of extensive additions and enlarged their business to such an extent that their wares were shipped to almost every part of the world. This firm continued the business for thirty years, when it was merged into a joint stock company, now known as the Peekskill Plow works.

The foundries now in operation are The People's Stove Works, (Southard, Robertson & Co.), the Union Stove Works, (Hill's), National Stove Works (Stanford's), the foundry of Montross, Lent & Pollock, the American Stove Works, and the Peekskill Manufacturing Company, (Seymour's). In brisk seasons these shops employ from 400 to 600 men.

Besides the foundries above enumerated, the most of which have extensive warerooms in New York city, there are located in the village and its immediate vicinity, the Machine works of Anderson Brothers, the Highland Chemical Works, the Force Table and Oil Cloth Manufacturing Co., Binney's Lamp Black Factory, the Annsville Wire Mills, the Oregon Paper Mills, a Manufactory of Drain Tiles and Hageman's Soap Factory.

The Peekskill Blast Furnace is located on Annsville creek, and is connected with the Croft iron mines by a railway built for the purpose, by which the furnace is supplied with a superior quality of iron ore at a

comparatively small expense. These works have been idle during the past winter, but are expected to resume operations in a short time.

Located within the town of Cortlandt and drawing a large portion of their supplies from Peekskill, are a number of brick yards, employing a large force of men and making the best brick in market. The one nearest the village is situated on Lent's Flats. This is owned and occupied by Charles D. Southard, employing about thirty men and paying out over \$10,000 per season.

Near the centre of the village stands the Westchester Bank. This institution was first established in Peekskill in 1833, with a capital of \$200,000, and the late General Pierre Van Cortlandt elected its first president. It is at present in a flourishing condition, and like the old hills of Westchester, has so far stood firm and unmoved amid troublesome times. The stock has sold at almost as great an advance as ever the United States Bank stock did. The bank declared its first dividend six months after its establishment. The bills used to contain a beautiful vignette representing the capture of Andre by the three farmers of Westchester County; besides a neat engraving of the Hon. Pierre Van Cortlandt, first Lieutenant-Governor of the State. There is also a bust of this individual in the bank, presented by his son the late Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt.

A short distance below the town is situated the property of Captain Jas. Requa, a lineal descendant of Daniel, who emigrated from La Rochelle in France, to New Rochelle in this county and afterwards purchased a farm on the Hudson a little south of Tarrytown.

The house is pleasantly located on rising ground overlooking the Albany and New York Post Road and commands beautiful views of the surrounding country. In one of the upper rooms the visitor is shown some ancient portraits in crayon, of the Huggeford or Hufeford family, viz:—Peter Huggeford, M.D., born and educated in England and one of the most accomplished physicians of his day in this country. He practised in Rye as early as 1753; and is last mentioned in 1772; he subsequently removed to the Manor of Cortlandt and was probably (says Dr. Fisher) the first regular physician in the north-western portion of Westchester county. Being a royalist he retired to the British army when war was declared. His fine farm of two hundred acres was confiscated, and subsequently given by the government to John Paulding for his services as one of the three distinguished captors of Andre, the British spy. The property is now owned by Jacob Strang. He was buried in St. Peter's church-yard at Peekskill, notwithstanding that his gravestone is still to be seen in Trinity church-yard, New York. A portrait of Elizabeth

Gedney, his wife, aged 53 years, was painted Feb. 27, 1783, and she is interred in Trinity church-yard, New York.

Dr. John Huggeford of New York, son of the above, died during the prevalence of the yellow fever there; with his brother Peter Huggeford, also a physician, aged 56, was painted by William Williams. Major William Lainey Huggeford, painted Feb. 23, 1783. He is represented in a red coat turned up with blue, black cravat, hair powdered, tied with cue; he was a noted partisan officer and was the second man to scale the walls of Fort Montgomery. He died quite young in Nova Scotia. His wife Charity, who died in 1807, is buried at Harrison. The family were all staunch members of the Episcopal Church. After the close of the Revolution some of them returned to this country and settled at Horseneck, Greenwich, Conn. Mrs. Betsey Field, aged over eighty-six years, who resides with her brother Capt. Requa, is a granddaughter of the elder Dr. Peter Huggeford. A grand-daughter of Dr. John Huggeford is now living at Northampton, Mass.

South-east of Peekskill is the "Mount Florence House," formerly the residence of D. H. Craig, at one time one of the most beautiful places in the county.

The Manor of Cortlandt formerly included three wards or precincts, viz:—"Cortlandt, Gertrude's boro' or Hanover and Salem, commonly called east, middle and west wards of Cortlandt Manor. While under the royal charter of 1697, the mesne lands were possessed of the impropriation and the patronage of all and every the church and churches erected or to be erected in the manor."

The earliest records relating to the history of this parish, now accessible, are principally to be found in the MSS. of the venerable society for the Propagation of the Gospel. From these documents it appears that as early as 1744, the Rev. James Wetmore, of Rye, performed divine service at Peekskill. Writing to the society on the 3d of April, 1746, he says:—"That as there are great numbers of people in the wilderness northward of Bedford and Westchester, who have very little knowledge or sense of religion, Mr. Lamson's labors will be employed to good purpose among them." In 1761 Mr. Dibble of Stamford, Conn., officiated here, where he informs us "he found no settled teacher of any denomination, but met several heads of families, professors of the Church of England, and many others well disposed towards it." Mr. St. George Talbot, who accompanied Mr. Dibble on this occasion, writing to the society, says:—"The state of religion I truly found deplorable enough, they were as sheep without a shepherd, a prey to various sectaries, and enthusiastic lay teachers; there are many well wish-

ers and professors of the Church among them, who doth not hear the liturgy in several years."

It appears from the following indenture that as early as 1750, Andrew Johnson, Esq., of Perth Amboy, East Jersey, the son-in-law of De Heer Stephanus Van Cortlandt, conveyed in trust to Caleb Hall, Joseph Travis and Palatiah Hawes, six acres of land to promote the erection of a Church edifice. The conveyance bears date 23d of March, 1750, and is as follows:—

#### DEED FOR CHURCH LOT.

(EXTRACT.)

"Andrew Johnson of Perth Amboy, East Jersey, party of the first part, for the value of five pounds, conveys to Caleb Hall, Joseph Travis and Palatiah Haws, parties of the second part, a parcel of land lying at a place called Peekskill, being a part of lot No. 8, beginning at the north-east corner of the second parcel of land lately purchased by Joseph Taylor, by the north side of Crumpond road, containing six acres, &c., to have and to hold in trust for a school and burying place, and also for their executors and successors in trust, to the only proper use, benefit and behoof and exercise of the public worship of God; and that it be for that purpose in the erecting and building of a meeting house or houses for the religious, (under the protection of our most gracious Majesty,) either the Church of England, Presbyterian, Independents, Baptists or Congregational, &c., to erect and build a house for the religious exercise of public worship of God, with a convenient yard thereto, for each or either of the above written denominations, to them the said Caleb Hall, &c., their heirs and successors, in trust for the neighbourhood and inhabitants round about from generation to generation for ever, and for no other use, purpose or intent whatsoever."<sup>a</sup>

Yet no building appears to have been begun until 1766, when Beverly Robinson, Jeremiah Drake, Caleb Ward, Isaac Hatfield and Charles Moore were appointed trustees (by certain subscribers, both in Cortlandt's manor and the lower end of Philipse's upper patent, towards the erecting of a church,) for directing and carrying on a building, and for securing it to the inhabitants as a place of public worship, according to the establishment of the Church of England. This edifice, which was subsequently dedicated to the service of Almighty God, by the Rev. John Ogilvie, D.D., on the 9th of August, 1767, is the present parish church of St. Peter's, which stands upon the summit of a high knoll directly east of the late General Pierre Van Cortlandt's residence.

Upon the 18th of August, 1770, the members of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, and the lower part of Philipse's patent, received (in answer to their petition presented on the 21st of March,) the

<sup>a</sup> County Rec. Lib. H. 339. The original document was in the possession of the late James Brown of Peekskill.



following charter from Governor Colden, erecting them into one body corporate and politic, and confirming them in possession of the above mentioned church, "the ground whereon the same was built, and the cemetery belonging to the same."

#### ROYAL CHARTER OF ST. PETER'S CHURCH,

"George the Third, by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., to all to whom these presents shall come, greeting: Whereas, our loving subjects, Beverly Robinson, Charles Moore, Jeremiah Drake, Caleb Ward, John Johnson, Joshua Nelson, Thomas Davenport and Henry Purdy, on behalf of themselves and sundry inhabitants on the upper part of the manor of Cortlandt, and the lower part of Philipse's patent, in communion of the Church of England as by law established, by their humble petition, presented on the 21st day of March now last past, to our trusty and well beloved Cadwallader Colden, Esq., our Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York and the territories depending thereon in America, in Council, did set forth that the petitioners have at a great expense and trouble erected a convenient house for a place of divine worship near Peekskill, to be according to the Church of England as by law established, and being very desirous of promoting the same, and settling a minister among them, did humbly conceive that if our said Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief would be pleased to take the matter into consideration, and to grant them a charter with such privileges, immunities and conditions as our said Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief should see fit, and that the said Beverly Robinson and Charles Moore may be appointed church-wardens, and the said Jeremiah Drake, Caleb Ward, John Johnson, Joshua Nelson, Thomas Davenport and Henry Purdy, vestrymen, in the charter, by the name of the church-wardens and vestrymen of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill. No one being willing to encourage the pious intentions of our said loving subjects, and to grant this their reasonable request, *know ye*, that of our especial grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have ordained, given, granted and declared, and by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, do ordain, give, grant and declare, that the said petitioners and such other person and persons, and their successors for ever, as now are or shall hereafter from time to time be, as well of the Church of England as by law established, as members of the congregation of the said church in the herein above recited petition, called St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, and also contributors to the support and maintenance of a minister of the Church of England as by law established, to officiate in the said church for the time being, shall, with the rector of the said Church of St. Peter's for the time being, forever hereafter be one body corporate and politic, in deed, fact and name, by the name, style and title of the rector and members of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill. And them and their successors by the same name, we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, really and fully make, erect, create and constitute one body politic and corporate in deed, fact and name, for ever, and will give, grant and ordain that they and their successors, the rector and members of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peek-

skill, by the same name shall and may have perpetual succession, and shall and may be capable in law to sue and be sued, impleade and be impleaded, answer and be answered unto, defend and be defended in all courts and elsewhere in all manner of actions, suits, complaints, pleas, causes, matters and demands whatsoever, as fully and amply as any our liege subjects of our said province of New York may or can sue or be sued, impleade or be impleaded, defend or be defended, by any lawful ways or means whatsoever; and that they and their successors by the same name shall be forever hereafter capable and able in the law to purchase, take, hold, receive and enjoy any messuages, tenements, houses and real estate whatsoever in fee simple, for term of life or lives, or in any other manner howsoever for the use of the said church; and also any goods, chattels, or personal estate whatsoever, provided always that the clear yearly value of the said real estate (exclusive of the said church and the ground whereon the same is built, and the cemetery belonging to the same) doth not at any time exceed the sum of one thousand pounds current money of our said Province; and that they and their successors, by the same name, shall have full power and authority to give, grant, sell, lease and dispose of the same real estate for life or lives, or years, or forever, under certain yearly rents, and all goods, chattels and personal estate whatsoever at their will and pleasure. And that it shall and may be lawful for them and their successors to have and use a common seal. And our will and pleasure further is, and we do hereby for us, our heirs and successors, ordain and appoint that there shall be forever hereafter belonging to the said church, one rector of the Church of England as by law established, duly qualified for the cure of souls, two churchwardens and six vestrymen, who shall conduct and manage the affairs and business of the said church and corporation in manner as hereafter is declared and appointed; and for the more immediate carrying into execution our royal will and pleasure herein, we do hereby assign, constitute and appoint Beverly Robinson and Charles Moore to be the present church-wardens, and Jeremiah Drake, Caleb Ward, John Johnson, Joshua Nelson, Thomas Davenport and Henry Purdy to be the present vestrymen of the said church, who shall hold, possess and enjoy their said respective offices until Tuesday in Easter week now next ensuing; and for the keeping up the succession in the said offices, our royal will and pleasure is, and we do hereby establish, direct and require, that on the said Tuesday in Easter week, now next ensuing, and yearly and every year thereafter for ever, on Tuesday, in Easter week, in every year, the rector and members of St. Peter's church, in the manner of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, shall meet at the said church, and there by the majority of voices of such of them as shall so meet, elect and choose two of their members to be church-wardens, and six others of their members to be vestrymen of the said church for the ensuing year, which said church-wardens and vestrymen so elected and chosen shall enter upon their respective offices and hold, exercise and enjoy the same respectively from the time of such elections, for and during the space of one year, and until other fit persons shall be elected and chosen in their respective places; and in case the church-wardens or vestrymen, or either of them, by these presents named and appointed, or who shall be hereafter elected or chosen by virtue of these presents, shall die before the time of their respective appointed services shall be expired, or refuse or neglect to act in the office for which he or they is or are herein nominated and appointed, or whereunto he

or they shall or may be so elected and chosen, then our royal will and pleasure is, and we do hereby direct, ordain and require the rector and members of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, for the time being do meet at the said church, and choose other or others of their members, in the place and stead of him or them so dying, or neglecting or refusing to act within thirty days next after such contingency. And in this case for the more due and orderly conducting the said elections, and to prevent any undue proceedings therein, we do hereby give full power and authority to ordain and require that the rector and the said church-wardens of the said church, for the time being, or any two of them, shall appoint the time for such election and elections, and that the rector of said church, or in his absence, one of the said church-wardens for the time being, shall give public notice thereof by publishing the same at the said church immediately after divine service, on the Sunday next preceeding the day appointed for such elections: hereby giving and granting that such person or persons as shall be so chosen from time to time by the rector and members of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Courtlandt, near Peekskill, or the majority of such of them as shall in such case meet in manner hereby directed, shall have, hold, exercise and enjoy such, the office or offices to which he or they shall be elected and choosen, from the time of such elections until the Tuesday in Easter week thereon next ensuing, and until other or others be lawfully chosen in his or their place and stead, as fully and amply as the person or persons in whose place he or they shall be chosen, might or could have done by virtue of these presents. And we do hereby will and direct that this method shall forever hereafter be used for the filling up all vacancies that shall happen in either the said offices between the annual elections above directed. And our royal will and pleasure further is, and we do hereby for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant, that as well the church-wardens and vestrymen to these presents nominated and appointed as such, as shall from time to time be hereafter elected and chosen as is herein directed, shall have and they are hereby invested with full power and authority to execute their several and respective offices in as full and ample manner as any church-wardens or vestrymen in that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or in this our province of New York can or lawfully may execute their said respective offices. And further our royal will and pleasure is, and we do, by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ordain and appoint, that the rector and the said churchwardens of the said church for the time being, or any two of them, shall and may from time to time, as occasion may require, summon and call together at such day and place as they shall think proper, the said rector, churchwardens and vestrymen for the time being, to meet in vestry, giving them at least one day's notice thereof: and we do hereby require them to meet accordingly. And we do hereby give, grant, and ordain that the said rector and one of the said church-wardens, for the time being at least, together with the majority of the said vestrymen of the said church for the time being, being met in vestry as above directed, shall forever hereafter have, and they are hereby invested with full power and authority by the majority of their voices, to do and execute in the name of the rector and members of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, all and singular the powers and authorities herein before given and granted to the said rector and members of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt,



near Peekskill, any wise touching or relating to such lands, messuages and tenements, real and personal estate whatsoever, as they the said rector and members of said church in the manor of Courtlandt, near Peekskill, shall or may acquire for the use of the said church, and also in like manner to order, direct, manage and transact the general interest, business and affairs of our said corporation, and also shall have full power and authority in like manner to make and ordain such rules, orders and ordinances as they shall judge convenient for the good government and discipline of the members of the said church; provided, such rules, orders and ordinances be not repugnant to the laws of that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or of this our province of New York, but as or may be agreeable thereto, and that the same be fairly entered in a book or books to be kept for that purpose, and also in like manner to appoint the form of the common seal herein before granted, and the same to alter, break, and remake at their discretion, and also in like manner to appoint such office or officers as they shall stand in need of, always provided that the rector of the said church for the time being, shall have the sole power of nominating and appointing the clerk to assist him in performing divine service, as also the sexton; anything herein before contained to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding, which clerk and sexton shall hold and enjoy their respective offices during the will and pleasure of the rector of the said church for the time being. And whereas there hath not yet been any minister presented or inducted to the said church, our royal will and pleasure therefore is, that until the said church shall be supplied with a minister of the Church of England, as by law established, as is herein after mentioned, and also in case of every avoidance of the said church thereafter, either by the death of the rector thereof or otherwise, that the powers and authorities vested in the rector, church-wardens and vestrymen in vestry met as above mentioned, shall, until the said church be legally supplied with another incumbent, vest in and be executed by the church-wardens of the said church for the time being, together with the vestrymen of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill; provided always, the concurrence and consent of the major number of the whole vestrymen of the said church for the time being be had in every thing that shall in such cases be done by virtue hereof. And we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant that the patronage and advowson of the said church, and the right of presentation thereto, shall forever thereafter belong to and appertain, and is hereby vested in the church-wardens and vestrymen of the said church for the time being, or the majority of them forever, whereof one church-warden shall always be one. And further we do by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the rector and members of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, and their successors forever, that this our present grant shall be deemed, adjudged and construed in all cases most favorably, and for the best benefit and advantage of the said rector and members of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, and that this our present grant being entered on record, as is hereinafter particularly expressed, shall be good and effectual in the law to all intents, constructions and purposes whatsoever, against us, our heirs and successors, according to the true intent and meaning herein before declared, notwithstanding the not reciting, or mis-recital, not naming, or mis-naming of any the aforesaid franchises, privileges, immunities, offices, or



other the premises, or any of them ; and although no writ of *ad quod damnum* or other writs, inquisitors or penalties hath or have been, upon this account, had, made, issued, or prosecuted. To have and to hold, all and singular, the privileges, liberties, advantages and immunities hereby granted or meant, mentioned or intended so to be, unto them the said rector and members of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, and to their successors forever. In testimony whereof we have caused these our letters to be made patent, and the great seal of our said province to be hereunto affixed, and the same to be entered on record in our Secretary's office in our city of New York, in one of the books of patents there remaining. Witness our said trusty and well beloved Cadwallader Colden, Esq., our said Lieutenant Governor, and Commander-in-Chief of our said province of New York, and the territories depending thereon in America, at our fort in our city of New York, by and with the advice and consent of our Council for our said province, the 18th day of August in the year of our Lord, 1770, and of our reign the 10th"<sup>a</sup>

The following minutes relates to the first vestry meeting held under the charter :—" September 1st, 1770, at a meeting of the church-wardens and Vestry of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill ; present, Mr. Robinson and Mr. Charles Moore, wardens ; M. J. Johnson, Mr. Caleb Ward, Mr. J. Nelson and Mr. Jeremiah Drake, vestrymen. The charter being read, they proceeded to choose Mr. John Johnson, clerk for the present year. Resolved, to sett a subscription on foot in favor of Mr. John Doty, and endeavour to settle him as our minister. Also, resolved, that although the subscription mentions to be paid yearly, yet all those who shall subscribe to ye support of a minister, upon their moving out of a place, shall be discharged from their subscription, &c."<sup>b</sup>

At a meeting held 15th of October, 1770, it was "agreed to give Mr. John Doty a call as rector of this church, when he is properly ordained. The vestry also preferred a petition to the Society for the propagation of the Gospel in Foreign parts, for recommending Mr. Doty, and praying their assistance for his maintenance. They likewise addressed a letter to the Rev. Dr. Barton, Secretary of that body, giving an account of the state of the church, and on the same day entered into a bond to the Rev. Samuel Auchmuty, D.D., for the payment of £40 New York currency towards the minister's support."<sup>c</sup> The following copies of the letter and petition are from the MSS. of the Ven. Society:—

<sup>a</sup> Book of Patents, Secretary of State's office, Albany.

<sup>b</sup> Vestry book of St. Peter's church, Peekskill, pp. 1, 2.

<sup>c</sup> Ditto, pp. 2, 3.

THE CHURCH WARDENS AND VESTRY OF ST. PETER'S  
CHURCH TO THE SECRETARY.

*"Peekskill, in the Province of New York, in America,"*  
*Oct. 15th, 1770.* }

REV. SIR:

Permit us, as wardens and vestrymen for St. Peter's church, to address you, and acquaint you with the steps we have taken for settling a church, according to the established Church of England, and to solicit your assistance and interest with the Venerable Society, that we may be so happy as to be patronized by them, and obtain their charitable assistance towards maintaining a minister.

It is about four years since a few of us first attempted to begin the building of a church in the Manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, in the county of Westchester; and on the 9th day of August, 1767, had got it so far finished, as to get the favor of the worthy and Rev. Dr. Ogilvie of New York, to open and consecrate it, which he did, calling it St. Peter's church; and have since (tho' not yet completely finished) made it a decent and a comfortable building for performing divine worship in. The next step we took, to enable us further to prosecute our design, was to apply to his honor, Lieut. Governor Colden for a charter, which he was pleased to grant us. Being so far advanced in our undertaking, Mr. John Doty, a gentleman educated at King's College in New York, offered himself as a candidate for our church, and has performed divine service for us most part of last summer; and has given such general satisfaction, that we have unanimously agreed to give him a call as soon as he is properly ordained, and authorized to perform the office of a minister. And as we are well acquainted with his moral life and conversation, we beg leave to recommend him to the Venerable Society as a person worthy of that sacred function, and don't doubt but he will have ample testimonials from the worthy clergy of New York, of his education and abilities. We send by Mr. Doty, our petition to the Venerable Society, a copy of our charter and of our subscription paper for his maintenance, which amounts to £61, 15s. New York currency, annually; but as many of the subscribers are very poor, and some of them we apprehend will be necessarily obliged to leave the neighborhood, we fear it will be difficult to collect some of the subscriptions; but that Mr. Doty may be certain of receiving something, we have given our bond to the Rev. Dr. Auchmuty as trustees for the Society, obliging us to pay annually to Mr. Doty the sum of £40 currency during his continuance amongst us, as our minister, and if the whole subscriptions are received it is all to be paid to him. The church is in a very thickly settled country, (tho' no kind of public worship is established in the neighborhood) yet at present there are but very few that profess to be of the Church of England, which makes it fall very heavy upon those few, so heavy, that we could not have gone thro' with our undertaking but by entering into an agreement with the people on the lower end of Philipse's upper patent, in the county of Dutchess, that if they would join in the building of St. Peter's church, and in the subscription for the support of a minister,

that when we obtained a missionary he should be settled for both places, so as to make but one congregation of the whole (we wish we could say parish for the number) to preach every other Sunday at the house of Jacob Mandeville, till such time as we could build a church in that neighborhood, so that we humbly request, if we are so happy as to gain the Venerable Society's assistance and protection, that Mr. Doty may be settled by them as their missionary for both the above mentioned places. The churches will not be more than eight miles asunder. It would give us great pleasure if we could inform the Venerable Society of our having a glebe and parsonage house provided, but that we are sorry to say is not yet accomplished. The people that make up our congregation are so very poor, that we have been discouraged from attempting to purchase a piece of land for that use. But we can nevertheless assure the Venerable Society, that from the gracious offer of Mr. Beverly Robinson, we have not the least doubt of having a very good glebe provided within the year. For a more particular account of the manner in which we expect to obtain the glebe, we must beg leave to refer you to Mr. Doty, who is well acquainted with every circumstance relating thereto.

We are with the greatest esteem and respect, Rev. Sir, your most obedient humble servants, } Church-wardens.  
} BEVERLY ROBINSON,  
 CHARLES MOORE.

For themselves and the rest of the vestry of St. Peter's church."<sup>a</sup>

TO THE VENERABLE SOCIETY FOR THE PROPAGATION OF THE GOSPEL IN FOREIGN PARTS. THE PETITION OF THE WARDENS AND VESTRY OF ST. PETER'S CHURCH, IN THE MANOR OF CORTLANDT, NEAR PEEKSKILL, IN THE COUNTY OF WESTCHESTER AND PROVINCE OF NEW YORK IN AMERICA.

HUMBLY SHEWETH,

"That your petitioners, in conjunction with the rest of the people who from the congregations of the churches aforesaid, having for some time labored under the lamentable circumstance of not enjoying an opportunity of publickly worshipping God in the decent and solemn order of the established Church of England, whose evangelical doctrine and discipline they profess and admire; and being convinced of how great utility such a sacred establishment would be, the county being thickly inhabited and almost entirely destitute of every kind of public worship, towards promoting the salvation of many souls and the prosperity of the Church of Christ, have (tho' at present but few in number.) been at the expense of building a neat and convenient church, for which they have received a charter from his Honour Lieut. Governor Colden. That being well satisfied of the character and abilities of Mr. John Doty, a gentleman educated at King's College, they have unanimously given him a call and agreed, when he shall be properly ordained by his Lordship the Bishop of London, or any other English Bishop appointed for that purpose, to receive him as their minister for the said St. Peter's

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii, pp. 524-6. (Hawks.)

church, and also for the neighborhood of Jacob Mandeville, in the lower end of Philipse's patent, in Dutchess county, where it is intended to build another church to be united as one congregation, and that they have cheerfully subscribed to the amount of £61 15s. New York currency, towards supporting him as such. But sensible that such a sum is not sufficient for that purpose, and being well assured of the benevolence and generosity of the Venerable Society, whose readiness upon all occasions, as far as possible to favor attempts of this nature has ever been deservedly admired, they take the liberty humbly to pray that they will appoint Mr. Doty their missionary to the aforesaid places, and to grant him such part of their bounty as they shall think proper.

Your petitioners humbly beg leave to recommend to your favorable notice the infant state of St. Peter's church, and to assure you that we shall ever esteem it a singular honor and happiness to be in any degree patronized by the Society. May heaven ever smile upon and bless your laudible endeavors to promote the glory of God; and at the great day of accounts crown all your faithful labors here with everlasting happiness.

Sealed by order of the Vestry, this 15th day of Oct., 1770.

JOHN JOHNSON, Clerk."<sup>a</sup>

The Rev. John Doty, A.M., the first rector of this parish, was the son of Joseph Doty of New York, where he was born circ. 1750.<sup>b</sup> In 1768 he was entered at Kings College, where he was admitted B. A. *pro forma* in 1770. During the Summer of that year he officiated in this parish as a lay reader, and in the fall went to England for holy orders. His license from the Bishop of London, to officiate in this Province, bears date Tuesday, the 1st of January, 1771. Soon after his return he accepted the call of the vestry, and was thereupon inducted, as appears from the following documents:—"On the 8th of June, 1771, it was unanimously agreed by the wardens and vestry, that the Rev. John Doty be presented to the rectory of St. Peter's church, in the Manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, and ordered that the wardens do deliver him the key of the said church and give him possession according to law." Agreeable to the above resolution the church wardens did on the same day deliver the key to the said Rev. John Doty, and possession of the said church.

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii, pp. 526-7. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> Joseph Doty was a member of the ancient family of the Doughty's or Douneys of Esher, Surrey and Boston, Lincolnshire, England. There was a Samuel Doty graduated at Yale College in 1733. The arms of this family are:—ar, two bars, between three mullets of six points sa. pierced or. "The Rev Samuel Doughty, rector of Sibleston, was a younger brother of the polite and politic Mr. Thomas Doughty of Midburn who conformed, and probably the son of Mr. Samuel Doughty rector of Brighthurst." Nonconformist memorial, vol. ii, p. 401.



### GOVERNOR TRYON'S ADMISSION OF MR. DOTY TO THE RECTORY OF ST. PETER'S CHURCH, PEEKSKILL.

"I, William Tryon, Esq. Captain General and Governor-in-Chief in and over the Province of New York and the Territories thereon depending in America, Chancellor and Vice Admiral of the same, do admit you, John Doty, Clerk, to be Rector of this parish, and parish church of St. Peter's, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, in the County of Westchester, in the said Province, with all their rights, members and appurtenances. Given under my hand and the prerogative seal of the Province of New York, the 16th day of July, in the year of our Lord 1771.

WILLIAM TRYON."

### LETTERS OF INSTITUTION BY GOVERNOR TRYON TO MR. JOHN DOTY, CLERK.

"I, William Tryon, Esq. Captain General and Governor-in-Chief in and over the Province of New York and the Territories depending thereon in America, Chancellor and Vice Admiral of the same, Do institute you John Doty, Clerk, to be Rector of the parish of St. Peter's, in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, in ye County of Westchester in the said Province, to the care of the souls of the parishioners of ye said parish and take your cure and mine. Given under my hand and the Provincial seal of the Province of New York, this 16th day of July, in the year of our Lord, 1771.

WILLIAM TRYON."

"Upon which Mr. John Doty, having first produced a certificate to this board of his having, in the presence of several witnesses, declared his unfeigned assent and consent to the XXXIX Articles of Religion agreed upon by the Archbishops and Bishops in the Convention, holden at London, A. D. 1562, and having prefixed thereto His Majesties Royal Declaration, after which he was by virtue of certain letters mandatory, under the Prerogative seal, in due manner inducted into the real, actual and corporeal possession of the Rectory and parish church of St. Peter's afforesaid, which letters mandatory, are in the following words, viz :

### MANDATE FROM GOVERNOR TRYON TO INDUCT MR. JOHN DOTY INTO THE RECTORY OF ST. PETER'S CHURCH.

"His Excellency William Tryon, Esq. Captain General and Governor-in-Chief in and over the Province of New York and the Territories depending thereon in America, Chancellor and Vice Admiral of the same, To all and singular, Rectors and Parish Ministers whatsoever in the Province of New York, or to the churchwardens and vestrymen of the Parish of St. Peter's in the manor of Cortlandt, near Peekskill, in the County of Westchester in the said Province, and to each and every of you, greeting: Whereas, I have admitted our beloved in Christ, John Doty, Clerk, to the Rectory of the parish and parish church of St. Peter's in the manor of Courtlandt, near Peekskill, in the county of Westchester, with in this Government, to which the said John Doty was presented by the churchwardens and vestrymen of the said parish, the true and undoubted patrons of the said parish, vacant, as never having before been supplied by any incumbent ; and him the said John Doty, I have instituted into the Rectory of the said parish

and parish church, with all their rights, members and appurtenances, (observing the laws and cannons of right in that behalf required, and to be observed :) To you therefore, jointly and severally, I do commit, and firmly enjoining do command, each and every of you, that in due manner, him the said John Doty, Clerk, or his lawful proctor in his name, or for him, into the real actual and corporeal possession of the said Rectory, parish and parish church of St. Peter's, and of all the rights and appurtenances whatever to the same belonging, you induct or cause to be inducted; and him so inducted, you do defend; and of what you shall have done in the premises thereof, you do duly certify unto me or other competent judges in that behalf, when thereunto you shall be duly required. Given under my hand and the Prerogative seal of the Province of New York, the 16th day of July, 1771.<sup>a</sup>

WILLIAM TRYON."

During this year Governor Tryon also granted a special charter, in virtue whereof the vestry held a certain glebe<sup>b</sup> of two hundred acres of land given by Colonel Beverly Robinson, senior warden of this parish, for the use of the Rector officiating one half of his time at St. Philipse's in the Highlands. This property was subsequently sold, as we shall have occasion to show, under an order of the Court of Chancery in 1838, and equally divided between the two churches. Out of these funds (aided by a liberal donation from Trinity Church, New York, amounting to \$1,000,) the present chapel was erected in the village of Peekskill.

Beverly Robinson, Esq., the noble benefactor of this parish, was a son of the Hon. John Robinson of Virginia, who was president of that Colony on the retirement of Governor Gooch, in 1734. He emigrated to New York, and married Susannah, daughter of Frederick Philipse, Esq., Lord of the manor of Philipsburgh. By this connection, Mr. Robinson became rich. When the Revolutionary controversy commenced, he was living upon that portion of the Philipse estate which had been given to his wife, and there he desired to remain in the quiet enjoyment of country life, and in the management of this large domain. That such was his inclination, is asserted by the late President Dwight, and is fully confirmed by circumstances and by his descendants. He was opposed to the Measures of the ministry, gave up the use of imported merchandise, and clothed himself and his family in fabrics of domestic manufacture. But he was also opposed to the separation of the Colonies from the mother country. Still, he wished to take no part in the conflict of arms; but importunity of friends overruled his own judgement, and he entered the military service of the crown. His standing entitled him to high rank. Of the loyal American regiment, raised principally in New York by himself, he was accordingly commissioned the colonel. He al-

<sup>a</sup> Vestry book.

<sup>b</sup> The old church glebe is now the property of Mr. David McCoy.

so commanded the corps called the 'Guides' and 'Pioneers.' Of the former or the loyal Americans, his son Beverly was Lieutenant-Colonel, and Thomas Barclay, Major. Besides his active duty in the field, Colonel Robinson was employed to conduct several matters of consequence, and he figures conspicuously in cases of defection from the Whig cause.



Col. Beverly Robinson.

Colonel Robinson at the peace, with a part of his family, went to England. The name appears as a member of the first Council of New Brunswick, but he never took his seat at that board. His wife is included in the confiscation act of New York, and the whole estate derived from her father passed from the family. The value of her interest may be estimated from the fact, that the British Government granted her husband the sum of £17,000 sterling, which, though equal to eighty thousand dollars, was considered only a partial compensation. After going to England, Colonel Robinson lived in retirement. He was unhappy, and did not conceal the sufferings which preyed on his spirits. He resided at Thornbury, near Bath, and there closed his days in 1792, at the age of 69. His sons were, Col. Beverly Robinson of the British army, (who died in 1816, at New York while on a visit to his two sons, Beverly and Morris, who still continue to reside in that city), Col. Morris Robinson of the British army, and Col. John Robinson, speaker of the House of Assembly in New Brunswick.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Sabere's Hist. of the Loyalist.

We return to the history of the parish. Upon the 23d of March, 1772, it was resolved by the vestry:—"To go and build Mr. Doty a house—also to agree with Jerediah Frost to get the timber, draw the same, (viz: the boards and other materials which he may want for the said house) to do all the carpenter's and joiner's work, and paint and glaze the same for seventy-five pounds."

Mr. Doty's incumbency here was short, not continuing over two years. From this place he removed to Schenectady, as appears by the following extract from the abstract of the Ven. Prop. Society for 1773:—"At the request of the church-wardens and vestry of Schenectady, the Rev. Mr. Doty, a gentleman educated at King's College, New York, and ordained sometime since for St. Peter's, at Peekskill, is appointed to succeed the Rev. Wm. Andrews, with the former salary." The Society, however, were greatly displeased at his removal, and through their secretary informed him, "That the circumstances under which he left his congregation at Peekskill do not raise him in the opinion of the Society, to whom his conduct, in that particular, hath been reported to his disadvantage, and as an act of ingratitude."<sup>a</sup> He remained at Schenectady until 1777, when he removed to Canada, being obliged to sell his furniture to obtain the means of transportation.<sup>b</sup> "In 1775, (says Dr. O'Callaghan) divine service was suspended in his church, on account of the troubles, and he himself became the object of much harsh treatment. He was taken prisoner twice, and at length deemed it prudent, in the fall of 1777, to apply for liberty to remove to Canada, which he obtained. He thereupon proceeded to Montreal, where he was appointed chaplain to his Majesty's royal regiment of New York. Here he continued until October, 1781, when he repaired to England. He returned to Canada 12th of June, 1784, having been appointed missionary at Sorel. Here, for the first four weeks, he performed divine service in the Roman Catholic church, and afterwards in the barracks, where he resided. A place of worship was, however, afterwards erected, and Mr. Doty continued missionary at this place until 1793." "It is with concern, (says the Society) that it has received information that they are deprived of the useful services of this worthy missionary, (Mr. John Doty) by his removal into his native country, to take charge of St. Anne's church, at Brooklyn, on Long Island, in the Province of New York." (abstracts of 1794.) His connection with this church must, however, have been brief; for his name occurs again in 1796, on the Society's list as missionary at Sorel,

<sup>a</sup> Copied from the original letter in the possession of the Rev. Wm. Payne, rector of St. George's church, Schenectady.

<sup>b</sup> Fowler's MSS. Biographies of the Clergy, p. 411, 533.



whether he must have returned the previous year. He finally resigned his mission in 1803, when his connection with the Society for Propagating the Gospel ceased altogether."

Upon the resignation of Mr. Doty, the vestry must have adopted measures for obtaining the services of another minister; for on the 18th of September, 1775, it was resolved by that body, "to set on foot a subscription towards the support of the Rev. Bennet Page, during his preaching at St. Peter's church, at Peekskill." This individual was probably the Rev. Bernard Page, A. M., who was licensed by the Bishop of London, August 24th, 1772, appointed to Wyoming parish, Pennsylvania, from whence he removed to this Province. Mr. Page does not appear to have officiated here very long; and no doubt left in consequence of the breaking out of the Revolutionary war. Several persons of this name were graduates of Harvard University, and staunch loyalists. After this, religious services were suspended in the parish, and no clergyman was called or settled for nearly seventeen years. Seated near the Hudson river, the village of Peekskill suffered a great deal from the inroads of the enemy; who frequently came out from New York in considerable force. In September, 1777, the whole place was sacked and burnt, and the neighboring country pillaged by them.

At the close of the war (the principal members of the church having removed from the parish) the Presbyterians took advantage of the dissensions then existing, by attempting to seize the church and glebe, and, under the act of 1784,<sup>a</sup> choosing trustees, who it seems were all of one persuasion. But these nefarious schemes were happily frustrated, and the church finally incorporated under the old title.

According to a notice of this event given by the Rev. Andrew Fowler, in the year 1793, we learn:—"That three or four years ago the Presbyterians made an attempt to take the church and glebe by force; they called the church by a new name '*Union Church*,' and in order to carry their schemes they chose one half of the trustees as they said, out of the church. The truth is they had once professed themselves Episcopalians; but most of them have since proved themselves to be rank Dissenters, which the Presbyterians no doubt knew." These facts were recorded in consequence of Mr. Silas Constant (a Presbyterian minister) having applied to the vestry for liberty to preach in the church. The latter, however, referred the matter to Mr. Fowler, who very improperly granted the request. It appears that only a short time previous to this Mr. Fowler had obtained the use of Mr. Constant's pulpit at Yorktown. Fourteen

---

<sup>a</sup> Entitled an act to enable all Religious Denominations in the State to appoint trustees.

years afterwards, however, when the latter again applied for the same object, the vestry took a much firmer stand, voting as follows:—"That leave cannot be granted to the Rev. Mr. Constant to preach in the church of St. Peter's consistent, with the canons of the Church."<sup>a</sup>

According to notice given on Monday, 5th of April, 1790, being Monday in Easter week, (the day appointed by charter for choosing officers for St. Peter's church, in the Manor of Cortlandt and St. Philip's chapel in the Highlands,) the following persons were elected for the ensuing year, viz: Wm. Dunning and Caleb Ward, church-wardens; Joshua Nelson, James Spock, Richard A. Arnold, Caleb Morgan, Silvanus Haight and Jarvis Dusenbury, vestrymen. Upon the 24th of November, 1791, the vestry "agreed to pay the sum of £20 for the support of David Lamson, to read service in St. Peter's church, at Peekskill and St. Philip's chapel in the Highlands, until the first of April next; and it is further agreed that Joshua Nelson and Silvanus Haight, shall furnish him with necessarys agreeable to a person of his station, during said term."

The first incorporation of this church subsequent to the Revolution, took place 26th of April, 1791, under the style and title of the corporation of St. Peter's church, Peekskill, and St. Philip's chapel in the Highlands. Joshua Nelson, Richard Arundell, Silvanus Haight, James Spock, Jarvis Dusenbury, vestry of St. Peter's church, Peekskill. First trustees, Wm. Ward, Caleb Ward, James Spock, Silvanus Haight, Caleb Morgan, Joshua Nelson, Richard Arundell, Jarvis Dusenbury. Signed 16th December, 1791.<sup>b</sup>

The parish remained destitute of stated services until 1792, when the vestry called the Rev. Andrew Fowler. He was the son of Andrew Fowler, a lineal descendant of John Fowler one of the original planters of Guilford, Conn., in 1639 or 1640, by his wife Martha Stone, and was born at Guilford, 10th of June, 1760. He graduated A.B. at Yale in 1783, and received his A.M. degree in 1793.<sup>c</sup> In 1784, he had charge of a school at New Rochelle, and the year following was chosen the first delegate from the parish to the Diocesan Convention. To his exertions, under God, the church in this county is justly indebted; for at the close of the Revolutionary war, he collected the dispersed congregations at Rye, White Plains, New Rochelle and Yonkers, in the capacity of a lay reader. In 1788, he was recommended to the Bishop for holy

<sup>a</sup> Vestry minutes, April 25, 1807.

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. A. 26

<sup>c</sup> "Andrew Fowler born in Guilford Aug., 1728, and died Oct., 1815. Martha Stone, born Aug., 1737, died 1794. *Child*, Rev. Andrew Fowler, born in Guilford, June 10, 1760, died Dec. 29, 1850, in Charleston, S. C. The eldest of twelve children. *Rec. of Guilford, Conn.*

orders, and was ordained Deacon by Bishop Provoost, in the month of June, 1789, and Priest on the 18th day of the same month, 1790. He commenced his labors as a preacher of the gospel over the united parishes of Brookhaven, Huntington and Oyster Bay, L. I. He remained there but two years, when he was called, as we have seen, to the rectorship of this parish. Upon the 7th of August, 1792, the vestry agreed with the Rev. Andrew Fowler, to officiate as rector, and to pay him for his services the sum of £70." They also agreed "to put him in possession of the glebe farm, from the first day of May next."

The same year Mr. Dunning, senior warden of the parish, certified to the Diocesan Convention, "that possession had been procured of the parsonage house and glebe, belonging to the churches of St. Philip's at the Highlands, and St. Peter's, near Peekskill. That they had given a call to the Rev. Mr. Fowler, and had provided for his support; and that the people seemed much pleased with having the gospel once more preached, and divine service performed according to the Protestant Episcopal Church." At a vestry meeting held January 3d, 1793, it was resolved:—"That the Rev. Mr. Fowler shall be inducted according to the mode of the Protestant Episcopal Church in this State, now in use, into the rectory of St. Peter's church, in the manor of Cortlandt, and St. Philip's chapel, in Phillipstown, now in connection together, and that the induction into St. Peter's shall be made on Sunday, the 6th of next January; and the induction of St. Philip's chapel, whenever convenience will permit." Upon the 4th of January, 1794, the thanks of the vestry were given to Pierre Van Cortlandt for the great pains he had taken at the Legislature of this State, to obtain a title for the glebe belonging to the united churches. Mr. Fowler resigned the charge of this parish in 1794, and subsequently removed to Charleston, South Carolina, where he died December 29th, 1850, at the advanced age of ninety. The following notice of his death appeared in the *Calendar* for March 1st, 1851:—

"The *Charleston Gospel Messenger* for February, contains an obituary notice from which we extract the following particulars:—'It may be truly said of the departed he was a *great missionary*. In five or more of our Dioceses he officiated for more or less time; but the greater part of his ministerial life, that is about forty years, was passed in South Carolina. He was the first missionary of our 'Advancement Society,' and first missionary of the 'Society for Missions of young men and others,' instituted in Charleston; which was intended to act out of the Diocese, the elder Society being trusted within the Diocese, and which continued until the 'General Missionary Society' superceded the occasion of it. The churches now flourishing in Columbia, Choran, St.

Augustin, (Florida,) and Wadesborough, at Charleston, were planted by him. The old parishes of St. Bartholomew's Edisto Island, and Christ church, each of them for several years found the benefit of his ministrations.'

"Few more industrious men, physically, mentally and socially, have ever lived. 'These hands' he could truly say, 'have ministered to my necessities, and those who were with me.' Into the garden, the field, the orchard, the vineyard and the forest, he went—not for recreation, or to gain wealth, but to supply the deficiency of an inadequate salary; for he coveted no man's silver or gold, or apparel.

"More contentment, with the allotments of Divine Providence; more cheerfulness in narrow circumstances; more confidence in God, as respected himself and family; more meekness in his intercourse with men; more resignation in sickness, sightlessness, adversity, bereavement and the last conflict, I have not witnessed. I might specify incidents known to several present. To one only I will advert:—"He had a son intended for Holy Orders, much care was bestowed and expense (involving serious self-denial) incurred on his education. It was finished with credit at one of our chief colleges. The youth was now competent to provide for himself, and was just about to become a candidate for the ministry; but he (at that time the only son) died. It was a trial, met by his aged father in the temper of faithful Abraham, and with the resignation of holy Job. On the Feast of St. Thomas the Holy Communion was administered to our friend, and on the Sunday after Christmas he departed, as we trust, to be ever with the Lord, aged ninety years and seven months."

The Rev. Samuel Haskell succeeded Mr. Fowler, and continued minister of the parish until 1798. For two or three years the parish was again vacant. During this period another attempt appears to have been made to obtain possession of the church by a Mr. Palmer and others; for at a vestry meeting held on the 6th of November, 1801, it was ordered:—"That the doors of the churches (St. Peter's and St. Philip's) be shut against Mr. Palmer for the future." In the year 1803, Mr. James Mandeville paid the wardens and vestrymen for "one year's rent of the parsonage farm, ending 15th of April, £35; and to one year's rent of the church land, situated round the church at Peekskill £1."<sup>a</sup> The latter must refer to the cemetery which was confirmed to the church by the royal charter of 1770. Occasional services were performed at this time by the New York clergy; for on the 20th of May, 1804, Mr. James Mandeville charges the vestry with the expenses, "paid by him, for keeping of the Rev. Messrs. Cooper and Wilkins, £6 12."

In 1806, the Rev. Joseph Warren was called to be rector of the

<sup>a</sup> Vestry minutes. The Baptist meeting house must have stood near St. Peter's church, for on the "20th of March, 1805, Joseph Ferris was appointed to put up the division fence between the church yards of the Episcopal and Baptist Churches."



united parishes of St. Peter's, Cortlandt, and St. Philip's, Philipstown. The next year he makes report to the Diocesan Convention, for the two churches, of ten communicants. He was succeeded by the Rev. John Urquhart, who entered upon his duties as minister of the united parishes in 1809,<sup>a</sup> and resigned in December, 1814, whereupon the "Rev. Adam Empie and the Rev. John Brown were selected to supply the vacant congregations at Peekskill and Philipstown." The following year the Rev. Adam Empie (chaplain and professor in the military Academy at West Point) reported:—"That in compliance with the appointments made at the last Convention he has performed divine services, and preached two Sundays at Philipstown and two Sundays at Peekskill; in each of which place he administered the Holy Communion, of the advantages of which they had for more than two years been deprived." The Rev. Petrus S. Ten Broeck, Deacon, residing in New York, succeeded Mr. Urquhart in 1817. In the fall of 1816 he reported to the Convention, "That the congregations at Fishkill, Philipstown and Peekskill, have been in a depressed state in consequence of having been destitute of the regular services of a clergyman for some time past; the two last particularly, which have been longest destitute."<sup>b</sup> They now appear to be rising from their depression."<sup>c</sup> For the successors of Mr. Ten Broeck see list of rectors.

At a vestry meeting held January 4th, 1828, Pierre Van Cortlandt, James Wiley and John Oppie were appointed a committee to rent the glebe farm, and also to petition the Chancellor for leave to sell the same, &c. Permission was accordingly granted on the 10th of November, 1828, and on the 20th of October, 1838, the glebe was sold for the sum of five thousand dollars. On the 18th of April, 1840, (in answer to an application of the wardens and vestrymen of St. Peter's church and St. Philip's chapel,) an act was passed by the Legislature of this State, authorizing a separation of said church and chapel.

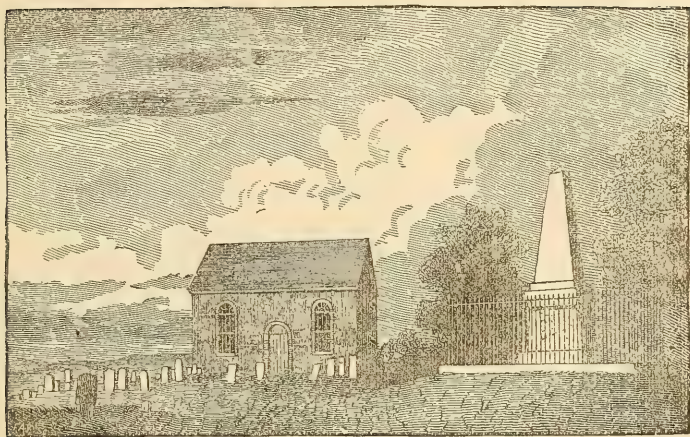
In 1829 an organization was formed in the village of Peekskill by the name of St. Paul's church,<sup>d</sup> which continued until 1840, when the above mentioned act of the Legislature took effect, and the present corporation was formed under the title of "St. Peter's church, Cortlandt, in the village of Peekskill."

<sup>a</sup> Jacob Lent was allowed \$25 in 1808-9, for reading services in both churches.

<sup>b</sup> The vestry on February 22d, 1817, "refused to allow the Independent Congregation to occupy a part of the church and further consideration."

<sup>c</sup> This application appears to have been made without a formal meeting of the vestry.

<sup>d</sup> The Rev. Edward J. Ives in his report to the Diocesan Convention of 1829, says: "A new congregation has also been organized in the village of Peekskill, who contemplate the erection of a new church as soon as their pecuniary resources shall be enlarged, being now insufficient to carry their good object into effect."



St. Peter's Church and the Tomb of Paulding.

The old parochial church of St. Peter's (a venerable relic of the piety of its founders, worthy of preservation, and which, connected as it is with the early Provincial history of the church in this country, we hope to see ere long put in creditable repair<sup>a</sup>) stands upon the summit of a high knoll, a short distance from the village of Peekskill. This humble structure was erected, as we have seen in the year 1766. The site and adjoining grave-yard were the gift of Catherine Van Cortlandt, wife of Andrew Johnson, and daughter of the Rt. Hon. Stephanus Van Cortlandt, first Lord of the manor of Cortlandt. The following entry occurs in the old quarto Bible belonging to this church, printed A. D. 1728:—

"The gift of Mrs. Susannah Robinson, to St. Peter's church, at Peekskill, which church was by the desire of Beverly Robinson, Esq., Messrs. Jeremiah Blake, Caleb Ward, Isaac Hatfield and Charles Moore, trustees, appointed by the subscribers to said church for directing and carrying on said building, and for securing it to the inhabitants as a place of public worship, according to the establishment of the Church of England, on Sunday the 9th of August, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and sixty-seven, being the eighth Sunday after Trinity, consecrated by the Rev. Dr. John Ogilvie of New York, for the service of the Holy Trinity, according to the rites and ceremonies of the Church of England, as by law established, by the name of St. Peter's church."

Mrs. Robinson, (the wife of Col. Beverly Robinson,) was the eldest daughter of the Hon. Frederick Philipse, second Lord of the manor of

<sup>a</sup> In 1828 it was voted, "that the sum of \$40 be appropriated for the repairs of St. Peter's church and yard, under the direction of James Mandeville, John Oppie and Daniel W. Bird-sall."

Phillipsburgh, by his wife Joanna Brockholes, and devisee with her brother Philip Philipse, of Philipse's patent in the Highlands. Mrs. Robinson, as we have seen, was included with her husband in the confiscation act of New York, and at the peace accompanied him to England. She died at Thornbury, near Bath, in 1822, at the age of ninety-four.

The chapel of St. Peter's, which was erected in 1838,<sup>a</sup> as auxiliary to the mother church, is a handsome gothic structure of wood, situated near the centre of the village of Peekskill. The interior, which is handsomely fitted up, contains a neat chancel and gallery. Against the north wall is placed a marble tablet inscribed as follows:—

M. S.  
ANN STEPHENSON,  
The affectionate and beloved wife of  
GEN. PIERRE VAN CORTLANDT,  
of this township and county,  
who departed this life at Albany, March 20th, 1821,  
translated by God to a kingdom of happiness and glory,  
aged 46 years, 6 months and 16 days.

Early instructed by her pious mother in the doctrines and principles of the Gospel, this excellent woman became exemplary as a communicant of the Church when only thirteen years old, and continuing to be a sincere and humble follower of her Saviour, even unto her life's end, was endeared to all who knew her by her Christian virtues, and for a pure and devoted attachment to Christ's Holy and Apostolic Church, and to the members of this congregation, who as a memorial of her worth and mark of respect for her venerable consort and her only son, benefactors of this parish, have erected this tablet.

—O—  
REQUIESCAT IN PACE.

There is a noble and deep toned bell in the tower, which summons the parishioners every Lord's day to the house of prayer by its rich and solemn sounds. "This was a gift in every way worthy of the venerable individual whose name is graven upon it, the late Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt, for many years senior warden, to whose family the parish is not only indebted for the original grant of land upon which the mother church stands, but for other and more recent favors." It weighs one thousand and eighty-five pounds, and bears the following inscription:—"Cast by G. W. Holbrook, East Medway, Mass., 1841. Presented to St. Peter's church, Peekskill, Westchester County, New York, by General Pierre Van Cortlandt, August 29th, 1841." The marble font was

<sup>a</sup> The deed for the church lot, from Ward B. Howard and Lucia his wife, bears date 23d of December, 1829.

the gift of his son Colonel Pierre Van Cortlandt. The organ presented by the ladies of the parish in 1849, was also built by the Messrs. Holbrook & Co., and cost twelve hundred dollars. The corner stone of this edifice, which was organized under the title of St. Paul's church, in 1829, was laid by Bishop Onderdonk in 1838; and upon Saturday, June 16th, of that year, it was consecrated and set apart to the worship and service of Almighty God, under the title of "St. Peter's chapel, &c.," by the same Prelate.

The site of this church was formerly occupied by the military magazine, destroyed by the British army in 1777. Large quantities of grape shot have been found in the immediate vicinity. Adjoining the building on the south, is situated the family vault of the late Ward B. Howard, Esq., at one time president of the village corporation, in which repose the mortal remains of himself and wife Lucia, daughter of the late Hon. Robert Johnston, who died Mar. 8th, 1834. Also the remains of their nephew, William J. Mitchell, Esq., who was unfortunately killed by the explosion of the steamer General Jackson, off Verplanck's Point, June 7th, 1831.

The church was first incorporated 19th July, 1838, under the title of the "Wardens and Vestrymen of St. Peter's chapel, in the village of Peekskill," on which occasion Pierre Van Cortlandt and Samuel Marks, were elected wardens, and Daniel D. Smith, Samuel T. Wood, John Collett, Elihu E. Baker, Alex Fairly, Wm. B. Birdsall, Nicholas Cruger and Isaac Seymour, vestrymen.<sup>a</sup>

A third incorporation occurs under the title of St. Peter's church of Cortlandt," 28th August, 1840.<sup>b</sup>

### PRINCIPAL BENEFACTORS.

Catherine Van Cortlandt, Col. Beverly Robinson and Susannah Philipse, his wife, the Ven Propagation Society, Andrew Johnson, Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt, Col. Pierre Van. Cortlandt, Nicholas Cruger, Esq., Isaac Seymour, Esq, Col. John Williams and the Corporation of Trinity church, New York.<sup>c</sup>

William Dunning and Jarvis Dusenbury were the first delegates from this parish to the Diocesan Convention in 1791.

<sup>a</sup> Religious Societies Lib. B. p. 56.

<sup>b</sup> Ditto Lib. B. p. 60.

<sup>c</sup> Trinity Church in 1797 presented the sum of \$750 to St. Peter's church. In 1807, \$1,250 for St. Peter's and St. Philip's. In 1826, \$750. In 1837, \$250, and in 1839, \$1,000. Total \$4,000.





St. Peter's Church, Peekskill.

## RECTORES DE CORTLANDT.

INST.	RECTORS.	VACATED.	PATRONS.
16 July, 1771,	Rev. John Doty, Cl., A. M.,	Per Resignation,	Wardens and Vestry.
18 Sept. 1775,	Rev. Bernard Page, Cl., A. M.,	"	"
7 Aug. 1792,	Rev. Andrew Fowler, Presb.,	"	"
15 Dec. 1794,	Rev. Samuel Haskell, B. A., Presb.,	"	"
7 Apr. 1806,	Rev. Joseph Warren, Presb.,	"	"
17 Apr. 1811,	Rev. John Urquhart, Presb.,	"	"
11 June, 1817,	Rev. Petrus S. Ten Broeck, <sup>a</sup> Presb.,	"	"
29 May, 1826,	Rev. Edward J. Ives, Presb.,	"	"
Dec., 1832,	Rev. James Sunderland, Presb.	"	"
Apr., 1838,	Rev. William C. Cooley, A. M., Presb.,	"	"
3 Mar., 1841,	Rev. Moses Marcus, <sup>b</sup> B. A., Presb.	"	"
7 June, 1843,	Rev. William Barlow, <sup>c</sup> Presb.,	"	"
25 Apr., 1848,	Rev. George S. Gordon, Presb.,	"	"
12 Oct., 1854,	Rev. Edmund Roberts, Presb.,	"	"
5 Dec., 1863,	Rev. John Rutherford Mathews, Presb.,	"	"
1 Oct., 1865,	Rev. Erskine M. Rodman, Presb.,	"	"
10 Feb., 1869,	Rev. Francis Harison, Presb.	"	"
16 Sept. 1873,	Rev. William Fisher Lewis, Presb., present rector.		

The assistant minister of the parish is the Rev. H. M. Torbert, who is also chaplain at St. Gabriel's School. This school is under the charge

<sup>a</sup> Died at North Andover, Mass., Jan. 24, 1849. Rector of St. Paul's, Portland, Me., from 1818 to 1831. From 1831 to 1837, rector of Saccacappa, when he removed to Concord, N. H., where he officiated until about 1841.

<sup>b</sup> Died at Egremont Place, New Road, London, England, Nov. 26, 1852. His last parochial connection, in this country, was with the church of St. George the Martyr, in New York City.

<sup>c</sup> Died at Chicago, Ill., Feb. 24, 1850. He had been rector of St. Paul's in Syracuse and subsequently of Ogdensburg.

of the sisters of St. Mary who have admirably succeeded by great personal exertion in making practical the idea, of a female boarding school, where solid attainments, correct notions of woman's exact position in society, and a healthy growth of mind, heart and body can be attained to the exclusion of more pretentious accomplishments; finery in dress and that abominable theory that woman is a mere ornament of society." The sisters have two other schools in the United States, one in New York and one in Memphis, Tenn." "The designs of these schools is to offer to Church people, and all who wish to have their daughters grow up in the doctrines of a true religious faith, an opportunity at the smallest cost, to obtain a thorough education." Surrounded by the old parochial Church of St. Peter's is an extensive grave yard containing memorials to the Penoyers, Wards, Drakes, Ferris's, &c., &c. The oldest interment appears to have been Mary, wife of John Ward, who died on the 15th of September, 1765, in the 69th year of age.

One of the tomb stones is inscribed with the following expressive sentence :

*"Eternity how long!"*

There is also a small enclosure belonging to the Birdsall family.

Among the illustrious dead interred here, may be mentioned Major-General Seth Pomeroy, one of the heroes of Bunker Hill.

On the west side of the grave yard is situated the monument of John Paulding.

The following is the report of the select committee, appointed in pursuance of a resolution of the board of common council, passed the 4th day of December, 1826, during the mayoralty of the Honorable Philip Hone directing a monument to be erected to the memory of John Paulding, one of the captors of the British spy, Andre.

Your committee engaged Messrs. Francis and James Kain, to erect a monument of white marble, the materials of which were procured from their quarry, in the county of Westchester. It is of the most simple form, consisting of a pedestal, surmounted by a cone, showing an elevation of thirteen feet; the whole composed of the most massive materials, and fastened with iron cramps in such a manner as to resist the severity of the climate for ages to come.

The base of the monument covers a square of seven feet, surrounded by an iron railing, four feet in height, and two feet seven inches distant, inserted in a marble coping fourteen inches broad, comprehending a square of twelve feet two inches.

One side of the monument exhibits a *fac-simile* of the face of the medal, voted by the Congress of the United States to each of the captors

of Andre, on the third day of November, seventeen hundred and eighty; the other of its reverse, both carved in bas relief.

On the front of the pedestal is the following inscription :

Here repose the mortal remains of  
JOHN PAULDING,  
who died on the 18th day of February, 1818,  
in the 60th year of his age.

---

On the morning of the 23d of September, 1780,  
Accompanied by two young Farmers of the Co. of Westchester,  
(Whose names will one day be recorded  
On their own deserved monuments,)  
He intercepted the British spy, Andre :  
Poor Himself  
He disdained to acquire wealth by the sacrifice of  
HIS COUNTRY.  
Rejecting the temptation of great rewards  
He conveyed his prisoner to the American camp ;  
And  
By this act of noble self-denial,  
The treason of Arnold was detected,  
The designs of the enemy baffled ;  
West Point and the American Army saved ;  
And these United States,  
Now by the grace of God. Free and Independent,  
Rescued from most imminent peril.

---

The fourth side of the pedestal bears the following inscription :

THE CORPORATION  
Of the City of New York,  
Erected this Tomb,  
As memorial Sacred to  
PUBLIC GRATITUDE.

The whole being completed with the exception of placing the cone on the pedestal, on the morning of the twenty-second of November, eighteen hundred and twenty-seven, the corporation proceeded in the steam-boat Sandusky, to Peekskill, where they arrived at one o'clock, and were met by the Committee of Arrangements,<sup>a</sup> and a large concourse of

---

<sup>a</sup> Generals Pierre van Cortlandt and Philip van Cortlandt, Daniel W. Birdsall, St. John Constant, Ward B. Howard, Benjamin Dyckman, Doctor Peter Goetehius, James Mandeville, and Doctor Samuel Strang.

the inhabitants of Westchester County, who had come to assist in the last honors, to the memory of their fellow citizen. Among them were many aged and venerable men, who passed through the perils of the revolution and shared its dangers with the deceased.

A procession was formed to the church yard, where the monument stands, about two and a half miles from the village of Peekskill; and the column being lowered to its place on the pedestal, William Paulding, mayor of the city of New York, addressed the assembled citizens as follows :

MY FRIENDS:—History bears testimony to the importance of the act we are here assembled to commemorate. The capture of Andre, while it prevented the most fatal disasters, and led to the most signal results, afforded at the same time a memorable example of the fidelity and patriotism of the yeomanry of these United States. As such it has always been viewed, and will appear in the eyes of posterity one of the most honorable achievements of our great revolutionary struggle.

It was in the year seventeen hundred and eighty.

There is not an aged man here present, but must remember that gloomy and disastrous period, when, if ever, the freedom of our country was almost a desperate hope. The money, the credit, the men, the means, and I may almost say, the sentiment necessary for continuing the great contest, were either quite exhausted, or fast melting away.

Hardship, ill success, and a miserable scarcity of every necessary of life, had checked present exertion, and produced almost a hopelessness of the future. Our little army, the last reliance of the country, was cooped up at West Point, almost the last refuge of liberty remaining. Had that army, with its illustrious commander, been treacherously surrendered, and that strong-hold given up to the enemy, the communication between Canada and New York, then in his possession, would have been open—the North and the South could no longer have co-operated with each other—the spirit of our people had been broken—the last stay of freedom destroyed, and the last ray of hope perhaps extinguished. What the final issue might have been, God only knows; but we all know, the consequences would have shaken our good cause to its foundation. A plan for this purpose was agitated—matured—almost consummated by the treason of Arnold. To you it is not necessary to detail the particulars of this infamous and dangerous project, so familiar to the memory and hearts of our people. I see among you many venerable and aged men who bore a part in the struggle, and shared in the hardships, anxieties, dangers and sufferings of those dismal times. I see at the head of these, a faithful and gallant officer, still happily and honorably surviving to enjoy that invaluable freedom which his own efforts contributed to secure.<sup>a</sup> I see, too, among them one who was himself a companion and sharer in the virtuous act by which these imminent dangers were averted.<sup>b</sup>

If you wish for the story of this high achievement of honest, unpretending

<sup>a</sup> General Philip van Cortlandt.

<sup>b</sup> Isaac van Wart.



patriotism, ask it of him. He will tell it in such a way, as shall neither wrong the living or the dead. He will tell you of the capture of Andre, who from a spy, was elevated by a false estimate and a mistaken sympathy, into a hero and a martyr—of the temptations which had corrupted the second man in the nation's estimation, being rejected by the sons of the farmers of Westchester—of the delivery of the spy into the hands of the great good man of the age—of modern times—of all times whatever, and of their receiving his glorious approbation—of the applauses of the nation—and the thanks of that most illustrious body, the old Congress of the United States—the noblest reward which was ever bestowed on a private citizen. Lastly, my friends, he will tell you what a source of honest pride—of heart-felt pleasure—of unutterable happiness has been to him, and will be to the last hour of his life, the reflection that he did his duty to his country in her hour of peril.

My Friends:—The man to whose mouldering remains and imperishable memory we are now paying the last honors, was born and brought up among us. Like many now present, he was the son of a plain country farmer, who cultivated his own fields with his own hands: and he received such an education only, as is now within the reach of every honest man's son in these United States. He had nothing to boast of but a vigorous, active, well-proportioned frame, a daring spirit, and an honest heart. His means and opportunities were only such as you all enjoy; and his example furnishes a lesson to you all, of what every one of you is capable of becoming, when the hour of danger arrives, and our country requires the aid of a virtuous patriotism. He is most peculiarly an example to you and yours. He belongs forever to the yeomanry of the United States, a class of men always honest and patriotic—always ready to defend that soil in whose products they share so liberally, and those rights in which they so amply participate.

Bear then in mind, my friends, and impress it on the hearts of your children, and upon all that shall nestle in old age under your withered branches, that as all are equally called upon to protect and defend their country, so there is not one of them all but may one day be placed in a situation like John Paulding, to confer a lasting benefit on his country, and like him, to merit and receive the highest and noblest of all earthly recompenses—the thanks and gratitude of his countrymen.

The assembly then separated, deeply impressed with the ceremony and the occasion. All which is respectfully submitted,

ABRM. M. VALENTINE,  
JOHN AGNEW,  
JOHN LOZIER,  
GIDEON OSTRANDER,  
JAMESON COX.

The Dutch Reformed Church which stands at the corner of Main and James streets, is a neat wooden edifice, surmounted with a spire of the same material. Above the entrance is a tablet inscribed:—

THE VAN NEST  
Reformed Dutch Church,  
Founded A. D. 1839.

A union between this church and the old society at Cortlandt-town was effected August 22d, 1833. Abraham Van Nest and George Douglass, Esquires, appear to have been liberal benefactors towards the erection of this church. A silver communion service was also presented by the former individual. The first Reformed Dutch church located in this village, stood on the hill west of the Episcopal church, adjoining the Diven property. Nothing remains at present to mark its site, save a small enclosure containing a few interments. In this cemetery is a plain marble monument to the memory of Lieut. George McChain, which bears the following truly classical inscription, composed by the Hon. R. R. Pray, Chancellor of the State of Mississippi:—

Interred

Near this stone lie the remains of

GEORGE MCCCHAIN

Lieutenant in the sixth regiment of the United States Infantry, and distinguished for his valor in the battles of Chippeway and Bridgewater. In him were united the energy of the soldier, with the easy politeness of the gentleman. Impressed with the great truths of religion, he was hospitable, gentle, sober, just, and contemplative. From the ardour of his love of country, he early devoted himself to her service, where he was brave without vanity, and magnanimous without ostentation. To perpetuate the memory of so beloved a character, his mourning friends have erected this humble stone, a frail memorial of their veneration for his virtues, and a faint testimony of their grief for a misfortune, alas! indelibly engraven on their hearts. He died on the 19th day of October, 1818, Aged 32 years.

Also monuments to the memory of his father John McChain, one of the Westchester guides in the revolutionary war, and the Rev. Allen Blair, who departed this life June 14, aged 72 years; also, Jane, wife of St. John Constant, who died April 2, 1817.

The Van Nest Reformed Dutch Church in Peekskill, was incorporated on the 3d of January, 1843, and called by the above name, "in consideration of the private virtues and public liberality of Abraham Van Nest of New York." The consistory also resolved to confide the management to a board of nine trustees. The following gentlemen were elected to this office, on the 16th of January, 1843:—James Goetchius, William Leavins, John P. Cruger, Washington S. Whitney, J. Henry Ferris, Thomas Nelson, Hercules Lent, Charles A. G. Depew and N.

S. Jacobs.<sup>a</sup> The present pastor, Rev. John B. Thompson, was installed 23d of July, 1873.

The First Presbyterian church is situated on South street near the south side of Magregaries brook. It is a neat wooden structure, surmounted with a tower and spire; the former contains a large bell and clock. As early as 1799 a church edifice was erected upon this spot, upon lands devoted by Nathaniel Brown, a Friend. "To the Presbyterians of the belief of Dr. Rodgers of New York," with James Diver, John Oppie and Stephen Brown, trustees. The principal benefactors of the church were Stephen Brown and his mother-in-law, Mrs. Hannah Brewer. Dr. James Brewer, of this place, during his life time, had in his possession an account of monies expended by Messrs. Samuel Haight and Stephen Brown, in building the meeting-house in Peekskill. Total expenditure £371 8s, 1d, Dated Peekskill, 13th Sept., 1799.

SAMUEL HAIGHT, } Trustees.  
STEPHEN BROWN, }

About the year 1813 a division in the church at Yorktown, then under the pastoral care of Rev. Silas Constant, gave rise to the organization known as the Independent church. The Independent Presbyterian congregation of Peekskill was incorporated on September 29th, 1813,<sup>b</sup> with John Lent, John Constant and Samuel Strang, as trustees. The building in which they worshipped, was familiarly known as the "church on the hill," and situated near the residence of the late Charles A. Lee, M. D., on Diven street, was taken down about 1844."

The first Presbyterian ministry of which we have any authentic record was that of the celebrated William Tennent, who labored in East Chester and Bedford for some months between the years 1718 and 1721," but there is no proof that he ever officiated here. Some years later, Rev. Samuel Sackett was sent by the Presbytery of New Brunswick to preach in West Chester County. The special field of labor assigned him was Cortlandt Manor, embracing Yorktown, Cortlandtown, North Salem and Somers. There is little doubt that he preached occasionally in this village. His ministry of forty-two years (1742-'84) was chiefly confined to Yorktown and Bedford." "He died on the fifth day of July, 1784, at the age of seventy-two years," and was buried in the cemetery of Crompond or Yorktown.

"The Rev. Abner Brundage, who came to Peekskill in May, 1815, says that there were at that time in the village, from Mr. John Oppie's,

<sup>a</sup> Relig. Soc. Lib. B. 80, 82.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. a. pp. 102, 188.

where Mr. John W. Hait now lives, to Captain Requa's, just one hundred buildings of all kinds. At that time the Presbyterians had two places of worship, one on South street, where the first Presbyterian church now stands, the other on the hill north of Main street, to which we have already alluded, but no organization. In May, 1816, a church of seventy-five members was formed, with Mr. Brundage as pastor, and John Lent, deacon, and Ezra Lockwood, as officers; when Mr. Brundage resigned his charge in 1819, the church numbered over a hundred members. Some years later the influence of a large congregational element from Connecticut gave great dissatisfaction to some who preferred the faith and government of the Presbyterian church, and in 1826 a division took place. Those who remained were finally merged into the Dutch Reformed Church. Those who withdrew founded the present Presbyterian Society." We give the details of the organization in the words of the first entry that appears upon the record of the session :

"The Presbyterian church in the town of Peekskill was organized June 25th, in the year of our Lord 1826, by the Rev. Elihu W. Baldwin, of the Presbytery of New York, according to the book of discipline of the Presbyterian Church in the United States of America." It consisted at the time of its organization of sixteen members, viz: Benjamin Illingworth, an Elder of the Presbyterian church in Yorktown, with a letter of dismissal from the same; Daniel Merritt, Nancy Conklin, Elizabeth Oakley, Elizabeth Campbell, Ann Conklin, Caroline Strang, Mahala Gilbert, Rebecca Hawes, Maria Jones, Jemima Brown, Sarah Dusenberry, Mary Oakley, Rachel Buskirk, Ann Budd and Susan Shaw, being a succession of members from the Independent Congregational church in Peekskill. Benjamin Illingworth and Daniel Merritt were elected elders." "In October of the same year, the church became connected with the Presbytery of New York, and at the same time extended a call to the Rev. John H. Leggett, then a member of the Second Presbytery of New York. The call was accepted and Mr. Leggett was installed first pastor of this church on December 14th, 1826. This pastorate continued three years, and was marked by a gradual increase in the number of communicants. Ten were added to the church under his ministry, seven on profession of faith and three by certificate, making a total of twenty-six; which was reduced to twenty-four by the death of one member, and the dismissal of another. Mr. Leggett died on the 31st day of May, 1873.

In 1829 the Presbytery of Bedford was organized and the church at Peekskill fell under its care, but soon obtained permission to return to the Presbytery of New York.



The next pastor was the Rev. William Marshall, a native of Scotland, who entered upon his duties in the spring of 1831. His pastorate ceased in the fall of 1843. During his ministry the church was transferred by Synod from the Presbytery of New York, to the second Presbytery of New York. The total membership at the close of his ministry was thirty-four. Mr. Marshall died in October, 1865. To his ability and faithfulness, Dr. Halliday, his successor, bears this testimony:—"Few men have led a more blameless life, a life of more exemplary piety. He had the respect and the affectionate regard of all his brethren in the ministry. They looked upon him as one of the best, and in some respects, as one of the most gifted among them. While he was not popular as a preacher, he was yet an able and excellent sermonizer. He had great strength and fertility of mind, and many of his written discourses are marked by decided intellectual superiority. He was an evangelical preacher. He preached plain truth. He dwelt much on the great cardinal doctrines of the Bible, apportioning them and applying them with wisdom and with unction. He was not left without witness. The leaven of his influence was felt, and is still felt for good in this church. Its growth and prosperity are (under God), due in some considerable measure to his labors."

During the ministry of Mr. Marshall, unfortunate dissensions sprung up in the church, which resulted, in 1841, in the withdrawal of nine members, who, together with two members from the second Congregational church of New London, Conn., were organized into a church on Nov. 17th, 1841, by the Presbytery of North River, and became the second Presbyterian church of Peekskill, in connection with the New School assembly. They began public worship on Sunday, Nov. 21st, 1841, in the old Methodist church on South street. Services were conducted by the Rev. Daniel Brown. Within a few years a church edifice was erected and was dedicated on April 9th, 1845. In 1870, the building was enlarged and rebuilt.

Soon after the resignation of Mr. Marshall a call was extended by the First church to Rev. D. M. Halliday, then pastor of a large and flourishing church at Danville, Pa. The call was accepted by him, and on Nov. 1st, 1843, he was installed by a committee of the Second Presbytery of New York. "In 1846 the original church edifice, then nearly half a century old, was removed to make way for another of twice its size. Twelve years later, in 1858, an extension of thirty feet, including the present lecture room, was added—making the present dimensions forty feet by ninety, instead of forty by sixty. The dimensions of the original edifice, were thirty by forty."

Dr. Halliday's pastorate was of unusual length, extending over a period of twenty-four years. The membership had increased five fold to what it had been. Mr. Halliday was compelled by the impaired state of his health to resign Oct. 20th, 1867, and is now residing at Princeton, N. J.

For some time after the resignation of Dr. Halliday, the pulpit remained vacant; finally, in April, 1868, Rev. John N. Freeman, then a student in Princeton Theological Seminary, was tendered a unanimous call, which he accepted—and on the 14th day of May, following, he was ordained and installed by the Second Presbytery of New York.

After a pastorate of nearly eight years, Mr. Freeman resigned Jan. 5th, 1876, and was dismissed to the Presbytery of Niagara, and not long after was installed pastor of the church at Lockport, New York.

On the 10th day of April, 1876, a call was presented to the present pastor, the Rev. J. Ritchie Smith, who was installed on the 26th day of June, 1876.

This church, since 21st day of June, 1870, has remained under the care of the Presbytery of Westchester.

Toward the close of Mr. Halliday's ministry, a lot had been secured immediately opposite the church, at a cost of \$3,750, for the erection of a parsonage. In the spring of 1870, the building was completed, at an additional cost of \$9,800, and is considered one of the handsomest and most convenient mansions along the line of the river.

The fiftieth anniversary of the organization of this church was celebrated on Sunday, June 25th, 1876, on which occasion an historical discourse was delivered by the Rev. J. Ritchie Smith, pastor elect.<sup>a</sup>

In the cemetery adjoining the church, are monuments to Capt. Isaac Conklin, who departed this life, January 13th, 1815, aged 68 years; Zebulon Philips and Samuel Strang, M. D., and others. There are also inclosures belonging to the Brown, Bedle and Rundle families, in which numerous interments have been made.

The second Presbyterian church of Peekskill, is located on the corner of South and Union streets. This society was organized Nov. 17th, 1841, and the first structure was erected A. D. 1845, and dedicated to the service of God, 9th of April, 1845; the society was incorporated by its present name, July 29th, 1846. In 1870 the church edifice was enlarged and rebuilt. The first pastor was the Rev. Daniel Brown, who was installed May 4th, 1842, and who died November 8th, 1846, and was succeeded by the Rev. Livingston Willard, April 15th, 1847.

<sup>a</sup> For much of the foregoing history of this church, we are greatly indebted to the semi-centennial anniversary of the Presbyterian church of Peekskill, N. Y., by Rev. J. Ritchie Smith. Printed at Peekskill, N. Y. The Highland Democratic Steam Print, 1876.

The Baptist society must have been established here at an early date; this appears from the following document, entitled an agreement made the 17th day of December, A. D. 1772, by and between the subscribers, as follows, to wit:—

Whereas the society of people called Baptists, by way of voluntary subscription, have lately erected and built a house of public worship at or near a place called Peekskill, in the manor of Cortlandt, and as there is not as yet a sufficient sum of money raised to pay for the building said house, we the subscribers do agree upon and appoint Caleb Hall, of the said manor of Cortlandt, to hire a sum of money sufficient to pay the deficiency; and we jointly and severally promise and oblige ourselves, our heirs, executors and administrators, to pay to the said Caleb Hall, his executors or administrators, one equal part of the sum that he shall so hire, according to the proportion of our first subscription: Provided that if there shall be money raised by way of subscription, sufficient to pay the cost laid out in building said house, that the money so hired shall be paid out of the same. In witness whereof we have hereunto set our hands.

Caleb Hall, Sen.,  
Isaac Horton, Sen.,  
Daniel Hall,  
Richard Williams,  
Nathan Elliott,

John Poun,  
Joshua Horton,  
Caleb Hall, Jr.,  
Nathan Brown,  
Oliver Yeomans.

The first Baptist church stood near Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt's, directly on the spot now occupied by the district school-house.

The present society was organized in 1843, under the style and title of the First Baptist Church of Peekskill. The meeting-house, which is valued at \$3,400, was erected August, 1847, and dedicated the 8th of April, 1847, to the service of Almighty God. On this occasion the Rev. W. R. Williams, D.D., delivered the dedicatory sermon. This church belongs to the senior Baptist association. Upon the 31st of October, 1843, the Rev. Edward Conover, was duly elected pastor; this individual was succeeded, November 25, 1844, by the Rev. C. C. Williams. The present pastor is the Rev. P. Buel, who commenced his ministrations 23d August, 1846. The communicants belonging to this church average forty.

The Baptist burying-ground is situated north of the Episcopal yard. Here is a memorial to Caleb Hall, who died October 1st, 1791, aged 91 years, beside other monuments.

The Methodist Episcopal church in Peekskill, was first incorporated 2d August, 1808; Bethune Washburne, Gilbert Weeks and John Spock, trustees.<sup>a</sup> The Methodist society must have been in existence, however, sometime previous to the above incorporation; for on the 26th of

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. A. p, 102

February, 1795, we find John Drake and Catharine, his wife, conveying three-quarters of an acre of land in this place to William Hallock, Thomas Clark, William Weeks, Abraham Travis and Stephen Newby, managers of the Methodist society. The present church edifice, erected A.D., 1837, occupies the site of a still older building, erected in 1811: to it is attached a small grave-yard. The communicants of this church number two hundred.

The Protestant Methodist society was first established here in 1827, and incorporated 23d November, 1836; John Spock, William R. Steel and Thomas Blackney, trustees.<sup>a</sup>

The Wesleyan or Primitive Methodists originally belonged to the old Methodist society, from which body they seceded in 1839. Their first pastor was the Rev. John Miles. The church edifice was erected in 1839, and incorporated A.D. 1842.

The society of Friends was first organized here in 1804, and the oldest house erected in 1811, upon land given for that purpose by Nathaniel Brown, Esq.

The Roman Catholic church of the assumption stands at the corner of Union and First streets, the pastor of which is the Rev. Father William P. Flannelly. The Roman Catholic Institutions are the Franciscan Convent, which was established about nine years ago, and is situated on the banks of the Hudson near the Rail Road Depot. At present there are about thirty sisters connected with the institution, who conduct a school known at the Academy of Our Lady of Angels. The object of the community is teaching the children of the poor and caring for he sick. The grounds are tastefully laid out and the improvements consist of a chapel and new convent, the cost of which was about \$30,000.

The Boland farm was purchased by the directors of the Roman Catholic Orphan Asylum with money devised by Captain Boland for the purpose of providing a country home for orphan children, and to remain under the same management as the asylum in New York city. The object of the institution is to maintain and instruct the children until suitable homes are found for them. The farm is located on the Cortlandtville road, on the outskirts of the village, and the improvements consist of a large brick building for class-room, dormitories, work-room, etc. The amount of the bequest was \$50,000.

Mount Florence was purchased by the Sisters of the Good Shepherd for the purpose of establishing a novitiate for their order. The number of sisters is at present seven. This novitiate is intended for the training

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. B. p. 47.



of sisters for their future labor in caring for and reforming those of their own sex who have fallen from virtue.

One of the most interesting objects in the village of Peekskill, is the old Birdsall residence, situated directly opposite the Bank. This house, during the American Revolution, was occupied occasionally by General Washington as head-quarters when the army happened to be stationed here. In this time honored mansion the visitor is still shown the sleeping apartments of Washington, and his noble companion in arms—La Fayette. The furniture occupies nearly the same position as at that day, and the old clock still marks the passing hour as it did seventy-seven years ago. The colored woman who waited upon the illustrious visitors, died in 1844. The Rev. George Whitfield also preached in one of the parlors.

The Village landing is pleasantly situated at the foot of a high bank, commanding a fine view of Peekskill Bay, the Dunderbarrach, Rahway Hook, and the entrance to the Highlands; directly opposite is Caldwell's Landing, in Rockland county, with which the Westchester shore is connected by a ferry. Across this ferry the American troops were frequently transported during the Revolution. In the vicinity of the landing there was formerly a silver mine in operation; the following register of its discovery occurs in the Secretary of State's office:

<i>No</i>	<i>Name of Discoverer.</i>	<i>In which County.</i>	<i>Recorded.</i>	<i>Book.</i>	<i>Page.</i>
8	Gilbert Weeks.	W. C. Co., town of Cortlandt, within a quarter of a mile of Peekskill Landing, on the north side of McGregory's brook silver ore.	March 16, 1796.	26.	190.

Numerous minerals are also found in this neighborhood, such as Epidote, Garnet, &c. Spheue is said to have been discovered near Peekskill in an aggregate of quartz. Sulphate of barytes exists in the region of Anthony's Nose.

Gregory's brook (sometimes called Magrigarie's creek,) rises in Magrigarie's pond, a few miles east of the village. This rapid stream, after flowing through a deep and wooded glen, empties into the Hudson near the landing place.

The romantic hills which abound in the immediate vicinity of Peekskill are many of them connected with stirring events during the revolutionary war. Among the most prominent is Gallows Hill, famous as the spot where the spy Palmer was executed by order of General Putnam,

whose laconic reply to Sir Henry Clinton, the British commander, deserves an enduring record. It appears that Clinton had sent up a flag of truce from New York, demanding the release of Edmund Palmer, his lieutenant, who had been detected as a spy in the American camp. The brief and emphatic answer of Putnam runs thus :

*"Head Quarters, 7th August, 1777.*

"Sir: Edmund Palmer, an officer in the enemy's service, was taken as a spy lurking within the American lines. He has been tried as a spy, condemned as a spy, and shall be executed as a spy; and the flag is ordered to depart immediately.

ISRAEL PUTNAM."

"P. S.—He has been accordingly executed."

From this circumstance the hill derived its present appellation. The story of Palmer's sad fate is thus graphically described in the republican paper of Peekskill:—

"In the summer of the year 1780, and for some time preceding and following, on the southern and eastern sides of the hill, and along the rich valley which lies at its base, was quartered a division of the American army under the command of Gen. Putnam. Disaffection and treachery prevailed on every side; men there were who from fear or from other base causes, refused to take part on the side of virtue and patriotism, and remained as neutrals, wavering between each party, and acting as their personal safety seemed most to require. Many, calling themselves Whigs, were constantly endeavoring by covert means to blast the hopes and discourage the gallant few who were struggling at the side of liberty, by giving to their enemies that information of their situation and prospects which they had obtained by the most abject treachery. To destroy these evils required the greatest vigilance and severity on the part of the American commander. Early one morning, in the month of August, a party of the militia, three in number, brought a young man by the name of Palmer, whom they had taken on suspicion of his being a spy and having enlisting orders from Tryon, the British general then commanding in New York. The enormity of his offence was such, that if proved, it demanded the most vigorous punishment. A court martial was therefore immediately convened, and from the circumstances given to the court by those who arrested him, and the evidence of many of the country people, who gave an unfavorable account of his conduct, he was convicted and sentenced to be executed as a spy.

"The prisoner was a young man of athletic form, and possessed elegant attainments, had a wife and children then residing in Yorktown, the place of his nativity, and was connected with some of the most respectable families of West Chester. The most urgent intercessions were immediately made to obtain his release, but in vain; the stern justice of Putnam was not to be overcome by any feelings of pity. The British general wrote a letter to the American commander, demanding his prisoner, and threatening him with vengeance if a compliance with his demand was not immediately acceded to; but he received for answer that the prisoner was "taken as a spy, tried as a spy, convicted as a spy, and that he should be hung as a spy." Here the matter rested until the morning previous to

his execution, when the wife of Palmer presented herself before the commanding officer in his tent. She had come there with her child in her arms, to throw herself with humble submission at the foot of the man who by word, she thought, could relieve her aching heart of its load of misery. In the artless and winning eloquence of a bursting heart, she represented to him the awful situation in which she would be placed should the fearful sentence that had been passed upon her husband be carried into effect. She implored him, by every tie of affection that bound two young hearts together—for the sake of the infant she pressed to her bosom, who, if left fatherless, would wander through the world disgraced and an orphan—by his own feelings as a father and a husband, to have mercy on him who was all to her the world could bestow. Her tears, her deep distress and her passionate exclamations fell deep into the heart of the war-worn soldier; but they did not alter his stern resolve. With a dignity of purpose and a countenance that told how intense were the feelings then glowing within him, he told her he must die. Insensible she was carried from his presence and conveyed back to her friends. The following morning, at the hour appointed for his execution, on an enclosed spot of ground near the summit, on the eastern side of the hill, was seen a gallows rudely constructed of logs with a rope appended hereto. The trees and fences were filled with men, women and children who had come far and near to witness the awful scene; and the prisoner was led out to the appointed spot where his last view of the world was taken, and prepare his mind for its sudden transit into eternity. It is but just to say, that whether hung guilty or innocent, he met his fate with the fortitude of a man. The body, after being suspended a suitable time, was taken down and given to his friends for interment."

Such is the story of Gallows Hill. The sad fabric of logs which had been raised for his execution remained standing for several years after the war, an object of dread and superstition to the more ignorant of the country people whose daily avocations compelled them to pass it.<sup>a</sup>

The summit of Gallows Hill embraces a fine view of the river, the scenery of the race and surrounding country. The remains of Fort Look Out are situated on the adjoining hill. During the revolutionary contest, the village of Peekskill appears to have suffered severely from the enemy's incursions. "Before the British army took the field, for the third campaign of 1777, (says Mr. Smith) two enterprizes for the destruction of American stores were undertaken. Col. Bird landed with about 500 men at Peekskill, March 23, fifty miles from New York. The few Americans who were stationed as a guard at this place, on the approach of the British, fired the principal store-houses and retired. The loss of the provisions was considerable."<sup>b</sup> "September, 1777, the enemy came out on both sides of the Hudson simultaneously in considerable force, consisting from two to three thousand men, on which occasion

<sup>a</sup> Westchester and Putnam *Republican*, may 14th, 1833.

<sup>b</sup> *Military Repository*, by Charles Smith.

the American barracks and store-houses, *and the whole village of Peekskill was sacked and burnt* and the country pillaged."<sup>a</sup> The *Weekly Mercury* of Feb. 16th, 1778, (published by Hugh Gaines,) contains a letter from Commodore Hotham to Vice Admiral Lord Viscount Howe, which by his lordship was transmitted to all ships in service, &c., dated on board his Majesty's ship the Preston, lying off Peekskill creek. Major Burr was stationed at Peekskill on the 21st July, 1777, when he received a lieutenant colonel's commission in the continental army, and from this place the traitor Arnold likewise received his appointment to West Point, dated August the 3d, 1780.

In the village of Peekskill was born John Paulding, one of the American farmers who intercepted Andre the British spy, at Tarrytown, some fifteen miles below this place. For his services on this occasion the State presented him with a farm situated within the town of Cortlandt. The property now belongs to Jacob Strang.

The following abstract is taken from a deed given by Samuel Dodge, Daniel Graham, and John Hotham, commissioners of forfeitures for the middle district of New York, to John Paulding, of Cortlandt Manor:

"For and in consideration of the services John Paulding, of Cortlandt Manor, in the County of Westchester, hath rendered his country, in apprehending and securing the British deputy adjutant Gen. Major Andre, who was returning to New York after having in the character of a spy concerted measures with the infamous Benedict Arnold, then commanding at the posts in the Highlands, for betraying the said posts into the hands of the enemy, and for his virtue in refusing a large sum of money offered by the said Major Andre as a bribe to permit him to escape; and for and in consideration of the sum of five shillings lawful money of the State of New York, and for the further sum of twenty-five pounds ten shillings like lawful money of the said State, by the said John Paulding paid into the treasury of the said State, the said commissioners by virtue of the powers and authorities in and by the several acts to them given, hath by their deed bearing date on the 16th day of June, 1783, granted and sold unto the said John Paulding all that certain tract or parcel of land, situated in the manor of Cortlandt, in said county of Westchester, and State aforesaid, now in possession of said John Paulding, and is commonly known by lot No. 14 in great lot No. 1, containing 100 acres.

"Also, another tract, part of farm No. 13, in great north lot No. 1. containing 21 acres. Also, another part of farm No. 13, in great lot No. 1, and is part of the land which Palatiah Haws purchased for Thomas Lee in Magragaria swamp, 10 acres. Also, another part of farm No. 15, a part of great north lot No. 1, 37 acres."<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Burr's Mem., Vol 1. 180.

<sup>b</sup> County Rec. Register's Office, abstract of sales, p. 187.



168 acres, 16 rods of lands, appraised for . . . . .	£529 10 0
Gratuity allowed by law . . . . .	500 0 0
	<hr/>
Excess from him received,	£29 10 0

John Paulding died on the 18th of February, 1818. A few minutes before the Patriot expired, he called Dr. Fountain, (his medical attendant,) to the bedside, and thus addressed him:—"Doctor, please tell all those who ask after me, that I die a true republican." Paulding's remains repose beneath a handsome monument in the Episcopal graveyard, two miles north of the village.

Upon the north side of Gallows Hill, by the road side leading from Peekskill to Albany, is situated the "Soldier's Spring," which derived its name from the following tragical incident:—

"The British who were in possession of Stony Point, and whose shipping lay in the bay of Haverstraw, resolved upon landing a portion of their men on Verplanck's Point, and from thence make a descent upon Peekskill. Their object in this expedition was to procure fresh provisions and to awake the energies of the Americans who were encamped in the village and in various places among the hills in the vicinity. In accordance with this resolve they effected a landing and proceeded without opposition to Drum Hill, an eminence that overlooks the village near its southern boundry. Here they commenced cannonading with two small field pieces which they had brought with them, while their light troops entered the village by another road higher up the river. The Americans unprepared, and withal too weak to resist so formidable a foe, were obliged after a short resistance to fly to the interior. Their enemies from the commanding points which they occupied, kept up a constant firing upon them as they sought the various avenues of retreat. It was at this period that a soldier in his flight stopped for a moment to refresh himself at the spring. While on his hands and knees in the act of drinking, a ball which struck on an eminence above him, glanced obliquely, and descending the road with rapid bounds, finished its course by shattering the thigh of the exhausted soldier, and burying itself in the ground beyond. Unable to move, he lay bleeding and in agony, until a wagon filled with provisions hastily collected by a bold and resolute man ere they left the scene of commotion, passing by, he was perceived by those who followed after, who immediately picked him up and placed him thereon. They conveyed him as far as Fishkill village, nineteen miles distant; but loss of blood and the fatigue of his journey, prostrated the powers of nature, and though he received surgical aid, survived but a few hours."<sup>a</sup>

A short distance north of Peekskill is Cortlandtville; here is located the property and residence formerly of Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt, now owned and occupied by James Robertson. The former occupant derived his title to this portion of the manor from his brother Gilbert, heir of his grand-aunt Mrs. Gertrude Beekman. The old brick mansion,

<sup>a</sup> Westchester and Putnam Republican, August, 1838.

erected A.D. 1773, occupies a very sequestered and romantic spot on the north side of the post road, immediately above Peekskill Hollow. At one period of the Revolution it was occupied by the American commander-in-chief, as head-quarters. Here, too, the Van Cortlandt family for some time found a safe asylum amid surrounding desolation.

In this house General McDougal posted his advanced guard, when the British took possession of Peekskill, March, 1777. The following account of the subsequent engagement with the enemy, is extracted from the Connecticut *Journal* of April 2d, 1777:

"Fishkill, March 27.—Our post at Peek's-kill, since the removal of the militia of the eastern States has been, in a manner, in a defenceless situation; there being only part of two regiments stationed there, under the care of Gen McDougal, amounting to about 250 men. The enemy having received intelligence of this formed an expedition thither, with a view to take or destroy the stores belonging to the continentals, that were deposited there. Accordingly, on Sunday last they appeared with a frigate, four transports and several other small vessels in the bay, and landed about 1000 men, with several pieces of cannon.

"General McDougal not thinking it prudent to hazard a battle with such an unequal force, and not having reasonable advice of the enemy's movement, was under the necessity of destroying their stores in order to prevent their falling into their hands, and retired about two miles into the pass in the highlands, carrying with him his baggage and military stores, his advanced guards being stationed at Cortlandt's house in the valley. The enemy, the same day, took possession of the village, and remained close in their quarters until the next day in the afternoon, when a party of them, consisting of about 200 men, possessed themselves of a height a little south of Cortlandt's. The general having received a reinforcement from Col. Gansevoort's regiment, of about 80 men, under the command of Lieut. Colonel Willet, permitted them to attempt to dispossess the enemy from that eminence. Col. Willet having accordingly made the necessary disposition, advanced with his small party with the greatest firmness and resolution, and made the attack. The enemy instantly fled, with the greatest precipitation, leaving three men dead on the field; and the whole body, panic struck, betook themselves to their shipping, embarking under cover of the night—and by the last accounts, they had sailed down the river. Before they embarked, they gave out they intended to stop at Tarrytown on their way down, and attempt to destroy our magazine of forage at Wright's mills. Upon their evacuating the place, Gen. McDougal took possession of his former quarters, and detached a party of men to watch their motions. The enemy on this occasion have been exceedingly disappointed, as they have not been able to carry off any stores left behind by our men, and no other flock than about forty sheep and eight or ten head of cattle, with which they were supplied by our good friends the tories. Never did troops exhibit more firmness and resolution than did our army on this occasion. Notwithstanding the disparity of numbers was great, and the measure absolutely necessary, it was with the utmost reluctance they retired to the pass. As usual, these heroes of Britain have burnt some houses, plundered the inhabitants of what they could conveniently take with

them, frightened the women and children, and raised the spirits of their tory brethren in that quarter; but which, alas, as is always the case when unnaturally elevated, are now again proportionably depressed."

The old oak tree east of the Van Cortlandt residence, served the purpose of a military whipping post.

Upon the summit of a high knoll, south-east of the late residences of Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt, stands the old parochial church of St. Peter in which occasional services are held. Adjoining it on the north-east is the Cortlandt cemetery, facing the Westchester and Dutchess county Turnpike.

A short distance from Cortlandtville, near Locust avenue is "Rest Hill," upon the summit of which the Rev. Henry Ward Beecher is now erecting a splendid stone residence. From this point a most magnificent view is obtained of the village of Peekskill in the gorge below, the mountains bounding the horizon on three sides and the Hudson winding like a tangled belt of silver at their bases. Northward the hill falls precipitously into the valley, and through that valley winds the Annsville creek and Canopus or Sprout brook. On a green slope, really about three miles distant, but apparently almost at the foot of "Rest Hill," is the old church of St. Peter's, just alluded to and the cemetery.

The village of Annsville, in this town, is delightfully situated near the mouth of the Peekskill creek, one mile north of the village of Peekskill. This place formed a part of the Indian territory Wishqua, where was anciently an Indian fort and village. Upon the survey of the manor of Cortlandt, Annsville and lands adjoining, constituted a section of lot No. 10, the river portion of Gertrude, wife of Col. Henry Beekman and fifth daughter and devisee of De Heer Stephanus Van Cortlandt. This portion of her estate she subsequently devised to her nephew Gilbert Van Cortlandt, who in 1784, bequeathed it to his loving brother Pierre Van Cortlandt.

Here are situated an extensive snuff and wire factory, both propelled by water power, and the chemical works; also some thirty dwellings. The Peekskill Blast Furnace is located on the Annsville creek and is connected with the Croft iron mines by a railway built for the purpose by which the furnace is supplied with a superior quality of iron ore at a small cost of transportation.

The scenery of the Peekskill creek is remarkably rich and diversified. This picturesque stream rises 14 miles north of Annsville, in the town of Kent, Putnam county, south-west of Annsville; it receives the waters of the Canopus, (sprout creek,) a current of water which derives its source from Horton's lake, called by the Indians the "Fire-Fly Lake,"

a name derived from that beautiful insect whose bright phosphorescence illumines the humid valleys and dark woods of a summer's evening. The Indian children of the west have the following exquisite chant to this flitting white-fire insect as they denominate it:—

“Fire-fly, fire-fly, bright little thing,  
Bright little fire bug, night's little king.”  
—*Schoolcraft's Oneota.*

Near the banks of the Canopus, or Peekskill hollow, is situated the site of the old Continental village, which once contained barracks for 2,000 men. The following account of its destruction is given in the dispatches of Gen. Sir William Howe to Sir Henry Clinton, dated Fort Montgomery, October 9, 1777.

“The little army consisting of about 3,000 men arrived off Verplanck's Point, preceded by the gallies under the command of Sir James Wallace. On our appearance the enemy retired without firing a shot, leaving a 12-pounder behind them; and Sir James moved up to Peekskill creek to mark the only communication they had across the river on this side the Highlands.”

“P.S.—Major Gen. Tryon was detached this morning with Emmerick's chasseurs, 50 yagers, and royal fusiliers and regiment of Trumbach, with a three-pounder to destroy the rebel settlement called the *Continental village*, has just returned and reported to me, that he has burned the barrack for 1,500 men, several store-houses and loaded wagons. I need not point out to your excellency the consequence of destroying this post, as it was the only establishment of the rebels on that part of the Highlands, and the place from whence any body of troops drew their supplies.”<sup>a</sup>

The Hudson River Rail Road Bridge now crosses the mouth of the Peekskill creek near Annsville, where the old bridge formerly stood, leading to Roa or Rahway Hook. The total length of the latter, which was built of wood, was fourteen hundred and ninety-six feet. Upon the highest ground of Rahway Hook stood “Fort Independence Hotel,” erected by Col. Pierre Van Cortlandt some years ago. From its elevated position this spot commands a most extensive prospect of the Hudson River and the adjacent country. To the north, rise the majestic Highlands, on the west the race and the towering Dunderbarrack. To the south the waters of the Peekskill bay resemble a vast lake bounded by the Mountains of Rockland and Stony and Verplanck's Points, while on the east appears the village of Peekskill and the Cortlandt hills. In the rear of Col. Van Cortlandt's are situated the remains of Fort Independence, whose history is so in-

<sup>a</sup> Supplement to H. Gaines' *Military Gazette*, Feb. 9, 1778, No. 1372.



separably interwoven with the stirring events of the Revolution. A small portion of its embankments and trenches are yet to be discerned. The whole is shaded by a luxuriant grove of native pines. The solitude of this delightful spot is occasionally disturbed by the moaning of the wind among the trees,

And hark! as it comes sighing through the grove,  
The exhausted gale, a spirit there awakes,  
That wild and melancholy music makes.

Circuituous paths lead to the landing, while the table land to the east is heavily bordered with the ash, maple, cedar and towering oak.

Hudson, the discoverer of the North River, appears to have been much struck with the first sight of this high and mountainous region.

"It appears from his journal," says Moulton, "that he was not inattentive to the rapid and astonishing elevation of a district of country which, in the course of less than sixty miles, increase from a few feet above the water level<sup>a</sup> to the lofty height of fifteen hundred feet.<sup>b</sup> Sailing leisurely, he had full opportunity to contrast the appearances of the opposite shores. On the left he had the sublime prospect of the pallisade rocks, whose dark columnar front, like a towering battlement, with here and there a projection like the salient angle of a bastion, presented perpendicular elevations from three to five hundred feet, and, ranging more than thirty miles uninterrupted, (except by the valley of the Nyack,) it at last exhibited an altitude of nearly seven hundred feet,<sup>c</sup> and then vanished from his sight on the remote, but still more elevated range of the High Tourn and Tourn mountains. On the right he beheld a comparatively low but undulating border, which, in the luxuriance of autumnal foliage, afforded a striking contrast and a pleasing relief as he turned from the sublimity and barrenness of the opposite cliffs. Onward he perceived the river in its first course of thirty miles, very gradually widening until it suddenly presented the broad expanse of a bay ('Tappaanse Zee.') Then as he passed into another, (Haverstraw,) and viewed the insuperable barriers of mountains that lay before him, he considered his discovery terminated; until, in searching for a passage, he found one which proved to be the continuation of a river, now serpentine in its course, deepening and narrowing, until it brought him to 'where the land grew very high and mountainous.' Here he anchored for the ensuing night. This was directly opposite West Point."<sup>d</sup>

"The Dunder Berg (Thunder Mountain), that rises so grandly at the turn of the river opposite Peekskill village, was so named because of the frequent thunder-storms that gather around its summit in summer. 'The captains of the river-craft,' says Irving, in his legend of the Storm-ship, "talk of a little bulbous-bottomed Dutch goblin, in trunkhose and sugar-loaf hat, with a speaking trumpet in his hand, which, they say, keeps the Dunder Berg. They declare that they have heard him in stormy weather, in the midst of the turmoil, giving

<sup>a</sup> At Bergen Point.

<sup>b</sup> At the head of the Highlands.

<sup>c</sup> South peak of Vredideka Hook.

<sup>d</sup> Moulton's Hist. of New York, pp. 238-239.

orders in low Dutch for the piping up of a fresh gust of wind, or the rattling off of another thunder-clap. Sometimes he has been seen surrounded by a crew of little imps in broad breeches and short doubtlets, tumbling head over heels in the rock and mist, and playing a thousand gambols in the air, or buzzing, like a swarm of flies about Anthony's nose; and that at such times the hurry-scurry of the storm was always greatest.' The romancer tells us that at one time a terrible thunder-gust burst upon a sloop when passing the Dunder Berg, and she was in the greatest peril. Her crew saw at the mast head a white sugar-loaf hat, and knowing that it belonged to the goblin of the Dunder Berg, dared not climb to get rid of it. The vessel sped swiftly through the Highlands into Newburg Bay, when the little hat suddenly sprung up, whirled the clouds into a vortex, and hurried them back to the Dunder Berg. "There is another story told of this 'foul-weather urchin,'" says the romancer, "by Skipper Daniel Ouselestick, of Fishkill, who was never known to tell a lie. He declared that, in a severe squall, he saw him seated astride of his bowsprit riding the sloop ashore, full butt against Anthony's Nose, and that he was exorcised by Dominie Van Giesen, of Esopus, who happened to be on board, and who sang the hymn of St. Nicholas, whereupon the goblin threw himself up into the air like a ball, and went off in a whirlwind, carrying away with him the night-cap of the Dominie's wife, which was discovered the next Sunday morning hanging on the weather-cock of Esopus church steeple, at least forty miles off." Not many years ago the engine of an immense pumping apparatus of a coffer-dam was in operation at the foot of the great hill at a place called Caldwell's Landing. The story of that coffer-dam, in all its details, forms one of the most remarkable of the romances of the Hudson. It may only be given here in faint outline.

Many years ago an iron cannon was by accident brought up by an anchor from the bottom of the river at that point. It was suggested that it belonged to the pirate ship of Captain Kidd. A speculator caught the idea, and boldly proclaimed, in the face of recorded history to the contrary, that Kidd's ship had been sunken at that point with untold treasures on board. The story went abroad that the deck had been penetrated by a very long auger, which encountered hard substances, and its thread was shown with silver attached which, it was declared, had been brought up from the vessel. The story was believed, a stock company was formed to procure the treasures by means of a coffer-dam around the sunken vessel. For days, weeks and months, the engine worked on the coffer-dam. One New York merchant put \$20,000 into the enterprise. The speculator took large commissions, until the hopes of the stockholders failed and the work ceased. Nothing may be seen there now but the ruins of the works so begun, close at the water's edge. At that point a bateau was sunk by a shot from the Vulture while conveying the captured iron cannon from Stony Point to West Point after the victory by Wayne. The cannon brought up by the anchor was doubtless one of these.

Anthony's Nose, opposite, has a bit of romance in the legendary story of its origin. We are told by the veracious historian, Knickerbocker, that on one occasion Anthony the Trumpeter, who afterward disappeared in the turbulent waters of Spuytden Duyvel-Kill, was with Stuyvesant on a Dutch galley passing up the river. Early in the morning Anthony, having washed his face, and thereby polished his huge fiery nose, whose flames came out of flagons, was lean-

ing over the quarter railing, when the sun burst forth in splendor over that promontory. One of its brightest rays fell on the glowing nose of the trumpeter, and reflecting, hissing hot, into the water, killed a sturgeon. The sailors got the dead monster of the deep on board. It was cooked. When Stuyvesant ate of the flesh and heard the strange story of its death, he " marvelled exceedingly ; " and in commemoration of the event he named the lofty hill, which rises more than twelve hundred feet above the bosom of the river " Anthony's Nose." As the steamboat sweeps round the Donder Berg, with Anthony's Nose on the right, the theatre of one of the most interesting of the romances of the Hudson is presented in lofty Bear Mountain in front, Lake Sinnipink, or Bloody Pond, on a broad terrace at its base, and Poplopens Creek flowing into the river on the western shore between high rocky banks. Upon these banks lay Forts Clinton and Montgomery, the former on the south side of the creek and the latter on the north side.

These forts were built by the Americans for the defence of the lower entrance to the Highlands, against fleets of the enemy that might ascend the river ; for it was known from the beginning that it was a capital plan of the British Ministry to get possession of the valley of the Hudson, and so separate New England from the other colonies. In addition to these forts, a boom and chain were stretched across the river from Fort Montgomery to Anthony's Nose to obstruct the navigation.

We have observed that Clinton swept around the Donder Berg with a part of his army, and fell upon Forts Clinton and Montgomery. That was on the 7th of October, 1777. The brothers, Generals George (Governor) and James Clinton commanded the little garrison. They were brave and vigilant. It was not an easy task for the enemy to approach the fort through the rugged mountain passes, watched and attacked by scouting parties. They had divided, one party accompanied by the baronet, making their way toward evening, between Lake Sennipink and the river, there they encountered abattis covering a detachment of Americans. A severe fight ensued. The dead were thrown into the lake and it was called " Bloody Pond."

Both divisions now pressed toward the forts, closely infested them, and were supported by a heavy cannonade from the British flotilla. The battle raged until twilight ; overwhelming numbers of the assailants caused the Americans to abandon their works under cover of darkness and to flee to the mountains. Before leaving, they set fire to two frigates, two armed galleys and a sloop, which had been placed above the boom.

That conflagration was magnificent ; the sales of the vessels all set, and they soon became splendid pyramids of flame. Over the bosom of the river was spread a broad sheet of ruddy light for a great distance, and the surrounding mountains were brilliantly illuminated by the fire, which gave aid to the fugitives among the dreary hills. These features of the event, with the booming of the cannon on the loaded vessels when the fire reached them, answered by echoes from a hundred hills, produced a scene of awful grandeur never witnessed before or since on the borders of the Hudson. It was a wild and fearful romance, that ended in the breaking of the boom and chain, and passage up the river of the British squadron with marauding troops. These laid in ashes, many a fair mansion belonging to







republicans as far north as Livingston's Manor, on the lower verge of Columbia county."<sup>a</sup>

The late Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt, the proprietor of "Antonie's Nose," or St. Anthony's Nose, which lies in the north-west corner of Cortlandt-town, used to give another version for the origin of that name, which deserves to be recorded here:—

"Before the Revolution a vessel was passing up the river under the command of a Captain Hogans, when immediately opposite this mountain, the mate looked rather quizzically first at the mountain and then at the captain's nose. The captain, by the way, had an enormous nose, which was not unfrequently the subject of good-natured remark, and he at once understood the mate's allusion. 'What,' says the captain, 'does that look like my nose? call it then, if you please Antony's Nose.' The story was repeated on shore, and the mountain thenceforward assumed the name; and has thus become an everlasting monument to the memory of the redoubtable captain, Antony Hogans and his nose."

The elevation of Anthony's Nose is one thousand two hundred and twenty-eight feet from the level of the river, and directly opposite Fort Montgomery creek. From here to Fort Montgomery, which is now in ruins on the opposite side, the large boom and chain was extended during the Revolutionary war, which cost about seventy thousand pounds sterling. It was partly destroyed as we have seen by Gen. Sir Henry Clinton on the memorable 7th of October, 1777.<sup>b</sup>

"In the year 1672, orders arrived to Governor Lord Lovelace to put the Province in a state of defence. Upon this occasion a small fort was to be erected at Anthony's Nose, or near it on the North River."<sup>c</sup>

An enormous suspension bridge across the Hudson River is now being commenced at St. Anthony's Nose. The following statement is furnished by the engineer who is to superintend its construction:—"Clear span, 1,600 feet; length of bridge between the towers, 1,665; total length of bridge, including approaches, 2,499; height of bridge above high water, 155 feet; working safe load for the rail road lines, 2,400 tons; working safe load for highways, 2,880; total safe load for the bridge, 5,280; load that will break the bridge, 25,161. The bridge will carry at one time 32 passenger cars; the bridge would carry safely 38,569 people, and a train of 60 locomotives, if they could be all on it at once; 53 locomotives and 18,000 would

<sup>a</sup> The Romance of the Hudson. Harpers Mo. Mag, No. cccxi, April, 1876, vols. L, II, 647, 8, 9. About 30 years since, several cannon were raised from the sunken British vessels in the river, directly opposite Fort Independence, by the aid of diving-bells. A portion of the large chain which stretched across the Hudson, is still preserved at the Manor-house on the Croton.

<sup>b</sup> Letters on the Hudson.

<sup>c</sup> Dunlap's Hist. of New York, vol. i, p. 127.

fill it. There are to be 20 cables in 4 systems; each cable will be about 14 inches diameter; the cables contain 371,195,750 feet of steel wire, or about 70,302 miles of steel wire; total weight of iron and steel in the bridge, 17,005 tons; total amount of masonry, 58,084 cubic yards; total suspended weight, 9,651 tons; height of towers above water, 280 feet. The bridge will leave the water-way of the river untouched."

In early provincial times a tribe of Indians named the Wabingi, occupied the Highland, called by them Kettatenny Mountains. Their principal settlement, designated Wickapy, was situated in the vicinity of Anthony's Nose.<sup>a</sup>

Four miles south of Peekskill lies Verplanck's Point. This territory called by the Indians Meahagh, was bounded on the east by lands of Appamagpogh and the creek Meanagh, on the south by the same creek, on the west by the Hudson, and on the north by the creek Tammoesis.

Prior to 1683 the territory of Meahagh belonged to Siecham the great sachem of Sachus and other Indians, a clan of the Mohegans or "Enchanted Wolf Tribe," who sold the same to De Heer Stephanus van Cortlandt. At the death of Stephanus it passed by will to his oldest son Johannes second lord of the Manor of Cortlandt, and afterwards descended by marriage to Philip Verplanck, from whom the neck acquired its present appellation. This individual married Gertrude, only daughter and heiress of the above Johannes.

In 1734, Verplanck's Point (consisting of one thousand acres) was held by John Lent, who paid therefor the yearly rent of one pepper-corn on the feast day of St. Michael the archangel.

The Verplanck's subsequently sold the Point to John Henry and others, for the sum of nearly \$300,000.

The Verplanck family descend from Abraham Jacobsen Verplanck, of New Amsterdam, whose son, Gulian, was a wealthy merchant of the same place in 1683. The son of Gulian was Philip Verplanck, of Verplanck's Point.

This branch of the family is now represented by Philip Verplanck, Esq., of New Windsor, grandson of the last mentioned Philip.

John Henry, Esq., held five hundred acres upon which is situated the old Verplanck residence. The mansion of the late William Lyell,

---

<sup>a</sup> Moulton's Hist. of New York, p. 271, see note.

<sup>a</sup> Abram Planck or Verplanck, was a farmer at Paulus Hoeck and one of the "Twelve Men" under Geritom Kieft in 1641. The "Twelve men" were all Hollanders or emigrants from Holland." Brodhead's Hist. of the State of N. Y., vol. i. p. 317. The late venerable Gulian C. Verplanck of New York who was born Aug. 6, 1756, and died March 18, 1870, was of this family.

Esq., who married the widow of the late Buckman Verplanck, Esq., is delightfully situated in the midst of the beautiful woodland scenery.

Verplanck's Point has ever been admired for the variety and exquisite beauty of its scenery, and in some places it is thickly covered with luxuriant woods. The line of the Hudson River Railroad passes through the "Deep-Gut," a singular phenomena, which traverses the neck for some distance.

The village of Verplanck is now laid out in avenues and streets, from Lent's cove on the north to Green's cove on the south, and bounded on the west by the Hudson. Here is a station of the Hudson River Railroad, a convenient steam-boat landing, post-office, taverns, stores and numerous dwelling houses, one Methodist Episcopal church and one Roman Catholic church, besides nine brick yards, three of which are owned by Mr. Rosalic Blakely, and the others by the Hudson River Brick Manufacturing Company, viz: Daniel J. Haight, John Morton, John Candee and Charles Shultz. These nine yards employ about 400 men and manufacture about 375,000 bricks per day, involving an expenditure for labor of about \$78,000 for the brick making season of 130 days. A beautiful lake has been erected within the village through the indefatigable exertions of James A. Whitbeck, Esq. The spot occupied by the lake was formerly an unsightly morass, 97 acres in extent, and was overflowed for the purpose not only of beautifying the surrounding country, but also in order to prevent malaria. It is now owned by the Knickerbocker Ice Company of New York, which cuts about 75,000 tons of ice during the season.

Near the western extremity of the Point is the site of Fort Fayette, which, July 22d, 1779, was garrisoned by one thousand British troops, under the command of Gen. Vaughan. "Twenty-third of June, 1779," remarks Gen. Heath, "the British were now in possession of both the points at King's Ferry, and a number of transports had lain in the river for some time. The advanced posts of the Americans at this time, on this side, did not extend lower than Peekskill," &c <sup>a</sup> "On the 27th," continues the same authority, "a deserter came in from Verplanck's Point, who reported that the British Army, except five or six regiments, were to leave the points, and were then embarking. Soon after upwards of thirty sail of transports were seen standing down the river. The British had a sloop at anchor off Peekskill Landing and a ship off the Dunderberg. Lest the enemy meant a deception, the Americans were ordered to lie on their arms, and a regiment extra was ordered to advanced on the heights.

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 205.



"On the 28th, three deserters, one a Hessian musician with his horn, came in from the enemy. They confirmed the testimony of the former deserter, that the body of the British army had left the points."<sup>a</sup> On the 2d of July, Col. Rufus Putnam reconnoitered the enemy's positions at Verplanck's and Stony Points."<sup>b</sup>

Subsequent to the brilliant attack and capture of Stony Point under General Wayne, 13th of July, 1779, it was resolved to attack this post, "Stony Point, (says Gen. Heath,) having been taken with so much *éclat* to the American arms, Gen. Washington determined an attempt on Verplank's Point, on the east side of the Hudson, and opposite to Stony Point. For this purpose Major Gen. Howe with two brigades and some 12-pounders on travelling, was ordered to proceed by the way of Peekskill, throw a bridge over the creek, move on the point, and open batteries on the enemy's works, while a cannonading and bombardment was kept up across the river from Stony Point."

July 17, 1779, at about 10 o'clock, A.M., General Heath while out reconnoitring, received by express from Gen. Washington, orders to move as expeditiously as possible to Peekskill, where he would find Gen. Howe with two brigades. Gen. Heath was to take command of the whole, and carry into effect the orders which had been given to Gen. Howe. Gen. Heath returned immediately to the troops, and at 12 o'clock began to march towards Peekskill—marched until dusk, 15 miles, when the troops halted and laid down to rest on the side of the road, the dragoons not unsaddling their horses.

At 3 o'clock the next morning, the troops resumed their march, and in the afternoon Gen. Heath received information from Gen. Howe, by express, that Gen. Clinton was in full march with his whole army towards Verplank's Point. An answer was returned, at what point the troops then were, and that they were marching as fast as the men could endure, and would continue so until they reached him. When the troops had advanced a little to the westward of Drake's farm, Col. Mayland came up from Gen. Howe with information that a part of Clinton's army were then above the new bridge on Croton river, pushing for the Point; and that he was retreating from the Point as fast as possible. On this Gen. Heath ordered Gen. Huntington with his brigade and two field pieces to push forward as fast as the troops could march and keep in breath, and take a position on the high ground to the south of Peekskill, which commands the road to the Point, and also that to the new bridge on Croton river; and ordered a regiment to file off to the right and secure

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Memories, 206.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Memoirs, 207.

the pass over the hills between Drake's and Peekskill, and also ordered the flank guard on the left to be reinforced, and to send out small flank guards still further from its flank. The troops moved on with the utmost expedition to the ground which Gen. Huntington had been ordered forward to secure. Every moment that passed, was expected to announce the commencement of an action between the advanced or flanking parties of the two armies; but it did not take place. At this moment Gen. Washington, having learnt how matters stood, and that possibly Gen. Clinton might attempt to push into the Highlands, sent an express to Gen. Heath, to move into the Highlands immediately, which was done, just after dark, the troops passing the night on Bald Hill. It was generally of the opinion that if Gen. Heath had not been at hand to advance in the manner he did, that Gen. Clinton by a forced march of his light troops, backed by his army, would have got in the rear of Gen. Howe, before he could have possibly gained the road at Peekskill, and between his army and a sally from the garrison of Verplanck's Point, inevitably cut off the whole. Our troops at Stoney Point cannonaded and bombarded the enemy's works at Verplanck's during the whole day, and until near midnight. The post was then evacuated, and the Washington galley was blown up.<sup>a</sup>

On the 2d of October, 1779, the enemy at Verplanck's Point, opened a number of pits about five feet deep, and from four feet over, with a sharp stake in the middle, around the outside of the abattis.<sup>b</sup>

October 21st, 1779, three deserters came in from Verplanck's Point, and reported that the enemy were on the point of evacuating their works. The officer commanding the advanced picket, soon after sent information that the works appeared to be on fire, and the shipping standing down the river. Major Waldbridge, who commanded the advanced picket, immediately sent a detachment to take possession of the works. Several loaded shells, left by the enemy in places where the fire would come to them, burst, but did no harm. The enemy left one horse, a few old entrenching tools, and some other trifles at the Point.<sup>c</sup>

Colonel Livingston held command of this post in 1780, when Arnold came there for the purpose of carrying on his treasonable correspondence with Andre.

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 211. Mrs. Hannah Hoagh, aged 86, Oct. 31, 1845, says—"My father in the beginning of the war lived at Verplanck's Point, and afterwards at Tarrytown, and we were repeatedly plundered both by Cow-boys and Skinner's. Isawye British army, when they landed at Teller's Point and marched up (in 1779 probably). They were encamped one night on Collabergh Hill, a short distance east of ye post road, and marched ye next day to Verplanck's Point. The British cavalry encamped one night or so on ye hills near New Castle Corner. McDonald MSS., in possession of George H. Moore, Esq., of N. Y. Hist. Society.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 218.

<sup>c</sup> Heath's Mem. 221.

Upon the south-west side of Verplanck's Point, was situated King's Ferry, the ancient pass to Rockland. The old sign-post placed at the head of the lane, leading to this ferry, bore the following direction:—

“DISHE HIS DI ROODE TOE DE KSHING'S FARRY.”

Upon the 30th of August, 1779, fifteen sail of the enemy lay at anchor near the King's Ferry.<sup>a</sup>

On the evening of September 22d, 1780, Major John Andre, the British spy, crossed the King's Ferry in company with Smith and the negro boy. William Van Wert, the ferry-master on this occasion, afterwards testified at Andre's trial, “that Mr. Smith crossed King's ferry from Stoney Point to Verplanck's Point, on the evening of a day in the week before last, in company with another man, and a negro boy was with him;—each of them had a horse. The day of the month I do not recollect. I have not seen the person since to know him. He had a black, blue or brown, great-coat on, a round hat, and a *pair of boots*. I did not hear any conversation pass between Mr. Smith and the person in the boat, neither did I hear Mr. Smith say which way he was going. Mr. Smith *seemed to hurry us a good deal*. Cornelius Lambert, Henry Lambert and Lambert Lambert, were boat-men along with me.”

Four or five miles below Verplanck's Point can be distinctly seen Smith's house, where the interview took place between André and Arnold, and where the latter gave the spy the fatal papers that proved his ruin.

It was at King's Ferry, about the middle of September, 1781, that the junction of the French and American armies took place. The French army crossed the Hudson River from Stoney Point to Verplanck's Point, where the American forces were paraded under arms to receive them.

In describing the scenery of this beautiful spot, Mr. N. P. Willis remarks: “It is not easy to pass and repass the now peaceful and beautiful waters of this part of the Hudson, without calling to mind the scenes and actors in the great drama of the Revolution, which they not long ago bore on their bosom. The busy mind fancies the armed gun-boats slowly pulling along the shore, and the light pinnacle of the Vulture flying to and fro on its errands of conspiracy, and not the least vivid picture to the imagination is the boat containing the accomplished, the gallant Andre and his guard, on his way to death. It is probable that he first admitted to his own mind the possibility of a fatal result while passing this very spot. A late biographer of Arnold, gives the particulars of a conversation between André and Major Tallmadge, the officer who

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 216.

had him in custody, and who brought him from West Point down the river to Tappan, the place of his subsequent execution: 'Before we reached the Clove, (a landing just below Verplank's Point,) Major André became very inquisitive to know my opinion as to the result of his capture. When I could no longer evade his importunity, I remarked to him as follows: "I had a much loved class-mate in Yale College by the name of Hale, who entered the army in 1775. Immediately after the battle of Long Island, Washington wanted information respecting the strength of the army; he went over to Brooklyn, and was taken just as he was passing the out-posts of the enemy, on his return. Said I, with emphasis, do you remember the sequel of his story? Yes, said André, he was hanged as a spy; but you, surely, do not consider his case and mine alike? I replied—yes, precisely similar; and similar will be your fate. He endeavored to answer my remarks, but it was manifest he was more troubled in spirit than I had ever seen him before.'" <sup>a</sup>

What a contrast does this scene present to the passage of the traitor himself, who, as soon as his villainy was ascertained, "mounted a horse belonging to one of his aids that stood saddled at the door, and rode alone, with all speed, to the bank of the river. He there entered a boat, and directed the oarsmen to push out to the middle of the stream. The boat was rowed by six men, who, having no knowledge of Arnold's intentions, promptly obeyed his orders. He quickened their activity by saying, that he was going down the river and on board the Vulture with a flag, and that he was in great haste, as he expected Gen. Washington at his house, and wished to return as expeditiously as possible to meet him there. He also added another stimulating motive, by promising them two gallons of rum, if they would exert themselves with all their strength. As they approached King's Ferry, Arnold exposed to view a white handkerchief, and ordered the men to row directly to the Vulture, which was now in sight a little below the place it had occupied when André left it. The signal held out by Arnold, while the boat was passing Verplank's Point, caused Col. Livingston to regard it as a flag-boat, and prevented him from ordering it to be stopped and examined. The boat reached the Vulture unobstructed in its passage; and after Arnold had gone on board and introduced himself to Capt. Sutherland, he called the leader of the boatman into the cabin, and informed him that he and his companions were prisoners. The boatmen, who had capacity and spirit, said they were not prisoners; that they came on board with a flag of truce, and under the same sanction they would return. He then appealed to the captain, demanding justice and a proper respect for the

<sup>a</sup> American scenery by Bartlett and Willis.



rules of honor. Arnold replied, that all this was nothing to the purpose; that they were prisoners and must remain on board. Capt. Sutherland, disdaining so pitiful an action—though he did not interfere with the positive command of Arnold—told the man that he would take his parole and he might go on shore and procure clothes and whatever else was wanted for himself and his companions. This was accordingly done the same day. When these men arrived in New York, Sir Henry Clinton, holding in just contempt such a wanton act of meanness, set them all at liberty."<sup>a</sup>

As soon as Washington had 'solved the mystery, "and the whole extent of the plot was made manifest, Hamilton was immediately ordered to mount a horse and ride to Verplanck's Point, that preparations might be made for stopping Arnold, should he not already have passed that post." "But Col. Hamilton's mission proved too late. It could hardly have been otherwise, for Arnold had got the start by six hours. He left his house about ten o'clock in the morning, and his treachery was not known to Washington till nearly four o'clock in the afternoon. When Hamilton arrived at Verplanck's Point, a flag of truce was coming, or had come from the Vulture to that post with a letter from Arnold to Washington."<sup>b</sup>

"The case of Col. Livingston is worthy of notice. He commanded at Verplanck's Point, and from the proximity of his post to the enemy, and several concurring circumstances, might be very fairly presumed to have been either directly or indirectly concerned in Arnold's manœuvres. By a very laconic letter, Washington ordered that officer to come to him immediately. Livingston expected, at least, a severe scrutiny into his conduct; being fully aware, though conscious of his innocence, that circumstances were unfavorable. But Washington made no inquiries into the past, nor uttered a syllable that implied distrust. He told Col. Livingston that he had sent for him to give him very special orders, to impress upon him the danger of his post and the necessity of vigilance, and to communicate other particulars, which could only be done in a personal interview. In conclusion he said it was a source of gratification to him, that the post was in the hands of an officer, whose courage and devotedness to the cause of his country afforded a pledge of a faithful and honorable discharge of duty. Let the reader imagine the grateful emotions of Col. Livingston, his increased esteem for his commander, and the alacrity with which, under such an impulse, he went back to his station of high trust and danger."<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, p. 241, 2-3.

<sup>b</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, 249.

<sup>c</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, p. 253.

One of the most interesting associations connected with this spot, is the recollection, that here were located the head-quarters of General Washington.

"On my return from the southward in 1782," says the translator of Chastellux, (who has thought proper to withhold his name,) "I spent a day or two at the American camp at Verplanck's Point, where I had the honor of dining with General Washington. I had suffered severely from an ague which I could not get quit of, though I had taken the exercise of a hard trotting horse, and got thus far to the northward in the month of October. The General observing it, told me he was sure I had not met with a good glass of wine for some time—an article then very rare—but that my disorder must be frightened away. He made me drink three or four of his silver camp cups of excellent Maderia at noon, and recommended to me to take a generous glass of claret after dinner; a prescription by no means repugnant to my feelings, and which I most religiously followed. I mounted my horse the next morning, and continued my journey to Massachusetts, without ever experiencing the slightest return of my disorder.

"The American camp here presented the most beautiful and picturesque appearance. It extended along the plain, on the neck of land formed by the winding of the Hudson, and had a view of this river to the south. Behind it the lofty mountains, covered with woods, formed the most sublime back-ground that painting could express. In the front of the tents was a regular continued portico, formed by the boughs of the trees in full verdure, decorated with much taste and fancy. Opposite the camp, and on distinct eminences, stood the tents of some of the general officers over which towered predominant that of Washington. I had seen all the camps in England, from many of which drawings and engravings have been taken; but this was, truly, a subject worthy of the pencil of the first artist. The French camp, during their stay in Baltimore, was decorated in the same manner. At the camp at Verplanck's Point we distinctly heard the morning and evening gun of the British at Kingsbridge."

Curiosity seizes with avidity upon any incidental information which fills up the bare outline of history. The personal history of Washington more particularly, wherever it has been traced by those who were in contact with him, is full of interest. Some of the sketches given by the Marquis of Chastellux, who passed this point of the Hudson on his way to Washington's head-quarters below, are very graphic:

"The weather being fair on the 26th," he says, "I got on horseback, after breakfast, with the General. He was so attentive as to give me the horse I rode on the day of my arrival. I found him as good as he is handsome; but, above all, perfectly well broke and well trained, having a good mouth, easy in hand, and stopping short in a gallop without bearing the bit. I mention these minute particulars, because it is the

General himself who breaks all his own horses. He is an excellent and bold horseman, leaping the highest fences, and going extremely quick, without standing upon his stirrups, bearing on the bridle, or letting his horse run wild; circumstances which our young men look upon as so essential a part of English horsemanship, that they would rather break a leg or an arm than renounce them.

"It was off Verplanck's Point that Hudson's vessel, the 'Half Moon,' came to an anchor on the 1st of October, 1609,<sup>a</sup>

"Here he was visited by the native Highlander's,<sup>b</sup> who came flocking to the ship, expressing their wonder and astonishment to behold a vessel so superior to their canoes, and weapons so much more terrible than their own. Anxious to carry away to their friends some part of this floating world of wonders, and not satisfied with the trifles they received in return for skins, one of the canoes with one man in it lurked about the stern with a thievish tardiness, notwithstanding he was warned off. Watching an opportunity, he at length crawled up the rudder into the cabin window, and stole a pillow and a few articles of wearing apparel. The mate, little anticipating that justice, though slow, is sure, and would follow him even to the Arctic circle, shot at the poor pilferer and killed him. The rest fled; panic struck, and in their precipitance, some leaped into the water. The ship's boat was manned and sent to recover the articles; one of those who had leaped into the water got hold of the boat for the purpose of overturning it, as was thought, but the cook stood ready with his sword, and with one blow cut off one of his hands, and he was drowned. This was the first Indian blood shed during the voyage. With this mighty revenge for a trifling injury, they returned to the ship, and weighed anchor near Teller's Point, off the mouth of Croton river, near the entrance into Tappan Sea."

Parsonage or Montrose's Point, sometimes styled "Parsonage Farm," is separated from Verplanck's Point, on the north, by the creek Meagagh. This Point or Farm, which originally consisted of one hundred and seventy-two acres, was held simply by permission or lease, under James Van Cortlandt, (the son of John, grandson of Stephen, the son of De Herr Stephanus Van Cortlandt,) by the consistory of the Dutch Reformed church, until at last the law of limitation had given the latter peaceable possession of the property, a claim which was strengthened by an order of the Court of Chancery issued in 1835-6 giving the consistory permission to sell. The "Parsonage Farm," was subsequently sold to Stephen Lent for the sum of \$2,750.<sup>c</sup> who disposed of it to different proprietors.

The old Dutch church, of Cortlandt Manor, stood on the Brotherson farm at Montrose's Point, now owned by Frederick W. Seward, Assistant

<sup>a</sup> Moulton & Yates Hist. N. Y., page 271.

<sup>b</sup> The Wickapoy Indians, whose principal settlements were in the vicinity of Anthony's Nose.

<sup>c</sup> Another account states that the title of the church became involved, after the Revolutionary war, and the property was sold to satisfy quit-rent.

Secretary of the United States, and others, quite near the residence of the former. This edifice which was probably erected in 1729-30, was still standing in 1793; but destroyed by fire soon afterwards. Prior to the building of the old church, the members of this society appear to have contributed one-fourth part towards the salary for the support of the Rev. minister at Philipsburgh, or Sleepy Hollow; for in the second Book of the church memoranda, at the latter place, occurs the following entry:—“A beginning will be made on the next page, but also by common accord it is resolved by the inhabitants of Philips, of one part and the respective inhabitants of the manor of Mr. Cortlandt, to wit, that the said communities will be holden (without having to move any exception against it) to pay and to deliver a legal fourth part, yearly, for divine service in the church here at Philipsburgh, in order that the Rev. minister of God’s word may and can receive in a better manner, his salary and satisfaction for his true performed service in the respective community. At Philipsburgh on the other side will be holding to satisfy the other three parts for the said divine service, for the satisfaction of the Rev. minister, and further they will be henceforth together and as one community, and members of the Christian church; and henceforth they will be annoted in the church memoranda book in such a manner as it will be called for.” The following list of communicants occurs soon after, dated April 21st, A. D. 1717, entitled:—“A continuation of the persons, members, living in the manor of Cortlandt and patent of Captain Dekay and Ryck Abrahamson. First, Sybout Herricksen Krankheyt and Geertje his wife, Jan Corne Van Texel and Annetj his wife, Francoy de Paw, Mathys Brower and Marretje his wife, Nathan Beesly and Esther his wife, Catharine Van Texel, wife of Hendrick Lent, Geertje Brouwer, wife of Samuel Brouwer, Hendrick Lent and Cornelia his wife, William Van Texel and Irynje his wife, Annetje Sybout, wife of Jan Beesly, Maria de Paw, wife of Abram Lent, Aeltje Brouwer, wife of Jeurisen Wall, Thunis, Kranckhyt and Sophye his wife, William Teller and Marietje his wife, Jeremy Gennuyss and Annetje his wife, Marrietje Blauvelt, wife of Ryck Lent, and Eljzabeth, the wife of Cornelis Michgrelzen.

Belonging to the Reformed Church of Cortlandtown, is a MSS. volume entitled:—“Kerkelyk Aantcken boek voor De Mannour Van Cortlandt,” that is, (“a church register for the manor of Cortlandt,”) containing a list of baptized infants, to which is appended the names of the parents and witnesses, &c. The first entry occurs June 3d, 1729; baptized Teunis, the son of Hendrick Brouwer and Jannetje Crankheit.

“The 28th day of June, 1760, ordained as consistory, Hermanus Gar-



dineir, Abraham Van Tessel, as elders, and Abraham Lent, as deacon, &c."<sup>a</sup> From the foregoing extracts it is evident that a district society was organized on Cortlandt manor as early as 1729, and that the first Church edifice was erected soon afterwards.

The present church which was built between the years 1795 and 1799 is located south-east of Verplanck's Point, near the King's Ferry Road and directly facing the Albany and New York turnpike. It is a neat structure of wood, with a tower and cupola, but its interior contains nothing worthy of notice—a lecture room and porch have been recently added. The tower contains a steel bell weighing 800 lbs., manufactured at Sheffield, England, presented by James R. Gibson and Mrs. A. G. Phelps as a memorial of Mrs. James R. Gibson of Cortlandtown—inscribed "Kathrina, 1874." A parsonage was erected on the glebe adjoining the church in 1854. The church now holds sixteen acres of land, a portion of which has been laid out in what is called "Cedar Hill Cemetery."

The following warrantee deed, which includes the site of the church and containing altogether an acre of ground was given on the 31st of March, 1795, by James Cockcroft, of the city of New York of the first part to the Elders and Deacons of the Reformed Dutch church of the town of Cortlandt, County of Westchester and State of New York, for the sum of five shillings good and lawful money of the State of New York to him in hand paid :

"All that certain piece or parcel of land situate lying and being in the Town of Cortlandt, County of Westchester and State of New York and is part of water lot (No. 7) adjoining Hudson's River, butted and bounded as followeth beginning at a small Bilberry Bush<sup>b</sup> on the west side of the Post Road leading from the City of New York to Peekskill thence south 62 degrees and 30 minutes west 3 chains and 90 links to a stake and stones, thence south 26 degrees and 30 minutes East three chains and 90 links to a stake and stone, thence north 62 degrees and 30 minutes east 3 chains and 90 links to the Post Road aforesaid, thence northerly by and with said road to the place of beginning containing 1 acre two quarters and three rods of land, together with all and singular the buildings, hereditaments, &c., belonging, &c. To have and to hold, &c.," "and also the said party, party of the 2nd part and their successors shall and may from time to time and at all times for ever hereafter peaceably and quietly have, hold, occupy, possess and enjoy, &c." JAMES COCKCROFT.<sup>c</sup>

Lydia, widow of James Cockcroft, afterwards married Charles White. To prevent any claim of dower that might hereafter have arisen, Charles

<sup>a</sup> Since the publication of the first edition of this work in 1847, the above register has been mutilated and now commences with deaths, Aug. 29, 1741. [EDITOR.]

<sup>b</sup> Amidst all the trimmings and changes the bilberry bush still flourishes and bids fair to be a lasting boundary to God's acre.

<sup>c</sup> County Rec. Reg. Office Book of Deeds, Lib. Y. p. 253,

White and Lydia his wife gave the Dutch Reformed church on the 26th of December, 1799, a quit claim deed of which the following is an abstract :

"Between Charles White of the City of New York, merchant and Lydia his wife of the first part and Hercules Lent, Peter Goetschins, Abraham Lent, Martin Post, Richard Schiggel, Samuel Vessels, John H. Lent and Abraham Montross, the elders and deacons of the Reformed Dutch church of the Manor of Cortlandt in the County of Westchester and State of New York of the second part, for the sum of one dollar grants, confirms, &c., all the land before recited in Cockcroft's deed to the elders and deacons to the said parties of the first part their heirs and assigns for ever a pew nearly square, sufficiently large enough to contain ten persons in the church now erected on the said premises and likewise that the small building or school house also erected on the said premises shall always be and remain for the use of a public school, &c."

"CHARLES WHITE & LYDIA WHITE." <sup>a</sup>

It is claimed, however, that Mrs. White (alias Cockcroft) had previously conveyed seven hundred acres of land in water lot No. 7, extending from Hudson River to the Fumace woods on the coast to Stephanus Hunt, which included the church property; so that the Dutch Reformed church actually held under Hunt for some time by peaceable possession. Be this as it may, Elias Hunt, son of Stephanus, subsequently conveyed to this society the sixteen acres they now hold inclusive of the one acre, two quarters and three rods conveyed by Cockcroft in 1795.

In the cemetery surrounding the church are several monuments to the Lents, Montross's, Brinckerhoffs, &c., &c.; also a plain head stone inscribed as follows:—

"Sacred  
to the memory of  
DR. PETER GOETCHIUS,  
who died the 21st of Sept., A. D. 1828,  
aged 70 years, 5 months,  
and 20 days,  
having been for 35 years an elder  
of the Reformed Dutch Church in  
Cortlandtown, and died as he lived  
a Christian.

"The silent tomb and rising hillocks show,  
The way, the end of mortals here below;  
But silent tombs nor hillocks can affright  
The soul of him whose ways are just and right.  
How calm the righteous man with God his friend;  
Peace crowns his life, and happiness his end."

<sup>a</sup> Copied from original document in possession of the consistory of the Ref. Church, Cortlandtown.

The following minutes are extracted from the records of the New York Classis :—

Flatbush, April 24, 1792, the Rev. Classis "appoint the Rev. Mr. Jackson<sup>a</sup> to visit the congregation at the Cortlandt's manor, between this and the next session, and report to Classis the state of that congregation."<sup>b</sup>

Sept. 4, 1792, Mr. Jackson reports to Classis that he has fulfilled his commission, and finds the congregation have lost their church, diminished in number, and greatly dispersed.

*Resolved*, that Mr. Jackson shall again visit them as soon as convenient between this and next spring to organize the consistory, and to do any thing in his power to collect the congregation.<sup>c</sup>

April 30, 1793, Rev. G. A. Kuypers and Rev. Peter Stryker, each with an elder, appointed by Classis to visit the vacant congregations at Cortlandt's manor as soon as possible, in order to organize a consistory, &c., &c. Rev. Mr. Brush and Brouwer ordered to preach in their absence in their pulpits, and after they have accomplished their mission to repair to the same place, and preach there at least each one Sabbath.<sup>d</sup>

September 2, 1794, ordered that Mr. Jackson visit the congregation of Cortlandt manor, the second Lord's day September instant; also, that Mr. Schoonmaker visit said congregation once in the meantime between this and next meeting.<sup>e</sup>

Also ordered, that the Rev. Mr. Sickles in the course of this fall visit Peekskill, and apply to the Classis of Albany for recommendation to visit their vacancies.

1797, Rev. Mr. Lowe reports that he has fulfilled his mission to Cortlandt.

Mr. Abeel appointed<sup>f</sup> 1798. Mr. Abeel reports that he has fulfilled his appointment.

\* Ordered that the candidates now under the care of this Classis supply each one Sabbath at Cortlandtown, and that Mr. Jackson preach and administer the Lord's Supper once during the said time.

May 8, 1800, a call made out by the church of Cortlandtown upon the Rev. William Manly, was laid before the Classis for approbation. Upon reading the same, it was found to be in due form, and subscribed by three elders and four deacons, but not authorized by any minister as the moderator of the call. Dr. Peter Goetchijs, one of the subscribing elders, appearing before the Classis, attested to his own signature and that of the other subscribers, and gave sufficient reasons why a neighboring minister could not assist in completing the document. It was approved and endorsed.<sup>g</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> To this individual, (under God,) the Reformed Dutch Church in Cortlandtown is indebted for her re-establishment and present success.

<sup>b</sup> Rec. of N. Y. Classis, vol. 1, 110.

<sup>c</sup> Rec. of N. Y. Classis, vol. 1, 113.

<sup>d</sup> Rec. of N. Y. Classis, vol. 1, 123.

<sup>e</sup> Rec. N. Y. Classis, vol. 1, 143.

<sup>f</sup> Rec. N. Y. Classis, vol. 1, 187.

<sup>g</sup> Rec. N. Y. Classis, vol. 1, 221.

The Dutch Reformed Church of Cortlandtown was incorporated 30th December, 1794; first trustees, William Lent, Peter Goetchius, Hercules Lent, elders; Abraham Lent, Benjamin Dyckman, Jacobus Kronk-hite, deacons.<sup>a</sup>

To this church was formerly annexed the Van Nest Reformed Dutch chapel at Peekskill. A mission was commenced by the present pastor, 11th Nov., 1876, at Verplank's Point; land has been given for the erection of a chapel, and there is good prospect of success. Prior to the year 1801, supplies were obtained weekly from this church from New York.

#### LIST OF MINISTERS OF THE REFORMED DUTCH CHURCH CORTLANDT.

DATE OF INSTALMENT.	MINISTERS.	VACATED BY.
April, 1800,	Rev. William Manly, <sup>b</sup>	Death.
March 27, 1810,	Rev. Abraham Hoffman,	Resig.
October 21, 1831,	Robert Kirkwood,	"
October 3, 1836,	Rev. Cornelius Depew Westbrook, D.D.,	"
September, 1850,	Rev. Samuel Lockwood,	"
August, 1853,	Rev. John B. Steele,	"
1859,	Rev. John St. John,	"
1867,	Rev. Polhemus Van Wyck,	"
1870,	Rev. John C. Garretson,	"
1874,	Rev. John B. Thompson,	"
May 25, 1875,	Rev. Joseph Alexander Harper, present minister.	

One of the principal professors in this neighborhood in former times was Stephanus Hunt, son of Josiah Hunt of Flushing, L. I., who came originally from England. His two younger sons were Lewis Hunt who settled at Chappaqua, W. C. C. and Edmund Hunt. Stephanus the eldest purchased, as we have already had occasion to show, 700 acres of land in the manor of Cortlandt; and left four sons John, Daniel, Josiah and Elias, to each of whom their father set off 50 acres. Elias married Hannah, daughter of Dennis Lent Odel who is still living on a part of the old farm

Between Verplanck's Point and Crugers is Montross Point, where there is a small hamlet and several fine residences; there is a brick yard owned by John D. Karet and occupied by Cyrus Travis—employing about 25 men and disbursing some \$8,000 during the season. A little north, just below Verplanck's Point, are two brick yards owned by Charles Jones and occupied by Kelly and O'Brien—employing about 90 men, and paying out about \$20,000 per season.

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. A. p. 78.

<sup>b</sup> Brother of General Manly.



Near Cruger's, a short distance south from Montross Point is situated the Protestant Episcopal church called "The Church of the Divine Love." This edifice is substantially the work of the Rev. Gouverneur Cruger who was architect and also—to a large extent—builder. The church and its Sunday School, which are built of brick, cost about ten thousand dollars, and to it is attached a neat and commodious rectory also of brick. The corner stone of this building was laid by the Rev. T. L. Johnson, D.D., on St. Barnabas' day June 11th, 1869, and was consecrated by the Rt. Rev. Horatio Potter, D.D., on Friday, Sept. 15th, 1871. The chandeliers and lamps of elegant pattern and device, were the gifts of W. G. Kortright, Esq., of New York. The communion silver was presented by Mrs. Nicholas Cruger. The organ which cost eleven hundred dollars was built by Carhart & Needham, and was the gift of the Rev. Gouverneur Cruger. The font is of Caen stone with elaborate design. The tower contains a Meneely bell, of one thousand pounds. The Rev. Gouverneur Cruger is the rector.

At a short distance below Montrose, stands Boscobel House, so named from the splendid white oak trees which once surrounded it, after the old Boscobel House in England, which was also noted for its far famed oaks, the late residence of Staats Morris Dyckman, Esq., at present occupied by his grand-daughter, Elizabeth, wife of John P. Cruger. This house, erected in 1792, is built in the French style; and occupies a very pleasant spot on the brow of a high hill overlooking the river, the Island of Oscawana, and adjacent country. On the south-east is to be seen Croton Point, with Irvington in the distance; while far beyond looms up Dobb's Ferry, with Paulding Castle rising above it.

On the south is plainly visible the Clove, High Tarn, Haverstraw Bay and village—while on the west are fine views of Stony Point, Grassy Point and North Haverstraw. The grounds surrounding the mansion are greatly enriched with luxuriant woods and plantations. Just below at the foot of the terrace is a fine spring house, reached by a flight of stone steps. About seven years ago during a heavy drought, this perennial spring supplied the whole neighborhood with water. Overshadowing the top of the spring house is a venerable white oak four or five feet in diameter, while near by are groups of horse-chestnuts, originally imported in pots from England, also fine groves of locust trees. The beautiful Island of Oscawana, through which the Hudson River rail road passes by a tunnel, once formed a portion of the Cruger estate, but now belonging to Henry P. DeGraff, Esq.

Staats Morris Dyckman, the former proprietor, was the fifth son of

Jacob Dyckman<sup>a</sup> of Philipsburgh, and the protégé of Gen. Staats Morris, he was also for many years the private secretary of Sir William Erskine, (Commissary General of the British army) in which capacity he attended the latter to Europe. Sir William died in 1795, leaving a large and valuable property to his secretary.

Soon after the death of his friend, Mr. Dyckman returned to his native country, purchased the Boscobel estate, and erected the present mansion. After the Revolutionary war the English Government in gratitude for services rendered, presented Mr. Dyckman with a full set of diamonds, and a golden urn 18 inches high. As stated above, Elizabeth, wife of Col. John P. Cruger, was the daughter of Peter C. Dyckman, the son of Staats Morris, by his wife Eliza Kennedy. In the possession of Mr. Cruger, is a "loving cup," used for family christenings, brought from Ireland by James Kennedy, more than a hundred years ago; marked, "B. K."<sup>b</sup>

The library at Boscobel formerly contained a valuable collection of books, (amounting to 6,000 volumes) most of which were accidentally destroyed by fire, but twenty volumes still remain of the old collection.<sup>c</sup>

Among other rare books, are the modern part of a Universal History of London, 1781, in 65 volumes; "from the earliest accounts to the present time, compiled from original authors." The Annual Register, from 1750 to 1800, 44 volumes printed 1791, Encyclopedia Britannica, 20 volumes, London, 1797. Junins, in several volumes richly bound in vellum, 1797. An account of the preservation of King Charles II, after the battle of Worcester, drawn up by himself, &c., London, 1803 containing portraits of Charles the Second, Richard Penderell, Mrs. Jane Lane, His Excellency Lieut. Gen. Dalyell, of Brims, Commander-in-Chief of His Majesty's forces in Scotland, 1666-1685, Boscobel House with its timbered gables and tower, with antique garden. There are three volumes of Bible, Old and New Testament. British Theatre 34 volumes, 1795; Porcupine's Works, &c., by William Cobbett, 12 volumes, London, May, 1801; Orlando Furioso, translated from Italian by Judovico Ariosto, with notes by John Hoole, London, 1799; Jirmen Theatre, translated by Benjamin Thompson, Esq., in 6 volumes, London, 1801; Cook's Voyages, 8 volumes quarto, London, 1785; Bruce's Travels to discover the source of the Nile, 1768-1773, Edinborough,

<sup>a</sup> Jacob Dyckman resided on the Taite property situated on the road leading to King's Ferry on Verplanck's Point, near Green's Cove.

<sup>b</sup> The arms of Kennedy (Johnstown County Dublin, Bart.) Sa on a fesse ar. betw. three helmets close, a fox courant, ppr. Crest a demi arm embowed in armour ppr. holding a branch of oak—motto—Adhareo Virtuti.

<sup>c</sup> Some portions of the second library brought by Staats Morris Dyckman from England, were sold to Chancellor Livingston.

1790; A Discourse of the Liberty of Prophecy, by Jeremy Taylor, D.D., Chaplain in ordinary to His Majesty King Charles the First, and Bishop in time of Charles the Second of Downe and Connor in Ireland printed for R. Royston, 1647. This book contains not that prelate's real sentiments, but was designed to show what plausible arguments every sect and party of Christians had to say in favor of their particular opinions, &c." Works of Homer translated from the Greek into English verse by Alexander Pope in 7 volumes, London, Anno, 1794. Bell's Edition of William Shakespeare, printed complete from the text of Samuel Johnson and George Steeves, &c., London, 1785.

The pictures consist of the following: James Ogilvie (Earl of Findlater), by Stuart; this individual was the intimate friend of Mrs. Staats Dyckman and was a frequent visitor at Boscobel House, and teacher of Elocution in New York City. Mrs. Staats M. Dyckman or Eliza Corne grand-daughter of of Peter Cornè, by Jarvis; Miniature of Staats Morris Dyckman, Miniature of Peter Cornè, Miniature of Holy Family, by Michael Angelo; picture of Holy Family by Raphael, the latter was brought from England by Staats Morris Dyckman; Miniature in ivory of George the Third and Queen Charlotte executed by English prisoners in India.

The finding of Moses, Queen Charlotte as Pharaoh's daughter and attendants; another representing the drawing of Moses out of the water, the group of females representing the queen and attendants. Here is preserved Major John Andre's flute presented to Mrs. Cruger's grandfather; also a gold enameled snuff-box made of the veritable Boscobel oak in which Charles the Second was concealed in 165 containing a medallion of that monarch. The sconcers of cut glass are very fine, likewise the antique mantel-clock in French ormolu.

On the Boscobel estate is situated St. Augustine's chapel a small Gothic edifice of wood with porch and recess chancel, beautifully shaded with vines and trees. In the rear of this building are fine views of the river, the brick yards and village of Crugers. On the east is Hessian Hill which was occupied by the Hessians during the Revolutionary war.

The Island of Oscawana and neighboring shores immediately around Boscobel must have been favorite resorts of the Kitchawan Indians. Indian axes and pestles have been found in the gardens and clay banks adjoining, as well as several skeletons.

In the vicinity of Boscobel House is situated the small hamlet and landing of Cruger's, a name derived from the Cruger family, who have long possessed estates in the immediate neighborhood.

"John Cruger"<sup>a</sup> was the first of that name who "came from Germany to America previous to the year 1700, and resided in the city of New York. An old record in the possession of Mr. John C. Cruger, of Cruger's Island, Dutchess county, N.Y., says "From the traditionary account in the family and from the coat of arms which he brought with him, it is supposed he was descended from the family of Baron Von Cruger. The name of that family was always spelt with a C., while that of the commonality in Germany is spelt with a K." The name itself in its origin is a corruption, undoubtedly, of the Latin, Cruciger, or cross-bearer.

He was a merchant, a high-toned gentleman and a prominent citizen of New York during the first half of the eighteenth century. He was elected alderman of the Dock Ward in 1712, and held the office till 1733 inclusive—the long period of twenty-two years. In 1739 he became Mayor of the city, and remained in office till his death on 13th August, 1744.

He married in 1702, Maria, eldest daughter of Hendrick Cuyler of Albany, the first of that name in America, and Anne his wife, and had three sons Henry, John and Tileman. Tileman died a young man and unmarried."

"John, the youngest son who never married, was like his father, eminent as a merchant, and in political life." He was Alderman and Mayor of New York, Speaker of the Provincial Assembly, delegate to the famous Congress of 1765, with Messrs. Bayard and Lispenard, and first President of the Chamber of Commerce of New York. He died at Kinderhook in 1792.

"Henry Cruger, the eldest of the two surviving sons of John Cruger the first, who was born 25th November, 1707, in New York, resided for many years in that city, and was also in political life. He was a member of the Assembly from 1745 to 1759, and subsequently was appointed to the Council of the Province, and served till 1773, when he resigned and was succeeded by his eldest son, John Harris Cruger. In May, 1775, his health was impaired, he went to England and resided at Bristol with his second son, Henry, the Member of Parliament for that city. He died there in 1778, and lies buried in the centre aisle of the Bristol Cathedral. He married for his first wife, on 28th of September, 1734, a lady of Jamaica, the widow of Patrick Montgomery of that Island

---

<sup>a</sup> In the library of Mr. John C. Cruger, of Cruger's Island,, Dutchess county, is the Dutch family Bible of the first John Cruger, printed at Dort in 1688. The arms are from an ancient iron seal which belonged to John Cruger:—Argent a bend azure charged with three martlets, or, betw. two grayhounds courant proper—Motto—Deo non Fortuna—Crest—A demi grayhound saliant, gorged or, Motto—beneath the wreath—Fidis.



whose maiden name was Koughter or Slaughter: but she died without children. His second wife was a Miss Harris of the same Island, by whom he had four sons and two daughters. His eldest son was John Harris Cruger who succeeded his father in 1773 as one of the Governor's Council, he was also Chamberlain of the city of New York, and was commissioned Lieut. Colonel of the First battalion or regiment, General de Lancey himself, being the Colonel. After the war he went to England and resided at Beverley in Yorkshire, where he died without issue.

Henry Cruger, the second son, educated at King's College, N. Y., was in 1757 sent by his father to Bristol, England, to enter a counting-house. He became a successful and popular merchant of that city, which he made his home. In 1774, he and Edmund Burke were nominated for Members of Parliament for Bristol, and after a sharp contest, elected. He was also once Sheriff of Bristol, and in 1781 was elected its Mayor. In 1784, he was again elected to Parliament." In 1790 he declined re-election, having determined to return to America and reside there for the rest of his life, and in the same year came back with his family to his native city. He was soon engaged in politics, and notwithstanding his service in Parliament, and especially his re-election in 1784, after the peace of 1783, and subsequent service of about six years, he was, in 1792, elected a Senator of the State of New York, and served as such. His residence during the latter part of his life was at 382 Greenwich street, N. Y., where he died 24th of April, 1827, aged 88 years.

His first wife was Miss Peach, daughter of Samuel Peach the great Banker of Bristol, by whom he had one child, Samuel Peach Cruger, who subsequently took the surname of Peach, and was the late Samuel Peach Peach of Tackington House, Gloucester in England, who married a daughter of William Miles, of Leigh Court, near Bristol; they had one child, Emma Sarah, who married in 1820, Lord John Murray-Aynsley, a grandson of John Murray, Duke of Athol.

The second wife of Henry Cruger, was Miss Caroline Elizabeth Blair. Their eldest son was Henry H. Cruger who married Mary, daughter of Nicolas Cruger, his first cousin. Their second son was William Cruger, and their third son was John Cruger who was the father of Henry Cruger, the late Hon. Nicholas Cruger and Col. John Peach Cruger<sup>a</sup> of Boscobel House, Crugers, Westchester county, who possesses the large silver pitcher, presented by the citizens of Bristol, England, to his grandfather, the Hon. Henry Cruger, when a resident of that city.

---

<sup>a</sup> For most of the foregoing sketch relating to the Cruger's, we are indebted to an article in the *New York Gen. and Biog. Rec.* vol. vi, No. 2; entitled *Family Records, Cruger*. Contributed by Edward F. DeLancey.

Just south of Cruger's is the Island of Oscawana, now owned by Henry P. DeGraff, President of the Bowery Bank, who is so largely interested in property at Cruger's, and also owner of Iona Island. Mr. DeGraff is now erecting a splendid mansion of brick with suitable out-buildings, on the high grounds of Oscawana, overlooking the splendid scenery of the Hudson River. At Cruger's there are four brick-yards owned by John Peach Cruger, and occupied by D. J. Haight, employing about one hundred and twenty men, and paying out about \$23,400 for labor during the season. On George's Island, about one-half a mile above Cruger's, there are three brick yards employing about one hundred and twenty men, and occupied by William Tompkins, paying about \$25,000. A little to the north of this are two more brick yards, owned and occupied by Orrin Frost, employing about eighty men, and paying out about \$20,000 during the season. On the turnpike leading to Peekskill is the hamlet of Boscobel; here is a Methodist Episcopal church erected in 1868, of which the Rev. Mr. Blake is the present pastor. The celebrated Lieutenant William Mosier, or Mosher, of the Revolution, formerly resided in this neighborhood. His brother Abel Mosher, left a son Daniel whose son is the present Isaac Mosher of Boscobel.

A small mountain stream enters the Hudson near Boscobel called the Furnace brook, upon which stood the manorial mills, long since superseded by Ramsay's mill now owned by Mr. Phelps above Crugers; crowning the bold banks of the mountain torrent is situated the Cortlandt Furnace, which has given name not only to the brook but to an extensive tract of forest, consisting of 1,500 acres called the "Furance Wood," on the borders of which are numerous peat beds.

In the year 1760 a mining company was established in England, and German miners employed for the purpose of obtaining and smelting iron ore in this vicinity. It would appear, however, that the ore was not found here in sufficient abundance; for, at a vast expense, we find it subsequently transported from the Queensburg mine, in the forest of Dean, Rockland county, by the route of King's ferry, and melted in this furnace. But even in Rockland County the ore was not found in sufficient quantities to render it of any importance, so that prior to the Revolution, the enterprise was wholly abandoned, and the property sold to Mr. John Ramsay whose daughter married John Cruger, father of John P. Cruger. The furnace woods are now held by various proprietors. Mr. Benjamin Odell occupies the Ramsay residence and mill. The mansion house of the late Hon. Nicholas Cruger, who for several years represented this county in assembly, is delightfully situated near the land-

ing commanding from its elevated position, most extensive views of the river; and is now occupied by his widow.

Croton village in the lower part of this town is situated on the north side of the river of that name near its confluence with the Hudson. At the intersection of the New York and Albany Post Road with the road leading to the railroad station is the Protestant Episcopal church of St. Augustine. Episcopal services were also performed at the village of Croton, in this parish, by Mr. Wetmore in 1756, by the Rev. Mr. Dibble in 1761, and by the Rev. Mr. Punderson in 1763, who says, "that he preached a lecture there, the people giving a cheerful attendance, &c."

The lot on which it stands was the gift of Philip G. Van Wyck, Esq., a grandson of the late Lieutenant-Governor Pierre Van Cortlandt.

The Methodist Episcopal church, which was erected soon after the Revolutionary war (some say 1796-7), occupies a commanding position on a knoll overlooking the Albany and New York Post road. The land on which it stands, including the cemetery, consisting of four acres was the gift of the Hon. Pierre Van Cortlandt first Lieutenant-Governor of the State just previous to the erection of the church edifice. The Lieutenant-Governor is said to have joined the Methodist body through the influence of Mr. Freeborn Garretson who married his wife's cousin. This society are now erecting a new structure of brick which has already cost in the neighborhood of \$4,000; but the situation chosen is a very low one and far inferior to the site of the old structure. The present pastor is the Rev. Mr. Ronalds. The Friends Meeting-house is in the immediate neighborhood of the latter. Here is a convenient landing known as the Collabergh landing from whence sloops ply to the city of New York, and other places on the Hudson River. There is also the Croton landing, Depot of the Hudson River Railroad, telegraph station, Post Office, numerous fine dwellings and stores—together with five brick yards owned by Mr. Philip G. Van Wyck, Col. Pierre Van Cortlandt and Mr. John Cocks, and occupied by Geo. W. Morton, Nicholas Mehrhoff & Bro., and George J. Barlow, employing about 150 men and paying out some \$35,000 per season. To the east of Croton village, the Collabergh mountains—a high ridge encompassed by woods—towers far above the surrounding hills, at the foot of which is situated the Collabergh pond (a beautiful sylvan lake in miniature) supplied by never-failing springs of pure water.

Near the mouth of the Croton River stands the Cortlandt Manor House, late the residence of Gen. Philip Van Cortlandt, but now in possession of his nephew, Col. Pierre Van Cortlandt. This venerable mansion, one of the oldest edifices now remaining on the borders of the

Hudson was built soon after the erection of the Manor by Johannes Van Cortlandt, eldest son of De Hur Stephanus Van Cortlandt first lord of the Manor. Although tradition says that when Van Cortlandt purchased from Governor Thomas Dongan, in 1683-4, the domain of Kitchawan, the latter had already begun improvements, intending to complete a fortified country seat for the convenience of fishing, hawking and hunting in the neighboring waters, low lands and forests. Tradition also adds, that Dongan planted apple-trees not far from the site of the Manor house. A variety of the fruit known as the "Dongan apple," is yet grown on the estate. Quaint and picturesque in form, the old house harmonizes well with its natural surroundings. It stands near the foot of an abrupt slope of a high wooded hill, that shelters it from the keen northern blasts of winter. Before it, is a fine lawn, gently sloping to the water's edge, and shaded by magnificent trees.

The manor house was built for the two-fold purpose of a country residence and a fort. Its solid walls of gray stone, three feet in thickness, were pierced on every side with loop-holes for musketry. Some of these may yet be seen in the rear walls, and one in particular that has been recently opened on the front or south side of the dinning-room which presents the form of the Egyptian T. H. T. One of the principal objects the builder (whether Governor Dongan or Johannes Van Cortlandt) had in view was security against the Indians, who at one time were very numerous in this neighborhood.<sup>a</sup> In fact its noble owners never knew when they were secure from the inroads of the savages, but in proportion to the strength and security of their habitation. The principal sachem of Kitchawan, when Stephanus Van Cortlandt made the purchase, was Sackima Wicker, a son probably of the illustrious Indian warrior Croton or Noten, who had for a long period lived and exercised his authority at the mouth of the river still bearing his name. This war-like individual had erected in his life time a fort on the Point, a little south-west of where the manor house now stands well guarded and protected, as a defence for his rich domain against hostile intruders.

A large Indian bow now lies across a pair of magnificent moose-antlers over the main entrance door to the mansion, which was given, it is said, by that sachem to the first lord of the manor, and has been handed down to the present proprietor. But to return to our description of the house—it has a high basement, a second story, which includes the principal apartments; and a third, lighted by dormer-windows. Around the front and ends of the mansion is a broad veranda, shaded by trail-

---

<sup>a</sup> Still preserved at the manor house are various articles of Indian pottery, hatchets, pipes, pestles, chopping knives and arrow heads all dug up in this vicinity at various dates.



ing vines. From it the eye may take in, at a glance, Croton Bay (the Kitchtawan of the Indians so-called on account of the abundance of wild-fowl that frequented it), over which stretches the Hudson River Railway. Croton Point, so famous for its grapes and wine, and the broad expanse of the Tappan Sea, made classical by the genius of Irving; and the Hudson River, with both its shores, as far down as Dobbs's Ferry on the east, and Point-no-point on the west. Turning to the right, and looking over Croton Point (se-was-qua), the high and rugged range of Tom Mountains, extending back of the village of Haverstraw, breaks upon the vision; while in the foreground is seen Haverstraw Bay, famous with clustering associations of the treason of Arnold and the fate of André.

Eastward of the mansion, and lying parallel with the Croton, is a spacious garden or pleasure-ground, rich with choice flowers and table delicacies. A long walk leads through this garden to the ancient "Ferry House," about which gather memories of incidents of the old war for Independence. A pleasant road up to the high bridge of the Croton at the old head of navigation—a rickety structure, which seemed ready to tumble into the stream more than a dozen years ago. During the Revolutionary war there was no bridge between the mouth of the Croton and the old "Pine Bridge," until the "Continental" or "New Bridge" was erected, and that stood about a mile east of the present structure;<sup>a</sup> so that old "Pines Bridge" which crossed the Croton about a mile above the present dam, is the famous one so often spoken of in the narratives of events on the "Neutral Ground" during the war for Independence. This ancient Ferry did all the transportation between the latter region and the American lines. The bay is making rapid progress toward the condition of a salt meadow. In 1840, the swollen Croton River broke away the dam connected with the aqueduct by which New York city is supplied with water, and swept down into the bay, an enormous quantity of earth, on which occasion the river, directly opposite the mansion, rose suddenly to the height of eight feet above the ordinary tide level, while up the river about half a mile to the eastward, it exceeded fifty feet. Where the Shad and Herring fishery was once carried on successfully, is now an oozy marsh; where vessels before rode at anchor, green grass may now be seen at low tide. It is said that the bay was once famous, too, throughout the country as the favorite resort of vast flocks of canvass back ducks. Into the mouth of that bay,—according to the leagues, latitude and topograhya given in the log-book

---

<sup>a</sup> Testimony of David Merritt of Cortlandtown. McDonald MSS. in possession of George H. Moore, Esq., of New York Hist. Society.

of the navigator,—Henry Hudson sailed and anchored the “Half-Moon” at sunset on Sunday, the 1st of October, 1609, O. S., or about seventy-five years before the manor-house was built.

As we have previously shown, when Stephanus Van Cortlandt became full proprietor of the grand domain, it was erected into the Lordship and Manor of Cortlandt, by royal charter, bearing the date of June 17, 1697. That charter, written on parchment, and preserved at the manor-house, with the circular tin box containing the crumpled royal seal, has upon it a well engraved portrait of the royal grantor, King William III, of England, &c.

Tradition says that for the purpose of surveying the lands to be included in the royal charter of 1697, Stephanus Van Cortlandt started from the Croton in a per-i-auger, having on board a party of surveyors, accompanied by several Indians, who were designed to act as pioneers; proceeding up the Hudson, they disembarked at St. Anthony's Nose where the Indians were immediately started on a day's walk, or journey, as they termed it, into the wilderness (20 English miles) to mark the northern and eastern boundaries of the eighty-three thousand acres to be included in the grand domain. Van Cortlandt and some of the party remaining on St. Anthony's Nose near the red cedar tree which was to mark the north-west corner of Cortlandt manor, and the southernmost bounds of Adolph Philips's patent, and now marks the dividing lines between Westchester and Putnam counties.

The manor-house is distinguished not only for its antiquity, but for the character of its tenantry, guests, and its scenes. Its earlier owners were notable men in the annals of the Province and State of New York. Doubtless at the table, there sat most of the Provincial Governors, from Hunter and Ingolsby down to Colden, at the kindling of the Revolution, with whom the Van Cortlandt's sympathized. The career of Leisler had drawn party lines very distinctly, and some of the governors could not have been welcome at the manor-house. After the Revolution such staunch patriots were ever welcome, as Governor George Clinton (whose daughter was the wife of Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt,) Gen. Schuyler, Robert Livingston, John Jay and others. “Citizen” Genet, who also married a daughter of Clinton, was frequently there, and also distinguished travelers from abroad. Colonel Brant, the Mohawk chief, dined there once under peculiar circumstances. One Sunday, while attending divine service in a little church near Croton, Col. Van Cortlandt saw a well dressed Indian leaning upon a window sill listening to the sermon. On learning that it was Brant, who was stopping at a tavern near by, he sent an invitation to the chief to come and dine with

him. The late war became the topic of conversation. The Colonel had once chased Brant, and had been conscious that Indian sharpshooters had attempted to kill him while he was leaning against a tree. When the Colonel spoke of this, Brant replied, "I ordered one of my best marksmen to pick you off but you seemed bullet-proof."

The eminent George Whitefield once preached eloquently to Van Cortlandt's assembled tenants from the veranda of the manor-house. Dr. Franklin rested there when he was returning from his fatiguing mission to Canada, late in the spring of 1776, journeying from Albany to New York in Gen. Schuyler's post-chaise. Washington was many times at the mansion, while the American army lay on the shores of the Hudson. There Col. Henry B. Livingston had his quarters while watching the Vulture, off Teller's (now Croton) Point, at the time of the treason of Arnold. There Lafayette, and Rochambeau, and the Duke de Lauzun, were entertained; and the manor-house was always open as a resting place of some of the most eminent of the Methodist preachers, such as Asbury and Garretson, in the early days of the American branch of that church.

He who extended these hospitalities for the period of half a century or more, was Pierre Van Cortlandt—who was a member of the New York Provincial Congress, chairman of the New York Committee of Safety, and for eighteen successive years from the organization of the State Government, in 1777, was Lieut. Governor of the Commonwealth. He espoused the cause of the patriots at the beginning. Crown officers in America tried to win him to the Tory side. In 1774, Gov. Tryon essayed to seduce him. The event is best related in the words of his eldest son, Gen. Philip Van Cortlandt, at that time twenty-five years of age:—"I remember," he records in his diary, "Gov. Tryon came in a vessel, bringing his wife and a young lady, who was a daughter of the Hon. John Watts, a relative of my father, and Col. Edmund Fanning, his friend and secretary; and after remaining a night he proposed a walk, and after proceeding to the highest point of land on the farm, being a height which affords a most delightful prospect; when the governor commenced with observing what great favors could be obtained if my father would relinquish his opposition to the views of the King and Parliament of Great Britain, what grants of land could and would be the consequence, in addition to other favors of eminence, consequence, &c. My father then observed that he was chosen a representative by the unanimous approbation of a people who placed confidence in his integrity to use all his ability for their benefit and the good of his country, as a true patriot, which line of conduct he was determined to pursue. The

Gov. then turned to Col. Fanning and said: 'I find our business here must terminate, for nothing can be effected in this place, so we will return;' which they did by taking a short and hasty farewell, and embarked on board the sloop and returned to New York. This was in the year 1774."<sup>a</sup>

The patriot suffered for his principles during the war that ensued. His wife, Joanna Livingston, fled before the invading British to Livingston's manor. The house was plundered. Even carved wainscoting was carried away, and made to grace a mansion in New York; and the Dutch tiles around a fireplace were taken out and used as dining plates.

Gov. Van Cortlandt died in 1814, in the ninety-fourth year of his age. His son, Philip, who was a distinguished officer in the Continental army during the War for Independence, was the last heir of the entail. He kept up the hospitalities of the mansion until his death, in 1831; when the estate passed into the possession of its present owner, Col. Pierre Van Cortlandt (son of Philip's third brother, Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt), who inherited it from his uncle. This gentleman married Catharine, daughter of the late eminent Dr. Theodrick Romeyn Beck, of Albany. He became the first proprietor of the estate in fee simple. Like their predecessors, he and his accomplished wife dispense a refined hospitality to friends and strangers.

The Manor house contains interesting pictures, manuscripts and relics of the past. There may be seen full-length portraits of the earlier Van Cortlandts in their younger days—one representing John Van Cortlandt as a boy of about twelve years of age, dressed in a long blue coat reaching to the knees, with large cuffs turned up to the elbows, knee breeches, scarlet stockings, high shoes and silver buckles, his right hand resting on a stag. It deserves to be mentioned here that the head and horns of this very animal (as descendants of that wild race which anciently spread from the Hudson to Connecticut) are still preserved in the hall. The late General Pierre Van Cortlandt has left this memorandum relative to them—"That the deer of which this is the head and horns was raised by my uncle John Van Cortlandt about the year 1730, and which head and horns has been preserved and kept by my late father until his death and still by me. Pierre Van Cortlandt." Another portrait represents Pierre (afterwards Lieutenant-Governor) as a boy of about ten years of age, in a scarlet coat, with white silk stockings and a grey-hound by his side. Abraham, still older, is depicted in a russet coat and red stockings, with high-heeled shoes and buckles. These paintings are said to be over 140 years old, and represent three sons of Philip Van Cort-

<sup>a</sup> Gen. Philip Van Cortlandt's Diary.



landt and Catherine de Peyster. Beside the above there is a fine portrait of Lieutenant-Governor Pierre Van Cortlandt, painted by Jarvis; Joanna, wife of the Governor, and third daughter of Gilbert Livingston and Cornelia Beekman; General Pierre Van Cortlandt, by Collins; Catharine, first wife of the General and eldest daughter of George Clinton, Vice-President of the United States, by Aimes; Anne Stevenson, second wife of General Pierre Van Cortlandt, by Aimes; Mrs. Magdalen Stevenson, mother of Ann, by Aimes; Col. Pierre Van Cortlandt and Mrs. Catharine E. Van Cortlandt, his wife, daughter of Dr. Theodrick Romeyn Beck; Theodrick Romeyn Beck of Albany, author of Beck's Medical Jurisprudence, &c., and members of the family, some of them painted by the late Charles L. Elliott; also a medallion portrait of Dr. T. R. Beck, by Palmer; portraits of George Clinton, Vice-President of the United States and Governor of New York and lady, in crayons, by St. Menor Valdenuit; miniatures of George Clinton, Pierre Van Cortlandt and Gilbert Van Cortlandt, by Edward Malbon; and Catharine Clinton Van Cortlandt, artist unknown; a portrait of Brant, painted from life at Albany for William Caldwell, Esq., of Albany, the grandfather of Mrs. C. E. Van Cortlandt, and over the top of the frame is thrown a sash that belonged to the chief.

Among the family plate is the "large silver tankard marked with the family coat of arms," which in 1754 was bequeathed by Stephen Van Cortlandt (son of Philip and grandson of Stephanus first lord of the Manor) to his eldest son Col. Philip Van Cortlandt, who afterwards took such an active part against the Revolution; a silver shaving cup or christening bowl with two handles, very curious, brought to this country by Oloff Stevenson Van Cortlandt from Holland in 1638; a gold pap-spoon, with little golden bells on the handle to charm the babe while it was feeding, which was also brought from Holland; a silver tea kettle formerly belonging to the De Peysters—Catharine De Peyster having married Philip Van Cortlandt, son of Stephanus in 1709; it was made in France and probably taken to Holland from that country by the De-peysters; a sugar sifter of beaten silver work brought from Holland; large silver bowl used for "suppaan," to which may be added two magnificent pitchers, inscribed as follows:—

PRESENTED  
TO  
GENERAL PIERRE VAN CORTLANDT

BY THE  
*Directors of the Westchester County Bank,*  
JUNE, 1836.

In the dining-room is the large table brought from Holland and taken during the Revolution to Livingston Manor by Joanna Livingston, the wife of Lieutenant-Governor Pierre Van Cortlandt. The mantel contains a very handsome clock, manufactured in Paris to commemorate Bonaparte's Egyptian campaign ornamented with sphinxes, imperial eagle, &c., composed of French ormolu and white marble. The buffet which surmounts the mantle contains some curious china and glass, among which may be enumerated a porcelain figure of a monster, with the body and legs of an elephant and a grim head, half brute and half human, and some Japanse figures upon its back all indicative of the connection of the first emigrant to America with the Dutch West India Company. This very curious ornament for many years stood on the parlor mantel piece at Castle Philipse near Tarrytown, then occupied by the Beekman family—but in 1847 Cornelia Van Cortlandt, wife of Dr. Gerard G. Beekman, and sister of General Pierre Van Cortlandt, restored this heir-loom to the manor house; some curious china brought by Captain Dean from China for Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt and late James Caldwell of Albany, cornucopia for flowers, brought from Holland; curious glass goblets, opaque thread in stems, pair of buckles made of conch shells, &c., &c. In china closet, in parlor—old china brought from the east in the early part of seventeenth century by the Van Cortlandts, including a china stand for ashes of pipe with brass foot; very small and ancient tea-pots, china shaving-basin, the property of late William Caldwell of Albany in use 153 years. Piece of china which belonged to Lord Fairfax over 200 years old; glass tumbler with colored figures brought by the Romeyn's from Holland in 1654, and *then* thought to be *very* old; box made of wood of the "Endeavour," the ship in which Capt. Cook sailed round the world; she was brought to Newport, R. I., condemned as unseaworthy; the keel was sold to a cabinet maker, and used for canes, boxes, &c. Medallion of Franklin, made of the red clay of Passy. Beaumarchais caused them to be struck from a profile sketched by Mlle. Anna Vallay, fur cap on head, very rare; buttons from Yager coat worn by Paulding when he captured André, and given by him to General Pierre Van Cortlandt; agate and silver casket, very old, &c.

The Library contains a valuable collection of books, autographs, &c. Among the former may be enumerated a Dutch translation of the "Common Prayer Book," entitled, "Het Boek Dar Gemeene Gebederen," Bedieninge du sacramenten Nevens Andrew Koskelyke Gewomteny lytyheden gebruykelyk in de Kerke von Engeland, &c., printed in "London by Jan. Hendrick Schuller, MDCCIV (1704), Dedicated to Queene

Anne. On one of the fly leaves is recorded the following, in the hand-writing of Gen Pierre Van Cortlandt:—"Pierre Van Cortlandt's ejus Liber, March 1st, 1739-40."<sup>a</sup> The Negro Plot, by the Recorder of New York, entitled, "A Journal of the detection of the Conspiracy, New York, printed by James Parker, 1744. A copy of this work brought \$240 at Manzie's sale. This copy was once the property of the Hon. William P. Smith; sold by him to William Livingston with MSS. Notes, by Smith, "New England Judged," 1703; "Funeral Oration" on Washington by Major Michael Gabriel Houdin, with a portrait of the author, 1800. Among the autographs is the poetical effusion of the wife of his excellency President James Madison, addressed to Mr. Pierre Van Cortlandt, Junr:—

"Happy the man, and he alone,  
Who, master of himself can say,  
To-day at least hath been my own,  
For I have clearly lived to-day."—D. P. MADISON.

Next occurs a letter from Gen. Lafayette to Charles King, Esq.

LA GRANGE, September 28, 1832.

This letter my dear sir, will be delivered by Mr. Fiorelli, a young Italian sculptor, a refugee patriot, nephew to the gentleman whom I introduced to you in 1824. I recommend him to your good advice, and beg you to accept the best wishes and regards of your obliged and affectionate friend,

LAFAYETTE.

There is also an original letter from Gen. Washington, dated Mount Vernon, April 3d, 1797, to Mrs. Clinton, and likewise, one from Mrs. Washington to the same. The following memorandum occurs in an old almanac of 1783, in the hand-writing of Lieut. Governor Pierre Van Cortlandt:—

"N. B. I went from Peekskill, Tuesday, the 18th of November, in company with his excellency Gov. Clinton, Col. Benson and Col. Campbell; lodged that night with Gen Cortlandt at Croton River, proceeded and lodged Wednesday night at Edw. Covenhaven's where we mett his excellency Gen. Washington and his Aids. The next night we lodged with Mr. Frederick Van Cortlandt at *The Youkers*, after having dined with Gen. Lewis Morris. Fryday morning we rode in company with the Commander-in-Chief as far as the Widow Day's, at Harlem,

<sup>a</sup> Copy of a letter from Hon. John Romeyn Brodhead to Mrs. Pierre Van Cortlandt, June 13th, 1865:—"You will see in Sientans memories of Nelson, (the author of "Fasts and Festivals") page 136, a reference to a Dutch translation of Common Prayer Book"—(He refers also to an autograph note from Mr. Julian Verplanck's regarding the edition of 1711, as a great curiosity just added to the State library.) "Let me congratulate you on possessing an *unique* copy (as far as I know) of this *precious gem*. I hold myself happy that the old Governor's book was used by me at Briar Cliff on Trinity Sunday of 1865, more than a century after Pierre's ancestor wrote his autograph on its leaves."

where we held a council. Saturday I rode down to Mr. Stuyvesant's (his brother-in-law), stayed there until Tuesday. Then rode triumphant into the city with the commander."

In this same apartment is a small mahogany writing table at which his excellency DeWitt Clinton, Governor of New York, was writing when he expired so suddenly on Monday, 11th of February, 1828. This valuable relic was the property of Hendrick Romeyn Beck, who left it to his daughter, Mrs. C. E. Van Cortlandt. A small silver plate inserted under the table bears the following inscription:—"At this table DeWitt Clinton was sitting when he died." There is also preserved a desk seal of DeWitt Clinton, given by his sons to Theodrick R. Beck. There is a fine bust of the Hon. Pierre Van Cortlandt, executed from the original portrait by Jarvis; and a portrait of Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt, executed in crayons by Valdenuit in 1797. Also the silver mounted pistols of the Lieut. Governor. The suit of apartments on the principal floor are painted to imitate oak wainscoting.

"There, too, is still preserved the 'haunted room,' in which from time immemorial, lodgers have heard, in the night, rustling like that produced by the passage through the apartment of a lady in a silk gown. Only occasionally may the rustling be heard. I have listened in that room for the 'ghost' in vain. The shadowy dame or spinster never stoops to gratify idle curiosity. But the rustling has been frequently heard, and the natural causes which produce the sounds have not been discovered. The 'ghost' is harmless, and has never disturbed the repose of one of the most charming homes on the borders of the Hudson."<sup>a</sup>

During the Revolutionary War the ancient "Ferry House was occupied by a continental guard to protect the ferry and all passes to and from the "neutral ground" which lay south of the Croton. Occasionally it was favored with the presence of Washington and other distinguished military officers.

The following orders from Baron de Kalb bear date :

"CAMP, NEAR CROTON BRIDGE, 19TH JULY, 1778.

"Colonel Malcolm's regiment is ordered to march at 2 o'clock to-morrow morning to the fort at West Point, on Hudson's River, with the regiment commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Parker, which is to join on the road near Croton Bridge. The commander of the two regiments (Col. Burr) will make all convenient dispatch, marching ten miles a day, as water and ground will admit.

THE BARON DE KALB."<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Much of the foregoing description of the Manor-house is derived from an article in the *Republican* of Sing-Sing, Thursday, July 31st, 1872. Also, Appleton's Journal, June 21st, 1873, No. 222, vol. ix; Wayside Relics.

<sup>b</sup> Burr's Memoirs, vol. I, 181.



During the winter of 1782, Capt. Daniel Williams, of the New York levies, (stationed on the lines), having just returned from an excursion to Morrisania, was surprised by a party of the enemy's horse, in a barn near the Ferry House. George McClain, who behaved with the utmost gallantry on this occasion, was killed ; the rest of the party effected their escape on the ice.<sup>a</sup>

The Van Cortlandt Cemetery is situated on the summit of a hill west of the mansion. Here is a marble tomb erected to the

Memory of the Honorable

PIERRE VAN CORTLANDT,

late Lieutenant-Governor of the  
State of New York,

And President of the Convention that  
framed the Constitution thereof during  
the Revolutionary War with Great Britain.

He departed this life on the first day of  
May, in the year of our Lord 1814, in the  
ninety-fourth year of his age.

He was a patriot of the first order, zealous to  
the last for the liberties of his country ;  
A man of exemplary virtues ; kind as a neighbor,  
fond and indulgent as a parent ; an honest man—  
ever the friend of the poor ;  
respected and beloved.

The simplicity of his private life was that  
of an ancient Patriarch.

He died a bright witness of that perfect  
love which casts out the fear of death,  
putting his trust in the living God, and  
with full assurance of salvation in the  
redeeming love of Jesus Christ, retaining  
his recollection to the last, and calling upon  
his Saviour to take him to Himself.

Near the Lieutenant-Governor are interred the remains of his illustrious son, Gen. Philip Van Cortlandt, who died November 21st, 1831, aged 82 ; and Johanna Van Cortlandt, wife of the Hon. Pierre Van Cortlandt, daughter of Gilbert and Cornelia Livingston, born at Kingston, in the county of Ulster, the 28th day of August, 1722, died at her

<sup>a</sup> David Merritt of Cortlandtown, Oct. 12th, 1845, says: "When the Refugees surprised Williams's post, at Orsers, a part of them went north and cut off ye retreat, driving Col. John Post, the guide and others upon ye ice, when Odell fought with two and escaped."—Conversation between Merritt and Jas. McDonald. McDonald MSS., in possession of George H. Moore librarian of New York Hist. Soc.

residence at Croton, on the 16th of September, 1808, aged 87 years, &c.  
Also a tomb bearing the following inscription :—

Sacred  
To the memory  
of  
GERARD G. BEEKMAN,  
born  
September 19, 1746,  
In the City of New York ;  
died  
June 22d, A. D. 1822.  
at his seat  
In the town of Mount Pleasant,  
County of West Chester,  
aged  
73 years, 9 months, and 3 days.

Beside the above tombs, there is a small pedestal surmounted with a chaste urn, inscribed as follows :—

To the memory of  
CATHARINE,  
wife of  
Col. PIERRE VAN CORLLANDT, Junr.,  
and eldest daughter of  
GEORGE CLINTON, Esqr.,  
Vice-President of the United States.  
"The memory of the just is blessed ;"—Prov. x : 7.  
May death's best slumbers occupy thy urn—  
The heap that hides thee nature's livery wear ;  
O be thou sacred in the silent bourne,  
Till time rolls round the great Sabbatic year.  
born at New London  
the 5th of November, 1770,  
she deceased at her  
residence, Peekskill,  
on the 10th January, 1811,  
aged 40 years, 2 months and 5 days, &c., &c.

Likewise a marble obelisk to the memory of Anne Van Cortlandt, wife of Gen. Pierre Van Cortlandt:

"She is not dead, but sleepeth."

Also monuments to Stephen, Gilbert and Gertrude Van Cortlandt.

To the west of the cemetery, at the entrance of the neck proper, stood the Indian Castle or Fort of Kitchawan, one of the most ancient fortres-

ses south of the Highlands. The narrow pass which it occupied was well protected on the north by Indian Swamp, and on the south by the salt meadows. It is said to have been erected at a very early date by the sachem Croton, as a convenient rendezvous for the assembling of his war and hunting parties, and also for the object of commanding the rich treasures of the Hudson and the wide estuary of the Croton. We have previously shown that Matsewakes was chief sachem of Kitchawan as early as 1641.

At a short distance east of the fort, on the south edge of Haunted Hollow, is situated the Indian burying ground of Kitchawan. Nothing can be more romantic and beautiful than its locality, "a clear proof of the good taste of those who selected and consecrated it for that object." There was formerly a current belief in the neighborhood that the forms of the ancient warriors still haunted the surrounding glens and woods. The apparitions have been named, in consequence, "The Walking Sachems of Teller's Point." The road from the Manor House to Croton Landing passes along the edge of Haunted Hollow.

In connection with the above, another tradition deserves to be recorded, which asserts that several of the river tribes had a severe and sanguinary conflict with the Indians inhabiting the Point, which resulted in the defeat of the former; and, further, that the large mound or barrow near the entrance of the Point was erected over the dead who fell upon that memorable occasion. Be this as it may, indubitable evidence exists that a struggle must have taken place here at some time, from the fact, that vast quantities of warlike weapons have been found in the immediate vicinity of the fort.

A rural lane, bordered with luxuriant forest trees, leads from the main, called Enoch's Neck, to the Point proper, originally called by the Indians Senasqua, and by the English, Sarah's or Sarak's Point, the name derived from Sarah Teller, wife of William Teller, former proprietor. This lane passes immediately below the site of the Indian castle.

The Italian villa of the late R. T. Underhill, M.D., stands upon an elevated position near the extremity of the latter, commanding a very extensive view of the Hudson River (nearly twenty-seven miles in length) and adjacent country, in which Vredideka Hook forms a noble feature in the south-west. The basement of the building is constructed of Ashlar marble, cut in Sing-Sing; the upper portion consists of stucco brick. The whole edifice is in admirable keeping with the adjoining vineyards and surrounding scenery.

The late R. T., and Stephen A. Underhill who is the present proprietor of the Point proper, a grand-son of Robert Underhill, Esq., fifth in de-

scent from the famous Capt. John Underhill, High Constable of the North Riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island.

The woods of Teller's Point afford a safe retreat for thousands of crows, (*corvus corone* Linn.) which here, unmolested and unwatched by the cruel farmer and gunner, have from time immemorial enjoyed an extensive "roost."

The canting, living crow  
Whose birth was in their tops, grew old and died,  
Among the branches, till at last they stood  
As here they stood, mossy, tall and dark,  
Fit shrine for humble worshipper to hold  
Communion with his maker.—*Bryant*.

Daily towards sunset, may be seen approaching this sylvan abode,

"The blackening train of crows to their repose."

—*Burns*.

When the Croton dam gave way in the fall of 1840, the wild, hurrying torrent—as it approached nearer and nearer—is said to have sent a savage roar through these woods, causing the very watch-dogs to howl with fear.

A large fish pond lying east of Dr. Underhill's residence, is conjectured to have originally formed the bed of the Croton river, from the fact that trunks of trees have been discovered four or five feet beneath its muddy sediment.

The southern declivities of the Point towards the Croton Bay are covered with extensive vineyards of Catawba and Isabella. The table land also embraces luxuriant orchards and vineyards. The whole of the latter cover nearly an area of forty acres.

Two thousand one hundred and fifty-four shad, and seven thousand herring, having been taken at single lifts in the adjoining waters. During the winter season, vast flocks of coot and black duck frequent the shores of the Croton and Haverstraw Bays.

There are numerous Revolutionary incidents connected with Croton or Teller's Point deserving of notice. It was off the western extremity that the Vulture, sloop of war, came to anchor on the morning of the 21st of September, 1780, having brought up André for the purpose of holding an interview with Arnold;<sup>a</sup> and here she expected to have awaited his return—but soon after the spy had embarked for the opposite shore, a barge filled with armed men from the Vulture, was seen approaching Teller's Point; whereupon, George Sherwood and John Pat-

<sup>a</sup> See Greenburgh.



terson, who were in the vicinity, seized their arms and hastened to the shore, resolved in their own minds that the enemy should not land without opposition. For this purpose they concealed themselves behind the large rocks which still lie on the beach; and as the barge came sweeping along towards the shore, Patterson fired. His aim had been well directed, for an oar was seen to fall from the hands of one of the men on board, and much confusion was observed among them. A second shot from Sherwood compelled them to return, which they did under a cover of canister and grape-shot from the Vulture, directed to that part of the beach where Petterson and Sherwood were concealed. The cannonade from the Vulture drew the attention of the people of Cortlandt-town to the scene of action. The Vulture lying in a position to be distinctly seen from Verplanck's Point, and the distance of country between it and the point on the Westchester shore, and likewise from Stony Point; the town of Haverstraw, and the point where André and Arnold held their conference in Rockland County; the grounds upon both sides of the river for many miles in extent sloping gradually towards the river—gave the inhabitants a full view of the scene of action.

The inhabitants on the Westchester side had been upon the lookout, for they apprehended an attack under cover of the night. There were more, however, who entertained the opinion that it would be brought on before sunset, until Petterson and Sherwood commenced their fire.

Many of them now hastened to the scene of action with a field-piece, which they had obtained of Col. Livingston, who was in command at Verplanck's Point; and after erecting their little battery on the Point, they opened a well-directed fire against the Vulture. They soon compelled her to slip her cable and hoist sail. This circumstance prevented André from returning to New York by water.

"No sooner (says Sparks) had André and Arnold arrived at Smith's house, than a cannonade was heard down the river. It was discovered to be against the Vulture, which, though distant several miles, was in full view, and for a time seemed to be on fire. It had been reported to Colonel Livingston by messengers from Teller's Point, that the vessel was so near the shore as to be within reach of cannon-shot, and that the inhabitants were likewise apprehensive boats would land and commit depredations. Col. Livingston accordingly sent from Verplanck's Point a party with cannon, who fired upon the Vulture and compelled her to remove from the position she had held during the night, and drop farther down the river till she was beyond reach of the shot. André

beheld the scene from the windows of Smith's house with anxious emotion ; at length the firing ceased, and he resumed his wonted spirits and composure."<sup>a</sup>

Upon another occasion, "while Enoch Crosby the Westchester spy was on duty in the vicinity of Teller's Point, a British sloop of war came up the river, and anchored in the stream opposite the point.

With an unconquerable predeliction for strategem, our hero immediately concerted a plot, for the sole purpose, he says, of affording "a little sport for his soldiers." He accordingly proceeded down to the Point, accompanied by six men, five of whom, besides himself, concealed themselves in the woods, which grew a short distance from the shore, while the other paraded the beach so as to display La Fayette's uniform in so conspicuous a manner, as to attract the notice of the officers on board the vessel.

The enemy swallowed the bait; and a boat soon put off from the sloop of war, manned with eleven men, under the command of a lieutenant, to make a prisoner of this one yankee, who precipitately fled into the woods as the barge approached the shore. The Englishmen followed, threatening to shoot the fugitive unless he stopped and surrendered.

As soon as the pursuers had passed his own little party, which were scattered in various directions, Crosby exclaimed, "Come on, my boys! now we have them!"

At this signal, every man sprang up in his place with a shout that made the welkin ring; making at the same time such a rustling in the bushes, that the British, thinking themselves surrounded by a superior force, surrendered without resistance.

On the next day they were marched to Fishkill, and confined in the old Dutch church."<sup>b</sup>

On 16th of October, 1799, (remarks Gen. Heath,) fourteen seamen were taken prisoners by Capt. Hallet's company of New York militia, two days before on the North River, near Teller's Point.<sup>c</sup>

The surface of this town is hilly, and on the north-west mountainous. The soil consists principally of sand and gravelly loam; it is abundantly supplied with rivulets and springs of water.

The general growth of wood, is oak of all kinds, chestnut, hickory, elm, black and white ash, birch and pine.

---

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, 206.

<sup>b</sup> Barnum's Spy Unmasked, pp. 149, 150.

<sup>c</sup> Heath's Mem. 22.

The first independent election for officers of the town of Cortlandt, took place April 1st, 1788, when the following individuals were chosen officers for the year ensuing:—

Philip Van Cortlandt, Supervisor.

Joseph Travis, Town Clerk.

Daniel Birdsell	}	Poor Masters.
Nathaniel Brown,		
Pierre Van Cortlandt,)		

David Ferris, Constable.

John Paulding, Collector.

John Jones,	}	Fence Viewers:
Nathaniel Brown,		
John Paulding,		
Bariah Richardson,		
Abraham Merritt,		

Hercules Lent,	}	Commissioners of Highways
Jonathan Ferris,		
Pierre Van Cortlandt,)		

Abraham Lent,	}	Assessors.
Henry Lent, son of		
Hercules,		
Jarvis Dusenberry,		
Caleb Barton,		
John Haight,		

John Jones,	}	Pound Masters.
Henry Griffen,		
Abraham Merritt,		
John Paulding,		

Gerritt Storms,	}	Highway Masters.
Philip Van Cortlandt,		
Elisha Hammon,		
Joshua Bishop,		
Thomas Conkling,		
John Garrison,		
Joseph Mandeville,		
Richard Curry, Jr.,		
John Ferris,		
John Lee,		
Daniel Hall,		
Ludlow Haight,		
Sam'l Field,		
Benj. McCord,		

# THE TOWN OF EAST CHESTER.

---

THIS township is situated ten miles south of White Plains, twenty miles north of New York, one hundred and forty from the city of Albany, and four east of the Hudson; bounded, north by Scarsdale, east by Pelham and New Rochelle, south by West Chester, and west by Yonkers. It is about seven miles long, north and south, and near two and a half miles wide. On the west it is washed by the Bronx river, (Aguehung) and on the east by Hutchinson's (Aqueanounck,) or East Chester creek, which enters a large bay of the same name, in the south east angle of this town.<sup>a</sup>

East Chester<sup>b</sup> was at first called Hutchinsons, and subsequently, "The Ten Farms," an appellation derived from its ancient division among ten proprietors. The present name was conferred as early as 1666.

The lands of East Chester, were formerly included in the Indian grant of 1640, whereby the Indians conveyed to the Dutch, all the territory situated between the town of Greenwich and the North River.

Upon the 14th of November, 1654, Thomas Pell obtained a second grant from the aboriginal proprietors, which also embraced the present township. Twelve years later we find the inhabitants of East Chester confirmed in all their rights by the Mohegan Sachems, Gramatan, Woariatapus, Annhooke, (alias Wampage,) and Porrige.

The undivided lands, which were a long time in controversy between the two towns of East and West Chester, appear to have been held by

---

<sup>a</sup> See N. Y. *Gazeteer*.

<sup>b</sup> This name, Chester, says Camden, "comes plainly from the Roman Castrum." Camden's *Brittania*.



the Indians up to a late period of colonial history. The aboriginal names of Coranases and Conoval, frequently occur in the early deeds of this town.

A castle of the Sinamon Indians formerly stood on the hill in the rear of Dr. Philemon Fowler's residence, in the village of East Chester.

Indian wigwams formerly occupied the site of Daniel Morgan's residence, bordering the Aqueauouncke (Hutchinson's) river, and the mill of Stephen Anderson, upon the same stream.

Vast quantities of arrow and spear heads are found in every portion of this district, showing that it was once a great hunting country. The Indians were extravagantly fond of the chase, "their first hunting season always commencing as soon as the wild herbage began to grow up in the woods."<sup>a</sup>

Deer must have been incredibly numerous in the ancient forests of East Chester, as we invariably find the wolf infesting the same section of country.

Upon the 10th day of February, 1672, it was agreed (by the inhabitants of East Chester,) "that the town wolf-pits which Mr. Pinckini and John Hoyt hath made, shall be, and is also illegal in the glan (glen,) where they are situated, and that the inhabitants do see to fill them up." Seven years later it was decided by vote, that the inhabitants pay ten shillings for every wolf that is killed within the limits of East Chester, for the year ensuing. These orders show conclusively that this ferocious animal was then very troublesome.

So common and mischievous were wolves, (at this early period,) throughout the country, that we find the provincial assembly compelled to issue the following order for their distruction, entitled an act for destroying wolves within the colony,—

"Forasmuch as divers inhabitants of this colony have suffered many grievous losses in their stocks, both of sheep and neat cattle, for the prevention of which, and encouragement of those who shall destroy wolves in the said colony, and that the breed of wolves within the colony may be wholly rooted out and extinguished, be it enacted, &c., that in the COUNTY OF WEST CHESTER, twenty shillings for a grown wolf killed by a Christian, and ten shillings for such a wolf killed by an Indian, and half that sum respectively for a whelp."<sup>b</sup>

Att a Court of Sessions held at West Chester, for the County of West Chester, Sept. 7, 1692, by their Majestie's authority, present the Hon. Caleb Heatcott, one of their Majestie's Councell for the Province of

<sup>a</sup> Vanderdoncks N. N., N. Y. Hist. Soc. 207.

<sup>b</sup> Acts of Col. Assembly, N. Y., p. 47.

New Yorke, Lt. Coll. John Pell, Justice & Quorum, Joseph Theale, Dan. Strange, Esq.'s, Justice's of the Peace.

*Whereas*, the grand Inquest Represents to this Court that care may be taken for the Destroying of wolves & the Court being Impowered by Act of Generall Assembly to see the same put in Execution.

The Court orders that every Township & Constables jurisdiction—The Constables in their respective place shall take care under the penalty of five pounds for the neglect, that they cale together the Inhabitants & give notice that the Court of Sessions have ordered & it is hereby ordered for the prevention of Damages done by wolves in this County, that the Inhabitants of every respective place shall make or cause to be made two wolfe pitts in such places where the Inhabitants shall see most convenient: and that for every wolfe cateched kild or destroyed by the said pitts, or otherwise the heads shall be brought to the Constables who shall cutt of the eares of from the said wolofes head and naile it up in some convenient Publick place: and that the said Constable shall pay or satisfie for every such wolofes head soe brought to him it being made appeare that it was kild within his precincts the sum of twelve shellings, and for the defraying of the charge of makeing of the said wolofe Pitts & killing the said wolves a rate shall be made upon the severall Inhabitants of the said Constabeshipp for the defraying the said charge, and for the incurragem<sup>t</sup> of the Indians they shall have ten shillings a pice for every wolofe they kill within the severall Constabeshippes, they bringing the heads first to the said Constables, and that such pitts be made between this and the twenty-fifth day of March next. And that annually a a rate be made before the first of Jan., paid before March next. The Constable having full power to see the same effected and done by virtue of this order, and to distraine upon any that refuseth or neglecteth to pay his just proportion.<sup>a</sup>

The remains of a large wolf-pit are still to be seen in the Winter Hill burying-ground, situated upon the property of the late Mr. Robert Purdy. Tradition asserts that over one hundred years ago, the original settlers used to hunt bears and deer in the Long Reach patent, (situated on the north-west side of this town,) and they were accustomed to provide themselves with thirty days provision.

The following grant under the hand and seal of Thomas Pell, occurs in 1664, to James Euestis, Philip Pinckney and others.

Know all men by these presents, that I, Thomas Pell, have granted to James Euestis and Philip Pinckney, for themselves and their associates, to the number of ten families, to settle down at Hutchinsons, that is where the house stood at the meadows and uplands, to Hutchinson's River, they paying according to ye proportion of the charges which was disburst for the purchase, and other necessary charges, only liberty to have the disposing of two lotts upon the same terms with them, because that I might provide them some tradesmen for their comfort, as a smith, or weaver, or what else with their approbation. Witness my hand, this 24th of June, 1664.<sup>b</sup>

THOMAS PELL.

<sup>a</sup> Rec. of the Court of Sessions for W. C. C.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec.

The above grantees appear to have emigrated from Fairfield Connecticut, to this place; for in the year 1649, we find the following names recorded in the town books of Fairfield, viz.:—James Euestis, Philip Pinckney, John Tompkins, Moses Hoit, Samuel Drake, Andrew Ward, Walter Lancaster, Nathaniel Tompkins, Samuel Ward, &c. These individuals subsequently took an active part in the affairs of East Chester.

The following covenant was drawn up in 1665, for the future government of the proprietors, entitled:—

Articles of agreement betwext us whose names are underwriten, A. D. 1665.

Imprimus, that we by the grace of God, sitt down on the track of land lieng betwext Huthesson's broock, whear the house was, untell it com unto the river, that runeth in at the head of the meados.

2. That we indeavor to keepe and mantayn christian love and sivell honisty.
3. That we faithfully consall what may be of infirmity in any one of us.
4. Plainlie to dealle one with another in christian love.
5. If any trespas be don, the trespæd and the trespasser shall chuse tow of this company, and they a thirde man if need be requiered, to end the mater, without any further trubell.
6. That all and every one of us, or that shall be of us, do paye unto the mines-ter, according to his meade.
7. That none exceed the quantity of fifteen acres, until all have that quantity.
8. That every man hath that meadow that is most convenient for him.
9. That every man build and inhabit on his home lot before the next winter.
10. That no man make sale of his lot before he hath built and inhabited one year, and then to render it to the company, or to a man whom they approve.
11. That any man may sell part of his alotment to his neighbor.
12. That no man shall engrosse to himself by buying his neighbor's lot for his particular interest, but with respect to sell it if an approved man come, and that without much advantage, to be judged by the company.
13. That all public affairs, all bridges, highways, or mill, be carried on jointly, according to meadow and estates.
14. That provision be endeavoured for education of children, and then encouragement be given unto any that shall take pains according to our former way of rating.
15. That no man shall give entertainment to a foreigner who shall carry himself obnoxious to the company except amendment be after warning given.
16. That all shall join in guarding of cattle when the company see it convenient.
17. That every man make and maintain a good fence about all his arable land, and in due time a man chosen to view if the company's be good.
18. That every man sow his land when most of the company sow or plant in their fields.
19. That we give new encouragement to Mr. Brewster each other week, to

give us word of exhortation, and that when we are settled we meet together every other weeke, one hour, to talk of the best things.

20. That one man, either of himself, or by consent, may give entertainment to strangers for money.

21. That one day, every spring, be improved for the destroying of rattle snakes.

22. That some, every Lord's day, stay at home, for safety of our wives and children.

23. That every man get and keep a good lock to his door as soon as he can.

24. That a convenient place be appointed for oxen if need require.

25. If any man's meadow or upland be worse in quality, that be considered in quantity.

26. That every man that hath taken up lottes shall pay to all publick charges equal with those that got none.

That all that hath or shall take up lots within this tract of land mentioned in the premises shall subscribe to these articles.

Thomas Shute

The mark of

O

Nathaniel Tompkins,

Philip Pinkney,

The mark of X Joseph Joans,

John Hoitt,

James Eustis,

The mark of X Daniel Godwin,

The mark of X William Squire,

David Osburn,

John Goding,

Samuel Drake,

John Jackson,

The mark of John Drake, I D

The mark of

X

Nathaniel White,

William Haidon's mark, H

The mark of John Gay, I G

John A Pinkney,

The mark of John Tompkins, O

Richard Shute,

The mark of John Hollind, I H

Moses Hoitte,

Richard Hoadley,

The mark of Henry X Ffowllir,

John Emory,

Moses Jackson,

John Clarke,

This is a true copy according unto the originall, transcribed by me. Richard Shute, this 23d day of Nov. '68.

In 1666, the inhabitants of Eastchester obtained a further grant from the native Indians, Ann-hooke and others. This sale was confirmed by royal patent the same year:

### ROYAL PATENT OF EAST CHESTER.

“Richard Nichols, Esq., Governor General under his Royal Highness, James, Duke of York and Albany, &c., &c., of all his territories in America, to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: whereas, there is a certain plantation upon ye main, lying within ye limits and bounds of Westchester, belonging to ye north riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island, situate and being in ye north part of ye limits of ye said towne, which said plantation is commonly known and called by ye name of The Ten Farms, or Eastchester, and is now in the tenure and occupation of several freeholders and inhabitants, who having



heretofore made lawful purchase thereof, have likewise manured and improved a considerable part of ye lands thereunto belonging, and settled several families thereupon; now for a confirmation unto ye said freeholders, and inhabitants in their enjoyment and possession of ye premises, KNOW YEE, by virtue of ye commission, and authority, unto me given by his royal highness, I have ratified, confirmed and granted, and by these presents, do ratifie, confirm, and grant, unto Philip Pinckney, James Euestis, and William Hayden, as patentees for and on ye behalf of themselves, and their associates, their heirs, successors and assignees, all ye said plantation, with ye lands thereunto belonging, lying within ye bounds and limits hereafter expresset, viz.: that is to say, bounded to the east and ye north-east, by a certain river, commonly called Hutchinson's River, which runs in at ye head of ye meadow, and is ye west bounds of Mr. Peil's patent, to ye south-east by a certain creek, the mouth whereof openeth to ye south-east, then including ye meadows heretofore called Hutchinson's Meadows, and ye upland, to ye now knowne and common pathway coming up from Westchester, to take in also of ye uplands betweene Hutchinson's and Rattlesnake Brooke, from the said path to ye extent of half a mile north-west for them to plant, or otherwise to manure, as they shall see cause; ye remainder to lye in common between them and ye inhabitants of Westchester, at ye end of which half-mile to be bounded by Rattlesnake Brooke, till you come to ye head thereof; from thence striking a north-east line to Hutchinson's River aforementioned, ye certain bounds of this plantation aforesaid are described, and so hereafter are to bee reputed and taken, any former order, conclusions, or agreement, to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding, together with all woodlands, meadows, pastures, marshes, querryes, waters, creeks, lakes, brooks, fishing, hawking, hunting, fowling and all other profits, commoditys, emoluments and hereditaments, to the said land and premises within ye limitts and bounds aforementioned, described, belonging, or any otherwise appertaining; and ye said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors, and assignees, shall likewise have free commonage and liberty for range of feed of cattle, from ye head of Hutchinson's Brook aforesaid, for about eight English miles; to run north-west into the woods as far as Bronck's River, or so far as they shall not encroach or entrench upon any former patent by mee given or granted: **TO HAVE AND TO HOLD** all and singular ye said lands hereditaments and premises, with their and every of their appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof, to the said patentees, and their associates, their heirs, successors and assignees, to ye proper use and behoofe of ye said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors and assignees, forever; moreover, I do hereby grant and confirm unto ye said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors and assigns, that their plantation shall continue to retain ye name of **EAST-CHESTER**, by which name and stile it shall be distinguished and knowne in all bargains and sales, deeds, records and writings; likewise, they shall have ye privilege of electing out of their owne numbers some discreet person, who shall be elected yearly to the office of a deputy constable, to keep his majesties peace, and to compose, if possible, all private differences by arbitration amongst themselves, but that in all other matters they have relation to ye town and court of Westchester, they, the said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors and assignees, rendering and paying such dutys and acknowledgments as now are or hereafter shall be constituted and established by ye laws of this government,

under ye obedience of his royal highness, his heirs and successors. Given under my hand and seal at Fort James, New York, on ye Isle of Mannhattans, ye ninth day of March, in ye nineteenth year of ye reign of our Sovereign Lord, Charles ye Second, by ye grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, defender of ye faith, &c., &c., and in ye year of our Lord God, 1666.<sup>a</sup>

“RICHARD NICOLLS.

“Recorded by order of ye Governor,  
the day and year above written.

“MATTHIAS NICOLLS, Secretary.”

Subsequently the three patentees made the following declaration of trust in behalf of their associates:—

“These may certyfie that we, viz. Phillip Pinknie, James Shute and William Haiden, having a certain track of land granted and conerned unto us by patten, being granted and conerned by Collenalle Richard Nichollas, then Goavernor in New Yorke, being granted to us, viz. Phillip Pinkuine, James Eustis and William Hoydeff, and our associates each of the above mentioned Phillip Pinknie, James Shute and William Haiden do, by these resigne up our perticulere interest that we have by paten, or otherwise granted and conerned unto our associates, who have owned and subscribed unto the observation of a covinante, with us this provisall, that they observe all conditions of our grantes; 2ndly, that they with us, and we with them, perpetuate, our rate of interest of land, and maintaine our and their enjoyments; 3rdly, that we, with the major part of the inhabitants that are associated, have the disposing of land, but not they without us—we that are associate accordingly as our names are hearen inserted:—

Phillip Pinknie,  
William Haiden,  
Johne Hoitte,  
James Euestis,  
Richard Shute,

David Osburne,  
Samuel Drake,  
John Embery,  
John Jackson,  
Moses Jackson,

Moses Hoitte.”

Upon the 9th of March, 1666, Robert Doughty purchased several parcels of land belonging to William Haiden, situated within the limits of Eastchester Patent. In 1667 the inhabitants of this town united with those of Long Island in protesting against the Duke's laws.<sup>b</sup> The province of New York was re-taken by the Dutch on the 30th of July, 1673. Upon this occasion we find the deputies of Oostdorp, alias Westchester, and the adjacent hamlet of Eastchester, offering to submit themselves to the government of the State General and the Prince of Orange; in return for which they were commanded “to nominate, by their inhabitants, a double number as magistrates for the aforesaid villages.”<sup>c</sup> Sub-

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. 1667, March 9th, Deed from Governor Nicolls to Philip Pinkney, James Everts and others, for a tract of land known as The Ten Farms, or Eastchester, p. 12, *Land Papers*, vol. i, 1643 to 1813.

<sup>b</sup> Thompson's History of Long Island.

<sup>c</sup> Eastchester Rec.

sequently the following order was issued by the Lords, Commanders, and Honorable Council of War of the New Netherlands, residing in Fort William Hendricke.

“Whereas, by a former order it was thought fit that the two towns of West and Eastchester should be brought under one court of judicature, consisting of three schepens, or magistrates—that is to say, out of the town of Westchester two, and one out of the town of Eastchester; and that the inhabitants of the said respective towns should make choice each of a double number—the which, by them, hath been accordingly executed, and returned, and made unto us,—we have made choice of magistrates of the said towns, to continue for the space of one whole year next ensuing the date hereof, viz.,

For ye town of Westchester, { Joseph Palmer,  
do do Eastchester, John Hoitte,  
do do Eastchester, John Hoitte,

And the said persons are hereby required with all possible expedition to appear before us, and to take the oath, &c. &c. Dated at Fort William Hendricke, 27th of August, 1673.<sup>a</sup>

Cornelius Euerstead,  
T. Youngs,  
Jacob Banckers.

In 1676 Nathaniel Tompkins, of this town, was directed by Governor Andross “to seize all stray horses within the jurisdiction of West and Eastchester that are without marks, and bring them to the constable or justice of the peace.”<sup>b</sup>

At this period the standard prices of grain and other marketable produce were as follows:—

Merchantable winter wheat,	. . . . .	5s. Od.
Summer wheat,	. . . . .	4s. 6d.
Merchantable barley,	. . . . .	4s. Od.
Rye,	. . . . .	3s. 6d.
Peas,	. . . . .	3s. Od.
Indian corn,	. . . . .	2s. 6d.

Certain difficulties having arisen with regard to the boundaries of Eastchester Patent, Mr. Philip Pinckney was appointed on the 30th of October, 1677, “to go to our governor to meet Mr. Justice Pell, Esq., where it is intended that our governor is to decide any difference that may arise betwixt us concerning the bounds of our Patent.”<sup>c</sup>

In the year 1681, Capt. Philip Pinckney, Samuel Drake, senior, and Moses Hoyt, were chosen to treat with the Indians about their lands. “And so if they can agree, in behalf of the rest of the inhabitants, with

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec., vol. xxiii., 273, 16th p. vol. 1673, M. John Hoyt, “is not to suffer any person or persons whatsoever to pass through Eastchester to or from New England; except they can produce a royal pass or licence from authority for the same.” &c. N. Y. Col. MSS. vol. xxiii. p. 659.

<sup>b</sup> Eastchester Rec.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid.

the said Indians, concerning the purchase and pay of the said land, &c., these three men above mentioned to be together in the design."

"Also it is further agreed that the said Indian purchase shall be paid, answerable unto every man's proportion of land in the east division already laid out, &c."<sup>a</sup>

The following land list occurs in 1682, containing the names and rates of the resident freeholders:—

Samuel Drake, . . . . .	30½	Walter Lancaster, . . . . .	22
Nathaniel Tompkyns, . . . . .	23½	Richard Shute, . . . . .	44
Capt. Will. Haiden, . . . . .	40	Henry Fowler, . . . . .	25
William Pinckney, . . . . .	40	John Tompkyns, . . . . .	24
Richard Hoadley, . . . . .	24	John Wharford, . . . . .	24
William Gray, . . . . .	8½	Samuel Godin, . . . . .	23½
John Pinckney, . . . . .	25¼	John Vaille, . . . . .	6½
John Drake, . . . . .	24¼	Samuel Godin, . . . . .	5¼
Moses Hoit, . . . . .	45	Walter Webelly, . . . . .	8
John Clarke, . . . . .	13		

At a meeting of the inhabitants of Eastchester, held Decembèr 1st, 1683, it was resolved, that Nathaniel Tompkyns, John Drake and Richard Shute, should go into the woods with the Indians, "and mark out certain lands within the patent of Eastchester, and go and know what the said Indians do ask for the said lands, and bring report to the rest of the inhabitants."

On the 1st of March, 1686, Captain William Haiden and Moses Hoit, Sen., were chosen by the inhabitants of Eastchester, to go to treat with the Westchester townsmen in defence of our land, granted to us by patent.

On the 16th of January, 1698, occurs the following entry in the town records:—"There being several inhabitants of Westchester come to invade us (the inhabitants of Eastchester) in the property, of our lands, by way of molestation, the town did inform the above said persons, that they should not proceed to lay out any land, or mark any trees, or to set any marks, as by sufficient testimony will appear."

In the Secretary of State's office, at Albany, there is a map of the disputed territory, entitled "A draft of the lands in controversy between the inhabitants of Westchester and the inhabitants of Eastchester, joyn'd with William Peartree, &c., surveyed and laid downe per Augustine Graham, surveyor, &c."<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Ibid.

<sup>b</sup> "In 1705, John Aboynean & Co., petitioned Lord Cornbury for license to purchase a parcel of unappropriated vacant land in the county of Westchester, (discovered by them) which they should be desirous to settle and improve, from the native Indian proprietors thereof, to be thereby instituted to his majestie's favorable patent for the same. Endorsed Aboynean's petition in behalf of himself & Co. Read in Council, April 3, 1705. Papers about lands in controversy between East and West Chester, determined April, 1705.



The vacant lands were situated on the west side of Rattlesnake Brook in the north-west corner of the present town, and amounted to 3,308 acres. From their peculiar shape they obtained the name of the "Long Reach."

In 1696, "at a meeting of the freeholders, and commonality of the borough town of West Chester, they did give and grant unto Col. Caleb Heathcote, the liberty of the stream of Hutchinson's river, or creek, lying by the "Ten Farms," within the limits and bounds of the patent of the borough town of Westchester aforesaid, known by the name of Eastchester, for to erect a mill or mills thereon."<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 23d day of December, A. D. 1700, we find the Indians confirming the inhabitants of Eastchester in their possession.

#### INDIAN DEED.

Be it known unto all to whom these presents may come, or concern; whereas the inhabitants of Eastchester did formerly purchase a certain tract of land of the natives, in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred sixty and six, and part of the same being not as yet satisfied, the said tract of land being butted and bounded as is hereafter expressed, viz.: east and south-east, by a certain river commonly called Hutchinson's river, which runs in at the head of the meadows, on the west bounds of Mr. Pell's patent, and southerly to Hutchinson's brook, and from the head thereof, north-west to Brunckses his river, and so all the land betwixt Hutchinson's and Brunckses his river, and so from the head of Hutchinson's river, northwest west to Brunckses river, and so all the land betwixt Hutchinson's and Brunckses rivers, according as aforementioned, now KNOW YE, that we, Woriatapus Annhook and Porrige, do owne, that we have received full satisfaction of Richard Shute, John Drake, and Henry Fowler, in the behalf of the rest of the inhabitants of Eastchester aforesaid, for the said tract of land, and we the abovesaid Woriatapus, Annhook and Porrige, do by these presents confirm unto the said Richard Shute, John Drake and Henry Fowler, in the behalf of the rest of the inhabitants of Eastchester aforesaid, their heirs and assigns forever, and we the above said Woriatapus, Annhook and Porrige, will warrant and defend the same from all incumbrances whatsoever, of any person or persons laying claime, right, title or demand, unto any part or parcel of the abovesaid tract of land, above mentioned, in witness whereof, we the said Woriatapus, Annhook and Porrige have hereunto put to our hands and seals, this third day of Dec., in the 12th year of his majestie's reign, A. D. 1700.

Signed, sealed and delivered in  
presence of us, Robert Bloomer,  
George Copping, David Whitlock,  
Gramatan Sachem,

The mark of X  
Woriatabus.  
The mark of AH Ann Hooke,  
Porrige

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Rec.

The same year it was resolved by the inhabitants of this town, "that Edmund Ward shall have and hold sixty acres of land, in consideration that the said Edmund Ward do pay the Indians purely, and clear the said town of, and from the said pay, when need be, &c.

The Indian purchase to be paid for as follows, viz. :—14 guns, 12 coats, 12 Indian kettles, 12 Indian axes, 4 adzes and 4 barrels of cider; this agreement entered into by me, Richard Shute, Recorder in Eastchester.

On the 6th of April, 1705, Patthunk, Sagamore, Hopesco alias Porrige, Anne Hook, and Elias, Indian proprietors, sold to George Booth, joiner, of the city of New York, and his associates,

"All that our right of land which is not yet lawfully purchased, lying and being from the land which is now in dispute betwixt Westchester and Eastchester, and so running along by Broncks's river, to Hutchinson's river, and bounded on the north by Eastchester lyne, to have and to hold, &c."

Upon the 22d of Sept., 1708, the following letters patent were issued under the great seal of the Province, to Col. William Peartree and his associates.<sup>a</sup>

#### LONG REACH OR NEW PATENT.

"Anne, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, &c., the Queen, defender of the faith, &c.; whereas, it appears that our beloved cousin, Edward Viscount Cornbury, had granted to Col. William Peartree, Col. Jacobus Van Cortlandt, Joseph Van Horne, Capt. John Drake, Thomas Pinckney, Joseph Drake, Edmund Ward, Henry Fowler and Roger Barton, a grant for a tract of land in Westchester county, beginning at Hutchinson's brook, at the end of the half mile mentioned in Eastchester patent, and so up the said Hutchinson's brook, as the brook runs to the head thereof, and from thence, north-west to Brunckses river, and so up the said Brunckses river, as the river runs, till it comes to bear with the head of Hutchinson's river, due south-east to a chestnut tree, marked, and so down the said Hutchinson's river, as the river runs, till it comes to the north-east and south-west line of Eastchester patent, and so down south-west, along the said line, to the head of Rattlesnake brook, and from thence, down the said brook, as the brook runs, to the aforementioned half mile of Eastchester patent, and from thence westerly to the above said Hutchinson's brook, where it began: KNOW YE, that we have ratified the said grant to the above mentioned persons, reserving what has been granted to Westchester, 23d of Sept., in the seventh year of her majesty's reign, 1708 <sup>b</sup>

In 1724, the inhabitants of Eastchester appear to have held a quit-rent on the patent of Jacobus Van Cortlandt, and others, &c.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> This individual was the Mayor of the city of New York in 1703, and for many years senior warden of Trinity church, in that city.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. No. — p. 380.

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec. No. 2.

The following items relate to the election of town officers from 1672 to 1783.

On the 13th of February, 1672, Samuel Drake was voted in constable for the year ensuing.

April 24th, 1673, the inhabitants nominated William Haiden, for the first man to be presented to our commander for our magistrate.

Mr. John Hart was elected magistrate, A. D. 1673.

This 24th day of August, 1673, the inhabitants have nominated William Haiden, for the first man to present to our commander, for a magistrate, and John Hoitte for the ground man. Upon nomination also this same day we have forthwith agreed that our desire is, that Mr. John Pell may be proposed to our commander for the year as a skoutte.

The same year Richard Shute, was chosen town recorder.

In 1686, John Pinckney appears as supervisor; Richard Shute, clerk of the town court; Joseph Drake, constable; William Haiden, Samuel Drake and Philip Pinckney, town commissioners; Haiden and John Pinckney, representatives.

In 1691, John Pinckney, supervisor.

The following election took place in 1776-7:

Stephen Ward, supervisor; Samuel Sneden, town clerk;<sup>a</sup> Charles Guion, collector; Solomon Drake and Moses Drake, assessors; Thomas Farrington, Joshua Ferris, Joseph Gedney, overseers of roads; Thomas Pinckney and William Fowler, overseers of fences; Edmund Ward and John Sneden, viewers of fences; Stephen Ward and William Fowler, pounders.

The first independent election for town officers took place on the 22d of December, 1783, under the superintendence of Stephen Ward and Ebenezer S. Burling, Esq., &c., (in accordance with an act of the Legislature passed October 23, 1779,) when the following persons were elected:

Ebenezer Burling, Esq., supervisor; Charles Ward, town clerk; William Crawford, jun., constable and collector; Thomas Pinckney, Jacob Hunt, Daniel Learning and John Wright, assessors; Charles Guion, Elisha Shute and James Morgan, overseers of roads; William Crawford and James Morgan, pounders; William Crawford and Charles Guion, to take care of public edifices.<sup>b</sup>

The public lands of Eastchester are now managed by a board of trustees, according to an Act of the Legislature passed May 11, 1846.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Samuel Sneden was town clerk and supervisor for many years prior to the Revolution and was succeeded by Benjamin Mosyar subsequent to that period.

<sup>b</sup> Town Records.—The town books consist of three volumes; the first commencing on the 13th of February, 1672; 2d vol. in 1693; 3d. vol. at a much later period.

<sup>c</sup> Laws of N. Y. 69 session, chap. 185-208.

Mount Vernon the principal village in this town, has a station on the New York and New Haven Rail Road, and was incorporated, Dec. 13, 1853. It contains four churches, several private schools, and 1,161 inhabitants. West Mount Vernon has a station on the New York and Harlem Rail Road, two churches, and contains 630 inhabitants. East Mount Vernon contains 275 inhabitants; Waverly and Washingtonville, are suburban villages inhabited principally by mechanics and men doing business in New York.

The village of Eastchester is situated in the south-east angle of the town, at the head of the Eastchester Bay, fifteen miles from the city of New York; it contains about three hundred and fifty inhabitants, fifty dwelling houses, one Episcopal and one Methodist church, post office, three taverns, four stores, and one grist mill. There is also a convenient landing,<sup>a</sup> from whence sail several sloops trading with the New York market.

The first settlement in this town appears to have been commenced near the Indian path, (subsequently known as the Westchester path or Kingsbridge road,) leading to the wading place, cir. 1664, at a spot called Hutchinson's. "That is where the house stood at the meadows and uplands to Hutchinson's river"<sup>b</sup>

In 1666 it was by royal charter enacted, "That the plantation shall continue and retain ye name of EASTCHESTER, by which name and style it shall be forever hereafter distinguished and known, &c"

The early planters in order to concentrate their dwellings as much as possible, (so as to protect themselves and families,) laid out the original farms in narrow strips called home lots, which radiated from the village fort in all directions.

At a meeting of the inhabitants, held Oct. 16, 1675, it was resolved, "That we will forthwith fit William Haiden's house by his land, soe as that it may, by God's helpe and blessing, answer our honorable governor's order and our own preservation. At the same time John Jackson, Richard Hoadley and Samuel Drake, jun., were chosen to stake out the place as aforementioned for the said fortification; also John Jackson and Richard Shute were chosen to the constable to be overseers for the carrying on the said works; and it was further agreed, that for a man's day's work, (provided he do an honest day's work,) he shall be allowed two shillings and sixpence a day, for a man; and for their cattle, cart, or tackling to do the work, or four oxen, shall be allowed six shillings a day; for two oxen, five shillings per day; and so begin the said work on Thurs-

<sup>a</sup> At an early period called Sillick's landing, A. D. 1676.

<sup>b</sup> Extracts from Pell's grant.



day next, it being the 17th of this instant, A. D. 1675."<sup>a</sup> The above structure (commonly called the General Fort) was erected by the village farmers, on the hill north-west of Mr. Philemon Fowler's residence.<sup>b</sup> The ruins of this Fort were distinctly visible thirty years ago.

Upon the 1st day of Dec. 1675, Samuel Drake, sen., was appointed by the inhabitants of Eastchester "to appear at the honorable Court of Sessions against Mr. Pell, concerning Eastchester work as not being a fort."<sup>c</sup>

By the Governor's orders it appears to have been dismantled the following year; for on the 4th of Sept., 1676, we find the inhabitants agreeing "to employ a man to tear or to take down the stockadoes according to our Governor's order; also on the same occasion, Richard Shute was chosen to go to Westchester to hire or make an agreement with John Hudson to carry the stockadoes of Eastchester down to Yorke."<sup>d</sup>

Near the fort, was located the general fold, into which all cattle were driven nightly for protection. The fold appears to have been constructed sometime prior to 1684.

The first school-house was erected in 1683, for at a public meeting of the inhabitants, held on the 15th of October of that year, it was ordered, "that a school-house be erected upon a site between the property of Richard Shute and William Haiden, and encouragement given to Mr. Morgan Jones to become the school-master."<sup>e</sup>

This building occupied the site of the present village school-house. Thus the ground has been used for this purpose one hundred and sixty-four years.

In 1685 it was agreed to build a town house, fourteen feet long and twelve feet broad, and to set it up by the highway side between the houses of Captain William Haiden and Richard Shute.

Beside the home lots, the proprietors held equal shares in the planting lands, (situated on the west side of Rattlesnake brook,) the commons, or Conoval meadows, and the sheep pasture.

At a town meeting, held 21st February, 1705, the inhabitants did agree by vote, "that all the land below Annhooks brook, and also a strait line from the old meadow to the head of Rattlesnake brook, beside

---

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. vol. 1.

<sup>b</sup> This gentleman who for nearly half a century filled the office of senior warden of St. Paul's church, Eastchester, was a descendant of Henry Fowler, one of the original patentees of this town. His father was William Fowler, the son of Joseph, whose family once held the Seton farm. The brother of Joseph was Col. Jonathan Fowler, the father of Abraham, whose son the Rev. John Fowler, now owns the old Fowler mansion and estate.

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>d</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>e</sup> Town Rec.

all the land between Hutchinsons brook, and Rattlesnake brook, to the extent of the half mile shall be for a perpetual sheep pasture."<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 30th of May, 1707, John Drake and Edmund Ward were chosen sheep-masters by the freeholders of Eastchester.

The town and village of Eastchester were distinguished, in our early colonial annals, for the active part they took in favor of Governor Leisler; for we find "Leisler's party strengthened on the 3d of June, 1689, by the addition of six captains and four hundred men in New York, and a company of seventy men from Eastchester, who had all subscribed on that day a solemn declaration to preserve the Protestant religion and the fort of New York for the Prince of Orange and the Governor whom the Prince might appoint as their protector."<sup>b</sup>

The pleasant village green in front of St. Paul's church was formerly used as a general training ground for this section of the county; and here, too, the county elections were not unfrequently held. The following article is taken from the *New York Weekly Journal* of Monday, Dec. 24, 1733, "containing the freshest advices, foreign and domestic:"—

"Westchester, Oct. 29th, 1733.

"On this day Lewis Morris, Esq., late chief justice of this province, was, by a majority of voices, elected a representative from the county of Westchester. \* \* Election of great expectation; the court and country's interest was exerted (as is said) to the utmost. I shall give my readers a particular account of it, as I had it from a person that was present at it. Nicholas Cooper, Esq., high sheriff of the said county, having, by papers affixed to the church of Eastchester and other public places, given notice of the day and place of election, without mentioning any time of the day when it was to be done, which made the electors on the side of the late judge very suspicious that some fraud was intended—to prevent which, about fifty of them kept watch upon and about the green Eastchester (the place of election) from 12 o'clock the night before till the morning of that day. The other electors, beginning to move on Sunday afternoon and evening, so as to be at New Rochelle by midnight, their way lay through Harrison's Purchase, the inhabitants of which provided for their entertainment as they passed each house in their way, having a table plentifully covered for that purpose. About midnight they all met at the house of William Le Count, at New Rochelle, whose house, not being large enough to entertain so great a number, a large fire was made in the street, by which they sat till daylight, at which time they began to move. They were joined on the hill at the east end of the town by about seventy horse of the electors of the lower part of the county, and then proceeded towards the place of election in the following order, viz.; First rode two trumpeters and three violins; next four of the principal freeholders, one of which carried a banner, on one side of which was affixed, in gold capitals, 'King George,' and on the other, in golden capitals, 'Liberty and Law;' next followed the candidate,

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. vol. ii.

<sup>b</sup> Smith's History of New York, English edition, p. 59.

Lewis Morris, Esq., late chief justice of this province, then two colors, and at sun rising they entered upon the green of Eastchester, the place of election, followed by above three hundred horse of the principal freeholders of the county (a greater number than had ever appeared for one man since the settlement of that county.) After having rode three times round the green, they went to the houses of Joseph Fowler and — Child, who were well prepared for their reception; the late chief justice was met, on his alighting, by several gentle men who came there to give their votes for him. About 11 o'clock appeared the candidate of the other side, William Forster, Esq., schoolmaster, appointed by the Society for Propagation of the Gospel, and lately made, by commission from his Excellency, (the present governor,) Clerk of the Peace and Common Pleas in that county, which commission, it is said, he purchased for the valuable consideration of one hundred pistoles, given the governor: next him came two ensigns, borne by two of the freeholders; then followed the Honorable James De Lancy, Esq., chief justice of the province of New York, and the Honorable Frederick Phillipse, Esq., second judge of the said province and baron of the exchequer, attended by about a hundred and seventy horse of the freeholders and friends of the said Forster and the two judges: they entered the green on the east side, and, riding twice round it, their word was 'No Land Tax.' As they passed, the second judge very civilly saluted the late chief justice by taking off his hat, which the late judge returned in the same manner, some of the late judge's party crying out 'No Excise;' and one of them was heard to say (though not by the judge) 'No pretender;' upon which, Forster, the candidate, replied, 'I will take notice of you:' they, after that, retired to the house of — Baker, which was prepared to receive and entertain them. About an hour after, the high sheriff came to town finely mounted, the housings and holster caps being scarlet, richly laced with silver, belonging to —. Upon his approach, the electors on both sides went into the green where they were to elect, and after having read his majesty's writ, bid the electors proceed to the choice, which they did, and a great majority appeared for Mr. Morris, the late judge; upon which, a poll was demanded, but by whom is not known to the relator, though it was said by many to be done by the sheriff himself. Morris, the candidate, several times asked the sheriff upon whose side the majority appeared, but could get no other reply but that a poll must be had, and accordingly, after about two hours delay in getting benches, chairs and tables, they began to poll. Soon after, one of those called Quakers, a man of known worth and estate, came to give his vote for the late judge. Upon this, Forster, and the two Fowlers, Moses and William, chosen by him to be inspectors, questioned his having an estate, and required of the sheriff to tender him the book to swear, in due form of law, which he refused to do; but offered to take his solemn affirmation, which both by the laws of England and the laws of this province was indulged, to the people called Quakers, and had always been practised, from the first election of representatives, in this province, to this time, and never refused; but the sheriff was deaf to all that could be alleged on that side; and notwithstanding that he was told by the late chief justice, and James Alexander, Esq., one of his Majesty's council, and counsellor at law, and by William Smith, Esq., counsellor at law, that such a procedure was contrary to law, and a violent attempt of the liberties of the people, he still persisted in re-

fusing the said Quaker to vote, and in like manner did refuse seven and thirty Quakers more—men of known and visible estates. This Cooper, now high sheriff of the said county, is said not only to be a stranger in that county, but not having a foot of land, or other visible estate in it, unless very lately granted, and it is believed he has not where withall to purchase any. The polling had not been long continued before Mr. Edward Stephens, a man of a very considerable estate in the said county, did openly, in the hearing of all the freeholders there assembled, charge William Forster, Esq., the candidate on the other side, with being a Jacobite, and in the interest of the Pretender, and that he should say to Mr. William Willett (a person of good estate and known integrity, who was at that time present and ready to make oath to the truth of what was said) that true it was he had taken the oaths to his Majesty, King George, and enjoyed a place in the government under him, which gave him bread; yet notwithstanding that, should — James come into England, he should think himself obliged to go there and fight for him. This was loudly and strongly urged to Forster's face, who denied it to be true; and no more was said of it at that time. About eleven o'clock that night the poll was closed, and it stood thus :—

For the late Chief Justice,	-	-	-	231
“ Quakers,	-	-	-	38
				<hr/>
				269
For William Forster, Esq.,	-	-	-	151
For difference,	-	-	-	118
				<hr/>
				269

So that the late chief justice carried it by a great majority, without the Quakers. Upon closing the poll the other candidate, Forster, and the sheriff wished the late chief justice much joy. Forster said he hoped the late judge would not think the worse of him for setting up against him, to which the judge replied, he believed he was put upon it against his inclinations, but that he was highly blameable, and who did or should know better for putting the sheriff, who was a stranger, and ignorant in such matters, upon making so violent an attempt upon the liberty of the people, which would expose him to ruin if he were worth £10,000, if the people aggrieved should commence suit against him. The people made a loud huzza, which the late chief judge blamed very much, as what he thought not right. Forster replied, he took no notice of what the common people did, since Mr. Morris did not put them upon the doing of it.

The indentures being sealed, the whole body of electors waited on their new representative to his lodgings with trumpets sounding, and violins playing, and in a little time took their leave of him. Thus ended the Westchester election to the general satisfaction.

New York, November 5th. On Wednesday, 31st October, the late chief justice, but now representative, for the county of Westchester, landed in this city about five o'clock in the evening, at the ferry stairs. On his landing he was saluted by a general fire of the guns from the merchant vessels lying in the road, and was received by great numbers of the most considerable merchants and in-



habitants of this city, and by them, with loud acclamations of the people as he walked the streets, conducted to the Black Horse tavern, where a handsome entertainment was prepared for him at the charge of the gentlemen who received him, and in the middle of one side of the room was fixed a tablet with golden capitals, "KING GEORGE, LIBERTY, AND LAW."<sup>a</sup>

The road which passes through the village green on the north side of the church, was formerly called the Kingsbridge turnpike. This road appears to have been first opened in 1671, as we find in that year, "Mr. John Pell and Mr. John Richbell appointed to lay out the new road to New England, through Eastchester."<sup>b</sup> The Kingsbridge road was the first stage route established between New York and Boston in 1732. "The coach, which would at the present time be thought an extremely slow one, was fourteen days in the journey, carrying news to and fro once a month."<sup>c</sup>

Beneath the shade of the venerable locusts (which still adorn the green,) stood the village stocks, erected in 1720.<sup>d</sup> Embedded in the bark of one of the trees, may be seen the iron staple to which culprits were formerly attached and publicly whipped. Upon the green, between the locust trees and the present church yard, stood the old parish church, built by the Independents about 1699.

The first settlers of Eastchester, like the people in general of that day, paid early attention to religion, to the support of the gospel, and the institutions of the Church to which they belonged. The congregational church in this place was gathered in 1665; for, in that year it was ordered: "That all and every one of us, or that shall be of us, do pay unto the minister according to his mead," also, "that we give new encouragement to Mr. Brewster each other week, to give us a word of exhortation."<sup>e</sup> A. D. 1670, it was further enacted: "That whereas we being a society of christians living together, have agreed that all of those of our association shall join together in meeting on Lord's days to tell about the worship of God; it was also resolved that whereas Moses Hoit being deserter, and being behind, and not seeming to be willing to contribute unto our minister, whereupon the inhabitants of Eastchester have agreed that the said Moses shall be presented unto the next Court of Sessions," &c.

Upon the 29th of July, 1674, Richard Shute was chosen for to go to our honored governor as a representative for the village of Eastchester,

<sup>a</sup> New York Weekly Journal, 1733, No. viii.

<sup>b</sup> Assize Rec. Alb.

<sup>c</sup> Bridgman's Hort. Rep. 1846.

<sup>d</sup> The stocks consisted of a rude wooden instrument, firmly secured in the ground, into which the offenders' hands and feet were locked. It was once a common mode of punishment, but since the Revolution has fallen into disuse.—*Editor*.

<sup>e</sup> See Covenant.

upon the occasion that we may have the Rev. Ezekiel Fogge to be established and confirmed by our honorable governor, and also the humble request to have the liberty or grant to build a Chapel of Ease, and not to be paying toward Westchester church's building."

The following day, at a public meeting of the inhabitants of Eastchester, it was resolved by vote, "to go jointly unto Westchester, and so speake with the Rev. Mr. Fogge, by reason we heard that Mr. Fogge did express himself to be desirous, and also willing to live and settle among us in Eastchester; in consideration whereof, we are willing to manifest our acceptance to embrace his good company, and shall provide for his present comfort, and likewise for his future livelihood."

Upon the 5th of September, 1677, it was agreed, "that if it be the will of God to bring a minister to settle among us we pay him £40 a year, for his subsistence, and also provide him a house and land for his use during the time he stays here as our minister. At this meeting it was resolved to send Philip Pinckney and Samuel Drake, Sen., as representatives to Westchester to the town meeting to treat with that town for the providing a minister."

The 31st day of March, 1678, was appointed by the inhabitants of Eastchester, "to be kept as a day of fasting and prayer, that it will please Almighty God to withdraw His judgments from us. As in some measure, according to our honored governor's order to keep the said day in the best manner we can attain unto."

Mr. Pinckney appears to have been selected to carry on the said day of humiliation.

It was further agreed on the same occasion, "that we will meet together on Sabbath days, for time to come to celebrate the worship and service of God, in the best manner that we can attain unto."

It was also decided by vote, "that we will pay towards the carrying on the said Sabbath day's services, by a free will offering for the year ensuing, the following sums:—

	s. d.		s. d.
William Haiden,	14 0	John Tompkins,	08 0
Richard Shute,	12 0	Will. Gregier.,	05 0
Nathaniel Tompkins,	10 0	Henry Fowler,	04 0
John Pinckney,	10 0	Henry Creway,	02 0
Richard Hoadly,	10 0	Samuel Drake,	15 0
John Drake,	10 0		

Upon the 17th of December, the inhabitants of Eastchester agreed to pay £40 a year unto Mr. Morgan Jones, minister of Newtown, L. I. "That is to say, to be paid unto the said minister, for his encouragement

to administer the word of God unto us, as our minister; and that we the said inhabitants, do engage to pay the above said sum of £40 in good provincial pay, at the price according to the same of this government; provided, that the said Mr. Jones do come and live among us, and perform the office of a minister, and to pay it by vote."

Feb. 11th, 1680, we find the Rev. Morgan Jones, officiating in the village of Westchester.<sup>a</sup>

During the year 1684, Eastchester appears to have been united with Westchester in the support of a pastor; for, in the spring of the same year, it was resolved, "that the justices and vestrymen of West and Eastchester, and Yonkers, do accept of Mr. Warham Mather as our minister for one whole year."<sup>b</sup>

At a public meeting of the inhabitants, held Sept. 5th, 1685, it was resolved to contribute the following salary towards the maintenance of a minister:—

	£	s.	d.		£	s.	d.
Daniel Drake, Jr.,	1	0	0	William Gray,	0	10	0
Richard Shute,	1	5	0	John Clarkson,	0	5	0
Moses Hoite,	1	0	0	Thomas Norton,	0	6	0
Richard Hoadley,	0	15	0	John Shute,	0	5	0
John Pinckney,	1	0	0	Thomas Pinckney,	0	5	0
John Drake,	0	15	0	Walter Lancaster,	0	10	0
John Wearford,	0	15	0	Thomas Keurkin,	0	7	0
Cornell Goding,	0	12	6	do. Jun'r,	0	5	0
Henry Fowler,	0	13	8	John Coe,	0	10	0
John Joan,	0	10	0	Nathaniel White.	0	10	0

This present testifieth, that we whose names are above written, do engage to pay the said several sums by us, every particular man, to pay as above said, unto Mr. Morgan Jones, for the carrying on the work of the ministry for this present year ensuing, beginning the said year, from the day of his coming, &c., hither, and carrying on the said work, and allow the said payment in good Indian corn, at 2s. for a bushel, winter wheat at 5s. by a bushel, &c."

Mr. Riker in his annals of Newtown, says:—

"The Rev. Morgan Jones had again changed his ministerial relations. The people of Eastchester had long desired to have him, and, perhaps, had enjoyed his services for a few months in the fall and winter of 1683. They now afford a liberal inducement, and he began to officiate there August 3d, 1685. The original agreement with him at Newtown, never

<sup>a</sup> See Westchester.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester Rec.

having been fulfilled, either as respected his salary or the fitting up of his residence; he applied to the governor and council for redress. A summons to the town authorities to appear and answer, was sufficient; they satisfied Mr. Jones, and on April 27th, 1686, he gave them receipts in full.

Of his services in Newtown little is known beyond what has been related. His administration of baptism and the marriage vow is incidentally mentioned. He was a ready speaker, and of a conciliatory disposition; but different accounts are given of his character and qualifications. Dr. Calomy, in speaking of him while settled in Wales, intimates that he wanted capacity, but was honest. But Dr. Mather in his *Magnalia*, sets him in a positively bad light; yet I attach but little importance to his statements about Mr. Jones, because they are not only improbable and puerile, but are given at second-hand, and not on the personal knowledge of the doctor—whose credulity was equal to his learning. The history of Mr. Jones, so far as known, affords nothing positive against him; and it may be stated in his favor, that he enjoyed the acquaintance and confidence of Dr. Thomas Lloyd, of Pennsylvania, and his brother Charles Lloyd, Esq., of Dolobran, Wales, who were his college mates at Oxford."<sup>a</sup>

The Rev. Morgan Jones was succeeded by Mr. Samuel Goding who received instructions to read in the Bible and other good sermon books, and so to carry on the Sabbath exercises in East Chester. On the 30th of November, 1692, the inhabitants of East Chester agreed to pay the following sums towards the support of Mr. Samuel Goding:

Henry Fowler offers one bushel of good winter wheat.

John Tompkins	3 0	John Drake	4 0
John Clark	2 0	John Pinckney	5 pecks of Indian corn.
Joseph Drake	4 0	William Gray	2 0
Thomas Pinckney	3 0	John Shute	3 0
Isaac Taylor	2 0	Ben. Taylor	2 0
Thomas Shute		4 6.	

Upon the 9th of May, 1693, it was resolved that a meeting-house should be built according to the dimensions agreed upon. "On the 16th inst. it was agreed that the whole charge of building the said house shall be paid according unto the estates of every particular person's list taken." At the same time "Captain William Haiden, John Drake, John Pinckney, Richard Shute and Henry Fowler, Senior, were chosen overseers to superintend the building of the meeting-house."

By an act of Provincial Assembly passed 21st September, 1693, (confirmed 11th of May, 1697), East Chester became one of the four pre-cincts<sup>b</sup> of West Chester Parish.

<sup>a</sup> Riker's Annals of Newtown, L. I., p. 114.

<sup>b</sup> Acts of Assembly from 1691 to 1725. As early as 1669 we find the following order in the Town Rec., "The bounds of our parish to be preambulated according to law," Book I. p. 23.



At a town meeting held on the 15th December, 1693, "Moses Hoit, junior, and others were chosen to take list of estimation according to the town's agreement for making a rate for the payment of the carpenter's work for building the meeting-house."

On the 1st of January, 1693-4, "William Haiden, John Drake and Richard Shute were chosen to receive forty pounds as according to the free will offering and to act and do and lay out the said several sums for the town. Also it was agreed that these men have full power to receive the said sums and lay them out towards building the said meeting-house and to render account thereof to the town."

At a town meeting held 23d January, 1694-5, the inhabitants "agreed by vote to lay out half an acre of land to be set out for a *parsonage-lot*, to be reserved for the use of the town, to be reserved for that use forever, which above said land is lying in and being upon the *green* in Eastchester."

On the 31st of July, 1696, "it was determined to lighten the meeting-house by a lantern to every seat of the same." The following is a plan of the meeting-house, with the names of pew-holders, as represented in the town records.

Mr. Justice Pinckney, Richard White, Thomas White, John White, Mates Fowler, The south side belong to this.	Henry Fowler, Sen. John Pinckney, Moses Hoite, Sen., Moses Hoite, Jun. John Haute, Robert Stonith, John Lancaster, East to this.
Capt. John Drake, Ensign Drake, John Tompkins, Nathan l Tompkins, Mr. Will. Chaterton, a place of John Clark, South side of this.	Isaac Taylor, Isaac Lawrence, Edward Hancock, Thomas Vail, Jeremiah Fowler, Isaac Odell, John Coe, Joseph Coe, West to this.

1692

The old church of Eastchester, like that of Westchester, would seem to have been a frame building twenty-eight feet square, and about eighteen feet to the eaves; the sides, as well as roof, being shingled, which latter met together in an apex. The interior was wainscoted, and a gallery was constructed in it, but soon after the commencement of the Rev-

olutionary war, it was destroyed by fire. The foundation stones upon which the building rested, were visible in part, as late as 1793.<sup>a</sup> There is a tradition in the Pinckney family that one of its early members presented the land to the church, embracing the present green, church-yard and adjoining property, for which they enjoy the privilege of free interment.

At a town meeting held 22d July, 1697, "It was agreed by vote to meet at the meeting-house on the 10th day of August, next ensuing, at sun half an hour high in the morning, in order to the cutting brush about the common in Eastchester woods, and to appear at the beat of the drum."

On the 2d of January, 1698, the inhabitants agreed by vote, "That the address which is drawn up to be presented to His Excellency, concerning indockin (inducting) a minister, the said inhabitants have and do agree that the officers of said town shall asign (sign) the said address in behalf of themselves and the rest of the inhabitants, or any of our adjacent neighbors."

The Governour, however, refused to induct a dissenting minister, on the ground that such a one was not qualified to accept, and that the law intended no other than an *orthodox* minister, for if otherwise, nothing but confusion would ensue about the disposal even amongst the Dissenters themselves.

The inhabitants of East Chester finding the Governour bent upon the settlement of a national ministry, next attempted to annul the act of 1693, by making themselves a distinct parish from Westchester. This appears by the following extract from the town records :

"April 11th, 1699, it was agreed upon, by a full and free vote, to petition unto His Excellency and Honorable Council and General Assembly, in behalf of ourselves and the rest of our neighbors in the Yonkers and Mile Square, to desire that we may be taken from Westchester and have liberty to call a minister of our own."

On the 26th of December, 1699, it was resolved at a public meeting held in East Chester, "To haste and erect the meeting-house, and that it shall be finished at or before the 31st of May, in the year of our Lord, 1700, and in case the said work be not finished, that then John Drake and Jeremiah Fowler shall set men at work and finish the said work on the town account."<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Rev. William S. Coffey's Commemorative Discourse, 1865, at Centennial Anniversary of St. Paul's church.

<sup>b</sup> Town Records. "By an act of Assembly passed this year, the trustees of each town were to make a yearly rate for building a church where wanting, &c." 2 Will. III. A. D. 1699. Laws of N. Y. vol. 1. Chap. 83, p. 37.

At a meeting of the inhabitants, 20th of February, 1700, we find them setting aside a small quantity of land as a provision for a minister, according to their constant method, and which was used in all other townships within the Colony, as follows :

"The said inhabitants have laid out one piece of land containing 18 rods in length, and easterly 5 rod, and at the western end it is 5 rod in breadth; the said land is set, lying and being in East Chester, 1 rod off from John Lancaster's meadow, and at the west end half a rod by the home meadow of the said John Lancaster's, which land is for the use of the town for a parsonage lot, which said lot was laid out by the consent of Mr. Thomas Pinckney, justice of the peace, and Richard Shute, as witnesseth that the said land is given to be so ner (near) his meadow.

The mark of JOHN  LANCASTER."a

Upon this occasion it was agreed "That the minister's salary be paid by rate for time to come."

On the 16th of May, 1699 or 1700, "Ten acres of land were voted by the inhabitants of Eastchester to Nicollas Conklin, in consideration that he shall part with his house, home, lot and orchard, for the use of a minister, in case the said minister do accept of this above said house and home lot." Mr. Henery Fowler at the same time was directed to "Wriggt a letter to Mr. Morgan to come over and see whether he doth well approve of what the inhabitants have done for his maintenance."b

It was also "Agreed to pay Mr. Morgan £30 current, for salary," which sum was ordered to be raised upon all rateable estates.

At a public town meeting, held about this time, "Mr. Joseph Morgan did declare that he did not like that home lot of Nicholas Concklin's, and also that the said piece of land is not a whole home lot."c

Upon the 12th of June, 1700, twenty acres of land were voted to Mr. Morgan.

"At a public town meeting, called by order of the inhabitants, Oct. 4th, 1700, the said inhabitants directed Mr. Henry Fowler and Richard Shute, (with the rest of the intended church,) to write unto the Reverend ministers in New England concerning the ordination, they having the assistance of the Rev. Mr. Morgan; also that Mr. Thomas Pinkney, Henery Fowler and Richard Shute, shall wright unto His Excellency for his approbation, that he will be pleased to induct (the word induct is marked out in the original MS. and the letters app written over it) our minister, the Rev. Joseph Morgan." At the same time, "Joseph Drake and Thomas Pinckney were authorized to agree with a carpenter to build a pulpit on the town's account."

a Town Records, vol. i. p. 20.

b Town Rec., vol. i. p. 20.

c Town Rec., vol. i. p. 4.

Having now obtained the services of a minister, and finding the Church pouring in upon them, the inhabitants once more determined to petition the Assembly for an act to separate them from Westchester. Whereupon, at a town meeting, 14th of October, 1700, "Mr. Henry Fowler, sen., was authorized by the inhabitants to proceed to New-York to petition the General Assembly for the calling and settling a minister with ourselves, and that we may be freed from Westchester in the ministry."

12th of King William III, A. D., 1700, occurs an act of the General Assembly, entitled as follows:—

AN ACT FOR DECLARING THE TOWN OF EASTCHESTER IN THE COUNTY OF WESTCHESTER, A DISTINCT PARISH FROM THE TOWN OF WESTCHESTER IN THE COUNTY AFORESAID.

*Passed the 29th of October, 1700.*

"Whereas, by an Act of the General Assembly of this Province, entitled:—An Act for settling a ministry and raising a maintenance for them in the City of New-York, County of Richmond, Westchester and Queens County, it is amongst other things declared and enacted, that the towns of Westchester, Eastchester, Lower Yonkers and the Manor of Pelham, in the county of Westchester, should be a parish together, for the better maintaining of a good and sufficient Protestant minister; and, whereas, since the making of said act, it has been found inconvenient, and to the great discouragement of religion and the public worship of God, for the inhabitants of Eastchester to travel to Westchester aforesaid, to be present at the preaching of the Word of God; wherefore, the said Inhabitants and Freeholders of the town of Eastchester aforesaid, have, by their humble Petition to the House of Representatives, now convened in General Assembly, most humbly prayed, that it might be declared and enacted.

"I. AND BE IT DECLARED AND ENACTED, by His Excellency, the Governour and Council and Representatives, now convened in General Assembly, and by the authority of the same, that the said town of Eastchester, in the County of Westchester be for henceforth and forever hereafter, separated from the parish of Westchester, Eastchester, Lower Yonkers, and the Manor of Pelham, to all intents, constructions, and purposes whatsoever; the said act, entitled an Act for settling the ministry and raising a maintenance for them, in the City of New-York, County of Richmond, Westchester and Queens County, or any other act to the contrary thereof in any ways notwithstanding.

"II. AND BE IT FURTHER ENACTED by the authority aforesaid, that the said Town of Eastchester, in the County of Westchester, be, and is hereby declared to be and remain forever a distinct parish from the Parish of Westchester, Eastchester, Lower Yonkers, and the Manor of Pelham, by the name and style of the Parish of Eastchester, in the County of Westchester; Provided, that the Freeholders and Inhabitants thereof do maintain a *good orthodox Protestant minister* in the said town of Eastchester; any law, usage or custom to the contrary thereof, in any ways notwithstanding."



The above Act was disannulled by Queen Anne in Council in 1702-3, as appears from the following in a letter addressed by the Lords of Trade to Lord Cornbury, dated Whitehall, Jan. 26th, 1702, occurs the following :

"P. S.—Since the writing of this letter, upon consideration of the Act for declaring the town of Eastchester to be a distinct parish, &c., and of the reasons offered to us against it by the Right Reverend the Lord Bishop of London, we have prepared a report to be laid before Her Majesty with our humble opinion that the same be disallowed."<sup>a</sup>

Again their lordships writing to the same, dated Whitehall, April 7th, 1703, say :

"We have told you in a former letter that we had prepared a report with our opinion for disannulling the Act declaring the Town of East Chester to be a distinct Parish, &c. Which having accordingly been done, We likewise send you a Copy of Her Majesty's Order in Council for that effect."<sup>b</sup>

June the 12th, 1700.—"The town exchanged land with Mr. Joseph Morgan, pastor of the church in East Chester."

The inhabitants of Eastchester also at the same time "did give and grant two acres of land, to be laid out where it shall not be within the Town's sheep pasture, unto Mr. Joseph Morgan, minister, &c."<sup>c</sup>

"June 26, 1700. At a town meeting held by the inhabitants of Eastchester, the inhabitants have agreed that the minister's note and the town rate shall be paid by agreement, as the town rate was payd in the year 1694."<sup>d</sup>

"At a public town meeting called by order of the inhabitants, Oct. 4th, 1700, the said inhabitants directed Mr. Henry Fowler and Richard Shute, (with the rest of the intended church,) to write unto the reverend ministers in New England concerning the ordination; they having the assistance of the Rev. Mr. Morgan. Also, that Mr. John Pinckney, Henry Fowler and Richard Shute, shall write unto his Excellency for his approbation, that he will be pleased to induct our minister the Rev. Joseph Morgan; at the same time Joseph Drake and John Shute, were chosen to hire a man to build a pulpit on the town account."

March the 6th, 1701, the inhabitants "exchanged 4 rods of land with Joseph Morgan, pastor of the Church of Eastchester."

January 12th, 1702, it was resolved by the justices and vestrymen of

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. Col. M. S. S., London Doc. 15, vol. iv. p. 1026.

<sup>b</sup> Ditto, p. 1038.

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec. vol. vii, p. 24.

<sup>d</sup> Town Rec. vol. vii, p. 24.

the Parish of Westchester that there shall be raised £50 for the minister's maintenance, the proportion of Eastchester being £9, 17s. 6d.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 3d of April, 1702, John Drake and Thomas Pinckney were authorized, "To agree with a carpenter to make a pulpit, and set up the gallery and repair the window shutters, &c."

At the same time, John Tompkins, jun., was also chosen "To beat the drum constantly, every Lord's day, if occasion require, and at other times when it is needful, and to keep the drum in repair; and the said inhabitants do promise to pay him therefor 9 pence a piece, every one."

"April 14th, 1702, the inhabitants of Eastchester have given liberty unto Mr. Joseph Morgan, our minister, that is to say the use of that part of meadow by and near unto Saml. Water's house, and that he shall have the use of the said meadow for the term of ten years after the date hereof."<sup>b</sup>

On the 18th of May, 1703, the inhabitants of Eastchester appointed Mr. Thos. Pinkney and Mr. Edmund Ward "To draw an obligation with Mr. Joseph Morgan, minister, for one year, for his encouragement, and to see who will subscribe thereunto for the payment of the town."

Mr. Morgan, who must have resigned the pastoral charge of Eastchester sometime during the above-mentioned year, was the son of Lieut. Joseph Morgan, (of what is now Preston County by his wife Dorothy, daughter of Thomas Parke, of Weathersfield), the third son of James Morgan, a native of Wales, who was born in 1607, and who emigrated to Roxbury, Mass., in 1638. The Rev. Joseph was born at Preston 6th of November, 1671. "His name stands on the catalogue of Yale College as one of the graduates in the class of 1702, but he was probably not a regular graduate; and the degree of A. B. was doubtless conferred upon him as an honorary one—for according to the "History of Greenwich," Conn., he was settled over the First Church, Greenwich, in 1697, and in 1700, dismissed and settled over Second Church, Greenwich. He was also a regular preacher in Bedford, Westchester County, N. Y., in 1699, and was ordained by the Fairfield County Association in 1700,"<sup>c</sup> and soon after called to Eastchester. "From 1704 to 1708, he was again the minister at Greenwich, Conn. In 1709, he was settled as pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Freehold, New Jersey, and in 1728 was charged before the Synod with "practising astrology, countenancing promiscuous dancing, and transgressing in drink." These charges were not sustained. He resigned, however, and took charge of the two churches at Hopewell and Maidenhead, N. J.; and in 1736, was

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. vol. vii, p. 57.

<sup>b</sup> Vestry Books of Westchester Parish.

<sup>c</sup> Morgan Family, by N. H. Morgan, Hartford, 1869.

again charged with intemperance, and suspended from the ministry—but was restored again in 1738, “on the intercession of many good people.”<sup>a</sup> Romeyn, in his history of the First Reformed Dutch Church at Hackensack, says that “In 1709 the Dutch Church in Monmouth County obtained the services of the Rev. Joseph Morgan, who was there for twenty-two years.”<sup>b</sup> Mr. Morgan was a preacher of considerable note, and several of his discourses and sermons were published; among them, one on the death of his eldest son, Joseph, a graduate of Yale College, 1723, and died the same year; a “Reply to a Railer against the Doctrine of Election,” 1724; “Sin its own Punishment,” 1728; and “Love to our Neighbors,” third edition, 1749.<sup>c</sup> In his letters dated at Freehold in 1721 and 1722, he speaks of his two sons, one aged 17 and the other 11, as “good scholars,” and “one other son a little older;” this is evidently the Joseph whose death is above alluded to.<sup>d</sup>

“At a town meeting held by ye freeholders of East Chester ye 26th of January, 17<sup>th</sup>, it was voted that Moses Fowler should have and enjoy all ye land between ye land of Wm. Fowler that he bought of Joseph Morgan.”

On the 19th of February, 1717, James Morgan was appointed collector of Eastchester.

On the 15th of February, 1725, the names of James Morgan and Thomas Morgan appear as freeholders of the town.

To Mr. Morgan, as pastor of the Congregational or Presbyterian church at Eastchester, appears to have succeeded the celebrated William Tennent.

List of ministers or pastors of the Congregational or Presbyterian church of Eastchester.

INSTALL OR CALL.	PASTORS.	VACATED.
1665-6,	Rev. Nathaniel Brewster, B. D.,	Resigned.
1675,	Rev. Ezekiel Fogge,	“
1684,	Rev. Warham Mather, <sup>e</sup>	“
3d Aug., 1685,	Rev. Morgan Jones, A. M.,	“
30 Nov., 1692,	Rev. Samuel Goding,	“
1694,	Rev. Marmaduke Matthews,	“
1700,	Rev. Joseph Morgan, A.B.	“
1719.	Rev. William Tennent,	“

<sup>a</sup> History of Morgan Family, by N. H. Morgan.

<sup>b</sup> First Dis. at Dedication of First Dutch Church at Hackensack, N. J., by Rev. Theodore Romeyn, May 2, 1869.

<sup>c</sup> History of Morgan Family, by N. H. Morgan.

<sup>d</sup> Morgan Family, by N. H. Morgan. In the Town Record of Eastchester occur the following entries: “East Chester, the 27th day of January, 1703, Joseph Morgan, the son of Joseph Morgan and Sarah his wife, was born the 12th day of March, 1701.” This evidently records the birth of Joseph the eldest son, graduate of Yale College, who died 28th November, 1723. “Anne Morgan, the daughter of Joseph Morgan and Sarah his wife, was born the 4th day of July, 1702; Cornelia Morgan, the daughter of Joseph Morgan, was born the 31st day of October (1703). Entered by me, Edmund Ward, Recorder.” “Andrew Morgan, the son of Joseph Morgan and Sarah his wife, was born the 29th day of January, 1704-5.” Town Rec. Lib. ii, p. 43.

<sup>e</sup> See a letter from Warham Mather, in the Mather's Papers, published in Coll. MSS. Hist. Soc. (N. Y. Hist. Soc.).

Upon the 19th of November, 1702, the Rev. John Bartow was inducted by Governour Cornbury, into the parish church of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers and the Manor of Pelham, notwithstanding all the means used to prevent and disturb his settlement by the Independents; and as no "*good Orthodox Protestant minister*" had been maintained in this parish, in accordance with the late act, Mr. Bartow was considered legally inducted, and settled over all the rights and appurtenances of Westchester parish, of which the church at Eastchester formed a part. This fact the Independents or Presbyterians themselves acknowledged by paying their quota of £50 per annum, towards Mr. Bartow's support, according to the first settlement in 1693.

In the summary account of the state of the Church in the province of New York, as it was laid before the clergy, convened October 5th, 1704, at New York, by the appointment of his Excellency Edward Lord Viscount Cornbury and Colonel Francis Nicholson, it was stated, that "There is one independent congregation at Eastchester, whose minister designs to leave there, whose congregation upon his departure are resolved to join with the Church."<sup>a</sup>

Col. Caleb Heathcoate, in a letter to the secretary of the venerable Society for Propagating the Gospel in foreign parts, dated Manor of Scarsdale, November 9th, 1705, thus writes; "and thirdly, one Mr. Morgan, who was minister of Eastchester, promised me to conform."<sup>b</sup>

The following extract from a letter of the Rev. John Bartow, rector of the parish of Westchester, to the secretary of the Venerable Propagating Society, in 1707, shows most conclusively that the inhabitants of Eastchester finally embraced the Church of England, and accepted him as their minister.

"My Lord Cornbury requested me to go and preach in Eastchester; accordingly I went, (though some there had given out threatening words should I dare to come,) but tho' I was there very early, and the people had notice of my coming, their Presbyterian minister, Mr. Morgan, had begun service in the meeting-house, to which I went straightway and continued the whole time without interruption, and in the afternoon I was permitted to perform the Church of England service; Mr. Morgan being present, and neither he nor the people seemed dissatisfied, and after some time of preaching there afterwards, they desired me to come oftener; and I concluded to minister there once a month, which now I have done for about three years."

In regard to this conformity of the people of Eastchester to the Church of England, Dr. Howkins says:—"That the population of East-

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. vol. ii, 16,

<sup>b</sup> Town Rec. vol. i, 29.



chester was 400, who being Presbyterians, obtained an act, by which they were formed into a separate parish, and obtained a minister of their own persuasion; but on Mr. Bartow's coming among them, they were so well satisfied with the liturgy and doctrine of the Church, that they forsook their minister and conformed to the Church of England."

In an address to the venerable and honorable Society for Propagating the Gospel, the following account is given of the building of the church at Eastchester:—

"May it please the venerable and honorable Society for Propagating the Gospel—we, whose names are subscribed, do hereby certify that the Church of Eastchester was built in the year of our Lord, 1692, by subscription of the inhabitants of said town; and that Mr. Matthews, a Presbyterian minister, for about three years, and after him Mr. Morgan, a Presbyterian minister, did preach till such time as Mr. Bartow began to preach unto us in the year 1703, since which time it has been in his possession, and he comes and preaches at Eastchester once in four weeks during the winter, and once in eight weeks during the space of six months in the summer.

"And we further certify that the town of Eastchester was made a distinct parish from Westchester in the year 1700."

About this time the inhabitants addressed the following petition to Governor Cornbury, asking for an abatement in their annual quota and thanking him for directing Mr. Bartow to preach among them:—

#### PETITION FROM EASTCHESTER TO HIS EXCELLENCY, &c.

"The Humble Petition of John Drake, Joseph Drake and William Chadderton in the behalf of themselves and the inhabitants of Eastchester,

*Sheweth:*

That Col. Heatecote, did, at the request of your Excellency's Petitioners, move your Excellency to give directions that what the Vestry had layd on the parish of Westchester for incidental charges over the minister's rate and constable's allowance for allowing the same, might be abated from the quoota layd on our place, we being burthened with much more than our just proportion of that tax; that Col. Heatecote did thereupon inform your Excellency's Petitioner's, that your Excellency had been pleased to direct that some of the Justices which lived without the precincts, should make inquiry into that matter and make report thereof to your Excellency, but the Justices not being able before this time to get in the list of estates was the cause of the delay of that return, so hope your Excellency will pardon our not leavying what was layd upon us, by the late Vestry, and will, in your great goodness and justice, protect us from paying more than our fair and equal proportion, which we shall always most readily do, so long as your Excellency shall think fitt to continue us joyned to that Parish. We are exceeding thankful that your Excellency hath been pleased to direct Mr. Bartow to preach sometimes amongst us, for we assure your Excellency that 'tis our earnest desires to come under the Regulation of the Church of England

as by law established, and so is our minister, Mr. Morgan, for which reason we are desirous to continue him amongst us, and maintaine him by subscription untill such times as your Excellency shall think fitt to have the parishes in the County otherwise divided, which are at present so very inconvenient, that not half of the people can have the benefit of the ministry. Your Excellency we find by the return of the Justices, that our dividint of the late rate ought not to have been more than £7 5s. 6d., and the Vestry have layd £15 10s. upon us, and there being £7 10s. layd on the parish, besides the Minister's rate and the Constable's allowance for leavying the same, under the name of incidental charges, and that some, by the inequality of the division falling wholly upon us; we therefore, most humbly implore your Excellency to direct that we may pay no more at this time than £8, and for the future only our equal dividint, and as in duty bound, your Excellency's Petitioners shall Ever Pray, &c.

JOHN DRAKE,  
JOSEPH DRAKE,  
WILLIAM CHATTERTON."a

The foregoing petition shows conclusively, that although Eastchester had been declared a separate parish from Westchester, as early as 1700, yet the Colonial Governors still considered it as joined to that parish according to the prior act of 1693.

This the inhabitants also acknowledged by the annual election of three Vestrymen for the precinct and paying the yearly rates laid on the the parish. The choice of a minister, however, and providing for his support, had been lodged by the act of 1693, in the Vestry; and the choice of a Vestry in the people. Into the church and freehold of the parsonage lot (as it was then styled) of Eastchester, Mr. Bartow had been legally presented by the Vestry and inducted by the Governor's mandate, as we have already seen.

At a meeting held by the Justices and Vestry of Westchester, the 12th of December, 1705, "John Smith, of Eastchester, constable, in the year 1704, proved the payment of £9 17s. 6d., which is the full proportion of said Town for that year." The *Vestry agreed* that, "Mr. Bartow, if he pleased, shall preach at Eastchester every fourth Sabbath day, which was condescended to by Mr. Bartow."

In 1709-10, the Vestry next for Eastchester were Isaac Taylor, John Lancaster and Nathaniel Tompkins.

Upon the 25th of February, 1711-12, "at a town meeting held by the freeholders of Eastchester, the said freeholders did agree by vote, that Judge Drake, Isaac Taylor and Moses Fowler, should be empowered to constitute and hire a man or men, as they shall think proper, to repair and finish the meeting-house and making a pulpit in the same; and also

---

a Doc. Hist. of N. Y. vol. III. 92-8.

to have power to make a rate on all and every of the freeholders and inhabitants of the said town, that shall amount to as much money as shall defray the said charges." On the 20th of March following, this resolution was repealed and the same men empowered to "Repair the meeting-house, in making a pulpit and pew in it, and also seal and make seats in the same so far as the boards that are already bought will go."

The next year the Rev. John Bartow contributed £9 6s. 6d. towards rectifying the pews and seats in East and Westchester churches.

In 1718, Mr. Bartow informs the Society that some efforts were being made to introduce a Presbyterian minister at Eastchester. This must have been the celebrated William Tennent, who officiated here for a short time only, from whence he removed to Bedford.

#### MR. BARTOW TO THE SECRETARY.

[EXTRACT.]

*Westchester in the Province of New York,*  
Nov. 18th, 1718.

WORTHY SIR,

"I am sorry that I have occasion to acquaint the Society that there are endeavours now on foot to bring in a Presbyterian minister at Eastchester. Some of their main agents have been with me and signified their design, from which I laboured to dissuade them, but in vain; for they told me if I would undertake to come and preach every Lord's day in their town, they would be contented, otherwise, they would have a minister of their own. This has bred a division amongst the people, and some are for it and some against it; which schism, I think, would effectually be ended if they had a minister of the Church of England to reside amongst them."<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Bartow, writing to the Secretary in 1725, says:—"The pulpit and wainscoat of the church at Eastchester, are since decently painted, and a new gallery built, and the Presbyterian minister when he comes not permitted to officiate therein."

Upon the death of Mr. Bartow, the Rev. Thomas Standard, was induced "To the rectory of Westchester, the glebe thereof, and to all the rights and appurtenances of the same."

In the year 1728, Mr. Standard officiated every other Sunday at Eastchester and publicly catechised the children.<sup>b</sup>

"During Mr. Standards ministry here, some trouble-making spirits arose, who sought to upset the action of those Presbyterians, who joined the Church in Mr. Bartow's time, and get possession of the old building.

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS. from Archives at Fulham, vol. i, 555. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> Printed Abstracts of Ven. Soc.

But religious contracts were found to be as binding as civil bargains. Mr. Standard says, "The church of Eastchester was supposed to be included among the rights and appurtenances of Westchester parish; that Mr. Bartow was *legally* presented and *inducted* into the church, and died possessed of it; that *he* too was legally presented and inducted, and therefore laid claim to it as his *own proper right* exclusive of them, and so kept them out of it."<sup>a</sup>

In 1744, Mr. Standard, who had now taken up his residence in Eastchester, writes to the Secretary as follows:—

### MR. STANDARD TO THE SECRETARY.

[EXTRACT.]

*Eastchester, May 14th, 1744.*

REV. SIR,

"My Brother Vaughan informs me, that Archbishop Tennison hath left upon his will, £50 per annum, to be paid to the oldest missionary, being an Englishman, which missionary he saith I am, and that it will be necessary for me to go home in order to obtain it, which if I do, and apply to my Lord Chancellor, he doubts not of success; and he further adds, that Mr. Talbot received the same during his time. If you, good sir, know any thing of that affair, be pleased to communicate it to me and to intercede for leave for me to come home.

I am yours and the Venerable Society's  
very humble servant,

THOMAS STANDARD."<sup>b</sup>

The following year he informs the Society, that the parishes of East and Westchester are in a peaceable and growing state.

As Church business was at this time transacted with town matters, we find the inhabitants electing a sexton for Eastchester. On April the 1st, 1755, it was resolved, "That Richard Stevens be appointed grave-digger for the town, for the year ensuing, and to dig a grown person's grave for six shillings and three shillings for children." On the 7th of April, 1756, the town appointed the same individual for grave-digger and sexton for the town.

In 1758, Mr. Standard presented the bell to the church, which still summons the parishoners every Lord's day to the house of prayer, and by it, "He being dead, yet speaketh."

At the commencement of this year, the aged missionary was called to mourn over the grave of an affectionate wife, who came to her death in

<sup>a</sup> See Rev. Henry E. Duncan's Jubilee Sermon for 1851.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS. from Archives at Fulham, vol. ii, 152. (Hawk's). "In 1726, Mr. Delpech was schoolmaster at Eastchester.



a terrible manner, as appears from the following extract taken from the *New York Post Boy*, of February 6th, 1758:—

“We have the following most shocking and melancholy account from Eastchester, viz.:—That on Friday morning the 27th of January, Mrs. Mary Standard, aged about seventy years, wife of the Rev. Dr. Thomas Standard, of this place, was found dead on the chimney-hearth of one of the apartments in the house, having her head, the chief parts of both her breasts, with her left arm and shoulder entirely burnt to cinders. It appears that the unfortunate old gentleman and his more unfortunate old lady, had, upon some necessary occasion the evening before, agreed to lay separate; and the Doctor taking his leave, went to bed, leaving his wife sitting before the fire, where, it is imagined, the poor old gentleman must either have been seized with a fit, or in rising from her chair, had fallen into the fire, and being undoubtedly rendered unable to move herself, she became the most moving spectacle imaginable to the most affectionate and tender husband, who first discovered her in the morning.”

The Rev. Thomas Standard died at Eastchester, in January, 1760, at the advanced age of nearly eighty, and was buried by the side of his wife, beneath the chancel of the old church on the green. In 1818, their bodies were removed by order of the Vestry and interred under the communion table of the present edifice.<sup>a</sup>

The Rev. John Milner succeeded Mr. Standard, under the auspices of the Venerable Propagation Society, and was inducted rector of the parish church of Westchester, including the several districts of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers and the Manor of Pelham, on the 12th of June, 1761.

The following extracts from the town records relates to the parsonage lot described in 1695, as “Lying upon the Green in Eastchester:”—

“At a public town meeting called by the justices of the town to inquire into several encroachments on lands in said town, held in Eastchester, on Monday the 30th day of August, 1762, it was agreed that these men (Jonathan Fowler, Charles Vincent, John Fowler and Joseph Drake,) should regulate the parsonage, and to take a bond of Isaac Lawrence of indemnity, to deliver up the same to the town again at his decease.”<sup>b</sup>

It was during Mr. Milner’s ministry that the foundation of the present church was laid. In a letter to the secretary of the Venerable Society, dated Westchester, 1761, he says:—

<sup>a</sup> Their remains were found in a good state of preservation, but crumbled to pieces on exposure to the atmosphere. Tradition says, that Mr. Standard gave certain lands to the church on condition that the remains of himself and wife should be removed whenever the new edifice should be built.

<sup>b</sup> Town Records of Eastchester.

"The people of Eastchester have laid the foundation of a new church of stone, seventy-one feet by eighty-eight, in the room of a small decayed wooden building erected in the infancy of the settlement."

In the year 1766, Mark Christian was appointed sexton for the town, an office which he subsequently held under the trustees of the church. Upon the 1st of April, of that year, he was directed, "To take care of the Green, to see that hogs don't dig, and to dig graves, and to find a good bier."<sup>a</sup>

On the resignation of the Rev. Mr. Milner, the Rev. Dr. Seabury, afterwards Bishop of Connecticut, and the first American Bishop, was inducted rector of the parish church of Westchester and its precincts, 3d of Dec., 1766. June 25th, 1767, he writes to the secretary in these words:—

"At Eastchester, which is four miles distant, the congregation is generally larger than at Westchester. The old church in which they meet, as yet, is very cold. They have erected and just completed the roof of a large well built stone church, on which they have expended, they say, £700 currency; but their ability seems exhausted, and I fear I shall never see it finished. I applied last winter to his Excellency, Sir Henry Moore, for a brief in their favor, but the petition was rejected."

In 1777, he wrote to the Society:—"With regard to my own mission, I can only say, that it is utterly ruined." Services had been suspended for some time in Eastchester, and the congregation dispersed. At this period the church was used as an hospital, and subsequently served the purpose of a court house. The following item occurs in the records of the Court of Common Pleas:—

"At a Court of Oyer and Terminer and General Jail Delivery, held at the church at Eastchester, in and for the County of Westchester, on Tuesday, the 12th day of June, in the year of our Lord, 1787, present, the Honourable Richard Morris, Esq., Chief-Justice of the Supreme Court of Judicature, for the State of New York, Stephen Ward, Jonathan J. Tompkins, Ebenezer S. Burling and Benjamin Stevenson, Justices of Oyer and Terminer and General Jail Delivery for the County of Westchester, &c."

St. Paul's church, Eastchester, was first incorporated on the 12th of March, 1787, in pursuance of an Act of the Legislature, entitled:—

---

<sup>a</sup> At a town meeting held 7th of April, 1767, "It was agreed that Dr. Wright should not be molested in his burying yard on said Green in said town."—Town Records.

AN ACT TO ENABLE ALL THE RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS IN THE STATE, TO APPOINT TRUSTEES WHO SHALL BE A BODY CORPORATE FOR THE PURPOSE OF TAKING CARE OF THE TEMPORALITIES OF THEIR RESPECTIVE CONGREGATIONS, AND FOR OTHER PURPOSES THEREIN MENTIONED.

*Passed 6th of April, 1784.*

“The preamble of this act recites the 38th article of the Constitution.

*Article 1.*—Directs that not less than three or exceeding nine in number of Trustees, are to be elected, to transact all affairs relative to the temporalities of their respective churches.

*Article 4.*—Whether the same consist of lands, tenements, &c., and whether the same shall have been given, granted or devised *to and for their use*, and they and their successors shall lawfully have, hold, use, exercise and enjoy all and singular the churches, meeting-houses, parsonages, burying places and lands thereunto belonging, with the hereditaments and appurtenances heretofore by the said church occupied or enjoyed, by whatsoever name or names, person or persons, as if the same were purchased and had, or to them given or granted, or by them or any of them used and enjoyed for the uses aforesaid, to them and their successors. to the sole and only proper use and benefit of them the said Trustees and their successors for ever, &c.

*Article 6.*—And the Trustees are also to regulate and order the renting of pews in the said churches, and the perquisites of the said church arising from the breaking of the ground in the cemetery, or church-yard, and in the churches for burying the dead, &c.<sup>a</sup>

Under this Act, the following persons were elected Trustees: “Thomas Bartow, John Wright, Isaac Ward, Elisha Shute, Lewis Guion and Philip Pell, Jun.

After this incorporation, all management of the Church and Church property at town meetings is dropped. The Church now manages her own affairs, her power and right to do so, being fully recognized by the town; for upon the 3d of April, 1787, prior to the incorporation, it was resolved at town meeting, “To erect a school house, and to set it on the *Green* near where the stocks formerly stood”—but this resolution was never carried into effect, because the Church had been incorporated, and consequently claimed the Green exclusively as her own. The very fact, too, that the old church erected since 1692, once stood upon the *Green* is conclusive evidence that this property is still vested in the Church. In 1790, therefore, it was ordered by the town, “To build the school house on *town* ground, by Charles Guion’s, where it formerly stood.” Again, at a town meeting in 1792, it was declared, “That the

<sup>a</sup> “The trustees were directed to make an annual report between the first of January and the first of April, to the Chancellor, or one of the Justices of the Supreme Court, or any of the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas, &c.” *Laws of N. Y.*, 1778 to 1787, Greenleaf’s edition, vol. 1, chap. xviii, §1.

burial ground shall, and of *right*, ought to belong to the Church." After the election of the Trustees, too, the sexton was always appointed by the Church.

On the 10th of December, 1787, an agreement was entered into between a majority of the Trustees of the Episcopal Church in Eastchester, of the one part, and William Heskins, carpenter, of the other part, wherein the latter agreed "To erect and build a pulpit, reading desk, and clerk's seat in the said church, according to the dimensions in the plan by him exhibited to the said Trustees, and the form of the pulpit in the church at Yonkers, &c."

The Trustees not only anxious to finish the church, but to obtain the services of a suitable minister, addressed the following letter to the Rev. Mr. Moore, afterwards Bishop of the Diocese:—

### TO THE REV. BENJAMIN MOORE.

EASTCHESTER, 15th Dec., 1787.

*Rev. Sir,*

"We have this day disposed of the pew ground in our church in a manner that promises success to our religious endeavors. We have also a prospect of completing our church in a respectable manner, and New Rochelle will join us in engaging a gentleman of the profession of the gospel to officiate in the two places. From a reliance on your pious wishes to promote the Christian Religion, we beg leave that whenever a gentleman of character, and qualified, in your opinion, for our purpose, may come to your knowledge, and whose condition may be adapted to our situation, that you'll please to signify the same to us.

We are, Rev. Sir, with much respect,

Your humble servants,

THE TRUSTEES."

In 1789, the Trustees appointed Marcus Christian for one year, bell-ringer of the church, for which service he was allowed \$4 per annum.<sup>a</sup>

The following year, the inhabitants of Eastchester appear to have associated themselves in the ministry, with the parish of Yonkers; for, "at a meeting of the Trustees, March 20th, 1790, Mr. Pell, one of the Trustees, produced a letter directed to the Right Rev. Samuel Provoost, D. D., Bishop of the State of New York, requesting the favor of his visiting

<sup>a</sup> At a meeting of the Vestry on the 7th of May, 1791, "Marcus Christian, the sexton to the church in Eastchester, was sent for and examined respecting the bell's being rung on Saturday, the 30th of April, on the family of James Bogart's moving out of this place; which charge he denied, and, in his examination, said he was lame in bed, and was not at the church that day. He was further examined on his former conduct, on his selling licure in the belfrie of the church, on a training day, which he acknowledged. Whereupon they did agree he was not worthy to keep the keys of the church, or to be employed as sexton; upon which he delivered the key and was dismissed the service."

In 1791 James Pell was elected sexton and bell ringer. He was succeeded by Benjamin Bartow in 1794.



the church in Eastchester next month, in order to ordain the Rev. Mr. Cooper, a priest for this and Yonkers church." On this occasion, William Crawford was requested to render an account of the rent due the church from him, for the glebe.

In 1792, we find the town defining the boundaries *necessary* for the church, for a yard and burial ground ; accommodating the remainder, of what was called the Church Green, (the site of the old church, and burial place of one of its ministers) *to public occasions*, and appointing trustees to carry the same into execution, notwithstanding the church had been in possession exclusively for nearly one hundred years.

"At a town meeting held in Eastchester, 3d of April, 1792, it was agreed as follows:—and it is also agreed by vote at this town meeting, that there shall be three trustees chosen, who shall have power, and are hereby authorized to affix and ascertain, in conjunction with the trustees of the Episcopal Church of the town of Eastchester, the quantity and boundaries of the land necessary for said church and burying ground ; and such boundaries when so fixed and determined on shall be declared in a certificate by the said trustees of the town, which is now to be chosen, under their hands and seals, and delivered to the Trustees of said Church, which certificate shall forever hereafter operate as a bar to any claim of this town to the lands within the said described boundaries. Power was also given to the trustees to lease out any of the public lands and tenements to the best advantage. The meeting proceeded to nominate and choose three men as trustees of said town, viz : Nehemiah Marshall, Benjamin Morgan, and James Morgan.

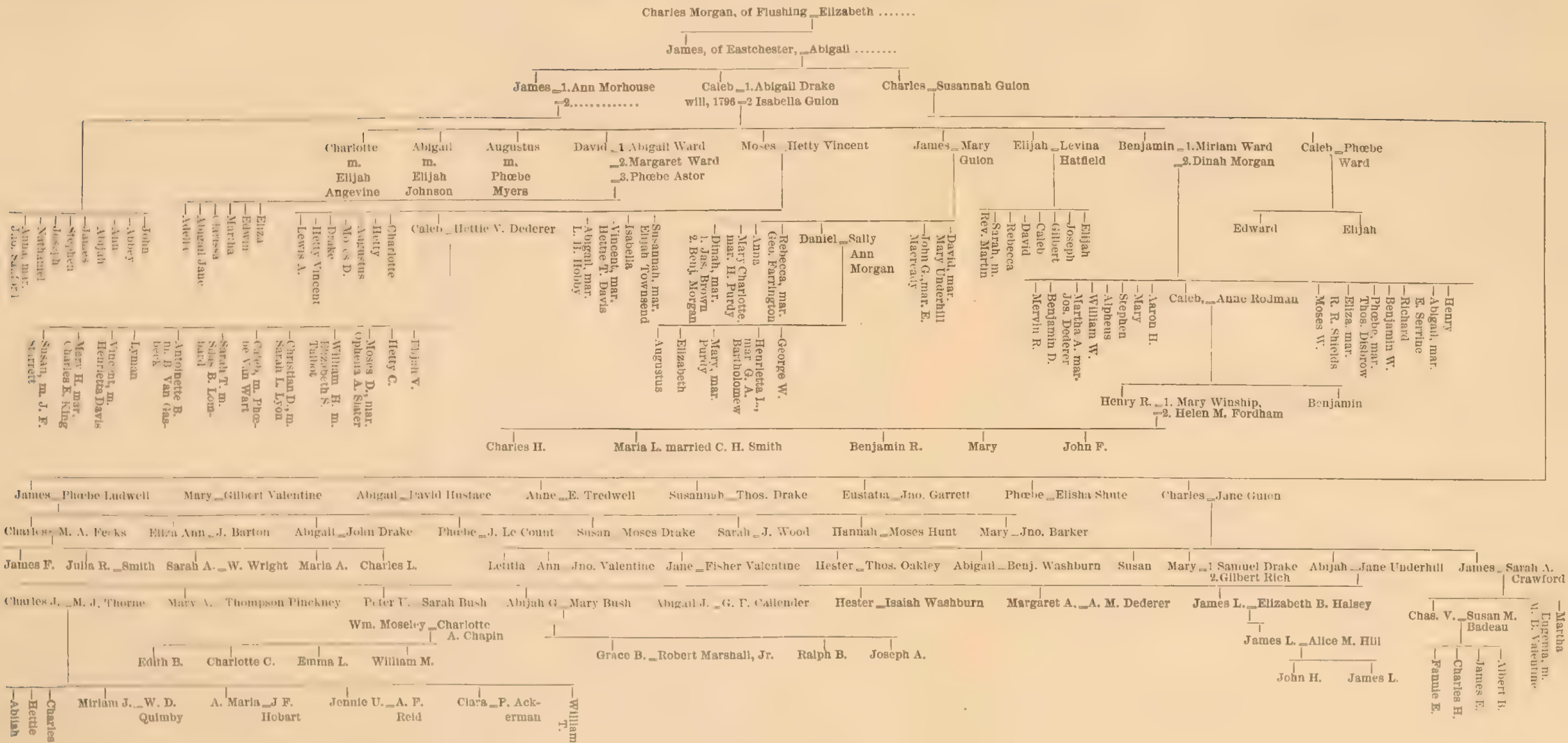
The following certificate appears in the town books immediately after the above resolution :—

*Whereas*, we the subscribers, by a vote and order of the town meeting of the inhabitants of the town of Eastchester, in the County of Westchester, held in said town on the 3d day of April, 1792, were authorized and empowered to affix and ascertain, in conjunction with the Trustees of the Episcopal Church in Eastchester aforesaid, the boundaries and quantity of land necessary and convenient for said church, and for a burial place adjacent to the same.

*And whereas*, we, the said subscribers, having on the day of the date hereof, met with a majority of the trustees of said church, and having proceeded to view the premises, and in order to furnish the said church with sufficiency of ground for a yard and burial ground, and also to accommodate the remainder of what is called the Green, to public occasion, *Do*, in pursuance of the trust reposed in us by the vote or order above mentioned, *hereby certify*, that the said trustees of the church aforesaid shall, and of right ought to possess the ground comprehended within the limits following, for the use and purposes aforesaid, that is to say :—Beginning at the distance of  $34\frac{1}{2}$  feet directly north-east, from the north-east corner of said church, from thence extending in a straight line westerly, observing the distance of 28 feet from the front of said church, until it comes to the edge of the bank between the upland and salt marsh, thence southerly by the said



PEDIGREE OF MORGAN, OF EASTCHESTER.



bank and marsh, until it comes to the fence by the salt meadows, at a monument stone; from thence easterly along said fence, until a line be drawn parallel from the first mentioned boundaries, at the distance of 20 feet from the east side of said church will touch the said fence, and along that line to the first mentioned bounds. Nevertheless, always reserving to the proprietors of salt meadow, adjoining said land, and those who have meadows southerly of said land, their usual right of way in going to and coming from said meadows with their hay, through the land above described.

Witness our hands and seals, the 28th day of April, 1792.

BEN. MORGAN, [L. s.]

JAMES MORGAN, [L. s.]

NEHEMIAH MARSHALL, [L. s.]

Witnesses, William Crawford, Dorcas Crawford.<sup>a</sup>

Now, although the origin of the first church edifice in the town of Eastchester is clearly traceable to the action of the town, yet it is very evident that it was first commenced in 1692-3, by a tax levied on Churchmen and Dissenters, promiscuously, according to their real estate, and not finished until the act of 1699 was passed, which provided, that "The trustees of each town were to make a yearly rate for building a church where wanting." According to the principles of common law, at this period, meeting houses erected by public tax belonged to the Church *established by law*. Hence, we find Mr. Bartow and his successors after their establishment and induction, by the then Governors, claiming the chapel or meeting house at Eastchester as their own, and not only so, but keeping the Dissenters out of it. The parsonage or glebe with all its rights and appurtenances was likewise voted for public purposes, and belonged to the rector ex-officio; for, say the rules of common law, concerning glebes, "Every church of common right is entitled to house and glebe," and "After induction the freehold of the glebe is in the parson." Whilst the wardens and vestrymen, who were the choice of the people, elected the rector and provided for his support, the rate-payers appear to have regulated the burial ground, voted repairs to the church when necessary, and appointed the sexton, as was done in many other parishes. This was the state of things prior to the Revolution. After peace was established and New York was finally organized as a State, an act was passed in 1784 for the incorporation of religious societies; and under this act, we have seen, the church at Eastchester was incorporated. Now this act conferred on trustees the right, "Lawfully, to have, hold, use, exercise and enjoy all and singular the *churches, meeting houses, parsonages, burying places and lands*, thereunto belonging, with

<sup>a</sup> Town Records. "In 1808, the town granted one hundred dollars to be laid out in fencing the burial ground of the church of Eastchester, and supervisors and overseers were directed to see it expended." "At the same time a vote was taken to alter the right of way through the burial ground to the verge thereof, and that of the salt meadows belonging to the town."



the hereditaments and appurtenances heretofore by the said church occupied or enjoyed, &c." Whatever rights, therefore, the Church possessed prior to the Revolution, were still continued to her by the act of 1784.

Subsequently, however, to the joint action of the trustees "The church appointed three persons to enclose the land set off to the church by the town," as appears from the following resolutions:—

"At a meeting of the trustees held at the house of Wm. Crawford, on the 12th of March, 1793, it was resolved as follows:—*Resolved*, that Messrs. Steven Ward, Lancaster Underhill and Abraham Valentine, be, and they are hereby authorized and empowered to inclose the land belonging to the church in Eastchester, as laid out and ascertained by trustees chosen on the part of the town of Eastchester, and the trustees of the church, by a board fence on the whole front or north side thereof, composed of one board at the bottom and slitted above, and that the same be of the height of four feet and a half; and the other parts of said land to be inclosed by a post and rail fence, or such board fence as aforesaid, and that the said persons complete the same as conveniently as may be, &c."

"*Resolved further*, that the above mentioned persons take and receive the profits thereof by plowing for two seasons, any of the said lands, except that within the compass of the burial place, and after that to take the grass growing out of the said land by pasturing and mowing the same, and render an account yearly to the said trustees of such profits, until a full compensation has been made by the use thereof for their trouble and expense in fencing the said land.<sup>a</sup>

The presumption is, that the trustees of the church supposing their title to the ground in question, invalidated either by the reorganization of the church in 1787, or of the town in 1788, or perhaps of both, acted as the recipient of the same from the town, and wisely asserted no claim. It is certain that her action in 1792, did not weaken the title she possessed in any land rightfully belonging to her; whilst the effect of the certificate, as declared in the resolution of the town before quoted, was to be forever a bar to any claim on the part of the town to the lands set off.<sup>b</sup>

This church was again incorporated on the 4th of October, 1795, by the style and title of "ST PAUL'S CHURCH IN THE TOWN OF EASTCHESTER,"<sup>c</sup> in pursuance of an Act passed for the relief of the Protestant Episcopal Church, on the 17th of March, previous. Upon this occasion, William Popham and Lancaster Underhill were elected church-wardens; Philip Pell, Lewis Guion, Isaac Ward, John Reed, Isaac Guion, Abraham Valentine, William Pinckney and William Crawford, vestrymen.

<sup>a</sup> Church Records, commencing A.D. 1787.

<sup>b</sup> See Report to the trustees of the town of Eastchester as to the title to the burying ground attached to St. Paul's church at Eastchester, by Rensselaer Ten Broeck, N. Y. 1853.

<sup>c</sup> County Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 10, 11, 12.

In 1798, the connection between this parish and Yonkers was dissolved,<sup>a</sup> and an association formed with Westchester in order to procure a minister. Upon the 9th of March, 1799, Mr. Isaac Wilkins, then in deacon's orders, was called to officiate as minister of the united parishes of West and Eastchester.

In 1801 the Vestry addressed the following letter to the Rector, Wardens and Vestrymen of Trinity Church, New York:—

**TO THE RT. REV. RECTOR AND THE WARDENS AND VESTRY-  
MEN OF THE CORPORATION OF TRINITY CHURCH IN  
THE CITY OF NEW YORK.**

“The wardens and vestrymen of St. Paul's church at Eastchester, in the County of Westchester, from a firm belief of the disposition of the corporation of the Trinity Church to aid and assist their sister Churches in every undertaking or design for encouraging and advancing the interest and increase of their respective congregations; and also from the consideration of their having heretofore extended their liberality to other Churches whose circumstances were not more needy, are induced to make the following Representation of the situation of the said Church, viz: that it was built some few years before the Revolution, but left unfinished. That by the depredations commonly attendant thereon, it was greatly injured, the wooden part of it being taken away, whereby the walls were exposed and so much impaired, that shortly after the return of peace, the little remaining part of the former congregation exerted their best, the war having enfeebled their abilities, to put the church in some sort of order for public worship, and engaged a minister, and in conjunction with Westchester do still retain one who promises by his talents as a teacher, with an exemplary conduct, to promote the cause of religion and enlarge the congregation, &c.”

In April, 1817, the Rev. Ravaud Kearny, A. M., succeeded Mr. Wilkins as minister of this parish. He was the son of Philip Kearny, whose grandfather, Michael Kearny, emigrated from Ireland to this country in 1706. He was born at Newark, N. J., 22d of August, 1791, entered Columbia College in 1808, and graduated Bachelor and Master of Arts in 1812. In 1816 he was ordained deacon, and the year following Priest, by the Right Rev. John H. Hobart, and soon afterwards commenced his labors here. In 1821, he relinquished the rectorship of this parish, and confined himself to the Church at New Rochelle, to which benefice he was called in 1819. Sometime in 1822, he resigned the charge of the latter, and accepted a call to St. Mary's Parish, Maryland, from whence he removed to St. John's church, Canandaigua, West New York, and in 1828 took charge of St. Paul's church, Red Hook, Dutchess County, of which he remained rector until the day

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Cooper's farewell sermon was delivered in St. Paul's church, June 16, 1798, from *2 Cor. xiii:11*. In the course of it he alludes to nine years of service at Eastchester.

of his death. He died 8th of May, 1844. His remains were brought to New York, and interred in the family vault at St. Mark's church in the Bowery.

Upon the resignation of Mr. Kearny, the Rev. Lewis Pintard Bayard, from the Diocese of New Jersey, was elected rector of the parish. He continued faithfully to discharge the duties of his office both here and in New Rochelle, until the 14th of October, 1826, when he was succeeded by the Rev. Lawson Carter, for whose successors see list of rectors.

The first delegates from this parish to the Diocesan Convention, in 1787, were Philip Pell, Sen., and Thomas Bartow.

We have previously shown that the present church edifice was erected in 1765, by the inhabitants of this town. Situated in a pleasant valley, bordering on the Aqueanouncke, it presents from the neighboring hills a very picturesque appearance. The building is remarkable for the solid character of its masonry, the angles of the edifice being ornamented with rustic quoins, the windows and doors also having rustics. A vestry and school room have just been built, opening into the east end of the church. On the west end is a neat, square tower of three stages, with narrow lights, terminating in an octangular lantern, containing a bell which bears the following inscription:—" *The Gift of the Rev. Thomas Standard, 1758. Lester & Pack, fecit.*"<sup>a</sup>

Immediately above the tower door are inscribed the initials of the principal benefactors, viz.:—P. R. P.—P. P.—D. V.—also a tablet of red sand-stone, bearing the date of erection, 1765. The whole edifice has recently undergone considerable repairs; a new chancel arrangement made, the walls painted in frescoe, and the church newly seated. It deserves to be mentioned that the pulpit and reading desk were originally placed between the two south windows. Beneath the chancel repose the remains of the Rev. Thomas Standard, former rector of the parish, and Mary, his wife. In the gallery is a fine toned organ, presented by George Rapalye, Esq., in 1833, at a cost of \$800. The chandalier and sheds were also his gift.

The communion silver consists of a flaggon, four chalices and paten. The former bears the following inscription:—" *To St. Paul's Church, Eastchester, N. Y. In memory of Mrs. Mary Grigg,<sup>b</sup> obt. Jan. 2d, 1844, Æ 71 years.*"

<sup>a</sup> During the Revolutionary War, the bell and prayer book formerly used by the Missionaries of the Ven. Prop. Soc., were buried for safe keeping on the farm known as the old Ross place, and now owned by E. C. Halsey, Esq.

<sup>b</sup> This lady was the daughter of Joshua Pell, Esq., grandson of Thomas Pell, second Lord of the Manor of Pelham.

The chalices are inscribed as follows:—1st. "*The gift of Frederick Van Cortlandt, St. Paul's Church, Eastchester, A. D. 1829.*" 2d and 3d, marked "*A. S.*"<sup>a</sup> 4th, "*St. Paul's Church, Eastchester, N. Y., from Mrs. John Quincy Adams, 1829.*" This chalice is not only rendered valuable by the distinguished lady who gave it, but by the melancholy story associated therewith.<sup>b</sup>

In the old church book, occurs the following memorandum:—"To cash paid the Rev. Mr. Cooper, to buy a communion cup, £1 15s 7d, March 18th, 1793." Upon the Church Green, between the ancient locust trees and burial ground, formerly stood the old church, built by the town in 1692. This edifice, constructed of wood, was destroyed by fire at an early period of the Revolutionary War.

The church yard which lies on the south and west side of the church, is one of the most extensive in the country.

## TOMB-STONES.

---

M. V. D.	I. P. D. NOVE	I D I D
FEB THE	MBER THE FOVRT	N. 20
14.	ETH. DAY. 1724.	1714
1704		

M. O. D. YE 27. 1726—A. A. AV. YE 1730—JOSEPH. DRAKE. DESESED. MARCH. THE. 16. DAY. 1731. IN. THE. 70<sup>th</sup> YEAR. OF. HIS. AGE,—HERE. L<sup>s</sup>. THE. BODY. OF. THOMAS. PINCKNEY. DIED. YE. 1. 1732. EG. 71—HERE. LAYS. THE. BODY. OF. CAP. WILL. PINCKNEY. DECESED. 11. DAY. OF. MARCH. 1755. AG'D. ABOUT. 75. YEARS —I. O. D. FEB. 1746—O. H. HOBRED. DECES. ID. YE YEAR. 1755—. I ✕ O. DE. JULY. YE 25. 175—HERE LYETH THE BODY OF WILLIAM CRAWFORD: WHO DEPARTED: THIS: LIFE THE 11. DAY: OF NOVEMBER: IN: THE: 51: YEAR: OF: HIS: AGE: 1747—E. W. O. NOVEMBER—M. A ✕ C. JAN. 25. 1764—F. O. DEC. 12—MAJOR SAMUEL PELL, OB. 29. DECR. 1786, IN THE 32<sup>ND</sup> YEAR OF HIS AGE. THUS AFTER RETURNING VICTORIOUS, FROM THE FIELD OF MARS, HE CHEERFULLY OBEYS THE SUMMONS OF ETERNITY FROM WHENCE THERE IS NO RETURN.

---

<sup>a</sup> Ann, daughter of James Smith, Esq., whose brother, Col. William Smith, married a daughter of President Adams, and resided on the Ross place in this town.

<sup>b</sup> The son of this lady being washed overboard from a vessel in the Sound, was found by one of the church wardens, and brought to this church for interment.



On a small marble obelisk is the following :

Sacred  
to the memory of the  
**REV. AUGUSTINE P. PREVOST,**  
only son of the late Mrs. L. C. Palmer,  
who departed this life  
on the 15th of November, 1843,  
in the 37th year of his age,  
and the 8th of his ministry, 7 years of which  
he was Rector of St. John's Church,  
Canandaigua, N. Y.

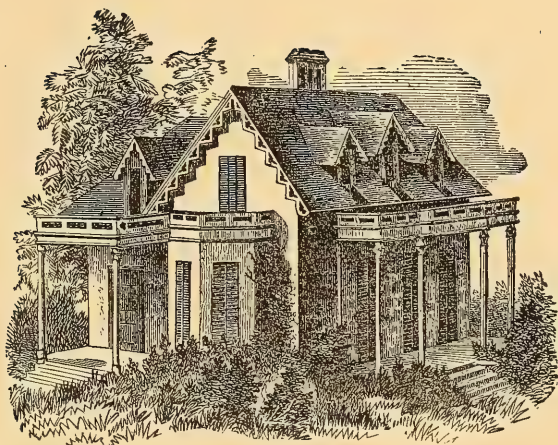
Rest from thy labors, blessed spirit rest ;  
Tho' early called, God's ways are always best,  
Nor need this feeble, partial pen declare  
What was thy need, or what thy labors were.  
The poor, the desolate, the bad reclaimed  
Are mouths for thee, who never wert ashamed  
To own thy Master's cause before the great,  
Nor heeded frowns while laying bare their state ;  
A weeping flock. children mourn the loss  
Of their lov'd Pastor. Steadfast on the Cross  
He kept their gaze—" Watch," was his latest cry,

*"Neither is he that planteth anything, neither he that watereth,  
But God that giveth the increase."*—1st Cor. 3d chap., 7th verse.

#### RECTORES DE EASTCHESTER.

TEMP. INST.	RECTORES.	VACAT.	PATRONS.
19 Nov. 1702,	Rev. John Bartow, Cl. A. M. pr. mort.	War. and Ves.	
8 July 1727,	Rev. Thos. Standard, Cl. A. M.	"	"
12 June 1761,	Rev. John Milner, Cl. A. M. pr. resig.,	"	"
3 Dec. 1766,	Rev. Sam. Seabury, Cl. A. M.	"	"
3 Mar. 1799,	Rev. Isaac Wilkins, Presb. D.D. pr. mort,	"	"
Apr. 1817,	Rev. Ravaud Kearny, Presb. A. M. pr. resig.	"	"
	1821, Rev. Lewis P. Bayard,	"	"
14 Oct. 1826,	Rev. Lawson Carter, Presb.	"	"
9 Aug. 1836,	Rev. John Grigg, Presb.	"	"
25 July 1837,	Rev. Robert Bolton, Presb.	"	"
1 Apr. 1846,	Rev. Edwin Harwood, Presb.	"	"
22 Aug. 1847,	Rev. Henry E. Duncan, Presb.	"	"
1 Feb. 1852,	Rev. William S. Coffey, Presb., present incumbent.		

The Methodist Episcopal Church in the village of Eastchester was first organized in 1836, and incorporated the same year by the name and title of "The Methodist Episcopal Church in the town of Eastchester." Thomas Griffin, Peter Bertine, Josiah Sickles, Nicholas Duff, and Gilbert Underhill, trustees. The church was erected in 1837, and a small parsonage has been added since.



RECTORY OF ST. PAUL'S CHURCH, EAST CHESTER.



ST. PAUL'S CHURCH, EAST CHESTER.



This portion of Westchester County seems to have suffered severely during the War of the Revolution, and was constantly the scene of marches, points of defence, and skirmishes. Here, also, the lawless "skinner" and "cow-boy" practised their black deeds of rapine unmolested.

In October, 1776, a skirmish took place in this town between the patriots, on their route from King's Bridge to Westchester, and the enemy, under Lord Howe. For some time the Connecticut troops were billeted in the village. Here Gilbert Vincent, Jr., who, like his father, was the blacksmith of the town, was shot by order of a French officer belonging to Col. Arnaud's cavalry of the French Legion for refusing to shoe his horse on the Lord's Day, in consequence of which Elijah, his brother, joined the British army, took a lieutenant's commission, and throughout this whole region became a terror to all who opposed the Crown. On the 3d October, 1779, "Lieutenant Gill of the American Dragoons, patrolling in Eastchester, found a superior force in his rear, and had no alternative but to surrender or cut his way through them; he chose the latter, and forced his way, when he found a body of infantry still behind the horse. These he also charged, and on his passing them his horse was wounded, and threw him, when he fell into the enemy's hands. Two of the lieutenant's party—which consisted of twenty-four—were killed, and one taken prisoner; the rest escaped safe to their regiments."<sup>a</sup>

In the vicinity of the village a detachment under the command of Gen. Parsons, fitted out in sleighs, (returning from an enterprise against the enemy at Morrisania), were overtaken and almost entirely cut to pieces by a party of British light horse.<sup>b</sup>

The small stream which waters the western part of the village of Eastchester was formerly known as Rattlesnake Brook. An early town order requires the inhabitants to meet together one day in the Spring for the destruction of this dangerous reptile. As late as 1775 one of them was killed near the brook, measuring some six feet. Feb. 1st, 1696-7, John Pell, Sen., had the privilege of erecting a mill on this brook. In 1721 Nathaniel Tompkins was permitted by the town to erect a fish-weir on Rattlesnake Creek, "to ye advantage of himself to catch ye fish that swimmeth therein, for ye space of ten years from this date, providing he put it up at once."<sup>c</sup>

Near the mouth of the brook, on "Mill Lane," is situated the tide

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Memoires, 218.

<sup>b</sup> Hugh Gaines' *Gazette*.

<sup>c</sup> Town Record. It appears from the Town Record, that as early as 1703 there existed a mill covenant between the town and Col. Caleb Heathcote. Town Record, vol. ix, p. 54.



mill of the late Robert Reid, Esq. This gentleman was the son of John Reid, who was born at Dalnellington, Ayreshire, Scotland, in 1752, and bought land of John Bartow. His grandfather, Robert Reid, was of Ayreshire, Scotland, and descended from the Reids of Loch Hannoch, of the Clan Chatu, settled at Craig-on-Hill, Ayrshire, 1644. Robert Reid's mother was Mary Bartow. He had five maiden sisters; one of whom, Phœbe, still survives and occupies the property which they have held for nearly a century. The Reid cottage occupies an extensive view of the winding creek and the high grounds of Pelham. The adjoining property formed a portion of the ancient planting grounds of Eastchester.

Further to the south-west lies Black Dog Brook, sometimes called Hutchinson's Brook, so mysteriously connected with the fate of the celebrated Ann Hutchinson. This stream constitutes a portion of the southern boundary between the towns of East and West Chester; it discharges into the Aqueanouncke, or Hutchinson's Creek.

Upon the Western shore of Hutchinson's Creek is located the village landing already alluded to. In this stream a British vessel of war was captured during the Revolution by a party of whale-boat men.

In the south-west corner of Eastchester lies the estate of the late George Faile, Esq., (at present occupied by his daughter, Mrs. Thomas H. Rutherford), formerly the property of Fleetwood Marsh, Esq., a native of Dutchel, Buckinghamshire, England, for many years a freeholder in this town. The situation of the estate is very fine, commanding all the various undulations of a hilly district. The house, seated upon rising ground, overlooks the valley to the south-east, Eastchester Creek, and the distant waters of the Sound.

The adjoining property on the west belonged to the late Robert Givans, Esq. The mansion is surrounded by extensive plantations and ample woodlands. The latter affords a favorite rendezvous, or headquarters, for vast flocks of crows, which receive every protection from their generous benefactors. The noise created by them in their evening assemblage and re-ascension in the morning, is incredible—causing the wood to re-echo with a thousand reverberations.

In the immediate neighborhood are the properties of the late Judge Effingham, C. Schieffelin and Col. C. M. Schieffelin, late member of the Assembly. The former was once owned by Capt. Solomon Fowler, of De Lancy's Refugee Corps, who was killed at Horse Neck during the Revolutionary War. It was afterwards confiscated. Col. Schieffelin's residence occupies the summit of a high ridge, overlooking the valley of Eastchester on the east.



PEDIGREE OF LAWRENCE, OF EASTCHESTER.

Arms:—Ar. a cross, raguly, gu. Crest:—A demi turbot, tail upwards. Motto:—*Quæro, Invenio.*

John Lawrence, of St. Ives, Huntingdonshire, England, ob. 1588.  
John Lawrence

John Lawrence, emigrated from England to the colony of New Amsterdam, in 1611; one of the first patentees of North Hempstead, L. I., 1644; a resident of Westchester, 1644; deputy to Hartford from Gov. Stuyvesant in 1663; Mayor of New York, and member of the Governor's Council at the time of his death in 1699; Judge of the Supreme Court. Will dated 1698.

William, emigrated to America with his brother, one of the first patentees of Flushing, in 1645, proprietor of Lawrence Neck, magistrate of Flushing, under the Dutch, ob. 1680.

Elizabeth Smith, of Smithtown, da. of Richard, patentee of Smithtown; this lady afterwards married Sir Philip Carteret, Governor of New Jersey. From her, Elizabethtown takes its name.

Thomas, one of the patentees of Newtown, 1666, proprietor of Hell-gate neck, a major in Leisler's forces, 1690; died at Newtown, July, 1703.

Thomas, joint patentee with his father, Francis Smith, widow ancestor of the Eastchester branch.

Francina Smith, widow of M. Smith.

William, member of the Gov. Council from 1702-1706.

John, high sheriff of Queens County, 1698, commander of a troop of horse, ancestor of the Newtown branch, mar. Elizabeth.

Jonathan, who removed to Westchester, ancestor of the Westchester branch, and probably of Rockland County branch, ob. ante. 1720.

Thomas, Justice of the Peace for Bergen County, from 1762-1763, Judge of Court of Common Pleas, ancestor of N. J. branch.

Isaac, nat. 1666-7, removed from Long Island to Eastchester, cir. 1689, ob. cir. 1730.

1. Anna Squire  
2. Esther Caniffe.

John, nat. 1668, ob. 1732, removed to Cortlandt's patent 1730.

Elizabeth

Jacob, of Westchester—Lydia

Jonathan

Richard

Thomas, will dated 18th May, 1752, lib 18, p. 202.

Isaac, nat. 1687, ob. cir. 1768

1. Widow Ward,  
2. Ruth Owens

John

Jacob, whose descendants are living at Westchester.

Mary

Jacob

Deborah

Hannah

1. Isaac, nat. 1724  
2. Keziah Pell, nat. 1729, ob. 25th March, 1795

2. Jesse, nat. Dec. 9th, 1727, ob. Feb. 14th, 1801

Elizabeth Vandostern

3. Joseph, killed by a fall from his horse prior to the Revolution

4. Gilbert, nat. 1738, ob. July 17, 1817

Margaret Kissac.  
2. Mrs. Magdelane Myers

5. Aaron, nat. 1741, ob. 2 Jan., 1816.

1. Jane Lawrence ob. 18th Aug., 1785.  
2. Craft, ob. 1829

6. Stephen

1. Anna, nat. April 22, 1729, ob. Aug. 12, 1796  
2. Nehemiah Hunt, nat. May 21st, 1724, ob. July 20th, 1792

Phœbe Thmas Bolton.

—Ruth, ob. 1771.  
—Mary, ob. 1774.  
—John Williams

—Thomas, nat. 1762, ob. 10th Mar., 1792, ob. Feb. 7th, 1835.

—Benjamin David

—Joseph Mary Pell

—Joshua Rachel Taylor

—Mary Cornelius Leggett

—Phila. Will. Totten

—Sarah Abram Hatfield

—Ruth Benjamin Corea

—Isaac

—George

—Jesse Mary Cartwright

—Moses

—Noah Anne Barnes

—Abigail Thomas Sherwood

—Ruth nat. Jan., 1753, ob. Oct. 17th, 1830

—Mary, nat. 1760, ob. 1760

—Philip Wood

—Giordanna mar. Cunningham

—Philip Wood

—Isaac, ob. s. p.

—Aaron, nat. August, 1765, ob. 1789

—Charles, ob. s. p.

—Euphemia, Jonas Farrington, nat. 20 Jan., 1764, ob. Mar. 26, 1784, ob. 22 Sept., 1830

—Augustus, E. Elizabeth nat. Mar. 1st, 1771, 22d Oct., 1799

—Charlotte, nat. Martin 22d December, 1773.

—Lettitia, nat. Peter Still 28th Jan., 1773

—Leitia, nat. Peter Still 28th Jan., 1773

—Charlotte, nat. Martin 22d December, 1773.

—Euphemia, Jonas Farrington, nat. 20 Jan., 1764, ob. Mar. 26, 1784, ob. 22 Sept., 1830

—Augustus, E. Elizabeth nat. Mar. 1st, 1771, 22d Oct., 1799

—Charlotte, nat. Martin 22d December, 1773.

—Lettitia, nat. Peter Still 28th Jan., 1773

—Leitia, nat. Peter Still 28th Jan., 1773

—Charlotte, nat. Martin 22d December, 1773.

—Euphemia, Jonas Farrington, nat. 20 Jan., 1764, ob. Mar. 26, 1784, ob. 22 Sept., 1830

—Augustus, E. Elizabeth nat. Mar. 1st, 1771, 22d Oct., 1799

—Charlotte, nat. Martin 22d December, 1773.

—Lettitia, nat. Peter Still 28th Jan., 1773

—Leitia, nat. Peter Still 28th Jan., 1773

NOTE:—See Historical Geneology of the Lawrence family, by Thos. Lawrence.

There is a remarkable rock in this vicinity well worthy the stranger's notice, marked with a rude impression of a human foot seven inches in length, pointing west. It is a perfect impression of the right foot; and what is very singular, another track occurs on the opposite side of the sound, on Long Island. There appear to be several tracks upon that island. "About half a mile from the fort on Montauk Point," says Mr. Prime, "in a southeasterly direction, is a granite rock, imbedded in the ground, on the upper surface of which is the apparent impress of a *human foot*. The figure is as perfect and distinct as would follow from the pressure of the left foot upon some cohesive substance, except being deficient in a toe; a deficiency not at first sight apparent, and discernable only by inspection. No artist could have chiselled a more perfect resemblance. The impression is still fresh, and without the least appearance of injury from time. There are two other tracks less perfect and distinct. The one in the Indian field, and the other west of Fort Pond. The heel of the foot is towards the east in all of them, as though formed in passing to the west. Excepting that they are the footsteps of the evil spirit, no record or tradition pretends to give their story. They existed at the first settlement by the whites, and were a subject of pawwa to the Indians."<sup>a</sup> Perhaps they are in some way mysteriously connected with "Satan's toe" and the "stepping stones" off Throckmorton's Neck, by which the evil spirit made good his retreat when worsted by the Mohegans, or enchanted Wolf tribe of Indians, during some unknown period of the stone age.

Within a short distance of the village was situated the estate of the late Col. John R. Hayward, Esq., who in 1846 represented this county in Assembly. His son is the present Robert Hayward, of Rye. Col. Hayward purchased the property of the executors of the late Richard Shute. In 1671 James Eustice and others were appointed to lay out land for Richard Shute (ancestor of the before-mentioned Richard), near Rattlesnake Creek.

Most of the farms in this neighborhood, which once covered the old Lawrence property, embracing at one period nearly five hundred acres, are now included in the most thickly settled portion of Mount Vernon. A part of the Lawrence estate was anciently called Virginia from its beautiful appearance. Its earliest proprietor was Isaac Lawrence, Esq., who originally emigrated from Long Island to Eastchester about 1689. On the 12th of May, 1690, Isaac Lawrence was chosen by the inhabitants of this town, one of the pound-masters for the year ensuing. In 1700 he appears to have been town treasurer, and in 1721, his name

<sup>a</sup> N. S. Prime's History of Long Island.



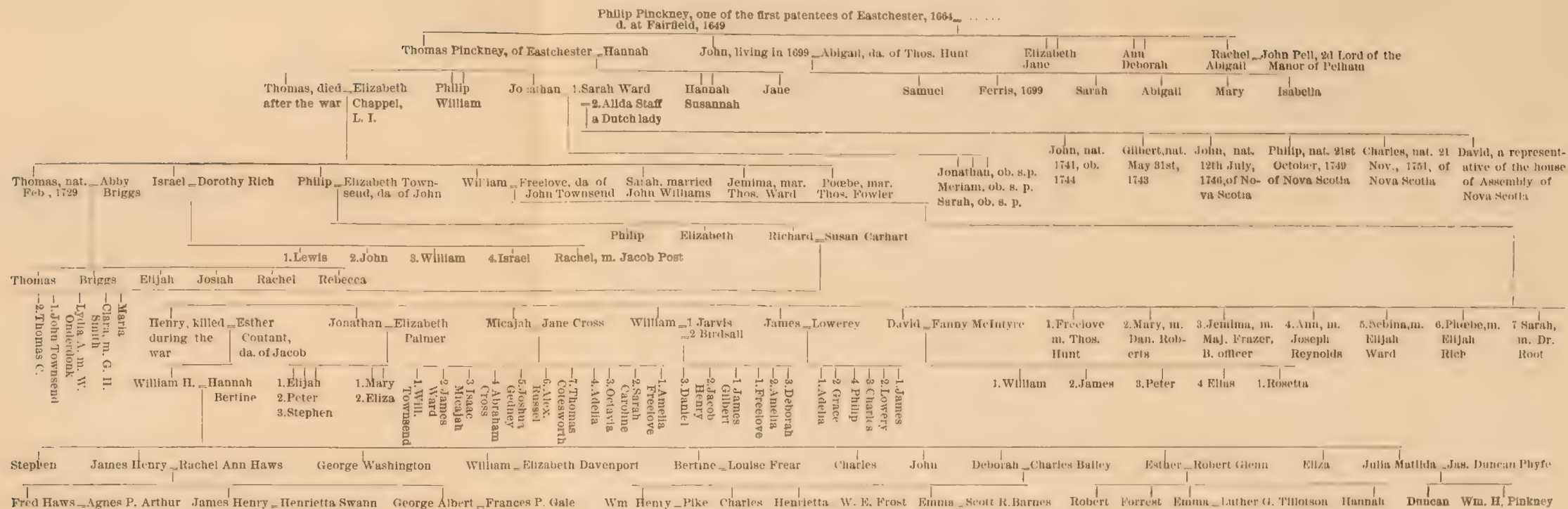
occurs in a list of the Grand Jurors for the County of Westchester. Isaac Lawrence died about 1730, leaving three sons, the eldest of whom was Isaac Lawrence, grandfather of the late Augustus Lawrence, Esq., who for so many years filled with great credit the office of Justice of the Peace for the town of Eastchester, whose grandson is the present Dennis McMahon, Esq., of Castle Eden, Morrisania. The Lawrences of Westchester County, New Jersey and Long Island, descended from John Lawrence of St. Ives, Huntingdonshire, England,<sup>a</sup> who died in 1538 and was buried in the Abbey of Ramsey, Huntingdon. His eldest son was Henry Lawrence of St. Ives, born 1600, a graduate of Emanuel College in 1622, who came to New England in 1635 with Lord Saye and Seal, Lord Brooke and others, and obtained grants on the Connecticut River. He subsequently returned to England and was made Lord President of the Privy Council and Member of Parliament for Hertfordshire—and was buried in St. Margaret's church, Hertford. John Lawrence his youngest son, of Great St. Albans in Hertfordshire, died circ. 1626 leaving by his wife Joan, who was born 1593, three sons,—John, William and Thomas Lawrence—who emigrated from Great St. Albans, in Hertfordshire, to America, during the political troubles that led to the dethronement and death of Charles I. The youngest of the three sons, Thomas Lawrence, was one of the patentees of Newtown, L. I., and proprietor of Hell-gate neck; and died at Newton, July, 1703, leaving by his wife Mary, four sons, Thomas, joint patentee with his father and ancestor of the New Jersey branch; Isaac, born in 1666-7, who emigrated as we have seen, to Eastchester in 1689 and died circ. 1736. John who removed to Cortlandt Manor in 1730, and Jacob Lawrence of Westchester.

The Pinckney estate in this town originally embraced the properties of Darius Lyon, Esq., late sheriff of the county, and others adjoining. The Pinckney residence, which stood a little to the south-west of Mr. Lyons was quite a stately affair; and appears to have been a favorite resort for officers of the Royal army, when stationed in its vicinity during the Revolutionary War. In front of this mansion the young and handsome Henry Pinckney was shot before the eyes of his family, (by a party of Continental soldiers) whilst endeavoring to effect his escape on horseback, April 2, 1786.

<sup>a</sup> The first ancestor of this family was Sir Richard Lawrens in 1164, who was knighted by Richard I. at the siege of Acre in 1191. This individual bore for his coat of arms "Argent a cross raguly gules," which is still carried by his American descendants"—after this the family became eminent in England. In Faulkner's History of Chelsea, &c., he says, "The Lawrences were allied to all that was great and illustrious; cousins to the ambitious Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, to the Earl of Warwick, to Lord Guilford Dudley, who expired on the scaffold the short lived royalty of Lady Jane Grey; to the brilliant Leicester, who set two queens at variance, and to Sir Philip Sidney who refused a throne."—Riker's Annals of Newtown, p. 281.

## PEDIGREE OF PINCKNEY, OF EASTCHESTER.

Arms:—Or, four fusils in fesse gules. Crest:—Out of a ducal coronet or, a griffen's head ppr.





The Pinckney's of Eastchester, descend from Philip Pinckney, one of the first ten proprietors and patentees of this town, who originally emigrated from Fairfield, Connecticut, in 1664. This individual was doubtless one of the original settlers of Fairfield, who, like Ludlow and others, came from the West of England with the Rev. John Warham and Company. Philip Pinckney was a lineal representative of the Pinckney's of Tatterset, Pinckney Manor, Norfolk County, England, whose ancestor Gilo de Pinckeni or Pinckenie, came into that country in the time of William the Conqueror.<sup>a</sup> "In the 19th of Henry II, (1172-1173), in Hugh Peverel and others, as Trustees, settled Tatersete, Pinkney's Manor, with that of Brunsthorp, on James de Pynkeney and Joan his wife, intail, with remainder, to Hugh their son, and Isabel his wife intail," "William de Pinkeni by deed; 9th of King John (1207-1208) confirmed to William son of Richard Anglo (that is English) by deed; sans date, a croft, &c. The seal to this deed is of green wax:—a crescent and a decrescent in chief with one crescent in base."<sup>b</sup> "In St. Ethelred's church Norwich, England, there is a stone in the chancel below the rails, for Henry Pinckney and Elizabeth his wife; she died 27th of Sept., 1700, Aetat 86."<sup>c</sup>

The Pinckney estate is watered on the East by the Aqueanouncke (Hutchinson's River,) and its tributary called Black Dog or Ann Hooke's Brook.

The Drake's were also extensive proprietors in the town, the old estate called "Nonsuch," being bounded on the west by the Aquehung, or Bronx, on the north by the Yonkers road, leading to Swayne's Mill; on the east by the White Plains Turnpike, and on the south by the Hunt's Bridge road. The property is now owned by various individuals. It is somewhat curious that the only portion of the original estate lately vested in the Drake family was the site once occupied by the barns, and out-buildings of the late Moses Drake. This individual was the son of Benjamin Drake, third in descent from Samuel Drake, Esq., of Fairfield, one of the first of the ten proprietors of Eastchester, in 1664.

On the 9th September, 1650, Samuel Drake received a grant of land from the freeholders of Fairfield. Upon the 8th of Feb., 1677, Samuel Drake of Eastchester sold unto his son Samuel Drake, three separate parcels of land lying in Fairfield.<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Bloomfield's Norfolk, vol. v, pp. 5, 6. "Hamo de Pinkeney, time of Henry II, marr. Alice who died, siezed of the manor of Pinkeney in 1238-9. Their son John de Pinkeney left James de Pinkeney, Lord of Pinkeney, in 1335-6. James Pinkeney left by his wife Joan, Hugh de Pinkeney, who married Isabel, their heirs held the Lordship of Pinkeney in 1399-1400."

<sup>b</sup> Bloomfield's Norfolk, vol. v, pp. 5, 6. The arms of Pinkney or Pinkeni, of Buckinghamshire, Essex, Norfolk and Northamptonshire temp. Edward I, were, or, four fusils in fesse gu. The arms of Philip Pinckney of Eastchester were the same.

<sup>c</sup> The family is now represented.

<sup>d</sup> Fairfield Town Records.



The will of Samuel Drake, Sen., bears date May 30th, 1676.<sup>a</sup> Samuel Drake is presumed to be a grand-son of John Drake of the Council of Plymouth, one of the original company established by King James I, in 1606, for settling New England. John his son came to Boston in 1630, and finally settled in Windsor, Conn., from whence his son Samuel removed to Fairfield. The will of Samuel Drake, Sen., of Fairfield, bears date 12th of December, 1691, by which it appears that his mother's name was Anne, and his wife's Ruth, and that he had a sister Rebecca Rogers, then living at Eastchester. "To his cousin Joseph, son to his brother Joseph of Eastchester, he bequeaths all his lands situate in Fairfield."<sup>b</sup>

The Drake family are of great antiquity and descend from the old house of Drake of Ashe, Devonshire, England, a branch of which gave birth to the illustrious Sir Francis Drake. The name is supposed to be derived from the heraldrick Wivern, the arms of the family, which is another name for the fabled dragon of antiquity, Draco or Drago being a Roman name, as late as Sir Francis Drake—writers called him the Dragon "<sup>c</sup>—of this family was Joseph Rodman Drake, the poet; the late Charles Drake,<sup>d</sup> M.D., of New York, E. G. Drake, Esq., of Scarsdale, and Thomas Drake of New Rochelle, who is a lineal representative of Samuel Drake, one of the first settlers of Eastchester in 1664.

Opposite the late Mr. Drake's residence is situated the property of the late Elisha Shute whose ancestor was Thomas Shute another of the early patentees of this town in 1665;<sup>e</sup> Richard Shute, the son of Thomas was for many years recorder of Eastchester. Elisha Shute was the father of the late Richard Shute whose sons are still living in the town.

The representatives of James Eustis, another of the ten proprietors in 1664, are also numerous in East and Westchester.

On the west side of the town at West Mount Vernon on Hunt's Bridge, on the Bronx, is located the New York and Harlem Railroad Depot. About two miles and a half north of this place is situated Bronx Mill, the property of the late James P. Swain, Esq., formerly known as Underhill Mill.

The Bronx River here affords a fine water power to an extensive grist mill and screw manufactory. The building is a large and handsome structure of stone, four stories high, and measures forty feet by eighty. The machinery is of the best kind, and the water is sufficient to

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's Office, N. Y., vol. iii, 47.

<sup>b</sup> Prob. Rec. Fairfield Co., Conn., 1689 to 1701.

<sup>c</sup> Gen. and Brog account of Drake family by Samuel G. Drake, Boston, 1845.

<sup>d</sup> Corporation Doc. xxxvi., 375, Report for 1833.

<sup>e</sup> The Inventory of the late Shute or Shute dec'd, of Fairfield, Conn., Oct. 3, 1671, Probate Rec., p. 123.

carry the mill throughout the year, which enables it to grind at all seasons.

The course of the Bronx immediately below the mill is said to have been formerly changed by a large beaver dam, which those industrious animals had erected near the foot of Mr. Underhill's garden. Beaver Pond lies directly north of the mill. Beavers were once very common on the Bronx and neighboring streams, and afford an excellent example of animals not only sociable by dwelling near each other, but by joining in a work which was for the benefit of the community. Water was as needful for the Beaver as for the miller; and it is a very curious fact that long before miller's ever invented dams, or before men ever learned to grind corn, the beaver knew how to make a dam and to insure itself a constant supply of water. The dam was by no means placed at random in the stream, just where a few logs may have happened to lodge—but it was set exactly where it was wanted, and it was made so as to suit the force of the current; in those places where the stream runs slowly the dam was carried straight across the river, but in those where the water had much power the barrier was made in a convex shape so as to resist the force of the rushing water. The power of the stream could, therefore, always be inferred from the shape of the dam which the beavers had built across it. Some of these structures were of great size, measuring two or three hundred yards in length and ten or twelve feet in thickness, and their form exactly corresponded with the force of the stream. They made their houses close to the water and communicated with them by means of subterranean passages, one entrance of which passed into the house, or lodge—as it was technically named—and the other into the water, so far below the surface that it could not be closed by ice. The "lodges" were nearly circular in form, and closely resembled the well-known snow houses of the Esquimaux; being domed, and about half as high as they were wide, the average height being three feet, and the diameter six or seven feet. They were so thick and well lined that, during severe frosts, they were nearly as hard as solid stone."<sup>a</sup> The last beaver seen in this vicinity was in the summer of 1790.

Vast quantities of trout, roach, suckers and other fresh water fish, are bred yearly in the Bronx.

In 1825 Canvas White, Esq., engineer, employed by the New York Water Works' Company, reported to the directors of that corporation, that he would recommend taking the waters of the Bronx at Underhill's Bridge, estimating that 9,100,000 gallons of water might be delivered in

<sup>a</sup> Harper's New Monthly Magazine.

the city daily, and that the whole expense would not exceed \$1,450,000.<sup>a</sup>

The mill and adjoining property, at an early period, belonged to the late Lancaster Underhill, who lived to the remarkable age of 98. Throughout the trying period of the Revolution, this individual resided on his farm, and appears to have suffered severely both in person and estate. During many a severe winter night he lay concealed beneath the body of an ox cart—which he had taken the precaution to cover with hay—and on each returning day blessed his good fortune that his house had escaped the flames. Near the mill is located the Bronxville Railroad depot, distant about four and a half miles south of White Plains, and eight from New York. The agent at this station (for nearly a quarter of a century) is Mr. Lancaster Underhill, the son of the late Lawrence Underhill a younger son of Lancaster Underhill, a former proprietor of most of the adjoining lands. The Dutch Reformed Church at Bronxville was erected in 1840, on land given by the late Rev. Robert Bolton, a former pastor of this parish, then owner of the Pond Field property. The church was incorporated.

Upon the Long Reach, in this town, are situated the farms and residences of John Townsend, Esq., (former sheriff of the county, and senator for the second district in 1821,) Alexander Pirnie, Mr. Headly, Alexander Masterton, Abijah Morgan, Charles Morgan, and Mr. Pinckney, &c.

The whole of this elevated district commands extensive views of the Sound and surrounding country. In the immediate vicinity stands Marble Hall, the site of which is celebrated in our Revolutionary annals.

From the petition of Jonathan Ward (one of the former proprietors of this place) to Congress in 1825, we learn, "that at the commencement of the Revolutionary war, Stephen Ward (the petitioner's father) resided in Eastchester, and county of Westchester, seven miles south of White Plains; that the British troops took possession of the city of New York and the southern part of the county of Westchester, in the autumn of 1776; that in consequence of which, the said Stephen Ward left his residence, consisting of a large and valuable dwelling, barn, and sundry other buildings; that between this period and the autumn of 1778, those buildings were occupied, a large portion of time, by the American troops, at which place there were several engagements between them and the British; that in November, 1778, a large body of the British forces, commanded by General Tryon, made an excursion as far as Ward's house, and, by the General's orders, totally destroyed, by a fire, the buildings, with considerable other property."<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Corporation Doc.

<sup>b</sup> Amer. State Papers, No. cccclxy, 654. See Simcoe's Mil. Journal, p. 92.

In the Spring of 1776, Captain Archibald Campbell, with a strong force of the enemy, surprised the Continental guard (under the command of Captain Delavan) stationed at Ward's house. After an offer of surrender had been made by the Americans, a shot was fired from one of the windows (by Lieut. Paddock) which, unfortunately, killed Captain Campbell. The British, seeing their commander fall, instantly forced the house, and, no resistance being made, revenged his death by killing upwards of twenty on the stairs and in the adjoining rooms; a few effected their escape by jumping out of the back windows. The dead who fell upon this occasion, were interred among the locusts on the west side of the road.

John Dibble, on the 3d of Nov. 1844, (one of the American soldiers who took an active part in this affair) thus relates the circumstances attending the surprisal in 1776:—"I was at the attack made upon Ward's house by Major Campbell. In the morning of that day we went down to William's Bridge, on a scout to cover a foraging party consisting of five or six teams. Our intention being to forage in the vicinity of Morrisania, and return to Eastchester in the evening. The enemy came up from King's Bridge to oppose us, and we fought them across the river (Bronx) all day long until the teams returned. We numbered about eighty strong, forty accompanying the teams, while the rest remained to oppose the enemy. The British were about fifty strong and had a fort at the bridge. It was night before we returned to Ward's house. Captain Samuel Delavan commanded us, and he was saved that night in consequence of wearing a red coat, thus passing for a British officer. The enemy approached Ward's house from the west side of the road. A sentinel was posted near, or perhaps in the road, who challenged the British. The latter rushed up to the house, and soon surrounded it. Captain Noah Bouton came to the door and asked for quarter, saying they were all desirous to surrender; but Major Campbell called out "Fire away boys kill all the d——d rebels you can." Bouton thereupon discharged his musket, and shot Campbell through the body who fell dead at his feet. There were about two hundred Americans in the house who all escaped except twenty-seven who were taken prisoners, and six who were killed. The British had eight killed. I effected my escape by jumping out of a window on the north side of the house and soon after encountered a company of Americans advancing, I gladly joined them and returned to the fight. On reaching the house we found the enemy firing into the windows. Posting ourselves behind a stone wall we attacked them, but they far outnumbered us; and out-flanked, we were compelled to retreat. We retired that night some two miles off, and the next day



returned and buried the dead at Ward's house. On the succeeding day we retreated as far as North Castle, and about a week after were ordered to White Plains where we remained until discharged.<sup>a</sup> The dead who fell on this occasion were interred in a beautiful locust grove west of the house and directly in the rear of the barn on the opposite side of the post-road leading to White Plains. John Williams of the County House, aged 93, Oct. 17th, 1844, says: "I remember when Colonel Simcoe was up with a party and burnt Ward's house. They took off all the siding of the building, together with the doors, windows and shutters, &c., and transported the same to King's bridge to build barracks for the troops, after which they set fire to the house and burnt it down."<sup>b</sup>

The Hon. Stephen Ward, who occupied this property prior to the Revolution, (his dwelling house standing directly on the site of the present Marble Hall, and closely resembling it in all its proportions), was the son of Edmund Ward, of Eastchester, for many years a member of the Colonial Assembly, and grandson of Edmund Ward, of Fairfield, Connecticut, who removed to Eastchester about the latter period of the 17th century. In 1700 the inhabitants of this town granted to Edmund Ward fifty acres of land, in consideration that he pay the Indians for the same. These lands were situated on the Long Reach, for the name of Edward Ward occurs in the Long Reach patent granted to William Peartree and others, A. D., 1708.

The Wards of Eastchester descend from the ancient family of that name formerly seated at Goileston and Homesfield, in the County of Suffolk, England, in 1593, who claimed to represent William de la Ward who flourished temp. Henry II, 1154-1189. Of this family was Andrew Ward, a native of Suffolk County, who emigrated to New England in 1630. He was a freeman of Watertown, Mass., and accompanied the first settlers to Connecticut, and was elected magistrate in 1636. He subsequently removed with the Rev. Richard Denton to Hempstead, Long Island, in 1643, and became a resident of Fairfield in 1649. His son was the grandfather of the former proprietor of the Somerville estate.

The Honorable Stephen Ward, above mentioned, was for many years a judge of the county, and a firm patriot throughout the Revolution. At an early period he appears to have been proscribed by the loyalist party, and a bounty set upon his head.

---

<sup>a</sup> McDonald MSS. in possession of George H. Moore, of N. Y. Hist. Soc.

<sup>b</sup> Ditto. Prince Gedney of White Plains, 92 years of age in Oct. 1844, says, that Elijah Haines, a private in the Queen's Rangers, was killed in the attack upon Ward's house. His sons were Bartholomew, Thos., Jas. & Elijah Haines.

## PEDIGREE OF WARD, OF WESTCHESTER COUNTY.

Arms:—Az. a cross, patonce, or. Crest:—A Wolf's head, erased, or. Motto:—*Non nobis solum.*

Andrew Ward, of Watertown, Mass., freeman, 1634, accompanied the first settlers to Connecticut, and was elected a magistrate in 1636; removed to Long Island, in 1643; a resident of Fairfield, Conn., in 1649.

Edmund Ward, of Fairfield, Conn., re-  
moved to Eastchester; will dated June,  
1712. Surrogate's office, No. 7, 111.

Samuel, East-  
chester, 1698  
Abigail

John Ward

Edmund Ward, member of the  
Colonial Assembly; will dated  
12th Feb., 1731. Surrogate's  
Rec No. 11, 276.

William Ward, of Connecticut,  
ancestor of the Wards of Litch-  
field.

Richard of Westchester Mary

Ada Isaac Lawrence

Edmund, of Eastchester, to whom  
his father bequeathed a silver  
hilted sword; ob. 1805.

Hon. Stephen, Judge of the  
County of Westchester, nat.  
Feb. 27, 1730, ob. Dec. 8, 1797.

Ruth Gedney,  
nat. Aug. 12, 1730,  
ob. May 23, 1809.

Mary

Merriam

John Phoebe

1. Edmund

2. John

3. William

4. Moses

5. Elijah

6. Richard

7. Stephen Mary Griffin

Charles m. Jan. 20th, 1783.

Mary Pell

James nat. May 29th, 1762.

Phoebe Tompkins

Bartholomew nat. Aug. 25, 1766.

Elizabeth Bonnet

Jonathan Surr. of W'chester Co., nat. Sept. 21, 1763, ob. Sept. 28, 1842.

Sarah Brown, da. of Hachaliah, nat. 2d June, 1772.

Richard nat. 1st Jan., 1770, m. Mar. 6, 1791, ob. 28 May, 1816.

Deborah Briggs

Jasper nat. Feb. 4, 1773, ob. 4, Dec. 1834.

Ann Egbert

Joseph

John nat. Sept., 1731, ob. Aug. 16, 1811.

Mary nat. June 6, 1754, ob. Aug. 16, 1771.

Martha nat. Feb. 23, 1756, m. Dec. 28, 1783.

John of E'chester, will dated 1754. Sur. Rec. fol. 19, 102.

Mary

Tho mas

Free- love Pinckney

Stephen, nat. April 8, 1787.

Philip Pell, Jeffer-  
son County, N. Y.

Margaret Mary

Sarah Benj. Wright

Ruth Julia

Glorianna Wood

Martha Nancy

Caleb T. Ward, of Staten Island.

Bounett, nat. July 18, 1795, ob. 8 Jan., 1812.

Mary, nat. May, 1801, ob. 21 May, 1816.

Caroline Anna Jackson Odell

Stephen James H. nat. Sept. 12, 1825.

Isaac nat. 12 Nov., 1748.

Martha Townsend, nat. 10th Aug., 1755, ob. 14, Feb., 1825.

Charles, nat. April 11th, 1802, ob.

Sally Ann, nat. June 10th, 1800, ob.

Jane Emeline, nat. June, 1809.

Egbert, ob.

Rev. John W.

Sylvester, S. H.

Theodore A.

Caroline M.

Mary A.

Moses, nat. June 8d, 1774.

Elizabeth Townsend

John, nat. 26th June, 1778.

Sarah Morgan

James, nat. 21st April, 1780, ob. 28 Aug., 1838.

Esther Fowler

Thomas, nat. 22d March, 1785, ob. s. p.

Elijah, nat. June 9, 1789, of Western New York.

Isaac, nat. 18th March, 1794.

Daniel, nat. 31st March, 1796.

Abigail, nat. 1776.

Ann, nat. 26th Feb., 1788.

Townsend

Moses, of Sing-Sing

Ann, da. of Job Sherwood

Philip, ob. s. p.

William

Thomas 1 2 Oakley

Israel Sarah Russell

Samuel Mary Purdy

Nancy Stephen Archer

Rebecca Nathaniel Underhill

Freelove Oliver Torra

Elizabeth Gilbert Tompkins

Hannah James Hunter

Phoebe William Hunter

Isaac Abijah Nathaniel

Hester Maj. Gen. Frances James Sally Will Thomas Mary G Luyster

Brower Aaron of Sing-Sing

Pugsley

Ann Carpenter.

Elizabeth Nathaniel Sarles

Phoebe James Miller

Hannah Elijah Washburn

Elizabeth Levi Shute Ann,

Rebecca Dr. Scribner

Jemima George Sherwood

Jesse

John, ob. s. p.

Thomas, ob. s. p. N. Y.

Leonard, Essex Co. N. J.

James Ezra

Elijah Harriet Wm. Denham, N. J.

Jemima Nathan'l Carpenter

Catharine Odell

Mary Jas. Carpenter

William Griffin nat. Feb. 22, 1789, ob. Feb. 1825

Margaret H. Walworth nat. May 16, 1797, ob. Nov. 21, 1879

1. Eliza Louise John Betts

2. Hetty Maria Oliver Delancy Ward

William Julia G. Tyng 1. Mary G. 2. Emily 3. Rosalie 4. Harriet

Samuel Nancy Moses William Nathaniel Elmira Hannah Mariah Frances Ward Carpenter Catherine Harriet



The following epitaph is inscribed on his tombstone in Eastchester church yard:

IN  
MEMORY OF  
STEPHEN WARD, ESQ.,  
WHO DIED 8TH DECEMBER., 1797,  
AGED 67 YEARS, 9 MONTHS AND 17 DAYS.

Sons of America !  
Mourn for your country, she has lost a friend  
Who did her rights and liberties defend.  
May rising patriots keep those rights secure,  
And hand them down to latest ages pure.  
Mourn too, ye friends and relatives who knew  
His worth, his kindness, and his love to you.  
But duty bids us all resign, and say,  
Thy will be done who gave and took away.

By his wife, Ruth Gedney, the Hon. Stephen Ward left issue eight sons and four daughters; the fourth son was the late Jonathan Ward, surrogate of the county of Westchester, and a delegate to the convention that framed the late constitution of this State in 1812: also a member of State Senate in 1806.

In the vicinity of Marble Hall are situated the two valuable marble quarries now owned by John M. Masterton, late supervisor of the town. The former supplied the material for the construction of the New York and New Orleans Custom Houses and the City Hall, Brooklyn.

The Winter Hill burying ground just west of Marble Hall, contains some ancient memorials to the Haiden or Hadens and Hunts. One of the headstones is inscribed: "S. 1719;" another "Mary Hoden, deceased March ye 10th, 1731." William Haiden was one of the first patentees of this town in 1664-5.

Upon the eastern side of Long Reach lies the estate of the late James Somerville, Esq., now owned by James Somerville, for a long period one of the Associate Judges of the county and a well known and respected freeholder in this town. His father was Archibald Somerville, M. D., of Melrose, Roxburgshire, Scotland (whose family originally came from Berwickshire) a lineal descendant of Sir Gualter de Somerville, Lord of Wicknour, one of the companions of the Norman conqueror. His brother was the late Archibald Somerville who succeeded to this estate and left a daughter.

The Somerville property formerly belonged to Daniel Williams, a native of the town of Bedford in this county, and was given him by the State of New York, upon the 16th of June, 1783, "for and in consideration of the services of David Williams of Cortlandt manor, in the county



of Westchester, hath rendered his country in apprehending and securing the British deputy adjutant general, Major John André who was returning to New York, after having, in the character of a spy, concerted measures with the infamous Benedict Arnold, then commanding at the posts in the Highlands, for betraying the said posts into the hands of the enemy, and for his virtue in refusing a large sum of money offered by the said Major André as a bribe to permit him to escape, &c., and consisted of all that certain tract or parcel of land situate in the town of Eastchester, late in the possession of Edmund Ward, amounting to 252½ acres.<sup>a</sup>

David Williams subsequently removed from South Salem, or Cortlandt's manor, to Livingstonville, in Schoharie county, New York, where he bought a farm of General Daniel Shays, and resided upon it until his death, August 2d, 1831. He left a widow, 4 sons and 3 daughters. He was the object of much regard, from the interesting historical event with which his name is associated; and the year before his death he became the guest of the city of New York. The bones of Williams have been recently removed from Livingstonville, Schoharie county, to Rensselaerville, Albany County, where it is proposed to erect a monument to his memory. This is only doing justice to the good man's character; for his two companions, Paulding and Van Wart, have long ago been honored by a grateful public in the erection of monuments to their memories.

Edmund Ward, the former owner of the Somerville estate, was the only brother of the Hon. Stephen Ward. During the Revolution, Edmund appears to have sided with the loyalists, for which he lost his property under the confiscation act of 1782. His second son, John Ward, was an officer in the Loyal American regiment, "and entered (remarks Sabine) the military service of the Crown as early as 1776. During the war he was frequently in battle. The Loyal Americans went to New Brunswick, in 1783; and when in the course of that year the corps was disbanded, he settled at St. John as a merchant. He filled various public stations, and for many years enjoyed the appellation of "the father of the city." At the time of his decease, he was not only the senior magistrate of the city and county of St. John, but the oldest merchant and half-pay officer in New Brunswick. Mr. Ward was a gentleman of noble and venerable appearance. He died in 1846, in the ninety-third year of his age. His remains were taken to Trinity church, "where the impressive funeral service of the Church of England was read, and were subsequently interred in the new burial ground,

<sup>a</sup> Abstract of Sales of Confiscated Estates, 138.

followed to the grave by one of the largest and most respectable funeral processions ever seen in this city; including, in distinct bodies, the justices of the peace for the city and county of St. John, the Common Council of the city, headed by his worship the Mayor, and his honor the Recorder, the members of the legal profession, (the barristers being in their gowns), at the head of whom was his honor Mr. Justice Carter, supported by the Honorable the Attorney General and Solicitor General, the Grand Jury for the city and county, then attending the Circuit Court, and the officers and men of the New Brunswick regiment of artillery of St. John, as well as a vast concourse of other citizens, all anxious to pay the last sad tribute of respect to one who was so intimately associated with the early history of the country, &c."<sup>a</sup>

In the northern part of this town are situated the residences of the late James Morgan<sup>b</sup> and William Silliman, Esq. Immediately north of the latter stood the old Tredwell mansion, the headquarters of Lord Howe, when the British army lay encamped in the vicinity.<sup>c</sup>

The farm of Mr. John Bates completes the northern boundary of this town.

Upon Hutchinson's River are situated the saw and grist mills of John Tompkins and Stephen Anderson. The latter gentleman, besides his mill, carries on a large rope and cord factory.

The general surface of Eastchester is hilly and somewhat stony, the soil chiefly consisting of a fertile loam; there is, however, a good proportion of interval and meadow land upon the rivers. The town is well watered throughout, both by springs and streams. The growth of wood and timber resembles that of other towns in general; oak of various kinds, hickory, chestnut, white wood, ash, walnut and pine, &c.

"Among the most important minerals" of Eastchester ("in an economical point of view). may be ranked the dolomitic marble,<sup>d</sup> which occurs abundantly in various places, and is extensively employed as a building material. Pyroxene occurs every where in the dolomite."<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Sabine's Hist. of Amer. Loyalists, 673.

<sup>b</sup> See genealogy.

<sup>c</sup> From John Tredwell this property passed to the late Capt. Joseph Skinner, who died October 20, 1836, aged 70 years.

<sup>d</sup> Dolomite, magnesian carbonate of lime.

<sup>e</sup> Geological survey of the State, 1840.

# THE TOWN

OF

## GREENBURGH.

---

In the Dutch language Grein, (Grain) burgh (borough or town,) literally the Grain town. In some of the early deeds called "Lawrence's Plantation," a name undoubtedly derived from one of its original proprietors.

At the period of the Dutch discovery, this town formed a part of the Indian territory of Wikagyl as laid down in the Dutch caste of 1614.

The aboriginal name of the town itself was Weckquaskeck; afterwards varied to Weckquesquesck and Wiequeshook; in pure Algonquin, Weec-quas-guck, the place of the bark kettle.<sup>a</sup> Opposite Tappaan, (says De Vries, in 1640,) lies a place called Wickquaesqueeck.

Van Trenhoven describing the place remarks: "Wichquaesqueek, on the North River, five (twenty) miles above New Amsterdam, is a right good and suitable land for cultivation; contains considerable maize land, which the Indians planted, rising from the shore. In the interior the country is flat and mostly even, very abundantly watered with small streams and running fountains. This land is situate between two rivulets called Sintsinck and Armonck, lying between the East and North Rivers. "Bedenkinge over het aenvaerden van de landeryen in N. Nederland."<sup>b</sup>

To a large current of water which descends through the village of Dobb's Ferry and falls into the Hudson at the upper landing, the

---

<sup>a</sup> Schoolcraft's paper Prop. N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1844. In the Delaware language Wi-qui-jeek, signifies the head of a creek or run. See Essay of Delaware Indian and English spelling book for the use of the schools of the Christian Indians on Muskingum River, by Dan'l Leisberger. Miss. among Western Indians, Phila., 1776.

<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 240.

Indians gave the name of Weghqueghe or Wysquaqua, by the English called afterwards Wickers creek or William Portugues creek.

At the mouth of this beautiful stream the powerful tribe of the Wichquaesqueeks, had erected a village which was standing in the time of Nicholas Johannes Visschers, (Nicholas John Visschers,) for in his map of Novum Belgium, published at Amsterdam, 1659,<sup>a</sup> he calls it Wickquaskek, a name which was also applied to the surrounding lands as already shown. The site of this ancient village can still be traced on the neighboring banks by the numerous "*Indian shell beds*," which in some places are found to vary from two to three feet in depth. Another Mohegan village occupied the site of Tarrytown, called in the Algonquin, "Alipkonck," "Anneebikong?" place of leaves or "rich foliage,"<sup>b</sup> "Above Weckquaskeck, says Schoolcraft, was the village of Alipkonck, that is "a place of elms."<sup>c</sup>

On the map of "Novum Belgium" it is also styled Alipconck, which clearly shows it was standing in 1659.

From the bark of the white elm (*ulmus Americana*) the Indian manufactured his light canoe.<sup>d</sup> This tree is also celebrated for the elegance of its foliage.

As early as 1644 there were three entrenched castles belonging to the Weckquaskecks.<sup>e</sup> One of these strong-holds was still remaining in 1663, and garrisoned with eighty warriors.

The first sachem of Weckquaskeck, of whom we have any account, was Mongockonone, who appeared in behalf of this place, A. D. 1644, at Fort Amsterdam.

This chief must have held his authority under the high sachem of the Mohegans, for on the 30th of August, 1645, we find Aepjen, chief sachem of the Mohegans, appearing in behalf of Wappinx, and Weckquaskeck, Sint Sincks and Kicktawom, before the Director General and Council at Fort Amsterdam.<sup>f</sup>

It was Cushawashet or Wequashcook, whose original name was probably Wequashcuk, a Nehantee sagamore who assisted Uncas in guiding

<sup>a</sup> See copy of Visscher's map engraved by Thomas Starling, Wilmington Square, London, 1833; from the original, in the possession of S. Converse, New York.

<sup>b</sup> Schoolcraft's *Ethnology*. Oneota.

<sup>c</sup> Proceedings of N. Y. His. Soc. 1844.

<sup>d</sup> These canoes of bark were sewed together with thongs made from the dry sinews of the deer. One of them was capable of holding from twelve to fourteen men, or one hundred and fifty bushels of corn.

<sup>e</sup> O'Callaghan's *Hist. N. N.* 299. An old Indian who had been captured by the Dutch at or near Greenwich, Conn., in 1643 "promised to lead them to Wetquescheck which consisted of three castles; sixty-five men were dispatched under Lieut. Baxter and Pieter Cock, who found them empty—though thirty Indians could have stood against two hundred soldiers, inasmuch as they were constructed of plank five inches thick, nine feet high and braced around with thick bark full of fort holes. Our people burnt two, reserving the third for a retreat." *Journal of New Netherland*, Doc. Hist. of N. Y., vol. iv. p. 15.

<sup>f</sup> N. Y. Hist. Coll., 2d series, vol. 276.



Capt. Mason and his force against the ill-fated Pequot Fort Mystic, 6th June, 1637.

Eighteen years later Oratam, chief of Hackinkiskacky, summoned the chiefs of Weckquaskeck before the Council. Upon the death of Mongokonone, (who doubtless fell in one of those Indian wars so frequent in that stormy period,) Poupahowhelbsheln appears to have inherited the chieftainship. This individual sanctioned the sale of lands called Ubiequaeshook, to Petrus Stuyvesant, A.D. 1649.<sup>a</sup>

The chief of Weckquaskeck in the year 1660, was Ackhongh, who is called the chief and counsellor of Weckquaskeck.

In 1663 we have the names of Toawenare, sachem of the same place, and Souwenaro his brother. Also the same year occurs the name of Schowmenarack. In 1680 the chiefs were Weskora, or Weskomen, and Goharius his brother. And one year later Wessickenaiuw, sachem of Weckquaskeck, and Conarhanded his brother.

The descendants of the aboriginal proprietors appear to have been very numerous in this town, A.D. 1731, nearly half a century after their last sale to Frederick Philips.

In 1746 there were two Indian villages situated in the vicinity of Hart's corners; one stood on the farm of Mr. James McChain, whilst the second crowned the summit of Indian Hill, the property of Mr. John Tompkins.

Even as late as 1755 the banks of the Hudson were thickly populated by the Indians, particularly south of Tarrytown in the vicinity of Mr. James Ackers.

The cruel murder of an aged warrior of this town, Sept., A.D. 1627, plunged the Dutch colony into a long series of wars. It appears that "one of the neighboring tribe of Wickwasqueeck Indians had come, with his nephew and another of his nation, to the Dutch fort to sell some beaver skins. He was met, unfortunately, by three of Minit's farm servants, who not only rifled the Indian of his property but murdered him in cold blood.

The nephew of the unfortunate man, who was then a mere youth, was a witness to this outrage. He returned home brooding over the wrong, and vowed to take vengeance when he should arrive at the years of manhood; a vow he too faithfully fulfilled years afterwards, the Dutch having neglected to expiate the crime by a suitable present

---

<sup>a</sup> Pennekeek, sachem in Achtereol, stated on the 16th of July, 1649, (before the Director and Council,) that the tribe named Raritans, residing before at Weckquaskeck, had no sachem, &c. Alb. Rec. vol. vii, 252.

of wampum, in conformity with the customs of the red men, or punish the murderers, as justice and good policy demanded."<sup>a</sup>

Sept. A. D. 1641, the boy had now attained the age of manhood. "His uncle's spirit was still unappeased—his murder was unavenged. His voice was heard in the roaring of the storm—in the rustle of the leaves—in the sighing of the winds; and full of the conviction that that spirit could not find rest until vengeance should be had, the young Weckquaeskeek sought for a victim to offer to the manes of the dead. Shrouding his evil purpose under the cloak of a friendly or business visit, he called at the house of one Claes Cornelisz Smits, the 'raad-maker,' an aged settler resident on the west side of the river, under pretence of making some purchases. The old man suspecting no harm, (for the Indian had been in the habit of working for his son,) set some food before him, and proceeded to get from a chest, in which it lay, the cloth which the other wished to purchase. The moment he stooped, the savage seized an axe, struck him dead, and then withdrew, having rifled the house of all its contents."

"This aggression on an old and helpless man excited, when it became known, considerable feeling at Fort Amsterdam."<sup>b</sup> "Director Kieft promptly demanded satisfaction from the chief"<sup>c</sup> of the Weckquaeskecks. "But the sachem," who was doubtless Mongockonone, "refused to make any atonement. He was sorry that twenty Christians had not been immolated; the Indian had but avenged, after the manner of his race, the murder of a relative whom the Dutch had slain nearly twenty years before. On the receipt of this answer, armed parties were sent out to retaliate; but they returned, having effected nothing."<sup>d</sup>

Aug. 29, 1641, it was proposed to wait "until the hunting season, when it was suggested that two expeditions should be got up; one to land in the neighborhood of the 'Archipelago,' or Norwalk Island—the other, at Weckquaeskeek."

Notwithstanding the impatience of Kieft to attack the Weckquaeskecks, he could not obtain the consent of his council until Feb. 18, 1642. Having now received their sanction, "he ordered Hendrick Van Dyck, ensign in the Company's service, who had been already over

<sup>a</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 105. On the 29th of August, 1641, the following proposals were made by the Director General and Council to the heads of families residing at and near New Amsterdam: "When the Indian warriors are absent on their hunting expeditions, then we may divide ourselves into two parties, one to land at Rapels and the other at Weckquaeskeek and take them by surprise on both sides. The Director to supply as many negroes as he can spare, and arm them with a tomahawk and small half pike." Valentine's Manual, 1865, p. 537.

<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 240, 1.

<sup>c</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 241. Journal van Nieuw Nederlandt, Hol. Doc. v. 314. De Vries corroborates the statements in the text.

<sup>d</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 242.

two years stationed at New Amsterdam, to proceed with a force of eighty men against the Weckquaskecks, to execute summary vengeance upon that tribe, with fire and sword."

To ensure complete success, the expedition was placed under the direction of a trusty guide, who professed to be intimately acquainted with the homes and haunts of the savages. This party started in the fore part of March, and pushed actively forward towards the Indian village; but fortune favored the red man. The night set in clouded and dark; and when the expedition reached Arneperahin,<sup>a</sup> Van Dyck called a halt, notwithstanding the entreaties of his men to push on, ere the savages should have warning of their approach. An hour and a half was thus lost; the guide then missed his way, whereupon Van Dyck lost temper, and made a retrograde movement to Fort Amsterdam, whither he returned without having accomplished the object for which he had been detailed. The expedition, however, was not without its effect. The Indians had observed, by the trail of the white men, how narrowly they had escaped destruction; and therefore immediately sued for peace, which Cornelis van Tienhoven concluded with them, in the course of the spring" of 1642, "at the house of a settler named Jonas Bronk, who resided on a river to which he gave his name, situated east of Yonkers, in the present county of Westchester."

One of the conditions of the above treaty was the surrender of the murderer of Clas Smits, dead or alive; a condition however which was never fulfilled, owing either to unwillingness or inability on the part of the Indians."<sup>b</sup>

"Feb. 7th, 1642, winter came; and while the earth was yet burried in snow, a party of armed Mohawks, some eighty or ninety in number, made a descent upon the Weckquaskecks and Tappaen Indians, for the purpose of levying tribute."<sup>c</sup>

"At the approach of these formidable warriors of a braver Huron race, the more numerous but cowering Algonquins crowded together in despair, begging assistance of the Dutch. Kieft seized the moment for an exterminating massacre. In vain was it fortold that the ruin would light upon the Dutch themselves. In the stillness of a dark winter's night, the soldiers at the fort, joined by freebooters from Dutch privateers, and led by a guide who knew every by-path and nook where the

<sup>a</sup> Arneperahin, supposed to be the west branch of the Sprain river, which flows in the rear of Dobb's Ferry.

<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 249, 50.

<sup>c</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 264.—"I have been told," says Coldon, "by old men in New England, who remember the time when the Mohawks made war on their Indians, that as soon as a single Mohawk was discovered in the country, these Indians raised a cry from hill to hill, 'A Mohawk! a Mohawk!' upon which they all fled like sheep before wolves, without attempting to make the least resistance, whatever odds were on their side," &c.—Coldon's Hist. Five Nations, 3, 4.

savages nestled, crossed the Hudson," (into Pavonia, New Jersey, whither the unsuspecting Weckquaskecks and Tappaens had fled from Manhattan,) "for the purpose of destruction. The naked and unsuspecting tribes could offer little resistance; the noise of musketry mingled with the yell of the victims. Nearly a hundred perished in the carnage. Day-break did not end its horrors; men might be seen, mangled and helpless, suffering from cold and hunger; children were tossed into the stream, and as their parents plunged to their rescue, the soldiers prevented their landing, that both child and parent might drown."<sup>a</sup> Beside these, thirty more were murdered at Corlaers Hook, on Manhattan Island, while sunk in repose.

"This unjustifiable outrage led to consequences almost fatal to the Dutch. It estranged the Long Island Indians, the warmest of their friends, who now formed an alliance with the River Indians, whose hate knew no bounds when they discovered that it was the Dutch, and not the Mohawks, who had attacked them at Pavonia and Corlaers Hook. The tomahawk, the fire-brand, and scalping knife, were clutched with all the ferocity of phrensy, and the war-whoop rang from the Raritan to the Connecticut, for eleven tribes of savages proclaimed open war against the Dutch. Every settler on whom they laid hands was murdered—women and children dragged into captivity; and though the settlements around Fort Amsterdam extended, at this period, thirty English miles to the east, and twenty-one to the north and south, the enemy burned the dwellings, desolated the farms and farm-houses, killed the cattle, destroyed the crops of grain, hay, and tobacco, laid waste the country all around and drove the settlers, panic-stricken, into Fort Amsterdam. 'Mine eyes saw the flames of their towns,' says Roger Williams, 'the frights and hurries of men, women and children, and the present removal of all that could to Holland.'<sup>b</sup> "The assassins," says Bancroft, "were compelled to desire a peace, which was covenanted with the River Indians the 22d of April, 1643." This was principally brought about by the Dutch Patroon de Vries, and not by Roger Williams, as some of the New England historians claim.<sup>c</sup>

This peace proved unsatisfactory, for we find the Indians again taking up arms.

15th Sept., 1643, it was resolved by the Dutch to renew the war, either by force or stratagem, against the River Indians.<sup>d</sup>

"A. D. 1644, some of the Stamford people having surprised an

<sup>a</sup> Bancroft's Hist. U. S. ii. 289, 90.

<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 270. Rhode Island Hist. Rec. iii. 156.

<sup>c</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N. p. 276. note.

<sup>d</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. p. 285.



Indian village and taken some prisoners ; one of them an old man, proposed to the Dutch, in hopes of obtaining a reward, "to lead any of their troops against the Weckquaesqueecks, who are said to be entrenched in three castles, at the north. Lieutenant Baxter and Sergeant Cock were, thereupon, ordered to proceed under the guidance of this old man, with sixty-five men against this tribe. But this party was in no way more fortunate than those which had already gone on similar expeditions. They found the castles of the Indians formidable in construction, and well adapted for defence. They were built of five inch plank, nine feet high, and bound around with thick beams, and studded with port holes. Though it was calculated that thirty Indians could hold out, in one of these, against two hundred soldiers—strange to tell, the whole were found uninhabited. The Dutch, thereupon, burnt two of these strongholds reserving the third as a point to retreat to, in case of necessity. From this place they next marched between thirty and forty miles further, but discovered nothing save a few huts."<sup>a</sup>

April 6, 1644, "The spring made our river Indians again anxious for peace, which was brought about by the intervention of Capt. John Underhill. "Mamaranack, chief of the Indians residing on the Kicktawanc, or Croton River ; Mongockonone, Pappenoharrow, from the *Weckquaesqueecks* and Nochpeem ; and the Wappings from Stamford, presented themselves, in a few days, at Fort Amsterdam ; and having pledged themselves, that they should not henceforth commit any injury, whatever on the inhabitants of New Netherland, their cattle and houses, nor show themselves except in a canoe, before Fort Amsterdam, should the Dutch be at war with any of the Manhattan tribes ; and having further promised to deliver up Pacham, the chief of the Tamkitekes, (who resided in the rear of Sing Sing,) peace was concluded between them and the Dutch ; who promised, on their part, not molest them in way."<sup>b</sup>

The Fall of the same year, 1644, we find the "eight men," or council of the director, thus complaining to the Directors of the Dutch West India Company at home.

A semblance of peace was attempted to be patched up last Spring with two or three tribes of savages toward the north by a stranger,<sup>c</sup> whom we, for cause, shall not now name, without one of the Company's servants having been present, while our principal enemies have been unmolested. This peace hath born little fruit for the common advantage and reputation of our lords, &c.; for as soon as these savages had stowed

<sup>a</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. N. N., 298.

<sup>b</sup> O'Callaghan, p. 303.

<sup>c</sup> Captain John Underhill.

away their maize into holes, they began again to murder our people in various directions. They rove in parties continually around day and night, on the Island of Manhattans, slaying our folks, not a thousand paces from the forts; and 'tis now arrived at such a pass, that no one dare move a foot to fetch a stick of fire-wood, without a strong escort.<sup>a</sup>

"The Spring of 1645 brought with it, as usual, another desire for peace, on the part of the River Indians. This was brought about by Kieft and his counsellor, La Montagne. To make suitable presents to the Mohegans or Mahicanders in token of the ratification of this peace, Kieft was obliged however to borrow money from Adriaen vander Donck, Sheriff of Rensselaerswyck, afterwards Patroon of Colendonck, (Yonkers,) and others.<sup>b</sup>

On the occasion of this treaty, which took place 30th August, 1645, "Aepjen, chief of the Mohegans, spoke for the Wappinecks, the *Wechquaesqueecks*, the Sintsings, and the Kitchawancks. These, with others, seated themselves, silent and grave, in front of Fort Amsterdam, before the Director General and his council, and the whole commonalty; and there, having religiously smoked the great calumet, concluded in 'the presence of the sun and ocean,' a solemn and durable peace with the Dutch, which both the contracting parties reciprocally bound themselves honorably and firmly to maintain and observe."<sup>c</sup>

The ratification of this important treaty terminated, and a re-establishment of good understanding with the natives commenced; for, on the 14th of July, 1649, we find the Director General, Petrus Stuyvesant, purchasing lands in this town, in behalf of the Dutch West India Company.

"On this day, the date underwritten, appeared before the noble Lords, the Director General, and the council, *Megtegichkama*, *Oteyochque*, and *Wegtakockken*; the right owners of the lands lying on the North River of New Netherland, on the east shore, called *Wixquaeskeek*, in the breadth through the woods, till a certain kil called *Sewegruc*, diverging at the East River, from thence northward and southward to a certain kil called *Recharoes*, the same land lying betwixt two kils, one-half woods, and betwixt the North and East Rivers; so that the western half to the aforesaid is still remaining; and the other easterly half, with a south and north direction, middle through the woods, the aforesaid owners acknowledged; that with the consent of the chief Sachem, they have sold the parcel of land, and all their oystering, fishing, &c., unto the noble Lord Petrus Stuyvesant, Director General of New Netherland, for, and in consideration of certain parcels of merchandize, which they acknowledge to their satis-

<sup>a</sup> Hol. Doc. 111, 206, 222.

<sup>b</sup> Vanderdodck's New Neth. N. Y. Hist. Soc. trans. (2 ser) 1st, 27 Vol.

<sup>c</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. of N. N., Vol. I, p. 356.

faction to have received into their hands and power, before the passing of these presents, viz.:

6 Fathom cloth for jackets.	10 Knives.	1 Gun.
6 Ditto seawant (wampum.)	10 Harrow teeth	2 lbs. lead.
6 Kettles.	10 Corals or beads.	2 lbs. powder.
6 Axes.	10 Bells.	2 Cloth coats.
6 Addices.		

In consideration of which, the before-mentioned owners do hereby the said land convey, transport, and give over, to the aforesaid (noble Lords the Director) General, and his successors, in full, true, and free ownership: To the said land, we the grantors, neither now nor hereafter, shall ever present any claim for ourselves, or our heirs and successors, desisting by these presents from all action, either of equity or jurisdiction, but conveying all the same to the said Director General and his successors, to do therewith as it may seem proper to them, without their, the grantors, or any one of them, molesting the grantee of the aforesaid land, whether in his property or his family. It is also agreed that the most westerly half, just as the Lord Director pleases, shall go with this for as many goods as in \* \* \* \* can be paid; and they, the grantors, promise at all times to induce their rulers on the North River to talk the matter over, and not to sell to any without the knowledge of the Lord Director General; the grantors promising this transport firmly, to maintain as in equity they are bound to do. Witness these presents, by them respectively signed in the Fort Amsterdam, in New Netherlands, this 14th day of July, A. D., 1649."<sup>a</sup>

'The mark of Ponupahan helbghelen.



The Mark of Wegtakochken.



The mark of

Wle Ubeeguas

The mark of

Meektezickau

attested by the Chief Sachem

The sachems of this town subsequently committed further depredations, and probably armed several of the sixty-four war canoes that attacked and ravaged the country around Manhattan during the absence of Stuyvesant in 1655.<sup>a</sup>

For on the 6th of March, 1660, we find Ackhongh, the chief and counsellor of *Weecquaesqueeck*, appearing in the city of New Amsterdam, before the Director General and Council, to treat for peace.<sup>b</sup>

On the 10th of July, 1663, during the negotiation between Connecticut and the Dutch, a furious war was raging in the neighborhood of Esopus. The insurgent tribes were headed by five warlike chiefs, viz.: Pennyraweck, Sewekenamo, Wapperonk, Caelcop and Mekarowe, who threatened not only the extinction of the Dutch villages, but also their allies, the *Weeckquaesqueeck's*. In dread of the threatened invasion, we find the chiefs of this town repairing to New Amsterdam on the 26th of July, 1663. "Souwenaro, sachem of Weeckquaesqueeck, came of his own accord, with his brother and asserted that he was warned by a Wappinger Indian, that the Esopus Indians intended to come down, within five or six days, with forty or fifty men to kill them, with the Dutch of New Harlaem and other places, and those of the New Village; he told them he, with his people, took therefore their flight near Harlaem. He notified them of it, and why they came, so that those of New Harlaem should not be intimidated.

"He said, further, that he warned those at New Harlaem, and requested we would do the same to the people in that neighborhood, and warn those on the General's farm (Bowery). Souwenaro also stated that his people were only eighty strong, which could bear arms, and that they had, consequently, left their fort at Weeckquaesqueeck, and had retired into the woods to defend themselves."<sup>c</sup>

This war with the Esopus Indians lasted till November, 1663, when a peace was concluded. In the Fall of the same year, Sept. 15, 1663, appeared in the fort, Schoumenarack, chief of Weeckquaesqueeck, soliciting for himself and his men to go fishing unmolested near the village of Harlaem, which was granted on condition that they shall not come with arms near the Dutch dwellings, and that it may be known, with full certainty, that they were his savages, and not some of Esopus; so was delivered to him a seal (signet) of the Dutch Company, printed on wax, in small billets, which might be shown in meeting Dutchmen, on the day as above.

<sup>a</sup> Bancroft's Hist. U. S. ii, p. 299.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. xxi, p. 247.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. xxi, 247.



*Note.*—There were delivered to him eight seals, viz. :—

For those of Weeckquaesqueeck, whose chief is Sawwesach, four.

To Kitchtawangh, whose chief is Currupin, four.

Kiskingthing and Sint Sinck have no chiefs, but are considered to belong to those savages.<sup>a</sup>

On the 21st of October, 1663, we find the chiefs of Weeckquaesqueeck united with those of Sint Sinck and Kitchtawang, in a war with the Dutch.<sup>b</sup> The armistice of November appears to have restored tranquility. During the summer of 1662, "Connecticut purchased of the Indians, all the lands on the seaboard as far west as the North River."<sup>c</sup> Thus a second time was this territory ceded by the sachems of Weeckquaesqueeck. Upon the confiscation of the property of the Dutch West India Company, 15th of June, 1665, the New Netherlands passed to his Royal Highness, James, Duke of York; and these lands being within the province of New York, formed a part of the North Riding of Yorkshire. In consequence Connecticut ceased to hold any jurisdiction.

The next grantee under the sachems of Weeckquaesqueeck, was the Hon. Frederick Philipse, of East Friesland, in Holland, who had emigrated to New Amsterdam at an early period. The first grant to Philipse occurs on the 10th of December, 1681.

### INDIAN DEED OF PEKCANTICO.

"From the Indians Cobus, Oramaghqueer, Betthunsk, Sjoghweena-men, Wenraweghien, Saijgadme and Togtquanduck, of all these lands beginning on the north side of a creek called Bisightick, and so ranging along said river northerly to the land<sup>d</sup> of the said Frederick Philipse, and thence alongst the said land, north-east and by east until it comes to and meets with the creek called Neppizan, if the said creek shall fall within that line, otherwise to extend no further than the head of the creek or kill, called Pekantico, or Pueghanduck, and thence southerly alongst said river Nippizan, if the same shall fall within the said line as aforesaid, or else in a direct line from the head of the said creek called Bisightick, and from thence westerly to the head of the said creek Bisightick, and alongst the same to the North or Hudson's river,"<sup>e</sup> &c., &c. This purchase embraced the north-west portion of the town, and a part of Mount Pleasant. It was attested by

W The mark of WESSIOKENAEUW, sachem of Wesquaskeck,  
Witness the mark of  CLAUSE the Indian.<sup>f</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. xviii, 446.

<sup>c</sup> Bancroft's Hist. U. S. ii, 312.

<sup>d</sup> This refers to a former purchase.

<sup>e</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. v. 5.4

<sup>f</sup> This individual appears to have acted as interpreter upon this occasion.

V The mark of GHOHARIEU for himself, COBUT and TOGHQUANDUOK.

W The mark of WRAMAGHAQUEER.

Z The mark of PETTHUNOK.

O The mark of SJOGHEVEEN.

— The mark of WEARAWEGHEIN.

| The mark of SAYJAENW.

Here follows a schedule or particular account of the wampum and other goods paid by Frederick Philipse for the said land :

10 fathom of duffils,	2 iron pots,	6 howes,
10 blankets,	5 earthen cans,	12 axes,
8 gunns,	12 steels to strike fire,	9 kettles,
7 shirts,	2 coopers' addz,	40 knives,
1 anker of rum,	2 half vatts of beere,	6 brass tobacco boxes,
25 lbs. of powder,	70 fathom of wampum,	6 coates,
10 bars of lead,	7 pair of stockings,	2 drawing knives.

The second sale to Philipse, embraces lands situated south of the former, bearing date the 13th of April, 1682.

### INDIAN DEED OF NIPPIZAN.

"Beginning at the south side of a creek called Bisightick, and so ranging along Hudson's river, southerly to a creek or fall called by the Indians Weghquegsike, and by the Christians called Lawrence's plantation; and from the mouth of the said creek or fall, upon a due east course, to a creek called by the Indians Nipiran—and by the Christians, Youncker's hill; and from thence along the west side of the said creek or kill, as the same runs to lands formerly bought."

In presence of EMIENT, sachem of	SIAPHAM,
Kicktawongh,	GOHARIS,
CONARHANDE, brother of Wassekanew,	TEATTANQUEER,
ARAMAGHQUEER,	WEARAQUAEGHIER.

A schedule or particular of wampum and other goods paid by Frederick Philipse to the Indians, the owners and proprietors of the above land.

100 fathoms of white wampum	30 barrs of lead,	20 boxes,
12 fathom black ditto,	12 shirts	2 ankers of rum,
12 ditto of duffills,	12 pair of stockings,	2 1-2 vatts of beere,
12 blankets,	30 hows,	3 drawing knives,
12 kettles,	8 fathom of stroud water cloth,	2 coopers' addz,
10 guns,	8 coates,	10 yearthen jugs,
50 lb. of powder,	50 knives,	10 axis, <sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. v. 57.

Upon the 6th of September, 1682, Frederick Philipse purchased of the native Indians :

### INDIAN DEED OF WEGHQUEGHE.

" All that tract of land situate, lying and being on the east side of Hudson's river, beginning on the north side of the land belonging to the Younckers kill, or Wepperhaem, at a great rock called by the Indians Sigghes,<sup>a</sup> and from thence ranging into the wood eastwardly to a creek called by the Indians Nepperha, and from thence along the said creek northerly till you come to the eastward of the head of a creek called by the Indians Weghqueghe, being the utmost bounds of the lands formerly bought of the Indians, &c., &c., attested by

WARAMANHACK,	ESPARAMOGH,	ANHOOK,
MAEINTIGHRO,	MIGHTEREAMECK,	SAKISSJENOOH,
	AGHWAROWES.	

The schedule of the goods, &c., &c., paid by the grantee.

4 guns,	6 pair of stockings,	2 ankers of rum,
4 fathom of wampum,	10 bars of lead,	4 shirts,
4 blankets,	3 kettles,	2 fathom of cloth,
6 fathom of duffils,	12 lbs. of powder,	1 adze.
	1 drawing knife. <sup>b</sup>	

The last purchase made by Philipse in this town, (on the 5th of June, 1684,) includes the land situated between the Saw Mill and Bronx river, viz :

### INDIAN DEED OF NEPPIRAN.

" All the tract or parcel of land, situate, lying, and being, to the eastward of the land of the said Frederick Philipse, between the creek called Neppiran, or the Younckers kill, and Bronck's river, beginning (on the north side) at the northerly bounds of the Younckers land, and from thence along the aforesaid creek Neppiran, however it runs, till you come to the most northerly bounds of the said Frederick Philipse's land, and from thence north-east into the woods, to Bronck's river, and from thence along Bronck's river so far as it runs southerly to the eastward of Younckers land aforesaid, and from thence with a westwardly line to the aforesaid Younckers kill or Neppiran, together with all the lands, &c., &c.

SEPHAM,	ARRADPPANINT,
GHOHARIN,	KAWANGHIS, an Indian squaw,
KAKINSIGH,	NIEPACK,
ENHOAK,	KEWIGHTAKIN,
	TEATANGOOM.

<sup>a</sup> See Younckers; also Philipsburgh Patent.

<sup>b</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. v. 64. This deed includes the southern part of Greenburgh, from the northern line of Yonkers to Dobb's Feery.

A schedule or particular of goods, &c., paid to the grantors.

130 fathom of white wampum,	10 spoons,
12 guns,	2 knives,
14 fathom of duffils	12 pair of stockings,
12 blankets,	15 hatches,
8 coats,	10 hoes,
6 kettles,	10 earthen jugs,
6 fathom of stroud water,	10 iron pots,
16 shirts,	4 1-2 vatts of beere,
25 lbs. of powder,	2 ankers of rumme,
20 bars of lead,	2 rools of tobacco. <sup>a</sup>

The above sales covered the present township of Greenburgh, and subsequently formed a portion of Philipsburgh manor.

These lands remained in the Philipse family, until the attainder of Colonel Frederick Philipse, A. D., 1779, when they became vested by forfeiture in the people of this State. Under the commissioners they were parcelled out for small sums, to the Van Tassels, Van Warts, Odells, Lawrences, Posts, Archers, Harts, Ackers, Dyckmans and Requas, former tenants of the manor in pursuance of the act of 1784. Many of their descendants still occupy the patrimonial estates in fee simple.

In the records of the Court of Sessions for this county appears the following memoranda:

"March ye 2d, 1692-3, Justice Mott did sweare John, Charles and Johannes Yeruckson, assessors for Weekersqueeke, and Barnt Whitt, Collector."

The earliest entry relating to town officers occurs in the old town and manor book, entitled "the town and manor of Philipsburgh for to keep the town redesstors, 1742."

The first Tuesday in April, is chosen Abraham Martlinghs for the clerk of the town and manor aforesaid, at the town meeting, for chussen all other assessors in the town.

In 1742, the first Tuesday in April is chosen four assessors for the manor of Philipsburgh, viz.: Joseph Geddenie and Gerret van Wart, jun. For constable and collector is chosen Jocqhem van Wart. Pound master is Elbert Airsse. Frederick Philipse appears to have been supervisor in 1752. The first independent election held in 1778, is thus recorded. "Being a memorandum of all the public officers appointed

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. v. 79.



and chosen at a town meeting held as usual on the manor, the 7th day of April, 1778, and in the second year of our independency."

JOSEPH PAULDING,—*Supervisor.*

JOSEPH REQUAW,—*Town Clerk.*

PETER BANT,—*Constable.*

JACOB VAN WART, SEN. } *Overseers of the Poor.*  
JAMES REQUAW, }

GEERSHAM SHERWOOD, } *Assessors.*  
THOMAS BUSS, }

Within the township of Greenburgh are located several pleasant villages.

Hastings occupies a romantic situation on the east bank of the Hudson, at the mouth of a beautiful glen. The country rising above the margin of the river with great boldness, is luxuriantly ornamented with wood. A steep descent leads to the village landing and hotel, from which extensive views are obtained of the Hudson. The winding streams that buries itself in the adjoining ravine, supplies valuable water privileges.

The advantages presented by the river, combined with the healthfulness of the situation, has rendered Hastings a favorite resort for New York citizens during the summer season.

The site of the present village nearly covers the old Post estate, formerly owned by Peter Post, who occupied it during the revolutionary war. The house (a small stone edifice) is still standing. Immediately subsequent to the revolution, this building was used as a tavern, and became celebrated as the rendezvous of cock-fighters, and hard drinkers. Since that period, it has been transformed into the present neat cottage.

On the east side of Edgar's Lane, (a continuation of the Albany Post Road,) stands the mansion of the late Anthony Constant, Esq., formerly the residence of William Edgar. It is a fine wooden edifice, surrounded by rich plantations of cedar, fir and locust trees; and commands delightful views of the river, and adjacent hills. Judge Constant was the son of Col. Joseph Constant, and grandson of the Rev. Silas Constant, of York Town.

A. D. 1776, a skirmish took place in Edgar's Lane, between a body of Hessians, commanded by Lieut. Wurtz, and a troop of Sheldon's horse, under the following circumstances. Col. Sheldon having received information from his spies, that the enemy were preparing an incursion into this vicinity, left his quarters at New Castle, and—led by Isaac Odell, a trusty guide—followed the by-roads to this place, where he ascertained

from Peter Post, that the Hessians had not yet passed. Enjoining secrecy upon Post, the Colonel ambuscaded his horse in the adjoining cedars, which he had barely done, when the Hessians rode up and demanded of Post if he had seen the rebels. The Hessians, deceived by his answer, were proceeding in full gallop through the lane, when a shrill whistle rang through the air instantly followed by the impetuous charge of Sheldon's horse. Panic stricken, the enemy fled in every direction, but the fresh horses of the Americans carried their gallant riders wherever a wandering ray disclosed the steel cap, or the brilliant accoutrements of a Hessian. A bridle path leading from the place of ambush to the river was strewn with the dead and dying, while those who sought safety in the water were captured, cut to pieces or drowned. The conflict, so short and bloody, was decisive. One solitary horseman was seen galloping off in the direction of Yonkers, and he alone, wounded and unarmed, reached the camp of Col. Emmerick in safety. Here he related the particulars of the march, the sudden onset and retreat.

Astonished and maddened with rage, Emmerick started his whole command in pursuit. Poor Post was striped for his fidelity, and after having a sufficient number of blows inflicted upon his person, left for dead.

The late John Dusenberry, of Greenburgh, used to relate "that his father lived at one time on the Edgar farm in the old stone house, which was still standing in 1847. The fight between Sheldon's dragoons and Wurtz's chasseurs took place in the road north of Edgar's house, and between it and the old ferry house, which was afterwards occupied by Livingston's farm house. The combat commenced in the road, and continued easterly in the fields to which the yagers or Hessians fled."<sup>a</sup>

The lane, half a mile in length, has been since used as a race course. The former residence of Van Burgh Livingston, Esq., is agreeably situated near the river, a short distance north of Hastings. The estate is at present owned by Mr. Stephen Archer, who purchased it of Mr. Livingston.

The remains of the ancient military fort at Dobb's Ferry, is situated a little south-west of the Livingston residence. The form of the embankment is somewhat in the shape of a horse shoe. From its elevated position, it overlooks the ferry beneath, and the magnificent scenery of the Hudson River. This fort appears to have been a post of great importance during the revolutionary war; for it not only commanded the passage of the river, but also the opposite ferry to Paramus, on the Jersey shore.

<sup>a</sup> McDonald MSS., in possession of Geo. H. Moore, Esq., of N. Y. Hist. Soc. [Yager horse probably fought in the road and retreated southerly in that direction, while the foot fled for safety easterly to the hills and woods. F. McD.]

"On the 19th of July, 1781," (says Thatcher,) "the British frigates that passed up the North River, a few days since, took advantage of wind and tide to return to New York. A severe cannonade commenced from our battery, at Dobb's Ferry, where the river is about three miles wide. They were compelled literally to run the gauntlet; and returned the fire as they passed, but without effect. On board the *Savage*, ship-of-war, a box of powder took fire; and such was their consternation, that twenty people jumped into the river, among whom was a prisoner on board, who informs us that he was the only man who got on shore, all the rest being drowned. He reports, also, that the *Savage* was several times hulled by our shot, and was very near sinking."<sup>a</sup>

The remains of a second redoubt are still visible on the property of Frederick W. Paulding, Esq. The village of Dobb's Ferry, one mile north of Hastings, is prettily situated on the rising hills of Greenburgh, opposite the northern termination of the Palisades and the village of Tappan. This place derives its present name from the ancient family of the Dobbs, who have been long settled here, and also from the fact that they were the early ferrymen. In the year 1698, there was living in this vicinity, "Jan Dobs en zyn huys vrou," (and his wife,) Abigail, both members of the Dutch church, Sleepy Hollow. Thomas, their son, was born on the manor, A. D. 1712.

September 20, 1729, occurs a record in the Church books at Sleepy Hollow, of a marriage between William Dobs, born in Philadelphia, and Lea Van Waert, a native of the same place. They were perhaps Swedes, originally from the Delaware. Jeremiah Dobs, former proprietor of the ferry, left issue by Jane le Vines, besides two daughters, two sons Jeremiah and Peter. Several sons of the latter are still living in Greenburgh.

The Indian name of this place as already shown was, Weec-quæs-guck, literally "*the place of the bark kettle*." The aboriginal settlement appears to have been located at the mouth of the Weghqueghe or Wicker's creek, (William Portuguese creek). This beautiful stream arises from two distinct springs, situated on the lands of E. W. Waldgrove and Frederick B. Wilsie, both of which, running nearly west, unite soon after crossing the Albany post-road; here, commingled, they flow through a rocky glen enclosed between high wooded banks. Passing under the arch of the Croton aqueduct, the waters again appear rushing over their stony bed until their further progress is checked by the mill dam. Here a pipe of nine hundred feet in length conveys the water to the neighboring mill, affording a fall of thirty feet to an overshot wheel.

<sup>a</sup> Thatcher's Military Journal, 259. See Heath's Mem. 76, 294.

In the vicinity of the upper dock, the ravine opens and displays a splendid view of the Hudson river. The road passing through the gap of the Greenburgh hills west of the Saw Mill Valley, follows the course of the ancient Indian path, which formerly led to the village of the "*Bark Kettle*," at the mouth of the Weghqueghe, or Wysquaqua Creek.

The lower landing and ferry are situated some distance south of the creek at the foot of a steep bank. Here is a neat hotel, kept by Mr. Shadrach Taylor, for the convenience of passengers by the ferry, and the daily steamboats that touch at this dock.

Dobb's Ferry was distinguished during the Revolution, as the scene of active military operations. To this fort, October 9, 1776, General Heath ordered Colonel Sargent, with 500 infantry, 40 light horse, Capt. Horton, of the artillery, with two 12 pounders, and Captain Crafts, with a howitzer, to watch the movements of the enemy up the river.<sup>a</sup>

To this place the British army retreated after the battle of White Plains, closely followed by reconnoitering parties of the Americans. On the 7th of November, 1776, the enemy commenced foraging for grain and hay, and driving in cattle.<sup>b</sup>

On the 29th of January, 1777, General Lincoln's division of the Continental army was ordered to Dobb's Ferry.<sup>c</sup>

This ferry was selected by General Arnold and Major Andrè as the place of their first meeting. "Andrè's letter to Sheldon, (observes Mr. Sparks, in his *Life of Arnold*,) when divested of its disguise, will be seen to have no other object than to communicate the intelligence that he should be at Dobb's Ferry at a certain time. He presumed the letter would be sent to Arnold, who would understand its meaning, and conduct his plans accordingly, and so it turned out. Arnold left home on the afternoon of the 10th, went down the river in his barge to King's Ferry, and passed the night at the house of Joshua H. Smith, who resided about two miles and a half from the Ferry, near the road leading to Haverstraw. Early the next morning he proceeded to Dobb's Ferry, at which place Andrè had arrived according to his appointment, accompanied by Colonel Beverly Robinson, to whom the secret had already been intrusted by Sir Henry Clinton, probably at the suggestion, or at least with the knowledge of Arnold. An accident occurred which prevented the interview, and was near putting an end to the plot itself. When Arnold was approaching the point of destination by water, he was fired upon by the British gun-boats stationed in that part of the river, and so

---

<sup>a</sup> Heath Mem. 69.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid. 84.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid. 113.



closely pursued that his life was in danger, and he was on the point of being taken prisoner. By some oversight the boats had not been withdrawn, or it may have been expected that Arnold would come with a flag, which appears not to have been the case.

"Having landed on the west side of the river, he went down to the Ferry, where he remained till night. Whether André and Robinson were at the landing place on the opposite side, or whether they came up from New York in a vessel and remained on board, has not been ascertained; but, at any rate, no meeting took place.

"Not forgetting his accustomed caution, Arnold wrote a letter to General Washington while at Dobb's Ferry. His passage down the river had been in so public a manner, that it could not fail to be known, and he feared suspicions might be raised concerning his motives and objects. Filling up the principal part of his letter with matters of some importance appertaining to his command, he said, as if accidentally, that he had come down to that place, in order to establish signals, which were to be observed in case the enemy ascended the river; and also to give additional directions respecting the guard-boats, and to have a beacon fixed on a hill, about five miles below King's Ferry, which would be necessary to alarm the country. These reasons were plausible, and afforded apparent proofs of his vigilance, rather than grounds for suspecting any sinister design.

"Being foiled in this attempt to mature his scheme of treachery, he left Dobb's Ferry a little after sunset, went up the river in the night, and reached his quarters at Robinson's House, before morning. André and Colonel Robinson returned to New York.<sup>a</sup>

When Arnold left André, (the day previous to his capture at Tarrytown,) after delivering the treasonable papers, "André (continues Mr. Sparks) supposed he was to be sent on board the Vulture, as will appear by the following extract, which he wrote after his capture. 'Arnold quitted me,' said he 'having himself made me put the papers I bore between my stockings and feet. Whilst he did it, he expressed a wish, in case of any accident befalling me, that they should be destroyed; which I said of course would be the case, as, when I went into the boat, I should have them tied about with a string and a stone. Before we parted, some mention had been made of my crossing the river, and going another route; but I objected much against it, and thought it was settled—that in the way I came I was to return.'

"Arnold left him, and went up the river to head-quarters. Before he

---

<sup>a</sup> Spark's Life of Benedict Arnold, 180, 181, 182. An account of the second interview will be found in Cortlandtown.

departed from Smith's house, he urged Smith to go back with André to the Vulture as soon as it should be dark ; yet the matter seems to have been undecided, for he wrote and gave to Smith two passports (dating them 'Head Quarters,') one authorizing him to go by water, and the other by land.

"The former was in these words: 'Joshua Smith has permission to pass with a boat and three hands, and a flag, to Dobb's Ferry, on public business, and to return immediately.'"<sup>a</sup>

After the trial of André at Tappan, and his letters and those of Washington, as well as the proceedings of the board of examination, had been received by Sir Henry Clinton, then in New York, it was resolved by Clinton and a board of general officers, "That a deputation of three persons should proceed to the nearest American out-post, furnished with evidence to prove Major André's innocence, and to impart information which Sir Henry Clinton thought would place the question in a different light from that in which it had been viewed by the American board. The persons delegated on this mission were General Robertson, Andrew Elliot, and William Smith. They were accompanied by Beverly Robinson as a witness in the case ; and were fortified in their estimation, but weakened in reality, by a long explanatory and threatening letter from Arnold to General Washington. The commissioners went up the river in the Greyhound schooner, with a flag of truce, on the first of October. Notice of the intended visit and its objects had been already communicated by Sir Henry Clinton to Washington ; and when the vessel anchored at Dobb's Ferry, General Greene was there, having been deputed by Washington to hold the interview on his behalf. The person sent on shore by the British commissioners brought word back, that General Robertson only would be permitted to land, and that General Greene was then in readiness to receive him.

The conference was opened by Robertson, who paid some compliments to the American general, and expressed the satisfaction he had in treating with him, on an occasion so interesting to the two armies and to humanity. Greene replied, that it was necessary for them to know at the outset on what ground they stood: that he was not there in the character of an officer ; that he was allowed by General Washington to meet him as a private gentleman, but that the case of an acknowledged spy admitted of no discussion. Robertson said his design was to state facts, which he hoped would have their due weight, in whatever character he might be supposed to speak.

---

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Benedict Arnold, 209-20.

He then entered largely into the subject, endeavoring to show, first, that André landed under the sanction of a flag; secondly, that he acted wholly by the directions of Arnold; from both of which positions it was inferred, that he could not in any just sense of the word be regarded as a spy. The facts having all been examined by the board of officers, and being well understood, this new statement of them made no change in Green's opinion or impressions; and when Arnold's testimony was introduced, he said the Americans would believe André in preference to Arnold. General Robertson said, that no military tribunal in Europe would decide the case of André to be that of a spy; and he proposed to refer the question to Count de Rochambeau and General Knyphausen. Other considerations were urged by him, not so much in the way of argument as on the score of reciprocal benefits and humanity. He added that he should confide in General Greene's candor to represent in the fairest light to General Washington the arguments he had used; that he should stay on board all night, and hope in the morning to take back with him Major André, or an assurance of his safety.<sup>a</sup>

"The British commissioners waited till morning, as General Robertson had proposed; and at an early hour they received a note from General Greene, stating that he had communicated to Washington the subject of the conference, but that it had produced no change in his opinion and determination. This intelligence was astounding to Robertson; for he had written to Sir Henry Clinton the evening before, that he was persuaded André would not be harmed. How he got this impression is not easily discovered; since he represented General Greene as obstinately bent on considering André as a spy, and resisting all his arguments to the contrary.

Nothing more could be done by the commissioners. That no measure might be left untried however, General Robertson"<sup>b</sup> addressed the following letter to General Washington, dated

GREYHOUND SCHOONER, FLAG OF TRUCE,

DOBB'S FERRY, OCT. 2, 1780.

*Sir*:—A note I had from General Greene leaves me in doubt if his memory had served him to relate to you, with exactness, the substance of the conversation that had passed between him and myself on the subject of Major André. In an affair of so much consequence to my friend, to the two armies, and humanity, I would leave no possibility of a misunderstanding, and therefore take the liberty to put in writing the substance of what I said to General Greene. I offered to prove by the evidence of Colonel Robinson and the officers of the Vulture, that

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, p. 71, 2, 3.

<sup>b</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, p. 275-6.

Major André went on shore at General Arnold's desire, in a boat sent for him with a flag of truce; that he not only came ashore with the knowledge and under the protection of the General who commanded in the district, but that he took no step while on shore, but by the direction of General Arnold, as will appear by the enclosed letter from him to your Excellency. Under these circumstances I could not, and hoped you would not, consider Major André as a spy, for any improper phrase in his letter to you.

The facts he relates correspond with evidence I offer, but he admits a conclusion which does not follow. The change of clothes and name was ordered by General Arnold, under whose direction he necessarily was while within his command.

As General Greene and I did not agree in opinion, I wished that distinguished gentlemen of knowledge of the law of war and nations, might be asked their opinion on the subject, and mentioned Monsieur Knyphausen and General Rochambeau. I related that a Captain Robinson had been delivered to Sir Henry Clinton as a spy, and undoubtedly was such; but that it being signified to him that you were desirous that the man should be exchanged, he had ordered him to be exchanged.

I wished that an intercourse of such civilities as the rules of war admit of might take off many of its horrors. I admitted that Major André had a great share of Sir Henry Clinton's esteem, and that he would be infinitely obliged by his liberation; and that if he was permitted to return with me, I would engage to have any person you would be pleased to name, set at liberty.

I added that Sir Henry Clinton had never put to death any person for a breach of rules of war, though he had, and now has, many in his power; under the present circumstances much good may arise from humanity, much ill from the want of it, if that could give any weight. I beg leave to add that your favorable treatment of Major André, will be a favor I shall ever be intent to return to any you hold dear.

My memory does not retain with the exactness I could wish, the words of the letter which General Greene showed me from Major André to your Excellency. For Sir Henry Clinton's satisfaction I beg you will order a copy of it to be sent to me at N. Y.

I have the honor to be your Excellency's

Most obedient and humble Servant,

JAMES ROBERTSON.

"This letter could have produced no effect, even if it had not arrived too late; for it touched upon no points which had not already been examined and decided. The commissioners returned to New York."<sup>a</sup>

André was executed at 12 o'clock the same day.

"On the night of the 3d of August, 1781, about 11 o'clock, the British and American guard boats met in the river near Dobb's Ferry, when a considerable firing ensued; the Americans had one man badly wounded, who died soon after. The damage sustained by the enemy was not known." August 7th, 1781, in the morning, about two o'clock, the

<sup>a</sup> Spark's Life of Arnold, 276.



American army was awakened by the firing of cannon at Dobb's Ferry. It appeared that two of the enemy's gun boats had come up as high as the ferry, probably to endeavor to seize some vessels or boats. On finding they were discovered, they fired four cannon, but to no effect. Four cannon were discharged at the boats from the battery, on which they went down the river.<sup>a</sup>

Besides the two redoubts, there must have been a military block house erected here; for on the 17th of March, 1781, we find Major Graham ordered out with a detachment of 150 men for its relief, on which occasion, the garrison on both shores were doubled.<sup>b</sup>

Washington's diary informs us that on the 4th of July, 1781, Washington "marched and took a position a little to the left of Dobb's Ferry, and marked a camp for the French army upon our left." July 6, the French army formed "the junction with the American army on the ground marked out." "The American army was encamped in two lines, with the right resting on the Hudson River, near Dobb's Ferry. The French army stationed on the hills at the left, was a single line reaching to the Bronks river. There was a valley of considerable extent between the two armies."

Washington's object in taking the position on the Hudson River near Dobb's Ferry, was to be prepared to make an attack on New York city, and also from the apprehension of that attack to induce the enemy to withdraw a large portion of his forces from the south. In this he was successful; and thus it was that he was enabled to defeat and compel the surrender of Cornwallis, and end the war.

By Washington's *Orderly Book*, July 6, 1781, written at Dobb's Ferry, Washington "embraces the earliest opportunity of expressing his thanks to Count de Rochambeau for the unremitting zeal with which he has prosecuted his march in order to form the long wished-for junction between the French and American armies. An event which must afford the highest degree of pleasure to every friend of the country, and from which the happiest consequences are to be expected."

The attack upon New York depended upon a large augmentation of the American army; waiting for that, Washington, with Rochambeau made extensive reconnoissances on the west as well as the east side of the Hudson River, starting from the headquarters at Dobb's Ferry.<sup>c</sup>

The strategy to induce the British army to come out of New York was various. Among other movements it was contemplated to land a large

---

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 295.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 277.

<sup>c</sup> Washington's Life by Washington Irving, vol. 17, p. 804, 805, 806.

force at Tubby Hook, to take by strategy, Fort Washington, and thus induce the enemy to come out to succor that important point, when the American army would rush upon the enemy, defeat him and follow him into the city.

See Washington's address to Major-General Lord Sterling:—

HEADQUARTERS DOBB'S FERRY, }  
July 14, 1781. }

"The party at Dobb's Ferry being for the purpose of erecting a work there; they are not to withdraw for camp duty."

Washington, with a considerable body, accompanied by the distinguished French officers, about to make a most interesting reconnoissance, left Lord Sterling in command at Headquarters, Dobb's Ferry, to defend which a work was to be erected.

During the period of about forty days, while Dobb's Ferry was the headquarters of the army, Washington addressed fifteen dispatches dated at that place. "Light troops and lancers had performed their duty in scouring the neighborhood. The refugee pests, which had desolated the country, were broken up; most of the refugees," Washington says, "had fled and hid themselves in several places."

Irving, referring to the locations of the two armies at Dobb's Ferry, says: "The French encampment made a gallant display along the Greenburgh hills. Some of the officers took a pride in decorating their tents, and forming little gardens in their vicinity."<sup>a</sup>

Upon the suspension of hostilities, May 3, 1783, General Washington, His Excellency, Governor Clinton, and General Sir Guy Tarlton, (the British commander,) and their respective suites, met here. The two former came down the river in barges; the latter ascended the river in a frigate. Four companies of light infantry performed the duty of guards on this memorable occasion.<sup>b</sup>

Near the junction of the Albany Post, and Saw Mill river road, is situated the Presbyterian church, sometimes called, by way of distinction, the lower Greenburgh church. This society was organized on the 11th of April, 1825. Present at its first meeting of the clergy, the Rev. Samuel Robertson, Rev. Mr. Weeks, and the Rev. Mr. Wells of New Rochelle. Of the members, Perez Jones, Peter Nodine, James Odell, Elizabeth Lefurge, Van Burgh Livingston and Harriett Livingston.

<sup>a</sup> Ditto, vol. iv, p. 304.

<sup>b</sup> "The tour of duty having fallen to our regiment, we marched from Nelson's point, on the 24th, crossed the river at King's Ferry, and on the 25th, encamped near the block house at this place." August 5th; "flags were passing and repassing from this post to New York and back, every day." Thatcher's Mil. Journal, 310.

This edifice was erected, A. D. 1827. Principal contributor, Van Burgh Livingston, Elder of the church.

The Episcopal parish of Greenburgh was first organized by the Rev. Alexander H. Crosby, in 1833. St John's church, Yonkers, having for nearly seventy years previously, constituted the only benefice in the manor of Philipsburgh. On the 31st of August, 1833, the church was incorporated under the name and title of "The Rector, Church-wardens, and Vestrymen of Zion church, in the town of Greenburgh." "Joseph Howland and Oscar Irving, Church-wardens; Van Burgh Livingston, Anthony Constant, William Waring, Cornelius M. Odell, Adam Storms and Everet Brown, Vestrymen."<sup>a</sup>

Zion church stands upon the highest ground in the village of Dobb's Ferry, near the Albany Post-road. The wonderfully extensive views which this elevated spot commands on every side, are better seen than described. This edifice has been almost wholly rebuilt and enlarged to three times its original size, during the past year, and was consecrated on the 24th of July, 1854, by the late Rt. Rev. the Provisional Bishop of the Diocese.



Zion Church, Lower Greenburgh, (Enlarged).

#### LIST OF RECTORS.

- 1833, Rev. ALEX. H. CROSBY, A. M.
- 1836, Rev. WM. CRAIGHTON, D. D.
- 1851, Rev. W. E. HEYER.
- 1852, Rev. WM. A. McVICKER, A. M.
- 1860, Rev. I. H. WILLIAMS.
- 1865, Rev. Geo. B. REESE, Present.

---

<sup>a</sup> County Rec. R. Society, Liber. B., p. 17. Day of election, Easter Tuesday.

"The ground which it occupies was the gift of Van Burgh Livingston, Esq. The foundation of the old edifice was laid as we have seen in 1833, and the church consecrated to the service of Almighty God, on Tuesday, the 20th of May, 1834, by Bishop Onderdonk. There are two or three interments in the grave-yard, surrounding the church, of members belonging to the Noble, Bowdoin and Irving families.

In July, 1866, a dwelling house with about an acre of land on the south-east of the church property and immediately adjoining, was purchased as a rectory, for \$7,900.

In April, 1867, the vestry received a deed from the executors of Robert B. Minturn, of certain lots in the village of Hastings, where a service on Sunday afternoons had been for years maintained, to enable them to erect a chapel, nearly \$800 for the purpose had already been donated by Admiral Farragut, being the first fruits of his prize money. His widow has since presented a handsome marble font.

The corner stone of Zion chapel was laid by the Rector of Zion church, on the 2d of Oct., 1867, and the building was occupied for Divine service the following summer. The chapel is a frame, gothic structure, and will seat 300 persons, and cost over \$5,000. There was no debt upon it.

In the year 1869, the Parish church was again enlarged, by the addition of a recess-chapel with organ and vestry room, and the church was repaired throughout. The improvements cost \$8,000, all paid for.

In 1878, the Rectory was remodelled and improved at an expense of \$1,500.

At Dearman's, now Irvington, was erected a building chapelwise, so as to be used separately as a school, or treated as a church. When needed for worship, the whole becomes a church.

The dedication of the chapel school of St. Barnabas took place on Saturday, June 11th, 1853, the festival of St. Barnabas. The following particulars touching the origin of its free scholarship, may not be without interest in showing how a good scheme prospers under God's blessing.

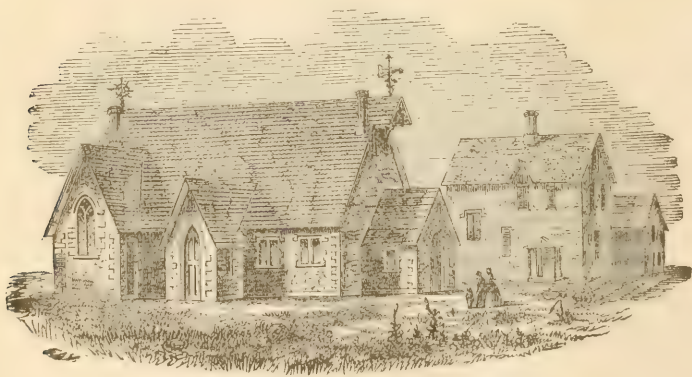
From a friend interested in the village of Irvington, came its first landed endowment, viz: The two village lots, (50 feet by 100) with two adjoining gores, on which the building stands; the gift of one bearing an honored name, the grandson and name-sake of the friend, companion and counsellor of Washington, a name and gift now perpetuated in the 'JOHN JAY SCHOLARSHIP.' A second bears in its name an equal national rank and character, viz: the 'ALEXANDER HAMILTON SCHOLARSHIP,' through the kindness of the grandson and name-sake of that eminent leader in Washington's counsels and framer of our country's policy. A



third bears also the name of the 'JOHN BARD SCHOLARSHIP,' the first contributor of funds to aid in the erection of the school. A fourth scholarship bears the well-known name of its earliest country contributor, a name as world-wide in literary reputation, as it is dear to his friends: the 'WASHINGTON IRVING SCHOLARSHIP.' A fifth bears the name of a most liberal and kind contributor to all good works: the 'ROBERT B. MINTURN SCHOTARSHIP.' A sixth that of the 'FRANKLIN C. FIELD SCHOLARSHIP,' in return for the gift of two village lots. And a seventh that of the 'TRINITY CHURCH SCHOLARSHIP,' in memory of its liberal grant of \$1,000.

To these *free* scholarships, the nomination under the rules of the school, is in the hands of those whose names they respectively bear, for life, or descending to heirs according to the amount of endowment.

In addition to the above *private* scholarship, *nine* further are provided, as "on the foundation," to which the nomination lies jointly in the "Visitor," the "Missionary" and the "Principal" of the school; the object of these last being to provide gratuitous instruction for such as need it in the neighborhood, without the reproachful distinction of being received in *forma pauperis*.



Chapel School and Parsonage of St. Barnabas.

#### LIST OF RECTORS.

May 21, 1859, Rev. WM. McVICKER, D.D., resigned May 4, 1867.

Aug. 22, 1867, Rev. WM. HENRY BENJAMIN, B.A., Present incumbent.

This parish was incorporated in 1858. On the 1st of May, 1852, the Rev. Wm. A. McVicker, D.D., was appointed by Bishop Wainright. missionary to Dearmans now Irvington and parts adjacent. The corner





RESIDENCE OF WASHINGTON IRVING, SUNNYSIDE.

stone of the present chapel school was laid in August, 1852, and the building opened for divine service in May, 1853. On the 11th of June, 1864, the enlarged church building was consecrated by Bishop Potter.

Immediately in the vicinity of Dobb's Ferry, and contiguous to the river, is the residence and estate of James A. Hamilton, Esq., son of the Hon. Alexander Hamilton. The house which commands a fine view of the river, contains among other valuable family relics, the original portrait of General Washington, painted by Stewart for the Hon. Alexander Hamilton; after his death it remained in the possession of Mrs. Hamilton, upon whose decease it passed into the hands of her son—the present owner. The Hamilton estate formerly belonged to the Odell family. Jonathan Odell, father of the distinguished Colonel John Odell, was residing here in the Autumn of 1776, when the British army, after retiring from White Plains, encamped in the neighborhood.

The enemy, upon their final retreat to New York, arrested Mr. Odell and four of his neighbors as prisoners of war. On their arrival in the city, they were consigned to the provost. Here four of them died of poison, said to have been administered in their food. Jonathan Odell escaped through the kindness of a friend, who daily brought him provisions. Each of the sufferers had sons in the Continental army, which was the cause of this inhuman treatment.

Bordering the river in the same vicinity, about two miles south of Tarrytown, a winding lane leads to Sunny Side, the residence of the Hon. Washington Irving. "There is scarcely (observes Mr. Downing,) a building or place more replete with interest in America than the cottage of Washington Irving, near Tarrytown. The legend of Sleepy Hollow, so delightfully told in the sketch book, has made every one acquainted with his neighborhood; and especially with the site of the present building there celebrated as the 'Van Tassel House,' one of the most secluded and delightful nooks on the banks of the Hudson. With characteristic taste, Mr. Irving has chosen this spot—the haunt of his early days, since rendered classic ground by his elegant pen—and made it his permanent residence. The house of 'Baltus Van Tassel,' has been altered and rebuilt in a quaint style, partaking somewhat of the English cottage mode, but retaining strongly marked symptoms of its Dutch origin. The quaint old weathercocks and finials, the crow stepped gables and the hall paved with Dutch tiles, are among the ancient and venerable ornaments of the houses of the original settlers of Manhattan, now almost extinct among us. There is also a quaint keeping in the cottage, and grounds around it, that assists in making up the chain of the whole; the gently swelling slope reaching down to the water's edge, bordered by pret-



tilly wooded ravines, through which a brook meanders pleasantly, and threaded by foot paths, ingeniously contrived—so as sometimes to afford secluded walks, and at others to allow fine vistas of the broad expanse of river scenery.”<sup>a</sup>

Over the porch, is the following inscription :

**Erected**  
**Anno 1650,**  
**Rebuilt by**  
**Washington Irving,**  
**Anno 1835.**

GEO. HARVEY,  
Architect.

Above the peaked turret of the portal, glitters a horse at full gallop, once the weathercock of the great Van der Hyden palace at Albany; the other, upon the eastern gable, formerly surmounted the Stadt House of New Amsterdam.

The interior is in perfect harmony with the exterior design of this quaint and venerable edifice. In the library are preserved the elbow chair and writing desk of Diedrich Knickerbocker.

The “Van Tassel House” occupies the site of “Wolfert’s Roost,” which was built by Wolfert Ecker, an ancient Dutch burgher of this town.

In 1697, we find recorded the name of Jan Ecker, first accepted deacon of the Dutch Church, Sleepy Hollow, which office he appears to have held for several years. By his wife Magdelentje, Jan Ecker left issue, Wolfert, Cornelis and others.

The will of Wolfert Ecker, bears date 1753, “wherein he bequeaths to his son Stephen, a cow, or the worth thereof, more than the others, for his birth right; and to the child of his grand-son, Wolfert Ecker, son of Sybout, twenty shillings, beside other bequests to the remainder of his children, viz.: Sybout, Abram and Maretje.”<sup>b</sup> A branch of this family still resides in the neighborhood. From the Eckers, this property passed by marriage to the gallant family of the Van Tassels, who figure so conspicuously in the writings of Diedrich Knickerbocker.

<sup>a</sup> Downing’s Rural Architecture, 335.

<sup>b</sup> Rec. Surrogate’s Office, N. Y. lib. xix. 29.

During the stormy period of the revolution, it belonged to "Jacob Van Tassel, or Van Taxel, as the name was originally spelt, after the place in Holland, which gave birth to this heroic line." The following graphic sketch of the exploits of this redoubtable hero, is taken from the chronicle of the Roost:

"The situation of the Roost is in the very heart of what was the debateable ground between the American and British lines, during the war. The British held possession of the city of New York, and the island of Manhattan, on which it stands. The Americans drew up towards the highlands, holding their headquarters at Peckskill. The intervening country, from Croton River to Spiting Devil Creek, was the debateable land, subject to be harried by friend and foe, like the Scottish borders of yore. It is a rugged country, with a line of rocky hills extending through it like a back bone, sending ribs on either side; but among these rude hills are beautiful winding valleys, like those watered by the Pocantico and the Neperan. In the fastnesses of these hills, and along these valleys, exist a race of hard-headed, hard-handed stout-hearted Dutchmen, descended of the primitive Netherlanders. Most of these were strong whigs throughout the war, and have ever remained obstinately attached to the soil, and neither to be fought nor bought out of their paternal acres. Others were tories, and adherents to the old kingly rule; some of whom took refuge within the British lines, joined the royal bands of refugees, (a name odious to the American ear,) and occasionally returned to harrass their ancient neighbors.

"In a little while, this debateable land was overrun by predatory bands from either side; sacking hen-hoosts, plundering farm-houses, and driving off cattle. Hence arose those two great orders of border chivalry, the Skinners and the Cow Boys, famous in the heroic annals of Westchester county. The former fought, or, rather, marauded under the American, the latter under the British banner; but both, in the hurry of their military ardor, were apt to err on the safe side, and rob friend as well as foe. Neither of them stopped to ask the politics of horse or cow, which they drove into captivity; nor, when they wrung the neck of a rooster, did they trouble their heads to ascertain whether he were crowing for Congress or King George.

"While this marauding system prevailed on shore, the Great Tappan Sea, which washes this belligerent region, was domineered over by British frigates and other vessels of war, anchored here and there, to keep an eye upon the river, and maintain a communication between the various military posts. Stout galleys, also armed with eighteen pounders, and navigated with sails and oars, cruised about like hawks, ready to pounce upon their prey.

All these were eyed with bitter hostility by the Dutch yeomanry along shore, who were indignant at seeing their great Mediterranean ploughed by hostile prow; and would occasionally throw up a mud breast-work on a point or promontory, mount an old iron field-piece, and fire away at the enemy, though the greatest harm was apt to happen to themselves, from the bursting of their ordnance; nay, there was scarce a Dutchman along the river that would hesitate to fire with his long duck gun at any british cruiser that came within his reach, as he had been accustomed to fire at water fowl.

"I have been thus particular in my account of the times and neighborhood, that the reader might the more readily comprehend the surrounding dangers in this, the heroic age of the Roost.

"It was commanded at the time, as I have already observed, by the stout Jacob van Tassel. As I wish to be extremely accurate in this part of my chronicle, I beg that this Jacob van Tassel, of the Roost, may not be confounded with another Jacob van Tassel, commonly known in border story by the name of 'clump-footed Jack,' a noted tory, and one of the refugee band of Spiting Devil. On the contrary, he of the Roost was a patriot of the first water; and, if we may take his own word for granted, a thorn in the side of the enemy. As the Roost, from its lonely situation on the water's edge, might be liable to attack, he took measures for defence. On a row of hooks, above his fire place, reposed his great piece of ordnance, ready charged and primed for action. This was a duck, or, rather, goose-gun of unparalleled longitude—with which it was said he could kill a wild goose, though half way across the Tappan Sea. <sup>a</sup> Indeed, there are as many wonders told of this renowned gun as of the enchanted weapons of the heroes of classic story.

"In different parts of the stone walls of his mansion he had made loop-holes, through which he might fire upon an assailant. His wife was stout-hearted as himself, and could load as fast as he could fire; and then he had an ancient and redoubtable sister, Nochie van Wurmur, a match, as he said, for the stoutest man in the country. Thus garrisoned, the little Roost was fit to stand a siege, and Jacob van Tassel was the man to defend it to the last charge of powder.

"He was, as I have already hinted, of pugnacious propensities; and, not content with being a patriot at home, and fighting for the security of his own fireside, he extended his thoughts abroad, and entered into a confederacy with certain of the bold, hard-riding lads of Tarrytown, Petticoat Lane and Sleepy Hollow—who formed a kind of holy brotherhood, scouring the country to clear it of skimmers and cow-boys, and all other border vermin. The Roost was one of their rallying points. Did a band of marauders from Manhattan island come sweeping through the neighborhood, and driving off cattle, the stout Jacob and his compeers were soon clattering at their heels; and fortunate did the rogues esteem themselves if they could but get a part of their booty across the lines, or escape themselves, without a rough handling. Should the moss troopers succeed in passing with their *cavalgada*, with thundering tramp and dusty whirlwind, across King's Bridge, the holy brotherhood of the Roost would reign up at that perilous pass, and, wheeling about, would indemnify themselves by foraging the refugee region of Morrisania.

"When at home at the roost, the stout Jacob was not idle; he was prone to carry on a petty warfare of his own, for his private recreation and refreshment. Did he ever chance to espy, from his look-out place, a hostile ship or galley anchored or becalmed near shore, he would take down his long goose-gun from the hooks over the fire-place, sally out alone, and lurk along shore, dodging behind rocks and trees, and watching for hours together, like a veteran mouser intent on a rat hole. So sure as a boat put off for shore, and came within shot,

<sup>a</sup> The goose-gun is still in existence, having been preserved for many years in a hollow tree. It is now in the possession of Mr. Caleb Brush, of Grove street, New York, who married the celebrated heroine, Laney van Tassel.

bang went the great goose-gun; a shower of slugs and buck-shot whistled about the ears of the enemy, and, before the boat could reach the shore, Jacob had scuttled up some woody ravine, and left no trace behind.

"About this time the Roost experienced a vast accession of warlike importance, in being made one of the stations of the water-guard.

"This was a kind of aquatic corps of observation, composed of long, sharp canoe-shaped boats, technically called whale-boats, that lay lightly on the water, and could be rowed with great rapidity. They were manned by resolute fellows, skilled at pulling an oar or handling a musket. These lurked about in nooks and bays, and behind those long promontories which run out into the Tappan Sea, keeping a look-out, to give notice of the approach or movements of hostile ships. They roved about in pairs, sometimes at night, with muffled oars, gliding like spectres about frigates and guard-ships riding at anchor; cutting off any boat that made for shore, and keeping the enemy in constant uneasiness. These mosquito cruisers generally kept aloof by day, so that their harboring places might not be discovered, but would pull quietly along, under shadow of the shore, at night, to take up their quarters at the Roost. Hither, at such time, would also repair the hard-riding lads of the hills, to hold secret councils of war with the "ocean chivalry;" and in these nocturnal meetings, were concerted many of those daring forays, by land and water, that resounded throughout the border."

The chronicle here goes on to recount divers wonderful stories of the wars of the Roost, from which it would seem that this little warrior nest carried the terror of its arms into every sea from Spiting Devil Creek to St. Anthony's Nose; that it even bearded the stout island of Manhattan, invading it at night, penetrating to its centre, and burning down the famous DeLancey house, the conflagration of which makes such a blaze in revolutionary history. Nay, more; in their extravagant daring, these cocks of the Roost meditated a nocturnal descent upon New York itself, to swoop upon the British commanders, Howe and Clinton, by surprise, bear them off captive, and, perhaps, put a triumphant close to the war.

"This doughty Dutchman (continues the sage Diedrich Knickerbocker) was not content with taking a share in all the magnanimous enterprises concocted at the Roost, but still continued his petty warfare along shore. A series of exploits at length raised his confidence in his prowess to such a height, that he began to think himself and his goose-gun a match for anything. Unluckily, in the course of one of his prowlings, he descried a British transport aground, not far from shore, with her stern swung towards the land within point-blank shot. The temptation was too great to be resisted; bang! as usual went the great goose-gun, shivering the cabin windows, and driving all hands forward. Bang! bang! the shots were repeated. The reports brought several sharp-shooters of the neighborhood to the spot: before the transport could bring a gun to bear, or land a boat, to take revenge, she was soundly peppered, and the coast evacuated. She was the last of Jacob's triumphs. He fared, like some heroic spider, that



had unwittingly snared a hornet—to his immortal glory, perhaps, but to the utter ruin of his web.

“It was not long after this, during the absence of Jacob van Tassel on one of his forays, and when no one was in garrison but his stout-hearted spouse, his redoubtable sister Nochie van Wurmer, and a strapping negro wench called Dinah, that an armed vessel came to anchor off the Roost and a boat full of men pulled to shore. The garrison flew to arms—that is to say, to mops, broomsticks, shovels, tongs, and all kinds of domestic weapons—for, unluckily, the great piece of ordnance, the goose-gun, was absent with its owner. Above all, a vigorous defence was made with that most potent of female weapons, the tongue. Never did invaded hen-roost make a more vociferous outcry. It was all in vain. The house was sacked and plundered, fire was set to each corner, and, in a few moments, its blaze shed a baleful light far over the Tappan Sea. The invaders then pounded upon the blooming Laney van Tassel, the beauty of the Roost, and endeavored to bear her off to the boat. But here was the real tug of war. The mother, the aunt, and the strapping negro wench, all flew to the rescue. The struggle continued down to the very water's edge, when a voice from the armed vessel at anchor ordered the spoilers to let go their hold. They relinquished the prize, jumped into their boats, and pulled off, and the heroine of the Roost escaped with a mere rumpling of the feathers.”

“Shortly after the catastrophe of the Roost, Jacob van Tassel, in the course of one of his forays, fell into the hands of the British, was sent prisoner to New York, and was detained in captivity for the greater part of the war.”<sup>a</sup>

The present owners of Sunny Side are the daughters of Peter Ebenezer Irving, Esq., eldest brother of the late Honorable Washington Irving.

The family of Irving is from Scotland, in the northern part of which kingdom it was (as an ancient record quoted by Chambers the historian, and by Sir Walter Scott, observes,) “an ancient and principal family.” Very frequent mention is made of them in the early annals of that country; and in several instances they are spoken of by the above named writers as possessing a distinguished position and great influence among the baronial families of the north-east counties.

An old and curious manuscript history of this family is preserved by one of them in this country, entitled, “The original of the Family of Irvines, or Erivines, written by Christopher Irvine, M. A., State Physician and History-grapher to his majesty, King Charles the Second, in Scotland, and gent to his brother Sir Gerard Irvine, Bart., of Castle

<sup>a</sup> *Knickerbocker Magazine*. Upon good authority McDonald says that “Jacob van Tassel was, during the Revolutionary war, a lieutenant of militia, etc. While in the service of Congress he was taken prisoner at Pine's Bridge, and detained two years and four months. During his captivity his house, barn, etc., situated in the town of Greenburgh, etc., were occupied by Captain Buchanan's company of Continentals and the water guard as a guard-house and quarters for the officers and men, etc. In the month of September, 1779, a British man of war, lying in the river, landed a large party of men, and, after driving the guards off, set fire to his house and out-houses, and destroyed or took away all his stock, cattle, grain, furniture and farming implements, etc.” McDonald MSS., in possession of Geo. Moore, of N. Y. Hist. Soc'y.

Irvine in the kingdom of Ireland, in the year 1660." From this manuscript it appears that the oldest branch of the family styled the "Irvines of Bonshaw," were settled on the banks of the river Eshe, where they continued for many successive generations with varying fortunes. From this stock are descended the English and Irish Irvines, among the latter having been the Rt. Hon. General Sir John Irvine, Commander-in-chief of his majesty's forces in Ireland in the year 1779.

A very early offshoot of this parent stock were the "*Irvines of Drum*." The eldest son of the house of Bonshaw, William, having been knighted by King Robert Bruce in the year 1296, and for long and faithful services in the field, having been endowed with the lands of Drum on the river Dee in Aberdeenshire, which are *to this day* in possession of his descendants. The castle of Drum is about ten miles from the city of Aberdeen, and is now inhabited by Alexander Irvine, Esq., the lineal descendant of the above Sir William. Sir William Irvine of Drum married the daughter of Sir Robert Keith, Knight, Lord Marshall of Scotland, and of Margaret Hay, daughter of Gilbert Hay, Lord Hay, first Constable of that family. The manuscript referred to observes, that, "The king gave him the lands of the forest of Drum, and he himself having carried a private coat of arms whilst he was concealed under the name of the Earl of Carrick; he likewise gave him that, with permission for him and his descendants forever to bear it as their armorial bearing, with this motto, "*sub sole, sub umbra virens*," alluding to the family's great fidelity to him in his troubles. The badge or bearing consists of three holly leaves banded *gules*, on a shield *argent*." The history relates the vicissitudes which befell this family with much minuteness, and records their alliances with many of the most distinguished families of the kingdom; Abernethy, Forbes, Ogilvie, Douglas, Leslie, Dundas, etc., etc. There were several families of consideration which sprung from these alliances, among which are named the Irvines of King Caussie, Cutts, Glassil, Easterclane, Cornyhaugh, Murthil, and Astainford—all of which estates were in the north-eastern counties of Scotland. During the civil wars they suffered severely in property, and have since lost much of their former influence; although still retaining a position of the highest respectability among the gentry of that part of Scotland.

The first of the family who settled in America was William Irving, the son of Magnus Irving, who was born in 1731; and who, on coming to this country in 1763, altered the orthography of the family name, changing the final letter from *e* to *g*, to accord with the English usage. He was married at Falmouth, England, in 1761, to Sarah, daughter of John Sanders, Esq., of Falmouth, England. This gentleman was a very

successful and highly respected merchant of the city of New York, commanding universal esteem for his probity. He died in the year 1807, leaving five sons and three daughters. The eldest son was William Irving, a merchant of New York. He was distinguished as a gentleman of literary taste, and was concerned with his brother, Washington Irving, and Mr. J. K. Paulding, in writing *Salmagundi*. He was also a member of Congress in 1812, and died in 1821. The second son was Peter Irving, M. D., who died in 1837. The third son was Ebenezer Irving, Esq., late proprietor of Sunnyside, the father of the Rev. Pierre Paris Irving, Rev. Theodore Irving, William, Sanders, and of Edgar Irving, and the ladies who now occupy the homestead. The fourth son was John Treat Irving, Esq., a member of the bar, and for many years before his death, (which took place in 1835,) first judge of the city and county of New York. The youngest son was the late Hon. Washington Irving, whose literary fame will hand his name down to the remotest posterity. This distinguished and noble man was born in New York on the 3d of April, 1783 and died at Sunnyside, November 28th, 1859. Beside all his literary labors, he was, for several years, Minister Plenipotentiary to the Court of Spain. He was, also, for many years a warden of Christ church, Tarrytown; and, on several occasions, served as a lay-delegate to the Diocesan Convention. His remains repose beside those of his father and mother in the Mount Pleasant cemetery, upon the slope of the hill just north of the old Dutch church of Sleepy Hollow: "near the sunniest of the slope, where a grove of oak and yew trees commences to crown the hill, is the burial-place of the Irving family. It is a large, square lot, bounded by a low fence and a thickly-grown evergreen hedge. Near the centre is a row of five graves, while a few feet distant is another row of five more graves, all marking the resting places of deceased members of the Irving family." Between these two rows, and connecting them in one continuous row, is the grave of the illustrious and beloved Washington Irving, which is marked by a plain white marble slab, bearing the following inscription:

WASHINGTON,  
SON OF WILLIAM AND SARAH S. IRVING,  
DIED  
Nov. 28, 1859.  
Aged 76 years, 7 mo. and 25 days.

Immediately north of Van Tassel house is the residence of the late Philip R. Paulding, Esq., now known as the estate of the late Geo. Merrit, delightfully seated on a bold bank of the Hudson; it commands, from

its elevated position, the noblest prospects of the river, while the view to the east is terminated by the lofty hills of Greenburgh. The edifice is constructed of Sing Sing marble, after the designs of Alex. J. Davis, Esq.

In its details, both externally and internally, the most minute attention has been paid to a careful correspondence with the best examples of the Tudor era.

Among the most remarkable features of the building, deserves to be noticed the admirable porte cochère, or covered entrance for carriages, and a superb library ornamented with a lofty ceiling of carved timber.

The Paulding family have long been residents of this town. As early as 1712, we find Joost Pauldinck accepted deacon of the Dutch Church. The name of Joost Pauldinck occurs in a conveyance from William Odell of Rye, A.D., 1667.

In 1709 Joost Pauldinck appears to have been residing at Westchester. The father of the present proprietor is William Paulding, Esq., Mayor of the City of New York in 1827. The patriot John Paulding, who captured the British spy, Major André, was of this family.

The next object worthy of notice is the elegant and secluded villa of the late Henry Sheldon, Esq. This building is in the rural Gothic style and presents a very beautiful and picturesque exterior, combined with every accommodation and convenience of internal arrangement. No pains have been spared in laying out the adjoining grounds and plantations.

A small stream running through a deep and woody glen has been obstructed in various places by rock work, and thus forms several artificial cascades. Some close walks, winding by the stream, conduct to a large fall situated at the glen's mouth. The scenery about the fall is extremely fine, embracing a lovely view of the Hudson river. The old Van Weert mill has been transformed into a Swiss cottage and boat house. The Van Weert family were the first occupants of this estate under the Philipses, and subsequently became its possessors in fee. In 1698 there appears to have been three married brothers of this ancient family living in Philippsburgh, who claimed descent from the illustrious house of Van Weert in Holland, viz. Joacham Van Weert and Christyntje his wife, Gerredit Van Weert and Cathalyne his wife, Jacob Van Weert and Bieltitje his wife.

Gerredit Van Weert left issue, Jan Van Weert, father of Isaac, who sold this property to Mr. Sheldon.

The village of Tarrytown is pleasantly situated in the lap of the Green-



burgh hills, overlooking the Hudson at the widest point of the Tappan Zee, which is here nearly three miles across.

Tarwe town, the old orthography of the Dutch word *tarwe*, (wheat) "the wheat town," probably so called from the abundant culture of that grain in this vicinity.

Here was an Indian village in 1659,<sup>a</sup> styled by the aborigines Alipconck, that is the place of elms. It seems more than probable that this ancient settlement occupied a hill at the south end of the present village. This opinion is somewhat confirmed by the circumstance that the whole ground is covered with shells, in some places to the depth of two or three feet. It is presumed that these "*shell beds*" generally indicate the site of Indian habitations.

Upon the same spot are situated the remains of the old military redoubt from whence the gallant water guard cannonaded the *Vulture* sloop of war, as she lay grounded on the ballast reef. The site of the Indian village and redoubt belong to Mr. Hart, who purchased of the Dutch Church.

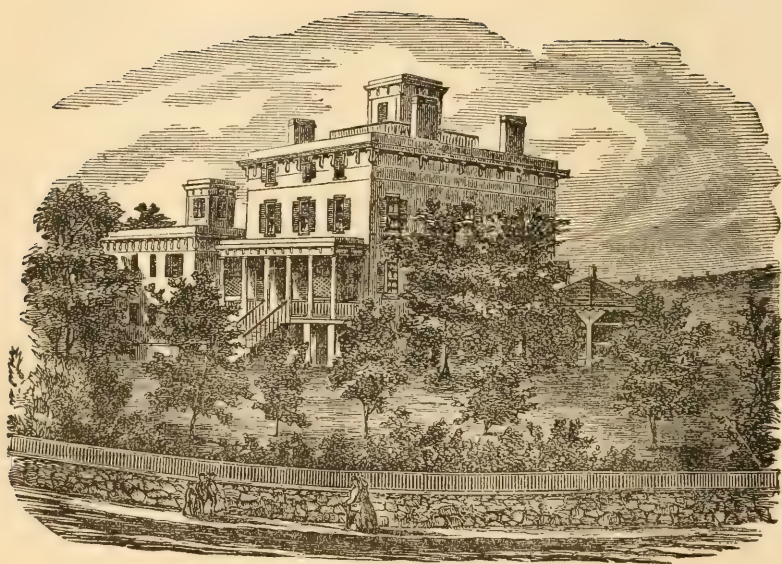
The Dutch settlement of Tarwetown commenced soon after Philips purchase in 1680. The first dwellings appear to have been erected near the water's edge, for the convenience of shipping, which found here a fine natural harbor. Prior to 1775 a dock had been constructed, and several houses erected near it. There are over five hundred dwellings, one Protestant Episcopal church, one Dutch Reformed church, one Baptist, one Methodist Episcopal church, one colored Methodist church. Four hotels and taverns, a large number of stores, one savings' bank, one banking house, and several young ladies' seminaries.

In 1875 the water works were constructed, a large reservoir was built on the hill east of the village—it is supplied by water from the Adrec brook, which is thrown up by the means of a steam pump near the depot. There is a fine fire department, organized by the Board of Trustees. In 1776, the village consisted of twelve dwelling houses. At the present day steamboats make daily trips from this place to the city of New York, and a number of sloops are also owned here, which run to various places on the river.<sup>b</sup> Near the water's edge, in the vicinity of the landing, is situated the residence of General William Paulding. This house was erected previous to the Revolution, by his father William Paulding, Esq. From its proximity to the water it was frequently the object of the enemy's fire; the marks of their cannon balls are still visible on its walls.

<sup>a</sup> Visscher's map Nov. Belgil.

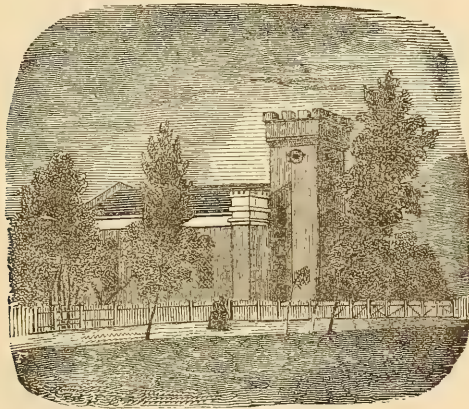
<sup>b</sup> A steam ferry connects this place with Nyack, a village situated on the opposite side of the Hudson.





IRVING INSTITUTE.

Upon a commanding position, north of the village, is seated the old Irving Institute now occupied by Prof. Jackson as a military school. It was founded in 1838, by W. P. Lyon. The location is, perhaps, the most desirable that could be selected for the purposes of education in this vicinity. The *site* is half a mile from the village landing, and about twenty-five miles distant from New York, with which there is daily communication. The *edifice* is a commodious brick building with wings, and a large rear building for the school. The grounds embrace several acres, affording abundant opportunity for healthy sports, and are quite retired from the village. On the opposite side of Pocantico street is the Irving Institute formerly kept by D. S. Rowe, A. M., now under the charge of his son-in-law, A. Armagnac, A. M., as principal, and D. A. Rowe, his



Christ Church, Tarrytown.

son, as vice-principal. It is a classical and commercial boarding school.

The buildings are well situated on high ground commanding a fine view; the grounds are ample and attractive. The school is limited in number and family in its character, its discipline is good, and its training moral and physical well attended to.

Christ church, Tarrytown, is a neat Gothic edifice of brick, pleasantly located in the main street.

This church was erected in 1836, and consecrated to the service of Almighty God by the name and style of Christ's church Tarrytown, September, 1837. The whole structure is valued at \$8,000.



On the north side of the chancel are two marble slabs bearing the following inscriptions:

IN  
memory of  
KATHARINE KEMBLE,  
Born October, 1765,  
and departed this life the  
16th day of July,  
A. D. 1843,  
Sister to MARIA PHILIPS.  
"In death they  
were not  
divided."

IN  
memory of  
MARIA<sup>a</sup> PHILIPS,  
(Relict of Frederick Philips,<sup>b</sup>)  
of Philipstown, Putnam County,  
NEW YORK,  
who departed this life the 13th day of  
November, A. D. 1839,  
aged 68 years.

Her remains rest within the walls of  
the Tower of this Church.

The memory of the just is  
blessed.—Prov. x. 7.

The Rev. William Creighton, D.D., first incumbent, was succeeded by Rev. J. Selden Spencer, present incumbent in 1865. The rectory adjoining the church, was built in 1875. There are costly memorial tablets in the church to Rev. Dr. Creighton and Washington Irving. The church was enlarged and beautified in 1868.

Upon a commanding eminence, nearly in front of the Episcopal church, stands the mausoleum of the Cobb family. The lower portion consists of a broad marble base, containing apartments for two sarcophagi, and likewise an upper receptacle for coffins, the whole surmounted by a neat obelisk.<sup>c</sup>

The Second Reformed Dutch church is situated immediately above the former, on the road leading to Sing Sing. This building is also constructed of brick. The front presents a colonnade of the Ionic order surmounted with a wooden tower and spire. This church was erected A. D. 1837, and is in union with the old Dutch church at Sleepy Hollow.

Above the entrance is placed the following inscription:

"REFORMED DUTCH CHURCH."  
Erected A. D. 1837,  
In all places where I record  
my name I will come  
unto thee and I will bless thee.

*Exodus xx: 24.*

<sup>a</sup> Maria Kemble and her sister were nieces of the Honorable Viscount Gage.

<sup>b</sup> Son of Philip Philipse, proprietor of the Philipstown patent, and grandson of the Hon. Frederick Philipse, Lord of the Manor of Philipsburgh.

<sup>c</sup> This structure has been recently erected for Capt. Nathan Cobb, now a resident of this village, formerly and for many years a most efficient and successful commander in the Liverpool packet line from New York.—*Irving Banner*.

The first pastor of this church was the Rev. George Dubois, who was succeeded by the Rev. Joseph Wilson, who was called in 1845, and Rev. John Mason Ferris, in 1849. The "First Reformed church," was built in 1854, a division having been made in 1852; Rev. Mr. Ferris was installed, January 11, 1852, over the "Second Reformed church," (built 1837,) and in July, 1852, Rev. Abel T. Stewart was called to the First Reformed Dutch church, ("the old Dutch church.") Rev. Mr. Ferris was succeeded by Rev. John A. Todd, D. D., in the year 1855, who is the present pastor of the Second Reformed church. Rev. Mr. Stewart was succeeded in the First Reformed Dutch church by Rev. John B. Thompson, D. D., who was called in 1866, and he by Rev. John Knox Allen, who is the present pastor.

#### THE ASBURY METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

About 1807 the congregation being of such importance necessitated the building of a church for the growing society. The first class was probably formed at the house of Mrs. Childs, under the hill below what is now known as the Cliff House. Mr. Wm. Requa offered a plot of ground on the corner of Maine street and Windel Park which was accepted, and a society was incorporated to build a church on this spot. They met at the house of Mr. Wm. Requa to take the proper legal measures. The certificate of this incorporation was filed in Westchester County Clerk's Office, March 1st, 1808. Under this the church existed as a body corporate until about the year 1820 or 21, when the annual meeting for the election of trustees seems to have been omitted and the corporation ceased to exist. About August, 1821, a reorganization took place and the name given to the new corporation was "The Trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church at Tarrytown in the town of Greenburgh and County of Westchester," which was filed Nov. 14th, 1821. The present title of the church—"Asbury Methodist Episcopal Church"—was probably adopted on the erection of it. At the meeting of the society first named, Mr. Wm. Requa conveyed lots for the building of the new church on the corner of Main street and Windel Park, and on which the first Methodist Episcopal church of Tarrytown was subsequently erected.

"It was a pleasing sight to see, when this little church was erected, the good old members wending their way to church of an evening with lighted candles in their hands. What a methodistical appearance they presented! The men seated on one side, and the women and children on the other. Look at these men with their plain shad-bellied coats and white collarless cravats; and the women in plain quaker garb. Not a ruffle, nor a bow, nor a flower! A flower! shades of all saints! Talk of

flowers in a Methodist church meeting. Why, that was the "abomination of desolation."

In this unpretentious building not only did the first Methodists worship, but that also of the present flourishing Episcopal church known as "Christ church" had its origin. When Mr. Holmes first came to Tarrytown in 1833 he found no place of worship of his own Church nearer than several miles from the village; he referred to his Bishop for authority to lay-read and procure a place in which to do it, accordingly he applied to the trustees of the Methodist church for the occasional use of the building, which was readily granted—and here service was held in the afternoons of Sunday. The Rev. Dr. Creighton officiated in the absence of Mr. Holmes, and here they laid the foundation of their church and Sunday school. At this time there was no other church in the place except the old Dutch church in Sleepy Hollow.

In the year 1842, the name of Tarrytown as a separate charge first appears in the minutes of the Conference. In the year 1843, Pleasantville was separated from Tarrytown. In 1837, the increased prosperity of the church, demanded a new and more suitable edifice. Accordingly, a site was purchased from Dr. Josh Scribner, in Washington Street. The corner-stone was laid April 17, 1837. The dimensions of the building were 40 x 60, and the cost \$5,394. The church was dedicated, and two years after the whole church debt cancelled. And so, after an occupation of about thirty years, the old church was forsaken, and has been converted into a dwelling.

A curious entry is found in the old Trustee minutes, in which it is ordered, that "hereafter, (1840) the males and females should enter the church by separate doors, and sit on the opposite sides of the aisles, and that the seats under the gallery be assigned to the colored members." These regulations were posted in the vestibule of the church. The parsonage was built on a lot directly north of the church in 1854, at a cost of \$4,800.

In 1857, the church was enlarged twenty-five feet in length; and in 1865, the entire indebtedness of \$5,620 was cancelled.

In the time of the Rev. Mr. Hermance, a few brethren living in North Tarrytown, resolved on a separation from the old Society—and so occurred the building of the new St. Paul's M. E. church, in that part of the town.<sup>a</sup>

There is also a Baptist church.

Mr. Christopher Collins, the first projector of the Erie canal in 1805-6,

---

<sup>a</sup> Extracts from a sermon delivered by the pastor, Rev. F. Bottome, on the anniversary of the church, Dec. 26, 1878.

was for several years a resident of this place, and lies interred in the grave yard at Sleepy Hollow.

Tarrytown is far famed as the place where Major André, adjutant general of the British army, was captured by Paulding and his associates upon the 23rd of September, 1780. The circumstances which led to the arrest of the spy were as follows:

Major John André had been long negotiating with the American general, Arnold, to put the British general, Clinton, in possession of West Point. "This post," says Major General Greene, (who, it must be remembered, was president of the court that tried André,) "is a beautiful little place lying on the west bank of the Hudson, a little below where it breaks through the chain of mountains called the highlands. Its form is nearly circular, in half of its circumference defended by a precipice of great height, rising abruptly from the river, and on the other by a chain of rugged, inaccessible mountains. It is accessible by one pass only from the river, and that is narrow and easily defended; while on the land side it can be approached only at two points—by roads that wind through the mountains and enter it at the river bank on the north and south. Great importance had always been attached to this post by the Americans, and great labor and expense bestowed upon fortifying it. It has been well called the "Gibraltar of America." The North river had long been the great vein that supplied life to the American army, and had the enemy obtained possession of this post, besides the actual loss in men and stores, the American army would have been cut off from their principal resources in the ensuing winter, or been obliged to fall back above the Highlands, and leave all the country below open to conquest, while the communication between the eastern and western States would have been seriously interrupted if not wholly excluded. Arnold therefore well knew the bearing of this post upon all the operations of the American army; and afterwards avowed his confident expectation, that had the enemy got possession of it, the contest must have ceased, and America been subdued.

The British general, Clinton, also appears to have appreciated the value of this post, and it is probable that the purchase of it had been arranged with Arnold some months prior to the detection of the plot. It was when Washington marched to Kings-bridge, with a view to the attempt on New York, and when he had mustered under him every man who could carry a musket, that he placed Arnold in command of a corps of invalids at West Point.

The commander-in-chief had offered him a command suitable to his rank and reputation in the army; but he made the unhealed state of his



wounds, and some other causes, the pretext for declining it—as the negotiations for the surrender of West Point had already commenced. Soon after the relinquishment of the enterprise against New York, a meeting was concerted to take place between the American commander-in-chief and the French military and naval commanders. Hartford, on the Connecticut river, was the place assigned for their meeting; the object was to consult on their future joint operations. Upon the departure of Washington for this meeting, Greene was placed in command of the main army. This was on the 17th of September, 1780. On the eighteenth, Admiral Rodney arrived in New York with such an overwhelming reinforcement to the British navy as must have set the consultations at Hartford all at nought. From that time Greene's communications to the President of Congress are full of the hurried preparations going on at New York for some important enterprise; little did he, or any other person suspect to what point that enterprise was directed.

It appears that General Greene had established a regular communication for obtaining intelligence from the city by spies; and his correspondents in that place were at loss whether the expedition was intended for Rhode Island or Virginia. To one or other of these places the enemy had been careful to throw out hints, or exhibit appearances, that the expedition was directed.

Yet Green was not deceived; for in a letter on the 21st (just two days before the discovery of the plot) to General Washington, he writes, 'Colonel ——— communicated the last intelligence we have from New York; since that, I have not been able to obtain the least information of what is going on there. Though we have people in from three different quarters, none of them returning, makes me suspect some *secret* expedition is in contemplation, the success of which depends altogether upon its being kept a secret.'

The British commander had now become sensible that no time was to be lost; as, most probably, on the return of Washington from Hartford, he would assume the command in person at West Point, or confide it to Greene. The present, therefore, was the most favorable time that would ever present itself.<sup>a</sup>

André was, accordingly, dispatched in the *Vulture*, sloop of war, to hold a personal conference with General Arnold. The *Vulture* ascended the Hudson river on the 20th, as far as Teller's Point, and came to anchor at the mouth of the Haverstraw bay. Here André eagerly awaited some opportunity to acquaint Arnold with his arrival. An occasion for so doing presented itself the next day. A white flag was displayed at

---

<sup>a</sup> See Barnum's *Spy Unmasked*.

Teller's Point by some of the country people, which, being interpreted as they wished, the captain of the *Vulture* sent off a boat with a flag, which was fired upon as soon as it approached the shore. This gave André the opportunity he desired, as it was a proper subject for a remonstrance to the commanding officer; and a flag with a letter was accordingly dispatched. The letter was dated on the 21st Sept.; it was in the handwriting of André, signed by the captain of the vessel, and countersigned "John Anderson." (André's assumed name.) This flag was sent to Verplank's Point. Arnold arrived just as the boat returned to the *Vulture*. The letter was handed to him, and, of course, fully understood; thereupon he hastened to prepare Smith for a visit to the enemy's vessel on the approaching night. Crossing from Verplank's to Stony Point he made all the requisite arrangements respecting the boat that Smith would want, and then proceeded to his quarters to remove the difficulty which had occurred respecting boatmen. The guard boats had received orders not to stop Smith, and he also possessed the countersign for the next night, which was the word "Congress." In the morning Smith brought his tenant—Samuel Colquhoun, to a conference with Arnold, who requested him to accompany his landlord on a visit that night to the *Vulture*." The man at first refused, but at last consented to go with his brother, Joseph Colquhoun, and Smith. They were directed by Arnold to muffle the oars; and, thus prepared, about midnight, the boat arrived at the *Vulture*. The noise made by the officer on watch, and the sailors in their hailing the boat, was heard below, and a boy sent up with orders that the man should be shown into the cabin, supposing him to be Arnold. Smith descended, and found his old acquaintance, Beverly Robinson. A letter from Arnold was presented to the Colonel, in which he said, "This will be delivered to you by Mr. Smith, who will conduct you to a place of safety. Neither Mr. Smith nor any other person shall be made acquainted with your proposals; if they (which I doubt not) are of such a nature that I can officially take notice of them, I shall do it with pleasure. I take it for granted, Colonel Robinson will not propose anything that is not for the interest of the United States, as well as of himself." Smith had likewise two papers signed by Arnold, which he showed to Robinson; one, a permission to pass and repass with a boat to Dobb's Ferry, the other a permission to Joshua Smith, Mr. John Anderson and two servants, to pass and repass the guards near King's Ferry at all times. By these papers Colonel Robinson understood that Arnold expected André to come on shore. Smith was left with the captain of the vessel for about a quarter of an hour, when Robinson returned with a person whom he

introduced as Mr. Anderson. He excused himself from going ashore, but *this person* would go in his stead, and was competent to the transaction of the business. André, although in his uniform, was so completely enveloped in a blue great-coat, that Smith (if we believe his assertions) did not suspect his real name or character.

Smith and André descended into the boat, where the Colquhouns awaited them. They were landed at the foot of a mountain called the Long Clove, on the western margin of the river, about six miles below Stony Point. The *Vulture* lay between the place and Teller's Point. Here Arnold was in attendance on horseback, with another horse brought by a servant of Smith's. It was perfectly dark, and Smith, knowing the spot designated by Arnold, groped his way up the bank, and found the commander of West Point concealed among the trees and bushes.<sup>a</sup>

Smith was sent back for his companion; and, having introduced him, was requested to retire to the boat, where he remained ill at ease and watchful, while the Colquhouns, conscience-free, slept soundly through the remainder of the night. The conference appeared unnecessarily long to Mr. Smith, and he retraced his way to give notice of the approach of morning, and the necessity of departing before daylight appeared.

The conspirators had exhausted the night, and their business was not yet completed. It was agreed that the boat should be dismissed and sent up the river. André consented to mount a led horse brought to the Clove with Arnold, and to accompany him to Smith's house, there to remain through the day, and to return to the sloop of war next night. It was still dark, and, as André asserts, the voice of the sentinel demanding the countersign, was the first indication to the adjutant-general that he was within the American lines. About the break of day, the conspirators arrived at Smith's house. He had proceeded with the boat to Crown Island, in Haverstraw creek, and, dismissing the Colquhouns, joined Arnold. To the alarm of the group, a cannonade was very soon heard; and, from the window, André beheld that the *Vulture* was in peril from the guns, and saw her obliged to weigh anchor and stand down the river. In an upper apartment in Smith's house, the spy and the traitor viewed this unexpected incident, and Sir Henry Clinton's adjutant general, no doubt, felt for a time, that the net prepared for others was closing around him. It is to be supposed that the commander of West Point reassured him, and, after breakfast, Smith left

---

<sup>a</sup> Smith's words are, "hid among the firs."

him to finish "the plot of treachery" between them; it was understood that Arnold was to receive a stipulated sum. The day fixed upon, André was to return to New York, and the British troops (already embarked under the pretence of an expedition to Chesapeake) were to be ready to ascend the river. Arnold was to weaken the post of West Point by such a disposition of the garrison as would yield it an easy prey to the troops brought against it.

Every preliminary was settled, and the spy furnished with all the papers explanatory of the condition of the post, and the manner in which its force was to be rendered unavailable, and its garrison betrayed to death or captivity. André required to be put in safety on board the *Vulture*; to this Arnold assented, and, although a different route was proposed, yet André supposed he was to be sent on board the attending sloop of war. Before Arnold left Smith's house, he urged him to go with André on board the *Vulture* as soon as it was dark; but, as if to provide for obstacles, he sent two passes for Smith; the one a permission to go "with a boat, three hands and a flag, to Dobb's Ferry, on public business, and return immediately;" the other, to pass the guards to the White Plains, and return. To this was added a third, as follows:

"HEAD QUARTERS, ROBINSON'S HOUSE,  
Sept. 22d, 1780.

"Permit Mr. John Anderson to pass the guards to the White Plains, or below, if he chooses; he being on public business by my direction.

"B. ARNOLD, M. Gen."

A miserable day was passed by the spy in solitude, and, when evening came, Smith positively refused to go on board the *Vulture*; neither had he engaged any person to row the boat. The reason he gave was an attack of ague, but this did not prevent him, as will be seen, from accompanying André on horse-back in his nocturnal journey, or from crossing the river with him. Thus André was compelled to take the route Smith chose, which was to cross the river, and proceed in the direction of White Plains. The uniform coat of the adjutant general was left at Smith's house; and with a coat of Smith's, covered by a dark great-coat, with "a wide cape, and buttoned close to the neck," André was equipped for the journey. Accordingly, in the morning, he and Smith proceeded to King's Ferry.

On the way, Smith endeavored to draw his companion into conversation, but without success. He was reserved and thoughtful. On the contrary, Smith accosted several of his acquaintances on the road; and even stopped at a sutler's tent, and joined in discussing a bowl of punch,



while André walked his horse slowly to the ferry alone, and there waited Smith's arrival.

As they passed through the works at Verplanck's Point, Smith rode up to Colonel Livingston's tent, while André, and a servant who attended him, (a negro of Smith's,) rode on. To the Colonel's inquiries, Smith said he was going up the country, and took charge of letters for General Arnold and Governor Clinton. He excused himself from stopping, as a gentleman waited for him whose business was urgent. He then overtook his charge, and they proceeded until between eight and nine at night, when they were hailed by the sentinel of a patrolling party. This was near Crompond, and about eight miles from Verplanck's Point. The sentinel ordered them to stop, and Smith dismounted, gave the bridle of his horse to his servant, walked forward, and inquired who commanded the party. He was answered, 'Captain Boyd,' who, overhearing the conversation, immediately appeared. The captain was unusually inquisitive, and demanded of him who he was, where he belonged, and what was his business. Smith answered these questions promptly, adding that he had a pass from General Arnold, and desired not to be detained. The captain was not yet satisfied, but inquired how far he meant to go that night; to which he replied, as far as Major Strang's or Colonel Drake's; but this only increased the embarrassment, for the captain informed him that Major Strang was not at home, and Colonel Drake had removed to another part of the country.

Captain Boyd then said that he must see the passport; and, it being dark, they went to a house at a small distance to procure a light. André began to be a little alarmed, and advanced with reluctance towards the house, till he was encouraged by Smith, who assured him that Arnold's pass would certainly protect them.

And so it proved; for the pass was expressed in positive terms, and there was no room to doubt its genuineness or its authority.

The captain was afterwards more bland in his manner, but the ardor of his curiosity was not diminished. He took Smith aside, and begged to be informed of this important business which carried him down so near the enemy's lines, and induced him and his companion to travel so dangerous a road in the night. As an apology for this inquiry, he manifested a good deal of concern for their safety; telling him that the cowboys had recently been out, and were believed then to be far up the country—and he advised him by all means not to proceed till morning. Smith prevaricated as well as he could, saying to Captain Boyd, that he and his fellow-traveler, whom he called Mr. Anderson, were employed by General Arnold to procure intelligence; that they expected to

meet a person near White Plains for that purpose, and that it was necessary for them to go forward as expeditiously as possible.

Upon this statement Captain Boyd seemed more anxious than ever; magnified the perils to which they would be exposed by traveling in the night, and recommended anew that they should turn back to one Andreas Miller's, who lived but a little way off, and at whose house they might lodge. Smith's courage was somewhat damped by these representations, and he went and told the tale to André, counselled with him as to the steps they ought to take. It is possible, also, that he had fears of exciting suspicion, if he hesitated in resisting the Captain's zeal expressed so earnestly in their behalf. André, as it may well be imagined, not being very easy in his present situation, was for going on at all events. When Smith found his fears unheeded and his eloquence unavailing, he called in the aid of Captain Boyd, and inquired of him which was the safest road to White Plains. Boyd considered both roads perilous, but believed the one through North Castle the least so; for the lower party, or cow-boys, infested the Tarrytown road, and had lately done mischief in that quarter. He used various arguments to dissuade them from going farther that night, to which Smith listened with open ears; and he resolved, against the will of André, to trespass on the hospitality of Andreas Miller.

They met with a welcome reception; but coming at a late hour to an humble dwelling, their accommodations were narrow and the two travelers were obliged to sleep in the same bed.

According to Smith's account, it was a weary and restless night to his companion. The burden on his thoughts was not of a kind to lull them to repose; and the place of his retreat so near the watchful Captain Boyd and his guard, was hardly such as would impress upon him a conviction of perfect security.

At the first dawn of light he roused himself from his troubled slumber, wakened the servant, and ordered the horses to be prepared for an early departure.

Having solicited their host in vain to receive a compensation for the civilities he had rendered, they mounted and took the road leading to Pine's Bridge,<sup>a</sup> which crosses the Croton River on the way to North Castle. The countenance of André brightened, when he was fairly beyond the reach of the patrolling party; and, as he thought, he left behind him the principal difficulties in his route. His cheerfulness revived, and he conversed, in the most animated and agreeable strain, upon a great

---

<sup>a</sup> Spark's Life of Arnold, 214, 215, 216, 217.

variety of topics. Smith professes to have been astonished at the sudden and extraordinary change which appeared in him, from a gloomy taciturnity to an exuberant flow of spirits, pleasantry and gay discourse. He talked upon poetry, the arts, and literature; lamented the war, and hoped for a speedy peace."<sup>a</sup> As they passed Major Strang's house, two miles below Yorktown church, they were observed by its inmates, who supposed them to be Continental officers. "In this manner they passed along without being accosted by any person, till they came within two miles and a half of Pine's Bridge. At this place Smith had determined to end his journey in the direction of White Plains. The *Cow-boys*, whom he seemed anxious to avoid, had recently been above the bridge, and the territory below was considered their appropriate domain. The travellers partook of a frugal breakfast together, at the house of a good Dutch woman, who had been plundered by three marauders, but who was yet enabled to set before them a repast of hasty pudding and milk.<sup>b</sup> This being dispatched, Smith divided his small stock of paper money with André, took a final leave, and, with his servant, hastened back to Peekskill, and the same evening to Fishkill, where he had left his family four days before, at the house of his brother-in-law. On his way, he took the road leading to Robinson's house, where he called on General Arnold, and dined. He gave an account of André's progress, and mentioned the place where he had left him, with which Arnold appeared well pleased. It is to be understood, however, that Smith had not, at this time, as he always affirmed, any knowledge of André's true character, and that he supposed his name to be John Anderson.

The *Cow-boys* were a set of people, mostly, if not wholly, refugees, belonging to the British side, and engaged in plundering cattle near the lines, and driving them to New York. The name indicates their vocation. There was another description of banditti, called *Skinners*, who lived, for the most part, within the American lines, and professed attachment to the American cause; but, in reality, they were more unprincipled, perfidious and inhuman than the *Cow-boys* themselves; for these latter exhibited some symptoms of fellow feeling for their friends,—whereas, the *Skinners* committed their depredations equally upon friends and foes.

By a law of the State of New York, every person refusing to take an oath of fidelity to the State was considered as forfeiting his property. The large territory between the American and British lines, extending

<sup>a</sup> Ibid. 217.

<sup>b</sup> This was not a Dutch woman, as the historian supposes; but Mrs. Sarah Underhill, wife of Isaac Underhill, of Yorktown, whose grandson, Edward Borough Underhill, still owns the house.—EDITOR.

nearly thirty miles from north to south, and embracing Westchester county, was populous and highly cultivated. A person living within that space, who took the oath of fidelity, was sure to be plundered by the *Cow-boys*; and if he did not take it, the *Skinners* would come down upon him, call him a tory, and seize his property as confiscated by the State. Thus the execution of the laws was assumed by robbers, and the innocent and guilty were involved in a common ruin.

"It is true the civil authority endeavored to guard against these outrages, so far as it could, by legislative enactments and executive proclamations; but, from the nature of the case, this formidable conspiracy against the rights and claims of humanity could be crushed only by a military arm. The detachments of Continental troops and militia, stationed near the lines, did something to lessen the evil, yet they were not adequate to its suppression, and frequently this force was so feeble as not to afford any barrier to the inroads of the banditti.

"The *Skinners* and *Cow-boys* often leagued together. The former would sell their plunder to the latter, taking in exchange contraband articles brought from New York. It was not uncommon for the farce of a skirmish to be acted near the American lines, in which the *Skinners* never failed to come off victorious; and then they would go boldly to the interior with their booty, pretending it had been captured from the enemy while attempting to smuggle it across the lines.

"Such was the social condition of that part of the country through which Andrè was now to pass alone, for nearly thirty miles, before he could be perfectly secure from danger; for, although every step diminished the chances of untoward accidents, yet there was no absolute safety till he was beyond the limits of this ill-fated neutral ground."<sup>a</sup>

"But Andrè had the American general's pass to produce to the one, and his true character to protect him from the other. Still he could not but feel that his situation was one of peril. The remarks he had heard from the captain of the patrol on the preceding night, seems to have induced the adjutant-general to take the Tarrytown road, as the one most frequented by the *Cow-boys*; for it was understood by Smith that he would proceed toward White Plains. Upon what apparently chance circumstances the fate of individuals, and armies, and States, appears to depend! Had this bearer of ruin to thousands proceeded on the road at first intended, he probably would have accomplished the treason in safety to himself; but a few words uttered at random by the American officer, to Smith, respecting the danger of the road nearest the Hudson,

---

<sup>a</sup> Sparks' Life of Arnold, 218, 19, 20, 21.



determined the spy to turn that way, as most frequented by his friends,—and by that heaven-directed turn, impending ruin was averted, and the lives of thousands saved.” From Pine’s Bridge, the adjutant-general of the British army followed the Crum Pond road, which passed the house of Mr. Staats Hammond. The son of this gentleman, David Hammond, of North Castle was living in, (1847,) at an advanced age. He related, that on the day Andrè was taken, he was standing at the door of his father’s residence, upon the Crum Pond road, when he observed a person approaching on horseback, leisurely walking his horse. As he rode up, he observed the stranger to be closely enveloped in a light blue swan’s down cloak, with high military boots, and a low-crowned and broad brimmed hat on his head. The animal he bestrode was a beautiful bay, bitted with a handsome double snaffle bridle; the mane particularly about the head, being thickly matted with burs. The stranger immediately asked for a drink of water. It deserves to be noticed, in connection with this incident, that Mr. Hammond’s father—who was lying, at the time, badly wounded on the floor—caught a glimpse of the stranger, whom he pronounced to be a spy, from the fact of his being enveloped in the manner described.

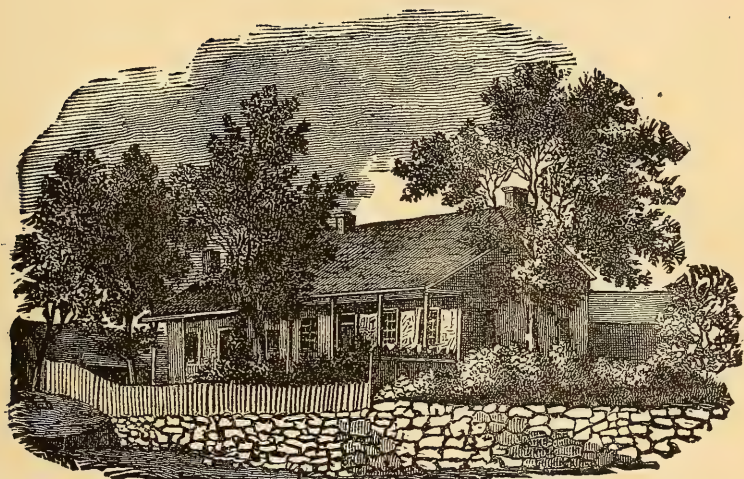
David Hammond, having procured a drinking vessel, accompanied by his sister, led the way to the adjoining well. Here the girl drew the water, which was offered to the stranger, who requested David to hold the bridle whilst he drank. After satisfying his thirst, he turned toward Mrs. Hammond, and asked the distance to Tarrytown; she replied, “Four miles.” “I did not think it was so far,” said he.

At Chappequa, in the vicinity of Underhill’s tavern, the spy encountered several Quakers. From them he again inquired the road, at the same time asking whether any troops were out below, &c.

At the foot of the Chappequa roads the adjutant-general selected that which leads to the river. Following this, he came out in the Albany post road, near the village of Sparta. He had now securely passed about eleven miles of the neutral ground, and approached within a few hundred yards of the Hudson without interruption, and probably felt himself beyond the reach of detection.

A little north of Tarrytown, the road crosses a small brook, (now called the Andrè brook.) A few rods from this spot a period was put to the journey of the spy and the progress of the treason.

On this fated morning some of the inhabitants of Westchester had by agreement taken their arms, and proceeded to the neighborhood of this brook and bridge, to prevent cattle from being driven down towards New York, and to seize as a loyal prize any such cows or oxen as might



JOHN PAULDING'S RESIDENCE, CORTLANDT.



be destined for his majesty's troops by their friends. This patriotic band of seven had volunteered of their own account to go upon this expedition the day previous, Sept. 22d, 1780. John Yerks, (who was still living in the town of Mount Pleasant, in 1847, aged eighty-eight,) says that he proposed this excursion to John Paulding, both of them being at that time stationed in North Salem. The latter at first objected; but, upon further consideration, volunteered his services, provided they could induce a sufficient number to accompany them. This, Yerks assured him, could be easily accomplished, and offered to procure the men; while Paulding should obtain the necessary permit from the commanding officer. Yerks had in the meantime enlisted three volunteers, viz.: Isaac See, James Romer and Abraham Williams. Paulding soon after returned with the permit, accompanied by his friend, Isaac Van Wart. The party now consisting of six, took the direct road for Cross river. Here they were joined by David Williams from Bedford. From Cross river they proceeded to Pleasantville, formerly Clark's Corner, where they halted for the night. From a lady by the name of Mrs. Powell, (who had recently arrived at this place from Morrisania,) the volunteers ascertained that the British horse from Long Island, New Jersey and New York had advanced from the Island into the neighborhood of Boar hill, Yonkers.

Whilst Andrè slept at Crum Pond, our volunteers turned into a hay barrack, (then standing a few yards from the present Methodist church,) at Pleasantville.

Up by times the next morning, the party followed the windings of the Saw Mill valley to the house of Capt. Jacob Romer, where they obtained breakfast and a basket well provided for their dinner. From this place they marched to the hill immediately above Tarrytown. Here it was agreed that three of the number, viz.: Paulding, Van Wart and David Williams, should go below, whilst the remaining four should watch the road above, with the full understanding, (according to Yerks,) that whatever might be taken should be equally divided among the whole band.

The upper party were stationed two hundred yards east on the hill above the lower party, the latter being concealed in the bushes near the post-road.

At Smith's trial, (which was by a court martial, and commenced the day after Andrè's examination, Paulding and Williams gave the following testimony. Paulding said, "myself, Isaac Van Wart and David Williams, were lying by the side of the road about half a mile above Tarrytown, and about fifteen miles above King's Bridge, on Saturday morning between nine and ten o'clock, on the 23d of September. We had lain there about one hour and a half, as near as I can recollect, and saw



several persons we were acquainted with, whom we let pass. Presently one of the young men who were with me, said, 'There comes a gentleman-like looking man who appears to be well dressed and has boots on, and whom you had better step out and stop, if you don't know him. (The party must have observed Andrè rising the hill out of Sleepy Hollow; when first observed, he was walking his horse.) On that, I got up and presented my firelock at the breast of the person and told him to stand, and then I asked him which way he was going? 'Gentlemen,' said he, 'I hope you belong to our party.' I asked him what party. He said 'the lower party.' Upon that, I told him I did. Then he said, 'I am a British officer out of the country on particular business, and I hope you will not detain me a minute;' and to show that he was a British officer he pulled out his watch, upon which I told him to dismount. He then said, 'My God! I must do anything to get along,' and seemed to make a kind of laugh of it, and pulled out General Arnold's pass, which was to John Anderson to pass all the guards to White Plains and below; upon that he dismounted. Said he, 'Gentlemen, you had best let me go, or you will bring yourselves into trouble; for your stopping me will detain the General's business, and said he was going to Dobb's Ferry to meet a person there, and get intelligence for General Arnold.'

"Upon that I told him I hoped he would not be offended, that we did not mean to take any thing from him. And I told him there were many bad people who were going along the road, and I did not know but perhaps he might be one." Mr. Paulding said further that he asked the unknown gentleman his name, and he answered, "John Anderson." That on seeing General Arnold's pass he should have let him go, if he had not previously said he was a British officer; (there was yet another circumstance which tended greatly to increase their suspicions, viz: that his pass was for White Plains and not the Tarrytown road;) and that when he pulled out his watch, he understood it as a confirmation of that assertion, and not as offering it to him.

Mr. Williams confirmed the above statement with these particulars: "We took him into the bushes, and ordered him to pull off his clothes, which he did; but, on searching him narrowly, we could not find any sort of writings. We told him to pull off his boots, which he seemed indifferent about; but we got one boot off, and searched in that boot, and could find nothing. But we found there were some papers in the bottom of his stocking next to his foot, on which we made him pull his stockings off, and found three papers wrapped up. Mr. Paulding looked at the contents, and said he was a spy. We then made him pull off his



CAPTURE OF ANDRÉ



other boot, and there we found three more papers at the bottom of his foot within his stocking."

The following letters and documents were found in the stockings of Major Andre :—

### THE ANDRÉ PAPERS.

[*From the originals in the possession of Colonel Beekman, (a) of Flatbush, Long Island.*]

a Col. Beekman is the grandson and lineal descendant of Governor George Clinton.

#### No. 1.—PASS.

[Endorsed,]

Pass from General Arnold, dated September 20, 1780, to Joshua Smith and Mr John Anderson, to pass the guards at King's Ferry.

*Head Quarters, Robinson's House,*

*September 20, 1780.*

Permission is given to Joshua Smith, Esquire, a gentleman, Mr. John Anderson, who is with him, and his two servants, to pass and repass the guards near King's Ferry at all times.

(Signed,)

B. ARNOLD, M. Gen'l.

#### No. 2.

[Endorsed,]

SEPT. 22, 1780.

Pass to Joshua Smith to pass the White Plains.

*Head Quarters, Robinson's House,*

*September 22, 1780.*

Joshua Smith, Esq., has permission to pass the Guards to the White Plains, and to return, being on public business, by my direction.

(Signed,)

B. ARNOLD, M. Gen'l.

#### No. 3.

[Letter endorsed to]

"Thomas Smith, Esq., Haverstraw."

*Robinson's House, Sept. 25th, 1780.*

DEAR BROTHER :—I am here a prisoner, and am therefore unable to attend in person. I would be obliged to you if you would deliver to Captain Cairns, of Lee's Dragoons, a British Uniform Coat, which you will find in one of the drawers in the room above stairs. I would be happy to see you. Remember me to your family.

I am, affectionately, yours,

(Signed,)

JOSHUA H. SMITH.

Thomas Smith, Esq.

#### No. 4.

[Endorsed,]

*Memo.*

Hennirut, [a word not intelligible.]

Elijah Hunter.

Mr. I. Johnson, B. R—r.

Mr. J. Stewart, to the care of Joshua Smith Esq., to be left at Head Q'rs.

Isaac Adams, 5, 5, 5.



## No. 5.

[Endorsed,]

Gen'l Arnold's permission to Joshua Smith.

21 Sep. 1780.  
to Dobb's Ferry,  
&c. &c.

*Head Quarters, Robinson's House,*  
Sept. 21, 1780.

Permission is granted to Joshua Smith, Esq., to go to Dobb's Ferry with three Men and a Boy in a Boat with a Flag to carry some Letters of a private Nature for Gentlemen in New York and to Return immediately.

(Signed,)

B. ARNOLD, M. Gen'l.

N. B.—He has permission to go at such hours and times as the tide and his business suits.

## No. 6.

[Endorsed,]

Sept. 22, 1780.  
Pass to Joshua Smith to pass Dobb's Ferry.

*Head Quarters, Robinson House,*  
Sept. 22, 1780.

Joshua Smith, Esq. has permission to pass with a Boat and three hands and a flag to Dobb's Ferry on Public business and to return immediately.

(Signed,)

B. ARNOLD, M. Gen'l.

## No. 7.

[Endorsed,]

Arnold to John Anderson—Pass.

22d Sept. 1780.  
*Head Quarters, Robinson's House,*  
Sept. 22, 1780.

Permit Mr. John Anderson to pass the Guards to the White Plains, or below, if He Choses, He being on Public Business by my Direction.

B. ARNOLD, M. Gen'l.

[In Arnold's hand-writing.]

"Gustavus to John Anderson."

The following document is one of the highest importance to the British, inasmuch as "*in case of alarm*," it made the British—who would have caused the alarm—fully acquainted with the disposition of all the American forces in that vicinity, and thus enable them to conduct an attack to the best advantage. It is, of course, in the traitor's own hand-writing:—

## No. 9.

[Endorsed,]

Artillery Orders, Sept. 5th, 1780.

*W'st Point, Sept. 5, 1780.*

*Artillery Orders.*

The following disposition of the corps is to take place in Case of an alarm.

Capt. Dannills with his comp'y at Fort Putnam, and to Detach an Officer with 12 men to Wyllys's Redoubt, a non Commissioned Officer, with 3 men to Webb's Redoubt, and the like number to Redoubt No. 4.

Capt. Thomas and Company to repair to Fort Arnold.

Capt. Simmons and Company to remain at the North and South Redoubts, at the East side of the River, until further orders.

Lieut. Barber, with 20 men of Capt. Jackson's Company will repair to Constitution Island; the remainder of the Company with Lieut. Mason's will repair to Arnold.

Capt. Lieut. George and Lieut. Blake with 20 men of Capt. Treadwell's Company, will repair to Redoubt No. 1 and 2, the remainder of the Company will be sent to Fort Arnold.

Late Jones's Company with Lieut. Fisk to repair to the South Battery.

The Chain Battery Sherburn's Redoubt, and the Brass Field pieces will be manned from Fort Arnold as Occasion may require.

The Commissary and Conductor of Military stores will in turn wait upon the Commanding Officer of Artillery for Orders.

The Artificers in the Garrison, (agreeable to former Orders,) will repair to Fort Arnold, and their receive further Orders from the Command'g Officer of Artillery, J. Bauman Major Comm't Artillery.

No. 10.

[Endorsed,]

[In the Traitor's own hand.]

Estimate of the Forces at West Point, and its dependencies,  
Sept. 1780.

Estimate of the Forces at W <sup>st</sup> Point and its dependencies, Sept. 13th, 1780		
A Brigade of Massachusetts Militia and two Regiments of Rank and file New Hampshire Inclusion of 166 Batteaux Men at Verplanks and Stoney Points,		992
On command and Extra Service at Fish Kills, New Windsor, &c. &c., who may be called in occasionally,		852
3 Regiments of Connecticut Militia under the Com'd of Colonel Wells on the lines near N. Castle,		488
A Detachment of N. York Levies on the lines,		115
	Militia	2447
Colonel Lamb's Regiment	167	
Colonel Livingston at Verplank and Stony Pts	80	
	Continent:	247
Colonel Sheldon's Dragoons on the lines about one-half mounted		142
Batteaux Men and Artificers		250

No. 11.

Total 3086

[In Arnold's hand.]

[Endorsed,]

Estimate of Men to Man the Works at West Point, &c.  
Sep'r 1780.

Estimate of the Number of men Necessary to Man the Works at West Point and in the Vicinity.

Fort Arnold	620
— Putnam	450
— Wylls	140
— Webb	140

Redoubt No. 1	150
ditto 2	150
ditto 3	120
ditto 4	100
ditto 5	139
ditto 6	110
ditto 7	78
North Redoubt	120
South Redoubt	130
Total	2438

Villepance, Engineer.

N. B. The Artillery Men are not Included in the above Estimate.

RETURN OF ORDNANCE IN THE DIFFERENT FORTS, BATTERIES, ETC., AT WEST POINT  
AND ITS DEPENDENCIES, SEPT. 5<sup>th</sup>, 1780.

	Calibres, . . . .	Metal.										Mortars.		Howitz.	Total.
		Garrison Carriages	Garrison Carriages	Travelling do.	Garrison Carriages	Stocked ditto	Garrison Carriages	Stocked ditto	Travelling ditto	Garrison Carriages	Travelling ditto	Inches.	Inches.	Inches.	
Fort Arnold, . . . .	Brass	24	18	12	9	6	..	4	3	0	54-2	42-5	8		
Fort Putnam, . . . .	Brass	1	6	..	1	..	..	..	1	3	4	..	..	..	
Constitution Island, . . . .	Iron	..	5	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
South Battery, . . . .	Iron	..	4	..	1	5	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Chain Battery, . . . .	Iron	..	..	1	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Lantern Battery, . . . .	Iron	..	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Webb's Redoubt, . . . .	Iron	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	
Sherman's Redoubt, . . . .	Iron	..	..	..	..	9	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Megg's Redoubt, . . . .	Iron	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	
North Redoubt, . . . .	Iron	..	3	..	1	4	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
South Redoubt, . . . .	Iron	..	..	3	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Wyllis's Redoubt, . . . .	Iron	..	2	..	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Rocky Hill, No. 4, . . . .	Iron	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
No. 1, . . . .	Iron	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
No. 2, . . . .	Iron	..	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Verplank's and Stony Towns, . . . .	Brass	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	1	1	
Total . . . .	Iron	1	18	3	14	5	9	14	5	2	1	8	6	11	
		..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	100	

N. B.—The following  
Ordnance not distributed:  
No. 6 Iron 12 Poundr.

4	do	9	do
1	do	6	do
1	do	4	do
2	do	3	do
14			
3	Brass 24 Pounders.		
1	do 12 do		
1	do 8 inch howitz.		
11			

N. B.—The following  
Ordnance not distributed:  
No. 6 Iron 12 Poundr.

4 do 9 do  
1 do 6 do  
1 do 4 do  
2 do 3 do

14

8 Brass 24 Pounders.  
7 do 12 do  
1 do 8 inch howitz.  
11

(Signed,)

B. BADMAN, Major Comd't Artillery.

"The virulence and malice of Arnold's treachery are no where more manifest and detestable than in the following document. See how the arch fiend exposes the weakness of the forts—the ease with which they could be set on fire—the facilities of approach—the commanding heights and rising grounds, &c. The whole, too, an exposè intended expressly for the British; and yet endorsed as if it had been a memorandum for his own private use, and for General Washington:

No. 12.

[In the traitor's own hand.]

[Endorsed,]

Remarks on works at Wt. Point, a copy to be transmitted to His Excell'y General Washington.

*Sept. 1780.*

Fort Arnold is built of Dry Fascines and Wood, is in a ruinous condition, incomplete, and subject to take Fire from Shells or Canasses.

Fort Putnam, stone, wanting great repairs, the wall on the East side broke down, and rebuilding From the Foundation at the West and South side have been a Chevaux de Frise on the Wst side broke in many places. The East side open, two Boom Proof and Provision Magazine in the Fort, and slight Wooden Barrack.—A commanding piece of ground 500 yards West between the Fort and No. 4—or Rocky Hill.—

Fort Webb Built of Fascines and Wood, a slight Work very dry and liable to be set on fire as the approaches are very easy, without defences save a slight abatus.

Fort Wyllys built of stone 5 feet high the work above plank filled with Earth and stone work 15 feet the Earth 9 feet thick.—No Bomb Proofs, the Batteries without the Fort.

Redoubt No. 1. On the south side wood nine feet thick, the Wt. North and East sides 4 feet thick, no cannon in the works, a slight and single Abatters, no ditch or pickett. Cannon on two batteries. No Bomb Proofs.

Redoubt No. 2. The same as No. 1. No Bomb Proofs.

Redoubt No. 2. A slight Wood Work 3 Feet thick very Dry no Bomb Proofs, a single Abatters, the work easily set on fire—no Cannon.

Redoubt No. 4. A Wooden work about 10 feet high and four or five feet thick, the West side faced with a stone wall 8 feet high and four thick. No Bomb Proof, two six pounders, a slight Abatters, a commanding piece of ground 500 yards Wt.

The North Redoubt on the East side built of stone 4 feet high, above the stone wood filled in with Earth, Very Dry, no ditch, a Bomb Proof, three Batteries without the Fort, a poor Abatters, a Rising piece of ground 500 yards. So, the approaches Under Cover to within 20 yards.—The Work easily fired with Fag-gots dipt in Pitch, &c.

South Redoubt much the same as the North a Commanding piece of ground 500 yards due East—3 Batteries without the Fort.

"The following document explains itself:—



## No. 13.

[In Arnold's hand-writing.]

[Endorsed,]

**Copy of a Council of War, held Sept. 6th, 1780.**

At a Council of War, held in Camp Bergen County Sept. 6th, 1780.

Present—the Commander-in-Chief.

The Commander-in-Chief states to the Council, that since he had the honor of laying before the General Officers, at Morristown, the 6th of June last, a general view of our circumstances, several important events have occurred which have materially changed the prospects of the Campaign.

That the success expected from France, instead of coming out in one body and producing a Naval Superiority in these Seas, has been divided into two Divisions, the first of which only consisting of seven ships of the line, one forty-four and three smaller Frigates, with five thousand land Forces, had arrived at Rhode Island.

That a reinforcement of six ships of the line from England having reinforced the Enemy, had made their Naval Force in these seas amount to Nine Sail of the Line, Two Fifties, two forty-fours, and a number of smaller Frigates, a Force completely superior to that of our Allies, and which has in consequence held them Blocked up in the harbor of Rhode Island till the 29th ult., at which Period the British Fleet disappeared, and no advice of them has since been received.

That accounts received by the Alliance Frigate, which left France in July, announce the Second Division to be Confined in Brest with several other Ships by a British Fleet of thirty-two Sail of the line, and a Fleet of the Allies, of Thirty-six, or thirty-eight Ships of the line ready to put to sea from Cadiz to relieve the Port of Brest.

That most of the States in their answers to the requisitions made of them, give the strongest assurances of doing every thing in their power to furnish the men and supplies required for the expected Co-operation. The effect of which, however, has been far short of our expectations, for not much above one-third of the Levies demanded for the Continental Battallions, nor above the same proportion of Militia have been assembled, and the Supplies have been so inadequate that there was a necessity for dismissing all the Militia, whose immediate services could be dispensed with to lessen our Consumption, notwithstanding which the Troops now in the Field are severely suffering for want of Provision.

That the army at this Post and in the vicinity in operating Force consists of 10,400 Continental Troops and about 400 Militia, besides which is a Regiment of Continental Troops of about 500 at Rhode Islnd left there for the assistance of our Allies, against any attempt of the Enemy that way, and two Connecticut State Regiments amounting to 800 at North Castle.

That the Times for Service for which the Levies are Engaged will expire the first of January which, if not replaced, allowing for the usual Casualties, will reduce the Continental Army to less than 6000 men.

That since the state of the Council above referred to, the Enemy have brought a detachment of about 3000 men from Charles Town to New York, which makes the present operating Force in this Quarter between Ten and Eleven Thousand men.

That the Enemies Force now in the Southern States has not been lately ascertained by any distinct accounts, but the General supposes it cannot be less than 7,000 (of which about 2,000 are at Savannah) in this estimate the Diminution by the Casualties of the Climate, is supposed to be equal to the increase of Force derived from the Disaffected.

That added to the loss of Charles Town and its Garrison accounts of a recent misfortune are just arrived from Major *General Gates*, giving advice of a general action which happened on the 16th of August near Campden, in which the army under his Command met with a total defeat, and in all probability the whole of the Continental Troops, and a considerable part of the Militia would be cut off.

The State of Virginia has been sometime exerting itself to raise a Body of 3,000 Troops to serve till the end of December, 1781, but how far it has succeeded is not known.

That Maryland had resolved to raise 2,000 Men of which a sufficient number to compose one Battalion was to have come to this army. The remainder to recruit the Maryland line—but in consequence of the late advices, an order has been sent to march the whole Southward.

That the Enemies Force in Canada, Halifax, St. Augustine, and at Penobscot, remains much the same as stated in the preceding Council.

That there is still reason to believe the Court of France will prosecute its Original intention of giving effectual succor to this Country, as soon as circumstances will permit; and it is hoped the second Division will certainly arrive in the course of the fall.

That a Fleet greatly superior to that of the Enemy in the West Indies, and a formidable land Force had sailed sometime since from Martinique to make a Combined attack upon the Island of Jamaica, that there is a possibility of a reinforcement from this quarter also, to the Fleet of our Ally at Rhode Island.

The Commander-in-Chief having thus given the Council a full view of our present situation and future prospects, requests the Opinion of each member, in writing, what plan it will be advisable to pursue, to what objects Our Attention ought to be directed in the course of this fall and winter, taking into consideration the alternative of having a Naval Superiority, whether any offensive operations can be immediately undertaken and against what Point, what ought to be our immediate preparations and dispositions, particularly whether we can afford or ought to send any reinforcements from this army to the Southern States, and to what amount the General requests to be favored with these opinions by the 10th instant at farthest.

"This concludes the famous "*André Papers*." A more remarkable set of documents no man surely ever set foot on before. The papers themselves look yellow, are much crumpled and worn, and bear evident marks of age."<sup>a</sup>

\* \* \* \* \*

"Upon this, we made him dress himself and I asked him what he would give us to let him go. He said he would give us any sum of

<sup>a</sup> New York Herald, 1842.

money. I asked him whither he would give us his horse, saddle, bridle, watch and one hundred guineas. He said 'Yes,' and told us he would direct them to any place, even if it was that very spot, so that we could get them. I asked him whether he would not give us more. He said he would give us any quantity of Dry Goods, or any sum of money, and bring it to any place that we might pitch upon, so that we might get it. Mr. Paulding answered, 'No, if you would give us two thousand guineas you should not stir one step.' I then asked the person who had called himself John Anderson, if he would not get away if it lay in his power. He answered, 'Yes, I would.' I told him, I did not intend he should. While taking him along, we asked him a few questions; and we stopped under a shade. He begged us not to ask him questions and said when he came to any commander, he would reveal all. He was dressed in a blue over-coat and a tight body coat that was a kind of claret color, though a rather deeper red than claret. The button holes were laced with gold tinsel, and the buttons drawn over with the same kind of lace. He had on a round hat and nankeen waistcoat and breeches, with a flannel waistcoat and drawers, boots and thread stockings. According to John Yerks, the lower party were observed coming up the hill, Paulding<sup>a</sup> leading the horse, upon which André was mounted. As they halted, Paulding exclaimed, "we have got a prisoner," and immediately ordered André to dismount. He then asked him for his watch, at the same time warning him not to make any attempt to escape; for if he did he was a dead man. After a short interval, Paulding (who appears to have been the master spirit upon this occasion,) ordered him to remount. They then led him off in the direction of North Castle, the nearest military post, where Lieut. Col. Jameson was stationed with a detachment of Sheldon's dragoons. The roads being carefully avoided, the party went with all speed across the fields, each taking their turns at the bridle, some marching on either side, the remainder bringing up the rear. During their progress to North Castle, the prisoner never spoke unless some question was asked; and then said but little in reply. On their route the party stopped for a short time at Jacob Romers,<sup>b</sup> (in the

<sup>a</sup> Paulding had effected his escape, only three days previous, from the New York Sugar House, in the dress of a German yager. General Van Cortlandt states that Paulding wore this dress on the day of the capture, which tended to deceive André, and led him to exclaim, in answer to their reply, "Thank God, I am once more among friends."

<sup>b</sup> Mr. J. S. Lee, of Beekman Town, relates the following anecdote: "When they captured André, they brought him up the old Bedford road (now changed) till they came to a spring of water near the earth-works that were cast up to defend the river at the foot of Kaackcoult, a very high hill, having a commanding view; thence they took the fields across to the old White Plains' road (near where the county house now stands) to a small tavern kept by Isaac Reed and his wife Polly, (now known as the Landrine House); here they called for something to eat; but Aunt Polly's curiosity was excited at the sight of the stranger, and she asked, 'Who have you there?' 'None of your business,' they replied, 'Get us something to eat, in a hurry.' She flew around, and soon prepared some eggs and bacon, and then again repeated her question, 'Who have you there?' They replied, 'O, never mind now.' Soon

vicinity of the present poor-house,) where the captors took breakfast. The party again resumed their march, and within a short time arrived at North Castle. Here they delivered up their prisoner to Jameson, with all the papers that had been taken from his stockings.<sup>a</sup> The prisoner was confined here in a small cottage, at present attached to the barn of Mr. Sands. Further details concerning the spy will be found in the respective towns.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the delivery of their prisoner, the seven patriots returned to their different quarters, little imagining the importance of their prize. A little more than a month afterwards, (General Washington having recommended the captors to Congress,) they received the following vote of thanks from that body:

IN CONGRESS, NOVEMBER, 3, 1780.

WHEREAS, Congress have received information that John Paulding, David Williams and Isaac van Wart, three young volunteer militia men of the State of New York, did, on the 23d day of September last, intercept Major John André, adjutant general of the British army, on his return from the American line in the character of a spy; and notwithstanding the large bribes offered them for his release, nobly disdaining to sacrifice their country for the sake of gold, secured and conveyed him to the commanding officer of the district, whereby the dangerous and traitorous conspiracy of Benedict Arnold was brought to light, the insidious designs of the enemy baffled, and the United States rescued from impending danger:

*Resolved*, That Congress have a high sense of the virtuous and patriotic conduct of the said John Paulding, David Williams and Isaac van Wart. In testimony whereof, Ordered, that each of them receive annually out of the public treasury two hundred dollars in specie, or an equivalent in current money of these States, during life, and that the board of war procure for each of them a

---

after they had left, one returned and said, 'Aunt Polly, can you keep a secret for an hour?' She thought she could. He then replied, 'We have a spy; but don't mention it to any one for an hour, and then we shall be safe away.' As soon as they were gone, she felt an intense longing just to tell Mrs. Col. Hammond, living about a mile away. So she hurried about, caught the old horse, and gave him a feed of oats, to consume the time; and then thought that by the time she was dressed, the hour would have expired. But long before it had, she was ready; and, mounting on the old horse, with a large poke bonnet, went flying to Col. Hammond's. Mrs. Hammond saw her coming, and ran to inquire the cause. She replied by taking off her bonnet and waving it around her head, crying: 'Hurrah! hurrah!' 'What, for God's sake, is the matter?' asked Mrs. Hammond. 'Hurrah! They have taken a spy!' At which she dismounted; and the two old ladies, taking each other's hands, danced for joy around the old horse. This attracted the attention of a neighboring tory who was passing, and he asked what it meant? They replied a spy had been captured. This was very rash, as the party were not more than 2 or 3 miles away at the time, on their journey to Col. Jameson's head-quarters, at North Castle. But Aunt Polly's curiosity got the better of her judgement."

<sup>a</sup> It is a curious fact mentioned by Sparks in his Biography of Arnold, that the last canto of André's humorous satire, called the "Cow-chase," was printed on the very day of his capture. It will be found in Rivington's *Royal Gazette*, for Sept. 23d, 1780. It ends with the following stanza:

"And now I've closed my epic strain,  
I tremble as I show it,  
Lest this same warrior-drover, Wayne,  
Should ever catch the poet."

—[Sparks' Biog. Arnold, 228.

<sup>b</sup> See North Castle, S. Salem.



silver medalon—one side of which shall be a shield with this inscription, "*Fidelity*," and on the other, the following motto, "*Vincit amor patriæ*," and forward them to the Commander-in-Chief, who is requested to present the same, with a copy of this resolution, and the thanks of Congress for their fidelity and the eminent service they have rendered their country.

The State also gave each a farm.

The Westchester County Bank, at Peekskill, has commemorated this important event on its bills, by a beautiful vignette picture representing the arrest of the spy. He is in the act of supplicating his captors to let him escape, the discovered papers are in the hands of one of them, and the stern eyes of the others evince the determination to listen to no suggestions but those of patriotism. The form and features of André are admirably depicted, and a miniature hangs in his bosom exquisitely finished. This was a likeness of Miss Honora Sneyd, to whom he was devotedly attached.<sup>a</sup> The picture had been painted by himself from the living features of the object of his affections. In 1775, he was taken prisoner by General Montgomery, at St. Johns, Canada; a few months afterwards, in a letter to a friend, he observes, "I have been taken prisoner by the Americans, and striped of every thing except the picture of Honora, which I concealed in my mouth. Preserving that, I think myself fortunate."<sup>b</sup> To this touching incident Anna Seward refers in her poem upon André.

"Shade of my love  
'Tis free! These lips shall resolute enclōse  
The precious soother of my ceaseless woes."

The above vignette suggested the following stanzas:

"Before their country's foe they stand,  
Each with a stern and searching eye;  
Grasped with a firm and honest hand,  
The hostile records open lie;  
They read, and as each noble brow  
Wears the quiet shadow of resolve,  
The true and just exhibit now,  
The secret which they dared to solve.  
  
Away with gold! It has no power  
To turn the true heart from its quest;  
The ordeal of this solemn hour  
Gives firmness to the patriot's breast;  
And as the tempter's art is tried,

<sup>a</sup> This lady died of consumption only a few months before André suffered at Tappan. She had married another gentleman four years after her engagement to André, which had been dissolved by parental affection.—[See Letters about the Hudson, published by Freeman & Hunt, 1837]

<sup>b</sup> See Sparks' Life of Arnold, p. 171.

He finds each supplication vain ;  
 The weary prisoner turns aside,  
 To hide his laboring bosom's pain.

Tumultuous thoughts upon his mind,  
 In quick succession wildly crowd,  
 As urged by the resistless wind,  
 Spreads o'er the sky the tempest's cloud.  
 Why bends his sad and languid glance  
 Where, near his heart, that picture lies,  
 Affection's fond inheritance,  
 With sunny smile and loving eyes !

Alas ! Upon that face no more  
 The eager gaze of hope can turn,  
 The dream of early love is o'er,  
 And ne'er again its fires will burn ;  
 A shade is gathering o'er each tress,  
 A gloom is lingering on the brow.  
 And all its budding loveliness  
 Is stained with tears of anguish now.

Brave, yet devoted ! On thy head  
 The bolt, by others forged, shall fall ;  
 And history on thy name shall shed  
 Of fate, the wormwood and the gall ;  
 Yet wert thou noble—and thy soul  
 The battle and the storm withstood,  
 Till bending to a stern control,  
 'Twas by a traitor's lure subdued.

Peace to thy shade, ill-fated one !  
 Though in the abbey's lengthened aisle,  
 Scarce lit by the day's meridian sun,  
 Thy marble bust may sadly smile,  
 Yet is there darkness on thy name,  
 Though gentle pity mourns for thee,  
 While patriots bless the holy flame,  
 Which kept thy captor's spirit free.

—[ *Westchester and Putnam Republican.*

A remarkable incident is said to have befallen the celebrated white-wood tree near which the spy was captured. It was struck by lightning on the same day that the intelligence of General Arnold's death arrived at Tarrytown. This tree was a fine specimen of the ancient forest, being twenty-six feet in circumference, and its stem forty-one feet in length. At the present day not a vestige remains of "Major André's Tree," as it was familiarly called. It is thus beautifully described by the author of the Sketch Book ; "This tree towered like a giant above all the other

trees of the neighborhood, and formed a kind of landmark. Its limbs were knarled and fantastic, large enough to form trunks for ordinary trees, twisting down almost to the earth, and rising again into the air. It was connected with the tragical story of the unfortunate André, who had been made a prisoner hard by, and was universally known by the name of 'Major André's Tree'. The common people regarded it with a mixture of respect and superstition, partly out of sympathy for the fate of its ill-starred namesake, and partly from tales of strange sights, and doleful lamentations told concerning it." It was while passing beneath this whitewood tree that Ichabod Crane, in his midnight career toward Sleepy Hollow, "suddenly heard a groan, his teeth chattered, and his knees smote against the saddle. It was but the rubbing of one huge branch upon another, as they were swayed about by the breeze. He passed the tree in safety, but new perils lay before him. About two hundred yards from the tree, a small brook crossed the road, and ran into a marshy and thickly wooded glen, known by the name of "Wiley's Swamp." A few rough logs laid side by side, served for a bridge over this stream. On that side of the road where the brook entered the wood, a group of oaks and chestnuts, matted thick with wild grape vines, threw a cavernous gloom over it. To pass this bridge was the severest trial. It was at this identical spot that the unfortunate André was captured; and under the covert of these chestnuts and vines were the sturdy yeomen concealed, who surprised him. This has ever since been considered a haunted stream, and fearful are the feelings of the schoolboy who has to pass it alone after dark."<sup>a</sup>

"According to Debrett, Burke, and other genealogical authorities, John André was descended from a French refugee family settled in England at Southampton in the County of Hants,"<sup>b</sup> "His mother whose name was Mary Louise André Girardot, though of French parentage, was born at London. His father, a native of Geneva, was born in Switzerland; but it would seem that a very considerable portion of his life must have been passed at London, where he carried on an extensive business in the Levant Trade, and where also, in 1780, several of his brothers had their abode. Of these Dr. Andree, of Halton Gardens, was apparently the only one who preserved what is said to have been an earlier method of spelling the family name. Notwithstanding the establishment of a part of the André family in England its connections upon the continent would appear to have been the most numerous and the most permanent."<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> See Sketch Book, Beauties of Irving, &c., &c.,

<sup>b</sup> The Arms of André or Andree, are Ar., two mullets, in chief az. and a galley, her oars in action, in base sa. Crest, a millrind az.

<sup>c</sup> Life of Major André by Winthrop Sargent,

Among these was the Swedish Minister, Monsieur André, uncle to Major André; another was the "celebrated Johann André, author of the opera of 'The Potter,' who was born at Offenbach in 1741, and who died in 1799."<sup>a</sup>

Though as yet opportunity is wanting to verify the supposition, there is strong reason to believe that a near connection existed between the immediate family of Major André and the once celebrate St. André of Southampton—a character whose career is scarcely to be paralleled even in the pages of Gil. Blas. This person came over to England from his native Switzerland, at a very early age and, probably, towards the close of the seventeenth century. By his own account, his origin was perfectly respectable, and even distinguished; and in his later days he would assert that by right he was possessed of a title."<sup>b</sup> Major John André was born either in London or Southampton, A. D. 1751. He was first placed in school at Hackney, under a Mr. Newcombe; whence after a time he was withdrawn and sent for several years to Geneva to complete his education. He was master of many things that in those days very rarely constituted a part of a gentleman's education, and which, indeed, even in these are to be found rather in exceptions than the rule. The modern European languages—French, German, Italian, &c., are said to have been possessed by him in singular perfection; while in music, painting, drawing and dancing, he particularly excelled. When we consider that with these accomplishments was joined a nature always ambitious of distinction, a mind stored with the *belles lettres* of the day, and endowed not only with a taste for poetry, but with considerable readiness in its composition; added to his person which, though slender, was remarkably active and graceful, we need not wonder that his attractions were such as to win the favor of all with whom he came in contact. At the university of Geneva he was remarked for a diligent student, and for an active and inquiring mind; and in special was distinguished by his proficiency in the schools of mathematics and of military drawings. To his skill in this last branch, his subsequent rapid advancement in the army was in great part attributable.<sup>c</sup> In 1767 or 1768, when about sixteen or seventeen years of age, he entered the counting house of his father. Nor did the death of his father, which occurred at the house in Clapton (called the Manor house) in April, 1769, make at the time any material difference in the nature of his avocations.

What family was left by the elder André can only be gathered from the fact that in 1780, besides his widow, there still remained a second

<sup>a</sup> Ditto.

<sup>b</sup> Life of Major André by Winthrop Sargent.

<sup>c</sup> Life of Major André by Winthrop Sargent.



son, William Lewis, who was eight years behind his brother; and three daughters, Louisa Catherine, Mary Hannah and Anne. The last is said to have been distinguished for a poetical talent.<sup>a</sup> Of these sisters, Louisa Catherine was born 1754, and Mary Hannah about 1752, according to the inscriptions in the church yard at Bath-Hampton, where they are buried; the last of these two dates going far to fix that of Major André's birth as of 1751.

In 1780, also, there were yet living at London, two brothers of the elder André: Mr. David André, of New Broad street, and Mr. John Lewis André, of Warnford Court, Throgmorton street, who were known to the community as respectable Turkey merchants, and who doubtless still carried on at the old place, the business in which their brother had prospered well, but which their nephews had declined.<sup>b</sup>

In 1769, while at the head of his mother's house at Buxton, Matlock, he first became acquainted with Miss Seward.<sup>c</sup> It is almost certain that he formed with another lady a friendship that left its coloring on the whole of his future life.<sup>d</sup> This was Miss Honora Sneyd, daughter of Edward, the younger son of Ralph Sneyd, Esq., of Bishton, in Staffordshire. This lady in 1773, married Richard Lovell Edgeworth. Upon finding that his attentions to Miss Sneyd were unavailing, Mr. André quitted his profession and entered the British Army in America. His first commission was dated March 4th, 1771.

The regiment which André joined was the Seventh Foot, or Royal English Fusiliers; one of the oldest corps in the line, and dating its formation in the year 1685. The rank of ensign does not exist in a fusilier regiment, the grade being supplied by a second lieutenant; it was in this latter capacity that he seems to have first served. In April, 1773, the regiment had been embarked for Canada, where it performed garrison duty at Quebec for several months, until it was sent to Montreal, and variously posted in Lower Canada. Before leaving England to join it, however, it is asserted that André paid a final visit of farewell to Miss Seward and to the scenes of his former happiness. During his stay, we are told, Miss Seward had made arrangements to take him to see and be introduced to her friends, Cunningham and Newton—both gentlemen of a poetical turn.<sup>e</sup>

Whilst these two gentlemen were awaiting the arrival of their guests,

<sup>a</sup> Ditto.

<sup>b</sup> Life of Major André by Winthrop Sargent.

<sup>c</sup> Ditto. Anna Seward, the eulogist of Major André, was born at Lyam, in Derbyshire in 1747. The Bishops Palace at Lichfield, in which her father—who was a Canon of the Cathedral there—was the headquarters of the literary world of that region, and of the better classes of society generally.

<sup>d</sup> Life of André, by Sargent.

<sup>e</sup> Life of Major André by Winthrop Sargent.

of whose intentions they had been apprised, Mr. Cunningham mentioned to Newton that, on the preceding night, he had a very extraordinary dream, which he could not get out of his head. He had fancied himself in a forest; the place was strange to him; and, whilst looking about, he perceived a horseman approaching at great speed, who had scarcely reached the spot where the dreamer stood, when three men rushed out of the thicket, and, seizing the bridle, hurried him away, after closely searching his person. The countenance of the stranger being very interesting, the sympathy felt by the sleeper for his apparent misfortune awoke him; but he presently fell asleep again, and dreamt that he was standing near a great city, amongst thousands of people, and that he saw the same person he had seen seized in the wood, brought out and suspended to a gallows. When André and Miss Seward arrived, he was horror-struck to perceive that his new acquaintance was the antitype of man in the dream.<sup>a</sup>

In the 3d November, 1775, he was taken prisoner with the garrison by the Americans under General Montgomery at St. John's in Canada. Towards the close of the year 1776 most of the prisoners made by either side in Canada were exchanged and André thus obtained his freedom by their means, through whom he had lost it. The skeleton of the Seventh was transferred from that Province to New York; recruits and new clothing were sent out from England; and in the end of December, the regiment, including the men lately discharged from Pennsylvania, marched into town with tolerably full ranks. André did not, however, long remain in it; on the 18th January, 1777, he received a captaincy in the Twenty-sixth, which had been so augmented that each company consisted of sixty-four men, exclusive of commissioned officers. But a staff appointment was his legitimate sphere, and there was for the time none such vacant. He therefore remained on line duty. His regiment was fortunately not one of those that Tryon led in April, 1777, to Danbury; otherwise he might have met Benedict Arnold face to face and shared in the questionable glories of what Clinton honestly confesses to have been "a second Lexington."<sup>b</sup> In the beginning of the summer he was named aide-de-camp to Major-General Grey. In Grey's retirement André, with the provincial rank of Major, was appointed aide to Sir Henry Clinton, the son of Admiral George Clinton, once Governor of New York, who was second son of the ninth earl of Lincoln. André's conspicuous merit and aimable character had soon made him the most important person of Clinton's staff, and won the admiration of all who

<sup>a</sup> Ainsworth's Magazine.

<sup>b</sup> Clinton M.S.

had business with the General. He would promptly inform them whether or not he could engage in their affairs, if he declined, his reasons were always polite and satisfactory; if he consented, the applicant was sure of an answer from Sir Henry within twenty-four hours. Clinton's confidence was evidenced in the spring of 1779 by his appointment of André, with Colonel West Hyde of the Guards, as commissioner to negotiate with the Americans an exchange of prisoners.<sup>a</sup> The following extract is from the *Pennsylvania Packet*, 1780-1781: "Major André had ye address to insinuate himself so much unto ye favour of his commander-in-chief that he was said to have gained an absolute ascendancy over this officer. The consequence was that he disposed of all his offices and favours and drove out from Sir Henry's family all his former favourites, &c. Letter from a Carolina Exile. When Major Stephen Kemble, the brother-in-law of General Gage resigned the adjutant-major-generalcy, it was forthwith bestowed upon André, and thenceforth all the business at headquarters of the Department passed through his hands. It was thus at the beginning of the Fall in 1779, that he commenced the virtual discharge of the Adjutant-generalcy in which he continued till his death." It was in March or April, 1779, that General Arnold, commanding at Philadelphia, had, under the feigned name of Gustavus, begun a secret correspondence with Clinton; who committed the matter to the hands of André. The latter wrote over the signature of John Anderson; and was replied to as "Mr. John Anderson, merchant, to the care of James Osborn, to be left at the Rev. Mr. Odell's, New York." Though at the outset the English had no clue to their correspondent's identity, the character and value of his information soon led them to suspect it; and it is supposed by some, that this letter to Mr. Arnold was written with the view of making clear to her husband the character of its author, and to invite a return of confidence. This may possibly have been the case; but all my investigations show that the lady had not any suspicion of the dealings between the parties, or was ever intrusted by either side with the least knowledge of what was going on. Equally false, in my judgment, is the charge that she tempted her husband to treason. Her purity and elevation of character, have not less weight in the contradiction of this aspersion, than the testimony of all chiefly concerned in the discovery and punishment of the crime. "After the fall of Charleston in 1780, we are told that there was an opinion current in the American line that André had been present within its line during the siege, as a spy." It is but just to add, that, if this story of André's having been a spy at Charleston, received credence in respectable quarters, it was afterwards

<sup>a</sup> Life of Major André by Winthrop Sargent.

questioned by gentlemen of equal character in our service." "The secret correspondence with Arnold begun in 1779, had, at an early stage, been intrusted by Clinton to André's exclusive management.

The information received was valuable and often highly important, nor was it long questionable from what quarter it came. In an elaborately disguised hand Arnold wrote over the signature of Gustavus,—a pseudonym perhaps suggested by the romantic story of Gustavus Vasa, in whose love of military glory,, undaunted boldness, and successful revolt against the unwonted lords of his native land, he might persuade himself, his own character found a counterpart. On the other part, the fictitious name of Anderson was but a transparent play upon André's own. The accuracy and nature of the intelligence soon gave Clinton concern to know with certainty its author; and once satisfied in his mind that this was no other than Arnold, he took his cue from circumstances, and delayed the final consummation until a period when the loss of a correspondent so valuable would be compensated by weightier gains than the individual defection of an officer of rank. Thus he continued to receive the most momentous revelations of our affairs; and it may possibly have been that through these means a knowledge was acquired of the condition of Carolina, that led to the fall of Charleston." "On August 3d, 1780, Arnold was appointed to the command of West Point and its dependencies; and it was forthwith concerted that his treason should be fully developed with the greatest possible advantage to the British.<sup>a</sup>

The moment was a truly favorable one, the English were weary of the continued strife, and really anxious for peace with America on almost any terms that might not involve Independency. On the other hand, too, America was tired with the war. Various letters now passed between André and Arnold and an interview concerted. On Sept. 19th, Colonel Williams of the 18th, then billeted at Kepp's House on the East River, gave a dinner to Clinton and his staff as a parting compliment to André. How brilliant soever the company, how cheerful the repast, its memory must have ever been fraught with sadness to both host and guests. It was the last occasion of André's meeting his comrades in life. Four short days gone, the hands then clasped by friendship were fettered with hostile bonds; yet nine days more, and the darling of the army, the youthful hero of the hour, had dangled from a gibbet.

It was recollected with peculiar interest that when at this banquet the

<sup>a</sup> It is curious that so long before as 1776, Col. Gedwitz, of our army, entered into negotiations with the enemy almost identical with those now conducted by Arnold. The delivery of the forts on the North River was the ultimate design of either traitor. Gedwitz was guilty; but he was acquitted because the court did not think his offence merited death.



song came to his turn, André gave the favorite military chanson attributed to Wolfe, who sung it on the eve of the battle where he died :

“ Why, soldiers, why  
Should we be melancholy, boys ?  
Why, soldiers, why,  
Whose business 'tis to die !  
For should next campaign  
Send us to Him who made us, boys,  
We're free from pain :  
But should we remain,  
A bottle and kind land-lady  
Makes all well again.”<sup>a</sup>

The circumstances relative to Major André's arrest has already been related.

“ On Friday the 29th September, 1780, just one week since he had started from Smith's house for New York, André was brought before a Board of Enquiry convened by General Washington. It was assembled in an old Dutch church in Tappan, now pulled down, and consisted of the following officers : Major-Generals, Greene, Sterling, St. Claire, La Fayette, Howe and Steuben ; Brigadiers, Parsons, Clinton, Knox, Glover, Patterson, Hand, Huntington and Starke. Greene was president, and John Lawrence the judge-advocate-general. Before this court André made the following statement :

#### ANDRÉ'S STATEMENT.

“ On the 20th of December I left New York to get on board the *Vulture*, in order (as I thought) to meet General Arnold there in the night. No boat, however, came off, and I waited on board until the night of the 21st. During the day, a flag of truce was sent from the *Vulture* to complain of the violation of a military rule in the instance of a boat having been decoyed on shore by a flag, and fired upon. The letter was addressed to General Arnold, signed by Captain Sutherland, but written in my hand, and countersigned ‘ J. Anderson, secretary.’ Its intent was to indicate my presence on board the *Vulture*. In the night of the 21st, a boat with Mr. — and two hands came on board, in order to fetch Mr. Anderson on shore ; and, if too late to bring me back, to lodge me until the next night in a place of safety. I went into the boat, landed, and spoke with Arnold. I got on horseback with him to proceed to — house ; and, on the way, passed a guard I did not expect to see ; having Sir Henry Clinton's directions not to go within an enemy's post, or to quit my own dress. In the morning A. quitted me, having himself made me put the papers I bore between my stockings and feet. Whilst he did it, he expressed a wish that, in case of any accident befalling me, they should be destroyed ; which, I said, of course would be the case, as when I went into the boat I should have

<sup>a</sup> Life of Major André by Winthrop Sargent.

them tied about me with a string and a stone. Before we parted, some mention had been made of my crossing the river, and going by another route; but, I objected much against it, and thought it was settled that in the way I came I was to return.

"Mr. —, to my great mortification, persisted in his determination of carrying me by the other route; and, at the decline of the sun, I set out on horse-back, passed King's Ferry and came to Crompond, where a party of militia stopped us and advised we should remain. In the morning I came with — as far as within two miles and a half of Pine's Bridge, where he said he must part with me, as the *Cow-boys* infested the road thenceforth. I was now near thirty miles from Kingsbridge, and left to the chance of passing that space undiscovered. I got to the neighborhood of Tarrytown, which was far beyond the points described as dangerous, when I was taken by three volunteers, who, not satisfied with my pass, rifled me, and, finding papers, made me a prisoner.

"I have omitted mentioning that, when I found myself within an enemy's post, I changed my dress."

The proceedings, as published by Congress, being rather a manifesto than a report of a trial, make no mention of this statement. It gives, however, what is doubtless designed for an abstract of its contents and of his oral replies to interrogations. The italics are from the pamphlet:

"That he came ashore from the *Vulture* sloop-of-war in the *night* of the 21st September inst. somewhere under the Haverstraw mountain. That the boat he came on shore in, carried *no flag*; and that he had on a surtout coat over his regimentals, and that he wore his surtout coat when he was taken. That he met Gen. Arnold on the shore, and had an interview with him there. He also said that when he left the *Vulture* sloop-of-war, it was understood that he was to return that night; but it was then doubted; and, if he could not return, he was promised to be *concealed on shore*, in a place of safety, until the next *night*, when he was to return in the same manner he came on shore; and when the next day came, he was solicitous to get back, and made enquiries during the course of the day, how he should return; when he was informed he could not return that way, and must take the route he did afterwards. He also said that the first notice he had of his being within any of *our out-posts* was, being challenged by the sentry, which was the first night he was on shore. He also said, that the evening of the 23d September inst., he passed *King's Ferry, between our posts of Stony and Verplank's Points, in the dress he is at present in, and which, he said, is not his regimentals*, and which dress he procured after he landed from the *Vulture*, and when he was within *our posts*, and that he was proceeding to New York, but was taken on his way at Tarrytown, as he has mentioned in his letter, on Saturday the 23d September inst. about nine o'clock in the morning."

The six papers from Arnold being produced, he acknowledged they were found in his boots; the pass to John Anderson was also owned and the fact that he had assumed that name. Anderson's letter to Sheldon, of September 7th, (*Anti. page 262*) was also read. He avowed himself its author; but though it went to prove his intention not to en-

ter our lines, he observed that it could not affect the present case, as he wrote it in New York under Clinton's orders:

"The Board having interrogated Major André about his conception of his coming on shore under the sanction of a flag *he said that it was impossible for him to suppose he came on shore under that sanction*; and added, that if he came on shore under that sanction, he certainly might have returned under it.

"Major André having acknowledged the preceding facts, and being asked whether he had anything to say respecting them, answered, He left them to operate with the Board."

It was probably in connection with this point of a flag that Greene asked the question:—"When you came on shore from the *Vulture*, Major André, and met General Arnold, did you consider yourself acting as a private individual, or as a British officer?" "I wore my uniform," was the reply, and undoubtedly esteemed myself to be what indeed I was, a British officer." It will be recollected that it was not as an officer he was acting and clad when he was arrested.<sup>a</sup>

His personal examination being now concluded the prisoner was remanded into custody.

"The Board having considered the letter from His Excellency General Washington, respecting Major André, Adjutant-General to the British army, the confession, of Major André and the paper produced to them, REPORT to His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief, the following fact which appear to them concerning Major André.

"*First*, That he came on shore from the *Vulture*, sloop-of-war, in the *night* of the 21st September inst. on an interview with General Arnold, *in a private and secret manner*.

*Secondly*, That he changed his dress within our lines, and under a feigned name, and in a disguised habit, passed our works at Stony and Verplanck's Points the evening of the 22nd September inst. and was taken the morning of the 23rd September inst. at Tarrytown in a disguised habit, being then on his way to New York, and, when taken, he had in his possession several papers, which contained intelligence for the enemy.

"The Board having maturely considered these facts, Do also Report to His Excellency General Washington, that Major André; Adjutant-General to the British army ought to be considered as a spy from the enemy; and that, agreeable to the law and usage of nations, it is their opinion, he ought to suffer death."

"Intelligence of the finding of the court and of his fate were communicated to André through two officers from Greene, one of whom was his aide, Major Burnet. The sentence was listened to with a composure that his informants vainly strove to emulate. The prisoner had steeled himself to encounter death: "I avow no guilt," he said, "but I am resigned to my fate." Yet he shrunk from the idea of the halter. "Since

<sup>a</sup> I have this anecdote from Mr. Spark's, who received it from La Fayette himself.

it was his lot to die," he said, "there was still a choice in the mode which would make a material difference to his feelings, and he would be happy, if possible, to be indulged with a professional death; and he seems to have at once verbally petitioned, probably through Hamilton, that Washington would consent to his being shot probably anticipating no refusal to his request he retained for some time a tranquility of spirit approaching even to cheerfulness.

On the morning of the day originally fixed for his death André made a moving appeal for a change of its mode.

### ANDRÉ TO WASHINGTON.

TAPPAN, 1ST OCTOBER, 1780.

*Sir*.—Buoy'd above the terror of death by the consciousness of a life devoted to honorable pursuits and stained with no action that can give me remorse, I trust that the request I make to your excellency at this serious period, and which is to soften my last moments, will not be rejected.

Sympathy towards a soldier will surely induce your excellency and a military tribunal to adapt the mode of my death to the feelings of a man of honor. Let me hope, Sir, that if aught in my character impresses you with esteem toward me, if aught in my misfortunes marks me the victim of policy and not of resentment, I shall experience the operation of those feelings in your heart by being informed that I am not to die on the gibbet; I have the honor to be your excellency's most obedient and most humble servant,

JOHN ANDRÉ, *Adj.-Gen. to the British Army.*

"This was probably the second and last letter written by André to Washington; the latter being unable to grant the request was unwilling to wound the writer by a refusal, therefore did not reply.

Letters of farewell to his mother and his nearest friends were written, and the condemned man's calmness was still evinced in the exercise of his pen. On this same evening he sketched from memory, as a memento for a friend in New York, the striking view of the North River that had presented itself to him as he looked from the window of Smith's house, and figured the position of the *Vulture* as she rode at anchor beyond his reach. Tradition also assigns to this occasion the composition of some last verses, that were long cherished on the lips of the common people. The morning of Tuesday, October the 2d, 1780, found him with his mortal duties all performed and not afraid to die.

The prisoner's board was supplied from Washington's own table; on this day his breakfast was sent him as usual, from the General's quarters. He ate with entire composure, and then proceeded to shave and dress with particular care. He was fully arrayed in the habits of his rank and profession, with the exception of sash and spurs, sword and yoraget. The toilet completed, he laid his hat on the table and cheerfully said to the



guard officers deputed to lead him forth, "I am ready at any moment, gentlemen, to wait on you." Though his face was of deadly paleness, its features were tranquil and calm; his beauty shone with an unnatural distinctness that awed the hearts of the vulgar, and his manners and air were as easy as though he was going to a ball-room rather than the grave.

The spot fixed for the closing scene was in an open field belonging to the owner of the house where he was detained, and on an eminence that commands an extended view. It was within a mile, and in open sight of Washington's quarters. Here the lofty gibbet was erected, and the shallow grave of three or four feet depth was digged. The office of hangman, always an odious employment, was perhaps on this occasion more than usually so. None of our soldiers undertook it. One Strickland, a tory of Ramapo Valley, was in our hands at the time. His threatened fate may have been hard; his years were not many; and by the price of freedom he procured to take on himself the necessary but revolting character. Under an elaborate disguise, he probably hoped to go through the scene if not unnoticed, at least unknown.

Besides the officers that were always in the chamber, six sentinels kept watch by night and by day, over every aperture of the building; if hope of escape ever rose in André's breast it could not have developed into even the vaguest expectation. To the idea of suicide as a means of avoiding his doom, he never descended. The noon of this day was appointed for the execution, and at half an hour before, the cortege set forth. André walked arm in arm between two subalterns; each, it is said, with a drawn sword in the opposite hand. A captain's command of thirty or forty men, marched immediately about these, while an outer guard of five hundred infantry, environed the whole and formed a hollow square around the gibbet, within which no one save the officers on duty, and the Provost-Marshal's men, were suffered to enter. An immense multitude was, however, assembled on all sides to witness the spectacle; and every house along the way was thronged with eager gazers, that only of Washington's excepted. Here the shutters were drawn and no man was visible but the two sentries who paced to and fro before the door. Neither the chief himself, nor his staff, were present with the troops; a circumstance which was declared by our people, and assented to by André, as evincing a laudable decorum. But almost every field-officer in our army, led by Greene, headed the procession on horseback, and a number followed the prisoner on foot; while the outer guard, stretching in single file on either side, in front and rear, prevented the concourse from crowding in. In addition to all those who came in

on the country side, it is unlikely that many of the army who could contrive to be present missed the sight. Every eye was fixed on the prisoner; and every face wore such an aspect of melancholy and gloom, that the impression produced on some of our officers was not only affecting but awful.

Keeping pace with the melancholy notes of the dead march the procession marched along; no member of it apparently less troubled than he whose conduct was its cause and whose death was its object.<sup>a</sup> In the beautiful Orientalism of Sir William Jones, "he dying only smiled, while all around him grieved." His heart told him that a life honorably spent in the pursuit of glory would not leave his name to be enrolled among those of the ignoble or guilty many: and his face bespoke the serenity of an approving and undismayed conscience. From time to time, as he caught the eye of an acquaintance—and especially to officers of the Court of Enquiry—he tendered the customary civilities of recognition, and received their acknowledgements with composure and grace. It seems that up to this moment he was persuaded that he was not to be hanged, but to be shot to death; and the inner guard in attendance he took to be the firing party detailed for the occasion. Not until the troops turned suddenly, at a right angle with the course they had hitherto followed, and the gallows rose high before him, was he undeceived. In the very moment of wheeling with his escort, his eye rested on the ill-omened tree, and he recoiled and paused. "Why this emotion, sir?" asked Smith, who held one of his arms. "I am reconciled to my fate," said André, clenching his fist and convulsively moving his arms; "but not to the mode of it." "It is unavoidable, sir," was the reply. He beckoned Tallmadge, and inquired anxiously if he was not to be shot: "Must I then die in this manner?" Being told that it was so ordered, "How hard is my fate!" he cried; "but it will soon be over."

Ascending the hill side, the prisoner was brought to the gibbet, while the outer guard secured the ceremony from interruption. During the brief preparations, his manner was nervous and restless—uneasily rolling a pebble to and fro beneath the ball of his foot, and the gland of his throat sinking and swelling as though he choked with emotion. His servant who had followed him to this point now burst forth with loud weeping and lamentations, and André for a little turned aside and privately conversed with him. He shook hands with Tallmadge, who withdrew. A baggage wagon was driven beneath the cross-tree into which

<sup>a</sup> Benjamin Abbott, a drum-major, who beat the dead march on this occasion, died at Nashua, N. H., in 1851, aged 92. Peter Besancon who followed La Fayette hither from France, and who died at Warsaw, New York, in 1855, was probably the last surviving spectator.

he leaped lightly, but with visible loathing ; and throwing his hat aside, removed his stock, opened his shirt-collar, and snatching the rope from the clumsy hangman, himself adjusted it about his neck. He could not conceal his disgust at these features of his fate ; but it was expressed in manner rather than in language. Then he bound his handkerchief over his eyes.

The order of execution was loudly and impressively read by our Adjutant-General Scammel, who at its conclusion, informed André he might now speak, if he had anything to say. Lifting the bandage for a moment from his eyes, he bowed courteously to Greene and the attending officers, and said with firmness and dignity:—

“All I request of you, gentlemen, is that you will bear witness to the world that I die like a brave man.” His last words murmured in an undertone were,—“It will be but a momentary pang.”

Every thing seemed now ready, when the commanding officer on duty suddenly cried out,—“His arms must be tied!”

The hangman, with a piece of cord, laid hold of him to perform this order ; but recoiling from his touch, André vehemently struck away the man's hand, and drew another handkerchief from his pocket with which his elbows were loosely pinioned behind his back. The signal was given ; the wagon rolled swiftly away, and almost in the same instant he ceased to live. The height of the gibbet, the length of the cord, and the sudden shock as he was jerked from the coffin-lid on which he stood, produced immediate death.

From an eye witness, we have the following account of André's execution.

“During the whole transaction, he appeared as little daunted as Mr. John Rogers is said to have done when he was about to be burnt at the stake ; but his countenance was rather pale. He remained hanging, I should think, from twenty to thirty minutes ; and during that time, the chambers of death were never stiller than the multitude by which he was surrounded. Orders were given to cut the rope and take him down, without letting him fall. This was done, and his body carefully laid on the ground. Shortly after, the guard was withdrawn, and spectators were permitted to come forward and view the corpse ; but the crowd was so great that it was some time before I could get an opportunity. When I was able to do this, his coat, vest and breeches, were taken off, and his body was laid in the coffin, covered by some under-clothes. The top of the coffin was not put on. I viewed the corpse more carefully than I had ever done any human being before. His head was very much on one side, in consequence of the manner in which the halter drew upon his neck. His face appeared to be greatly swollen, and very black, much resembling a high degree of mortification. It was, in-

deed, a shocking sight to behold. There were at this time standing at the foot of the coffin, two young men, of uncommon short stature; I should think not more than four feet high. Their dress was the most gaudy that I ever beheld. One of them had the clothes, just taken from André, hanging on his arm. I took particular pains to learn who they were, and was informed that they were his servants sent up from New York to take his clothes; but what other business I did not learn. I now turned to take a view of the executioner, who was still standing by one of the posts of the gallows. I walked nigh enough to him to have laid my hand upon his shoulder, and looked him directly in the face. He appeared to be about twenty-five years of age, his beard of two or three weeks growth, and his whole face covered with what appeared to me to be blacking taken from the outside of a greasy pot. A more frightful looking being I never beheld; his whole countenance bespoke him to be a fit instrument for the business he had been doing. Wishing to see the closing of the whole business, I remained upon the spot until scarce twenty persons were left; but the coffin was still beside the grave, which had previously been dug. I now returned to my tent, with my mind deeply imbued with the shocking scene I had been called to witness."

Every authentic account that we have, shows how much our officers regretted the necessity of André's death, and how amply they fulfilled his parting adjuration. "The tears of thousands," says Thacher, "fell on the spot where he lay, and no one refrained from proclaiming his sympathy. Many wept openly as he died; among whom, it is recorded, (apparently on the testimony of Laune) was La Fayette. Certainly the marquis bore witness to the infinite regret with which the fate of such a noble and magnanimous character inspired him. It was believed in the army that Washington's soul revolted at the task, and that he could scarcely command the pen when he subscribed the fatal warrant. An American officer who was present, and who brought the news to Burgoyne's troops detained at Winchester, asserted that our General shed tears on the execution, and would fain have changed its mode.

The sorrow and indignation of André's friends gave occasion to many unfounded charges. At Southampton, where his family connections extended, it was reported that Clinton solicited "as a singular favor," after his dear friend and companion should be hung, the body might be sent to him. But Washington refused. Clinton then sent again, that since the sentence was to bury the body under the gallows, it might be taken up and brought to New York, there to be interred with the military honors due to so brave and accomplished a young man. This, Washington also refused.

This silly tale is sufficiently exposed by Sir Henry's own statement that he knew not of his Adjutant's being hanged till the arrival of Laune



with his master's baggage, told him all was over. When the burial at the gibbet's foot was about to be made, the man had demanded André's uniform, which was accordingly removed and given him. The corpse was then laid in the earth, and no monument but the usual cairn such as rose over the spot where Gustavus fell at Lutzen "for liberty of conscience," marked the solitary grave. The surrounding field was cultivated, but the plough still shunned the place; for it was customary in this region for the laborers in the tillage to spare the soil that covered a soldier; and as early as 1778, the fields of Long Island were noticed to be checkered over with patches of wild growth that showed where men lay who were slain in the battle there.

With generous sensibility, Colonel William S. Smith of our army, embraced the opportunity, of purchasing the watch that the captors had taken. It was sold for their benefit, at thirty guineas. He bought it; and mindful of the tender affection with which André had been heard to speak of his mother and sisters in England, sent it in to Robertson to be transmitted to these ladies. The unfortunate man's will testifies with what regard his whole domestic circle was held. It was sworn to before Carey Ludlow, Surrogate of New York, and admitted to probate October 12th, 1780.

#### MAJOR ANDRÉ'S WILL.

"The following is my last will and testament, and I appoint as executors there-to Mary Louisa André, my mother; David André, my uncle; Andrew Girardot, my uncle; John Lewis André, my uncle; to each of the above executors I give fifty pounds. I give to Mary Hannah André, my sister, seven hundred pounds. I give to Louisa Catherine André, my sister, seven hundred pounds, I give to William Lewis André, my brother, seven hundred pounds. But the condition on which I give the above mentioned sums, to my afore said brother and sisters, are that each of them shall pay to Mary Louisa André, my mother, the sum of ten pounds yearly, during her life. I give to Walter Ewer, Jr., of Dyer's Court, Aldermanbury, one hundred pounds. I give to John Ewer, Jr., of Lincoln's Inn, one hundred pounds. I desire a ring, value fifty pounds, to be given to my friend, Peter Boissier, of the 11th Dragoons. I desire that Walter Ewer, Jr., of Dyers Court, Aldermanbury, have the inspection of my papers, letters and manuscripts; I mean that he have the first inspection of them, with liberty to destroy or detain whatever he thinks proper, and I desire my watch to be given him. And I lastly give and bequeath to my brother John Lewis André, the residue of all my effects whatsoever. Witness my hand and seal, Staten Island, in the Province of New York, North America, 7th June, 1777.

JOHN ANDRÉ,

CAPTAIN IN THE 26TH REGIMENT OF FOOT.

N. B.—The currency alluded to in my will is sterling money of Great Britain. I desire nothing more than my wearing apparel to be sold at auction."

"It may well be supposed that the news of the execution was received at New York in sorrow and anger. Joshua Smith says:—"No language can describe the mingled sensations of sorrow, grief, sympathy and revenge, that agitated the whole garrison; a silent gloom overspread the general countenance; the whole army, and citizens of the first distinction, went into mourning." Miss Seward also mentions the signs of grief the troops displayed in their apparel; and in November a London account censures Clinton for not employing the heated animosity of his men to strike an avenging blow. "The troops at New York on hearing of his execution raised such an outcry for vengeance, and to be led to the attack of Washington's camp, that the Commander-in-Chief could hardly keep them within the bounds of discipline; and many letters mention, that as Sir Henry had an army at least equal to Washington's, he ought to have indulged them—for the determined spirit with which they were actuated, would have made them invincible against any superiority. On this account the military critics say, "he has given another convincing proof that he is a General who does not know when to act. After this, few rebel prisoners will be taken. The universal cry of the soldiers at New York is, 'REMEMBER ANDRÉ!'"

But if Clinton would not expose his men to the doubtful enterprise, he was not unmindful either of the fame or the last wishes of his friend. By public orders, his memory was released from any imputation that might arise from the manner of his death :

*Head-Quarters New York,* }  
8th Oct. 1780. }

"The Commander-in-Chief does, with infinite regret, inform the army of the death of the Adjutant-General, Major André.

"The unfortunate fate of this officer calls upon the Commander-in-Chief to declare his opinion that he ever considered Major André as a gentleman—as well as in the line of his military profession, of the highest integrity and honor, and incapable of any base action or unworthy conduct.

Major André's death is very severely felt by the Commander-in-Chief, as it assuredly will be by the army; and must prove a real loss to his country, and to his Majesty's service."

How far the army felt their loss may be gathered from Simcoe's orders to his own regiment (the Queen's Rangers) by the officers and men of which André was personally known. He commanded them to wear, for the future, black and white feathers as mourning for a soldier "whose superior integrity and uncommon ability did honor to his country and human nature, &c."<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Simcoe's Mil., Jour., 152.

It is to the pervading interest that attached itself to André's story, and the romantic character of his career, that the origin of the ghost-stories about him may be attributed. There is yet another connected with him:

"Miss H. B., was on a visit to Miss André, and being very intimate with the latter, shared her bed. One night she was awakened by the violent sobs of her companion, and upon entreating to know the cause, she said: 'I have seen my dear brother, and he has been taken prisoner.' It is scarcely necessary to inform the reader that Major André was then with the British army during the heat of the American war. Miss B., soothed her friend, and both fell asleep, when Miss André once more started up, exclaiming, 'They are trying him as a spy;' and she described the nature of the court, the proceedings of the judge and prisoner, with the greatest minuteness. Once more the poor sister's terrors were calmed by her friend's tender representations, but a third time she awoke screaming that they were hanging him as a spy on a tree and his regimentals, with many other circumstances! There was no more sleep for the friend; they got up, and entered each in her own pocket-book the particulars stated by the terror-stricken sister, with the dates; both agreed to keep the source of their own presentiment and fear from the poor mother, fondly hoping they were built on the fabric of a vision. But, alas! as soon as news, in those days, could cross the Atlantic, the fatal tidings came; and to the deep awe, as well as sad grief of the young ladies, every circumstance was exactly imparted to them as had been shadowed forth in the fond sister's sleeping fancy, and had happened on the very day preceding the night of her dream. The writer thinks this anecdote has not been related by Miss Seward, Dr. Darwin, or the Edgeworths, father and daughter, who have all given to the public many interesting events in the brilliant but brief career of Major André."

It is creditable to the British Government that in consideration of the magnitude of André's attempted service, and the disastrous fate with which his efforts were crowned, nothing was wanting to testify either its care for his fame or its respect for his wishes. On the 13th November, Captain St. George, Clinton's aide, delivered that General's despatches of the 12th October, to Lord George Germain:

"The unexpected and melancholy turn which my negotiations with General Arnold took with respect to my Adjutant-General, has filled my mind with the deepest concern. He was an active, intelligent and useful officer, and a young gentleman of the most promising hopes. Therefore, as he has unfortunately fallen a sacrifice to his great zeal for the King's service, I judged it right to consent to his wish, intimated to me in his letter of the 29th Sept., of which I have the honor to enclose your lordship a copy, that his company which he purchased should be sold for the benefit of his mother and sisters. But I trust, my lord, that your lordship will think Major André's misfortune still calls for some further support to his family; and I beg leave to make it my humble request that you will have the goodness to recommend them in the strongest manner to the King, for some beneficial and distinguishing mark of His Majesty's favor."<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> MSS. Sir H. Clinton to Lord G. Germain, (Separate,) New York, 12th Oct. 1780, S. P. O.

What was asked, was granted. The King is said to have instantly ordered a thousand guineas from the privy purse, to be sent to Mrs. André, and an annual pension of £300 to be settled on her for life, with reversion to her children or the survivor of them; and after knighthood was proffered on the 24th of March, 1781, in memory of his brother's services, the dignity of a baronetcy of Great Britain, was conferred upon Capt. William Lewis André, of the 26th Foot, and his heirs, male, forever.<sup>a</sup> A stately cenotaph in Westminster Abbey also preserved the remembrance of the life and death of Major André. To this Arnold was once observed to lead his wife, and to peruse with her the inscriptions that referred to the most important scenes in his own career.<sup>b</sup>

Forty years later, the pomp and ceremony with which the remains of the brave Montgomery were publicly brought from Canada to New York called the attention of the British Consul at that city to the fact, that the dust of another who too had borne the King's commission, and whose first captivity had graced Montgomery's first triumph, still filled an unhonored grave in a foreign land. He communicated with the Duke of York, Commander of the Force, and it was decided to remove André's corpse to England. The Rev. Mr. Demarat, who owned the ground, gave ready assent to the Consul's proposals. "His intention had become known," says an American writer, and "some human brute—some Christian dog—had sought to purchase or rent the field of Mr. Demarat, for the purpose of extorting money for permission to remove these relics. But the good man and true, rejected the base proposal, and offered every facility in his power." On Friday, August 10, 1821, at eleven A. M., the work was commenced—not without fear that it would be in vain; for vague whispers went around that years before, the grave was despoiled. At the depth of three feet, the spade struck the coffin-lid, and the perfect skeleton was soon exposed to view. Nothing tangible remained but the bones and a few locks of the once beautiful hair, together with the leather cord that had bound the queue, and which was sent by Mr. Buchanan, to the sisters of the deceased. An attentive crowd of both sexes, some of whom had probably beheld the execution, was present.

"The farmers who came to witness the interesting ceremony, generally evinced the most respectful tenderness for the memory of the unfortunate dead, and many of the children wept. A few idlers, educated by militia training and Fourth of July declamation, began to murmur

<sup>a</sup> A tombstone in Bathampton church-yard, near Bath, has this inscription: "Sacred to the memory of Louisa Catharine André, late of the Circus, Bath: Obit. Dec. 25, 1835, aged 81. Also, of Mary Hannah André, her sister, who died March 3, 1845, aged 93 years." Sir William Lewis André, the brother, married, and surviving his son of the same name, who was a director of the London Assurance Company, died at Dean's Leaze, Hants, 11th Nov., 1802, when the title became extinct.

<sup>b</sup> Life of André, by Winthrop Sargent.



that the memory of General Washington was insulted by any respect shown to the remains of André ; but the offer of a treat lured them to the tavern, where they soon became too drunk to guard the character of Washington. It was a beautiful day, and these disturbing spirits being removed, the impressive ceremony proceeded in solemn silence."<sup>a</sup>

If this anecdote is true, these ruffling swaggerers were all who did not cheerfully encourage the proceedings. Ladies sent garlands to decorate the bier ; even the old woman who kept the turnpike-gate, threw it open free to all that went and came on this errand ; and six young women of New York, united in a poetical address that accompanied the myrtle tree they sent with the body to England.

The bones were carefully uplifted, and placed in a costly sarcophagus of mahogany, richly decorated with gold, and hung with black and crimson velvet ; and so borne to New York, to be placed on board the *Phaeton* frigate which—by a happy significancy, so far as her name was concerned—had been selected for their transportation to England. Two cedars that grew hard by, and a peach tree—bestowed by some kind woman's hand, to mark the grave, (the roots of which had pierced the coffin and twined themselves in a fibrous network about the dead man's skull,) were also taken up. The latter was replanted in the King's gardens, behind Carlton House.

In gratitude for what was done, the Duke of York caused a gold mounted snuff-box of the wood of one of the cedars that grew at the grave, to be sent to Mr. Demarat ; to whom the Misses André also presented a silver goblet, and to Mr. Buchanan a silver standish.

A withered tree, a heap of stones, mark the spot where the plough never enters, and whence André's remains were removed. The sarcophagus came safely across the sea ; and forty-one years and more, after they had been laid by the Hudson, its contents were re-interred in a very private manner, hard by the monument in Westminster Abbey. The Dean of Westminster superintended the religious offices, while Major-General Sir Herbert Taylor appeared for the Duke of York, and Mr. Locker, Secretary to Greenwich Hospital, for the sisters of the deceased.

In the south aisle of the Abbey, wherein sleeps so much of the greatness and the glory of England, stands André's monument. It is of statuary marble, carved by Van Gelder. It presents a sarcophagus on a moulded panelled base and plinth ; the panel of which is thus inscribed :

---

<sup>a</sup> So repeats Mrs. Childs, (letters from New York,) who brought to the scene a solemn conviction that André's death was a "cool, deliberate murder," and whose account of what she saw and heard, is tinged with this feeling.

"Sacred to the memory of Major André, who, raised by his merit, at an early period of life, to the rank of Adjutant-General of the British forces in America, and, employed in an important but hazardous enterprise, fell a sacrifice to his zeal for his King and Country, on the 2d of October, 1780, aged twenty-nine, universally beloved and esteemed by the army in which he served, and lamented even by his foes. His gracious Sovereign, King George III., has caused this monument to be erected."

On the plinth, these words are added:—

"The remains of Major John André were, on the 10th of August, 1821, removed from Tappan by James Buchanan, Esq., His Majesty's counsel at New York, under instructions from his Royal Highness the Duke of York, and with the permission of the Dean and Chapter, finally deposited in a grave contiguous to this monument, on the 28th of November, 1821."

The monument stands seven and a half feet high in relief against the wall, beneath the north window of the south aisle. The projecting figures of the sarcophagus represent a group in which Washington and André are conspicuous; the former in the act of receiving from the flag of truce a letter, which is variously said to signify that in which the prisoner petitioned to be shot, and more reasonably the demand of Clinton for his release. Britannia with a very lugubrious lion reposes on the top of the cenotaph. On the whole, the work is not a triumph of the sculptor's art."<sup>a</sup>

The site of Major John André's capture is marked by a handsome monument; the corner stone of which was laid on the 4th of July, 1853, by Col. James A. Hamilton, son of the Hon. Alexander Hamilton, who at the age of twenty, belonged to the military family of Gen. Washington, as one of his aids; and who remained in the army during the Revolutionary war, always attached to the staff of the Commander-in-Chief, and possessed of his affection and confidence.

The following public notice was issued on the occasion:—

## CELEBRATION OF THE FOURTH OF JULY AT TARRY-TOWN.

### MONUMENT COMMEMORATING THE CAPTURE OF ANDRÉ.

The "Monument Association" will celebrate the 4th of July, 1853, by laying the corner stone of a Monument to be erected commemorating the Capture of Major André.

The different Military Companies and Civic Societies throughout Westchester and the adjacent Counties have been invited, and are expected to be present, and join the ceremonies of the occasion.

<sup>a</sup> Life of Major André by Winthrop Sargent, N. Y., D. Appleton & Co., 549 & 551 Broadway, 1871.

We have not received the Programme of the Exercises, as was promised last week: We are authorized, however, to say, that the Corner Stone will be laid by Col. JAMES A. HAMILTON, of Greenburgh; and that the Oration on the occasion, will be delivered by JAS. T. BRADY, of New York.

CELEBRATION  
OF  
THE FOURTH OF JULY  
AT TARRYTOWN.

THE "MONUMENT ASSOCIATION"

Will celebrate the Seventy-sixth Anniversary of American Independence, on MONDAY, JULY 4th, 1853, at TARRYTOWN, by

Laying the Corner Stone of the

MONUMENT

To be erected for the purpose of designating the spot where

Major ANDRE was captured!

The day will be ushered in by firing a National Salute, and ringing of the different Church Bells. A Salute will also be fired at noon and sunset.

P R O G R A M M E :

1ST DIVISION.

Escort,

Westchester County Cavalry—Rockland County Cavalry,

Aid—Grand Marshal—Aid.

Major-General Ward and Staff—Brigadier-General Lockwood and Staff.

Band.

Jefferson Guards,

Scrugham Guards.

Lockwood Guards,

Band.

Kemble Guards and other Companies.

Officers and Soldiers of the Revolution in Carriages.

Surviving relatives of Paulding Williams and Van Wart in Carriages.

Aid.

Solomon's Lodge No. 196, of the Ancient and Honorable Fraternity of Free and Accepted Masons, and Visiting Brethren.

Westchester Lodge No. 77, of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, and Visiting Brethren.

Committee of Reception, in Carriages.

Orators of the Day, and Reader of the Declaration of Independence, in Carriages.

Sleepy Hollow Tent, No. 182, of the Independent Order of Rechabites, and Visiting Brethren.

North River Division, No. 168, of Sons of Temperance, and Visiting Brethren.

Inspectors of State Prison, in Carriages.

Officers of the Association, in Carriages.

Committee of Arrangements, in Carriages.—Clergy, in Carriages

#### 2D DIVISION.

Military Escort.

Deputy-Marshal and Aid.

Band.

Order of United Americans.

Paulding Chapter No. 10.—Westchester Chapter No. 31.—Adams Chapter No. 19.

Band.

Ringgold Chapter, No. 46.—Republican Chapter, No. 36.—Oneacta Chapter, No. 50.—Tappan Chapter, No. 40.

Judiciary of the County.

Members of the Bar. Medical Profession. Members of the Press.

Citizens generally.

### ORDER OF MARCH.

Capt. JACOB STORM, Grand Marshal.

The Procession will form on Beekman Street, with the right on Courtlandt Street, opposite the Irving House, at 10 o'clock, A. M., and move at the signal of a gun. It will then march down Courtlandt Street to Main Street, up Main Street to Washington Street, through Washington Street to Franklin Street, up Franklin Street to Broadway, and up Broadway to the site of the MONUMENT on the "ANDRE GROUND," where the

CORNER STONE WILL BE LAID BY

COL. JAMES A. HAMILTON,

With an appropriate Address.

At the conclusion of the ceremonies of laying the Corner Stone, the line will again form and proceed to the grounds selected for the Oration, &c.



## ORDER OF EXERCISES.

Music, - - - - - By the Band.  
 Prayer, - - - - - By the Rev. P. P. Sanford, D. D.  
 Reading of the Declaration, - - - - - Rev. J. M. Ferris.  
 Music, - - - - - By the Band.

## ORATION.

BY JAMES T. BRADY, ESQ., OF NEW YORK.

Music by the Band.

## BENEDICTION.

The Committee of Arrangments will be designated by a BLUE RIBBON tied on the left breast. Committee of Reception, by a WHITE RIBBON. Officers of the Association, by a TRI-COLOR ROSETTE.

The above Committees are requested to meet the Grand Marshal at his quarters at the Irving house, at 9 o'clock, A. M., precisely.

*Seats will be reserved for Ladies.*

## COMMITTEE OF ARRANGEMENTS.

JAMES W. SCRIBNER,  
 AMOS R. CLARK,  
 ALLEN NEWMAN,

N. HOLMES ODELL,  
 WM. F. VAN WART,  
 BELA S. SQUIRES.<sup>a</sup>

The following lines were penned for the occasion :

## COMMEMORATION OF THE CAPTURE OF ANDRÉ.

BY ELFRIDE

In the still-shadowed woodlands fair Liberty wandered  
 Desponding and lonely,—lamenting her lot ;  
 Hope lingered beside her,—but hushed was his carol,  
 And 'mid the deep darkness his torch flickered not !  
 The calm brow of Nature in beauty was beaming,  
 But the traitors slunk sullen from sunlight away,—  
 Speeding on their dark errand, as honest men seeming,—  
 What arm shall the threatening thunderbolt stay ?

Very near a few champions of Liberty then !  
 Brave, brave were their spirits, and strong every hand,  
 While wisdom and prudence the victory won,  
 The rescue from woe of this God-favored land !  
 While Liberty witnessed in silence the scene,

<sup>a</sup> *Westchester Herald*, 28th June, 1853





ANDRÉ'S MONUMENT, (OLD.)

And smiled when the children so faithful were found,  
 "Here raise thou an altar," she whispered to Fame,—  
 "Henceforth this green hill-side is consecrate ground!"

But where is that altar that ourselves should erect?

Lo! Gratitude roused, as a laggard appears!

Let us mold here a monument worthy to bear

Their record still hallowed by Freedom's own tears!

In years that are gone from the lips of our sires,

We have heard that which biddeth our spirits to thrill:

But 'they're passing away,' and our children shall come

To ask of these things when our own hearts are chill:

It is meet then that *marble*, enduring and pure,

Should emblem the deeds of the noble and brave!

From this spot on earth's bosom shall heavenward rise,

A pile from whose brow their green laurels shall wave.

"To the Captors of André?" it sacred shall be,—

Who knew no temptation, no doubt, and no fear!

This silently eloquent pillar shall tell

Of the good, brave and true, who are crowned fore'er!

"The Captors of André!" three strong-hearted braves!

Fame writes them, a Paulding, Williams, Van Wart,

The Sons of Westchester, guard proudly their graves,

And their mem'ry is green in each patriot heart.

Here, here was it wrought, that good deed of our sires,

For Freedom a noble and earnest endeavor!

Their laurels shall bloom, and Posterity's tears

Like dew shall keep fragrant those laurels forever!<sup>a</sup>

The monument is a plain shaft of native dolomite, and bears the following inscription:—

ON THIS SPOT

The 23d day of September, 1780, the Spy,

MAJOR JOHN ANDRÉ,

Adjutant-General of the British Army, was captured by

JOHN PAULDING, DAVID WILLIAMS and ISAAC VAN WART,

All natives of this county.

HISTORY HAS TOLD THE REST.

The people of Westchester County have erected this Monument, as well to commemorate a great Event, as to testify their high estimation of the integrity and Patriotism which, rejecting every temptation, rescued the United States from most Imminent peril, by baffling the arts of a Spy and the plots of a Traitor.

DEDICATED OCTOBER 7, 1853.

<sup>a</sup> Westchester Herald.

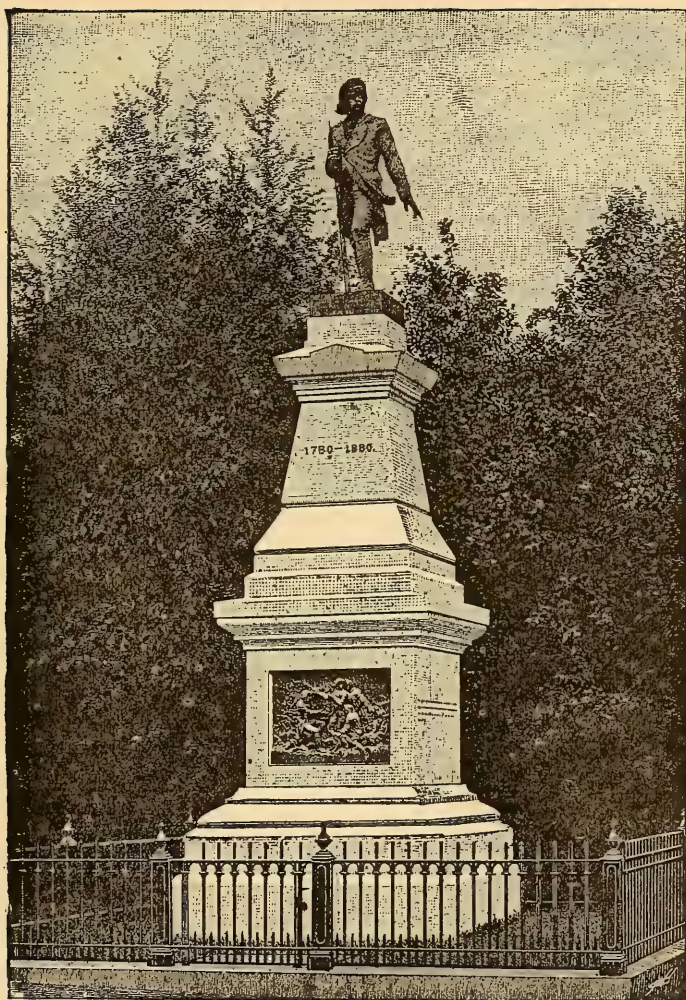


## ANDRÉ'S CAPTORS' MONUMENT.

A Monument Association has been organized in the village of Tarrytown, Westchester County, to perpetuate and keep in order the monument erected at that place to the memory of the captors of Major André. The incorporators are Messrs. N. Holmes Odell, A. R. Clark, S. P. Swartwout, Jacob B. Odell, S. Requa, W. T. Lockwood, J. S. Millard and H. E. Paulding. They have met and fully organized by electing the following officers: President—A. R. Clark; Vice-President—J. B. Odell; Secretary—W. T. Lockwood; Treasurer—J. S. Millard. The marble monument which stands on Broadway, in the village, was dedicated on the 23d of September, 1853, when Horatio Seymour was present and took part in the ceremony, and Henry J. Raymond delivered the oration. On the 23d of September next, the anniversary of the capture will be observed by the society with a centennial celebration. In the meantime they will have the monument re-set, the grounds about it cleaned up and otherwise improved.

Beside the capture of André, there are several revolutionary incidents which deserve to be noticed in connection with Tarrytown. One of these was the surprisal of a large corps of British refugees, which took place in the tavern of Elizabeth Van Tassel. Major Hunt, having received intelligence of the advance of the party, at once determined upon their surprisal, particularly as the late murderers of his brother were known to be among the number. In company, therefore, with John Archer, and a few volunteers, Major Hunt proceeded from Westchester to Tarrytown, so arranging the march as to arrive in the vicinity of the tavern about dusk. After darkness had fairly set in, Hunt, with his party, surrounded the house: at this moment their unsuspecting enemies were engaged in playing cards. Major Hunt, having armed himself with a huge club, now gave the signal for the attack, when the whole party simultaneously rushed in, headed by the Major, who exclaimed, as he raised his weapon, "Clubs are trumps, gentlemen." During the desperate struggle that ensued, Archer attempted to kill several of the refugees; and was only prevented from so doing by Major Hunt, who, arresting his arm, observed—"Sir, the highest sense of honor in a soldier is to protect the lives of his prisoners." After a short but ineffectual resistance, the refugees surrendered, and were led off in triumph to the American quarters.

In the summer of 1779, a strong detachment under the command of Col. Emmerick, advanced upon Tarrytown so rapidly, that the Continental guard, quartered at Requa's house, were completely taken by surprise; four of them were killed upon the spot, and the remainder, con-



ANDRÉ'S MONUMENT, (NEW.)



sisting of ten or twelve, taken prisoners. On this occasion, Isaac Martlingh,<sup>a</sup> a one-armed man, and Polly Buckhout, were also killed; the latter, supposed accidentally, from the circumstance of her wearing a man's hat.

T. M.  
In memory of Mr. ISAAC MARTLINGH,  
who was inhumanly  
slain by  
Nathaniel Underhill, May, 26,  
A. D. 1779,  
in the 39th year  
of his age.

The *Pennsylvania Packet*, 1780-1781, contains the following:—

"Fishkill, March 9th, 1780. A few days ago, (probably the end of February or beginning of March,) a small party of our troops stationed on the lines at Tarrytown, under the command of Col. Badlem, having been informed where Captain Ogden, a noted partizan of the enemy, of Emmerick's corps, resided, went off in the morning and completely surprised that gentleman in bed; having previously taken his horse out of the stable and saddled him. They brought him off undiscovered tho' the enemy had their main regiment about him, one hundred yards distant. We hear he had his parole given him in order to effect his exchange for Captain Williams, who had for a long time been prisoner in New York."

In the spring of 1782, a small party of refugees under the command of Lieut. Akerly, captured three American militia-men named Yerks, Van Wart, and Strong, near the residence of the present Gilbert Underhill, situated in Tarrytown. Strong was hung, on the spot, by his inhuman captor.

The following letter occurs in the book of Military Returns.<sup>b</sup>

PHILIPSBURGH, OCT. 23, 1775.

MR. WILLIAM PAULDING,

*Sir*:—I send you a list of the officers chosen in the manor of Philipsburgh, in the County of Westchester, in the room of those who decline:

*For Tarrytown.*  
Gload Requa, Capt.  
Cornelius van Tassel, 2d Lieut.  
Siebout Acker, Ensign.

*East Company.*  
Benj. Vermilyea, Capt.  
Gilbert Dean, first Lieut.  
William Forshee, 2d Lieut,

—  
*Upper Company.*

Josias Arsor, 2d Lieut.

We have likewise returned you the commission of those who decline:

GEORGE COMB.  
JOSEPH YOUNG,  
JAMES HAMMOND.

<sup>a</sup> The following epitaph is inscribed upon this individual's grave stone in Sleepy Hollow Church-yard:—

<sup>b</sup> Military Returns, Alb. xxvi. 140.



In 1776, the committee addressed the following letter to General Washington :

SATURDAY MORNING, JULY 13, 1776.

*Sir* :—On being informed yesterday afternoon, that two ships of war had gone into the North River, and passed by all the fortifications on York Island, the convention immediately sent an express to the commanding officer of the fort at the Highlands, advising him thereof. Last evening advice arrived that two frigates and two or three tenders were at anchor at Tarrytown, whereupon the convention sent the inhabitants a supply of powder and ball, and took immediate measures for reinforcing the inhabitants along that shore. This morning the convention were informed, that the frigates and tenders still lay there at anchor, and that several barges were busy in sounding the river ; another detachment of the militia has been directed to guard the stores in that neighborhood, in which are sundry effects belonging to the public.

The convention will endeavor to prevent their making incursions into the country, and beg leave to suggest to your Excellency, the propriety of keeping a strong guard at King's Bridge, the destruction of which they apprehend to be an object with the enemy.<sup>a</sup>

I have the honor to be with esteem,  
Your Excellency's most obedient servant,  
by order

To his Excellency GEN. WASHINGTON.

July 16th, 1776. A letter from Colonel Hammond, then stationed at Tarrytown, was read.

The Colonel therein informs the convention, that the ships of war have left that harbor, and are sailing up the river with a fair wind, towards the Highlands. Thereupon it was resolved, that Colonel Van Cortlandt and Mr. Z. Platt<sup>b</sup> be directed to repair immediately to the Highlands,<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 9th of October, a body of 1100 British troops embarked on board batteaux at Peekskill and the same night proceeded to Tarrytown, where they landed at daybreak, and occupied the heights adjoining.<sup>d</sup>

July 15th, 1781, (remarks Thatcher, in his Military Journal,) two of the British frigates, and several smaller vessels, passed up the North River as far as Tarrytown, in defiance of our cannon, which were continually playing upon them. Their object appears to be, to seize some of our small vessels which are passing down the river with supplies for our army.

One small sloop loaded with bread for the French army, has fallen into their hands.<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Jour. N. Y. Pro. Con. Book I. 523.

<sup>b</sup> A distinguished officer of the American service, grandfather of Lewis C. Platt, Esq., present surrogate of the county.

<sup>c</sup> Journal N. Y. Pro. Con. Book I. 525.

<sup>d</sup> Gaines' *Weekly Mercury*.

<sup>e</sup> Thatcher's Journal, 255.

Greenburgh is a small hamlet situated three miles south-east of Tarrytown, consisting of a church, a store, a few scattered houses, and one tavern

This place is delightfully located in the Saw-mill valley, through which flows the lovely Nepera, (Saw-mill).

Upon the west side of the valley, towers Beaver hill, frowning in solemn majesty on the quiet scene below.

The Presbyterian church of Greenburgh, (situated on the east bank of the Saw Mill) was first organized about the year 1790, under the ministry of the Rev. John Townley. This individual labored here for about twelve years, after which time he removed to Somers, and subsequently to Peekskill.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the departure of Mr. Townly, services were performed here, by the Rev. Thomas G. Smith, pastor of the Dutch Reformed church of Tarrytown and Unionville.

Mr. Smith was succeeded by the late Rev. George Bourne, who served the churches of Greenburgh and Dobb's Ferry, with great acceptance.

During this period, the church was connected with the old Westchester Presbytery, a congregational body, long since extinct. Upon the 12th of June, 1825, it was received into union with the First Presbytery of New York, and re-organized. It is at present connected with the Bedford Presbytery. This church appears to have been first incorporated upon the 25th of April, 1790, on which occasion, John Martine, Elijah Tompkins, Archer Read, Thomas Almond, and Abraham Odell were elected trustees."<sup>b</sup>

#### LIST OF MINISTERS OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH AT GREENBURGH,<sup>c</sup>

INSTALL OR CALL.	MINISTERS.	VACATED BY.
Ministers	1790, REV. JOHN TOWNLEY,	resig.
under the	1802, REV. THOMAS G. SMITH,	supply, resig.
Westchester	1820, REV. GEORGE BOURNE,	resig.
Presbytery,	1825, REV. DAVID REMINGTON,	resig.
Sept. 19, 1826,	REV. CHESTER LONG,	resig.
Dec. 1, 1832,	REV. MARK MEAD,	resig.
	1834, REV. JOHN WHITE,	resig.
	1835, REV. HOSEA BALL,	resig.
July 16, 1838,	REV. GEORGE WALKER,	resig.
Oct. 9, 1841,	REV. SAMUEL KELLOGG,	resig.
June 10, 1843,	REV. ELIAS S. SCHENO	resig.
June 20, 1852,	REV. J. L. HOWELL,	resig.
Oct. 1860,	REV. WILLIAM MICKLE,	resig.
Oct. 14, 1867,	REV. THORNTON M. NIVEN, JR.,	present.

First elders of the church, Archibald Reid, George Combs and Staats Hammond. First deacons, William Brown and Isaac See.

<sup>a</sup> The Rev. John Townley died March 1st, 1812, aged 72 years. His remains and those of his wife and daughter, are interred in the burying ground attached to this church.

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. A. 22, a second incorporation occurs May 17, 1808; a fourth, 6th of June, 1835.

<sup>c</sup> The ministers of this church have for a long time officiated alternately between the two churches of Greenburgh and White Plains

The present beautiful church was dedicated Sept, 26, 1869.

In the cemetery of the Presbyterian church, rest the remains of Isaac Van Wart, one of the three captors of Major John André, who for many years was an efficient church officer and acted as chorister up to the time of his death.

A marble monument consisting of a base and pyramid is inscribed on its four sides, with the following epitaph:—

(North Side.)

Here reposes  
the mortal remains  
of

ISAAO VAN WART,  
an elder in the Greenburgh Church  
who died  
on the 23d of May, 1828,  
in the  
69th year of his age.

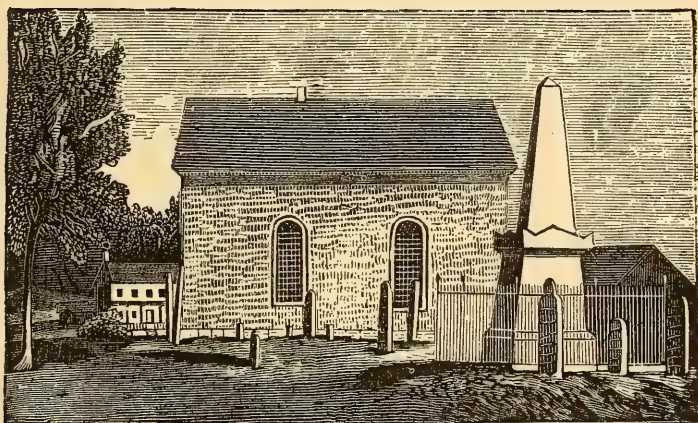
Having lived the life, he died the death, of a  
Christian.

(South Side.)

The Citizens  
of the  
County of Westchester,  
erected this tomb  
in testimony of the high sense  
they entertained for the  
virtuous and patriotic conduct  
of their fellow citizen  
as a memorial sacred to  
public gratitude.

(Upon the East Side.)

*Vincit Amor Patriae.*  
Nearly half a century  
before this monument was built,  
the conscript fathers of America  
had in the Senate Chamber, voted that  
ISAAO VAN WART,  
was a faithful patriot, one in whom  
the love of country was invincible,  
and this tomb bears testimony  
that the record is true.



THE VANWART MONUMENT AND PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, GREENBURGH.





(West Side.)

Fidelity.—On the 23d of September, 1780, Isaac Van Wart, accompanied by John Paulding and David Williams, all farmers of the County of Westchester, intercepted Major André, on his return from the American lines, in the character of a spy; and, notwithstanding the large bribes offered them for his release, nobly disdained to sacrifice their country for gold, secured and carried him to the commanding officer of the district, whereby the dangerous and traitorous conspiracy of Arnold was brought to light, the insidious designs of the enemy baffled, the American army saved, and our beloved country free," &c.

We extract the following from the Westchester *Herald*, on occasion of raising of this monument, June 11, 1829.

On Thursday last, being the day appointed by the Committee of Arrangements for the ceremony of erecting a monument to the memory of the late Isaac Van Wart, one of the captors of the British spy, André, a large concourse of our fellow citizens assembled at the spot where repose the remains of the departed patriot, at the burial place of the Presbyterian church, on the east bank of the Saw-Mill River, in Greenburgh. The day was very fine and pleasant, and by 12 o'clock, there was supposed to be present upwards of two thousand spectators, who had convened to participate in the last respects to the memory of their esteemed fellow citizen; among whom were to be seen a few of the aged and venerable men who had passed through the scenes and perils of the Revolution. About 12 o'clock, a procession was formed under the direction of Major John Sing, marshal of the day, the whole in the inverse order of their rank:—

1st. Captain Denslow's company Light Infantry, of the 12th regiment, with the band attached to that regiment, and the first regiment Light Infantry, formed the military escort on the left. The left in front.

2d. The officers and non-commissioned officers of the 15th brigade.

3d. Captain Warner's company of cavalry on foot.

4th. Citizens of the county.

6th. Mr. F. Kain, the architect and his workmen, with their implements to complete the work.

6th. The invited guests.

7th. The clergy of the county.

8th and last, the surviving officers and soldiers of the Revolution, the committee of arrangements and General William Hammond and suite.

The column was marched in this inverse order to solemn music with arms reversed, until arrived at the church-yard, when the procession opened to the right and left, fronting inward. The officers and soldiers presenting arms. The officers and soldiers of the Revolution preceded by General Philip Van Cortlandt, now the senior surviving officer of the Continental army. These passed through the line, conducted by General Hammond and suite, and the Marshal of the day, to the place reserved for them on the right of the monument, and the whole procession having passed through in this order, the military escort formed a square about the whole in the church-yard. At this spot, the column was met by a large procession of the ladies of the county, under the direction of S. Simpson, Esq., who acted as assistant marshal of the day, issuing from the church, at the

head of which, supported upon the arm of a friend, was the venerable widow of the deceased, followed by his surviving sister, also supported; and next came the female children and grand-children of the deceased, a goodly number; after whom, followed a large train of matrons and misses, amounting to four or five hundred in number. The whole of this interesting group having assembled within the yard, and about the monument, the Rev. David Remington, pastor of the church to which the deceased belonged, addressed the throne of Grace, in a very solemn and appropriate manner; after which, 'Colonel Ward,<sup>a</sup> the orator of the day, was conducted to the platform prepared for the occasion, where he delivered the following address. (It was afterwards printed at the request of the committee of arrangements).

Friends! Fellow citizens!  
and Soldiers!

We have assembled on an interesting occasion, a solemn, not a melancholy one. We have come to this spot, to discharge a part of our duty, to one who has paid the debt of nature—to bring with us, as it were, each a stone from our quarries, fitted and prepared to build a monumental pile, to a departed patriot; one who fell not in the hour of battle, contending for our liberties, but who lived to see our country prosperous and happy, delivered from all her troubles, and then gathered like a shock of corn ripe for the harvest. It might be asked, if insensible dust and ashes can be benefited by monumental honors? No! But it is the duty of the living to make and preserve memorials of the virtuous and distinguished dead; for these memorials contain lessons of instruction that are constantly before our eyes.

The man to whose memory we are now erecting a tomb stone, was one of us, a citizen of Westchester county; his name requires no lineal honors, no armorial bearings, to make it dear and precious with us. We knew him, and that was sufficient; but for those who did not know him personally, (for his circle of acquaintance was not a large one,) we put his fame on his character as a patriot, and it gives me pleasure to state that he lived and died a Christian. For his patriotism, it is enough to say, that Isaac Van Wart was one of the captors of André. For proofs of his exemplary life, and for his firm belief in our holy religion, to you my friends I appeal as witnesses. Some of you have known him in the noonday and evening of life, have heard him breathe the patriot's prayer, "O God save my country," have seen his practical example of virtuous conduct, his piety, his devotion, and his humble submission to the will of Heaven,

The capture of André, fellow citizens, formed an important epoch in the history of our Revolution. This event took place on the morning of the 23d of Sept., 1780, and what is well worthy of observation, within three miles of the spot where we are now assembled; and within a few miles of the place where the man, whose perishable remains we are now paying the last tribute of respect, was born, brought up and died. It occurred, too, when our country was in the deepest distress. It will be recollected, that Charleston, South Carolina, had then but recently been taken by the enemy, with the loss of our whole army, under the command of General Lincoln, amounting to upwards of five thousand men—together with all the magazines of military and naval stores, the shipping

<sup>a</sup> The present General Aaron Ward, of Sing Sing.

in the harbor, and four hundred pieces of ordinance. General Gates had also been defeated at Camden in North Carolina, seven hundred of our troops having been killed in battle, and one thousand three hundred wounded and made prisoners, and the whole of his forces routed and dispersed. The Eastern States had likewise been overrun by the enemy, with fire and sword. And to add to the general gloom which now overspread the United States, the small army that was left was reduced to the greatest distress and misery; and nothing, it is believed, but the wisdom and prudence of the immortal Washington, could have kept it together; for, in the language of a committee appointed by Congress, to visit it, the soldiers were unpaid for months together—seldom having more than six days provision in advance; and on several occasions, for several successive days, entirely without meat. The medical department having no supplies whatever for the sick, and every department of the army being alike without money, and not even the shadow of credit left. Discontent to an alarming extent, at the same time among the officers and soldiers, on account of the depreciated currency of the country. The pay of a private for a year, would not subsist his family for a single week; nor would the pay of an officer procure forage, or even oats, for his horse.

And in addition to these evils which fell so heavily upon the army, others not less deplorable, had, by reason of the embarrassed state of the country, fallen upon the community at large. For the aged and infirm, who had retired to enjoy the fruits of their industry, found their subsistence reduced to a scanty pittance; and the widow and the orphan were obliged to accept a dollar, where hundreds were their due.

At this moment when all was dark, our hopes for a successful termination of the war well nigh gone, when the east and the south were in gloom and doubt, and fear—which “betrays like treason,”—was setting on many an honest face, Major André was sent from the British army, whose General then wished to finish the war at a blow, to tamper with the low principles of Benedict Arnold; and by the strength of bribery and corruption, to pluck up his shallow-rooted patriotism at once. The treason had so far prospered, that the delivery of West Point and the army there stationed, was agreed upon. The plan to effect the purpose was drawn up; nay, more, the victims of deceit and slaughter, were marked out, perfidy and destruction had sharpened their daggers for the march, when it pleased Divine Providence to make three of our fellow citizens instruments in His hand for good.

They arrested the spy on his return to the camp. On this event, perhaps, hung the destinies of our country; if not that, certainly the lives of thousands, and long years of war were involved in it. The spy was taken, and conducted to the lines of the American army; the immeasurable power of gold was tried upon Van Wart and his associates—it would not do; rewards beyond their knowledge of wealth were offered them, if they would give up their prisoner—but offered them in vain. Their virtues, to the honor of human nature, to the honor of republican principles, to the honor of our country, stood the test—nobly stood it. The spy was tried, and expiated his offence against the laws of nations by his death, and our country was saved.

During the whole of this excitement, so momentous and alarming, we have to thank God that our country was stained by one act of treason only; and to al-



leviate our grief and mortification for this act, we have to offer the incorruptible integrity of three militia men in the common walks of life, (where virtue always resides,) in whose breasts all ordinary springs of action were absorbed by the love of liberty, and whose enthusiastic ardor in the cause was regulated and guided by prudence and firmness; and we have it to say, too, that if one proud, envious, canker-hearted General had his price, our soldiers were above purchase!—that if treason found its way to the stronghold and the citadel, it was in the end crushed at the outposts. To commemorate this event, that posterity should not lose sight of it—that future ages should understand it by full and satisfactory proof—that our countrymen know how to respect and value patriotism as well as to practice it—that they were as ready to render justice to the merits of a private soldier, as to the officer highest in rank—and to show, too, that our Revolution was achieved by principles of the highest order, we have assembled to erect this monument. Such an act is in conformity with the usages of the wisest of nations in every period of history, and, whenever neglected, has been a source of censure and regret; such an act is in conformity with the habits of our own country, for it is consonant to a sense of gratitude in every bosom. Monuments are now rising to the heroes of the Revolution in every part of the United States. Montgomery, Warren, De Kalb and others, are now remembered by a grateful people; and on the banks of our majestic Hudson has lately been placed a tasteful monument to the great and good Kosciusko, who dispensed honors and rewards for the freedom of man. This last tribute of respect has sprung from the purest of all sources—from the bosoms of the youthful soldiers of our national military school, whose pursuits lead them to search history, and to canvass every military character for models of the patriot soldier.

The time, fellow citizens, is fast coming, when the actors in our revolutionary scenes will live but in the remembrance of the few, and in the annals of our country; more or less of their number are daily passing to their eternal rest. Within a few days past, the citizens of this county and of this nation were called to mourn the loss of one of the most distinguished members of that valiant band—the great, the illustrious John Jay, the American Fabricius: and even while I am speaking, there are only here and there one of the men of that age to be seen; and he, with whitened locks and solemn demeanor, standing on the confines of eternity—and taking, as it were, a farewell of us and of all the present generation.<sup>a</sup>

Illustrious relics of a patriotic age! ye shall not be forgotten when you shall have passed away. Monuments shall arise to your fame, written over with the story of your deeds. You have lifted your warning voices to us to be virtuous and united, and they shall be heard; your principles shall not be lost—your examples shall have their influence—your very monuments shall have a tongue that shall never be silent in teaching us how to live and how to die. The virtuous of one generation are monuments for the next, and so onward in the procession of ages. We know that our country is yet in its youth, and is still forming its habits and fixing its principles; and I thank God, that among her best habits is that of cherishing the memory of her benefactors. The deed that we are now doing, my friends, in gratitude and modesty, is not to be done for this day alone. In some distant period, when the traveller shall inquire of our des-

<sup>a</sup> The late General Philip Van Cortlandt.

cendants, "Whose monument is this?" they shall answer, with pleasure and pride, "This is the grave of Isaac Van Wart, who was an incorruptible patriot and a good Christian. He lived with our ancestors, and was one of them, and they appreciated his services; and to perpetuate his memory, erected this tomb stone, and gave it in charge to us to keep it from profanation. Nearly half a century before this monument was built, the Conscript Fathers of America had in the Senate chamber, voted he was a faithful patriot—one in whom the love of country was invincible—and this monument bears testimony that the record is true.

Mr. Francis Kain then gave the finishing stroke to the monument, after which the military escort divided into three sections; each division fired one round. The procession was again formed, by the marshal in the same order as before. The officers and soldiers of the Revolution, on the right, passed the line, the same honors being paid to them by the military; and the whole returned to the house of Mr. E. Mead, from whence they had started."

During the American war, this section of the neutral ground was frequently harrassed by incursions of the enemy.

On one occasion a large body of British Cow-boys (who had been up the country in prosecution of their trade,) were returning laden with spoil, when they received a severe check in the vicinity of Smith's tavern, from a small force of American volunteers. The attack is said to have been commenced by an individual named John Dean. The neighborhood, alarmed by the firing, immediately turned out to his assistance.

November 17th, 1777, the British, under Captain Emmerick, made an excursion from their quarters, to the Saw-Mill Valley, and completely surprised the Van Tassels, who were residing near Captain Romer's, burnt their houses, "stripped the women and children of the necessary apparel to cover them from the severity of a cold winter's night," and led off in triumph, the two brothers, Peter and Cornelius Van Tassel.<sup>a</sup>

In retaliation for this inhuman outrage, the patriots fitted up an expedition at Tarrytown, under the command of Abraham Martlingh, which proceeded down the Hudson River, passed the enemy's guard-boats in safety, and succeeded in setting fire to General Oliver de Lancey's house on New York island, after plundering it of its contents. The whole party returned to Tarrytown in safety. This enterprise was conducted in the very face of the British army.

Three young lads named Vincent, Smith and Lawrence, were overtaken by a party of Totten's refugee corps, a little south of Howland's mill; two were killed on the spot, Vincent recovered from his wounds, but remained a cripple for life. Major David Hunt, of the Continental army, afterwards conveyed him to Paulus Hook, where he was noticed

<sup>a</sup> See Gen. Parson's Letter, Mamaroneck.

by several members of Congress, who afterwards obtained a pension for the sufferer. This is said to be the first pension granted by the United States Government.

A short distance south of Greenburgh village, is situated the residence of the late Samuel Howland, Esq. It is embosomed in trees, and stands on the west bank of the Saw-Mill river; in its rear, rise bold and majestic hills covered with luxuriant woods. The building itself is a very handsome structure of wood, in the modern style. The river, arrested by the mill-dam, forms in front of the house an extensive sheet of water, which adds greatly to the beauty of this romantic spot.

The former possessors of the estate were the Odell's, who, in 1816, sold the property to Joseph Howland, Esq., father of the present proprietor.

Chatterton height, the battle-field of 1776, lies on the north-east corner of this town. We have reserved a description of the battle for the town of White Plains, with which place it is generally associated, although more properly belonging to Greenburgh.

The Chatterton family, from whom the hill derives its name, have long been residents in the town of Greenburgh. A member of this family was settled on the hill as early as 1731. In A. D. 1750. we find Michael Chatterton purchasing lands in the vicinity of David and Nathan Purdy.

Chatterton bridge which crosses the Bronx at the foot of the hill, was first erected in 1736.

Cornelius Chatterton, one of the earliest magistrates of Eastchester, was an ancestor of this family.

Hart's Corners, formerly Barne's Corners, is another small hamlet in Greenburgh, situated about three miles south of White Plains, in a fine valley, the neighborhood of which is rendered extremely beautiful by the inequality of the ground and surrounding scenery. The settlement is composed of one church, several dwellings and stores. The Bronx River Powder Manufactory, and Railroad depot adjoin it on the east. This place derives its name from Robert Hart, of Rye, who emigrated hither sometime during the Manorial period, and in 1784, purchased of the Commissioners of Forfeitures, 600 acres of the Phillipsburgh lands, for which tradition says he gave one shilling per acre. His sons were John, Monmouth, Isaac and Joshua. Monmouth owned 300 acres at old Hart's Corners. By his wife Mary Gedney, he had John—commonly called Old John—Elijah, Peter of Mt. Kisco, Monmouth, heir of his father and a daughter Zinthy, who married Jacob Purdy.

The Methodist church, stands on the summit of the high ridge west

of the hamlet, it was erected A D. 1832.<sup>a</sup> The burying ground lies near the Railroad.

A fine line of hills extend south from Hart's Corners to the foot of Thirty Deer ridge in Yonkers, watered on the east and west by the two branches of the Spraine, called by the Indians Armenperal. These hills were formerly so covered with thick woods as to be almost impassable, and abounded in deer, wolves, bears, wild-cats and rattle snakes. Deer were numerous as late as 1760.

One of the earliest settlers of the place was John Tompkins of Eastchester, who purchased a large tract upon these hills in 1731. For some time after this purchase, Mr. Tompkins was in the constant practice of spending the week here, and returning to his family on a Saturday. During the whole of this period he was surrounded by Indians, but they never once offered to molest him. A small hill to the south-east of the present Mr. John Tompkins, still bears the name of Indian hill, and the adjoining spring is called Indian spring. Two descendants of the original proprietor, John and James Tompkins, yet occupy a large portion of the estate.

A little west of the Methodist church at Hart's Corners stands the residence of Jackson Odell, son of the distinguished Colonel John Odell. This gentleman, during the early part of the Revolution served in the capacity of a guide to the American army, and subsequently received a colonel's commission from Congress. He was the second son of Jonathan Odell, Esq., by his wife Margaret Dyckman, and descended from a common ancestor with the late General Jacob Odell of Yonkers. Col. Odell died 26th of October, 1835.

At one period of the war the house was occupied as headquarters by the French commander, Count de Rochambeau, General Washington having encamped on the west bank of the Spraine. On several occasions large tables were arranged for the military staffs of Generals Washington and Rochambeau, in the adjoining stables, the mangers serving as a repository for their hats and swords.

Mrs. Churchill, daughter of Mr. Taylor, former proprietor of the place, remembers to have danced with the celebrated Marshal Berthier, at that time one of the aids of the Count de Rochambeau, in the parlor of the present mansion.

It was near this house that General Washington appointed one of the daily markets to be opened for the supply of the army in 1781, as appears from the following document :

<sup>a</sup> For incorporation of this church see Religious Soc. Lib. B. 7; first trustees, Underhill Tompkins, Stephen Levisness, Gilbert Tompkins, Joseph Forster, John Crawford, and Elijah Tompkins.



"BY HIS EXCELLENCY, GEORGE WASHINGTON, &c.

A PROCLAMATION."

"Be it known that every day during ye time ye army remains in its present position from day to day-break till noon, two market-places will be open for ye supply of ye army. One near His Excellency's head-quarters in ye field, just back of ye house and near the quarters of ye Adjutant and Quartermaster-Generals: the other in the French camp near the house of Henry Taylor, which is ye head-quarters of His Excellency the Count de Rochambeau, &c., &c.

"Given at head-quarters near Dobb's Ferry, this 10th day of July, 1781.

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

"By His Excellency's command,

JON. TRUMBULL, Jr., Sec."<sup>a</sup>

The French officers at this time were Count de Rochambeau, Commander-in-chief; Chevalier de Chastellux, Major-General; M. de Choicy, Brigadier of the forces; Charles and Alexandre, Chevaliers de Lainoth, Charles was Adjuant-General; Duke de Louzun; Lieutenant-General Baron de Viomenil; Count de Vio Menil; Count de Lauberbiere; Count de Baular; Major-General and Chevalier de Beville. Two Brothers Berchier, Sub-Lieutenant after General of Cavalry Killamaire, and Count de Fersen, Count Charles de Dumas and Count Matthieu Dumas.

The summits of the Greenburgh hill command a variety of beautiful prospects, in which long reaches of the East River, Bronx valley and Scarsdale, form the principal features. In the south-east corner of Greenburgh is situated Greenville, where there is a Dutch Reformed church, and a few scattered dwellings.

The Dutch Church of this place was first organized in 1842, under the pastoral charge of the Rev. V. M. Hulbert of Yonkers, and incorporated on the 3d of December, 1842, by the title of the "Minister, Elders and Deacons of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of Greenville, in the town of Greenburgh." First elders, John Dusenberry and Charles Dusenberry; first deacons, Ichabod Smith and Benjamin Carpenter.

#### LIST OF MINISTERS.

MR. HULBERT WAS SUCCEEDED BY THE REV. ABEL T. STEWART.

A. T. STEWART, dismissed from Greenville and Bronxville, July 23d, 1852.

JOSEPH A. COLLIER, installed over Greenville and Bronxville "1st Sabbath of October," 1852. Dismissed May 14, 1855.

AARON MARCELLUS, installed over Greenville and Bronxville, July 17, 1856, and dismissed August 24, 1859. During his pastorate Bronxville was set off, and thenceforth Greenville had its own pastor.

C. R. V. ROMONAT, installed over Greenville only, Feb. 29, 1860. Dismissed April 16, 1861.

JOHN H. PITCHER, installed Dec. 10, 1861. Dismissed April 15, 1873.

RICHARD L. SCHOONMAKER, installed May 19, 1874. Is still pastor.

<sup>a</sup> McDonald MSS. in possession of Geo. H. Moore, Lib. of N. Y. Hist. Soc.

<sup>b</sup> Upcott Cuttings, vol. iv, 1770, 1777, 1780, vol. viii, vol. vi, 1780.

"The township of Greenburgh is situated 27 miles north of New York, 135 south of Albany, and 5 miles west of White Plains: bounded north by Mount Pleasant, east by White Plains and Scarsdale, South by Yonkers, and west by the Hudson. Saw Mill creek, (Nepera), runs south on the west part, Bronx creek, (Aquehung,) along the east line, and there are some branches also which supply mill seats."

The general surface of this town is hilly, but not mountainous. It is richly and beautifully interspersed with hills, valleys and streams of water. The hills are most of them good and suitable for cultivation. The soil in general is gravelly clay, and sandy loam, producing all kinds of fruit and grass in plenty.

There are some valuable quarries on the banks of the Hudson that yield great quantities of beautiful building stones. The forests are principally of oak, chesnut, hickory, ash and walnut. Among the mineral productions may be mentioned the Dolomitic marble, which occurs in various places; also several localities of feldspar, especially in the vicinity of Tarrytown.



# THE TOWN

## OF

# HARRISON.

---

Harrison, sometimes called "The Purchase" and "Harrison's Precinct," is situated three miles east of the village of White Plains, distant thirty miles from New York, and one hundred and thirty-four miles from Albany; bounded northerly by North Castle, east and southerly by Rye, west by Mamaroneck, White Plains and North Castle. Its length north and south is about nine miles, and its medial width near three miles; but like most of the other towns in this county, its form is irregular—having no right lines for its boundaries. Prior to 1702 this town formed a part of Rye, but was organized as a separate township on the seventh of March, 1788.

The first proprietor of this land of whom anything is known, was Shanarocke or Shanarockwell, Sagamore of Poningoe, who with other Indians in 1661 conveyed to John Budd, of Southhold, Long Island, "one track of land lying on the mayn called Apawammeis"—"*also range, feeding and grasse for cattell, twenty English miles northward into the country.*" In fact, the Indian territory of "Weecquaesqueck," which included Poningoe, was to the northward an unknown and limitless forest waste commonly styled "*The Wilderness*," held principally by roaming clans of the great Mohegan or "Enchanted wolf tribe."

In 1666 Sanarocke and others conveyed to John Budd a tract of land, between Blind Brook and Mamaroneck River extending north sixteen miles (English miles) from Westchester path up into the country. Under these and other purchases the inhabitants of Rye subsequently claimed the whole territory, consisting of all that tract of land since known as Harrison's Purchase—situated above Westchester Path between Blind Brook and Mamaroneck River, and extending as far north as Rye Pond;



a demand which the Governor of New York refused, as we shall see presently, to sanction.

From Shanarocke the territory ranging north of Westchester Path appears to have passed into the possession of Pathunck or Pathung, Indian sachem, who styles himself, 'the true owner and proprietor thereof; for upon the first day of February, A.D. 1695, we find the latter conveying the present township to John Harrison, in the following manner:

#### INDIAN DEED FOR HARRISON.

"This indenture, made the 24th day of January, and in the seventh year of the reign of William the Third of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., &c., and in the year of our Lord God 1695, witnesseth, that, I, underwritten Pathungo, the true owner and proprietor of a certain part or parcel of land situate, lying, and being in the county of Westchester, and province of New York, by these presents, further manifested to Christian people, to whom this deed of conveyance may any ways concern: *know ye* that I, the said Pathungo, the true owner and proprietor of the above named tract or parcel of land, upon good reasons and consideration moving hereunto, but more especially for a valuable consideration of £40 current money in hand paid before the en sealing of these presents, hath granted, bargained, made over, confirmed and sold, and do by these presents grant, bargain, make over and confirm, and fully, freely, and thereby, unto John Harrison, of Flushing, in Queens county, on Nassau Island, in the province aforesaid, all that aforesaid tract or parcel of land aforesaid, being butted and bounded, as followeth—that is to say, westwardly upon a certain river, commonly called and known by the name of Mamarranack River, and so stretching eastwardly to a certain brook called by the name of Blind Brook, southwardly by the lands of John Budd, as appears by certain marked trees, near unto Westchester old road, and northwardly to certain ponds called by the name of Rye Ponds, together with all rights, members, jurisdictions, ways, commodities, advantages, together with all meadows, woods, underwoods, liberties, franchises, privileges, and singular appurtenances to the said tract or parcel of land belonging or in any ways appertaining, *to have and to hold* the said tract or parcel of land, according to the butts and bounds above mentioned, and recited to the only proper use or uses of him, the said John Harrison, his heirs and assigns forever; and the said Pathungo, for himself, his heirs, successors, and assigns, that at the time of the signing and en sealing of these presents, hath full power and lawful authority the land and premises to sell and confirm, and that the same is truly acquitted and discharged and sufficiently saved and kept harmless of and from all manner of former bargains, sales, grants, or any other incumbrances whatsoever, had made, done, or suffered to be done by the said Pathungo, his heirs, successors, or assigns, or any other person or persons whatsoever, by, from, or under him, Christian or Indian, whereby the said John Harrison, his heirs or assigns, shall or may be annoyed or ejected out of the possession thereof; and the said Pathungo, for himself, his heirs, successors, and assigns, all the said tract or parcel of land, with every part and parcel thereof, unto the above said John Harrison, his heirs, executors, administrators and assigns, against all manner of Indians, shall and will warrant,

and forever defend, by these presents. In witness whereof, the said Pathungo hath set his hand and seal this day and year first above written.

PATHUNGO, his marke.

Signed, sealed, and delivered in the presence of us, Charles Morgan, his marke, Nicolas Haight and James Clement. Moreover, before signing and sealing hereof, the said Pathungo doth reserve, liberty for his use, such *white-wood trees as shall be found suitable to make canoes of*. This may certify any whom it may concern, that on the first day of February, 1695-6, appeared before me, Thomas Willett, Esq., one of his Majesties' justices for the province of New York, Pathungo, the within mentioned Indian who did then and there acknowledge the within conveyance or deed of sale to be his free and voluntary act and deed, as witness my hand.

THOMAS WILLET.

This may certify whom it may concern, that we Indians, whose names are now underwritten, do own to have received full satisfaction of the within mentioned John Harrison for all the within mentioned tract of land being butted and bounded as within specified. As witness hereof, we have hereunto set our hands and seals this 15th day of February, in the year of our Lord God 1695-6.

BETTY PATHUNGO, her marke,

PATHUNGO WAPPATOE his marke,

ELIAS JOZES PATHUNGO ASKAMME, her marke,

CHRISHOAM PATHUNGO, her marke,

PORIGE, his marke.

ELAAS AROWASH, ARAWASKA's wives, HANNAH, her marke, Ingen.

Signed, sealed and delivered in presence of JAMES MOTT, SAMUEL PALMER, JOSEPH HORTON, the marke of AKABASKA.<sup>a</sup>

The white-wood trees, referred to in the above deed by the sachem Pathungo, are the *Liriodendron tulipifera* of Linnæus, from the trunk of which the Indians manufactured their canoes; hence it was commonly called by them "canoe wood."

"Whoever (remarks Mr. Downing) has once seen the tulip tree in a situation where the soil was favorable to its free growth, can never forget it; with a clean trunk, straight as a column for forty or fifty feet, surmounted by a fine ample summit of rich green foliage. It is, in our estimation, decidedly the most *stately* tree in North America. When standing alone, and encouraged in its lateral growth, it will indeed often produce a lower head—but its tendency is to rise; and it only exhibits itself in all its stateliness and majesty, when, supported on such a noble columnar trunk, it towers far above the heads of its neighbors of the park or forest. Even when at its loftiest elevation, its large specious blossoms—which, from their form, one of our poets has likened to a chalice—

———"Through the verdant maize.

The tulip tree

Its golden chalice of't triumphantly displays—*Pickering*.

<sup>a</sup> Indian deeds warrants of survey, Albany Rec. Lib. i. 4.

jut out from amid the tufted canopy in the month of June, and glow in richness and beauty. This tree was introduced into England about 1668, and is now, we are informed, to be found in almost every gentleman's park on the continent of Europe, so highly is it estimated as an ornamental tree of the first class."<sup>a</sup>

We hope that the numerous specimens of this noble tree yet standing in Westchester county, may be sacredly preserved from the barbarous infliction of the axe, which has heretofore despoiled without mercy so many of our majestic forest trees.

The next notice of the purchase occurs in the following warrant for its survey, A. D. 1695-6.

*By his Excellency the Governor in Council, &c.*—You are hereby required to survey and lay out for John Harrison, a certain tract of land in Westchester county which he hath purchased by virtue of a license, bearing date the second day of August last past, bounded to the south by the trees of Mr. Budd's purchase, west by Mamaroneck river, eastwardly by Blind brook, and north by Rye-pond, and this shall be to you a sufficient warrant.

BENJAMIN FLETCHER to ANTHONY GRAHAM.

Surveyor General, by order of Council.

Upon the 25th of June, 1696, the Indian purchase was confirmed by royal letters patent under the great seal, to William Nicolls, John Harrison and others.

The patentees yielding and paying therefore the annual quit rent of twenty shillings, on the festival of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary, commonly called Lady Day, after the following manner—

#### ROYAL PATENT FOR HARRISON'S PURCHASE.

William the third by the Grace of God King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. To all to whom these Presents shall come sendeth greeting, *Whereas* our Loving Subjects *William Nicolls, Esq., Captaine Ebenezer Wilson, David Jamison, John Harrison and Samuel Height*, have by their Petition Presented unto our Trusty and well beloved Benjamin Fletcher, our Captaine Generall and Governor in Cheife of our Province of New Yorke and Territoryes Depending thereon in America, &c. Prayed our grant and Confirmation of a certaine Tract of Land in our *County of Westchester* beginning at a certaine White ash Tree marked with three notches standing in the East side of *Mamerranek River* and thence by marked Trees it runs South sixty-five Degrees and thirty minutes Easterly fifty-six chains to a black oake one of the marked Trees of *Joseph Budd's Purchase* standing neere Westchester Path marked

<sup>a</sup> Downing's Landscape Gardening, p. 197, 8, 9. There is a fine specimen of this noble tree on the property of Elbert Roosevelt, Esq., Pelham.

with three Notches and thence by the marked Trees of *Joseph Budd's Purchase* standing neer Westchester Path aforesaid to an Elm Tree of the West side of *blind brooke* and a white ash on the East side of the said brook marked with three Notches and thence by the East side of the said brooke to the head thereof to a Chesnut Tree marked with three Notches and the Letters E W and H, thence North to a whitewood Tree marked and thence by marked Tree West to Rye Ponds thence including the said Ponds South to the head of Mamerranek River which Runns on the West side of Browns Point and thence by Mamerranek River and the East Bounds of Richbells Patent to the Place where began Bound-ed East by blinde Brooke and vacant land North by Vacent Land West by Mamerroneck River and South by Budd and Jones Morgans Purchase, which Reasonable request Wee being Willing to Grant, Know Yee that of our Special Grace Certaine knowledge and meere mocon we have given Granted, Ratified and Confirmed and by these Presents do for us our Heirs and *Successours*, Give, Grant, Ratifye and Confirme unto our said loving Subjects William Nicolls, Ebenezer Wilson, David Jamison, John Harrison and Samuell Height all the aforedrecited Certaine Tract of Land within our said County of Westchester and within the Limites and Bounds aforesaid together with all and Singular the weeds underwoods Trees Timber feedings Pastures, Meadows Marshes, Swamps Ponds Pools Waters Watercourses Rivers, Rivoletts Runns brooks Streams fishing fouling hunting and hawking and all other Profites, benefits Priviledges Libertys Advantages Hereditaments and Appurtenances whatsoever to the aforedrecited Certaine Tract of Land within the Limites and Bounds aforemencioned belonging or in any wayes appertaining *To have and to hold* all the aforesaid Certain Tract of Land together with all and Singular the Woods, Underwoods, Trees, Timber, feedings, Pastures Meadows Marshes Swamps Ponds Pools Waters Watercourses Rivers Rivoletts, Runns, Brooks Streams fishing fouling hunting and hawking and all other Profites benefites, Priviledges Libertys Advantages Hereditaments and Appurtenances whatsoever to the aforedrecited Certaine Tracts of Land within the Limites and Bounds aforesaid belonging or in any ways appertaining unto them the said William Nicolls, Ebenezer Wilson David Jamison John Harrison and Samuell Height their Heirs and Assignes to the only Propper use benefite and behoofe of them the said William Nicolls, Ebenezer Wilson, David Jamison, John Harrison and Samuel Height their Heirs and Assignes forever without any Lett, Hindrance, Molestacon or Right to be had or Reserved upon Pretence of Joynt Tennancy or Survivorship any thing Contained in this our Grant to the Contrary in any wayes notwithstanding To be holden of us our Heirs and Successours in free and Comon Soccage as of our Mannour of East Greenwich in our County of Kent within our Realme of England Yeelding Rendring and Paying therefore yearly and every Year unto us our Heirs and Successours the Annual and Yearly Rent of twenty Shilling, Curtt money of our said Province at our City of New Yorke on the feast day of the Annunciation of our blessed Virgin Mary in Lieu and Steade of all other Rents, Dues Dutyes Services and Demands whatsoever. *In testimony* whereof we have Caused the Great Seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed *Witnesse* our Trusty and well beloved Benjamin Fletcher our Captain Generall and Governour in Chief of our Province of New Yorke and the Territoryes and Tracts of Land Depending thereon in America & Vice Admirall of the same our Lieut and



Commander in Chief of the Militia and of all the forces by Sea and Land within our Colony of Connecticut and of all the ports and Places of Strength within the same at our Fort in New Yorke the twenty fifth day of June in the eighth year of our Reigne annoq Don 1696. Ben fletcher. By his Excelt Command

DAVID JAMISON D. *Secry.*

I do hereby certify the foregoing to be a true Copy of the Original Record. Words *East side* 30th Line page 36 written on a razure. Compared therewith by me.

LEWIS A. SCOTT,  
Secretary.<sup>a</sup>

"By this summary measure," says Baird, "the people of Rye were despoiled of a most important part of their rightful possessions. It was a loss felt by each proprietor, for each had an interest in the undivided lands, to the distribution of which he looked forward as a provision for his children. The only show of reason for this act of spoliation, was in the fact, that the inhabitants of Rye were as yet without a patent for their lands under the Government of New York. In 1685, Governor Dongan had issued a proclamation to the inhabitants of Rye and Bedford, requiring them to appear before him, and prove their title to the lands upon which they were seated. This summons, it appears, had not been obeyed. The sympathies of the people were with the colony from which they came, and to which they yet hoped permanently to belong. Their rights, besides, had been amply recognized by Connecticut, and they doubtless saw no propriety in the requirement to obtain a patent from New York."<sup>b</sup> The whole transaction, Baird attributes to the unscrupulous conduct of Governor Fletcher, who he declares was notorious for the extravagance with which he disposed of the public lands.

"The people of Rye," continues Baird, "when they heard of Harrison's design, doubtless used every means within their reach to prevent its execution. One of their number, the grandson of the original purchaser of Budd's Neck, was especially earnest in opposing the grant, on the ground that it conflicted with the rights acquired by his ancestor. Harrison's petition to the Council represented that he had bought 'a tract of vacant and unappropriated, uncultivated land in ye County of Westchester, bounded on the north by Rye Pond, and on the east by Blind Brook, on the west by Mamaroneck River, and on the south by the land of Joseph Budd. At a Council held at his Majesty's fort in New York the 13th of February, 1695-96,' Harrison's petition was referred to the Attorney General, Major Austin Graham, Surveyor-General, Justice Theals, Joseph Purdy and Joseph Horton, or any three of

<sup>a</sup> Received for William Nicolls, Esq., and 6th Book of Patent, (Albany,) No. vi, p. 36-38. The *Albany Records*, say 5th of June, 1695. The original document is in the possession of Andrew Carpenter, of Rye, 1660-1870, by Rev. Charles W. Baird.

<sup>b</sup> Hist. of Rye, 1660-1870, by Rev. Charles W. Baird.

them, 'to inquire into the manner of circumstances of said land, and make report.' Their report, dated February 17th, states that 'Humphrey Underhill appeared in behalf of Joseph Budd, son and heir to John Budd deceased, and produced an Indian Grant dated December 8, 1661, alleging that the same did contain the lands mentioned.' The committee found the deed to contain a description of 'a tract of land called Apawanis, bounded on the east by Mackquam River, on the south by the sea against Long Island, on the west by Poccottsewack River, and on the north by marked trees near Westchester Path; together with range for feeding and range for cattle, and to fell trees twenty miles north.'

This land, they say, is altogether disclaimed by Harrison; the tract purchased by him lying north of said marked trees. Underhill was asked whether he had any other objection to advance, and replied that he had at home an Indian deed which justified Budd's claim to the soil for sixteen miles north of the marked trees; but he did not bring it along with him, for it was old and spoiled, being dated in 1666; but he had a copy of the deed, which he gave to Colonel Heathcote, who left it before the Governor and Council. The committee could not examine this paper, but humbly referred the matter to the Council.<sup>a</sup>

The document which Underhill thus unfortunately failed to produce was undoubtedly the deed of April 29th, 1666, by which Shanarocke and others conveyed a tract between Blind Brook and Mamaroneck River, extending 'sixteen English miles from Westchester Path up into the country.'

And it was also, as we have seen, to all appearance the same tract which, four years earlier, June 2, 1662, the purchasers of Peningo Neck, Disbrow, Coe, and Studwell, had bought together with Budd. Both parties, the inhabitants of Rye in general and the proprietor of Budd's Neck, were now to lose a territory for which, had they claimed it jointly and without dispute among themselves, they could certainly have made a stronger plea. As it was, no regard seems to have been paid by the Council to either claim. The lands were granted to Harrison, and the people of Rye, 'revolted' back to Connecticut.

The individuals to whom this grant was made, were William Nicolls, David Jamison, Ebenezer Wilson, John Harrison,<sup>b</sup> and Samuel Haight. Nicolls was a member of Colonel Fletcher's Council; Jamison was clerk of the Council; Wilson was Sheriff of the City of New York, and a prominent merchant. All these men stood high in the governor's

<sup>a</sup> County Records at White Plains, vol. B. pp. 259-261.

<sup>b</sup> In his petition for a patent, he signs his name John *Harrison*.

favor, and were largely concerned in the land grants which he made.<sup>a</sup> Of course the humble farmers of Peningo Neck had no influence to weigh against the interests of a company so powerfully manned.

Under this grievance, the town of Rye *seceded*. It renounced the authority of the provincial government, and returned to the colony of Connecticut. We do not greatly wonder at the secession. The provocation was great, and the temptation strong. It is more surprising that the Connecticut Government should have received the rebellious town. But there was much bitter feeling just at this time between the two colonies, growing out of the unsettled state of the question as to their boundaries. We shall see in the next chapter what passed between the colonial governments relative to this secession. Meanwhile, for four years Rye was a part of Connecticut. From 1697 to 1700, inclusive, the inhabitants designated themselves as living in Rye, 'in the county of Fairfield, in the colony of Connecticut.'<sup>b</sup> They applied to the General Court at Hartford for the settlement of any matters in dispute, and the Court seems to have considered and disposed of such applications precisely as in the case of any town east of Byram River.

We have a curious account of the state of feeling among the good people of Rye during this interval. It occurs in a letter of Colonel Heathcoate, written after a visit to Rye, the object of which was to persuade the malcontents to submit with a good grace. Colonel Heathcoate writes to the Governor and Council:—

WESTCHESTER, *Feb'y* 19, 1696-97.

"GENTLEMEN,—I had long ere this given you an account of my Rye Expedition, had I not at my coming here been kept Prisoner a Fortnight or three weeks by reason of the weather and a nimble distemper; \* \* \* \* from which so soon as I was disengaged I proceeded and called a meeting of ye Inhabitants, taking particular care to have the Ringleaders summonsed; and enquired of them the reason of the Revolt. They told me that the grant to Harrison and his associates was so great an Injury to 'em, that their town was nothing without it, and that they had as good loose all as that; and a great Deal of Stuff to that effect. I asked them why they did not take out a patent<sup>c</sup> when it was tendered them. They said they never heard that they could have one. I told them that their argument might pass with such as knew nothing of ye matter, but that I knew

<sup>a</sup> Jamison is stated to have been 'first in Col. Fletcher's confidence and favor, above all others, and enriched himself by the grants of land sold by Col. Fletcher, he having a share for brokerage.' (Documents, etc., Colonial History of New York, vol. iv. p. 400.) He afterwards became Chief Justice of New Jersey, and later, Attorney-General of New York. Nicols, a man of great influence and highly connected, was an ardent supporter of Fletcher. Captain Ebenezer Wilson was a prominent merchant of New York, sheriff of the city at the time, and afterwards mayor. (Documents, etc., vol. iv., pp. 877, 555; 25 seq.; 769, 783, etc.)

<sup>b</sup> Some twenty deeds on record, within these years, are thus dated. Those entered immediately before and after are dated 'in the county of Westchester, and Province of New York.' (Town Records of Rye, vol. B. pp. 72-168.)

<sup>c</sup> The granting of patents was a favorite mode of raising money with the Provincial Governors of New York. New England men ever regarded it as a most unjust exaction. Sir Edmund Andros, who was made Governor of New York and New England, in 1688-89, de-

better ; for that to my certain knowledge they might have had a patent had they not rejected it ; and that it was so far from being done in haste or in the Dark, that not a boy in the whole Town, nor almost in the County, but must have heard of it ; and that I must always be a witness against them, not only of the many messages they have had from the Government about it, but likewise from myself. At which they began to be divided amongst themselves, some saying, It was true ; others, that those the Crown had employed had proved false to 'em. After a great deal of time spent in argument on this and other subjects, I endeavored to make them sensible of ye risque they run in this affair. But they seemed Deaf to all I could say, arguing that the Government of Connecticut had taken them under their Protection, and shewed me a blind sort of a Paper from under Kembell's <sup>a</sup> hand to yt effect. When I found I could do no good with the herd, I talked separately with some of ye Hottest of 'em ; which seemed to take some Impression ; and I desired them to talk with their neighbors, and lett me know their minds against I came y<sup>t</sup> way again, that I might be able to serve them before it was run so far that it would be out of my Power.

'I told them as to the last purchase, wherein I was concerned, if that gave them any dissatisfaction, I would not only quit my claim, but use my interest in getting them any part of it they should desire. Their answer was, they valued not that ; it was Harrison's patent that was their ruin.

'I intend, God willing, before my return to Yorke, to throw one journey more away upon them, tho' I despair of Successe therein. However my utmost Endeavors shall not be wanting therein. I am, Gentlemen, in much sincerity, your most obed<sup>t</sup> and affect<sup>te</sup> serv<sup>t</sup>

CALEB HEATHCOTE.<sup>b</sup>

The inhabitants of Rye obtained no redress. For four years they enjoyed the happiness of belonging once more to the 'land of steady habits.' And then in 1700, the king's order in Council placed them back within the jurisdiction they had renounced, 'forever thereafter to be and remain under the government of the Province of New York.' The people acquiesced in this decision ; and the following action of the town is the record of the last protest made against an unrighteous procedure to which they were obliged in the end to submit:—

'At a lawful towne meeting held in Rye, September the 29, 1701, Deliverance Browne, senior, is chosen to goe down to New York to make the town's aggrivances knowne unto the Governor and Council, and alsoe to make inquiry con-

---

clared, on arriving here, that the titles of the colonists to their lands were of no value at all. Indian deeds, he said, were no better than the scratch of a bear's paw. 'Not the fairest purchases and the most ample conveyances from the natives,' remarks Trumbull, 'no dangers, disbursements, nor labors in cultivating a wilderness, and turning it into orchards, gardens, and pleasant fields, no grants by charter, nor by legislatures constituted by them, no declarations of pretending kings, nor of his then present majesty, were pleas of any validity or consideration with Sir Edmund and his minions. The purchasers and cultivators, after fifty and sixty years' improvement, were obliged to take out patents for their estates. For these, in some instances, a fee of fifty pounds was demanded. Writs of intrusion were issued against persons of principal character who would not submit to such impositions, and their lands were patented to others.' (*History of Connecticut*, i, 373.)

<sup>a</sup> I.e., *Kimberly's*; see page 94.

<sup>b</sup> N. Y. Col. MSS., Albany: vol. xli. p. 36.



cerning the Claim that John Harrison makes to our Lands, and to use what methods he shall see good for securing the town's interest.'<sup>a</sup>

'At a lawful town meeting held in Rye, February, 1702-3, the town hath by a major vote chosen Capt. Theale and George Lane, senior, and Isaac Denham, to forwarne any person or persons that shall lay out any Lands within the town's bounds without the town's approbation or order: that is to say, within the township of Rye.'<sup>b</sup>

The purchase was owned in common by the five patentees, who soon divided it up among themselves in equal shares.

The following advertisement appeared in the *New York Gazette and Weekly Mercury*, Monday, March 18, 1771:—

'If any person has in his keeping the Partition Deed that was made between the Patentees of Harrison's Purchase, in the County of Westchester, and will notify where he may be applied to, by a Letter to the Printer hereof, he will afford a great Pleasure to the Proprietors, and may expect a handsome Reward for his Trouble. The Patentees were Harrison, Nicolls, Haight, Wilson, and William Jamison. The deed must have been made about the Year 1700, and is likely to be among some old Papers about Flushing, on Long Island.'

The deed appears to have come to light hereupon with very little delay—an early proof of the advantage of newspaper advertisement—for on the twenty-eighth of June, 1771, the recovered document was admitted to be recorded; and we have it in full in the Records of the town of Rye, vol. D. pp. 280-283. It sets forth that the tract of land in question was bought by John Harrison in 1695, with funds belonging to his four associates equally with himself, and that the purchase was made in their behalf also 'in a joint and equal right and interest, and not otherwise,' to be held by the five purchasers 'as tenants in common, without any right, claim or demand of survivorship by reason of joint tenancy upon the death of all or any of the said parties.' The Deed is dated November 10, 1700, and is signed by W. Nicolls, Ebenezer Wilson, David Jamison, Samuel Haight, and John Harrison. The following statement is prefixed to Harrison's signature:—

'This may satisfy whom it may concerne that I underwritten doth assign over all my right, title and interest of this deed to Major William Lawrence, his heirs and assigns forever; as witness my hand this twenty-third day of May, 1702.

JOHN HARRISON.'<sup>c</sup>

Little is left on record relative to the Harrison family, who have given name to this township. John Harrison, of Boston, was a freeman of that place in 1644; and had a son, John, born in 1652. In 1655, John Harrison appears to have been a freeholder of Newtown, Long Island, from whence he removed to Flushing. This individual was the father of John Harrison, the above mentioned patentee, also of Samuel Harrison. The latter left two daughters, co-heiresses; Hannah, the oldest, married Joshua Cornell, father of the present John Cornell, of North

<sup>a</sup> Town and Proprietors' Meeting Book, No. C. p. 20.

<sup>b</sup> *Ibid* p. 13.

<sup>c</sup> Baird's History of Rye, 1660-1870.

Castle ; and Sarah, who married Gilbert Palmer, father of John Palmer. "John Harrison sold his interest in the Purchase to William Lawrence, in 1702. Ebenezer Wilson and Margaret, his wife, conveyed their interest to Philip Rokeby, June 12, 1708.<sup>a</sup> Rokeby having married Elizabeth Wilson daughter and only heir at law of said Ebenezer and Margaret. By will dated, June 17, 1709, Philip Rokeby devised all his estate to his wife Elizabeth.<sup>b</sup> Elizabeth Rokeby afterwards married David Compton. The latter by power of Attorney on the 30th day of Jan. 1718, conveyed to Elizabeth Compton and Ebenezer Wilson.<sup>c</sup> By will dated, April 3, 1744, Elizabeth Compton devised all her real estate, etc., to Sarah and Mary Canon, children of John and Jerusha Canon, remainder over, etc.<sup>d</sup> Sarah Canon died within age and without issue, whereas her sister Mary Canon, married John Pintard, had a son named also John Pintard, and died aged fifty-three, leaving no other children. By his last will dated March 16, 1842, John Pintard devised all his real and personal property to Andrew Warner, in trust for his daughter, Louise H. Servoss. Testator died, June 21, 1844. By deed dated, March 19, 1859, Andrew Warner conveyed all his said trust estate to Louise H. Servoss.<sup>e</sup> Louise H. Servoss by her last will dated, February, 1865, devises all her real estate, etc., to her son and executor, the present Elias Boudinot Servoss, Esq.,<sup>f</sup> of Harlem, N. Y. Thus after a lapse of one hundred and eighty-one years, we find Mr. Servoss representing all the legal rights of Ebenezer Wilson, one of the five patentees of the purchase. William Nicolls, Esq., probably parted with his share soon after 1702.

"The only one of the original patentees who retained his portion was Samuel Haight, the ancestor of a prominent family of the town, in whose possession it remained until a comparatively recent day. Samuel Haight, like Harrison, himself and Lawrence, was a native of Flushing, L. I., and belonged to the Society of Friends. Indeed, nearly all the settlers of this purchase came from Flushing, and other towns of Long Island ; and most of these were of the same religious persuasion. It appears to have been from the first a 'Quaker' settlement ; and from the fact that one of the original patentees was a leading member of that body, we are led to believe that such was designed to be the character of the enterprise from the first.<sup>g</sup> A few of the inhabitants of Rye bought land in

<sup>a</sup> Deed, June 12, 1708, received in New York, June, 1715, Lib. xxviii, p. 163.

<sup>b</sup> Will dated, June 17, 1709, Proved N. Y., Aug. 27, 1711.

<sup>c</sup> Power of Attorney, Jan. 30, 1718. Received, Sept. 17, 1817, N. Y. Lib. cxxiii, p. 87.

<sup>d</sup> Will dated, April 3, 1744. Proved, Oct. 12, 1745.

<sup>e</sup> This deed was received in New York, May 8, 1871.

<sup>f</sup> Will dated, Feb., 1865. Received in Surrogates office, N. Y., May 8, 1871. Letters Test. granted to her executor, E. Boudinot Servoss, Nov. 8, 1871.

<sup>g</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 103.

this section; but in no such number as removed to the White Plains and other purchases."<sup>a</sup>

In 1740, occurs a deed of sale from James de Lancey and Lewis Johnston, to Godfrey Haines, of Rye, which recites Caleb Heathcote's purchase in a certain patent granted to John Harrison and others. Caleb Heathcote appears to have purchased two hundred acres from David Jameson, one of the patentees in 1712.<sup>b</sup>

"Roger Park, of Rye, had acquired lands in Harrison's purchase, which are owned by some of the name at the present day, as early as 1740.<sup>c</sup> Rev. James Wetmore owned a farm in the lower part of the purchase. William Horton owned lands on 'Brown's Point,' near St. Mary's Pond, in 1757.<sup>d</sup> Gilbert Bloomer owned in 1743, a farm which he then sold to Thomas Carpenter, situated where Mr. Charles Park has lately bought."<sup>e</sup>

This beautiful section of Westchester county, which possesses so many attractions and advantages, has become the home of many substantial citizens, who go daily to the city.

Harrison Station on the New York and New Haven Rail Road, is located at the intersection of the road with the great thoroughfare, which under the name of Harrison Avenue and North Street, traverses the entire township. There is a good hotel and post office, and a scattered settlement, including many handsome private residences of New York business men. The distance to the latter place is twenty-two miles, some twenty-two trains running daily, and time estimated at forty-eight minutes.

At the junction of North Street and Locust Avenue, is situated the beautiful stone residence of William Mathews, Esq.

The Cromwells were possessed of considerable landed property in this township at a very early period. The old homestead is located on the south-east side of Rye pond, on the road leading to the Purchase, from North Castle, quite close to the brook which still bears their name.

The several branches of the Cromwell family in America claim descent from the same parent stock as that of the Protector Oliver Cromwell. It is presumed that the ancestor of the American line was Col. John Cromwell, son of Sir Oliver Cromwell, and cousin of the Protector.

The following notice of Col. John Cromwell, occurs in Noble's life of the protector.

"This gentleman was early in the army. In 1624 he went over as a captain in the first regiment of foot, in the forces sent over by King

<sup>a</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 103.

<sup>b</sup> County Records Lib. c. 260.

<sup>c</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 103. Rye Records, c. 170.

<sup>d</sup> Ditto. Rye Records, d. 116, 178.

<sup>e</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 103.

James I, for the recovery of the palatinate ; after this he was a colonel of an English regiment in the service of the United States. Happening to be in England whilst his sovereign, King Charles I, was a prisoner to the Parliament army, and hearing his relation, Oliver, (afterwards lord Protector,) say, 'I think the king the most injured prince in the world,' and putting his hand to his sword, continued, 'but this shall right him,' supposed that his zeal was real, and therefore expressed himself satisfied that it was impossible for him to go those lengths which many others wished to go. For these reasons, when that unfortunate, misguided monarch was (after a pretended trial) condemned to die, and the Prince of Orange taking vast pains to save him, or at least to stay the execution, sent over such relations of the leading men in the army, as he thought could influence them, applied to this gentleman, he very readily undertook the task with the greatest expectation of succeeding in so desirable a business ; wherefore taking credential letters from the States ; which letters, with the King's and Prince of Wale's signet, and both confirmed by the States, offering Oliver his own terms in case he would prevent the fatal sentence from being carried into execution, he hastened to England. He found his cousin Oliver, the Lieutenant-General at home.

It was with difficulty he gained admittance, as he kept his chamber and ordered himself to be denied. Upon his introduction to Oliver, after the usual compliments between relations, he began to mention the the horrid crime intended to be committed ; and after a very free harangue upon the atrocity, the indelible stain it would be to the nation, and in what a light it was beheld upon the continent, added, 'that, of all men living, he thought he would never have had any hand in it, who, in his hearing, had protested so much to the King.' Oliver replied, it was not him, but the army ; and though he did once say such words, yet now times were altered, and Providence seemed to order things otherwise, adding that he had prayed and fasted for the King, but no return that way was yet made to him. Upon which the Colonel stepped a little back and hastily shut the door, which made Oliver supposed he was going to be assassinated ; but the other, taking out his papers, said to him, 'Cousin, this is no time to trifle with words, see here :—it is now in your own power not only to make yourself, but your family, relations, and posterity happy and honorable for ever ; otherwise, as they have changed their name before, from Williams to Cromwell, so now they must be forced to change it again ; for this act will bring such an ignominy upon the whole generation of them, that no time will be able to deface. After a pause Oliver said, 'Cousin, I desire you will give me till night



to consider it, and do you go to your own inn and not to bed till you hear from me.'

"The Colonel retired, and at one o'clock in the morning he received a message that he might go to rest and expect no other answer to carry to the Prince; for the council of officers had been seeking God, as he had also done, and it was resolved by them all that the King must die. With this unhappy message he returned to Holland again, where he continued in that service for many years, perhaps during the remainder of his life. By a letter dated Nov. 18<sup>th</sup>, 1653, from Jongeshall to William, Earl of Nassau, it appears that Col. John Cromwell was then in Holland. Through the ill behavior of his wife Abigail, he was—from the most affluent circumstances—reduced to the brink of ruin. By his wife (continues Noble,) Col. Cromwell had a daughter Joan, baptized Sept. 28, 1634, and perhaps other children."<sup>a</sup>

In 1686, we find John Cromwell<sup>b</sup> of the town of Westchester and Mary his wife, selling lands to Thomas Hunt, Sen., of the West Farms. These lands were situated upon Long Neck, afterwards known as Cromwell's Neck, and now styled Castle Hill Neck.

John Cromwell (the supposed son of Col. John Cromwell,) left issue by his wife Mary, John, from whom the present Oliver Cromwell and Jeremiah of West Farms are descended, and James Cromwell, who was living in 1717. The latter by his wife Anne Godfrey had two sons, John and James. The oldest son John Cromwell was residing upon the property in Harrison at the commencement of the Revolutionary war, for his name occurs in General Washington's military map of the county, dated 1778, as the occupant of the homestead.<sup>c</sup> The present William Cromwell of Harrison is the grandson of the above named John Cromwell.<sup>d</sup>

From an early period, the Thomas family have resided in the eastern part of this town. The first member who purchased land here, was the Hon. John Thomas, son of the Rev. John Thomas, for many years Rector of St. George's church, Hempstead, Long Island (who was ordained deacon and priest by the Bishop of London in 1704 and inducted rector Dec. 27, 1704, and had resided in Philadelphia three years as second minister and school master of Christ church in that city

<sup>a</sup> Noble's Life of Oliver Cromwell, vol. i, 534-8.

<sup>b</sup> John Cromwell (the supposed son of Col. John,) is said to have emigrated from Holland during the time the Dutch held the province.

<sup>c</sup> John Cromwell was taken prisoner by the British and conveyed to New York.

<sup>d</sup> A singular circumstance (illustrative of the strong family likeness which still exists between the English and American branches,) occurred in the village of Westchester a few years since. Oliver Cromwell, a resident blacksmith of that place, was accosted by a friend, who at the same moment presented him a likeness of the Protector; the former (unable to read) involuntarily exclaimed as he gazed upon the portrait, "why there is our old blacksmith himself."

whence he returned to England.) Concerning this individual, Dr. Carmichael in his history of St. George's church, observes, "that he commenced his ministrations there, in the spring of 1705, under the auspices of the society for propagating the gospel in foreign parts. In a letter addressed to the secretary of that society, Oct. 18th, 1724, he says, "Good sir, give my humble duty to the Honorable Society, and assure them of my utmost fidelity, as far as lame limbs and a decrepit state of health will permit. My heart is warm and sound, though lodged, God knows, in a crazy, broken carcase; nay, more, pray tell them that Epaminondas like, I shall fight upon the stumps for that purest and best of Churches, as long as God indulges me with the least ability do it." "After this," continues Dr. Carmichael, "we find no more letters from Mr. Thomas to the Society, whose distinguished ornament he was, and presume from other circumstances, that he died near about that time; but, in the Society's Annual Report, printed in London, Feb. 16th, 1827, we have discovered the following touching memento, viz., a gratuity of £50, to Mrs. Thomas, is voted, the widow of the late Rev. Mr. Thomas, missionary at Hempstead, in New York, in consideration of his long and faithful services, upwards of twenty years."<sup>a</sup>

His eldest son, was the Hon. John Thomas, (already alluded to) first Judge of the county of Westchester, and for many years a representative in the general assembly of the province. This distinguished gentleman was a warm whig, and took an active part in the scenes that preceded the Revolution, on which account he was particularly obnoxious to the enemy. Judge Thomas was seized in his bed by a party of British troops, at 10 o'clock on Sunday morning, March 22d, 1777, and conveyed to New York where he was committed to the provost. Here he lingered until the 2d of May, 1777, when (between four and five o'clock in the morning of that day,) death released him from his sufferings. His remains were interred the following Saturday evening, between seven and eight o'clock in Trinity church yard.<sup>b</sup> "The following is a brief summary," says Dr. Thatcher, of the systematic method adopted and practiced for "the destruction of American prisoners," as taken from the *New London Gazette*, from General Washington's letter of complaint to General Howe, and from the verbal statement of the officers and soldiers who have returned from New York by exchange. They were crowded into the holds of prison ships, where they were almost suffocated for want of air, and into churches, and open sugar houses, etc., without covering or a spark of fire. Their allowance

<sup>a</sup> Carmichael's Hist. of St. George's church, p. 28.

<sup>b</sup> Extracted from James Franklin's Bible.

of provisions and water for three days, was insufficient for one; and in some instances, they were four days entirely destitute of food. The pork and bread, for they had no other sustenance, and even water allowed them were of the worst possible quality, and totally unfit for human beings. A minute detail of their dreadful sufferings, would only serve to harrow up the feelings of surviving friends. As a gross outrage against the principles of humanity, suffice it to say, that in consequence of the most barbarous treatment, not less than fifteen hundred American soldiers, died within a few weeks, brave young men, the pride and shield of our country. After death had released the sufferers, their bodies were dragged out of the prisons and piled up without doors, till enough were collected for a cart load, when they were carted out and tumbled into a ditch, and slightly covered with earth."<sup>a</sup>

By his wife Abigail, the Hon. John Thomas left issue, (beside four daughters,) John Thomas, High Sheriff of Westchester county, in 1778,<sup>b</sup> William Thomas and Major General Thomas Thomas, of Harrison. The latter individual was one of the most prominent whigs of the north, a distinguished military officer,<sup>c</sup> Sheriff of the county, (in 1778) and one of the first members of the State Legislature. The following notice of his capture by the Queen's rangers in 1777, is thus related by Lieutenant Col. Simcoe.

"Before the troops went into winter quarters, it was necessary that sufficient boards should be procured to hut those who were to remain in the vicinity of King's Bridge, and the light troops were of the parties who collected them. Lieut. Colonel Simcoe proposed to General Tryon, who commanded the British, to take down Ward's house,<sup>d</sup> and the buildings in its vicinity; and that, while a covering party should halt there, he would attempt to surprise Col. Thomas, (a very active partizan of the enemy,) and a post of dragoons, nearly twenty miles beyond it. General Tryon acquiesced in the proposal, and directed it to be put in execution, but seemed very doubtful, whether so wary a person as Thomas could be circumvented. Lieut. Colonel Simcoe marched all night, with Emmerick's and the Queen's rangers, and surrounded Thomas' house by daybreak. He never lay at home before that night, and had done so in consequence of the British troops in general being gone into winter quarters, and one of his own spies being deceived, and made to believe that the Queen's rangers were to march to Long Island. One shot was fired from the window, which, unfortunately killed a man by the side of Lieut.

<sup>a</sup> James Thatcher's *Military Journal*, Feb. 1777. p. 77.

<sup>b</sup> This gentleman was the last *High Sheriff* of the county before, and the first appointed after, the war.

<sup>c</sup> General Thomas was elected chairman of Public Safety, in 1776.

<sup>d</sup> See East Chester.

Colonel Simcoe. The house was immediately forced ; and, no resistance being made, the officers shut the doors of the different rooms, to prevent the irritated soldiers from revenging their unfortunate comrade. The man who fired, was the only person killed ; but Thomas, after Lieut. Colonel Simcoe had personally protected him and ensured his safety, jumped out of the window, and, springing over some fences, would have certainly escaped, notwithstanding most of Emmerick's riflemen fired at him, had not an hussar leaped after him and cut at him with his sword, (which he crouched from, and luckily escaped,) when he surrendered. The cavalry proceeded on to the enemy's picquet, at a mile distance. They had been alarmed by the firing, and were formed. They fired their carbines (by which Captain Ogden, of Emmerick's, was wounded,) and fled ; they were pursued, but to no purpose. The troops returned to General Tryon, who was, in person, at Ward's house, and who was much pleased at this mischievous partizan being taken. This march was above fifty miles."<sup>a</sup>

General Thomas was subsequently, paroled and ultimately exchanged. Upon his death, which took place in 1824, the Thomas property in this town passed by will to the heir of his sister, Charity Thomas, who married James Ferris of Throckmorton's Neck. Their grandson Thomas Ferris, is the present proprietor. Of this family is the Hon. Charles G. Ferris, late member of Congress from the city of New York.

The remains of the Thomas family are interred within a neat inclosure, situated on the west side of the estate. Here are a number of memorials inscribed as follows:

SACRED  
to the memory  
of  
MAJOR GENERAL  
THOMAS THOMAS,  
who died on the 29th May,  
A. D. 1824,  
in the 79th year of his age.  
As a soldier of the Revolution of 1776,  
he aided in achieving  
the independence of the  
United States :  
as a member of the Legislature  
of the State of New York,  
he assisted in laying the  
foundation of those institutions  
that are intended to perpetuate the  
Republic.

<sup>a</sup> Simcoe's Military Journal, Bartlett & Welford, N. Y., p. 92, 93.



SACRED  
to the memory of  
CATHARINE THOMAS,  
widow of  
Thomas Thomas,  
who died the 15th day of  
January, A.D. 1825,  
in the 79th year of her age.

SACRED  
to the memory of  
CHARLES FLOYD THOMAS  
son of Thomas Thomas,  
and Catharine Thomas,  
who died on the 2d of  
January, A.D. 1802,  
in the 24th year of his age.

Sacred to the memory  
of  
NANCY THOMAS,  
daughter of  
Thomas Thomas,  
and Catharine Thomas,  
who died in February, 1795,  
aged 19 years.

Also of Gloriana Thomas,  
daughter of Thomas Thomas,  
and Catharine Thomas,  
who died Dec. 19, A.D. 1779,  
aged 7 years.

Any one who is familiar with the origin of family names in England must know that there are many persons with such patronymics as Field, Wood, Hill, &c., who are in no way related to each other. Apparently the former of these has been hereditary in the Flushing family since the conquest,<sup>a</sup> indicating a (so-called) Norman descent. Lancashire seems to have been the English cradle of this race. It is stated in "Burke's Commoners," under the head of Delafield, that Hubertus de la Feld held lands there, (presumably for military services) in the Third of William I. and that others of the name were proprietors in the same bounty during the twelfth and thirteenth centuries. In the "Concher book of Whalley Abbey" which has been published by the Chatham Society is a deed of Adam, son of Henry Delfeld of a house and lands at Falenge in Rochdale, Lancashire, and a quit claim of the same by Adam's son Robert. These documents are not dated; but from surrounding circumstances the time of their execution can be approximately fixed as the middle of the thirteenth century. It was most certainly before the fourteenth, for the Abbey was at the date of these documents at Stanlaw, where its buildings were mostly burnt in 1289, and in 1296 all its community had removed to Whalley. Rochdale stands near the Yorkshire border, and the high road from it to Halifax passes Sowerby in this

<sup>a</sup> See Freeman's Norman Conquest.

county, which is some ten miles from the former town. Sowerby was in the great manor of Wakefield, which was thirty miles in length. The rolls of this manor exist from about the beginning of the fourteenth century. From the earlier part of them, to about 1650 the delfields, or Fields, are repeatedly mentioned. The first entry in 1306, is of a suit of Richard delffeld of Sowerly *vs.* Robert, son of William de Sattonstall. In 1307 Thomas delffeld of Sowerby was a juror, and in the following year Richard, son of Roger delffeld, held that same position. Sowerby was a "graveship" and different members of the family, at various times, held the office there of "prepositus," who was the chief official, as the name implies. It is highly probable that Adam delffeld settled at Sowerby, after selling his estate at Falenge. This is partly confirmed by the reappearance at Sowerby, shortly after, of this rather unusual Christian name. Adam delffeld is mentioned there in 1333, and a little later there were two of the name,—Adam, son of Richard delffeld in 1336, and Adam son of Thomas delffeld in 1349. In this last year an Adam delffeld was chosen "propositus." In 1350 there was an Adam, son of Thomas; and a Thomas, son of Adam.

Down to 1410 the family name is always as above. From that date to 1450, it is sometimes with, and sometimes without the prefix, after which date, this last is finally dropped, and it is simply field till 1570, or so, when the modern spelling came in and it is written ffield, or ffield. The family has disappeared from Sowerby, but on their old estate, the name survives in "Field House," the residence of Col. Stansfeld, built about a century and a half since. Adjoining it is "old Field House," once the home of the family, and erected probably in the sixteenth century. An addition in the rear, of a later period, has on it the date 1630. It is a large edifice resembling the manor houses of that time, now somewhat modernized and divided up, giving shelter to half a dozen families. About a quarter of a mile from this building formerly stood on higher ground a more ancient one, called "Upper Field House," which was pulled down about fifty years since by Col. Stansfeld's father. "Field House," Sowerby, is mentioned in the Wakefield Manor rolls as early as 1440, and in 1500 there appear to have been there, two buildings of the name, one of which is distinguished as "Nether Field House."

From Sowerby the family spread itself around the neighborhood, and during the latter half of the 14th, 15th and 16th centuries they are found at various places within a radius of twelve or fifteen miles, and mostly at or near Halifax, Bedford and Wakefield.

William Field, the father of the emigrant, resided at Sowerby, where his two eldest children were born; but removed to North Ouram, a

place but a few miles distant, and in the immediate vicinity of Halifax, in 1593, 4, or 5. Sir Richard Sattonstall, who, in connection with Winthrop, got up the well known expedition to New England in 1630, then resided at an estate called Rookes' in Hipperholme, a township adjoining North Ouram. Many of his neighbours were among the 1700 persons who formed this party. Among them were the Rev. Richard Denton, curate of Coley chapel, whose ministry embraced Hipperholme, and North Ouram, and Matthew Mitchell, who was a witness to the will of Susan Field, mother of Robert, in 1622-3. Both of these settled at Hempstead, L. I., in 1643 or 4. No list of the members of the Winthrop and Sattenstall expedition exists, but there is every reason to suppose that Robert Field was of the party. For the next few years the records of the New England colonists are extremely meagre and his<sup>a</sup> movements cannot be traced, but shortly after the settlement of Rhode Island, viz.: in 1638, his name appears among the inhabitants of Newport, and he is also mentioned there in the three following years. In the list of 1638 we find John Hicks, as well as Robert Field, at Newport; and they are again found together among the original patentees of Flushing, L. I., in 1645. There can be no moral doubt, under the circumstances, that the two residents of Newport, and the two patentees of Flushing, were the same individuals.

The right of the family to the arms they bear,—sable, a chevron between 3 garbs argent,—was finally acknowledged by the heralds in 1558, when a crest was granted to John Field of East Ardsley, near Wakefield, who has been styled "the protocopsmican of England." The three wheat-sheaves on a black shield, was borne by the Fields from about the time when coat-armour was introduced in England, viz.: the 13th century, as is shown by the account of the movements in Madley church, to be found in "Richard Symond's Diary," published by the Camden Society.

The Field family were also among the early settlers of Harrison Purchase. Anthony Field having removed from Flushing, Long Island, to this town, in 1725. The name of the ancient family is of frequent occurrence in Domesday book and is there often interchanged with Lea, a word bearing the same signification.

Benjamin the son of Anthony married for his first wife, Hannah, daughter of John Brown of Flushing; they were married at Flushing, Nov. 30, 1691, and left with other sons, the aforesaid Anthony, who married Hannah, daughter of William Burling of Flushing. Their descendants are

---

<sup>a</sup> He must not be confused with Robert Field of Boston, who married Mary, daughter of Christopher Stanley, and had a large family of children, born from 1644 to 1665.

very numerous in the county. Anthony's brother Robert, born in Flushing, Sept. 7, 1707, removed to Greenwich, Connecticut, and he married his second wife Abegail, daughter of Joseph Sutton. They had a son Uriah, who married Mary Quimby, at Harrison Purchase, January 18, 1764. This forms the other branch of the Westchester family.

Benjamin married Hannah Brown, and left, with other sons, Anthony—who removed from Flushing to this town in 1725. He was the father of six sons; Thomas, Samuel, Benjamin, William, Moses and John; whose descendants are very numerous in the county.

Brown's Point, now a part of the town of Harrison, but bordering on White Plains, appears to have been held at first, as a tract distinct from other purchases. The point was formed by the junction of Mamaroneck River, which has its principal source in St. Mary's Lake, and Buckhout's saw mill stream, which has its origin near Rye Pond in the northern part of the town.

On the west side of Purchase Street, and near its junction with the White Plains road, is situated the "Ophir Farm," once the property of Mr. Benjamin Halladay. Near the junction of Purchase Street and Harrison Avenue, is located the Harrison post office. In this small hamlet is a Methodist Episcopal church. "As early as 1843, the Rev. H. A. Mead, local elder, commenced preaching here in a school-house, and in a private dwelling. The church was built in 1855-6. This church is connected with the village Methodist Episcopal church, of White Plains; Mr. Mead still continues in charge."<sup>a</sup>

In the vicinity of Harrison Avenue is the old Thomas' estate. The small settlement of Purchase, commenced by the Friends as early as 1719, and frequently called *Rye Woods*, is pleasantly situated in the northern part of the town, on the south-east side of Rye Pond. It contains two meeting houses belonging to the Society of Friends, a store and a post office, upon the road from Rye to Bedford; passing through this place, are several substantial farm houses.

#### THE FRIENDS.

From Flushing, probably, the Society of Friends spread at a very early day to this place. Rye was in regular communication with Long Island, in 1739; a ferry was established between it and Oyster Bay, Long Island. This ferry continued in use till the latter part of the century. A map of Rye in 1797 shows the house at the ferry near the mouth of Byram River.<sup>b</sup> It must have been a place of frequent resort

<sup>a</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 358.

<sup>b</sup> Baird's History of Rye.



as a store was kept at the house by the ferry, and which was well patronized by the farmers on King street and the Plains, and was quite a resort for their wives and daughters, for the purchase of "calicoes, ribbands, fans, gloves, necklaces, looking glasses, etc," which were kept for sale here.

The first Friends Meeting House was erected here in 1727, upon ground given for that purpose by Anthony Field, "who had removed hither two years before from Flushing, Long Island, and who owned the adjoining farm."<sup>b</sup>

This seems to have been the favorite settlement of the Friends. They were shamefully persecuted in Connecticut and Massachusetts; from there driven to Rhode Island, from whence they had to fly to Long Island. Even there they could find no rest, for the Governor of New York issued an order forbidding them to worship even in a barn. So they crossed by means of the ferry to Rye, and settled principally in Harrison; here they were hemmed in by their old enemies, the Dutch on the Hudson River, and the unforgiving and intolerant Puritans on the East. They thus extended up this narrow strip of country, and the family names of the first settlers can be traced for over one hundred miles north.

Samuel Haight, of Flushing, one of the five patentees of Harrison Purchase, was a Friend. When after a lapse of twenty years or more a considerable emigration from Long Island to the Purchase took place, it consisted mainly, if not wholly, of families of Friends.

In 1706 they appear to have begun to settle in Rye, for Mr. Muirson, Missionary of the Gospel Propagation Society, tried to win them over to his faith, but failed. Mr. Bridge, his successor, reported seven families of Quakers in his parish in 1710, and four or five families inclining to them.

One of these, probably, was the family of Captain John Clapp, who came to Rye as early as 1705. In 1718 he was called a reputed Quaker.

From Mr. Bridge's account, it seems that in the winter of 1710, an attempt was made by certain persons to form themselves into a society in the neighborhood of his parish. He called them Cake's followers, or Canting Quakers. Mr. Bridge in 1712, records his success in disputing with these people. (They could not have been true Quakers). They have never, he says, held a public meeting since in these parts. Five years afterwards, however, he writes, "The Quakers come frequently in

<sup>a</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid.

great numbers from Long Island and other places, to hold their meetings in the out parts of my parish. It is my constant care, he adds, to watch their movements, and to prevent their seducing any of my parishoners."

The Friends seem to have met with much acceptance at Mamaroneck, for they built a Friends' meeting house there in 1739, on land bought of Sylvanus Palmer. It stood opposite the Munro place, where there is still a Friends' burying ground. About 1774 this meeting house was removed to its present site.<sup>a</sup>

The half year meetings of Friends in this region had been held at this meeting house in Mamaroneck. A proposition was made on the eighth day of the twelfth month (December), 1727, to remove the meeting to Rye meeting house, and discontinue the meetings at Robert Sneathings (apparently in Rye). This was done.

The first meeting-house built in Westchester County, existed as early as 1723. In that year mention is made of "The Quaker meeting-house in Westchester village."<sup>b</sup> A monthly meeting was appointed by the yearly meeting of Friends, at Flushing, Long Island, to be held at Westchester, New York, on the ninth day of fourth month, 1725. Not long after we hear of occasional meetings being held at Mamaroneck and Rye, in private houses. One on the 13th of May, 1726, to be held every other month at the house of Jas. Mott; and another, 1727, was at Robert Sneathings.<sup>c</sup>

"In 1742, on the 'eleventh day of first month, (January,) the monthly meeting was transferred from Mamaroneck, to the 'Meeting-House in Rye Woods.' This meeting was now held at three places on the main; alternately at Westchester, Mamaroneck, and Purchase; and subject to it, meetings had by this time been established at New Milford, the Oblong, and Nine Partners;<sup>d</sup> and in 1744, on the eighth day of ninth month, (September,) a proposition was made to establish a quarterly meeting '*on this side, i. e.,* on the main. Accordingly, the yearly meeting, still held at Flushing, on the thirteenth of fourth month, (April,) 1745, appointed a quarterly meeting to be held at the Purchase."<sup>e</sup>

"In 1745, on the eleventh day of fifth month, the meeting appointed Thomas Franklin, 'to get seats to be made rising in the upper part of

<sup>a</sup> Baird's History of Rye.

<sup>b</sup> 'Entering of the Highways,' a book of record in the County Clerk's office, White Plains, page 8.

<sup>c</sup> Rye Records, Vol. B. pp. 227-30.

<sup>d</sup> A meeting was commenced at North Castle in 1764, and was held once a fortnight in winter. The North Castle meeting-house was built in 1798, in about 1875 it was given up and sold.

<sup>e</sup> Records of the Society in Harrison. Baird's Hist of Rye, p. 354. An addition was made to Friends of Meeting-House, at the Purchase in 1760.

the Meeting-House at ye Purchase.'"<sup>a</sup> It was here that the wounded soldiers were brought, immediately after the Battle of White Plains, on the 28th of October, 1776, and laid out on the floor or lower seats. It was probably for the double purpose of protecting the wounded, and securing the communications of the army at the White Plains; in that direction, Major Brigadier General Samuel Holden Parson, had a post near the head of Rye Pond, October 29, 1776. "In 1778, the monthly meeting was held in King Street, at the house of Thomas Clapp, on the thirteenth day of eighth month, (August). The reason for this change was, the Meeting-house, at Purchase, being made use of 'for a hospital for the sick of the army.' September 10th, 'the Meeting-house is not yet to be had.' October 8th, the meeting is held as formerly, in the Purchase Meeting-House.

On the eleventh of February, 1779, it is represented at the monthly meeting, that several young men of the society are now prisoners, and are likely to be brought under great suffering by refusing to bear arms and to do other military service. 'Those in authority are willing to release them, providing they can make it appear that they are members; a committee is appointed to assure the authorities of their membership.'

In 1782, a record is made concerning the sufferings of Friends connected with this Monthly Meeting, in consequence of their testimony against war. The total amount of loss on this account is stated to be fourteen hundred and forty-five pounds.

In 1784, on the fourteenth of Tenth Month (October), the following action was taken: 'The Meeting-House in the Purchase having been used for a *Court of Judicature*, and being likely to be used for that purpose again, a committee is appointed to apply to those in authority to prevent such use.

In 1797, the meeting house was enlarged to its present size by an addition on the east side.

In 1827 a separation took place in the Society of Friends at the Purchase. The 'Orthodox' Friends erected a meeting house near the old building which is held by the other branch—termed 'Hicksites' from Elias Hicks, whose opinions they were understood to approve."<sup>b</sup>

Near the old meeting house is the graveyard, where the founders of the community and several generations of their descendants rest.

The oldest memorial bears the following inscription:

R. W.  
March 31, 1731.

<sup>a</sup> Records of the Society in Harrison. Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 364.

<sup>b</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye, p. 364.

In the Halstead plot is the following epitaph to the memory of Charity Huggerford, the wife of the celebrated partisan officer of the Revolutionary war, viz., Major William Lainey Huggerford:—

The Remains of  
CHARITY HUGGERFORD  
lies here,  
Called to the eternal world  
the 10th day of July, 1807,  
In the 52d year of her age.

In this cemetery are also interred the mortal remains of Cornelius Oakley, one of the distinguished Westchester guards to General Washington during the Revolutionary War.<sup>a</sup>

The Friends in Harrison are not so numerous as they once were; but are still a respectable and influential community. They are a peaceable and quiet people, frugal and simple in their habits and manners, strictly moral, careful of their poor, and abhor all kinds of oppression.

The old meeting-house still stands unadorned, in a small woods; near by is the grave-yard where most of the families of this community rest.<sup>b</sup>

REGULATIONS ADOPTED BY  
PURCHASE MONTHLY MEETING OF FRIENDS,  
HELD SIXTH MONTH, 10TH, 1874,  
RESPECTING INTERMENT IN THEIR BURIAL-GROUNDS.

Applications for Interments in the Burial Grounds belonging to the Purchase Monthly Meeting, must be made to one or more members of the Funeral Committee, one of which should be most convenient to the late residence of the deceased. Should no manifest objection appear, they may grant the necessary permit, signed by them and subject to the conditions hereinafter stated.

As our Burial Grounds are fast filling up, the Committee are authorized to refuse Permits for Interment of the body of any person who was not a member of our Society, and had not a Husband or Wife, Parent or Child, Brother or Sister, interred within the Grounds.

The Funeral must be conducted under the care and direction of the Funeral Committee, and the order established by Friends for such occasions must be conformed to.

Extravagant expenses and floral decorations are to be avoided.

*No Clergyman* is to be employed or called upon to *perform any Religious Services whatever.*

No Grave-Stones are to be placed in these Grounds containing any inscription, except the name of the deceased, with the name of Husband or Wife, or Parents, when desired; and the date of Birth and Death, and shall not exceed sixteen inches in width, five inches in thickness, and the necessary height above the surface of the ground, to receive the aforesaid inscription legibly.

<sup>a</sup> Miss Sarah Oakley a daughter of the above mentioned Cornelius residing with Nathaniel Valentine at Tuckahoe, Oct. 20, 1849, informed Mr. McDonald "that about a year ago (1850) she went with other relations to the Quaker burying ground in Purchase where they identified the grave of their father, &c. They then had a plain stone prepared and put up; such as the Quakers allow, &c.—McDonald MSS. in possession of Moore of New York Hist. Soc,

<sup>b</sup> Records of the Society in Harrison, and Baird's History of Rye.



## NAMES OF FUNERAL COMMITTEE.

ELNATHAN CARPENTEB, Purchase.	WILLIAM C. FIELD King Street.
ELLWOOD BIRDSALL, "	EDMUND FIELD, "
THOMAS SUTTON, "	SAMUEL COMLEY, "
ROBERT BARNES, "	WILLIAM BURLING, New Rochelle.
ELIAS BARNES, North Street.	DAVID BRITT, Mamaroneck.
WILLIAM S. CARPENTER, North Street.	

Within a short distance of the Purchase lies Rye Pond, a beautiful sheet of water covering over two hundred and ten acres of ground. In this pond vast quantities of pickerel are annually taken with hook and line, and pleasant sport is afforded to those who are fond of trolling.<sup>a</sup> Its waters abound also with almost every other variety of fresh water fish. The best place for fishing is said to be a flat rock near the centre of the pond.

Rye Pond has an outlet on the west which passes into the little pond of the same name, and from thence into Bronx's River.<sup>b</sup>

The principal proprietors of the land bordering the pond, are Ezra Carpenter on the south, Thomas Clapp on the east, and Oliver Matthews on the north.

The late Thomas Clapp of this town left one hundred and fifty acres on the west side of the pond for the education of poor children at the Purchase.

A little south-west of this place is situated the farm and residence of the Hon. Joseph H. Anderson, late member of Congress for the seventh district. The house commands a very fine and extensive prospect of the Sound and surrounding country. Joseph H. Anderson is the son of Jeremiah Anderson, Esq., who for many years represented this county in Assembly.

"Upon the 23d of October, 1776, Col. Tyler's, Huntington's and Throop's regiments of Gen. Parson's brigade, and of Gen. Heath's division moved, and took post at the head of King Street, near Rye Pond.<sup>c</sup>

"On the 4th of December, 1781," says General Heath, "Captain Sackett, of the New York levies near Harrison Purchase below the lines, having gone a small distance from his detachment on the morning of the 2d, was taken prisoner by a party of the enemy. The enemy afterward attacked Lieutenant Mosher to whom the command of the detachment fell. Lieutenant Mosher and the detachment behaved with great bravery, repulsed the enemy, killed one of them and two horses, and wounded eight of the enemy, among them a Captain Kipp, said

<sup>a</sup> No fishing is allowed in the ponds with any kind of net or seine.

<sup>b</sup> Rye Pond is the principal source of the Bronx.

<sup>c</sup> Heath's Mem. 75, 76. From a return of militia officers for Harrison's Precinct, February 9, 1776, it appears that John Thomas, minor, was chosen Captain, Gilbert Dusenberry First Lieutenant; William Woodward, Second Lieutenant, and James Miller, jun. ensign.

mortally. Colonel Holmes and Captain Kipp had their horses killed under them, the levies had not a man killed or wounded."<sup>a</sup>

The above engagement took place in the vicinity of Merriitt's tavern. Mosher's command consisted of only eighteen men, while the British horse under Colonel Holmes numbered over seventy.<sup>b</sup>

We believe the whole period of the American war cannot produce such another instance, in which the enemy were repulsed by so small a force. General Washington himself often spoke of this brilliant affair, and praised the gallantry of the brave Mosher.<sup>c</sup>

The surface of this town is mostly level; soil, loam, fertile and well cultivated, drained by Blind Brook (Mockquams) and Mamaroneck River, running south into Long Island Sound, supplying mill seats in abundance.<sup>d</sup> The south line of the town is about one mile from the Sound, and the northeast corner touches upon the west line of Connecticut. The growth of wood consists principally of oak of all kinds, chestnut, much hickory, ash and elm, &c., &c.

The following extracts from the town records relate to the election of town officers at the commencement of the Revolution, and immediately subsequent:—

"On Tuesday, the 2d of April, 1776, the freeholders, inhabitants of Harrison's Precinct, met at the place appointed by law, and made choice of the following town officers:—

SAMUEL HAVILAND, Supervisor,	
WILLIAM MILLER, Town Clerk,	
JOSHUA HUNT,	} Assessors,
JOHN HAIGHT,	
WELLSEY DUSENBERY,	
JOSEPH CARPENTER, Highway Master for lower part,	
DAVID HALSTEAD, " " the middle,	
STEPHEN FIELD, Highway Master for the upper,	
WILLIAM ASOUGH, " " Brown's Point,	
WILLIAM WOODWARD, " " North street,	
JOB HADDEN, " " West and Haight streets,	
all to the usual bounds.	
SAMUEL HAVILAND, } Fence and Damage Viewers,	
THOMAS PARK, }	
THOMAS PARK, Powderer,"	

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. p. 324.

<sup>b</sup> A full narrative of this memorable event has been published in almost every country in Europe, showing what a handful of infantry can do, opposed to a strong force of horse. Seven of Mosher's party were from the farm of General Pierre van Cortlandt, Cortlandtown.

<sup>c</sup> On the east side of the road leading from the Purchase to Rye, lies the grave of an old veteran by the name of John Peter Follow, who died at the advanced age of 120. He requested that the following epitaph might be inscribed on his tomb stone:—

"Here lies as good a soldier  
as ever fought in Flanders."

Also, in the same vicinity, Louis Burling, a colored soldier of the Revolution, who served as a private in Col. Samuel Pell's regiment.

<sup>d</sup> Upon the Mockquams, or Blind Brook, is situated the grist mill of the late Gen. Thomas.

At a town meeting held this first day of April, 1783, in Harrison's Precinct, State of New York, the following town officers were chosen to serve the ensuing year:—

“ISAIAH MAYNARD, Supervisor,

STEPHEN FIELD, Town Clerk,

JAMES MILLER, Constable and Collector,

THOMAS THOMAS, }  
WILLIAM WOODWARD, } Assessors,  
THOMAS CARPENTER, }

HENRY DUSENBERY, Pounder,

JOHN CROMWELL, Overseer of the Highway for upper part of Precinct,

RICHARD BARNES, for the middle part,

JOSEPH CARPENTER, for the lower part,

ROGER PURDY, for North street,

JOB HADDON, JR., for the west part of the patent,

HENRY DUSENBERY, }  
ELISHA HORTON, } Fence and Damage Viewers.

# THE TOWN

## OF

# LEWISBORO.

---

Lewisboro is situated eighteen miles north-east of the village of White Plains, distant fifty miles from New York, and one hundred and nineteen from Albany—bounded north, by North Salem; east, by the State of Connecticut; and south and west by the towns of Poundridge and Bedford; and west by Somers.

This town prior to 1808, was called Lower Salem, and afterward South Salem, to distinguish it from the northern or upper town of that name, and was incorporated on the 18th of March, 1791. In 1840, the name was again changed to Lewisboro, in compliment to John Lewis, Esq., a liberal benefactor of its common schools.

The earliest sale of lands in this town, is to be found in the Indian deed to Master Roger Ludlow, of Fairfield, Connecticut, who purchased of the former, all their lands between the two rivers Norwalk and Soakatuck, from the sea *a day's walk into the country*.

On the 26th of February, 1640, "An agreement made between the Indians of Norwalk and Roger Ludlow; by which the Indians of Norwalk, for and in consideration of eight fathoms of wampum, six coates, tenn hatchets, tenn hoes, tenn knives, tenn sissors, tenn jewsharpes, tenn fathome tobackoe, three kettles of sixe hands about, tenn looking-glasses; have granted all the lands, meadows, pastures, trees, whatsoever there is, and grounds betweene the twoe Rivers, the one called Norwalke, the other Soakatuck, to the middle of sayed Rivers, from the sea a days walke in the country, to the sayed Roger Ludlowe, and his heirs and assignes for ever; and that noe Indian or other shall challenge or claim any ground within the sayed Rivers or limits, nor disturbe the sayed Roger, his heirs



or assigns, within the precincts aforesaid. In witness whereof, the parties thereunto have interchangeably sett their hands.<sup>a</sup>

Witness

The mark

ROGER LUDLOW.

THOS. LUDLOWE.

IOMAKEEGO.

The mark of

The mark of

TOKANEKE.

The mark

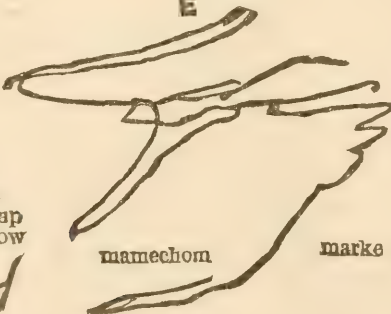
MAHACKEMO, Sachem.

ADAM PROSEWAMENES.

About two months later Captain Patrick purchased of Mahackem and other Indians, all the meadows and uplands adjoining and lying on the west side of Norwake River and *as far up in the country as an Indian can go in a day from sun-rising to sun-setting, &c.*<sup>b</sup>

An agreement betwixt Daniell Patrick and Mahackem, and Naramake and Pemenate Hewnompom indians of Norwake and Makentouh the said Daniel Patrick hath bought of the sayd three indians, the ground called Sacunyte napucke, also Meeanworth, thirdly Asumsowis, fourthly all the land adjoining to the aforementioned, as far up in the cuntry as an indian can goe in a day, from sun rising to sun setting; and two Islands neare adjoining to the sayd canantenayueck, all bounded on the west side with noewanton on the east side to the middle of the River of Norwake, and all trees, meadows, waters and naturall adjuncts there unto belonging, for him and his forever; for which lands the sayd indians are to receive of the sayd Daniell Patrick, of wampum ten fathoms, hatchetts three, howes three, when shippes come; sixe glasses, twelfe tobaccoc pipes, three knives, tenn drills, tenn needles; this as full satisfaction, for the aforementioned lande, and for the peaceable possession of which the aforementioned mahackem doth promise and undertake to silence all opposers of this purchase, if any should in his time act, to witnesse which, on both sides, hands are interchangeably hereunto sett, this 20th of April, 1640.

E



Witnesses  
Tobi fleap  
John How

namechom

pomenate  
his  
marke

marke naramake.

FH  
marke

<sup>a</sup> Records of Norwalk, in book of Deeds, A.D. 1672.

<sup>b</sup> Copied from original in Norwalk Rec.

Upon the first of July, 1650, Aashowshack and Chachoamer surviving proprietors of the lands lying on the other side of Norwake River, confirmed Captaine Patricke's purchase to Mstr Stephen Goodier of New Haven, merchant, for two coates, & fowre fathom of wampam.

These having been left unpaid by the sayed Captaine Patricke of Greenwich."

Witnesses,

JOSHUA ATTWATE,

The mark



of ANNANUPP.

THOMAS KIMBERLIER.

The mark



of ANTHITUNN.

Upon the 15th of February, 1651, Runckinheage and other Indians convey to the Planters of Norwake for and in consideration of thirtie Fathum of Wampum, Tenn Kettles, Fifteen Coates, Tenn payr of Stockings, Tenn Knifes, Tenn Hookes, Twenty Pipes, Tenn Muckes, and Tenn Needles, all their lands called and known by the name of Runckinheage, Roooton, or by whatsoever name or names the same is called or known, lying and bounded on the East upon ye land purchased of Captain Patricke, so called, on the West bounded with the Brook called Pampaskeshanke, which said brook and passage, the Bounds west, extendeth up into the Country by marked Trees; and so far as the said Runckinheage and the rest above mentioned hath any Right and proprietie; and the aforesaid land bounded with the Brook called as aforesaid Pampaskeshanke, from the aforesaid passage and path down along to the sea; and the aforesaid Land bounded on the south with the sea; and on the north with the Moahakes (Query Mohawks) Country; with all the Islands, Trees, pastures, meadidge, water, water courses, Rights, members, and appurtenances whatsoever," &c. "In witness whereof the above said parties have for themselves, and every one of them, sett their hand, the day and year at our written to this present indenture.

Signed and delivered in the presence of

STEPHEN BECKWITH,  
SAMUEL LUMES,  
SAMUEL ELY.

his  
RUNCKIN — HEAGE.  
mark.

his  
MAGI § SE.  
mark.

his  
PIAMIKIN S  
mark.

his  
WINNA & PUCKE.  
mark.

his  
CORKUS ( } ) KINOE,  
mark.

his  
TOWNE Th TOWN.  
mark.

his  
SASSE & A KIOWN.  
mark.

his  
PRO N DAX.  
mark.

his  
WAM Z PASSUM.  
mark.

his  
POKAJSAKE. §§  
mark.

his  
SASSA } — KUN.  
mark.

RUNC l m KEMUNALT.

Recorded, Feb. ye 24th, 1708-9.

Pr. John Copp, Recorder.\*

\*Nowalk, Rec. 1672.

The above Indian conveyances clearly embraced a large proportion (perhaps the whole) of Lewisboro. Some of these lands must have subsequently reverted to the Indians; for in 1699 the Kitchawan tribe again released the same territory to Stephannus Van Cortland. This individual had previously obtained a charter from the crown, erecting the whole of his possession into the lordship and Manor of Cortland; by which means the northern part of this town came to be included in that Manor.

On the 8th of July, 1701, we find Catoonah, Indian Sagamore, confirming to the inhabitants of Stamford "all those lands which extend westward as far as the west bounds of Bedford purchase and marked trees, and by the east bounds of the same, bounded north by the south side of Bedford purchase, and by the stone hills upon a straight line eastward unto the *upper end of the Long Pond*; and, further, on an east line, until it meets with a line drawn north from the upper end of Five Mile River, which is the east line of our several purchases."<sup>a</sup>

In the next place, we find this same Catoonah, who now styles himself Sachem of the Ramapoo Indians, conveying to John Belden, and others of the town of Norwalk a considerable tract of land called by them Cardatowa, High Land, embracing the present town of Ridgefield, Conn., and much of what was formerly known as the oblong portion of Salem. The latter included two tracts called by the Indians, Mamamesquag and Harahawmis.

To all people to whom these presents, &c., &c., know ye yt, I, Catoonah, Sachem of Ramapoo, Indians and Associates within Her Majestie's Province of New York in America, for, and in consideration of ye sum of £100, &c., paid by John Belden, Saml. Keeler, Senr., Mathew Seamor, James Brown, Benj. Wilson, Jos. Burchard, John Witne, Senr., Matthias Saint John, Benjamin Hickock, John Beebe, Saml. Saint John, John Bouton, Joseph Keeler, Saml. Smith, Jr., Jonathan Stevens, Daniel Olmstead, Richard Olmstead, Henry Sturdevant, Samuel Keeler, Jr., Joseph Bonton, Jonathan Rockwell, Edward Waring, Joseph Whitne, Daniel Hait, Thos. Hyatt, James Benedict, Joseph Crompton, Ebenezer Sension, Matthew Saint John, all of ye town of Norwalk in ye County of Fairfield and Thomas Smith, Thomas Caufield, Samuel Smith of the town of Milford in ye County of New Haven. A certain tract of land situate, lying and being so esteemed within her Majesties Colony of Connecticut, afore-said buttred and bounded as followeth, at a rock with ye stones laid thereon that lyeth upon ye west side of Norwalk river, about 20 rod northward of the crossing or where Danbury old cart path crosseth the river, where said rock is the south-east corner, and from said corner a line runneth unto *Umperange Pond* to a white oak tree standing by ye norwest corner of said pond, the said tree being marked and stones layed about it and is the north-east corner, and from

<sup>a</sup> Trumbull's Hist. of Conn.

the said corner tree another line running near 2 points to ye north of ye west unto a pond called *Nessopack* and continuing ye same course until it meets with a second pond called *Ash'eets* crossing by ye south end of both ponds and from thence running north-west until it extends to a place called *Mamanusquag* where is a oak tree marked on ye north side of ye outlet of water that comes out from a sort of a grassy pond which is known and called by ye said name which tree is ye north-west corner and from said tree another line running south bearing to ye east about 1 mile and  $\frac{1}{2}$  running by ye east-side of a mountain and then runs south, south-west under ye east side of another mountain called *Asoquatah* until it meets Stamford, boundary line about a quarter of a mile to ye eastward of Cross River Pond where stands a marked white oak tree with stones about it and in ye south-west corner and from said marked tree along by Stamford boundery until it comes to Norwalk purchase and so by said purchase bounds to the said line Rock at the south-east corner containing by estimation 20,000 acres be it more or less and the four corners of said tract of land being called by the following Indian names, south-east corner, *Wheercock*; north-east corner, *Wononkpakoonek*; north-west corner, *Mamamesquag*; south-west corner, *Harahawmis*, to have and to hold, 30th of September, 1708,

CATOONAH, his mark ye sachem,

WEQUACOMECK, his mark,

WASPACHAIM, his mark,

WAWKAMAWWE, his mark,

NARANeka, his mark,

CAWWEHERIN, his mark.

This above written bill is acknowledged by ye grantors this 30th day of September, 1708, before me Samuel Hait, Justice of the Peace. Rec. Feb. 8. 1709-1710.

Sealed and delivered in ye presence of

JOHN HOLMES, JR., Gootquas, his mark,

JOSEPH SULLY, Mahke, his mark,

JOHN COPP,<sup>a</sup> Sawpormick, his mark.

Upon the 7th of March, 1729, Tapporneck and other Indians confirmed to proprietors of Ridgefield all their lands lying near the outlet of "Wepack" or Long Pond to "Titicus River," &c.

Know all men by these presents, that we, Tapporneck, Ammon, and Wethens, Sommenotes, Pawquenongo and Crow, all Indians belonging to Long Pond or Wepack, for and in consideration of a valuable reward paid, or to be paid, by ye Proprietors of Ridgefield, have given, granted, bargained sold and by these presents, do freely, fully, and absolutely, sell, convey and confirm, unto ye proprietors of Ridgefield their heirs and assigns forever according with their usual interest as Proprietors a certain tract or parcel of land supposedly in ye township of Ridgefield lying, situate and butted and bounded as followeth, namely beginning west at an ash straddle standing at ye east side of ye outlet of Long Pond about six rods west of said outlet near ye lower fishing place from thence

<sup>a</sup> Ridgefield Town Rec., Vol. I., p. 1. At a town meeting held in Norwalk, A.D., 1709, it was "ordained that this purchase should be a distinct township by the name of Ridgefield."—E. Halls, Norwalk, p. 101.



southward along ye line which Mr. Lewis run and down to ye old purchase line, and from said straddle northward by said line of Mr. Lewis to Titicus river and bounded east by ye former purchase made of Tackora being a breadth about three hundred and fifteen rodts. To have and to hold, &c., 7th of March, 1729.

Signed, sealed and delivered in presence of Josiah Gilbert, William Drinkwater.

TAPPORNECK, his mark,  
 MOSES, his mark,  
 SAM, his mark,  
 AMMON, his mark,  
 WETTHAM, his mark,  
 PAWQUENONG, his mark,  
 CROW,<sup>a</sup> his mark.

From this time we hear no more of the aboriginal proprietors of "Harahamis," or Asoquatah. Many interesting relics of the Indian race have been found near the vicinity of Lake Peppeneghek or Cross Pond; proving most conclusively that this portion of "Harahamis" was one of their favorite camping and hunting grounds. Near the east side of the lake, upon the land of the late Henry Keeler, there once existed a large mound of stones, raised by the Indians over the remains of one of their renowned sachems. Upon one of the highest points of the West Mountain, bordering on Candatowa or Ridgefield, in the north-east corner of the farm of Jeremiah Wood has been recently discovered a curious Indian "shingaba-wassin" or "Tonage stone." It consists of a hard stone fretted by the action of water into a shape resembling the trunk of a human body well rounded, with something resembling legs, with back and chest well defined, surmounted by an entablature, upon which there once doubtless stood a rude head. The trunk is about twenty-two inches high and twelve broad. There can be no doubt, as we have just observed, that it was formed by the sheer force of attrition—such as is ordinarily given by the upheaving and rolling force of waves on a lake or ocean beach. To the superstitious natives, who are not prone to reason from cause to effect, such productions appear indeed wonderful. All that is past comprehension, or wonderful, is attributed by them to the supernatural agency of spirits. The hunter or warrior, who is traveling along the coast, and finds one of these self-sculptured stones, is not sure that it is not a direct interposition of his God, or guardian Manito, in his favor. He is habitually a believer in the most subtle forms of mysterious power, which he acknowledges to be often delegated to the native priests, or necromancers. He is not staggered by the most extraordinary stretch of fancy, in the theory of the change or transformation

<sup>a</sup> Ridgefield Rec. vol. II, pp. 70-71.

of animate into inanimate objects, and *vice versa* ; all things "in heaven and earth," he believes to be subject to this subtle power of metamorphosis.

But, whatever be the precise operating cause of the respect he pays to the imitative rolled stones, which he calls Shingaba-wossins, and also by the general phrase of Muz-in-in-a-wum, or images, he is not at liberty to pass them without hazarding something, in his opinion, of his chance of success in life, or the fortune of the enterprise in hand. The Indian is not precise in the matter of proportion, either in his drawing or in his attempts at statuary. He seizes upon some minute and characteristic trait, which is at once sufficient to denote the species, and he is easily satisfied about the rest. Thus a simple cross, with a straight line from shoulder to shoulder and a dot, or circle above, to serve for a head, is the symbol of the human frame ; and without any adjunct of feet or hands, it could not have been mistaken for anything else—certainly for any other object in the animal creation."<sup>a</sup> There can be but little doubt this image was brought originally from the vicinity of Lake Waccabuc or Wepuc, and set up on a level spot on the summit of one of the highest hills of Candatowa, (a name that signifies "High Lands,") a site well chosen, thickly shaded with trees, and bearing luxuriant grass and wild shrubbery and flowers, with here and there peeps or openings of a wide expanse of country extending all around it, embracing the Asproom mountain range north of Lake Wepuc, the hills stretching north-east to Danbury, the dark green looking Stony Hills, to the west, and the distant Dunderburg and Kittatenny Mountains, &c. It was, in fine, one of those quiet solitary places which an Indian might be supposed to have selected for his secret worship of some favorite Manito or Spirit. The stone of which the principal part of the figure is composed resembles that of which the ovens are composed upon one of the islands in Lake Wepuc. The ovens themselves, too, have been fretted by the action of water into their present shape.

Indian graves have also been discovered upon a small wooded island surrounded by a swamp on the land of the late Stephen Bouton, now owned by his nephew, Joseph Webster, a short distance north-west of the road leading from Ridgefield to Bedford. In the vicinity of Aaron O. Wakeman's, quite close to the Connecticut line on the east, is a curious aboriginal relic called the "Indian well," which is above six feet deep and almost perfectly round, hollowed out from the solid granite rock either by the action of water or the tools of the Aborigines ; in this receptacle they probably cooked their food after a wholesale fashion

<sup>a</sup> Schoolcroft's *Oneota or the Red Rose of America*, pp. 17, 18.

as there are many large cobble stones lying around which abundantly attest the action of fire.

The "Pequot Mills," located in the woods directly west of Stephen Hoyt's residence on "Smith's Ridge," was undoubtedly a favorite resort of the Indians. Here are the remains of several ancient circular basins or mortars in which the Indian women were wont to grind their corn, salt or the stone material with which they tempered the clay for the ancient Akeek, or cooking vessel; and here, also, about five hundred feet above tide water mark, there is a spring of pure water which is said to be perpetual. Near the "Pequot Mills" on the west side of Pudding Lane near its junction with the New Canaan road, there was once to be seen a mound of stones which covered the remains of an Indian chief. Another spot in this vicinity said to have been the scene of a terrible massacre of the Pequot Indians, in the early colonial times, is called "Mount Misery." The Asproom Mountains, in the northern part of the town, and bordering on Lake Wepuc, were favorite hunting grounds of the great sachems Catoonah and Tappornuck in the olden times; stone arrow and spear heads, axes and gouges are constantly found on the farm of Alfred S. Hawley, Esq. A sister of Mr. Hawley many years ago removed to western New York, where she accidentally encountered an aged Mohegan Indian who assured her that in his youth, the tribe to which he belonged, resided near Lake Waccabuc or Wepuc and that he well remembered the rocky island on the lake, which they regarded with great veneration, with its wonderful ovens dedicated to their god or guardian Manito. Indeed all our native tribes who have occupied the borders of the great lakes, have been very ingenious in converting to the uses of superstition, masses of perforated rock or boulder stones, as have been fretted by the action of water into a variety of shapes or forms.

Indian burying grounds are to be found in various parts of this town, one is situated on the north side of the road leading from Boutonville to Cross River, soon after passing the Wepuc stream, while another is located on the north side of the road west of the bridge which crosses the same stream, leading from South Salem to Cross River.

Lewisborough includes seven miles in length of the south end of a tract of land called the Oblong. This territory was a strip of one mile three quarters and twenty rods wide, and nearly sixty-two miles long, formed by the running of a line parallel with Hudson's River, and twenty miles distant therefrom, to the south line of Massachusetts. The controversy between the two colonies of New York and Connecticut, concerning it, lasted nearly a century, during which time the disputed

ground afforded a sort of sanctuary for the most desperate kind of out-laws and robbers.

The commissioners appointed for settling the lines, assembled at Greenwich, April 29th, 1725, when they came to the following agreement as to the means of ascertaining the lines, viz.:—"They are the westernmost line, called eight miles, the line running east north-east, thirteen miles and sixty-four rods from the eight mile line, the line called parallel with the Hudson's River, and twenty miles from it, extending from the end of the line thirteen miles and sixty-four rods northward to Massachusetts line; the parallel line *was in two lines, having one angle in it*. The equivalent land they estimated at 61,440 acres, which has to be taken from Connecticut, on the east side of the parallel line."<sup>a</sup>

The angle above mentioned (sometimes called Cortlandt's Point) was situated near the south-west shore of Lake Wepuck, (Long Pond), on the lands of Edwin Bouton. Here the commissioners who surveyed the manor of Cortlandt in 1734, erected a monument, which they "deemed and esteemed twenty miles distant from Cortlandt's Point, at the mouth of the Highlands."

"The complete settlement of the boundary line, (says the historian Smith,) was not made till the 14th of May, 1731, when indentures certifying the execution of the agreement in 1725, were mutually signed by the commissioners and surveyors of both colonies.

Upon the establishment of this partition, a tract of land lying on the *Connecticut* side, consisting of above sixty thousand acres, from its figure called the *Oblong*, was ceded to *New York*, as an equivalent for lands near the *Sound*, surrendered to *Connecticut*.<sup>b</sup>

In 1728, William Truesdale and Samuel Tuttle who had obtained a patent right from Connecticut for certain lands in the Oblong were disturbed in their possession by the proprietors of Ridgefield, as appears by the following document:

"To the proprietors of ye town of Ridgefield greeting, We, the subscribers hereunto being settled on that tract or parcel of land on ye west of your town which goes by ye name of ye 'Equivalent land,' expecting that we might have been quiet there by virtue of a patent right<sup>c</sup> that we have obtained, but was very sensible that it is your design to enter upon and take actual possession of said land and allot it out to such proprietors of your town according to each man's propriety in your township; and we being gotten upon said land and have been at considerable charge to remove our families and labor done on said lands, do now request and desire that you would please to account of us, as equal sharers

<sup>a</sup> Letters on Boundaries. Hartford: Letter 117.

<sup>b</sup> See Douglas's late Plan of the British Dominions of New England.

<sup>c</sup> No such patent is recorded in the Secretary of State's office of Connecticut, nor mention made of their names.



with you in ye division, that you may make unto each proprietor, that is, that we may be allowed a whole share when in ye division that you make of that land; and we having no hope of being quieted by our patent-right, desire we may not be put out of our improvements on said land and we shall be ready to submit to ye orders and determinations of your town and proprietors and be at equal share of all charges that have or may arise by any disturbance that may be given to you or us, in ye quiet possession and improvement of said land and in granting of which you will oblige,

Your very humble servants,

WILLIAM TRUESDALE,  
SOLOMON TUTTLE.

RIDGEFIELD, DEC. 20, 1728.

To this petition the following reply was made :

“The above application and request having been laid before the proprietors of Ridgefield at a lawful meeting held in Ridgefield, Dec. 20th, 1728. After mature and deliberate consideration thereof, the proprietors, by their major vote, do agree to admit ye said petitioners, Mr. William Truesdale and Mr. Solomon Tuttle, to an equal share and interest in any division or divisions of land that shall from time to time be laid out by order of said proprietors, upon ye land contained within the bounds and limits hereafter described, viz.: Beginning at ye place where ye twenty mile line goes down ye west mountain (a portion of the asproomhills) cross between ye pond and Stamford or Canfield’s mill river, keeping upon said mountain near ye east side continuing northerly to Tappornuck’s purchase running up between ye twenty mile line and Tappornuck’s purchase, northerly by ye long pond from thence by Tappornuck’s purchase line continuing by said line to ye road of our bounds and westward by said line to ye twenty mile line, that is to say the said Trusdale and Tuttle, their heirs and assigns shall have ye one and thirtieth part of said land as it shall fall to them by division provided they give an instrument under their hands to said proprietors (therewith to be recorded) to fulfil and execute every clause, condition and article hereupon named &c.<sup>a</sup>

From all this it is apparent that although Trusdale and Tuttle had obtained a patent, as they claimed, for a portion at least, of the Oblong, from the Connecticut authorities, yet the proprietors of Richfield had determined to enter upon and take possession of the entire “Oblong Division,”<sup>b</sup> as they termed it, in virtue of their patent in 1714.

A partition of the “Oblong Division” must have taken place early in 1729, for on the 31st of March of that year we find the Proprietors of Ridgefield conveying to James Brown, one of their number one hundred acres of land in the Oblong as appears by the following :

“March 31st, 1729, at a proprietors meeting held in Ridgefield (at above date) they did give and grant to James Brown, of Norwalk, and to his heirs and

<sup>a</sup> Ridgefield Rec. vol. 7, pp.67-68.

<sup>b</sup> At a proprietors meeting held in Ridgefield, Dec. 8th, 1729, it was agreed “that ye *Oblong Division* go upon record in ye great book.” Thomas Hawley, Register, Ridgefield, Rec. vol. 7 p. 82.

assigns, &c., all ye right an interest they have into an one hundred acres of land lying in the Oblong, so-called, adjoining to or near by the twenty mile line, which is in ye grants of Connecticut and New York, as it is laid out unto him by ye committee which laid out our divisions in said land."<sup>a</sup>

The very day after the establishment of the partition between the colonies of New York and Connecticut (May 14th, 1731) and the consequent ceding of the "Oblong" to the former, a patent passed in London, under the great seal of Great Britain<sup>b</sup> to Sir Joseph Eyles Knight,<sup>c</sup> Jonathan Perry, John Drummond and Thomas Watts, Esq., in behalf of themselves and several other merchants of the city of London containing 62,000 acres "commonly called or known by the name of the *Equivalent land*, because the same was formerly taken by the Province of Connecticut in lieu of the like quantity yielded to that colony by the Province of New York upon the settlement of their respective boundaries.

THE ROYAL LETTERS PATENT FOR THE OBLONG OR EQUIVALENT LANDS.

A grant posterior to this however is claimed as having been regularly made here to Hawley & Co., of the greatest part of the same tract which the British Patentees brought a bill in Chancery to repeal; but the defendants filed an answer containing so many objections against the English patent, that the suit remains still unprosecuted, and the American proprietors have ever since held the possession.

Mr. Harrison of the Council, solicited this controversy for Sir Joseph Eyles and his partners, which contributed in a great degree to the troubles so remarkable in a succeeding administration.<sup>d</sup>

June 8th, 1731. A warrant for survey was issued for fifty thousand acres of the Equivalent Lands for Thomas Hawley and other inhabitants of the town of Ridgefield.<sup>e</sup> In answer to the following petition by his excellency John Montgomerie, Esq., Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of the Province of New York, etc. Archibald Kennedy, Esq., Collector and Receiver-General; George Clarke, Esq., Secretary, and

<sup>a</sup> Ridgefield Rec. vol. II., p. 82., Conn. and N. Y. Boundaries, 1729-1731, vol. I., xix, p. 80 to 84. Patent passed 15th May, 1731. Registered 1st June, 1731.

<sup>b</sup> "Two instances only occur of grants or letters patent for lands under the GREAT SEAL of Great Britain—one to Sir Joseph Eyles and others on the 15th May in the fourth year of his late Majesty King George the Second for the above tract of 62,000 acres called the Oblong. "The other to Sir William Johnson Baronet." See Doc. Hist. N. Y., vol. I. p. 750.

<sup>c</sup> "Sir Joseph Eyles Knight was the fourth son of Francis Eyles, Esq., an eminent merchant and Alderman of London, and many years one of the directors of the East India Company, created a Baronet by King George I., 1st Dec., 1714, by his wife Elizabeth, daughter of Mr. Ayley of London, merchant. His brother, Sir John Eyles was of an ancient Wiltshire family, and received the honor of Knighthood from King James the Second and became Lord Mayor of London. Sir Joseph Eyles was sheriff of London in 1726, Alderman in 1733, M. P. for Southwark and afterwards for Devizes. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Alderman Sir Jaffrey Jeffreys, Knt., and died 8th of Feb., 1739-40, leaving one son and two daughters." *Burke's Ext. and Dormant Baronetcies*.

<sup>d</sup> Smith's History of New York, 177.

<sup>e</sup> Land papers, Albany, vol. 10, 1731, p. 156.

Cadwallader Colden, Esq., Surveyor-General of this our province, commissioners appointed by his majesty's instructions to his said excellency for settling out all lands to be granted within the province of New York,

*To all to whom these presents shall come or may concern :*

It is hereby certified that whereas Thomas Hawley, etc., inhabitants of the town of Ridgefield, as of the Eastern parts of this province, by their humble petition presented unto his excellency in Council, the 3d day of September, setting forth that they and their ancestors have for a long time, being settled upon, cultivated and improved certain lands near the eastern part of this province held by Patent from the Colony of Connecticut, are supposed to be in that part of the Province of New York commonly called the Equivalent Lands, and that the Patentees, together with their Associates, would be willing to defray the charge and expense of finding out and ascertaining the partition lines between both the said Colonies, provided that fifty thousand acres of the said lands be granted to the Patentees; and whereas, the partition lines between the said Colonies have been accordingly run out, and ascertained by Commissioners from both the said Colonies, being thereunto duly commissioned and appointed, and that sixty-one thousand four hundred and forty acres of land of the said Colony of Connecticut were lately, at the settling of the said partition lines surrendered to the said Province of New York, for the use of his majesty, wherefore the petitioners prayed his Excellency would be favorably pleased to grant them, their heirs and assigns, his Majesty's letters patent for fifty thousand acres of said land, under such quit-rent, provisions and restrictions as is ordered or directed in his Excellency's commission and instructions, which patent being then and there read and considered of his Majesty's Council of this province, did afterwards on the same day humbly advise and direct that his Excellency do grant the prayer of the same. In order to this granting, whereof, etc.

JOHN MONTGOMERIE,  
ARCHIBALD KENNEDY,  
GEORGE CLARKE,  
CADWALLADER COLDEN.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 8th of June, 1731, the following letters patent were issued under the great seal to Thomas Hawley and his associates.

#### ROYAL LETTERS PATENT FOR THE OBLONG,

George the Second, by the Grace of God, of Great Britian, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c. To all to whom these presents shall come greeting. Whereas before and until the year 1683 the extent bounds and limits of our province of New York on the part adjoining to our colony of Connecticut is altogether unsettled and uncertain and in order for the settling, ascertaining and determining where the bounds of the said Province and Colony with respect to one another should be, upon the three and twentieth day of November, 1683;

<sup>a</sup> Albany patents, 1731-1739, pp. 1-4. N. Y. Col. MSS. Land papers, 1726-1731, vol. x, p. 156. June 8th, Description of Survey Land papers, vol. x, p. 157, warrant for patent, June 8th. Land papers, vol. x, p. 159, Certificate, June 8th, vol. x, p. 159.

certain articles of argument were concluded between Col. Thomas Dougan then Governour of this our said Province and the Council of the said Province on the one side and Robert Forest, Esq., Governour of the Colony of Connecticut, Major Nathaniel Gold, Capt. John Allen, secretary, and Mr. William Pitkin in commission with him from Connecticut on the other side, by which it was agreed that the bounds between the said Provinces and Colonys from thenceforth should begin at Lyon's Point at the north of the Byram River where it falleth into the sound from thence to go as the said river runneth to the place where the common road or wading place over the said river is and from thence to run north, north-west, into the country so far as would be eight English miles from the aforesaid Lyon's Point, and that a line twelve miles being measured from Lyon's Point according to the general course of the sound westward where the said twelve miles endeth as the line should be run from the sound north, north-west, eight miles into the country, and also a fourth line should be run from the northermost end of the eight miles' line, being the third mentioned line which fourth line with the first mentioned line should be the bounds where they should fall or happen to run and that from the eastward end of the fourth mentioned line (which was to be twelve miles in length) a line parallel to Hudson's river in every place twenty miles distant from Hudson's river should be the bounds between the said colony of Connecticut so far as Connecticut colony doth extend northward, that is to the southerly line of Massachusetts bay, colony, &c."

"It is hereby certified, that whereas Thomas Hawley, Nathan St. John, Samuel Smith, Benjamin Benedict, Richard Olmsted, Thomas Smith, Ebenezer Smith, Daniel Sherwood, Benjamin Burt, Thomas Hyatt, Benjamin Wilson, Joseph Lee, Joseph Keeler, James Benedict, Richard Osborn, Samuel Smith, Daniel Olmsted, Timothy Keeler, Jonah Keeler, Matthew Seymour, Joseph Northrup, James Brown, Adam Ireland, John Thomas, and Benjamin Birdsall, inhabitants of the town of Ridgefield, as of the eastern parts of this province, by their humble petition, presented unto his Excellency in council, the third day of September, setting forth that they and their ancestors have for a long time been settled upon, cultivated and improved, certain lands near the eastern parts of this province, *held by patent from the colony of Connecticut*; but that, contrary to their expectations, some of the lands to be sold by patent from the colony of Connecticut are supposed to be within that part of the province of New York, commonly called the *Equivalent Lands*, and that the petitioners, together with their associates, would be willing to defray the charge and expense of finding out and ascertaining the true partition lines between both the said colonies, provided that 50,000 acres of the said lands be granted to the petitioners; and whereas, the partition lines between the said colonies have been accordingly run out and ascertained by commissioners for both the said colonies, being thereunto duly commissioned and appointed, and sixty-one thousand four hundred and forty acres of land of the said colony of Connecticut were lately, at the settling of the said partition lines, surrendered to the said province of New York, for the use of his Majesty; wherefore the petitioners prayed his Excellency would be favorably pleased to grant to them, their heirs and assigns, his Majesty's letters patent for 50,000 acres of the said land under such quit-rent provisions and restrictions as is and are directed in his Excellency's commissions and instructions; which petition being then and



there read and considered of his Majesty's council of this province, did afterwards, on the same day, humbly advise and consent that his Excellency do grant the prayer of the same, &c., given, &c., four several tracts, the first of which begins at the monument where the two lines intersect which are the eastwardly bounds of the said surrendered lands, and is one mile, three quarters of a mile, and fifty-two rods distant on a line running north eighty-four degrees east from the monument, and the end of the twenty mile line from Cortlandt's Point west to the east end of Long Pond, &c., then along south side of said pond to the easterly bounds of said surrendered lands.

The second tract begins at the monument, standing at two miles from the monument, at the end of the twenty miles from Cortlandt's Point,

The third begins at the eighth mile monument, on the westwardly bounds of the said surrendered lands, on the line running north twelve degrees and thirty minutes east from the monument, at the end of the twenty miles from Cortlandt's Point.

The fourth tract begins at the thirty-fourth mile from the monument, at the end of the twenty miles from Cortlandt's Point, &c.

"The Patentees yielding, rendering and paying therefore yearly and every year forever unto us at our Custom House in our city of New York unto our Receiver General for the time being, on the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary, commonly called Lady Day, the yearly rent of 7s. 6d for each hundred acres of the above granted lands, and so in proportion for a lesser quantity thereof, given under our hands at New York this eighth day of June in the fourth year of his Majesty's reign A.D. 1731.<sup>a</sup>

JOHN MONTGOMERIE.

This grant was also commonly called the "*East Patent*," from its easterly situation as appears by the following receipt given for quit-rent in 1760.

"Received of the owners and proprietors of the East Patent, to wit, Thomas Hawley and others, for a tract of fifty thousand acres of land in Westchester and Dutchess counties, commonly called the Oblong, by the hands of Abraham King, £1,382, 1s. 5d., proved money, being the full balance of quit-rent which was due her majesty, on the said patent, to the 8th day of June, 1760, old style, as witness my hand this 21st day of March, 1760.

"RICHARD NICHOLLS,

*"Deputy Receiver General.*

On the 8th of January, 1752, John Bowton of the East Patent, granted a tract of land, consisting of eighty acres, to Benjamin Rockwell, for the sum of £249.

It is quite clear from the wording of the East Patent to Hawley and company, that it commenced at the monument where the two lines intersect (or, the angle is formed) at the eastern end of the twenty miles from Cortlandt Point, on the Hudson River, near the south side of Long Pond on the land and so ran north nearly 52 miles towards Massachu-

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat., 1761-1789, pp. 4-19.



## B

[illegible]

The Lots which have no Name affixed are Drawn for William Smith, by a Scale of 2½ inches to the mile.

setts. This, left ten miles south from the monument or angle to what is still called the Wilton angle and south-west corner of the Oblong, now the southernmost end of Lewisboro, bordering on New Canaan. This section was for a long time termed the "*Undivided Lands*," and being public lands were of course still vested in the crown.

Among other claimants of these "*Undivided Lands*," in 1743, was a Benjamin Wilson, (one of the original twenty-five grantees of the East or Upper Patent, in 1731,) who, strange to say, asserted that *his right to dispose of the same*, "accrued unto him by virtue of a Patent obtained with others," of Governor Montgomerie of New York. In other words, by virtue of the *East Patent* issued in 1731, which had nothing whatever to do with the "*Undivided Lands*," and also by virtue of a lease obtained of Adam Ireland, Jno. Thomas and Benjamin Birdsell, all three of whom were also grantees of the East Patent 1731.<sup>a</sup>

Beginning at westerly bounds of lands surrendered on the line running north 12 degrees, 30 minutes east from the monument at the end of the twenty-one mile from Cortlandt's Point, at a point 54 chains south from the monument at the distance of four miles, and running from thence, south, 77 degrees, 30 minutes east, 145 chains to the easterly bounds of the said surrendered lands, from thence, running along the same easterly bounds north 12 degrees 30 minutes east, 294 chains to the north-east corner, etc., etc.—Albany deed book, 171, p. 453. On the same day occurs another release between Adam Ireland, Jno. Thomas and Benj. Birdsell, on the first part and James Brown and others of the second part, for forty-two thousand acres of the said surrendered lands. (See map from book 17, p. 457.) Albany deed book 17, from 1765 to 1768, p. 457. "B" A third Indenture 22d of June, 1731, between Wm. Smith of the first part and George Clarke, Esq., of the second part, which recites that whereas by his Majesty's letter Patent bearing date the 8th day of this inst. June, granted unto Adam Ireland, Jno. Thomas and Benj. Birdsell, and others, fifty thousand acres of land, part of the lands called the "*Equivalent or Additional Lands*," lately surrendered by the colony of Connecticut to the province of New York, as by said letters Patent entered on record in the secretary's office of New York, Lib. 2d, Vol I, etc., at large may appear, and whereas, by release bearing date the 15th day of this inst. June, forty thousand two hundred and fifty acres of the aforesaid, fifty thousand, of which the hereby granted lands is a part, were released to the said Adam Ireland, Jno. Thomas and Benj. Birdsell, by the other Patentees in the said Patent, etc., and whereas the said Adam Ireland, etc., by release, and release bearing date the 15th and 16th days of the this inst. June, did convey to the said Wm. Smith twenty-one thousand one hundred and eleven acres, part of the

<sup>a</sup> It seems that soon after the East Patent was granted in 1731, the Patentees, when they divided and wanted certain lands they quit-claimed to each other—consequently we find several Leases and Re-leases passing between the Proprietors. For instance, on the 15th of June, 1731, occurs an indenture between Thomas Hawley, Nathan St. John, Samuel Smith, Benj. Benedict, Richard Olmstead, Thomas Smith, Ebenezer Smith, Daniel Sherwood, Benj. Burt, Thomas Hyatt, Benj. Wilson, Joseph Lee, Joseph Keeler, Joseph Benedict, Richard Osborne, Samuel Smith, Daniel Olmstead, Timothy Keeler, Jonah Keeler, Mathew Seymour, Joseph Northrop and James Brown, of the first part, and Adam Ireland, John Thomas and Benj. Birdsell of the second part, whereby the former released to the latter 18,000 acres of land.



said forty thousand two hundred and fifty acres, etc., now this Indenture witnesseth that the said Wm. Smith, for and in consideration of the sum of five shillings to him in hand, paid whereof he hereby grants the receipt, etc., and discharged the said George Clarke thereof, hath granted, etc., (he being in possession thereof by virtue of a lease to him and others, bearing date the day of the date of these presents, etc. No's 39, No. 72, No. 37, No. 28, No. 25, No. 8, lot No. 4 being easterly, bounds 18½ chains northerly from the monument, corresponding to the monument at the western bounds, at the distance of four miles northerly from the monument at the end of the twenty miles from Cortlandt Point.<sup>a</sup>

The following imperfect deed in the register's office at White Plains is all that remains of a conveyance from this Benj. Wilson to Joseph Keeler (another of the patentees of 1731) for all his right title and interest in the "Southern ten miles of the Oblong"

"Benj. Wilson to Joseph Keeler, know all men by these presents that I Benj. Wilson of Ridgefield in the county of Fairfield and Colony of Connecticut in New England for and in consideration of six lbs. 12s. in hand received of Joseph Keeler of said Ridgefield which is to say full satisfaction have given, granted, bargained and sold, and by these presents do peaceably, freely and also sell, convey and confirm unto the said Joseph Keeler, his heirs and assigns forever all his right, title and property and pretence whatsoever I have in or unto the within southern ten miles of the "Oblong or Equivalent Lands" so-called, accruing unto me by virtue of a Patent obtained with others of his late Excellency Jno. Montgomerie, Esq., Governor of New York by virtue of a release obtained of Adam Ireland, Jno. Thomas, Benj. Birdsell of southern ten miles unto Mrs. Clarke, Doctor Golding, Mrs. Smith and Mrs. Brown,<sup>b</sup> all ownership whatsoever, property challenge, claim and demand I have or can make in or unto said above premises, I resign up unto said Keeler his heirs, executors and assigns, to have and to hold or *can say I have unto* the said Keeler his heirs and assigns he preparing all duties whatsoever is required by patent of any wise thereupon and the said Keeler his heirs and assigns may forever hereafter enter upon possession and convey ye same and in what way and manner to what use and *agrg* so ever they see convenient; and it is to be understood before signing and sealing hereof, and it is the true intent and meaning hereof and of both parties, that I warrant the above premises only from myself, my heirs, my executors administrators and assigns or any claiming from by or under me, I do also covenant and promise for myself, my heirs—be it remembered on the 11th of March, 1743, Jno. Wallis one of the witnesses of the within deed of conveyance personally appeared before me Samuel Purdy one of the judges of the inferior Court of Common Pleas for the County of Westchester assigned and being duly sworn, declared that he saw the grantee himself sign, seal and deliver the same to Joseph Keeler as his free act and deed for the uses therein mentioned and that he likewise saw Sam'l Olmstead sign for the other witness with him the same time and I having suspected the same I find no material mistake or interlineation do allow the same to be recorded.

SAM'L PURDY".<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Albany deed book, 14, 1739-1750, pp. 133, 4, 5, 6.

<sup>b</sup> James Brown, the husband of the lady was living at this time.—*Editor*

<sup>c</sup> White Plains Rec. Lib. g. p. 670-1. The following certificate is attached to the deed:

"A true copy of the original so far as appeared to be whole; part of the original deed was rat eaten or torn exceedingly."

JOHN BARTOW, Clerk.

0

Ab. Van Hornn, for Wm. & Mary Barrets	2	1	Henry Coyer 4th m.				28th m.
George Clarke	4	3	Arc'd Kennedy				30th m.
Dan'l Townsend	6	5	Sam'l Field 6th m.				
George Clarke	8	7	Ja. Alexander	Ab. Van Horn, for Wm. & Mary Burnett	46	45	Cad Colden
			8th m.	Joshua Barnes	48	47	35th m. Elias Clapp
		9	Sam'l Baker	Adam Ireland	50	49	Sam'l Fields
		10	Rich'd Bradley 10th m.	Gilbert Willett	52	51	37th m, Uriah Root, A. I.
		11	Wm. Smith & Co.	John Rall	54	63	Henry Taylor
		12	Cad. Colden 12th m.	Carl Colden	56	55	Elias Clapp
		13	Uriah Root	George Clarke	58	57	Dan'l Townsend
Jacob Havilar	16	14	Ja. Alexander	Carl Colden	60	59	Ja. Brown & Co.
		15	Ja. Alexander & Co. 14th m.	Benj. Birdsell	62	61	Con'l Fleeman 42nd m.
George Clarke	18	17	Arc'd Kennedy	Vincent Mathew	64	63	John Thomas
Adam Ireland	20	19	Joshua Barns 16th m.	Vincent Mathew	66	65	George Clarke
Sam'l Baker	22	21	Ja. Alexander & Co.	Wm. Smith & Co.	68	67	44th m. Wm. Smith & Co.
Cad. Colden	24	23	Jacob Havilar	George Clarke	70	69	George Clarke
Benj. Birdsall	26	25	Con'l Harmann	George Clarke	72	71	John Rall
Cad. Colden	28	27	Jas. Brown & Co.	Gilbert Willet	74	73	47th m. Arch'd Kennedy
Jeorean Roots	30	29	20th m. Nath'n Birdsall and Jas. Brown			75	George Clarke,
Geo. Clarke	32	31	Jas. Brown & Co.			76	Ja. Brown & Co.
James Brown	34	33	22nd m. Arch'd Kennedy			77	Rich'd Bradley
John Thomas	36	35	Geo. Clarke			78	Nat'n Birdsell & Jas. Brown
James Brown	38	37	Wm. Smith & Co. 24th m.			79	Cad Colden
Wm. Smith & Co	40	39	Cad. Colden			80	Uriah Root
Ja. Alexander & Co.	42	41	Wm. Smith & Co. 24th m.				
George Clarke	44	43	Vincent Mathew				
			25				

By a scale of  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles, or 200 chains, in an inch.



There is a tradition in this town that James Brown, Esq., of Norwalk, finding certain lands in the Oblong to be unclaimed, obtained a grant for them of the crown. The truth is, James Brown of Salem, and Wm. Smith of New York, had been at considerable expense in purchasing from the native Indian proprietors, about eleven thousand acres of land *not included in Hawley's or the East Patent*; this land being mostly in the lower section of the Oblong. It appears that these very lands called as we have seen "New Fairfield," were claimed by Hawley and Company, as having been patented by Connecticut in 1707, notwithstanding they had been surrendered subsequently by that colony to New York, the Patentees pretending that New York could not take away their right of freehold before vested in those lands.<sup>a</sup> To quiet these claims therefore, James Brown purchased for the sum of £1,000 pounds their "*New Fairfield Right*" within the Equivalent Lands "which sale comprehended nearly two thousand acres of the lands purchased of the Indians and not included in the said Patent from this government." As appears from the following Petition of William Smith and James Brown for 4,000 acres of land in the Oblong:

To his Excellency the Honorable George Clinton, Captain General and Governor-in-chief in and over the Province of New York and the territories thereon depending in America, vice-Admiral of the same and Admiral of the White Squadron of his Majesty's Fleet.

The Petition of William Smith of the City of New York, attorney-at-law, and James Brown of Salem in the County of Westchester, attorney-at-law.

Humbly sheweth:

That your Petitioners on the eighth day of June last presented their humble petition to your Excellency wherein and whereby they did set forth unto your Excellency that your said Petitioners were interested in fifty thousand acres of land which by Letters Patent had been granted to Thomas Hawley and others bearing date the eighth day of June, one thousand seven hundred and thirty-one, the same being part of the Equivalent Land, lately surrendered by the Colony of Connecticut to the Colony of New York.

That in order to obtain the said grant your Petitioners had born a considerable part of a very great and unusual expense in running the division lines between the said two Colonies.

That pursuant to a licence from this government your Petitioners had also born a considerable part of the expense of the purchase from the native Indians of about eleven thousand acres of land not included in or granted by the said Letters Patent which purchase was made and the consideration thereof paid by your Petitioner James Brown as by deed, in the lands of your Petitioners might appear.

That the said eleven thousand acres of land were not returned at the time of obtaining the said Patent with the annual quit-rent and the Patent charges.

<sup>a</sup> The early settlers, especially of Lower Salem or Lewisboro, when they first arrived here and even for some time after, imagined themselves within the bounds of Norwalk. The final adjustment of the boundaries, left them in the province of New York. [Editor.]



That the government of Connecticut in May, one thousand seven hundred and thirty-one in the most authentic manner had surrendered to this Colony the said Equivalent Lands. Pursuant to a former agreement in the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-three but had in the year one thousand seven hundred and seven granted to Nathan Gould and others fourteen miles in the length of the said Equivalent Lands which included a great part of the land purchased of the Natives and Patented within this government as aforesaid which grantees of Connecticut (called the Proprietors of New Fairfield) claimed these lands, notwithstanding the said surrender, pretending that it could not take away their Right of Freehold before vested in those lands, though it subject their land to the government of New York.

That in order to quiet this claim, your Petitioner, James Brown, in the year one thousand seven hundred and forty-two, for about one thousand pounds value in New York money, had purchased their New Fairfield Right within the Equivalent Lands, which purchase comprehended near two thousand acres of the land purchased of the Indians and not included in the said Patent from this government.

That your Petitioners were solely interested in the said land purchase from New Fairfield, and not granted by the said Patent, and paid the whole proportion of the consideration for the same New Fairfield purchase. But are willing to pay his Majesty the annual quit-rents for these lands, and some more of the said lands purchased of the natives aforesaid.

By which petition your said Petitioners did humbly pray that it might please your Excellency, in consideration of the premises, to grant his Majesty's Letters Patent to your Petitioners, for four thousand acres of the said Equivalent Lands, including your petitioners lands under the purchase from New Fairfield Proprietors, and such other lands within the said Indian purchase as should be convenient for your said Petitioners, in the whole amounting to that quantity, with the annual allowance for highways, &c., &c., and that a warrant might issue to his Majesty's surveyor-general to survey and lay out the same as by the said petition thereunto being had, may appear, which Petition on the 2d day of July following, being read and referred for consideration to a committee of his Majesty's humble Council for this province, (who thereupon made their report,) an order was made by your Excellency, with that of the said Honourable Board, that his Majesty's Letters Patent should be granted to your Petitioners for four thousand acres of the vacant Lands, &c., &c.

May it therefore please your Excellency, in consideration of the families, to grant to your said Petitioners, His Majesty's Letters Patent, and on the seal of the Province, &c., and your petitioners shall pray, &c.

WM. SMITH,  
JAMES BROWN.

New York, July 5th, 1751,<sup>a</sup>

The following description of the Lands occurs amongst the Land Papers.

The description of the land granted on the Petitions of James

<sup>a</sup> New York Col. MSS. 1744-1752, vol. xiv. p. 120. A second petition of Wm. Smith and Jas. Brown occurs on the 19th of Nov. 1751, for lands in the Oblong. Land Papers, Albany, vol. xiv. p. 120.

Brown and William Smith should be as follows, in my opinion, in the warrant to the Surveyor General.

Four thousand acres of land or so much of that quantity as the Petitioners shall think convenient for them to be laid out in several parts or parcels not exceeding *four parts or parcels* within that tract called the Equivalent Land, lately surrendered by the Colony of Connecticut to this Colony of New York and within such parts of the said Equivalent Lands, consisting of about eleven thousand acres of lands which were not included in or granted by Letters Patent bearing date the eighth day of June, one thousand seven hundred and thirey-one to Thos. Hawley and others, nor to other person or persons by Letters Patent under the great seal of the Province of New York since that time.

MR. BANYAR:

Please to mould the above Description in the usual form of a warrant retaining the above or substance in the same or other words and favor me with the right of the Draft before it is copied fair, and

You'll oblige your humble servant,

WM. SMITH.

19 Nov., 1751.

endorsed note to Mr. Banyar inserting description of 4000 acres of land in warrant to surveyor general.

In the order or minutes of Council in a little before June, 1723, directing any explanatory Declaration of the King's reservation if any to be inserted in Letters Patent,<sup>a</sup>

About one month after the date of the petition of Brown and Smith occurred a release and quit-claim deed from Joseph Keeler and nineteen others, (thirteen of whom were grantees under the East Patent in 1731,) to the first Presbyterian or Independent minister, "that should be settled and ordained" in the town of Salem, consisting of two tracts of tand lying on the *Lower released ten miles of the Oblong or Equivalent Lands, which is yet undivided, &c.*<sup>b</sup>

The signatures of William Smith and James Brown, the Petitioners for the Patent, are wanting to this document and only one of the names among the four surrounding proprietors, mentioned in the deed, is attached.

It appears as if these claimants of the Lower portion of the Oblong were fearing the result of Smith and Brown's second Petition to the crown on the 19th of November, 1751. Surely there can be no question whether the above conveyance would be good for any fractional portion, if an undivided moiety of an undivided territory. But as we shall have more to say about this remarkable transaction in its proper place, we pass on to the granting of the Royal Letters Patent to William Smith of New York and James Brown of the County of Westches-

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. Col. MSS., vol. xix, p. 121, 1744-1752.

<sup>b</sup> The original document is indorsed on the back "Proprietor's Deed," was witnessed to, twenty-three years after the signing but never recorded,

ter. gentlemen, by Governor George Clinton, on the 22d of August, 1752, for "four several tracts of land within that tract of land called the "Equivalent Lands," which are not included or granted by letters patent the first of which began on the western bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, at the south-west corner of a tract of land in, or late granted to Thomas Hawley and others, known by the name of lot No. 9, containing 1,100 acres, &c." The grantees yielding, rendering and paying therefore unto the king and his heirs, at the Custom House, in New York, on the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary, commonly called Lady Day, the yearly rent of two shillings and sixpence, for each hundred acres of the lands granted.

#### ROYAL PATENT FOR LOWER PORTION OF OBLONG.

George the Second, by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c.<sup>a</sup> To all to whom these presents shall come, GREETING:—Whereas, our loving Subjects William Smith, Esq., our Attorney and Advocate-General of our Province of New York, and James Brown of the County of Westchester, Gentleman, by their humble Petition presented to our trusty and well beloved George Clinton, Esq., our Captain-General and Governor in Chief of our Province of New York and Territories therein depending, in America, Vice-Admiral of the same and Admiral of the White Squadron of our fleet and read in Council on the second day of July one thousand seven hundred and fifty, did pray our Letters Patent for four thousand acres of the land called the Equivalent Lands formerly surrendered by the Colony of Connecticut to the Colony of New York which Petition having been then and there read, our Council did afterwards to wit on the same day humbly advise our said Governor to grant to the petitioners our Letters Patent for four thousand acres of the said Lands to be laid out in one tract only, and whereas the said William Smith and James Brown by their further petition presented unto our said Governor and read in Council on the nineteenth day of November last past, suggesting that by prior surveys of sundry parts of the said Equivalent Lands they found it impossible to lay out the said four thousand acres of land in one place so as to be of any advantage to them, the Petitioners did pray that the said four thousand acres of land might be laid out in so many pieces as should be found convenient. Which Petition having been then and there also read our council did on the same day humbly advise our said Governor to issue a warrant to our surveyor general to survey and lay out the said lands in any number of tracts not exceeding four. In pursuance whereof and in obedience to our Royal Instructions for the purpose our Commissioners appointed by our said instructions for the setting out of all lands to be granted within our said Province have set out for the said Petitioners William Smith and James Brown all those four several tracts of land within that tract of land called the Equivalent lands lately surrendered by our Colony of Connecticut to our Colony of New York and which are not included in or granted by our Letters Patent under the great

<sup>a</sup> Book of Patents, Albany, p. 451-457.

seal of our Province of New York the first of which tracts begins in the western bounds of the said Equivalent Lands at the south-west corner of a tract of land in the land granted to Thomas Hawley and others known by the name of Lot No. 9 and runs thence along the lines of the said Lot and of a tract of land granted to John Ayscough to the eastern bounds of the said Equivalent lands then along the said eastern bounds one mile southerly to Lot No. 8 of the said lands granted to Thomas Hawley and others, then along the north bounds of said Lot No. 8 and of Lot No. 7 to the western bounds of the said Equivalent Lands and then along the said western bounds to the place where this first Tract began, containing one thousand and one hundred acres of land and the usual allowance for Highways the second of which tracts begins at the northwest corner of the lands granted to John Ayscough, being two White Oak trees growing out of one Root, the one marked C. G. the other W. S. being likewise the North-east corner of Lot No. 12 of the said lands granted to Thomas Hawley and others and the South-east corner of Lott No. 13 of the same Lands, and runs thence, along the bounds of the said lands granted to Thomas Hawley and others, being the Line of the said Lott No. 13 to Lot No. 16, then along the bounds of the said Lot No. 16 to Lot No. 18, then along the line of the said Lot No. 18 to the Eastern Bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, then along the said eastern boundry two hundred and seventeen Chains and two Rod to the said Lands granted to John Ayscough, and then along his Line to the place where this Second Tract began, containing one thousand acres of Land and the usual allowance for Highways; the third of which tracts begins at the twenty-eighth Mile Monument in the Western bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, and runs thence, South, Eighty-three degrees, east, Sixty-seven Chains, then North, twelve degrees and thirty minutes, East, twenty Chains, then South seventy-seven degrees and thirty minutes, East, forty chains, then south, twelve degrees and thirty minutes, West, one hundred and three Chains to lot No. 44 of the said Lands granted to Thomas Hawley and others, and then along the lines of the said Lott and of Lott No. 43 to the Western bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, and then along the said Bounds to the place where this third Tract *began*, containing eight hundred and ninety acres of Land, and the usual allowance for Highways, and the fourth of which Tracts begins at a Rock with a heap of stones upon it, which is at forty-two Chains distance, measures on a Line running North eighty degrees, east from the thirtieth Mile Monument in the Western Bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, and runs from said Rock South, twelve degrees, and thirty minutes, West, eighty Chains, then South seventy-seven degrees and thirty minutes, East fifty-four Chains, then North ninety Chains, then East fifteen Chains, then North fifty-five Chains, then North seventy-eight degrees thirty minutes, West, thirty-seven Chains, then South twelve degrees and thirty minutes, West sixty-two chains to the place where this fourth Tract began, Containing six hundred Acres of Land and the usual allowance for Highways; the said four Tracts Containing together three thousand five hundred and ninety acres of Land and the usual allowance for Highways; and in setting out thereof, the said Commissioners have had regard to the profitable and unprofitable Acres and have taken care that the Length of said Tracts on either of them do not extend along the Banks of any River otherwise than is Conformable to our Royal Instructions for that purpose, as by a certificate thereof under their hands bearing date the thirtieth day of July



last past and entered on Record in our Secretary's Office in our city of New York may more fully appear which said Four Tracts of land Set out as aforesaid according to our Royal Instructions We being willing to grant to the said William Smith and James Brown their heirs and assigns forever, Know YE, that of our especial Grace certain Knowledge and meer motion, We have given granted Ratified and Confirmed and Do by these presents for us our Heirs and Successors, Give, Grant, Ratify and Confirm, unto the said William Smith and James Brown, their Heirs and Assigns forever, All the said Tracts or Parcels of Land so set out marked abutted bounded mentioned and described as is above expressed Concerning the same, TOGETHER with all and singular the Woods underwoods Trees Timbers Feedings Pastures Meadows Marshes Swamps Ways Waters Water-courses Rivers Brooks Rivultes Runs and *Streams* of Waters Fishings Fowling Hunting and Hawking Mines and Minerals of all sorts whatsoever (except Gold Mines and Silver Mines) which now are standing growing lying being or found or at any time hereafter shall be standing growing lying being or found in or upon the above Granted Lands or any part thereof or within the Bounds or Limits of the same and all the profits liberties privileges Tenements Hereditaments and Appurtenances whatsoever to the same Lands and premises or any part thereof belonging or in any wise appertaining, and all our Estate Right Title Interest Possession benefit claim and demand whatsoever of in and to the same Lands and Premises and every or any part thereof and the Reversion and Reversions Remainder and Remainders of all and Singular the said Premises Except also and always reserved out of these our present Grant unto us our Heirs and Successors forever All Trees of the Diameter of twenty-four inches and upwards at twelve inches from the Ground for Masts for our Royal Navy and also all such other Trees as may be fit to make Planks Knees and other things necessary for the use of our said Navy only which are now standing Growing or being in or upon the above Granted Lands or any part thereof with free Liberty and Lycence for any person or persons whatsoever by us our Heirs or Successors to be thereunto especially appointed under our or their Sign Manual Either with or without Workmen Horses Waggons Carts or any other Carriages to enter and come into and upon the said Lands and every or any part thereof and there to fall cut down root up Hew Square Saw work up have take and Carry away the same for the uses aforesaid To HAVE AND TO HOLD the one Moiety or half part of the said Tracts or Parcels of Land Tenements Hereditaments Mines Minerals and Premises with their and every of their Appurtenances by these presents Granted Ratified and Confirmed or meant mentioned or intended to be hereby Granted Ratified and Confirmed (except as is herein before excepted) unto the said William Smith his Heirs and Assigns to the only proper use and behoof of him the said William Smith his heirs and assigns forever. AND TO HAVE AND TO HOLD the other moiety or half part of the said Tracts or Parcels of Land Tenements Hereditaments Mines Minerals and premises with their and every of their Appurtenances by these presents Granted Ratified and *Confirmed* or meant mentioned or intended to be hereby Granted Ratified and *Confirmed* (except as is herein before excepted) unto the said James Brown his Heirs and assigns to the only proper use and behoof of him the said James Brown his heirs and assigns forever To BE HOLDERS of us our Heirs and Assigns forever in free and Common Soccage as of our Manor of East Greenwich in the County of

Kent within our Kingdom of Great Britain YIELDING Rendering and paying therefore yearly and every year forever unto us our Heirs and Successors at our Custom House in our City of New York unto our or their Collector or Receiver General there for the time, being in the Annunciation of the blessed Virgin Mary commonly called Lady Day—the Yearly Rent of two shillings and sixpence for each hundred Acres of the above Granted Lands and so in proportion for any Lesser Quantity thereof (the Land allowed for Highways only excepted) in Lieu and stead of all other Rents Services Dues Duties and Demands whatsoever for the above Granted Lands Mines Minerals Tenements Hereditaments and premises or any part thereof, PROVIDED always and upon Condition that if our said Grantees their Heirs and Assigns or one of them shall not within three years next ensuing the date hereof Plant Settle and effectually Cultivate at least three Acres of every fifty Acres of such of the above Granted Lands as are Capable of Cultivation or if our said Grantees their Heirs or Assigns or any other person or persons by their or either of their privy Consent or procurement shall set on fire or Burn the Woods on the said Lands or any part thereof (so as to destroy impair or hinder the Growth of any of the Trees there that are or may be fit for Masts Planks Knees or other things fit for the use of our Royal Navy that then and in either of these Cases this our present Grant and every thing therein Contained shall cease and be void anything hereinbefore Contained to the Contrary notwithstanding DECLARING nevertheless that nothing in these presents Reserved or Contained shall or ought to be Construed to extend or be intended to prohibit or in any wise hinder our said Grantees their Heirs or Assigns or either of them from such Burning of the Woods or Cutting down or falling of the Trees that are or shall be Growing or being on the above Granted Lands or any part thereof as shall be necessary or Conducive to the Cleaning and effectual Cultivating the same Lands or any part thereof or to or for their own use or uses And we do hereby further Declare that by the said Burning of the Woods is only meant and intended that our said Grantees their Heirs and Assigns are to be restrained only from setting fire to and burning any Timber or Trees while they are standing and Growing upon the above granted Lands or any part thereof And we do likewise Declare that the Reservation of all Trees of the Diameter of twenty-four inches and upwards at twelve inches from the Ground for Masts for our Royal Navy and of such other Trees as may be fit to make Planks Knees and other things necessary for the use of our said Royal Navy is not, ought not, to be Construed to hinder our said Grantees or either of them their or either of their Heirs or Assigns from Clearing or effectually Cultivating the above granted Lands or any part thereof And we do moreover of our Especial Grace Certain Knowledge and meer motion Consent and Agree that this our present Grant being entered on Record as is hereinafter particularly expressed shall be good and effectual in the Law to all intents Constructions and purposes against us our Heirs and Successors notwithstanding any misreciting misbounding misnaming or other Imperfection Omission of or in anywise Concerning the above Granted or intended to be herein Granted Lands Tenements Hereditaments Mines Minerals and Premises or any part thereof in Testimony whereof We have caused these our Letters to be made Patent and the Great Seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed and the same to be entered on Record in our Secretary's Office in one of the Books of Patents there remaining Witness our said Trusty and Well beloved

George Clinton our Captain General and Governour in Chief of our Province of New York and Territories therein depending in America Vice Admiral of the same and Admiral of the White Squadron of our Fleet At our Fort in our City of New York the twenty-second day of August in the Year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and fifty-two and of our reign the twenty-sixth

CLARKE JUN<sup>r</sup>

In the preceeding Certificate and Letters Patent the following Erasures &c appear page 449 line 11 (Smith) wrote on Erasure line 15 and 16 (the first of which Tracts) obliterated last line of same page (the) obliterated page 452 between the second and third lines (begins) between 10 and 11 lines (first) interl<sup>l</sup> Line 20 (the) obliterated and page 453 line 19th (purpose) wrote on Erasure Exam<sup>t</sup> and Comp<sup>d</sup> with the Original By me.

GEO. BANYAR D. Sec<sup>y</sup>.

I do hereby Certify the preceding Certificate and Patent to be true Copies of their respective Original Records, word *Petitioners* 15th line page 451 on Razure. Compared therewith by me

LOUIS A. SCOTT, Secretary.<sup>a</sup>

James Brown, Esq. (attorney-at-law) one of the above Patentees was an early inhabitant of Norwalk, for among "the estates of Commonage of that place presented and accepted by the town, January 3, 1687, occurs the name of 'James Brown, £50. s.00. d.00.'<sup>b</sup> The origin of this family is a little uncertain; they were probably, however, a branch of the Brown's of Stamford, Lincolnshire, England, a house of 'no little repute.' Their monuments still speak of their fame; the Church of All Saints, standing on the north side of the Red Line Square, in the old English town, was the gift of John Brown, who was an alderman of the city in 1462, and in the Church of St. Mary's can now be seen brass figures of Wm. Brown and his wife. A hospital, also, founded in the reign of the third Richard, is still a monument here to the humanity of this Wm. Brown."<sup>c</sup> In 1708, as we have already seen, James Brown was one of the first proprietors of Ridgefield<sup>d</sup> and in 1729, had one hundred acres of land set off to him on the west side of the Oblong, on or near the Parsonage Lands. He must have died in February, 1769, leaving by his wife Joanna two sons and five daughters. The will of James Brown bears date 31st of July, 1766.

<sup>a</sup> Book of Patents, Albany, p. 451 to 457,

<sup>b</sup> E. Hall's, Norwalk, 1650-1800, p. 84.

<sup>c</sup> Huntington's hist. of Stamford, pp. 910. Among the early settlers of New England, was James the son of Joseph Brown, who came from South Hampton, Eng., and was one of the first settlers of Newberry.—*Farmer's Register*. The will of James Brown of Colchester bears date May 10, 1709, sons James and John, New London, Probate Rec, Inventory June 8, 1704.

<sup>d</sup> His lot, as one of the twenty-nine proprietors, in Ridgefield, is now owned by Philip Barthe and Francis A. Rockwell. The coat armor of Maurice Brown, Sheriff of Hampshire and Surrey, 4th Henry, viz.: sa three lions passant gardant betwixt 2 bends governors, arg.

## WILL OF JAMES BROWN.

In the name of God, Amen, the thirty-first day of July, in the sixth year of the reign of our sovereign, Lord George, the Third of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., Annoque Domini, one thousand seven hundred and sixty-six. I, James Brown, of Norwalk, in the County of Fairfield and Colony of Connecticut, in New England, being arrived to old age and under great Bodily Infirmity, but being of sound mind and perfect memory, thanks be to God therefor, and being desirous to set my house in order before I Die, Do make and ordain this my last Will and Testament; that is to say, principally, and first of all I commit my soul into the hands of God who gave it, and my body to the earth to be Decently buried at the Discretion of my Executors hereafter mentioned hoping by the Almighty Power of God to receive the same again at the General Resurrection; and as touching such worldly estate as it hath pleased the Lord to bless me with in this life, I give, Devise and Dispose of in the following manner and form, that is to say, Imprimis, I will that all my Just Debts that I owe, either in Law or Conscience, be fully answered by my Executors, and that my funeral expenses be fully answered and Discharged by the Executors. Item, I give and bequeath unto Joanna Brown my Dear and Loving wife my Negro man Tower Hill during the term of her natural life, and in case the said negro man Tower Hill shall live after my said wife's decease, I give him to my son Samuel Brown, during the natural life of the said Negro man; and my will is that my said wife shall have the Benefit of one Room to live in of my Mansion House in Norwalk, that is, such a Room as she shall choose and twenty pound paid to her yearly by my Executors, out of my Estate for her support during the Term of Her natural Life. In case she Demands it and in case she shall not Demand it, my Executors shall not be accountable to any Person whatsoever for any part of said yearly sum of twenty pound, after my wife's decease, and my will further is that my said wife shall have the one-third part of all my household goods, to dispose of as she shall think proper, and the remaining part of my household goods, I give and bequeath unto my two daughters Joanna and Ann to be equally divided between them, except my Large Looking Glass, which I give and bequeath unto my said Daughter Joanna, and it shall not be reckoned to be any part of her share of my household goods.

Item, I give and bequeath unto my son James Brown and his heirs and assigns forever—the Dwelling House he now lives in at Salem, in the Province of New York, and all the lands that I have, which lyeth north of the Road or Highway leading from Ridgefield to Bedford, which lyeth south of a pond called the Long Pond, and I likewise give and bequeath to my said son James Brown, to his heirs and assignees forever my negro man Lucas and his son Dyar.

Item, I give, Devise and Bequeath unto my sons James and Samuel and to their Heirs and assigns forever the Barn standing on the south side the said road leading from Ridgefield to Bedford with one-half of the land I have, lying on the south side of the said road, which is bounded west by the twenty mile line, and south by a pond called the cross pond, and so to extend easterly so far as to make the one-half of that part of land I have adjoining to the Patent on



the south side of said road, and to be so divided between them as to make it equal as near as may be in Quantity and Quality, and the other half of that Farm of land so lying and adjoining I give and devise unto my sons James and Samuel, and my daughter Joanna and to their heirs and assigns forever in equal shares to be divided among them.

Item, I give and bequeath unto my daughter Joanna Brown, and to her heirs and assigns my negro man Cato and the wench he hath now married; likewise I give and bequeath unto my said daughter Joanna one cow and calf, such as she shall choose, and my young mair colt at Salem which came of my old black pacing mair.

Item, I give, Devise and bequeath unto my daughter Rebecca Brown her heirs and assigns forever, the house she now lives in at Salem, and ten acres of land next adjoining to it on both sides of the Highway.

Item, I give and bequeath to my daughter Ann Raymond and to her heirs and assigns one cow and a calf, and as to the remainder of my stock of cows, oxen, young cattle, horses and swine not claimed by my son James, I give and bequeath unto my two sons James and Samuel to their heirs and assigns to be equally divided between them—and as to the remainder of my estate both real and personal, not heretofore in this my last will Disposed of, I do hereby appoint, authorize and fully empower my said sons James Brown and Samuel Brown to sell, Dispose of and convey the same—that is to say, all my houses and lands that belong to me either by Law or Equity, whether the same lyeth in the Colonies of Connecticut or New York, or Elsewhere, and thereof to make and execute such good and ample deed, to the purchasers thereof for their holding the same as my said sons shall think proper—and in case the outstanding Debts that I may have at the time of my Decease, shall not be sufficient to pay all the Just Debts that I may owe at the time of my Decease, then I will and order that my said sons James and Samuel whom I do hereby appoint Executors of this my last Will and Testament shall pay out of the money that my said Houses and Lands may sell for what my Debts shall not be sufficient to pay in the first place.

And secondly, that my said Executors shall pay out of the moneys my said Houses and Lands may sell for unto my two youngest daughters Elizabeth and Ann so much with what I have already given them as to make them equal to what I have heretofore given to my two daughters Rebecca and Mary; and thirdly, my will is that what money may remain for any of my lands sold by my two sons as aforesaid, after all the just charges my said sons may be put to in selling and disposing of my said lands, any charges or law suits that may happen in recovering any part of my said lands or any agreements my said sons may come into for the procuring the possession of any part of my said land, being first deducted out of the prices of the lands so sold for shall be divided among my children in the following manner, viz.: unto my sons James and Samuel three quarters thereof to be equally divided between them, and the other quarter thereof to be divided to and among my five daughters in the following manner, that is to say, daughter Joanna a double share of said quarter, and the remainder of said Estate to be equally divided to and among my other four daughters.

Finally, I do hereby Revoke, Disannul and make void all former Wills and

Bequests by me made, and declare this only to be my Last Will and Testament; and In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year first above written.

JAMES BROWN.

Signed, sealed, published,  
pronounced and delivered  
by the Testator to be  
his last Will and Testament  
in presence of

SUSSANNA VENGARAE,  
WILLIAM TENNENT, JR.  
THOMAS FITCH, JR.<sup>a</sup>

This shows that the Testator at the time of his death in 1769, was in possession of Lands, (which he styles the Patent,) on the north side of the road leading from Ridgefield to Bedford, which extended north as far as Long Pond, and that he held a one-half moiety of land on the south side of said road bounded west by the twenty mile line, and south by Cross Pond, which made one-half of that part of land which he owned adjoining the *Patent* on the south side of said road; and, also, that he had other lands which he was then endeavoring to recover possession of. James Brown, Esq., the eldest son of James Brown, and second Patentee of Lower Salem, was born at Norwalk, Conn., Dec. 18, 1720. He was for some time a Justice of the Peace, and a warm friend and supporter of the Church of England, and for the endowment of this parish gave one hundred acres of land said to be the "*Parsonage Lands.*"<sup>b</sup> The services of the Church of England were held in his house prior to the erection of the church edifice in 1771, which stood on land donated by him, directly opposite the cross roads leading from South Salem to Ridgefield. This land is now held by the family of the late Thaddeus Keeler. The Rev. Ebenezer Dibblee, D. D., rector of St. John's church, Stamford, and missionary of the venerable Propagation Society, who considered Salem at that time to be within his cure, records the following in his parochial register: "1758, May 12th, baptized, Obediah, slave of James Brown, Esq., of Salem."<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 20th of September, 1775, we find James Brown, of Salem,

<sup>a</sup> The will on the back has this endorsement—James Brown's will Proved March 7th, 1769, Exec. Accept. Recorded. Copied from original will on file in Probate office, Fairfield, Conn. There is no proof of its ever having been recorded. [Editor.]

<sup>b</sup> This deed of gift has always been withheld from the Episcopal Church, since and even prior to the Revolution. It is asserted on the testimony of the late William Watson Wellman, of New Haven, for many years a vestryman of this parish, that Stephen Pardee, of South Salem, was once heard to declare, between the years 1830 and 1836, that "a Mr. Joseph Benedict of the same place had in his possession the deed from James Brown to the church for the Parsonage Lands in question." It is not a little singular that this same Stephen Pardee, on two or three occasions in 1849-1850, visited the present Alfred S. Hawley, Esq., for the purpose of ascertaining whether the Presbyterian title to these Parsonage Lands was valid or not. The Prot. Episcopal Church was then re-organizing and there was much talk about erecting a new edifice and claiming the lower "*Parsonage Lands.*"

<sup>c</sup> St. John's Parochial Register, Stamford, Conn.

yeoman, mortgaging two hundred acres of land lying on "the southeasterly side of the road leading from Bedford to Ridgefield, etc.," to Peter Jay, of Rye, for the sums of £137. s 16. d 7.<sup>a</sup> Mr. Brown one of the principal founders and contributors towards the support of this parish died at his residence in Lower Salem, on Sunday the 19th of February, 1786, aged sixty-six,<sup>b</sup> and is supposed to have been interred at South Salem. The old Brown mansion which was erected before 1750, and occupied the site of the present shed on the opposite side of the road facing the residence of Mr. Wakeman Wood, was removed sometime in November, 1836. In this house, Washington and staff took dinner on one occasion during the Revolutionary war.<sup>c</sup> Tower Hill, one of the old family slaves who lived to a great age, but was at last frozen to death during the heavy Christmas snow storm of 1811, lies buried on the spot named after him by the side of his ancient comrades Cato, Lucas and Dyar. Obediah was fond of relating stories of his master's family, and telling how deer, bear, wolves and other game once abounded in the neighborhood of Cross Pond, and especially wild geese which he had frequently shot in the marshy grounds, directly in front of the residence of Mr. Gardiner J. Kellogg. At this early period "the old cart path" leading from Ridgefield to Salem, was marked by notched trees.

Mary Brown, the sister of James, married Samuel Isaacs, Esq., of Norwalk, Conn., and died at Salem, November 26, 1801, aged seventy-nine, or eighty-one,<sup>d</sup> leaving two sons, Isaac Isaacs, who died at Salem, Oct. 2, 1820, and Samuel Brown Isaacs, Esq., who succeeded his uncle James Brown, Esq., in all his rights, titles and interest in Lower Salem, which is said to have amounted to five hundred acres of land. Upon the 21st of June, 1788, we find his relatives conveying to him much of the real estate of his late uncle, besides what his mother and other near relatives had already granted, etc.

<sup>a</sup> Rec. White Plains, Lib. C. p. 42.

<sup>b</sup> The Rev. Solomon Mead, records in his list of deaths from Dec. 22, 1767, to May 20, 1805. February 19, 1786, James Brown, Esq., "January 8, 1771, died Mrs. Brown." "January 16, 1775, Samuel Brown."

<sup>c</sup> The timbers of the old house are still preserved in the carriage shed, most of them measure 13½ inches by 15 inches. The ancient door step is still retained in front of the present house, and the famous pear tree nearly two hundred years old is yet standing and bears fruit yearly.

<sup>d</sup> The following entry occurs in the family Bible of the Isaacs', (evidently written in the hand of Sam'l B. Isaacs, Esq.) "My dear mother, Mary Isaacs, departed this life, Nov. 26, 1801." The book itself is entitled, "The New Testament of our Lord Jesus Christ, translated out of the original Greek, etc." New York: stereotyped and printed by D. & G. Bruce, 27 William St., 1815.

QUIT CLAIM OF JOANNA BROWN, ANN RAYMOND, JAMES BROWN  
KETCHUM AND ELIZABETH ANN KETCHUM, TO SAM'L  
B. ISAACS, ESQ., OF LOWER SALEM.

Know all men by these presents that we James Brown and Anne Raymond of Lower Salem in the County of West Chester and State of New York and James Brown Ketchum and Elizabeth Ann Ketchum of the city and County of New York and said State being part of the heirs of the estate of James Brown Esq late of Salem deceased having actually agreed and consented to make a division of said deceased real estate with all the heirs to said estate, and whereas Samuel B. Isaacs of said Lower Salem hath obtained from his mother and his near relatives a considerable share or right in the estate of said deceased and whereas the whole of said heirs have mutually consented that Abijah Gilbert Esq and Mr. Benjamin Smith should make a division of the real estate of said Deceased to any among the whole of the heirs thereof who have sett off and divided to said Samuel B. Isaacs the whole of the said deceased died seized of lying on the north side of the road or highway leading from Ridgefield to Bedford containing one hundred and nine acres two rods and twenty-one rods together with the dwelling house standing thereon and also one hundred and twenty-six rods of land lying on the south side of said road opposite dwelling house being eight rods in width from north to south and seventeen rods in length from East to West together with the barn yard, garden, well and well yard, in the lane. Now know ye this we the said Joanna, Anne, James and Elizabeth do by these presents approve of and ratify said division made as above, to said Samuel B. Isaacs and that we do each of us for the consideration of said Samael B. Isaacs, having obtained a right as a heir in said deceased estate also for the love and respect and good will we have for him, also for the further consideration of the sum of £20 New York money and also for divers other good and valuable considerations all which we have fully received of the said Samuel B. Isaacs, and are therewith fully satisfied and contented Do remise, release and forever quit unto him the said Samuel B. Isaacs and to his heirs and assigns forever all our right to, title interest or challings or demands, that we or other of us have in and unto the above described lands and buildings unto any part and parcel thereof who may forever hereafter by virtue hereof enter upon possession and enjoy conveying, presenting aliening or transferring the same in what way and manner to what use and end soever he the said Samuel B. Isaacs his heirs or assigns shall see good and convenient without any lett or hindrance or molestation whatsoever from the said James and Anne, James or Elizabeth or from either of us our heirs or from any other person or persons who acting by authority by from or under us or either of us or them. In witness whereof we have hereunto respectively set our hands and seals this twenty-first day of June, A.D. 1788.

Syned sealed and delivered  
in presence of us

JOSIAH SCOFIELD,  
HENRY SCOFIELD.

JOANNA BROWN,  
ANN RAYMOND,  
JAMES B. KETCHUM,  
ELIZABETH A. KETCHUM,<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> White Plains Rec., vol. K., p. 496.



On the 19th of September, 1798, Joanna Brown of the Town of Salem, bequeathed "to her sister Ann Raymond the use and improvement of all her lands and tenements, which I dye seized of whether in possession, reversion or remainder during her natural life; and at the decease of my sister Ann R., I give and devise to my niece Betsy Ann Ketchum, the use and improvement of the same lands, &c.," "and at her decease or marriage," &c., then the reversion or remainder to my nephew Samuel B. Isaacs, and to his heirs and assigns forever in fee, simple, &c. This will was proved May 7th, 1799.<sup>a</sup> Samuel Brown Isaacs, Esq., like his uncle, was for many years a Justice of the Peace, in Lower or South Salem, and also a warm supporter of the Church. For some time services were held in his house<sup>b</sup> (the old Brown mansion) after the Church edifice had been torn down in 1788, and the land seized—until the year of his death, as proprietor of his uncle James Brown's estate, he exercised acts of ownership in the "*Lower Parsonage Lands*," claiming he had as much right to cut timber thereon as the pretended owners themselves. He frequently invited a suit to test his right, but could never induce his opponents to try the case before the courts.<sup>c</sup> He was one of the first vestrymen of the parish after its reorganization in 1810, and a delegate to the Diocesan Convention in 1811. He died at his residence in South or Lower Salem, Nov. 22d, 1819, and lies buried there in the Presbyterian grave-yard.

In  
Memory of  
SAMUEL B. ISAACS, Esq.,  
who died  
November 22d, 1819.  
Æ. 63.

By his wife Hannah Mercer he left two sons, James Brown Isaacs, his administrator, 28th of December, 1819,<sup>d</sup> who afterwards removed to Lebanon, Meigs County, Ohio, and died there in the Fall of 1857; and Edward Isaacs who married Elmira, daughter of Nehemiah Fancher, M.D., of Poundridge, and died Sept. 25th, 1831 aged 31. His son is the present Samuel Brown Isaacs of Poundridge.

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's office, White Plains. Fol. B, of Wills, p. 12.

<sup>b</sup> Milo Webster of South Salem, now living, remembers his mother leading him by the hand on Sundays to attend services in the old Brown Mansion. Jeremiah Wood, aged 78, well remembers evading his uncle who was an elder in the Presbyterian Society, and on his way to meeting or purpose to attend an afternoon service in the old house.

<sup>c</sup> Testimony of the late Jonathan Burr, of Vista, and William Burr of Ridgefield, also of David Hayes of Lewisboro.

<sup>d</sup> Letters of administration was granted to James Brown Isaacs, 28th Dec. 1819, Surrogate's Office, White Plains, Fol. D. p. 33. The will of Jas. Brown Isaacs was proved 16th Dec. 1857, Rec. of Wells Meigs County, Ohio.

The old Brown homestead and adjoining property, after remaining in the family over one hundred years, passed by purchase to Aaron Hull who soon after sold to the present proprietor Wakeman Wood the son of Samuel Wood of Weston, Connecticut.

Prior to the Revolutionary war Lewisboro' formed a precinct of the old parish of Salem and at a very early period the parishoners were united with their brethren of the Church at Ridgefield<sup>a</sup> and Ridgebury in the support of religion, enjoying the occasional services of such distinguished men as Samuel Johnson, D.D., of Stratford, Connecticut, in 1725; Henry Caner, of Fairfield, in 1727; John Beach, of Newton, in 1735; James Wetmore, of Rye, in 1744; Richard Caner, of Norwalk, in 1744; Joseph Lampson; of Fairfield, in 1745; and Jeremiah Leaming, of Norwalk, in 1760. At one time Ridgefield, Ridgebury and the Oblong were considered to be, in a certain sense, within the bounds of the parish or mission of Fairfield. The Rev. Ebenezer Dibblee, of Stamford, also considered Salem to be within the bounds of his missionary jurisdiction. "As a missionary of the society of the gospel in foreign parts he entered upon the duties of his sacred office Oct. 26th, 1748," and the first record of his services in the *Oblong* occurs on the 11th of November, 1749, on which occasion he baptized Steven Slauson, son of James and Elizabeth Slauson.<sup>b</sup>

The following extract is taken from his report to the Secretary of the Venerable Propagation Society for 1759 :

#### MR. DIBBLEE TO THE SECRETARY.

[EXTRACT.]

"*Stamford, Conn., New England, Sept. 29, 1759.*

REV. SIR :

June 24th, second Sunday after Trinity last, I preached in the *lower district of Salem*, to a very considerable auditory—judging between three and four hundred people old and young, who behaved very decently and attentively, and I gave the communion to thirty-nine communicants. There is a hopeful prospect of the increase and flourishing state of religion among that scattered poor people, and no endeavours of mine are wanting to serve them in their best interest. I preached to them about two weeks before upon a special fast, appointed in that Province, to implore the smiles and blessing of Divine Providence to attend his Majesty's arms the ensuing campaign; upon which occasion, also, that people gave a religious and decent attendance.

I am, Rev. Sir, your most obedient, most humble servant and brother in Christ,

EBENEZER DIBBLEE.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> The following inscription occurs on the corner stone of St. Stephen's church, Ridgefield "The Church was founded in Ridgefield A.D. 1740. The first church edifice erected 1741. the second 1785, the third 1841. The Church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth." (Tim. iii : 15.)

<sup>b</sup> St. John's parochial Rec. Stamford, Connecticut.

<sup>c</sup> Conn. MSS. from archives at Fulham, 392. (Hawks).

About the year 1764 the parish of Salem united with the parishes of Ridgefield and Ridgebury, and engaged Mr. Richard S. Clark to read divine service and sermons on Sundays. In 1766, Mr. Epenetus Townsend was engaged as a lay reader; in a letter of Oct. 1st, 1767, Mr. Dibblee of Stamford writes to the Secretary of the Venerable Propagation Society, as follows: "Mr. Townsend thankfully accepts the leave to go home for Holy Orders; and if the society is not pleased to appoint him their missionary, at Salem, and parts contiguous, where he is much wanted, he will submit to the will and superior wisdom and direction of the society."<sup>a</sup> Mr. Townsend returned from England, April 22nd, 1768, and was formally inducted rector of Salem on Sunday, the 29th of May, 1768, by his predecessor, the Rev. Ebenezer Dibblee.<sup>b</sup> In one of his earliest communications to the society from Salem, Mr. Townsend says:

"The fatigue which necessarily arises from a steady performance of my duty in these three places, I have hitherto, and I trust in God, I shall for the future be enabled to undergo with cheerfulness, tho' I expect it will in a little while be increased, occasioned by the building a new church in Salem, which when it is finished, I propose, with the society's leave, to officiate in it sometimes. To acquaint the society with the propriety of building a new church in Salem, I would observe that Salem is a township twelve miles in length, and but two in breadth—joining on the one side to Connecticut, and on the other partly to Cortlandt's manor, which extends twenty miles westward to Hudson River; and partly to another patent, which extends several miles westward towards Bedford, which is the utmost limit of Mr. Avery's mission. The church, which is already built, is situated within about two miles of the north end of Salem, on the borders of Cortlandt's manor, as the society was informed in the petition of the church wardens and vestry. It was built by people of this part of Salem and Cortlandt's manor in conjunction, and this congregation is larger than either of those in Connecticut—there being generally, in good weather in the Summer season, upwards of two hundred people assembled. The church, which I expect will soon be built in Salem, will be about five or six miles further to the southward, and about two or three miles to the westward from Ridgefield church, where I have been informed there are near thirty families of Church people, besides a considerable number in places very contiguous, for whom it is extremely difficult to attend public worship, either at Ridgefield, or at the church towards the north end of Salem, on the borders of Cortlandt's manor, where I reside. When this church is built, (if the Society approves of my officiating in it sometimes, besides my attendance at the other three churches,) I would request the favor of the Society, to give a quarto common Prayer Book and Bible to this, as they have to the other churches of Salem and Ridgebury."

<sup>a</sup> Conn. MSS. from archives at Fulham, p. 541, (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> Fowler's MSS. Biog. of the Clergy, Vol. VI., 1061.

In his report for 1771, he informs the Society, "that the fourth church in his mission is now building." This edifice was probably completed and opened for divine service in the fall of 1771, and stood directly opposite the cross roads leading from South Salem to Ridgefield, upon the land of the late Thaddeus Keeler, whose grandfather, Timothy, is said to have sold the lot to the church; although, as we have previously shown, tradition asserts that the lot was given by James Brown, Esq., the donor of the Parsonage Lands. The late Jeremiah Keeler, who died in February, 1853, (at the advanced age of ninety-three,) remembered its erection in 1771. It was built on contract by Benj. Chapman, of the very best oak timber, and contained three hundred and sixty-five braces.<sup>a</sup>

In 1772 Mr. Townsend reported to the Venerable Propagation Society "that his congregations were increasing." The Society's abstract for 1775, says: "That Mr. Townsend is constant in the performance of his duty in his own parish, and preaches frequently in the parts adjacent." The Rector continued the services of the Church in Lower Salem until the third Sunday after the Declaration of Independence, July 21st, 1776, when in the afternoon as he was officiating and had proceeded some length in the service, a company of armed soldiers—said to have belonged to Col. Sheldon's Regiment, stationed on Keeler's hill directly opposite—marched into the church with drums beating and fifes playing, their guns loaded and bayonets fixed, as if going to battle; and as soon as he commenced reading the collects for the king and royal family, they rose to their feet and the officer commanded him upon the peril of his life to desist. Mr. Townsend immediately stopped reading, closed his prayer book, descended from the reading desk, and so the matter passed over without any accident. From this time the church was closed, so far as Episcopal services were concerned; and no legal transfer of the property could possibly have taken place until the parish was re-organized, which appears not to have been effected until 1810.

Mr. Townsend in a letter to the secretary of the society dated Salem, Province of New York, June, 1777, says:

"I continued the services of the Church within my mission for three Sundays after the Declaration of Independence by the Congress, and should have proceeded still and took the consequences; but I was informed that all the clergy, in this and the neighboring provinces, had discontinued the public service till it might be performed under the protection of His Majesty, excepting only Mr. Beach of Connecticut, who hath continued his church till very lately. Under these circumstances, I considered

<sup>a</sup> "The old iron latch which once secured the front door of the old church, is still preserved in the family of Thaddeus Keeler; it is 13 inches and  $\frac{3}{4}$  long, and bears the initials of the founder of the church, T. B. Since its removal, however, from the church it has been stamped with the date 1792, and the initials, J. K.



that my dissenting from the practice of my brethren would not only set me up as a single mark of vengeance, and as every appearance of disunion among the clergy might be disadvantageous to the Church hereafter; viewing the matter in this light, I thought it best to comply with the general practice of the clergy. On the 21st of October I was made a prisoner and sent to the court of Fishkill as an enemy to the Independence of America, etc."<sup>a</sup>

Subsequently to this the parish church was used as a hospital, and as a portion of the army was stationed near by, the Presbyterian minister came there and preached what was termed a "war sermon;" on this occasion there were more people present than the church could hold. One of the sergeants coming out was asked by a bystander what the minister had said, he replied: "that he declared God Almighty was a man of war." The interrogator observed, "he should like to ask him how many guns He carried." Some of the most active members of the parish having joined the army at the commencement of the Revolution, and the Rector lost at sea, the church and lot were sold—so it is said, to satisfy the claims of the contractor, Benjamin Chapman; and it is also asserted that this individual subsequently purchased both, of the trustees, and converted the former into a tavern.<sup>b</sup> For many years after the war it was known as the "Church Tavern," a name given on purpose to cast odium upon the Church. By Chapman it was mortgaged to the *Presbyterian Society of South Salem*; default being made in payment, it was advertised for sale. A few days before the sale was to take place, it was conveyed by Chapman to John L. Morehouse, from whom it passed to Jeremiah Keeler in 1796; the latter dismantled the building and removed the material, much of which was embodied in the Keeler mansion now standing.<sup>c</sup> The whole transaction, beginning with the attempt of the Rev. Solomon Mead to stop the erection of the building in its incipient stages in 1771, looks very much like a wicked design of a narrow-minded political and religious clique to demolish the Church here that it might never rise again.

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. MSS. from Archives at Fulham, vol. II. 621-2-3-4 (Hawks). Dr. Inglis, Rector of Trinity church (afterwards Bishop of Nova Scotia) inquired of Gen. Washington when he should cease reading prayers for the King and Royal family? The General's reply was, "I cannot tell, you must use your own judgment."

<sup>b</sup> There is no evidence whatever of any sale or purchase by Chapman the builder, but simply the testimony of interested parties. It is claimed that the parish of Lower Salem was incorporated in June, 1786, and that James Brown and Gershom Selleck, with a third party whose name is unknown, were trustees; but unfortunately for this story James Brown died 19th of February, 1786. Testimony of the late Jeremiah Keeler and James Keeler of Lewisboro.

<sup>c</sup> Some of the material is said to have been removed to Ridgefield and used in the construction of the second Episcopal church erected in that village in 1788. On the front side of the stone chimney of the old Keeler mansion is this inscription, "K., 178." The Keeler family are said to have resided in the old church a short time before its destruction. The late Thaddeus Keeler was the son of Jeremiah Keeler who was born in Ridgefield, May 6th, 1760, and died Feb. 9, 1853.

In the possession of the Keeler family is the following deed for the church lot, which is still styled "Chapman's garden and meadow:"

### DEED FOR CHURCH LOT.

14th of March, 1796, between John Lewis Moorehouse of Charlton in the County of Saratoga to Jeremiah Keeler all that certain parts, pieces and parcels of land situated and lying in the town of Salem in the County of Westchester and State of New York, on the north side of the road leading from Ridgefield to Bedford, opposite to the road leading from the south part of South Salem to the north part of the same and is bounded as followeth, viz.: Beginning at the said Bedford road at a stake and stones around the same and thence runs northerly six rods to a stake with stones; thence easterly by said Bedford road so far as that a line of equal length to and parallel with stones, &c."<sup>a</sup>

"In the spring of 1777, a party of the enemy having burnt Danbury, and proceeding through Ridgefield on their work of destruction, were opposed by a small company of militia. Mr. Keeler was aroused to patriotic ardor by witnessing the short engagement that followed; and at the solicitation of Col. Bradley, eagerly enlisted in the army—being at the time, not seventeen years of age. With the Connecticut Line he shared the fatigues and dangers of the three memorable years that immediately followed. Shortly after which, being selected by Baron Steuben, he joined the Light Infantry commanded by General de La Fayette, under whom he held the post of Orderly Sergeant. He was frequently appointed to execute difficult and responsible duties; and on an occasion of this kind the Marquis presented him with a sword and his thanks, as a testimonial of his regard for a faithful and courageous soldier. At the memorable siege of Yorktown, when La Fayette's Brigade was employed to storm one of the British forts, Sergeant Keeler was one of the first who, in the midst of a murderous fire, scaled the breastworks, and compelled the enemy to yield. He witnessed the surrender of Cornwallis, which virtually terminated the war; but he remained faithfully at his post, until the disbanding of the forces in 1783, having participated in the reverses and successes of the Continental Army, without interruption since his enlistment. As a vivid illustration of the sufferings which the brave soldiers endured, Mr. Keeler relates that he was sometimes so tormented by hunger as to be tempted to gnaw the flesh from his own shoulders!"<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Copied from original documents in possession of the late Thaddeus Keller's family. No lien was filed in those days; usually the Trustees mortgaged the church building and lot.

<sup>b</sup> A Discourse occasioned by the death of Jeremiah Keeler, a soldier of the Revolution, delivered in the Presbyterian Church of South Salem, Westchester County, N. Y., Feb. 27 1853.

In the possession of this family is a curious copy of the Baskett Bible containing the *Prayer Book of the Church of England and the Psalms in metre*, entitled the New Testament of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ newly transcribed out of the original Greek and with the former translations diligently compared and revised by His Majesty's special command appointed to be read in churches; Oxford, printed by Thomas Baskett, printer to the University, MDCCXLIX. On the inside is this memorandum: "Jeremiah Keeler was married to Huldah, April, 1788. Took this holy Book out of the estate of his deceased father, the 16th of April, 1799." There is but little doubt that this is the very Bible and Prayer Book combined which was presented by the Venerable Propagation Society to the church of Lower Salem in 1771.

At an early period, perhaps, before the erection of the church in 1771, James Brown made a liberal benefaction of one hundred acres of land, within the Patent of Lower Salem, for the endowment of the Church of England as established by law. These Glebe lands are claimed to be what is still denominated, "*The Lower Parsonage Lands*," lying between the two roads, one leading from Ridgefield to Bedford, the other from Ridgefield to South Salem; which lands,<sup>a</sup> as we have already seen, were surreptitiously conveyed by the so-called proprietors of the "Lower released ten miles of the Oblong or Equivalent lands, yet undivided" (on the 23d of December, 1751,) "for the use and improvement of the first Presbyterian or Independent minister that should be settled and ordained in the town of Salem." Now the truth is that James Brown

---

<sup>a</sup> By some it is said that James Brown gave the property as Glebe Lands to endow the first church edifice that should be erected and consecrated (or dedicated as the Presbyterians, Independents and Romanists term it,) in Salem; and that as the Episcopal church (which was the first edifice ever erected for religious worship in Lower Salem,) had never been consecrated, it had lapsed to the Presbyterians. This, however, is a very improbable story; as no Episcopal church could then be consecrated for want of a Bishop, and consequently no Churchman would be likely to put such a restriction on a deed of gift. It is very remarkable that this story is attributed to Timothy Keeler, one of the signers of the surreptitious deed in 1751. One thing is certain, that while the first church was building in 1770-1771, the Rev. Solomon Mead, the first Presbyterian minister of Lower Salem, who was then in the habit of coming from Norwalk on horseback to perform services, threatened the builders and endeavored to stop them in their work. A portion of these Glebe Lands, as we shall have occasion to show presently, were sold by the Presbyterian Society under an act of Assembly in 1800, "for the purpose of procuring other lands on which a parsonage house might be more conveniently erected and for erecting the same;" but we believe no warranty deeds have ever been given in any case of sale; but simply quit claim deeds, all of which is something unusual. The trustees of the Presbyterian church of South Salem, sold to Gould Hawley in 1833, lands bordering on "*so-called Parsonage Land*." White Plains Rec. Lib. xlix, p. 255. Gould Hawley's title came from Trustees, and his widow conveyed to Cyrus Lawrence and others. Joseph S. Wood and wife sold lands to Wakeman B. Wood in 1837, bounded westerly by lands of Joseph Webster and the "*Parsonage Land so-called*." Maltby Webster and wife, Nancy, convey land to Terry A. Fancher, 18th of March, 1830—"also one other piece ly, at the south-east corner of Joseph Webster's land formerly belonging to the parsonage, at a pile of stones and running northerly by said Webster's, 14 chains and 25 links to a pile of stones at the corner of said Webster's land, from thence westerly 5 chains to a pile of stones by Gould Hawley's land, thence southerly by said Hawley's land, 16 chains and 25 links to a pile of stones by the highway that leads from Ridgefield to Bedford, from thence easterly by the highway 5 chains to the place of beginning containing 7 acres." White Plains Rec., Lib. xxxviii, p. 183. The two meadows, one opposite the residence of Uriah Slawson, the other almost in front of Sandy Barrett's house, are said to have been a portion of the Parsonage Lands.

and William Smith, were the parties solely interested in these lands, and had already petitioned the Crown on the 5th of July, of that year, (1751) to grant them a Patent which was to include the same,<sup>a</sup> consequently their names are not to be found in the surreptitious deed dated six months afterwards. No doubt these so-called proprietors contended in opposition to Brown and Smith, that they had a right of freehold vested in the Lower Oblong, given them by Connecticut in years past, which no power could possibly deprive them of; but the settlement of the boundary question in 1731, vested the whole Oblong in the Crown. This they had themselves tacitly admitted in accepting the East Patent from the Crown the very same year, and certainly they could never show any grant from the Crown for the undivided lands of the Oblong. It is a little curious that thirteen out of the twenty signers of the surreptitious deed to the Presbyterian Society in 1751, were grantees under the East Patent in 1731. There can be no doubt whatever, that they attempted to convey away property that did not belong to them; besides which, these lands were undivided and they could not legally dispose of their claim, even if they had any, until a division of them was made. Here, then, we see the intention of the noble donor sadly prevented, as the gift has never been realized by the Parish—more than one hundred years have now passed since the land was given; yet, tradition has preserved it inviolably. The Church was re-organized in 1810, in hopes of recovering it; and that noble band of Churchmen consisting of Augustus McCarroll,<sup>b</sup> William Sherwood, Henry Hoyt, Gould Bouton, Jesse Jarvis, Samuel Brown Isaacs, Samuel Amber, Joseph Nash, Absalom Holmes<sup>c</sup> and James Church, who were constantly in the habit of discussing their right to the property and probability of recovering it, while attending on the services at the mother Church of North Salem, have all passed away to their rest.<sup>d</sup> Still the trust remains to be guarded by their successors; who should never forget what they owe to the resolute men who planted and watered the Church in the Colonies, and still clung to her after the close of the Revolution, looking in sure faith to Almighty God for the increase. The crime of violating or alienating to other purposes what has been once appropriated or consecrated to the service of God's

<sup>a</sup> It is quite clear from the will of James Brown, Senior, in 1766, that the Patent adjoined the south side of the road leading from Ridgefield to Bedford. A fence running almost due north from the late Milo Websier's house, (close to the road leading from South Salem to Ridgefield,) and so across through the swamp near to the residence of Wakeman B. Wood, (on the road between Bedford to Ridgefield,) is said to have been the east line of James Brown's lands.

<sup>b</sup> Augustus McCarroll or McCaul, was a strong Scottish Churchman. His son, Ennis, left a son, Stephen, and a daughter, Sarah, the widow of David Farrington.

<sup>c</sup> Holmes lived near Lake Wacabuc.

<sup>d</sup> The testimony of Mr. Sam'l Field, now living who has often overheard them discussing the subject at North Salem, after the services of the day.



Church is terrible indeed. "The violators of Church property," as old Spelman observes, "seldom escape punishment." A man has but a life interest in his estate. Over its possession after his death he has no right; therefore, he has no right to threaten those who shall injure it, because they have done him no wrong. He must let that alone forever. His posterity must defend themselves. The curse of the then possessor may be formidable; not that of one who is not possessor.

But, with respect to Church property, the case is different. The Church is a corporation, and a corporation never dies. The durability of her claim to any given property is commensurated with her existence, and that is forever. Her right, therefore, of defending that property exists also forever; because through her it is offered to Him of Whom, through all ages, "It is witnessed that He liveth."<sup>a</sup>

The first notice of this parish subsequent to the Revolution occurs in the minutes of Diocesan Convention, held in New York, Oct. 3d, 1810, when "on motion, it was resolved, that the delegates from the Episcopal Church of South Salem (of the incorporation of which, the convention has no legal evidence) be admitted to Honorary Seats." Mr. Henry Hoyt, delegate from said church was accordingly admitted to an honorary seat. The earliest record of the proceedings of the vestry, is dated Monday, 15th of October, 1810. The officers then chosen, according to the provisions of the act of 1795, were the following: Augustus McCarroll and William Sherwood, church-wardens; Henry Hoyt, Gould Bouton, Jesse Jarvis, Samuel B. Isaacs, Samuel Ambler, Joseph Nash, Absalom Holmes and James Church, vestrymen. On the 19th of May, 1711, the church was incorporated under the style of "*The Church-wardens and vestrymen of the Protestant Episcopal Church of Salem.*" At this period the Rev. Nathan Felch was officiating minister. In 1810, he reported to the Convention: "That a new Episcopal church had been incorporated in South Salem. Their prospect is truly pleasing at present."<sup>b</sup> At this time services were held in the Brown mansion occupied by Samuel B. Isaacs, Esq.

In 1815, Mr. George Weller, A.M., was licensed as a lay-reader for Bedford and South Salem. The same year he makes report to the Convention, "That in South Salem, the present number of communicants is ten, of which three were added within the past year. Baptisms, within the past year, seven, of which one was an adult. The congregation is small, say fourteen or fifteen families, and cannot be said to have increased much within the year past."

<sup>a</sup> The Hist. and Fate of Sacrilege, by Sir. Henry Spelman, second edition. London: Joseph Masters, 1853.

<sup>b</sup> Journal of Covention, 1810, p. 16.

In 1816, the Rev. George Weller, missionary in Westchester and Putnam counties, writes to the Bishop as follows: "Since my ordination, I have been engaged two-thirds of my time at Bedford, and one-third at North Salem, &c. I have performed divine service and preached twice in South Salem, and intend occasionally to preach lectures in that town. Being centrally situated, their communicants unite with us at Bedford and North Salem. Number of communicants, eight."

According to the testimony of the late William Weston Wellman, of New Haven, the following persons had been keeping up the church organization when he arrived in South Salem about 1822. Samuel Ambler<sup>a</sup> and Benjamin Sherwood, church-wardens; Peter Benedict, Era Mead, Daniel Jones, Timothy Jones and others, vestrymen.<sup>b</sup>

In 1852, the Rev. Messrs. Harris, Partridge and Vermilye, entered into an arrangement by which they were enabled, besides their regular services every Sunday, to conduct services here once a fortnight. By their efforts a good congregation was gathered numbering about two hundred persons, and the Church services, were held in the beautiful grove of the late Mr. Stephen Hoyt. According to the certificate of incorporation, bearing date the 16th day of August, 1852, "the said church and congregation should hereafter be known in law by the name of '*The Rector, Church-wardens and Vestrymen of St. John's church, in the town of Lewisboro, in the county of Westchester.*'" The Rev. Alfred H. Partridge was elected Rector; Jonathan Beers and Isaac Hayes, church-wardens; William H. Robinson, Samuel Field, Amos. N. Raymond, John B. Whittlock, Jr., Stephen L. Hoyt, Feris Bouton, William Lockwood and Timothy Jones, vestrymen; and the first Wednesday in Easter week was fixed on as the day of the election; William H. Robinson, clerk; Timothy Jones, treasurer."<sup>c</sup>

Exertions were at once made to re-build the church. The following deed was given for the site of the new edifice by Stephen Hoyt, and Sarah, his wife:—

#### DEED FOR CHURCH LOT SOUTH SALEM.

This Indenture made the twenty-third day of August in the year one thousand eight hundred and fifty-two between Stephen Hoyt and Sally his wife of the town of Lewisboro, in the County of Westchester, and State of New York, par-

<sup>a</sup> Samuel Ambler resided at that time in the village of South Salem; died subsequently at Spencer Town, Columbia County, New York. Benjamin Sherwood resided west of the late Timothy Jones's place.

<sup>b</sup> Testimony of Mr. Wellman to his son, Rev. Merritt H. Wellman, July, 1870. Mr. Wellman was at one time a warden with Mr. Ambler, and removed from Salem in 1836. Isaac Rockwell another member of the vestry resided in the old mansion, at South Salem, now occupied by Sandy Barrett. The chimney of this house bears the following inscription, "J. R., 1743," the initials of Job Rockwell, father of Isaac.

<sup>c</sup> Minutes of the Vestry.

ties of the first part and the Church Wardens and Vestrymen of St. John's church, in the town of Lewisboro in said County, and their successors in office, parties of the second part,

Witnesseth, That the said parties of the first part, for and consideration of the sum of one Dollar, lawful money of the United States of America to them in hand paid by the said parties of the second part, at or before the ensembling and delivery of these presents, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, have granted, bargained sold, aliened, remised, released, conveyed, and confirmed and by these presents do grant, bargain, sell, alien, remise, release, convey and confirm, unto the said parties of the second part, and to their successors in office forever, all that certain piece, or lot of land, lying in said town of Lewisboro, on the south side of the highway (known as Spring Street,) leading easterly into the village of South Salem, and bounded as follows: Beginning at the north-east corner of said piece by the highway and at the east abutment of a Barway at the north-east corner of a piece of Wood, and from thence southerly five rods; thence westerly five rods; thence northerly five rods to the highway, and thence easterly by said highway five rods to the place of beginning, containing twenty-five rods more or less. If the said Wardens and Vestry, or their successors in office shall at any time cease to use the above described piece of land as a site for the Protestant Episcopal Church, then this Indenture shall be void; and also in case the said Corporation shall neglect to erect a church upon said parcel of land within three years from the date hereof, then this Indenture shall be void. Together with all and singular, the tenements, hereditaments, and appertenances, thereunto belonging or in any wise appertaining, and the reversion and reversions, remainder and remainders, rents issues and profits thereof; And also all the estate, right, title, interest, dower, and the right of dower, property, possession, claim, and demand whatsoever, as well in law, as in equity, of the said parties of the first part of, in, or to, the above described premises, and every part and parcel thereof, with the appurtenances. To have and to hold all and singular, the above mentioned and described premises, together with the appurtenances unto the parties of the second part, and their successors in office forever. And the said Stephen Hoyt, for himself, and his heirs, the said premises, in the quiet and peaceful possession of the said parties of the second part, and their successors in office, against the said parties of the first part, their heirs, and against all and every person and persons whomsoever, lawfully claiming, or to claim the same, shall and will *warrant*, and by these presents forever defend.

In witness whereof, the said parties of the first part have hereunto, set their hands and seals the day and year first above written.

Sealed and delivered  
in presence of

STEPHEN HOYT, L. S.  
SALLY HOYT, L. S.

W. H. ROBERTSON.

#### DEED FOR CHURCH LOT SOUTH SALEM.

[No. 2.]

This Indenture, made the fifth day of September in the year one thousand eight hundred and fifty-three, between Stephen Hoyt and Sally his wife, of the town of Lewisboro in the County of Westchester, and State of New York parties of the first part, and the Church Wardens and Vestrymen of St. John's church

in the town of Lewisboro in said County, and their successors in Office, parties of the second part: Witnesseth, That the said party of the first part, for and in consideration of the sum of one Dollar, lawful money of the United States of America, to us in hand paid by the said party of the second part, at or before the ensealing and delivery of these presents, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, have granted, bargained, sold, aliened, remised, released, conveyed and confirmed and by these presents do grant, bargain, sell, alien, remise, release, convey, and confirm unto the said parties of the second part, and to their successors in office forever, All, that certain piece or lot of land lying in said town of Lewisboro, on the south side of the highway, known as Spring Street leading easterly into the village of South Salem, and bounded as follows. Beginning to the Southwest corner of said Church property adjoining the land of Stephen Hoyt aforesaid, and running southerly by said Hoyt's land to a stake, thence easterly by said Hoyt's land five rods in a parallel line to a stake at the south-east corner, thence northerly by said Hoyt's land to the aforesaid Church property, thence westerly by said Church property to the place of beginning containing five rods, be the same more or less; if the said Wardens and Vestry or their successors in office, shall at any time cease to use the above described piece of land as a site for the Protestant Episcopal church, then, this Indenture shall be void; and also in case the said corporation shall neglect to erect a church upon said parcel of land, within three years from the twenty-third day of August, 1852, then this Indenture shall be void.

Together with all and singular the tenements hereditaments, and appurtenances thereunto belonging or in any wise appertaining, and the reversion and reversions, remainder and remainders, rents, issues and profits thereof, And also all the estate, right, title, interest, dower and right of dower, property possession, claim and demand whatsoever as well in law as in equity, of the said party of the first part of, in or to the above described premises, and every part and parcel thereof, with the appurtenances, To have and to hold all and singular the above mentioned and described premises together with the appurtenances, unto the said parties of the second part and their successors in office forever. And the said Stephen Hoyt, for himself and his heirs, the said premises, in the quiet and peaceable possession of the said parties of the second part and their successors in office against the said parties of the first part, their heirs, and against all and every person and persons whomsoever, lawfully claiming or to claim the same shall and will Warrant and by these presents forever Defend.

In Witness whereof the said party of the first part have hereunto set their hands and seals the day and year first above written.

Sealed and delivered  
in presence of

STEPHEN HOYT, <sup>a</sup> L. S.  
SALLY HOYT, L. S.

AARON B. FANCHER.

---

<sup>a</sup> The Hoyts who own much land in the north-east corner of the town descend from Simon Hoyt who landed at Salem, Mass., in 1628 or 1629, perhaps by the ship Abigail or the George, and very soon after went to Charleston as one of its first settlers. He was at Dorchester in 1633-1635 from whence he removed to Scituate, Mass., then to Windsor, Conn., in 1639-1640, and from Windsor to Fairfield circ 1646, owner of "Hoit's Island" near Sasconeck and Salt Creek, Fairfield. He removed to Stamford soon after 1649, where he died Sept. 1st, 1657. His widow, Sussanna, married a Robert Bates, and died before February 7, 1674. His seventh son, Benjamin Hoyt, of Shipan-neck, Stamford, was born February 2, 1644, at Windsor, Connecticut, married first, Hannah, daughter of Jonas Weed, who died November 9, 1711; married secondly Abigail, who died March 4th, 1729-1730. He died in 1735. His son, Benjamin



In 1853, a neat stone edifice thirty feet by forty-eight, was erected with a tower thirty-six feet high, at a cost of twenty-five hundred and fifty dollars; prior to its erection services had been held in the open air, as no building could be obtained, (and anyone who offered to furnish a room for services was prescribed for so doing,<sup>a</sup>) with a congregation of about two hundred persons.

St. John's church was consecrated and set apart to the service of Almighty God, by the Right Rev. Horatio Potter, D.D., LL. D., D.C. L., the Bishop of the Diocese, on the 18th of September, 1855. The tower contains a fine toned bell weighing six hundred and ninety-seven pounds, which was presented by the late Benj. F. Loder, Esq., a native of this parish. The communion plate—consisting of a flagon, two chalices and paten—was a gift of Mrs. Nancy Weed; and the service books were presented by Mrs. Benj. Williamson, of New Jersey. The chandelier was the gift of Gould Rockwell, Esq., of Ridgefield, Conn. The following inscription occurs on a slab, in the chancel:

In Memoriam

REV. EPENETUS TOWNSEND, A. M.,

Missionary of

The Ven<sup>ble</sup> Prop. Society, A. D. 1766.

And First Rector of Salem.

Inducted May 29, 1768.

Born, April, 1742.

Lost at sea with his family Sept., 1779.

"His Exemplary Life, sober conversation and devout

Performance of Religious Offices, Highly Recommended Him to the Love and esteem of His People."

PEACE.

Hoyt, of Stamford, was born December 9, 1671, married Elizabeth Jaggar, June 10, 1697, and died in 1747. He was selectman of Stamford four years, in 1719 and later. His second son, David Hoyt, of Stamford, was born June 23d 1702; married Hannah Hait June 22d, 1727, and died 1761-2, leaving a third son, Jacob Hoyt, who was born at Stamford about 1735, he married Sarah—lived in South Salem near Hoyt's mill. He and his wife connected themselves with the Presbyterian church there, June 30, 1765, and had children baptized there in 1765, 1767. We find his ear-mark at Salem, Dec. 22d, 1755. He was overseer of the poor there 1766, 1779, 1784, 1794, etc.; a trustee of the South Salem Presbyterian church 1784, 1788 and 1799. He was First Lieutenant, Salem, Southern District 1775. His wife, Sarah died Oct. 7th, 1808, aged eighty. His oldest son, Jacob Hoyt, was born November 10, 1761; baptized June 30th, 1765, married Ellen, daughter of Gould Bouton, April 26, 1787; lived in South Salem and died there December 28th, 1844. He was constable and collector at Salem in 1794. His wife, Ellen, was born June 22, 1769. His third brother was the Rev. Stephen Hoyt, formerly of Sunbury, Georgia, who was baptized at Salem, Aug. 16th, 1767. The eldest son of Jacob was Stephen Hoyt, who was born Oct. 2d, 1789, and baptized Dec. 2, 1792. He married Sally, daughter of Elnathan Weed, Esq., of Poundridge, January 9th, 1811. He resided in South Salem, and was the generous donor of the church lot and one of the founders of St. John's church in that place. He died July 15th, 1867, and was buried in the Cemetery opposite to the church. His wife, Sally, died Sept. 1st, 1867. His brother Harvey Hoyt was born April 26th, 1792, baptized Dec. 2, 1792, married Laura, daughter of William Clark, of Waterbury, Connecticut, and is still living in South Salem. His wife, Laura, died Nov. 19th, 1848, aged sixty-one. The children of Stephen and Sally are first, William W. born about 1811, baptized Sept. 12th, 1819; second, Stephen Lewis baptized Sept. 12th, 1819; married first, Hobby, of Bedford and second daughter of Aaron Tyler of Bedford, by whom he has three daughters. Mr. Hoyt is junior warden of St. John's church, South Salem; third, Mary Ann, baptized Sept. 12th, 1819, married Lewis Hoyt of South Salem.

<sup>a</sup> On the very day it was proposed to erect the church, the late Sidney R. Lockwood notified Mr. Dorothy Kester that if Episcopal services were continued any longer in his house he would withdraw his custom. Col. Isaac Hayes then applied for the use of the school

The following inscription is placed over the front door of the building :

“ St John’s Church

Organized 1852,

Erected 1853.

“ The Church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.”

1 Tim. iii : 15.

The following memorials, are from the cemetery opposite ; near the entrance is a beautiful white marble stone mounted by a wheel cross :

Here  
lyeth the body of

DAVID SCOTT,<sup>a</sup>

a priest of the  
Holy Catholic Church  
who entered into rest  
January 3, 1861.

---

Jesu mercy.

We *die* to live

AMOS N. RAYMOND,

Died March 2d, 1860.

In the 59th year of his age

My dear children,  
As you pass by ;  
Remember you are,  
Born to die.

STEPHEN HOYT

died

July 15, 1867,

In the 79th year of his age.

SALLY

wife of

Stephen Hoyt,

Died

Sept. 1. 1866,

In the 77th year of her age.

---

house and that was refused. The Rev. Alfred H. Partridge thereupon determined to hold services in the street if necessary ; at this juncture of affairs Mr. Stephen Hoyt offered the free use of one of his houses and the grove, where the church now stands, in the summer season for the purposes of temporary accommodation, both of which offers were gladly accepted.

<sup>a</sup> The Rev. David Scott, who offered himself to God sincerely, and whose short life was so pure, earnest, cheerful and self-denying, was a native of England and originally a choir boy in Salisbury Cathedral. He was fatally injured by his horse while preparing to start for his usual Sunday morning service at North Salem. See sermon preached in St. John’s church, Lewisboro, Feb. 1, 1861, at the funeral of the Rev. David Scott by the Rev. William H. Williams, Rector of St. Stephen’s church, Ridgefield, Conn.

## MINISTERS AND RECTORS OF SOUTH SALEM OR LEWISBORO.

INST OR CALL.	INCUMBENTS.	VAC'D BY.
A. D. 1749.	REV. EBENEZER DIBBLEE, A. M., Cl.	Per resigned.
A. D. 1771.	REV. EPHENETUS TOWNSEND, A. M., Cl.	Death.
15 Oct. 1810.	REV. MATTHEW FELCH, Presb.	Per resigned.
1816.	REV. GEORGE WELLER, Deacon.	Per resigned.
16 Aug. 1852.	REV. ALFRED H. PARTRIDGE, Presb.	Per resigned.
22 Aug. 1855.	REV. FRANKLIN BABBITT, Presb.	Per resigned.
14 Aug. 1859.	REV. DAVID SCOTT, Presb.	Death.
30 Sept. 1861.	REV. ANGUS M. IVES, Presb.	Per resigned.
11 Dec. 1868.	REV. ROBERT BOLTON, A. M., Presb.	Death.
1879.	REV. ALEX. HAMILTON,	Pres. Incumb.

In October, 1870, John Lewis, Esq., of Clinton, Middlesex Co., Conn., endowed the Church with forty-eight acres of glebe land, on condition that a chapel should be erected thereon, and denominated St. Paul's.

## DEED OF THE GLEBE LANDS.

This Indenture, made the seventh day of October, in the year one thousand eight hundred and seventy, between John Lewis of the Town of Clinton, in the County of Middlesex and the State of Connecticut, of the first part, and Robert Bolton, Rector, William Lockwood and Stephen L. Hoyt, Wardens; and Ambrose A. Beers, Charles A. Raymond, Seth W. Raymond, Eleazer L. Fancher John Lewis Raymond, Charles Raymond, Joseph W. Waterbury and Thomas Wilson vestrymen of St. John's Protestant Episcopal Church of Lewisboro' in the County of Westchester and State of New York of the second part *witnesseth*, that the said party of the first part, for and in consideration of the sum of one dollar lawful money of the United States of America to him in hand paid, by the said parties of the second part, at or before the enscaling and delivery of these presents, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, *hath* remised, released, and quit-claimed, and by these presents do remise, release and quit-claim, unto the the said parties of the second part, and to their heirs and assigns forever, All and yet each individual Rector, Warden and Vestryman always having voice in the secular business of this donation and their successors unreserved forever. All those three several tracts or parcels of land situate and being in the town of Lewisboro' aforesaid. Bounded and described as follows to wit: The first Beginning at the southwest corner adjoining the Highway leading from New Canaan to Lewisboro' and land of Daniel Munroe thence running easterly by land of said Munroe to the North-East corner of the same thence in a straight line by land formerly belonging to Jane Northrup and Mary J. Grummon to a pile of stones adjoining land of the late Gershom Lockwood, thence Northerly by land of the said late Gershom Lockwood and land of E. W. Raymond to a pile of stones on a rock, then Westerly by land of said Raymond and land of Hiram Bouton to the corner of said Bouton's land, then northerly by land of said Bouton to the Highway. Then westerly and southerly by the Highway to the place of beginning containing thirty one acres be the same more or

less. (The second piece.) Beginning at the North-West corner adjoining the Highway leading from New Caanan to Lewisboro' and land of late Daniel Hayes then running Easterly by land of said Hayes to Land of Hiram Bouton, then Southerly by land of said Bouton to the Highway leading from Ridgefield to New Caanan, then South Westerly to the first mentioned Highway. Then Northerly by said Highway to the place of beginning, containing two acres be the same more or less. (The third Piece.) Beginning at the South-East corner adjoining the Highway and land of Joseph S. Fancher then running westerly by land of said Fancher to land late of Jonathan Abbott deceased, then northerly by land of said Abbott to land of Daniel Hayes. Then Easterly, Northerly, and Easterly by land of said Hayes to the Highway, then Southerly by said Highway to the place of Beginning containing fifteen acres, be the same more or less.

And I John Lewis party of the first part hereby declare that the above grant is made and intended as an absolute although conditional grant and gift to the St. John's Episcopal Church of Lewisboro; but it is conditioned that a Chapel is to be erected and denominated St. Paul's on the premises hereby conveyed near the Southern burying ground in said Lewisboro for worship in connection with the St. John's Protestant Episcopal Church in said Lewisboro, said donation being intended for the (Mutual) benefit of both Parishes forever.

Together with all and singular the tenements hereditaments and appurtenances thereunto belonging or in anywise appertaining, and the reversion and reversions, remainder and remainders, rents issues and profits thereof.

And also of the estate, right, title, interest, possession, claim and demand whatsoever property, as well in law as in equity of the said party of the first part, of, in, or to the above described premises and every part and parcel thereof with the appurtenances. To have and to hold all and singular the above mentioned and described premises, together with the appurtenances, and the said parties of the second part and their successors and assigns forever.

In witness whereof, the said party of the first part, hath hereunto set his hand and seal the day and year first above written. JOHN LEWIS.

Signed and delivered  
in the presence of

WILLIAM LOCKWOOD.<sup>a</sup>

John Lewis, Esq., the donor of the present glebe lands, and the liberal benefactor to the common schools of this town, was the third son of John Lewis, who removed from Clinton, Middlesex Co., Conn., to South Salem, in 1808, by his wife, Margaret, daughter of Isaac Hayes, Esq., a hearty friend and supporter of the Protestant Episcopal Church. He was born on the site of the present rectory of St. Paul's, Lewisboro, Feb. 4, 1793. His father who entered the Continental service in 1776, (at the early age of nineteen, and served as an aid-de-camp on the staff

<sup>a</sup> County Rec. Lib. 752 of Deeds, p. 430. Upon the 26th of Dec. 1873, the above named Rector, wardens and vestrymen, &c., quit claimed to St. John's church under its corporate name and title. County Rec. Lib. 867 of Deeds p. 265.



of a New York General,) was the son of John Lewis,<sup>a</sup> one of the pioneer settlers of Killingworth, now Clinton, Middlesex County, Conn., the fourth in descent from John Lewis, a native of Rossenden-in-Bleane in the County of Kent, England, who emigrated to Scituate, Mass., in 1635, and died at New London, Conn., on the 8th of Dec., 1676. He seems only to have exhibited a fondness for mercantile pursuits, and first served as a clerk in the store of Capt. Isaac Jones of Darien, Conn., from thence he removed to Danbury, and not long after to New York, and soon became (from his determined energy and close application to business) the foremost clerk in the establishment of Messrs. Hoffman & Sons, then one of the principal auctioneer firms in that city. After serving there for three years with great satisfaction to his employers, he started business for himself in Wall Street, where, by his untiring energy and perseverance, he amassed a large fortune. No man better understood the value of money and the labor spent in acquiring it, therefore he greatly disliked to see negligence and indolence in others; he had also a great fondness for literary pursuits. In 1852 he published a work upon "The Merits of Protestantism Demonstrated by the Character of Man," embracing in his history various countries from the earliest recorded period to the present century.

It was his great object in this undertaking to show the merits of Protestantism and the benefits which it has conferred upon the world in improving the civil, social and religious conditions of the great mass of the people. The work is written in a good spirit, and brings into one compendious view the good fruits of the Reformation, and passed through three editions<sup>b</sup>; he was preparing a fourth for the press, only a few years before his death. Possessed of abundant means, he was liberal especially in the cause of education, being one of the founders of the free academy in New York and a generous contributor to its support. In 1840 he gave ten thousand dollars for the maintenance of the common schools in this town, and at one time greatly desired to establish a school not only for the promotion of Agriculture within its borders but throughout the country at large. He was preparing to increase his gift of the Glebe Lands by the building of the new church of St. Paul's, when he was removed by death on Sunday afternoon, Oct. 1st, 1871. It was his wish that

<sup>a</sup> The following inscriptions on tombstones in the cemetery at Clinton, are to the memory of John Lewis and Mary his wife (who was the first person buried there:)

In memory of  
JOHN LEWIS,  
Who departed this life Aug. 24th,  
A. D. 1786,  
In the 67th year of his age.

In memory of  
MARY,  
Wife of John Lewis,  
Died Dec. 16, A. D. 1765,  
In the 43d year of her age.

<sup>b</sup> Third edition New York for sale at the Astor House book store, 1854. A copy of this book is still preserved at St. Paul's Rectory, Lewisboro.

he should be buried by the side of his mother in the cemetery at Lewisboro, close to the Rectory where he drew his first breath. The grave stone which marks his resting place, bears the following inscription:—

JOHN LEWIS,

born

Feb. 4, 1793,

Died

Oct. 1, 1871.

He was a liberal benefactor to the common schools of Lewisboro, after whom the town is named, also the donor of the adjoining Parsonage property to the Protestant Episcopal church of St. John's.

Also

In memory of

MARGARET LEWIS,

Mother of the above, who died

May 31, 1819,

Æ 56 years.

By his wife Mary, daughter of Samuel Bishop of Darien, who predeceased him, he had no issue. His brother Isaac married Eliza, daughter of Thomas Greenly of New Canaan, and has issue, besides others, William T. Lewis, of Clinton, Middlesex County, Conn., who is the executor of his late uncle John Lewis's will, and who has generously aided the church in her improvements on the glebe. There is a good likeness of John Lewis preserved in the rectory of St. Paul's, presented by his nephew William T. Lewis in 1872.

On the 12th of July, 1871, was celebrated here the "Centennial Anniversary" of the founding of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Lower Salem and Lewisboro. On which occasion the corner stone of St. Paul's church was laid by the Right Rev. the Bishop of the Diocese and an address delivered by the Rev. Alfred H. Partridge a former rector of the Parish.<sup>a</sup>

As early as 1800, if not previous to this date, Episcopal services were occasionally held in this neighborhood in a house which formerly stood

<sup>a</sup> On this occasion an early morning service was held at St. John's church, followed at 11 A.M., by the Holy Communion which was administered by the Bishop to a large number of clergy and laity. The Rector preaching the Centennial sermon from the Text. "As we have heard, so have we seen in the city of the Lord of hosts, in the city of our God, God will establish it forever, Selah. We have thought of thy loving kindness. O God, in the midst of Thy temple," (Psl. xlviii: 8-9.)

on the site of the present residence of Samuel Caufield, then owned by Enoch Dan a strong Churchman (son of Abraham Dan). The Rev. Henry Whitlock, rector of St. Paul's church, Norwalk, often officiated here, baptized several children and performed the first interment in the cemetery in 1805 of Isaac Hayes, Esq. Mr. Whitlock was succeeded here by the Rev. Warner Hoyt, rector of St. Stephen's church, Ridgefield, who preached his last sermon in what is now the hall of the Rectory of St. Paul's.

In the spring of 1871 the present rectory of St Paul's, in the lower part of the parish, was completed at an expense of over \$6,000, which sum was principally raised by public subscription. A small portion of this structure was formerly the residence of the late Colonel Isaac Hayes, who was born in the old Hayes mansion, which once stood on the adjoining property, in 1797. His father, Thatcher Hayes, was the son of Isaac Hayes, who removed from Cumpo Point near West Port, Conn., when Thatcher was only nine years old, to this part of Lewisboro during the Revolutionary war and purchased a considerable property of John Thomas,<sup>a</sup> one of the original owners of the East Patent in 1731 and also one of the so-called proprietors of the lower portion of the "oblong" or "undivided lands." Colonel Hayes was a devoted Churchman, and for twenty years prior to his death a steady communicant. It is said that he was baptized in early infancy through the influence of his grandfather, who was also a Churchman. He fell a victim to his untiring zeal and activity in the building of the parochial church of St. John's, at South Salem, in 1855, and died on the day previous to its consecration.

The day before his decease he sent for one of the vestrymen, Mr. Timothy Jones, and in the most solemn and energetic manner bade him "stand by the Church." His faith was firm in Christ to the last, and he looked to God for the increase and welfare of Zion. "The memory of the just is blessed."

The rectory of St. Paul's is well located at the fork of the roads leading from Ridgefield to New Canaan. The bell presented to St. Paul's

---

<sup>a</sup> Hon. John Thomas, first Judge of the County of Westchester, and son, Rev. John Thomas, Rector of St. George's church, Hempstead, L. I., resided near the site of the present edifice now occupied by Mr. Cyrus Bishop. He died in New York, May 2, 1772, and was buried in Trinity churchyard. Mrs. Thomas died Aug. 14th, 1782. His family, like that of Isaac Hayes, suffered much from the depredations of the British soldiery and found it too precarious to occupy the old homestead located at the Purchase below. Hayes lost a fine crop of wheat which he had planted at Cumpo Point, besides all his family clothing and a valuable Narransett pacer all of which the British had appropriated to their own use. The son of John Thomas, Gen. Thomas Thomas, had a narrow escape from being captured by the British at the Purchase and was compelled to remove here for better personal security. Abigail, wife of Hon. John Thomas, was a daughter of John Sands, of Sands Point, L. I., born January, 1708. The Rev. Solomon Mead, of South Salem, thus records her death "Aug. 14th, 1782, widow of the late Frederick Thomas;" she was buried at Bedford.

church in the Centennial year, 1871, weighs 1243 lbs., and has engraved upon it the following legend:—

“SI DEUS PRO NOBIS QUIS CONTRA NOS.”

Upon the glebe lands a little south-east of the rectory is an immense boulder of granite kneiss; this erratic block, which is truly enormous, may well be termed the “moss-grown rock of the woods.” A few rods distant from the rectory is also an upright rock nine feet high.

Within a mile north of the rectory is located the Lewisboro post-office, which has a daily delivery, via., The New Canaan and New Haven Rail Road, and also one, via., the New York and Harlem Rail Road from Katonah. Directly opposite is the residence and estate of John Walton Esq., which formerly belonged to Col. Cyrus M. Ferris, whose grandfather, Sylvanus Ferris,<sup>a</sup> removed from North Street, Greenwich, on what is now the estate of Mr. Drake Mead, and purchased the property of Henry Read about one hundred years ago. Mary Mead, the wife of Sylvanus, was, at that early day, in the habit of riding down to New York on horseback for the purpose of selling her home-spun knitting. On one of these occasions she removed a black walnut sapling near Harlem, which served a good purpose on the way home, and was planted near the house on her arrival. This is a towering tree and spreads its branches by the roadside, a living memento of the past. Gideon Ferris, her son, married Lois Bouton, and was the father of the present Col. Cyrus Ferris of Norwalk, Conn. Cross street, leading west from this point, passes the Rippowam or Mill River which drains this portion of the town. The high ridge beyond being the dividing-line between the waters that run into the sound on the south and the North River on the west. On the western side of the ridge, and close by the road leading to Poundridge, is the ancient cemetery laid out by Jacob Wood,<sup>b</sup> one of the first settlers in this part of the town. The headstones have only the initials of the dead inscribed upon them, among others the following—I X R. A. G 33. 1718. I. W. A. G 81. Here are interred the remains of Theophilus Ruscoe<sup>c</sup> (whose name is sometimes spelt Resecue) a descendant of John Ruscoe of Norwalk, and Abigail Bouton his wife, who once lived near by in a house which formerly occupied the site of Daniel Bouton's residence. This worthy couple were devout members of the Church of England, and constantly

<sup>a</sup> The old gentleman's silver watch, which is still preserved as a family relic, was purchased in London, England, one hundred and forty years ago and bears the mark of John Andrew, maker, No. 7, 351. Tradition says that the Hon. John Thomas sold his property to Van Horn from whom it passed to Read, &c.

<sup>b</sup> Jacob Wood married Rachel Dean and left a son, Jeremiah. Mr. Wood subsequently gave the lower burying plot on Cross street.

<sup>c</sup> “Theophilus Ruscoe and Abigail Bouton married March 30, 1763.”



in the habit of walking through the woods on Sundays to attend service in the old church that stood at the head of the cross-roads leading from Ridgefield to South Salem. When Mr. Ruscoe first moved into this portion of West Chester County it abounded in wild game. The moose deer were common, and panthers prowled around; the last panther seen in South Salem was shot by Hezekiah, a son of Mr. Ruscoe, when a boy, in the vicinity of his home. The sons of Mr. T. Ruscoe were Theophilus, Gamaliel, and John, who was baptized by the Rev. Ebenezer Dibblee, 26th of April, 1780, together with his sister Abigail.<sup>a</sup> Hezekiah married Sally Dean, and left issue, besides two other sons and three daughters, Mr. Silas Ruscoe, a vestryman of St. John's church, Lewisboro.

Close to the residence of Mr. William E. Knapp is the best entrance to Lake Peppeneghek or Cross Pond, a beautiful sheet of water covering ninety-seven acres of ground, fed entirely by perpetual cold ice springs and charming rivulets from the highlands of Harahames and Asoquatah. The water commissioners of New York are now employing a large force of men in deepening the outlet of the lake and constructing a fume with a view of increasing the annual flow of water into the croton reservoir and renewing the supply if necessary. The lake during the fall of 1876 yielded twenty-two millions of gallons for the croton supply. The shores of Lake Peppeneghek are almost bordered with high hills covered with hanging woods which reach down to the water's edge. Pickerel and other fresh water fish abound here. A short distance to the south lies Lake Asoquatah, or Trinity Lake, that supplies the town of Stamford with water; near the Welton angle or monument in the south-east corner of the town, is Vista—a pretty settlement on the New Canaan road. Here is a post-office, two churches, shoe manufactory of Eleazer Fancher & Co., and several dwellings, and a Methodist Episcopal church was erected on land given by Mr. Michael Ruscoe.

Among the early settlers of this neighborhood may be mentioned Joseph Fayerweather, of Norwalk, who purchased about one hundred acres of land here, and built the house now occupied by Mrs. Crissy. His wife, Catharine, was the neice of the Right Rev. Benjamin Jarvis second Bishop of Connecticut; their son, Stephen Fayerweather was the father of Miss Emilion C. Fayerweather, of Norwalk.<sup>b</sup> There is also a Protestant Methodist church building close by. The Presbyterians or Independents of Lower Salem, prior to 1747, appear to have been associated

<sup>a</sup> See Bap. Reg of St. John's church, Stamford.

<sup>b</sup> Fayerweathers, Fayreweathers, or Fawethers, were an ancient English family formerly seated at Brisset in Suffolk. Arms, gu., six billets or, three, two and one, on a chief of the second a lion passant, vert, or Crest, a lion's head erased in billets, or.

with their brethren at Ridgefield ; for at a public town meeting held in the latter place, Dec. 24th, 1746, it was agreed "that what money is or shall be brought by any person living in the Oblong to support Mr. Ingersol in ye ministry shall be delivered to the selectmen and they to deliver it to Mr. Ingersol over and what ye town has voted for his salary."<sup>a</sup> A meeting house is also spoken of as standing in Ridgefield, December, 1746.

The earliest mention of a Presbyterian ministry in this town occurs in the year 1747, when Samuel Sackett, a minister of the New Brunswick Presbytery, who had been sent in 1741 to labor in Westchester County, and who had been installed, October 12th, 1743, as pastor at Bedford, was charged with the occasional supply of Salem and Cortlandt Manor.<sup>b</sup>

It appears from the following records of the Presbyterian Society, that not only had a church been informally organized, but that a candidate was on probation and awaiting installation as early as 1752.

"As this people belonged not to any Presbytery or association it was agreed by said Society, that the Committee of said Society, with the candidate then on Probation, viz., Mr. Solomon Mead, jointly should send for some of the neighboring ministers to perform the work of authorizing of him, the said Mr. Mead, and invest him with the ministerial charge over them. The ministers sent for were those which follow, (viz.,) Rev. Messrs. Abraham Todd, Elisha Kent, William Gaylord, Jonathan Ingersoll, Robert Silliman and Samuel Sackett, which Convocation was agreed to be called on May the 20th, 1752. Accordingly on the 19th met those who are set down in the convocation which I transcribe from the doings of the said Convention, and is as followeth :"

"At a Convention of ministers at Salem on the 19th of May, Anno Domini 1752, met upon the desire of the People of Salem and places adjacent in conjunction with Mr. Solomon Mead, a candidate for the Gospel ministry, in order to ordain the said Mr. Mead a Gospel minister among or over the said People. Present of the Revd. Messrs. sent for, Abraham Todd, Elisha Kent, Jonathan Ingersol and Samuel Sackett. Mr. Todd chosen Moderator, Mr. Ingersol Scribe. The meeting opened by Prayer, Performed by the Moderator. The Revd. James Davenport being present was voted in as member of the Convention. Proceeded on Mr. Mead's tryals. Examined him in the Languages, in his experimental acquaintance with Religion, his Doctrinal knowledge of Divinity and his orthodoxy. Then meeting adjourned till to-morrow morning. Met according to adjournment. Mr. Mead presented and read a sermon to the Convention,

<sup>a</sup> Ridgefield Town Rec., 1746, p. 3.

<sup>b</sup> A Hist. of the Presbyterian Church in America from its origin until the year 1760, by Rev. Richard Webster, Philadelphia, 1857, p. 546. It is more than probable, however, that this supply of Salem and Cortlandt manor refers to upper Salem now North Salem.—[Editor.

upon a deliberate consideration unanimously agreed and vote to proceed in the ordination of Mr. Mead. Voted that Mr. Ingersol make the first prayer and give the right hand of fellowship; that Mr. Todd should preach, that Mr. Sacket make the ordination prayer, that Mr. Kent give the charge, and that Mr. Davenport conclude with prayer and a word of Exhortation. At which time a church was gathered consisting of eighteen members (viz.) Josiah Gilbert, Solomon Close, Stephen Brush, Jonah Keeler, Noah St. John, Daniel St. John, Nathan Northrup, Andrew Bishop, Ebnr. Scofield, John Bouton, Ebnr. Grummond, Lot Keeler, Paul Keeler, Abraham Northrup, Benjamin Bishop, and Elijah Keeler, and the ordination Performed accordingly. Test.,

JONATH. INGERSOL, *Scribe.*"

"This was the first ordination in Salem, and the first church gathered in said town."<sup>a</sup> SOLOMON MEAD."

"The first Sabbath after the ordination," says Mr. Mead, "(viz.) May the 24th, I took a vote of the church whether we should join with the western association in Fairfield County; voted in affirmative the whole church, except Matthew Northrup. Accordingly I joined as a member of said association on the next Tuesday, viz., the 26th of May, there being an Association of said county then setting, a consociation as yet not meeting the church. As yet have not joined, but propose so to do as soon as opportunity does present."<sup>b</sup>

The following items relate principally to election of officers and adoption of Church government:

"At a meeting of said church, on July 2, 1762—1. Voted our Brother Solomon Close be our deacon.

"2. Voted our Brother John Bouton be our deacon also.

"September 14, 1752. New stile at a meeting of said church. Voted to contribute four pence a man and three pence a woman for one year ensuing; also agreed on it by the desire of the church to have the Sacrament administered once in two months."

"September 8, 1757. At a meeting of the church to hear reasons of Deacon Bouton's resigning his office, after hearing and agreeing he had power to Lay Down, the church proceed to a new choice; again make choice of the deacon, he desires three weeks from the Lord's Day ensuing for consideration, the petition granted the deacon accepts."

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Mead was not, perhaps, aware that the Rev. Ebenezer Dibblee, claimed Salem as belonging to his parochial care, under charge of the Venerable Propagation Society and had performed services here soon after his return from England in 1748. He formally inducted his successor, Epenetus Townsend, 29th of May, 1768.

<sup>b</sup> Book of Records of Presbyterian church, South Salem, vol. I., entitled "Records of the Church of Christ in Salem sd first church in sd town with some places adjacent," p.p. 1-2. This volume has just been discovered and brought to light by the Rev. Thomas M. Gray who kindly loaned it to the author. It contains besides other minutes a "lists of members from 1752 to 1802." Persons who had renewed their covenant from Aug. 2d, 1752 to March 3, 1783, making in all 167. The number of marriages from Aug. 13, 1752, to June 20, 1805, in all 666 a list of infants and adults baptized from May 24th, 1752, to June 24, 1804, in all 912, and to complete the whole a list of deaths from Dec. 22d, 1767 to Jan. 11, 1805.

"September 29, 1763. At a meeting of the Church of Christ in Salem, at the the meeting house," considered whether this church would adopt the Presbyterian form of church government. Voted in the affirmative.

2. "Agreed to choose five ruling Elders.
3. "That those should stand but for one year.
4. "Vote the following persons for the above time: 1. Deacon Solomon Close; 2. Deacon John Bouton; 3. Josiah Gilburd, Esq.; 4. Joseph Osborne; 5. Thadeus Crane."

"April 10, 1765. At a meeting of church in Salem voted to continue the same elders as were above voted. *Nemine contradicante*: Joseph Benedict was chosen elder in room of Joseph Osburn, deceased."

"September 30th, 1778, was elected to be deacon, Nathan Wicks in the room of Deacon Close deceased; the same Mr. Wicks elected elder."

"May 28, 1782, elected two elders, Nathan Rockwell, Esq., and Capt. Gold Bouton,"

"April 27, 1786, Capt. Samuel Lawrence was chosen an elder in the room of Col. Joseph Benedict, deceased."<sup>b</sup>

From the western association of Fairfield County, Connecticut, the congregation came under the care of "The Presbytery of Dutchess County in the Province of New York upon the organization of that ecclesiastical body, October 27th, 1762." "The Reverend Messieurs Elisha Kent, pastor of the first church in Phillip's Precinct, Solomon Mead, pastor of the church in Salem, and Joseph Peck, pastor of the second church in Philip's Precinct," were the original members. The second session of the Presbytery was held at Salem on the first Tuesday in January following (4th of January, 1763). During the thirty-three years of its existence, Mr. Mead was almost invariably present at the meetings of the Presbytery, which was dissolved in 1795. Salem church then came under the care of the newly erected Presbytery of Hudson. In 1819 that Presbytery was divided, and Salem was connected with the Presbytery of North River. By subsequent ecclesiastical arrangements

<sup>a</sup> This must have been the old log house that once stood on the west side of the road opposite to the present meeting house near the site of the late Gould Hawley's residence and which Mr. Mead is pleased to call here "the meeting-house." Capt. Moses Bouton remembers to have worshipped there at an early day; but it never was designed originally as a place of worship—for the Rev. Epenetus Townsend, rector of the parish, writing to the Venerable Propagation Society from Salem, March 25th, 1771 distinctly says: "There are some church people, Presbyterians, Baptists and Quakers scattered among them, and great numbers who don't belong to any particular denomination of Christians. It has been proposed by some to build a church or Presbyterian meeting-house, but nothing is yet concluded, &c." The parochial Church of St. James had been erected at upper Salem in 1763 and opened 31st of August, 1766. The upper Presbyterian meeting-house which was the first constructed in Salem of that denomination, was erected in upper Salem, 1764.

<sup>b</sup> Rec. of Presbyterian church, South Salem, vol. I. entitled "Doings of the church of Salem," p. 5.



it has been connected with the Presbyteries of Bedford and Connecticut and finally with that of Westchester.

Under the long pastorate of Solomon Mead that church appears to have had a peaceful and uneventful history. Its affairs do not seem to have called for interference on the part of the Presbytery of Dutchess County at any time. In the church records is the following entry which is sufficiently concise:

"September 5th, 1812, departed this life the Rev. Solomon Mead, aged eighty-six years, nine months and two days. He officiated in the ministry forty-eight years three months and fifteen days." In his ministry he baptized 912 children and adults, and married 666 (couples). Here we see ended a long life of a venerable minister who may well be remembered by this church for his great zeal in the cause of Religion, for his planting a church in this place, and in letting his light shine in such a manner as to be imitated safely by all."<sup>b</sup>

Mr. Mead was descended from "John Mead, one of two brothers, who emigrated from England about the year 1642. The family was then an ancient and honorable one, though it is not within the author's means to trace their geneology previous to their emigration to this country. One of their ancestors had been the friend and the physician of the talented, though not very amiable, Queen Elizabeth. One of two brothers emigrated to Virginia, where the family still exists." The late venerable and Rt. Rev. William Meade, Bishop of Virginia, was of this line. The other, John Mead, with his two sons, came to New England about the year 1642. The name is spelled Meade as well as Mead. Many claim that they emigrated from Greenwich, Kent County, England. There were, we know, two families of this name settled at an early period—the one in Essex, the other in Leicestershire.<sup>c</sup> "John Mead and his two sons, John and Joseph, having tarried awhile in Massachusetts, first settled at Hempstead, Long Island, where they remained until October, 1660, when the two sons came to Greenwich and bought land of Richard Crab and others, which was deeded to John Mead, he being the elder. Either John, the father, never came to Greenwich—or if so, he took no active part in life, now having become quite an old man."

John Mead the second died 1696, married Miss Potter, of Stamford,

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Mead was settled at Salem from 1752 to 1800, just 48 years. He explains this himself by the following minute endorsed on the back of the old book of Record, "ordained May ye 19th, A.D. 1752, Dismist September, 1800."

<sup>b</sup> Rec. of Presbyterian church, South Salem, vol. II.

<sup>c</sup> The arms of both these families (who spelt their name Meade) were alike, viz., Sa a chev betw three pelicans or, vulned gules. The arms of Mead were also Sa a chev, ermine, betw, three pelicans vulning themselves or,—Burke's Gen. Armory.

and left eight sons and three daughters. The fourth son was Ebenezer Mead, who was born in 1663, and married Sarah Knapp, of Stamford. Their son was Ebenezer Mead, of Greenwich, who was born October 25th, 1692, and died May 3d, 1775. His fifth son was the Rev. Solomon Mead, born at Greenwich in 1726. Mr. Mead was a classmate of the celebrated missionary John Brainard at Yale in 1746, and graduated A. M. there in 1748. At the age of twenty-six we find him settled at Salem. The upper part of Westchester County was almost a wilderness when Mr. Mead undertook the task of planting an independent society in this place; and for some time, we are informed, he was in the habit of riding up weekly from Greenwich on horseback. His first residence stood on the property of Mr. William Hoyt, near the home of his late grandson, the late Richard Mead. But a few years before his death he removed to the residence of his son, Martin Mead, now owned by Uriah Slawson. By his first wife Hannah Strong<sup>a</sup> he had issue Andrew Mead, who married Elizabeth Bouton. Their son is the present Benjamin Strong Mead of Lewisboro, and a daughter Theodocia, who married Mr. Matthew Smith. By his second wife, Hannah Clark, he had two sons: 1. Clark Mead, who married Lois, daughter of Benajah Gilbert, and left two sons, Merlin Mead and the late Richard Mead of Lewisboro. 2. Martin Mead of Lewisboro, who married Polly, daughter of Timothy Clark.

"Besides a small parsonage, this church holds an extensive glebe, consisting of about thirteen acres of improved land and seventy of woodland. In December 1751 the so-called "Proprietors" donated and released to the first Presbyterian or Independent minister that should be settled and ordained in the town of Salem two certain tracts or pieces of land lying on the Lower released ten miles of the Oblong or Equivalent land, which is yet undivided, &c., &c., as follows:

#### DEED FROM TWENTY-SIX SIGNERS AND SEALERS TO FUTURE WOULD BE PRESBYTERIAN OR INDEPENDENT MINISTERS OF SALEM.

"To all Christian people to whom these presents shall come, greeting. Know ye that we the signers and sealers of this instrument for and in consideration of our love and good will to and for the inhabitants of Salem, in the County of Westchester and Province of New York, and for the advancement of the Redeemer's interest among them, have by these presents donated and quited, and do by these presents freely, fully and absolutely donate, release, and quit our claim in and unto two certain tracts or pieces of land lying on the Lower re-

<sup>a</sup> In his register Mr. Mead says, "January 1, 1755, Myself was married to Mrs. Hannah Strong of Stamford. She departed October 20, 1761."

leased ten miles of the Oblong or Equivalent lands, which is yet undivided, to and for the use and improvement of the first Presbyterian or Independent minister, that shall be settled and ordained in said town of Salem, and to his successors forever; said land is Bounded as followeth: viz., one piece bounded north by highway, west, Nathan Northrup's land, south by the land of James Brown, East nothing. The other piece lying by Bedford road and is bounded south by said road and the land of Thomas Hyatt, East by the land of Thomas Hyatt and James Brown, north by said Hyatt's land, west by the land of said Thomas Hyatt and Ephraim Colby, to have and to hold said donated, quitted and released premises, with all the privileges and appurtenances to the same belonging or in any wise appertaining we say, we have and by these presents do donate and release the same unto him the said minister and to his successors in the ministry in said town forever from us our heirs, executors and administrators for him the said minister and his successors to take and improve to their benefit and behoof; in testimony whereof we have hereunto set our hands and seals this twenty-third day of December, seventeen hundred and fifty-one, and in the twenty-fifth year of our Sovereign Lord George the second, King & signed, sealed and Delivered.

In presence of

JOSEPH KEELER,  
BENJAMIN ROCKWELL,  
JOHN BOUTON,  
UDA SMITH (his mark),  
UDY TONGUE (her mark),  
who see BENJAMIN BENEDICT sine,  
EZEKIEL HAWLEY,  
JOSEPH NORTHROP,  
NATHAN OLMSTEAD,  
THADEUS CRANE,  
BENJAMIN BENEDICT,  
BENJAMIN HOYT,  
MATHEW SEAMORE,

JOSEPH KEELER,  
SAMUEL SMITH,  
THOMAS HYATT,  
BENJAMIN ST. JOHN,  
JONAH SMITH,  
NATHAN SAINT JOHN,  
JAMES BENEDICT,  
THOMAS ROCKWELL,  
SAMUEL SMITH,  
TIMOTHY KEELER,  
JABISH SMITH,  
THOMAS SMITH,  
EBENEZER SMITH,

JONAH KEELER.

"Be it remembered that on the sixteenth day of November, seventeen hundred and seventy-four, there appeared before me Caleb Fowler, Esq., one of the Judges of the Superior Court of Common Pleas for the County of Westchester, Benjamin Rockwell, one of the witnesses to the within deed of sale, and on his oath declared that he see all the grantors to the said deed, excepting Benjamin Benedick, seal and deliver the same as their free, voluntary act and deed, for the use therein mentioned, and likewise Ezekiel Hawley, one of the other witnesses to said deed, appeared before me at the same time, and on his oath declared he see the said Benjamin Benedick seal and deliver the said deed as his free ———— deed for the use therein mentioned, and I having inspected said deed and find no material mistake or interlineation therein, and I allow the same to be recorded.

CALEB FOWLER."<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Copied from the original in possession of the clerk of the Board of Trustees of the Presbyterian Society, South Salem. On the back of the document is this endorsement, "Proprietors Deed." We are not aware that this deed has ever been recorded. It certainly was not in 1854 when the editor having made a copy of it by permission of the then clerk of the Trustees (Jacob Webster) had it taken out of his hands and destroyed. The present copy was made through the politeness of Cyrus Lawrence, the second, Esq., in 1874.

With regard to this instrument we have had occasion to show, in one or two instances, that it was given by those who had received their title from Connecticut which title was abrogated by the transfer of the entire Oblong or Equivalent Lands to the Crown in 1731, and that the latter in 1752 granted Letters Patent to James Brown and William Smith for four thousands acres of land within the Oblong or Equivalent, consisting then of about eleven thousand acres of land, which were not included in or granted by Letters Patent 8th of June, 1731, to Thomas Hawley and others (the above grantors). We now see by the date of the above conveyance that it was not proved until twenty-two years after it was given, and it never has been recorded at all to our knowledge. The reason for proving it so late as 1774 was probably owing to the fact that James Brown, Jr., was conveying or had already conveyed the very same lands to the church. Yet we still find the said deed kept in abeyance for several years after the Revolution when it was most absurdly claimed that the "professors of the Church of England" were mixed into the "Presbyterian Society of Lower Salem."<sup>a</sup> Now it was, that the Board of Trustees moved the sale of those lands, as appears by the following record taken from their minutes in 1797 :

"At a meeting of Gould Bouton, Jacob Hayt, Enoch Mead, Nathan Adams and Abijah Gilbert, trustees of the church and congregation known by the name of the Presbyterian church and Congregation of the town of Lower Salem convened at the meeting house on the 14th day of February, 1797. Together with the society, who being warned to meet to deliberate on matters which respect the Society.

The said meeting unanimously agreed by a vote then taken to sign and forward a Petition to the Legislature for a law to be passed to authorize the trustees to sell a part of the Parsonage Lands not exceeding fifty acres,

Rec'd. by ABIJAH GILBERT, *Clerk*.<sup>b</sup>

The real and personal estate belonging to the Presbyterian Society in 1798 is thus stated :

"An inventory and account of the real and personal estate belonging to the Presbyterian church and Congregation, called and known by the name of the Presbyterian church and Congregation of the town of Lower Salem made by the subscribers, trustees of said church and congregation which is as follows (to wit) : The real estate consisting chiefly of unimproved lands occupied by the Rev. Solomon Mead the minister of the said church and congregation and two small pieces of ground rented at four shillings and six-pence per annum. The

<sup>a</sup> Testimony of Col. C. M. Ferris, of Norwalk for many years a Justice of the Peace in this town.

<sup>b</sup> Rec. of the Trustees of Presbyterian church, South Salem, vol. I. p. 11. The Protestant Episcopal church was now about reorganizing under the act of 1795, but no election for officers appears to have taken place in Lower Salem until Oct. 1810.



rest of the premises occupied by Mr. Solomon Mead estimated at five pounds and eighteen shillings.

Rent of the two tenements, £0 4s 6d

Rent of land occupied by Mr. Mead, £5 18s

Together with three sums of money loaned, the principal sums amount to £85 s9 d8 The annual income being the lawful interest which is five pound, one shilling and seven pence per annum.

Principal £85 9s 7d

Interest, £5 1s 7d

In testimony whereof we have hereunto set our hands this 9th day of May, 1798.

ABIJAH GILBERT, }  
ENOCH MEAD, }  
JAMES CONKLIN, }

{ JACOB HAIT,  
{ GOULD BOUTON,  
{ GILES MOLERY."}

Acknowledged before Nathan Rockwell, one of the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas, 9th of May, 1798.<sup>a</sup>

In 1800, Judge Abijah Gilbert,<sup>b</sup> an elder of the Presbyterian Society at Salem, and a member of the State Legislature, obtained an act authorizing the Trustees to sell and dispose of certain lands for the benefit of the church and congregation.

In Assembly, January 30th, 1880.

A petition of the trustees and members of the Presbyterian church and Congregation of the town of Salem in the County of Westchester, praying that a law may be passed empowering the said Trustees to sell a part of the lands, belonging to the said congregation, for the benefit of the said church, was read and referred to the members attending this house from the County of Westchester.<sup>c</sup>

In Assembly, Feb. 5th, 1800.

Mr. A. Smith from the committee to whom was referred the petition of the Trustees and members of the church and Congregation of Salem, in the County of Westchester, reported that they have maturely considered the facts stated in the said petition and *believe them to be true* and are therefore of opinion that the prayer of the petition ought to be granted; that the committee have prepared a bill for that purpose, and have directed him to ask for leave to bring in the same; leave being granted, Mr. Smith brought in the said bill entitled,

*"An act to authorize the trustees of the Presbyterian church and Congregation of the town of Lower Salem to sell and dispose of lands for the benefit of the said church,"*

which was read the first time and ordered to a second reading.

The object of the petition was to enable the petitioners through their trustees to have full power to sell, alien in fee, all right and title belonging to the said church and congregation, vested in them as trustees of and in all such lands, situate, lying and being in the town of Salem, in

<sup>a</sup> Rec. of Trustees of Presbyterian church, South Salem, vol. I., p.p. 13-14.

<sup>b</sup> Mr. Gould Hawley of Salem (on the testimony of the late William Watson Wellman of New Haven) was heard to say that Judge Gilbert went to the Legislature at Albany and obtained a grant giving the Presbyterian Society charge and use of the glebe.

<sup>c</sup> This petition was probably filed, but has since been removed.—[Editor.

Westchester County, as they from time to time may deem necessary for the purpose of procuring other lands on which a parsonage house may be more conveniently erected, and for erecting the same. Provided always that the land, so to be sold by virtue of this act, shall not exceed the quantity of fifty acres."<sup>a</sup>

The act *itself*, passed March 1800, read as follows :

"Whereas the trustees and society of the Presbyterian church and congregation of the town of Salem, in the County of Westchester, have by their petition to the Legislature, prayed for leave to sell, for the benefit of the said church and congregation, certain lands belonging to the said church and congregation, in the town of Salem aforesaid, thereupon: Be it enacted by the people of the State of New York, represented in Senate and Assembly, that full power, good right, and lawful authority shall be and hereby is granted to the trustees of the said church and congregation to sell, alien in fee, all right and title belonging to the said church and congregation, vested in them as trustees of and in all such lands, situate, lying and being in the town of Salem, in Westchester County, as they from time to time may deem necessary for the purpose of procuring other lands on which a parsonage house may be more conveniently erected, and for erecting the same. Provided always that the lands so to be sold by virtue of this act shall not exceed the quantity of fifty acres."<sup>b</sup>

The following sales were made under this act as appears by the minutes of the Trustees:

"The said Board of Trustees being by law of this State authorized to sell a quantity of land on the old Parsonage not to exceed fifty acres have sold the several quantity's of land to the persons named and for the sums annexed to their names :

	ACRES.	ROODS.	RODS			
To Elisha Avery.....	7	—	28	\$	119	—
" Andrew Massey.....	9	—	6		50	81
" Andrew Massey.....	1	—	—		12	50
" Philander Lawrence.....	8	—	30		81	89
" John Bouton .....	7	1	13		69	62
" John Bouton, Meadow...	—	—	36		6	75
" Joseph Webster.....	2	2	—		13	—
" Giles Malory .....	4	3	9		61	57
" Nathan Olmstead.....	—	1	—		8	—
" Samuel B. Isaacs. ....	8	—	—		66	—
	48	—	27	\$	489	14 <sup>c</sup>

The following minutes appear principally to relate to the purchase of what is called the old Parsonage farm. "At a meeting of Gould Bouton, James Conklin, Jacob Hayt, Giles Malory, James Reynolds and Abijah Gilbert, trustees of the Presbyterian Society held at the house of

<sup>a</sup> Laws of New York, 1800, p. 47.

<sup>b</sup> Laws of New York, 1800, p. 47.

<sup>c</sup> Rec. of Trustees of Presbyterian Church, South Salem, vol. I., p. 21.

Abijah Gilbert on the 24th day of November, 1801, for the purpose of naming and stating the proceedings and accounts relative to the sales and purchase of lands for the use and benefit of the society which is as follows: On the 27th of March, 1800, Jacob Hayt, in behalf of the Society, made a contract with George Codwise for a tract of land which formerly belonged to Thaddeus Rockwell, and engaged to pay the sum of one hundred and eighty-two dollars and sixty cents with interest, taking the premises with the incumbrance of two mortgages given on the same by Thaddeus Rockwell to Governor John Jay the other to Sir James Jay. The Board of Trustees agreed with the said Rockwell to pay twenty-two dollars and fifty cents per acre for the land which on survey appeared to be fifty-six acres and one rood, and in a settlement between the said Board and said Rockwell he agreed to pay eighteen dollars towards the extraordinary expense of procuring a deed from Codwise and settling the mortgages and for settling the accounts for pasture and other dealings that were agreed to ballance both accounts, that a deed executed by said Codwise bearing date the 10th of May, 1801, conveying the same land to Abijah Gilbert in trust, the said board of trustees ordered said Gilbert to convey by deed for the use of the society the 2nd day of June, 1801, to contain thirty-three acres and one rood of land; also to convey to Aaron Keeler twenty-three acres which was sold to said Keeler for twenty-three dollars and fifty cents per acre; the said board for making payment agreeable to contract borrowed, in the month of April, 1800, of Michael Lockwood, five hundred dollars and collected money belonging to the society for lands sold—which appears by the accounts herein stated, and that the principal with the interest from April last is due to the said Lockwood, and that there is in the hands of the Trustees to make the payment the following sums:

Due from Giles Malory, on note.....	\$ 66 62
“ “ Ebenezer Grummon, on note.....	42 30
“ “ Joseph Webster, on note.....	22 10
“ “ Elisha Avery, on note.....	131 50
“ “ Samuel B. Isaacs, contract.....	68
“ “ Jeremiah Keeler, on bond.....	129 32
“ “ Hezekiah De Forest, for rent.....	12
“ “ Abijah Gilbert, for a balance on his bonds,	15 53
“ “ Jacob Hayt, on balance for rent of land...	41 25
“ “ Philander Lawrence, rent of land.....	5 75

---

\$534 37<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Rec. of Trustees of Presbyterian church, South Salem, vol. I., pp. 13-14.

In 1852, the so-called "upper Parsonage" farm, consisting of thirty-two acres or more, adjoining the Presbyterian church was sold by an order of the Legislature.

The first building used in Lower Salem as a place of public worship, according to the independent or Presbyterian method, was the old log cabin, already alluded to, as an assembly of members is recorded to have taken place at the meeting-house "in September, 1763."

In March, 1771, it was proposed by the members of the society to build a church or Presbyterian meeting-house, but nothing was then concluded. So that it was not probably commenced until 1772 or 1773—according to the records it was standing 1797 and probably remained until 1824. The present church edifice, erected in 1825, occupies a commanding position near the center of the village of South Salem. It is a neat wooden structure, sixty feet by forty, with a recess for organ and choir, the whole surmounted with a tower and spire. This building was greatly improved in 1873 at an expense of \$8,000.<sup>a</sup>

The parsonage erected in 1801 out of the proceeds obtained by the sale of the old parsonage lands or property purchased of Thaddeus Rockwell, adjoins it on the north.

#### LIST OF MINISTERS OR PASTORS OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH AT SOUTH SALEM.

INST. OR CALL.	MINISTERS OR PASTORS.	VACATED BY.
May 20, 1752,	REV. SOLOMON MEAD,	Dismissed Sept. 11, 1800
Nov. 27, 1780,	REV. ICHABOD LEWIS,	Death.
Nov. 27, 1804,	REV. JOHN ELY,	Resigned.
SEPT. 22, 1813,	REV. JACOB BURBANK,	"
June 14, 1820,	REV. CHARLES F. BUTLER,	"
May 1, 1823,	REV. STEPHEN SAUNDERS,	"
Oct. 9, 1834,	REV. REUBEN FRAME,	"
Nov. 3, 1852,	REV. A. L. LINDSLEY, D.D.,	"
May 28, 1869,	REV. DANIEL S. GREGORY,	"
Oct. 18, 1871,	REV. THOMAS M. GRAY, D.D.,	Dismissed, 1876.

The elders of this church whose names appear, mentioned in the old records of the Presbytery of Dutchess County, are :

Solomon Close, mentioned 1763 to 1773 ; Jesse Tresdell, mentioned 1772 ;  
 John Bouton, mentioned 1765 to 1789 ; Nathaniel Weeks, mentioned 1780 ;  
 Josiah Benedict, mentioned 1767 to 1778 ; Nathan Rockwell, mentioned 1784  
 to 1794 ;  
 Josiah Gilbert, mentioned 1768 ; Samuel Lawrence, mentioned 1786 to 1793 ;  
 Gould Bouton, mentioned 1793.

<sup>a</sup> Report of Rev. Epenetus Townsend, New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. II., 490-493 (Hawks).





Presbyterian Church, South Salem.

The Presbyterian church of Lower Salem was first incorporated on the 4th of January, 1784. Abijah Gilbert, Jacob Hoit, Matthew Seymour, Gideon Seely, Michael Halstead and Nathaniel Newman, trustees.<sup>a</sup>

The grave yard surrounding the church contains memorials to the families of the Keelers, Rockwells, Isaacs, Ferrises, Gilberts, Websters and Meads, &c., &c.

In the south-west corner appears a neat marble slab inscribed to the

Memory  
of the  
REV. SOLOMON MEAD,  
First Pastor of the Presbyterian  
church in this place, Æ. 86,  
He had the charge of this people  
. 48 years

ob. September 4th, 1812.  
While marble monuments decay  
The righteous live an endless day,  
And earthly temples turn to dust,  
Blest is the memory of the just.

In memory of  
HANNAH MEAD,  
wife of  
REV. SOLOMON MEAD,  
who departed this life  
Oct. 20, 1761,  
Æ. 24.

---

<sup>a</sup> Earliest book of Trustee's record meeting, 26th Dec. 1788. The earliest book of records of Commons, 19th of May, 1752.

## Also monuments erected in

Memory of  
CAPT. JOSEPH WEBSTER  
who died  
Jan. 16, 1838  
Æ. 81 years and 12 days.

Here lyes buried ye body  
of MARY, wife of NATHAN  
NORTHUP who departed this  
life Sept. 28, 1761 in ye 25th  
year of her age.

JOSIAH GILBERT  
died  
Oct. 25, 1858,  
in the 72 year  
of his age  
For forty-five years he was a  
member and thirty-six years  
an elder of the Presbyterian  
Church.

Here lyes buried  
ye body MR. NATHAN  
NORTHUP, who departed this  
life May 22, 1751,  
in ye 53 year of his age.

MRS. MARY ISAACS,  
died Nov. 26, 1801,  
in the 81st year of her  
age.

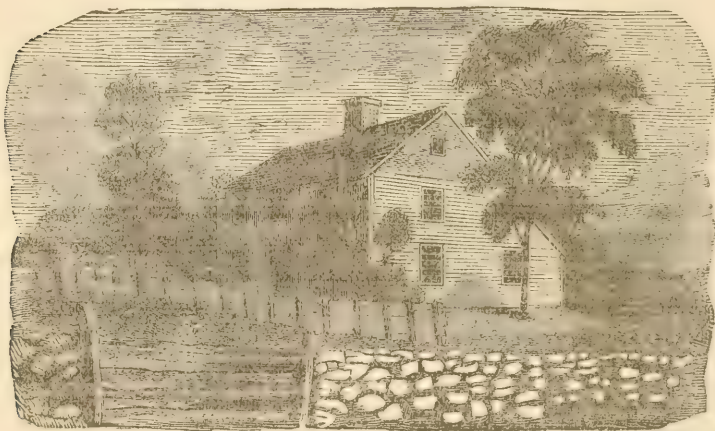
In memory  
of  
MR. NATHAN GILBERT,  
who departed this life  
Sept. 1st, 1798,  
aged 71 years  
Hark from the tombs  
a doleful sound my  
ears attend the cry.  
Ye living one come  
view the ground  
where you must  
shortly lie.

A short distance north of the Presbyterian church, on land now owned by the heirs of Linus Hoyt, formerly stood a small wooden structure celebrated as the temporary prison of Major John André, adjutant-general of the British army. From this place he penned the letter to General Washington, disclosing his true character.

"After the capture of André by the three farmers of Westchester, (says Sparks,) the latter resolved to convey their prisoner to the nearest military post, which was then stationed at North Castle, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Jameson. From North Castle the prisoner was foolishly forwarded by that officer, under the charge of Lieutenant Allen and a guard, to General Arnold. Upon the return of Major Tallmadge (who it seems had been out on duty,) to North Castle, and having inspected the papers, he earnestly requested, that the prisoner might be brought back, to which Jameson at last consented. In the latter's order of countermand to Lieutenant Allen, he says, "From some circumstances which I have just discovered, I have reason to fear, that a party of the enemy is above; and as I would not have Anderson re-taken, or get

away. I desire that you will proceed to Lower Salem, with him, and deliver him to Capt. Hoogland," &c., &c.

Some mistake appears to have been made in the orders, for André was returned to North Castle. It was now agreed upon by Jameson and Tallmadge, "that it was best to keep Anderson in close custody, till something more should be known about him, or until orders should be received from General Washington. As Lower Salem was farther within the American lines than North Castle; and, as Col. Sheldon's quarters were there, it was thought advisable for him to be removed to that place. Major Tallmadge commanded the escort, and continued



Col. Sheldon's Headquarters.

with the prisoner from that time, till he arrived at Tappan. It will be remembered that eight or nine days previous to the taking of André, a letter had been received by Major Tallmadge from Arnold, in which he requested Tallmadge, if a man by the name of Anderson should come within the lines, to send him to head quarters with two horsemen, and to bear him company in person, if his business would permit. This incident, connected with the circumstances of the capture of the prisoner, who called himself Anderson, and with the obvious disguise he now assumed, confirmed Tallmadge's suspicions, though the nature and extent of the plans in agitation he could only conjecture, as Anderson revealed nothing and mentioned no names. On the arrival of André at Lower Salem, about 8 o'clock in the morning, he was introduced to Mr. Bronson, who was attached to Sheldon's regiment, and who occupied a small

apartment which he consented to share with the prisoner. The room could be easily guarded, as it had but one door and one window. André appeared much fatigued, and at first was little inclined to talk. His clothes were soiled, and he accepted a change from Mr. Bronson, while his linen and nankeen under-dress was sent to the washerwoman.

Becoming refreshed and more at ease, he relaxed into familiar conversation, which, with his agreeable and courteous manners, excited the interest and secured the good will of his room-mate. He resorted to his favorite resource for amusement, and sketched with a pencil a group of ludicrous figures, representing himself and his escort under march. He presented the sketch to Bronson, saying, "This will give you an idea of the style in which I have had the honor to be conducted to my present abode." In diversions of this kind the morning passed away. As it was known to André that the papers found on his person had been transmitted to General Washington, who must soon receive them, and it being now evident, that he would not himself be sent to Arnold, he perceived that any further attempts at concealment would be unavailing and resolved to stand forth in his true character, seeking no other mitigation of his case, than such as could be granted on the strict principles of honor and military usage. With this view he wrote in Bronson's room, his first letter to General Washington :

"SALEM, 24 SEPTEMBER, 1780.

"SIR:—

"What I have as yet said concerning myself, was in the justifiable attempt to be extricated; I am too little accustomed to duplicity to have succeeded.

"I beg your excellency will be persuaded, that no alteration in the temper of my mind, or apprehension for my safety, induces me to take the step of addressing you; but that it is to rescue myself from an imputation of having assumed a mean character for treacherous purposes or self interest; a conduct incompatible with the principles that actuate me; as well as with my conduct in life.

"It is to vindicate my fame that I speak, and not to solicit security.

"The person in your possession is Major John André, Adjutant General to the British Army.

"The influence of one commander in the army of his adversary is an advantage taken in war. A correspondence for this purpose I held; as confidential (in the present instance) with his Excellency, Sir Henry Clinton.

"To favor it, I agreed to meet upon ground not within the posts of either army, a person who was to give me intelligence; I came up in the Vulture man-of-war for this effect, and was fetched by a boat from the ship to the beach. Being there, I was told that the approach of day would prevent my return, and that I must be concealed until the next night. I was in my regimentals, and had fairly risked my person.

"Against my stipulation, my intention, and without my knowledge before-



hand, I was conducted within one of your posts. Your excellency may conceive my sensation on this occasion, and will imagine how much more must I have been affected by a refusal to re-conduct me back the next night, as I had been brought. Thus become a prisoner, I had to concert my escape. I quitted my uniform, and was passed another way in the night, without the American posts, to neutral ground, and informed I was beyond all armed parties, and left to press to New York. I was taken at Tarrytown by some volunteers.

"Thus, as I have had the honor to relate, was I betrayed (being Adjutant General of the British army,) into the vile condition of an enemy in disguise within your posts.

"Having avowed myself a British officer. I have nothing to reveal but what relates to myself, which is true on the honor of an officer and a gentleman.

"The request I have to make to your excellency, and I am conscious I address myself well, is, that in any rigor policy may dictate, a decency of conduct towards me may mark, that, though unfortunate, I am branded with nothing dishonorable, as no motive could be mine but the service of my King, and as I was involuntarily an impostor.

"Another request is, that I may be permitted to write an open letter to Sir. Henry Clinton, and another to a friend for clothes and linen.

"I take the liberty to mention the condition of some gentlemen at Charleston, who being either on parole or under protection, were engaged in a conspiracy against us. Though their situation is not similar, they are objects who may be set in exchange for me, or are persons whom the treatment I receive might effect.

"It is no less, sir, in confidence of the generosity of your mind, than on account of your superior station, that I have chosen to importune you with this letter. I have the honor to be, with great respect, sir, your excellency's most obedient and humble servant,

"JOHN ANDRÉ, *Adjutant General.*"

When he had finished this letter, he handed it open to Major Tallmadge, who perused it with astonishment and strong emotion; for, although he believed the writer to be a military man, yet he had not supposed him a person of such rank, nor dreamed of the dangerous plot in which he had been acting a part. The letter was sealed, and sent to General Washington. From that moment André's mind seemed relieved. He became cheerful, and his good humor, affable address, and attractive powers of conversation, gained upon the hearts of the officers, and won from them reciprocal kindness and civilities.<sup>a</sup> As soon as General Washington had ascertained the full extent of the treason, instantaneous preparations were made for the defence of West Point, and "an order dispatched to Col. Jameson, directing him to send André under a strong guard to Robinson's house. The express arrived about midnight at Lower Salem, and at that hour an officer came with the message to André. He started up quickly from his bed and obeyed the summons.

<sup>a</sup> Spark's *Life of Arnold*, p. 231, 235, 6, 7, 8.

The rain fell in torrents, and the night was dark and dismal. Mr. Bronson says, that, on taking leave, he expressed a deep sense of the obligations he was under, for the delicate and courteous treatment he had received from the officers of the regiment with whom he had become acquainted; and declared that, whatever might be his future destiny, he could never meet them as enemies. The guard marched all night, and in the morning of the next day, September 26th, André arrived at Robinson's house, in the custody of Major Tallmadge."<sup>a</sup> From whence he was taken the same evening to West Point.

"Early on the morrow," says Sargent, "André was sent over to South or Lower Salem, to the head quarters of Sheldon's regiment.

About eight A.M., then, on September 24th, André was brought to the Gilbert farm-house, and committed to the custody of Lieut. King, of the Dragoons, who has left us this account of what ensued:

"He looked somewhat like a reduced gentleman. His small-clothes were nankeen, with handsome white-top boots—in fact, his undress military clothes. His coat, purple, with gold lace, worn somewhat threadbare, with a small trimmed tarnished beaver on his head. He wore his hair in a queue, with long black beard, and his clothes somewhat dirty. In this garb, I took charge of him. After breakfast my barber came into dress me, after which I requested him to go through the same operation, which he did. When the ribbon was taken from his hair, I observed it full of powder; this circumstance, with others that occurred, induced me to believe I had no ordinary person in charge. He requested permission to take to the bed, whilst his shirt and small clothes could be washed. I told him that was needless; for a shirt was at his service, which he accepted. We were close pent up in a bedroom, with a vidette at the door and window. There was a spacious yard before the door, which he desired he might be permitted to walk in with me. I accordingly disposed of my guard in such a manner as to prevent an escape. While walking together he observed he must make a confidant of somebody, and knew not a more proper person than myself, as I had appeared to befriend a stranger in distress. After settling the point between ourselves, he told me who he was and gave me a short account of himself, from the time he was taken in St. Johns in 1775 to that time. Returning to the house, writing materials were supplied him; and he was informed that his papers were sent to Washington, whose orders, and not Arnold's, should decide his condition, he immediately wrote to our commander."

The letter we have already given in the foregoing pages.

"This letter written, a load was lifted from André's mind. He was no longer compelled to associate with gentlemen under a false name and guise. Despite Tallmadge's previous suspicions, its con-

---

<sup>a</sup> Spark's Life of Arnold, p. 253-4.

tents amazed him when it was given him to read; but neither he, nor King, Bronson, and the other officers at the post, could remain unmoved by the refinement and amiability of their guest. His other arts came in aid of his conversational powers, and with ready hand and easy light-heartedness of manner, he sketched his own progress under the rude escort of militia, to their quarters. 'This,' said he to Bronson, 'will give you an idea of the style in which I have had the honor to be conducted to my present abode.' With such pleasantries he passed away the morning unconcernedly, as though he were in no danger whatever."<sup>a</sup>

A correspondent of the *New York Times* (signing himself N. O.,) some years since, relates many of the foregoing particulars in a conversation which he once had with the late General Joshua King of Ridgefield, Conn., (the father of Rufus H. King, a well known merchant of Albany, and also of Joshua Ingersoll King, Esq., who now occupies the family mansion at Ridgefield,) and adds that "André eagerly inquired whether Arnold had made his escape, seeming more solicitous for his (Arnold's) safety than his own. They arrived, the same day, at headquarters. André, was, of course, closely confined, and he (King) was constantly with him, as a guard, till his execution. He walked with him to the gallows, and when he first saw the fatal gibbet he gave a sudden start, and said "he was reconciled to death, but not to the mode," and added, "it would be but a momentary pang." On arriving at the spot he mounted the cart, and in doing so, soiled his white dimities, which he quickly wiped off with his pocket handkerchief, adjusted the rope to his neck with his own hands, and in a few minutes the brave and accomplished André had paid the penalty of his unsuccessful espionage."

The Hon. John Jay, of Bedford, made every effort to preserve this interesting relic of the Revolutionary history; and for this purpose purchased the old quarters of Major André and a piece of land surrounding it, and tendered a deed thereof to the New York Historical Society, provided they would maintain and defray all necessary repairs and expenses for the future. His praiseworthy act was not sustained, which led to the property being resold, and finally to the tearing down of the old house itself—a piece of vandalism unworthy of our enlightened age and country. When we visited it in 1846, the ravages of time had then made but little progress upon it; the small room in which André was confined, the second night after his arrest, was still perfect with its single door and solitary window looking out upon the highway. On a stone of the old house was rudely cut the initials of its former owner and date

---

<sup>a</sup> Life of Major André by Winthrop Sargent.

J. G., 1776, Congress, (John Gilbert.) The Gilbert powder-horn which was borne through the Revolutionary war, is now in the possession of the Hon. John Jay. This relic is curiously engraved, showing the lines of the American army while stationed at Boston and Charleston, Mass.

Between two and three miles north-west of the village of South Salem lies Lake Wepuck or Waccabuck, (Long Pond,) a beautiful sheet of water, covering one hundred and twenty-eight acres and a half of ground. Near by are two other sheets of water, called the north and south lakes, connected with the Wepuck by a small stream; the former containing thirty-seven acres, the latter sixty-six and a half, all are fed and supplied chiefly, (perhaps entirely,) by springs and rivulets from the great Wepuck mountain. Near the western shore is located the Waccabuck house kept by Mr. Rockwell Mead. The northern shore of the lake is bordered with hanging woods, and surrounded by rocky mountains of the most picturesque form, presenting altogether an interesting scene as the traveller approaches from Lower Salem. The hills on the southern shore are much lower, but equally attractive; their bases being profusely covered with foliage to the very margin of the water. Its shores are also diversified with wooded points. A short distance from the southern shore of the Lake, on the land of Edwin Bouton, is the well-known angle of the oblong, where the Commissioners in 1734 erected a monument which they deemed twenty miles from Cortlandt Point (Verplanck) on the Hudson River. The fences still remain as they were laid out by the original proprietors of the adjoining lands. Lake Wepuck or Waccabuck was once famous for the abundance of its beavers (*castor fiber*.) It is upwards of fifteen years since, that the last solitary hermit was observed upon the edge of the lake. This animal had been noticed at different intervals throughout the summer of 1832. In the fall of that year a laboring man (residing near the lake) determined upon securing it if possible. For this purpose he took his station early one morning in the vicinity of one of the beaver's haunts. It soon made its appearance, and commenced felling a small tree, which it drew to the water's edge; but the man who had refrained from firing, in order to watch the motions of the animal, making a slight noise, it became alarmed, and suddenly plunged into the water,<sup>a</sup>

The numerous rivers of Westchester county must have afforded (the Indian hunter) an abundant supply of this useful animal. Van der Donck, the Patroon of Yonkers, informs us that in 1656, beavers were found not far from his residence, and several were brought in by the Indian hunters; also that 80,000 of these animals were annually killed

---

<sup>a</sup> It is said that the same animal was observed in the Fall of 1837.



in this quarter of the country. "The Indians (continues the same authority) burn the beaver bones and never permit their dogs to gnaw the same; alleging that afterwards they will be unlucky in the chase. Among all the beaver skins I have seen, no more than one was of a different color, and that was white, the outer-wind hairs were golden yellow. The skin was shipped on board the Princess with Director Kieft, which was lost at sea."<sup>a</sup>

The deep waters of Lake Waccabuck afford vast quantities of fish, as pickerel, large perch, eels, &c. The two former are said to have been introduced here within a few years. The favorite haunts of the pickerel are the Cove and Raven's rock.

Upon the south ridge of Long Pond mountain (which rises abruptly from the northern shore of the lake,) is situated the cave of Sarah Bishop, the hermitess.



The Sarah Bishop Cave, Long Pond Mountain.

Amidst the savage landscape, bleak and bare,  
 Stands the chill hermitage, in mountain rock, and air,  
 Its haunts forsaken, and its feasts forgot,  
 A leaf strown, lonely, desolated cot!

—*White's Selborne.*

The hermitess is reported to have been a resident of Long Island at the period of the Revolution, where she saw the destruction of her paternal mansion, and suffered great cruelty at the hands of a British officer, which finally induced her to abandon society altogether, and seek an abode in the present cave. The following account of a visit to

<sup>a</sup> Van der Donck's Hist. New Netherlands.

the hermitess, is taken from a newspaper printed in Poughkeepsie in 1804 :

“ As you pass the southern and elevated ridge of the mountain, and begin to descend the southern steep, you meet with a perpendicular descent of a rock, in the front of which is this cave. At the foot of the rock is a gentle descent of rich and fertile ground, extending about ten rods, when it instantly forms a frightful precipice, descending half a mile to the pond called Long Pond. In the front of the rock on the north, where the cave is, and level with the ground, there appears a large frustum of the rock, of a double fathom in size, thrown out by some unknown convulsion of nature, and lying in front of the cavity from which it was rent, partly enclosing the mouth and forming a cover. The rock is left entire above, and forms the roof of the humble mansion. This cavity is the habitation of the hermitess, in which she has passed the best of her years, excluded from all society. She keeps no domestic animal, not even fowl, cat, or dog. Her little plantation, consisting of half an acre, is cleared of its wood and reduced to grass, where she has raised a few peach trees, and yearly plants a few hills of beans, cucumbers, and potatoes. The whole is surrounded by a luxuriant grape vine, which overspreads the surrounding wood, and is very productive. On the opposite side of this little tenement, is a fine fountain of excellent water. At this fountain we found the wonderful woman, whose appearance it is a little difficult to describe. Indeed, like nature in its first state, she was without form; her dress appeared little else than one confused and shapeless mass of rags patched together without any order, which obscured all human shape, excepting her head which was clothed with a luxuriance of lank grey hair, depending on every side as time had formed it, without any covering or ornament. When she discovered our approach, she exhibited the appearance of a wild and timid animal. She started and hastened to her cave which she entered, and barricaded the entrance, with old shells pulled from the decayed trees. We approached this humble habitation, and after some conversation with its inmate, obtained liberty to remove the barricades and look in; for we were not able to enter, the room being only sufficient to accommodate one person. We saw no utensil, either for labor or cookery, save an old pewter basin and a gourd shell; no bed but the solid rock, unless it were a few old rags scattered here and there; no bed clothes of any kind, not the least appearance of food or fire. She had indeed a place in one corner of her cell where a fire had at some time been kindled, but it did not appear there had been one for some months. To confirm this, a gentleman says he passed her cell five or six days after the great fall of snow, in the beginning of March; that she had no fire then, and had not been out of her cave since the snow had fallen. How she subsists during the severe season is yet a mystery. She says, she eats but little flesh of any kind; in the summer she lives on berries, nuts and roots. We conversed with her for some time, found her to be of a sound mind, a religious turn of thought and entirely happy in her situation. Of this she has given repeated proofs, by refusing to quit this dreary abode. She keeps a Bible with her, and says she takes much satisfaction and spends much time in reading it.”

Soon after her settlement, the hermitess purchased the cave and three acres of land adjoining. Here she resided until the winter of 1810, when she was accidentally killed by falling into a pit."<sup>a</sup>

The southern view from the cave affords a splendid prospect of forty-five miles in extent, terminated by Long Island.

From Lake Wacabuck issues the Peppeneghek, or Cross River (one of the numerous tributaries of the Croton) upon which is situated the small settlement of Cross River, so-called after the family of that name who were among the early settlers of Bedford. They came originally from Fairfield; for on the 25th of October, 1655, occurs an order of the Probate Court of that place concerning the estate of William Cross, deceased.<sup>b</sup> In 1680 John Cross was one of the proprietors of the "Hop Grounds," Bedford. This place contains a post office, two churches, several manufactories, and twenty dwellings. On the outskirts of the village is located the old residence of the Reynolds' family. The stone chimney bears the initials of its founder, N. R., 1793. Nathaniel Reynolds, one of the first settlers whose son is the present George Reynolds. The road from Ridgefield, by South Salem, to Bedford, passes through it. The Baptist church of Cross River was first incorporated on the 28th of March, 1842; Lewis Holmes, Abijah Reynolds, Lewis Mead, Titus Reynolds, Josiah M. Elmore, trustees.<sup>c</sup>

The Methodist Episcopal church of this place (sometimes styled the Herman Chapel) was incorporated 12th of March, 1825; first trustees, Joseph Wilson, Daniel Silkman, John Silkman, Aaron Silkman, Walter S. Lyons and John Brady.<sup>d</sup>

The present pastor is the Rev. Mr. Bardin who officiates alternately at Cross River and Golden's Bridge.

The waters of the Peppeneyhek or Cross River are abundantly supplied with all kinds of fresh water fish. Near the intersection of the Cisque or Beaver Dam and Peppeneghek are situated the fishing falls.

Golden's Bridge is a small hamlet (located on the banks of the Croton) in the northwest corner of this town. It contains a post office and a Methodist Episcopal church.

Here is a station of the New York and Harlem Railroad. The Matopac branch of which diverges at this point.

The following extracts are taken from the town books:

---

<sup>a</sup> The poor-master found in the cave a small sum of money sufficient to defray her funeral expenses.

<sup>b</sup> Fairfield Prob. Rec. 1648-1656, pp. 11, 12.

<sup>c</sup> County Rec., Religious Soc. Lib. B. 70.

<sup>d</sup> County Rec., Religious Soc., Lib. A. 186.

## FIRST BOOK OF RECORDS IN SALEM.

*April 17th, 1747.*

At a town meeting in Salem, April 2, 1751 :

JUSTICE GILBERT, *Moderator* ; JACOB WALL, *Supervisor* ; NATHANIEL WYATT, *Clerk* ; DAVID WEBSTER, *Constable* ; PETER BENEDIOT, *Sessor* ; BENJ. ROCKWELL, *Sessor* ; NATHANIEL WIATT, *Sessor* ; DAVID WEBSTER, *Servuer* ; NATHANIEL WIATT, *Servuer* ; JACOB WALLEY, *Servuer*.

“At a town meeting in Salem, 10th day of January, 1763, *Resolved* that the welfare of the town was endangered by one Dr. Michael Abbott, of Ridgefield, in the colony of Connecticut, who had lately come into the town with sundry other persons and had inoculated with the small-pox one Gershom Sellick, by means of which the people are greatly exposed, and put in much damages of taking the small-pox.”





# THE TOWN OF MAMARONECK.

---

Mamaroneck is situated on the Sound, seven miles south of the county seat, White Plains, distant twenty miles north-east of New York, and about one hundred and forty-two south of Albany. It is bounded north by Scarsdale, east by Harrison and Rye, south by the "*Manunketsuck*" or "Broad Flowing River" of the Indians commonly called Long Island Sound, and west by New Rochelle. Its length, north and south, is three miles, and its medium width east and west, two and a quarter.<sup>a</sup>

The etymology of the name of this place (at different periods spelt Mammarinikes, Mamoronack, Mamarineck, Merrinack, Merinak, and Mamaronuck) doubtless refers, like most Indian words, to some object peculiar to its geographical locality. The last syllable, "eck," or "uck" (uc), being, the ordinary inflection for locality, and one of the striking characteristics of Mohegan names, east of the "Statauc" or North River. Mamaroneck signifies "the place where the fresh water falls into the salt," from the Mamaroneck river, a fresh water stream which divides this town from Rye Neck, originally falling over a ridge of rock directly into the salt water of Mamaroneck harbor. This ridge, now removed, was a little above the present bridge and near where the old Boston road crossed the stream.

The original name of De Lancey's Neck, the peninsula which forms the south-east portion of the town, "Wanmainuck;" and that of the adjoining neck or peninsula, on the west, formerly belonging to Peter Jay Munro, was "Mangopson." Mamaroneck at the time of the Dutch discovery appears to have been inhabited by one of the numerous sea coast tribes termed Suwanoes, or Sewanoos, by John De Laet, one of the

---

<sup>a</sup> New York Gazetteer.

best historians of New Netherlands, A.D., 1625.<sup>a</sup> This people he describes "as dwelling along the coast from Norwalk to twenty-four miles to the neighborhood of Hellegat." Adriaen van der Donck, in his map of 1656, styles them Siwanoy. These Siwanoy constituted a tribe of the mighty Mohegan, or "Enchanted Wolf" nation, originally called Muhhekanew, or the Seven Tribes on the sea coast—otherwise called Mohiggans by the English, and Mahicanders, or River Indians, by the low Dutch,<sup>b</sup> and Mohicans by the English.

The River Sachems, at this early period, paid tribute to Sassacus, grand sachem of the Mohegans, whose broad territory extended from Narragansett to Hudson River, and over all Long Island. In 1644, there was an Indian Chief by the name of Mamaranack, living at Kitchawanc,<sup>c</sup> (Croton) This individual may have been one of the grantors of these lands to the Dutch West India Company, in 1640, when the latter purchased a large tract of land comprising much of the present County of Westchester.

The site of the ancient Indian village in this town can still be traced upon the projecting rocks, directly opposite Heathcote Hill and the residence of the late Benjamin M. Brown, along Mamaroneck Bay. This spot was well suited to the habits of the aborigines, who subsisted, one-half of the year at least, upon the fish caught in these waters. It must also be borne in mind, that all the Indian villages on the sea board were noted for the manufacture of seawant, the materials for which were found here in great abundance.<sup>d</sup>

The beautiful scenery of the bay, and adjoining necks, must have had peculiar attractions for these roving nomads and hunters, as they appear always to have selected such places for their summer residence. Early Connecticut coins have been discovered on the site of these habitations. The remains of several Indians were found a few years since, in repairing the road opposite the store now occupied by Britt & Son. Some of the skeletons were nearly entire. They have been since interred in the rear of Dr. Stanley's residence. Upon the Shubal Lyon property, northeast of the village, is situated the Indian burying-ground. Remains of extensive Indian works exist on the elevated ground north of Heathcote Hill, and of the late Mr. Benjamin Brown's residence, called Nelson's Hill. They consist of distinct long round ridges, with corresponding depressions, and of four circular pits in the form of a square, having a

<sup>a</sup> De Laet's New World, chap. viii.

<sup>b</sup> N. Y. Hist. Soc. vol. i. 296-307.

<sup>c</sup> O'Callahan's Hist. N. N. 302.

<sup>d</sup> There were two kinds of seawant, wampum or Indian money, viz.:—wampum, (white,) and suckaubock, (black.) The white was manufactured from the Mehebauck Periwinkle. The black of the Quahaug.

small mound upon the south. "The use of these excavations it is impossible to imagine, unless we suppose them to have been used by the aborigines in defence; an idea that is rather favored by the circular mound on the south, as if made purposely to receive the palisade." The site of other Indian works are very apparent on the west side of Heathcote Hill. We have shown that the lands belonging to this town were originally purchased of the native Indians, by the Dutch West India Company, in 1640. Their next proprietor was John Richbell, who appears from the following document to have been united with two others, all at that time residents of the Island of Barbadoes, W. I., in the purchase and settling of a Plantation in the south-western part of New England, A.D. 1657:

*"Instructions delivered Mr. John Richbell in order to the intended settlement of a Plantation in the south-west parts of New England, in behalf of himself and of subscribers:"*

"God sending you to arrive safely in New England our advice is that you informe yourselfe fully by sober understanding men of that parte of land which lyeth betwixt Connecticott and the Dutch Collony and of the seacoast belonging to the same and the Islands that lye bettwixt Long Island and the Maine, viz.: within what government it is, and of what kinde that government is, whether very strict or remisse, who the Chiefe Magistrates are, on what termes ye Indians stand with them, and what bounds the Dutch pretend to, and being satisfied in these particulars, (viz.) that you may with security settle there and without offence to any. Then our advise is that you endeavor to buy some small Plantation that is already settled and hath an house and some quantity of ground cleared and which lyeth so as you may enlarge into the woods at pleasure in each, be sure not to fayle of these accommodations.

I. That it be near some navigable Ryver, or at least some safe port or harbor, and that the way to it be neither longe or difficult.

II. That it be well watered by some running streame or at least by some fresh ponds and springs near adjoining.

III. That it be well wooded which I thinke you can hardly misse of. That it be healthy high ground, not boggs or fens for the hopes of all consists in that consideration.

Being thus fitted with a place look carefully into the title and be sure to have all pretenders satisfied before you purchase, for to fall into an imbroylid disputable title would trouble us more than all other charges whatsoever. Having passed these difficultyes and your family brought in the place direct your whole forces towards the increase of provision which must be according to their seasons, for planting of corne, pease, beanes and other provisions which the country affords, increasing your orchards and gardens, your pastures and inclosures; and for ye families employment in the long winter be sure by the first opportunity to put an acre or two of hemp-seed into the ground, of which you may in the winter make a quantity of canvass and cordage for your own use. In the fall-



ing and clearing your ground save all your principal timber for pipe stands and clap board and knee timber, &c., and with the rest endeavor to make Pott ash, which will sufficiently recompense the charge of falling the ground. But still mindfull not to put so many hands about the matter of present profit that you do in the meane tyme neglect planting or sewing the grounds that are fitt for provisions, our further advice is that as you increase in pasture fitt for cattle and sheep you fayle not to stocke them well, but be sure never to over-stock them by taking more than you can well keep, for an hungry cowe will never turne to account. Lastly we desire you to advise us or either of us how affairs stand with you, what your wants are and how they may be most advantageously employed by us: for the life of our business will consist in the nimble, quiet and full correspondence with us; and although in these instructions we have given you clearly indicates, yet we are not satisfied that you must needs bring in the place so many difficultyes and also observe many inconveniences, which we at this distance cannot possibly imagine and therefore we refer all wholly to your discretion, not doubting but that you will doe all things to the best advantage of our designe thereby obliedging, your faithfull friends and servants, THOS. MODIFORD,  
BARBADOES, SEPT. 18, 1657.<sup>a</sup> WILL SHARPE,

Upon the 8th of June, 1661, John Richbell obtained the following conveyance from the Indian sachem Wompoqueum.

#### INDIAN DEED TO JOHN RICHBELL.

“Recorded for Mr. John Richbell, the 6th day of June, 1666. This Indyan Deed. I Wompoqueum, together with my brother Mahatahan, being the right owners of three necks of land lying and being bounded on ye east side with Mamaronock river, and on ye west side with the Stony River, which parts the said lands. and Mr. Pell's Purchase; now these are to certify to all and every one whom it may concerne, that I, Wompoquerm, did for myselfe, and in behalf of my aforesaid brother Mahatahan, firmly bargain and sell to Mr. John Richbell, of Oyster Bay, to him and his heires forever, the above mentioned three necks of land, together with all other priviledges thereunto belonging, six weeks before I sold it to Mr. Revell, and did marke out the bonds and gave Mr. Richbell possession of the said land and did receive part of my pay there in hand, as witness my hand,

Witnesse

The marke O of WOMPOQUEUM.

JACOB YONGH, CATHARIN YONGH.<sup>b</sup>

The following document occurs in the Albany Records, but without any date attached:—

“On account of what part and was acknowledged before ye governor concerning ye Purchase at Mamoronock, by Mr. Richbell, and Mr. Revell, and Jans. Rockett, Wappaqueem, and many other Indians.

PRESENT.

Wappaqueem saith that Mr. Richbell was ye first that spake to him about ye purchase of ye said lands.

Jans. Rockett acknowledges ye like.

<sup>a</sup> Albany Deed book, vol. iii. 126.7

<sup>b</sup> Albany Rec. Deed Book, Vol. iii, p. 128.

Wappaqueem saith that Thomas Close with Cokoe spake to him to sett his hand to Mr. Revell's deed and he should have a coate, upon which he did it. He saith further that Mr. Richbell came and viewed and agreed for ye land, but not bringing his goods tyme enough he sold it to Mr. Revell. He confesses that Mr. Richbell gave another Indian a coate and some seawant and a shirt to marke out ye trees after ye agreement, but that he had nothing.

Another Indian saith that Cockoe and Thomas Close received Mr. Revell's money betweene them and kept it themselves, for ye proprietors had none of it.

Wappaqueem saith that what he received from Mr. Richbell was by way of skineage but not in parte of payment.

He, whose land it was, and Wappaqueom called brother. but were not natural brothers.

11th Nov. 1661, the power intrusting Wappaqueom and Cacoh to sell.

8th, 1661, the date of ye deed which is before ye power.<sup>a</sup>

On the 24th of December, 1661, we find Richbell thus addressing the Dutch Director and Council:—

AMSTERDAM,

In New Netherlands, 24th Dec., 1661.

To the most noble, great and respectful Lords, the Directors General and Council, in New Netherlands, solicits most reverently, John Richbell, that it may please your honours to grant him letters patent for three corners of land, the east corner being named "Wanmainuck" corner, the western with the adjacent land, by some named Mr. Pell's land, promising that all persons who, with the supplicant's permission or order, would settle there with him, shall be willing to solicit letters patent for such a parcel of land as they may intend to settle: in the meantime, he supplicates that your honours may be pleased to grant him letters patent for the whole tract, which he is willing to enforce and instruct them of your honours' government and will, in similar manner, on terms and conditions as are allowed to other villages. Hoping on your consent, he remains,  
&c.<sup>b</sup>

JOHN RICHBELL.

This petition having been presented to and read by the Director, 19th Jan. 1662, it was returned for answer, that before a final decision can be given on this petition, so shall the supplicant be requested to explain more at large before the Director-General and Council in New Netherlands, the extent of his proposal as mentioned in the said petition on the day as above.<sup>c</sup>

John Richbell must have replied immediately to this letter, as the same year we find the following declaration of Petrus Stuyvesant, (Governor-General,) in favor of Mr. Rissebel:

"We, the Governor-General and Council of estate of the United Netherlands, doe declare by these presents, that we, upon the petition of Mr. John Rissebel and his associates, that be under the protection of the high and subordinate authority of this Province, upon terms and con-

<sup>a</sup> Albany Deed Book, No. III, p. 37.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. vol. xx, p. 22.

<sup>c</sup> Albany Rec. vol. xx, p. 22.

ditions as other inhabitants doe enjoy, may take up and possess a certain neck and parcel of land called Mammarinikes, provided that the aforesaid Mr. John Rissebel, his associates, and every one that are now hereafter to come in due and convenient time, shall present themselves before us to take the oath of fidelity and obedience, and also, as other inhabitants are used to, procure a land brief of what they possess. Given under our hand and seal the 6th day of May, 1662, in the Fort Amsterdam, in the New Netherlands."<sup>a</sup>

John Richbell appears to have obtained a "ground brief," for his land the same year.<sup>b</sup>

The following documents relate to a dispute between the two patentees of Pelham and Mamaroneck, concerning their respective boundaries. Upon the 20th of April, 1666, Richard Nicolls, Governor of the Province, granted to Thomas Mullinex, "a certain neck lying between the east bounds of the town of Westchester and a certain small river called Stony River, which is reputed to be the west bounds of the land in dispute between Mr. Richbell and Mr. Revell, (Pell,) and from thence shooting along by the side of the maine westward, containing 220 acres, which said neck has been purchased of the Indians." During the year 1666-7, occurs a trial between Thos. Revell, (Pell,) plaintiff, and John Richbell defendant. "The Governor and Council, together with ye justices of ye peace, setting in this present court of assizes, having been well and sufficiently informed in ye case in difference between the plaintiff and defendant, and that ye defendant, (who in several courts of this government hath heretofore been plaintiff in this case relating to a title to a certain parcel of land at Mamaronuck, upon ye main,) did prove his said title in those courts to the land in question, and no person now appearing for ye plaintiff, either to prosecute or defend his claim and title, or those concerned in his pretended right to ye said land, according to ye order of ye last general court of assizes, this court doth therefore unanimously adjudge and decree, that ye title to ye said land in difference doth of right belong to the defendant."<sup>c</sup>

Nov. 1668, "John Richbell of Mamaroneck, accused Thomas Pell of gaining in a surreptitious manner, his patent of Governor Nicolls, and extending upon his lands, upwards of a mile in breadth from east to west, beside the length thereof north and south, although John Richbell has sufficiently proved his right thereto, both at several courts, and the last court of assizes held in New York."<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Albany Rec. vol. xx, 127.

<sup>b</sup> At a court of assize held in the city of New York, A.D. 1665, it was determined that Horse-neck doth of right belong to John Richbell and his heirs. Alb. Assize Rec. 14.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Assize Rec. 172.

<sup>d</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. vol. vi, 106.

Upon the 13th Sept, 1669, we find a special warrant addressed to Thomas Pell of Ann-hook's-neck, or elsewhere, citing him to appear before the next court of assizes, for unjustly detaining and keeping from John Richbell, a certain parcel of meadow ground set upon one of the three necks at Mamaroneck."<sup>a</sup>

AN ORDER ABOUT YE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN MR. PELL AND MR. RICHBELL.

The report of ye commissioners appointed by ye court of assize, to view ye land in difference between Mr. John Richbell and Mr. John Pell, and having been delivered unto me sealed up, and now opened and read before me and my council, upon very much consideration had thereupon, do find, that two of the commissioners have made report, that between two brooks in dispute called stony and gravelly brook, there is a tree marked on ye east side, with J. R., and on the other with T. P., from which, if there were a line run directly down the sound, it would divide ye meadow in difference in the middle, and put an end to ye matter in question; but neither of the three commissioners agree amongst themselves as to their opinions of the bounds, wherefore, in regard that I am very desirous an amicable composure of this difference may be made between both parties, I do recommend the report of the two commissioners to be observed as a medium to end all differences; however, if so the party shall not seem satisfied therewith, they have still liberty to proceed to a trial before a special court, according to ye order of ye last general court of assize. Of the resolutions, hereupon, a speedy answer is expected, that order may be taken accordingly.

Given under my hand, at Fort James, in New York, the 18th day of January, 1671.<sup>b</sup>

FRANCIS LOVELACE."

Upon the 20th of January, 1671, a commission was appointed, consisting of Captain Dudley Lovelace, Captain Jacques Cortelyou, Mr. Elias Doughty, Captain Richard Ponton and Mr. John Quinby, to view ye bounds in difference between Mr. Pell and Mr. Richbell.<sup>c</sup>

On the 25th day of January, 1671, occurs the following order (addressed to Capt. Jacques Cortelyou, Surveyor General) about Mr. Pell and Mr. Richbell, made after their agreement and composure, &c."

"Whereas, there is an amicable composure of ye difference between Mr. John Richbell, and Mr. John Pell,<sup>d</sup> concerning the neck of land lying between stony and gravelly brook, to the eastward of Annhook's neck, ye which is agreed upon to be divided equally between them both, meadow and upland quantity and quality alike, which agreement I very well approve of. These are to require you, that some time next week, or with your first convenience, you repair hither, where you shall receive further directions concerning the copy act, on

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Assize Rec. p. 204. In January, 1671, a subpoena was sent forth to summon Mr. Robert Penoyer of Mamaroneck, and Mr. John Archer, of Fordham, to give evidence at said court (of assizes) concerning the difference between Mr. Pell and Mr. Richbell. Alb. Rec. General Entries, No. iv, 59.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. General Entries No. iv, 92.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Rec. Gen. Entries, No. iv. 59.

<sup>d</sup> Mr. John Pell succeeded his uncle Thomas Pell.



the said neck of land, soe to put a final end and determination to that dispute of which at your return you are to render me an account, and for soe doing, this shall be your warrant. Given under my hand, at Fort James, in New York, this 25th day of January, 1671."<sup>a</sup>

FRANCIS LOVELACE.

This dispute was finally arranged by Mr. John Richbell, exchanging a portion of the west neck for a much greater quantity and value of other lands belonging to Mr. Pell, adjoining the west neck in lieu thereof, which land never was within the bounds of Mr. Richbell's patent.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 16th of October, 1668, Governor Lovelace issued the following letters patent, under the great seal of the province:

"Francis Lovelace, Esq., Governor General, under his Royal Highness, James, Duke of York and Albany, &c., &c., of all his territories in America, to all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting. Whereas, there is a certain parcel or tract of land within this government, upon the main, contained in three necks, of which the easternmost is bounded with a small river, called Mamaroneck river, being also the east bounds or limits of this government upon the main, and the westernmost with the gravelly or stony brook or river, which makes the east limits of the land known by the name of Mr. Pell's purchase. Having to the south, the sound, and running northward from the marked trees upon the said neck, twenty miles into the woods, which said parcel or tract of land hath been lawfully purchased of the Indian proprietors, by John Richbell, of Mamaroneck, gentleman, in whose possession now it is, and his title thereunto sufficiently proved both at several courts of sessions, as also at the general court of assizes, now for a confirmation unto him the said John Richbell, in his possession and enjoyment of the premises: *Know ye*, that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his Royal Highness, I have given, ratified, and confirmed and granted, and by these presents do give and ratify, confirm and grant, unto the said John Richbell, his heirs and assigns, all the aforesaid parcel or tract of land as aforesaid, together with all woods, beaches, marshes, pastures, creeks, waters, lakes, fishing hawking, hunting and fowling, and all other profits, immunities and emoluments to the said parcel or tract of land belonging, annexed, or appertaining with their and every of their appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof, and in regard to the distance of the plantations already settled or to be settled upon the said necks of land, from any town, the persons inhabiting, or that shall inhabit thereupon, shall have a petty constable chosen amongst themselves yearly, for preserving of the peace, and decision of small differences under the value of forty shillings, and they shall be excused from all common attendance at training or other ordinary duties at Westchester. But in matters of assessment and public rates, they are to be assessed by the officers of that town to which they do properly belong being the nearest unto them, to have and to hold the said parcel and tract of land in the said three necks contained, and premises with all and singular the privileges and appurtenances to the said John Richbell his heirs and assigns, to the proper use and behoof of the said John Richbell, his heirs and assigns forever, as free land of inheritance, rendering and paying as

<sup>a</sup> Albany Records, General Entries, No. iv, 95.

<sup>b</sup> See Complaint of Obadiah Palmer and others, to his Excellency William Burnet. The original document is in the possession of the Munro family.

a quit rent for the same yearly, and every year, the value of eight bushels of winter wheat, upon the five and twentieth day of March, if demanded, unto his Royal Highness and his heirs, or to such governor or governors as shall from time to time be appointed and set over them. Given under my hand and seal, at Fort James, in New York, on Manhattans Island, the 16th day of October, in the twentieth year of the reign of our sovereign, Lord Charles the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, king, defender of the faith, &c., &c., Anno Domini, 1668. FRANCIS LOVELACE.

In 1669 we find John Richbell, and Anne his wife, conveying a certain portion of land in Mamaroneck to Margaret Parsons.<sup>a</sup>

On the 4th of March, 1669, John Richbell of Mamaroneck, in New Yorkshire, gentleman, with Anne his wife, conveys land in this town to John Bassett.

By a deed bearing date the 23d of April, 1669, John Richbell, proprietor of Mamaroneck, settles the following jointure upon his wife, Anne Richbell, viz: "all that certain parcell or tract of land where he now lives, called the East Neck, and to begin at the westward part thereof at a certain creek lying, being, and adjacent by and betwixt the neck of land commonly called the Great Neck, and the said East Neck, and so to run eastward as far as Mamaroneck river, including therein betwixt the two lines all the land as well north into the woods above Westchester path, twenty miles, as the lands below ye path, south and towards ye river, &c., &c."<sup>b</sup>

The following year we find the patentee investing his son-in-law, James Mott, in a small piece of the Mamaroneck lands, for which the latter paid to the crown the annual quit rent of one bushel of wheat. James Mott subsequently assigned all his right, title and interest in the same to John Wescot.

The following warrant "for ye fetching Mr. John Richbell to town a prisoner," occurs in the assize records:

These are in his majesties name to authorize and impower you to seize upon ye person of John Richbell of Mamaroneck, in what place soever he shall be found within this government, he being a prisoner under arrest for debt in this city, from which place he hath absented himself contrary to his engagement and that you cause him to be brought back hither to answer ye several suites of his creditors, and to abide the judgment of court therein according to law, and all officers or others whom this may concerne are to be ayding and assisting herein as occasion shall require, for the doing whereof this my special warrant shall be to you and them a sufficient discharge. Given under my hand and seal at Fort James in New Yorke, this 30th day of June, 1671. FRANCIS LOVELACE.

[Endorsed]

To Mr. Allard Anthony, sheriff of the city of New York, or his deputy.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. 238. This conveyance was to John Ryder.

<sup>c</sup> Alb. Assize Rec. p. 391.

Upon the 30th of July, 1673, the province of New York surrendered to the Dutch. On this occasion Anthony Colve assumed the reins of government. His commission defined the eastern boundary of the colony to be the town of Greenwich and so running northerly, provided such line does not come within twenty miles of Hudson's river, conformable to the treaty of 1650, which was ratified by the States General February 22d, 1656, Mamaroneck river having been heretofore considered the boundary line, as settled the 5th of December, 1664, viz: "a line beginning on the east side of Mamaroneck river or creek, at the place where the salt water meets the fresh, at high water, and thence northwest to the line of Massachusetts."<sup>a</sup>

The Dutch governor now required the submission of the inhabitants, and oaths of allegiance to the States General. Whereupon the people of Mamaroneck submitted themselves through their deputies, and were ordered to nominate by a majority of votes, four persons who were to be presented the first opportunity, from which the Lord's Commanders shall elect two for magistrates. By order of the Lord's Commanders and military tribunal assembled in Fort William Hendrick, on the 23d day of August. A.D. 1673.<sup>b</sup>

Peace took place between the belligerent powers, in February, 1674, by which New York was again restored to the English.

20th November, 1673, John Richbell of Mamaroneck, mortgaged the westernmost neck to one Cornelius Stenwyck, "bounding on the Gravelly or Stony river, having on the south the Sound, and so running from the marked trees, standing on the aforesaid neck, northerly twenty English miles into the woods."<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 2d of February, 1683, a dispute arose between Mr. John Richbell (about the limits of his land) with the inhabitants of the town of Rye, whereupon the latter were ordered to attend the council.<sup>d</sup>

The following order is extracted from the council minutes:—

At a council held at Fort James, on March 17th, 1683, upon the petition and complaint of Mr. John Richbell of Mamaroneck, gentleman, against the inhabitants of Rye, concerning some lands, it was thought fit by the governor and council that the inhabitants of Rye, or some deputed by them for that purpose, do show cause at the next court of assize, to be held in the county of Westchester, why the said land do not of right belong and appertain to Mr. John Richbell.<sup>e</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Webster's Letters.

<sup>b</sup> Alb. Rec. iii, 276.

<sup>c</sup> A second mortgage from the patentee to Stenwyck occurs on the 7th of August, 1678. Upon the 12th of May, 1675, the patentee mortgaged to Robert Richbell, Jr., of Southampton, England, one of the three necks, called the great or middle neck: this was afterwards assigned to Samuel Palmer, July 7, 1676.

<sup>d</sup> Council Min. Alb. No. v, 47.

<sup>e</sup> Council Minutes, Alb. No. v, 58.

The patentee must have been subsequently confirmed in his rights, as further grants were made by himself and wife the same year, to John Nelson, and in 1684, to James and Mary Mott. In 1685, Anne Richbell conveys property in this town to Henry Disbrow, Richard Ward, John Rider, John Emerson and others.

The following document occurs among the land papers at Albany.

"Pursuant to his Excellency's warrant bearing date the 25th of October, 1694. I repaired to Mamaroneck in order to survey the easternmost bounds of the land belonging to Mrs. Anne Richbell, the relic of John Richbell, deceased, and run alongst the west side of the small river called Mamaroneck, crossing two branches thereof unto a certain parcel of improved land claimed by Humphrey Underhill, where the said Underhill with three others, being assisted with guns, stones and staves, did obstruct me in the execution of His Excellency's warrant aforesaid.

AUG. GRAHAM, Surveyor.

Dec. 4th, 1694.

A.D. 1696, Anne Richbell orders that "the lot formerly belonging to the Blacktuns, containing two acres and thirty-two rods, be laid out for my son John Emerson,"<sup>a</sup>

As late as 1699 the Indians claim that they had never received satisfaction from either John Richbell or John Pell of Pelham for the sale of their lands.


THIS INDIAN PETITION READ IN COUNCIL.

2D AUG., 1699.

To the Honorable John Namfan, Esq., Lieutenant-Governor of the Province of New York and the Honorable Council. The Humble Peticon of Cragamanot, Pethir, Henbrook, Indians in the behalfe of themselves and other Indians of their nation. Humbly shewETH.

That some of their nation having sold severall parcells of land to John Pell, Esq., and Mr. Richbel, deceased, for which they never received the satisfaction promised them although for these many years they have looked for ye same, but the said persons have and do refuse to satisfie your honors Petitions and have more land.

there ever was sold unto them  
Your Petition therefore humbly pray  
your Honors for redress and relief in the  
the promises and most humbly that ye pray  
said John Pell and the heirs of said  
Richbell may be ordered to satisfy  
your Petitioners and that they may have no more  
land than was actually sold unto them  
had your petitioners us in Duty  
lessoned shall pray, &c.  
The marke of

  
CRAGAMANOT  
in behalf of  
his nation.<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Council Min. Alb.



The death of the patentee, John Richbell, appears to have taken place some time in January, 1684, as we find Mr. John Timan petitioning the governor and council for administration on the estate of John Richbell, January, 1684.<sup>a</sup>

The following extracts are taken from the will of Mrs. Anne Richbell, his wife, which bears date 1st of April, A.D. 1700.

"In the name of God, amen. I, Ann Richbell, of the town of Mamaroneck, in the county of Westchester, in the Province of New York, gentlewoman, being sick and weak in body, but of good and perfect memory, (blessed be the Lord for it,) who hath now put it into my heart to set my house in order, by making this my last will and testament, in manner as followeth: Imprimis, I give and bequeath my soul into the hands of Almighty God, my creator, and my body to the earth from whence it came, to a decent and comely burial at the direction of Colonel Caleb Heathcote.

"Mr. Richbell Mott and Lt. John Horton, I make my executors of this my last will and testament, and for this worldly estate which it has pleased the Lord to endow me withal, &c. Imprimis, to my daughter Elizabeth the sum of 80*l*. and my gold ring with the emerald stone in it, and my little Bible. To my daughter Anne, the sum of 60*l*. and also my gold chain. To my grand-daughter, Anna Gedney, Mary Williams and Mary Mott, each 40*l*. and to my said grand-daughter Mary, my biggest gold ring. I give and bequeath to my son-in-law James Mott, 14*l*. and to my grandson James Mott, the son of Capt. James Mott, 15*l*." &c. &c.

Elizabeth and Anne, the two devisees mentioned in the above will, were the sole issue of the patentee. Elizabeth, the eldest, married Captain James Mott, (son of Adam Mott.) Anne married John Emerson. The patentee left one brother, Robert Richbell of Southampton, in England, father of Robert Richbell, who succeeded his uncle in a portion of the Mamaroneck estates.<sup>b</sup>

A. D. 1700, the Hon. Caleb Heathcote became legally seized in fee of the greatest portion of the easternmost neck, together with other lands, having in 1696, obtained a patent right from Mrs. Anne Richbell, to purchase lands which were already included in her husband's sale of 1660.

On the 21st day of March, 1701, King William III. by letters patent, granted and confirmed unto Caleb Heathcote his extensive purchases and erected them into the "Lordship and Manor of Scarsdale." This Royal Charter is given of length under the Town of Scarsdale in this work, and is recorded in the Secretary of State's office at Albany.<sup>c</sup>

The "Manor of Scarsdale" included the present towns of Mamaro-

<sup>a</sup> Council Min. Rec. No. 7, 104.

<sup>b</sup> For a continuation of this family, see pedigree.

<sup>c</sup> Vol. vii of Patents, 226

neck and Scarsdale, excepting only some small parcels in and near the village of Mamaroneck and extended from Long Island Sound to the Bronx river. It was holden of the King in free and common soccage, its land yielding and rendering therefor annually upon the festival of the Nativity, five pounds current money of New York, &c.

The Hon. Caleb Heathcoate subsequently enlarged his estates by further purchases and confirmations from the Indians.

One of these indentures bears date, 26th May, 1701, betwixt the Indian proprietors, Patthunk, Beopoa, Wapetuck, Kohawaes and Racheshund, on the one part, and Colonel Caleb Heathcote of Mamaroneck, gentleman, on the other part, wherein the former in consideration of a good and lawful sum of money, to them in hand paid by the said Caleb Heathcote, &c.

Sell, alien, enfeoffe and confirm, &c., a certain tract of land lying and being in the county of Westchester, bounded as follows: to begin on the east side of the country road, going over at Mamaroneck river, and so to run as the road goes, as far as a creek or brook, known by the name of Pipin's brook, adjoining the neck known by the name of the great neck, including therein all the land and meadow below the said road southward to the Sound, and to begin at the bridge which lyes over the swamp, known by the name of the Dirty swamp, on the New York road, on the east side, and at the going over of Pipin's brook, as the New York road goes, on the west side, and so to run as high into the woods as the marked trees on the southermost end of Richbell's or Horse ridge, having one hundred rods in breadth between the said lines, to have and to hold, &c., the said bargained premises with all of their appurtenances thereunto belonging, to the said Caleb Heathcote, and his heirs and assigns for ever, &c.

Sig. sealed and delivered	The mark of	The mark of
in presence of	PATT O HUNKE.	☞
ANNE MILLINGTON,	The mark of	WAPETUCK.
HUGH FARQUHAR.	☞	The mark of
The mark of	BEOPA.	KOHAWNES
☞	The mark of	☞
KEHOCUSS	☞	KOCHEOLAM.
The mark of	CREGHEN.	
☞		
AMBYROC. <sup>a</sup>		

10 June 1701. Patthunk, Brope, Wepetuck, Indian proprietors sell to Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Captain James Mott, William Pennoyer, John Williams; Henry Disbrow, Oliver Hatfield, John Disbrough and Benjamin Disbrough, a lot or parcel of land bounded as followeth: "To begin at Westchester path by Mamaroneck river and runs as the river doth to the marked trees at the eastermost side of the two mile bounds, from thence as was laid out to the marked trees on the southermost end of Richbell's ridge, from thence to Dirty swamp ridge in a direct line, and from said ridge as the road goeth to Mamaroneck river,

<sup>a</sup> Original deed in the possession of the De Lancey family.

each party above mentioned to have and to hold their allotments and divisions as already laid out, and according to their deeds of John and Mrs. Richbell.

Sig. sealed and delivered

PATHEVNOCK.

in the presence of us,

WAPETUCK.

JOSEPH HIATT,

JOSEPH PURDY.

In the year 1700, Samuel Palmer of Mamaroneck, obtained an assignment of the Great Middle neck, from Robert Richbell, former mortgagee under his uncle John Richbell.

Upon the 5th of November, 1701, Ann Hook, Indian sachem, released to Samuel Palmer,

"All that my parcel of land formerly called Mangopson neck, now called by the name of the great neck, &c., bounded easterly by a brook, called by name Pipin's brook, which runs into the salt water creek, and so running round along by the Sound, and so running up to a brook called by the name of Cedar or Pine tree brook, together with a parcel of land running up said brook by a range of marked trees, until this meet with the marked trees of Colonel Caleb Heathcote, and from thence running by the aforesaid range of marked trees, down to the said Pipin's brook, to the afore said salt water creek, with all and singular the members, rights, privileges and appurtenances thereunto belonging, &c.

Signed, sealed and delivered

The mark of Ann Hook.

in the presence of us,

BESLY,

BENJ. COLLIER.

The heirs of Samuel Palmer, viz.: Obediah, Solomon, Nehemiah and Sylvanus, subsequently sold the great neck, (containing three hundred and twenty acres,) to Josiah Quimby. It appears that Adolph Philipse and Jacobus Van Cortlandt purchased (in the lifetime of John Richbell,) the fee simple of certain lands in Mamaroneck, embracing one full and equal half moiety of the west neck; the whole of which afterwards became vested in the person of Frederick Philipse. This individual eventually claimed the whole territory north of Westchester path, lying above the great neck, so that when the surveyor general, on the 18th of November, 1714, commenced the survey of the great neck, he was stopped by Philipse, when he came above Westchester path. The surveyor however continued the original line until he came to Bronx's river, here again he was opposed by Philipse, who forbade and warned him at his peril to proceed any further, as he claimed all the land beyond Bronx's river by a different title. The twenty mile line north of the great neck, would have carried the Richbell patent nearly to the Croton river. The whole matter ultimately came before the Court of Chancery, on the 2d of May, 1727.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Chancery Rec. Albany.

On the 8th of December, 1708, William and Thomas Pennoyer did grant unto Caleb Heathcote their home lot, laid out to them by the inhabitants of Mamaroneck; also certain lands situated on the west neck.

In 1724, Henry Pennoyer sold certain lands in the village, to Polycarpus Nelson.

In the Secretary of State's office, is the field-book and map containing the survey and division of all the certain tracts and parcels of land lying on Mamaroneck, Scarsdale and Harrison purchase, in the county of Westchester, the property of Caleb Heathcote, Esq., in his lifetime, and which remain unsold by him or his decendants since his death, whereof we the subscribers, were appointed commissioners by virtue of an act of the Lieutenant-Governor, the Council and the General Assembly of the Colony of New York, entitled an act for the more effectual collecting of his majesty's quit-rents in the Colony of New York, and for partition of lands in order thereto, which said lands we have laid out into three divisions, viz.: Division No. 1, or north division; division No. 2 or middle division; division No. 3 or south division; north division laid out into 21 lots, two small lots in the possession of William Barker; lots No. 16 and 17 controverted lands in his division. Division No. 2 divided into 9 lots for the proprietors; division No. 3 or south division, laid out into 11 lots: numbers 4, 5, 6 and 7 are controverted; the remaining lots uncontroverted. Lots No. 13 and 18, and 2 small lots in the possession of William Barker; the first lot, north division, and lot No. 7 in the middle or second division, distinguished on the map by a certain red line, which together contains 320 acres, 2 roods, 10 rods, are set apart for sale in order to defray expenses of division, &c., &c. In witness whereof, as well the said commissioners as the surveyor by us appointed, have hereunto set their hands at Mamaroneck, in the county of Westchester, the 16th day of August, in the year of our Lord, 1774.

PHILLIP PELL,	} Commissioners.
JACOBUS BLEECKER,	
WILLIAM SUTTON,	
CHARLES WEBB,—Surveyor.	

The following is a receipt for quit-rent due the crown on the Richbell Patent:

"Received of Nehemiah Palmer and Co., 70 bushels and 3 pecks of wheat in full of the proprietors for quit-rent, (being 3 bushels and 30 quarts per annum,) due on the tract of land in Westchester County, granted to John Richbell, the 16th of October, 1668, being from the 25th of March, 1734, to the 25th of March last, as witness my hand this 12th of June, 1752.

Wheat reckoned at 4s. 6d. a bushel.

RICHARD NICOLL, Deputy General Receiver.



A partition of Colonel Heathcote's estate took place between his two daughters and co-heiresses, Anne and Martha. Anne Heathcote married the Hon. James de Lancey, son of Etienne de Lancey.

The de Lanceys of New York, are a branch of the ancient house of de Lancy in France, springing from Guy de Lancy, Ecuyer, Vicomte de Laval et de Nouvion, who in 1432, held of the Prince-Bishop of the Duchy of Laon, the fiefs of the four banier of Laval, and that of Nouvion.<sup>a</sup> These territories formed one of the four Vicomte-cies of the Laonnois, a division of the old province of the "Isle of France," bordering on Picardy.

The manuscript genealogies of this family are preserved in the *Armorial Général de la France* 2d Register, 2d volume, in the National Library of France<sup>b</sup> at Paris, and in the archives of the department of the Aisne, at the city of Laon. The latter have been given in the *Dictionnaire Historique du Département de l'Aisne* of M. Melville.<sup>c</sup> The descent is thus given from the French authorities.<sup>d</sup>

The prefixed Roman numerals are so used in the French genealogies to denote the different individuals bearing the same Christian name.

- 1432. Guy de Lancy, Ecuyer<sup>e</sup> Vicomte de Laval et de Nouvion. Wife, Anne de Marcilly.
- 1436. Jean I, (John) de Lancy, 2d Vicomte.
- 1470. Jean II, (John) de Lancy, 3d Vicomte, Deputy to the States General at Tours in 1484, present at the battles Fornoue and Ravvenna.
- 1525. Charles I, de Lancy, 4th Vicomte. Wives, 1. Nicole St. Péré, issue, one daughter, married Antoine Pioche, of Laon. 2. Marie de Villiers, issue, two sons, Charles 6th Vicomte, and Christophe, Seigneur de Raray.
- 1535. Charles II, de Lancy 5th Vicomte. Wife, Isabel Branche, married 15th April, 1534; issue, Charles 6th Vicomte, Jacques (James) Claude, and a daughter Barbe.

<sup>a</sup> Sometimes spelled "Nouvian." These lands and villages are situated a few miles from the city of Leon in the presented department of the Aisne.

<sup>b</sup> The official MSS. of this work, the great National Register of the French Noblesse, were first printed by order of Louis XV, in 1735.

<sup>c</sup> In two vols. 8 vo., published at Paris and at Laon in 1065.

<sup>d</sup> Le Nobillaire de Picardie, Paris, 1693, title "Lancel," *Dictionnaire de la Noblesse de France*, by Chenaye Desbois, vol. viii: title "Lancy;" *Annuaire de la Noblesse* of Borel d'Hauterive for 1855, "Lancy—Raray."

<sup>e</sup> Ecuyer, denotes a gentleman entitle to use coat-armor.

1569. Charles III, de Lancy, 6th Nicomte. Wives, 1. Madeline Le Brun, married 21st of July, 1569; issue, Charles IV. de Lancy, Seigneur de Cocquebine, (who died in 1667, leaving by Francoise Crochart, his first wife; Charles V, de Lancy, Seigneur de Charlemont, who died unmarried. By his second wife Marthe de Resnel, the Seigneur de Cocquebine, who was created a Counsellor to the King, 20th of March, 1652, no children.)

Charles III, de Lancy, 6th Vicomte, was present at the battle  
1590. of Ivry in 1590. 2. By his second wife Claude de May, married  
1593. 15th January, 1593, he had issue, Charles de Lancy, Sieur de Suine et de Niville, Antoine, a Canon of the Cathedral of Laon, and Claude.

1611. Charles de Lancy, Sieur de Suine et de Niville, born in 1611,  
1653. married 25th June, 1653, Jeanne Ysoré, was created a Counsellor  
1689. of State to the King in 1654, and died 23d of November, 1689, leaving issue, one child,—

Charles Ambroise de Lancy, Seigneur De Niville et du Con-  
1697. dray, de Frenoi, et d'Orgemont who married 9th January, 1702, Marie Madeleine Labbé. He was confirmed in his nobility by a  
1702. decree of the King in Council, Nov. 30th, 1697. He had issue, an only son,—

1707. Pierre Charles de Lancy, Seigneur de Niville et de Blarus, born  
5th of June, 1707; an officer of the Kings Guards, who died un-  
1750. married in 1750.

Christophe de Lancy, Signeur de Raray, above named, the younger of the two sons of Charles de Lancy 4th, Vicomte de  
1525. Laval et de Nouvion, created Baron de Raray, having no issue by his first wife, Barbe de Louen, married secondly, January 19th,  
1553. 1553, Francoise Lami, daughter of Pierre Lami, Seigneur de la  
1584. Morlière. He died in 1584, leaving a son Nicholas de Lancy, second Baron, Treasurer of Gaston, first Duke of Orleans who married Lucrèce de Lancise, a Florentine lady, and had four children. 1. Henry de Lancy, third Baron, who was created January  
1654. 17th, 1654, Marquis de Rarai. 2. Francois de Lancy, Seigneur D'Aramont, called the Chevalier de Raray, who was killed at the siege of Condé, 17th August, 1674, unmarried; and 3. Charles de Lancy, Seigneur de Ribecourt, et Pimpré, who married Madeleine d'Aguesseau and died without issue in 1675. 4. Madeleine de Lancy, married 11th November, 1619, Charles de Mornay, Seigneur de Montchevreuil.

Henry de Lancy, above named, 1st Marquis de Raray, married January 30th, 1633, Catharine d'Angennes, daughter of Louis d'Angennes, Siegneur de la Loupe and his wife Francoise, daughter of Odet, Seigneur d'Auberville, Bailly of the city of Caen, in Normandy, by whom he had, 1. Gaston Jean Baptiste de Lancy, 2d Marquis; 2. Charles de Lancy-Raray, killed at the siege of Lille, in 1667, unmarried; and 3. Marie Charlotte, wife of Louis des Acres, Marquis de l'Aigle, who died in Paris, August 27th, 1734, aged 82 years.<sup>a</sup>

1660. Gaston Jean Baptiste de Lancy, second Marquis de Raray married 4th May, 1660, Marie Luce Aubery, daughter of Robert, Marquis de Vatan, and had two sons, Charles Henry de Lancy, 1679. third Marquis, made a page to the King in 1679, who, died shortly after, unmarried, and Gaston Jean Baptiste de Lancy, who succeeded his brother as fourth Marquis and died unmarried 1680. not long after. Both these brothers died in 1680; and with them ended the males of this branch of the family. Their sisters were five, Henriette, wife of the Marquis de Crevecaeur; Catharine, wife of the Seigneur de la Billarderie;<sup>b</sup> Francoise, died unmarried; Annette, died unmarried, and Marie Luce, wife of the Comte de Nonant, who died 16th March, 1743, aged eighty.

The Arms are blazoned in the "Armorial Gèneral de la France," thus, "ARMES; or, a l'aigle eployée de sable, charge sur l'estomac d'un ecusson d'azur, a trois lances d'or, posees en pal, pointes en haut." In English, ARMS: Or, an eagle wings displayed, sable, charged on the breast with a shield azure, three tilting lances or, in pale, points upward.

On becoming a British subject, Etienne (or Stephen) de Lancey modified these arms which had originated before the use of crests in heraldry, to make them more like those of English families, most of which have

<sup>a</sup> Le Palais de L'Honneur, Paris, 1664, page 312, family "d'Angennes."

<sup>b</sup> In front of the altar at the Church of Vreberie, (department of Oise, France,) there is a tombstone erected to this lady, inscribed:—

D. O. M.

Ict repose

Haute et puissante Dame

MADAME FRANCOISE DE LANCY RARAI, dame  
des Terres et Seigneuries, d'Haramont, Ribecourt,  
Pimpré St. Germain et Ruy, en partie Châtelaine  
Héréditaire et engagiste des Domaines de Bothizy  
et Verberie, possédés par ses peres depuis plus  
deux cents ans veuve de Messire Barthélemi de  
Flahaut Chevalier seigneur de la Billarderie Maître  
de camp de Cavalerie, exempt des gardes du corps  
du Roi tué à la bataille de Malplaquet. La dite  
Dame de la Billarderie est décédée le 25 Juin, 1724.  
agée de 61 ans  
Priez pour son âme

crests; and though not registered in the English College of Arms, they appear as so modified in most English heraldic works, and have since been so borne in America, notably on the official seal of his son James de Lancey, as Lt. Governor and Captain-General of New York. They are thus blazoned:—ARMS; Azure, a tilting lance proper, point upward with a pennon argent bearing a cross gules fringed and floating to the right, debriused of a fess, or CREST; A sinister arm in armor embowed, the hand grasping a tilting lance, pennon floating, both proper. MOTTO; Certum voto pete finem.

The name of this family, anciently spelled "Lanci," and later "Lancy," in France, was anglicised by Etienne de Lancy on being denizenized a British subject in 1686, after which time he always wrote his name Stephen de Lancey—thus inserting an "e" in the final syllable. The "*de*" is the ordinary French prefix, denoting nobility.

The Seigneur Jacques (James) de Lancy, above-named, second son of Charles de Lancy, 5th Vicomte de Laval et de Nouvion, was the ancestor of the Huguenot branch, the only existing one, of this family. His son the Seigneur Jacques de Lancy of Caen, married Marguerite Bertrand, daughter of Pierre Bertrand of Caen, by his first wife, the Demoiselle Firel, and had two children, a son Etienne (or Stephen) de Lancey, born at Caen, October 24th, 1663, and a daughter, the wife of John Barbarie.<sup>a</sup> On the revocation of the edict of Nantes, Stephen de Lancey was one of those who, stripped of their titles and estates, fled from persecution—leaving his aged-mother, then a widow, in concealment at Caen, he escaped to Holland, where, remaining a short time, he proceeded to England, and taking out letters of denization as an English subject at London, on the 20th of March, 1686, he sailed for New York, where he arrived on the 7th of June following. Here with 300 pounds sterling, the proceeds of the sale of some family jewels, the parting gift of his mother, he embarked in mercantile pursuits. By industry and strict application to business, he became a successful merchant and amassed a large fortune. He was a highly esteemed and influential man, and held, through all his life, honorable appointments in the councils of the city, as well as in the Representative Assembly of the Province. He was elected Alderman of the west ward of the city, five years after his arrival, in 1691. He was representative from the city and county of New York, in the Provincial Assembly, from 1702 to 1715, with the exception of 1709; and in 1725, on the decease of Mr. Pro-

<sup>a</sup> MSS., "Bertrand" Genealogy:—John Barbarie and his family came to New York in 1668, in which year (on 5th January,) he and his sons Peter, and John Peter, were denizenized as English subjects in London. He was subsequently a merchant in New York, in partnership with his brother-in-law, Stephen de Lancey, and a member of the council of the Province.



voost, he was elected again to that body. The following year he was re-elected, and continued in office until 1737; a service of twenty-six years in all. In 1716, being a vestryman of Trinity church, he contributed £50, the amount of his salary as Representative to the General Assembly, to buy a city clock for that church, the first ever erected in New York. To him and Mr. John Moore, his partner, the city is also indebted for the introduction of fire engines, in 1731.<sup>a</sup> He was one of the principal benefactors of the French church, Du St. Esprit, established in New York by the refugees who fled upon the Revocation of the Edict of Nantz, and a warm friend of the French Huguenots at New Rochelle. The following letter addressed by him, 1591, to his friend Alexander Allaire, still preserved among the public records at New Rochelle.

NIEU YORK, LE 27 JUILLET, 1691.

MONS. ALLAIRE:

Monsieur Notre Amy Mons. Bonheiler, avant de partir me donnera ordre qu'en cas qu'il vinsse à mourir il soit fait donation de ses terres à sa filleule votre fille, Sy vous pouvez faire quelque Benefice des dits terres. Soit à Couper des arbres ou à faire des foins sur les prairies vous le poves à l'exclusion de qui quese soit, Je suis.

Mons. votre très humble serviteur,

ETIENNE DE LANCEY,

Ceu est la vèrètable coppie de l'original.<sup>b</sup>

He was a vestrymen of Trinity church, New York at the time of his death, in 1741. He married January 23d, 1700, Anne Van Cortlandt, daughter of Stephanus Van Cortlandt (whose family was then one of the most opulent and extensive in the Province. Stephen de Lancey at his death in 1741 left issue surviving, James, Peter, Oliver, and Stephen his youngest son, who died a bachelor, Susan and Anne. The eldest son, James de Lancey, a man of great talent, was born in the City of New York, 27th November, 1703, and received his education at the University of Cambridge, England. He was a fellow commoner of Corpus Christi College (where he was styled the "handsome American") and studied law in the Temple. In 1725, he returned to New York, and on the decease of John Barbarie, his uncle by marriage, was appointed by George II. to succeed him in the Provincial Council. He took his seat at the board, January 29th, 1729, and held it to April 9th, 1733, when he was appointed Chief Justice of New York and continued so the remainder of his life. In 1753, on the accession of Sir Danvers Osborn as Governor, in the place of George Clinton, he received the commission of Lieutenant-Governor, which had been conferred upon

<sup>a</sup> Miscellaneous works, by Gen. de Peyster; De Peyster Gen. Ref. p. 54.

<sup>b</sup> Copied from original MSS. in Reg. of New Rochelle.

him in 1747 by George II. and had been kept back by Clinton until this time. The oath of office was administered October 10th, 1753. The tragical death of Sir Danvers Osborn by suicide two days afterwards, occasioned the elevation of Mr. de Lancey to the Gubernatorial chair, which he occupied till the 2d of September, 1755, when the new Governor, Admiral Sir Charles Hardy arrived, who administered the government till the 2d of July, 1757. Preferring a naval command Hardy resigned, and sailed in the expedition to Louisburgh, and Mr. De Lancey again took the reins of Government.

The ministry of England wished to keep the command of New York in the hands of Mr. de Lancey but it was then, as it is to this day, a rule of the English Government never to appoint a native colonist to the supreme command over his own colony. To effect their object in this case without violating their rule, they decided not to appoint any new Governor as long as Mr. de Lancey lived; he therefore remained the Governor of New York until his death, some three years afterwards, on the 30th of July, 1760.<sup>a</sup>

"On the 19th of June, 1754, Governor de Lancey convened and presided over celebrated Congress of Albany, the first Congress ever held in America, over which he presided. This was a Congress of delegates from all the colonies, which the home government directed the Governor of New York to hold, for the purpose of conciliating the Indian nations who were invited to attend it; of renewing the covenant chain and attaching them more closely to the British interest, and comprising all the provinces in one general treaty to be made with them in the King's name, and for no other purpose.<sup>b</sup> Speeches and presents were made to the Indians who promised to do all that was asked of them, but no formal treaty whatever was concluded. The Congress voted instead, that the delegation from each colony except New York, should appoint one of their number, who together should be a committee to digest a plan for a general union of all the colonies.

The choice of the New York committee-man was left to Governor de Lancey, who, acting most impartially, appointed his political opponent, William Smith, Esq., the elder.<sup>c</sup> This movement, which was not within the objects of the Congress as defined in the letter of the Board of Trade above mentioned, resulted in the adopting of a plan of a union to be made by an act of Parliament, which, after the provisions were re-

<sup>a</sup> For a full biographical sketch of Governor de Lancey, see Documentary History of New York, vol. IV, p. 1037.

<sup>b</sup> Virginia and Carolina did not send delegates, but desired to be considered as present. Doc. Hist. N. Y., II, 567.

<sup>c</sup> See Letter of Lords of Trade, directing the holding of the Congress, and the minutes of its proceedings in full, in Doc. Hist. N. Y., II, 555, and N. Y. Col. Hist., VI, p. 853.

solved on, was put into form by Benjamin Franklin, who was a delegate from Pennsylvania, and which was not decided upon, but merely sent to the different provinces for consideration.

Before the motion for the appointment of this committee was made, Governor de Lancey, being in favor of the colonies uniting for their own defence, proposed the building and maintaining, at the joint expense of the colonies, of a chain of forts covering their whole exposed frontier, and some in the Indian country itself. But this plan, like the other, was without effect upon the Congress; for, as he tells us himself, "they seemed so fully persuaded of the backwardness of the several assemblies to come into joint and vigorous measures that they were unwilling to enter upon the consideration of the matters."<sup>a</sup> His idea seem to have been for a practical union of the colonies for their own defence to be made by themselves; whilst that of the committees, who despaired of a voluntary union, was for a consolidation of the colonies to be enforced by act of Parliament. Neither plan, however, met with favor in any quarter, and the Congress affected little but the conciliation of the Indians.<sup>b</sup>

In the autumn of 1754, the Governor suggested to the Assembly the system of settling lands in townships instead of patents, a measure which, being passed by them, rapidly increased the population and prosperity of the colony.<sup>c</sup>

On the 31st of October, 1754, Governor de Lancey signed and passed the charter of King's (now Columbia) college, in spite of the long and bitter opposition of the Presbyterians, led by Mr. William Livingston. So decided were they against the Episcopalians at this time, and so determined were the efforts of Mr. Livingston to break down the college, that, though signed and sealed, the charter was not delivered in consequence of the clamor, till May 7th, 1755, when, after an address, Governor de Lancey presented it to the trustees in form.<sup>d</sup>

"No American had greater influence in the colonies than James de Lancey. Circumstances, it is true, aided in raising him to this elevation—such as education, connections, wealth, and his high conservative principles; but he owed as much to personal qualities, perhaps, as to all other causes united. Gay, witty, easy of access, and frank, he was, personally, the most popular ruler the Province ever possessed, even when drawing tightest the reins of Government."<sup>e</sup>

The death of Governor James de Lancey, which took place on the

<sup>a</sup> See his speech to the Assembly of August 20th, 1754. *Ass. Jour.*, II, 386, 387.

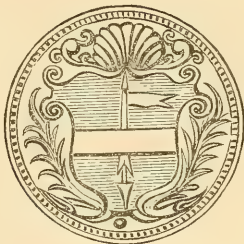
<sup>b</sup> See the proceedings of the Congress. *Doc. Hist. N. Y.*, II, 386, 387.

<sup>c</sup> *Assembly Journal*, II, for September, 1754.

<sup>d</sup> *Doc. Hist. N. Y.* IV, 1051.

<sup>e</sup> *Doc. Hist. N. Y.*, p. 1057.

30th of July, 1760, was an event which had a great influence in the affairs of the Province. He was found expiring upon that morning, seated in his chair in his library, too late for medical aid. His funeral took place on the evening of the 31st of July, 1760. The body was deposited in his family vault, in the middle aisle of Trinity church, the funeral service being performed by the Rev. Mr. Barclay, in great magnificence; the building was splendidly illuminated. The accounts of the funeral and the procession from his house in the Bowery to the church, filled columns of the papers of the day.<sup>a</sup>



*James De Lancey*

Seal and Signature of the Hon. James de Lancey.

The following particulars are copied from a memorandum written by the elder John Watts, of New York, in 1787 :

“James de Lancey was a man of uncommon abilities in every view, from the law to agriculture, and an elegant, pleasant companion—what rarely unites in one person; it seemed doubtful which excelled, his quick penetration or his sound judgment; the first seemed an instant guide to the last. No man in either office, (Chief Justice or Lieut. Governor,) had more the love and confidence of the people; nor any man, before or since, half the influence. He was unfortunately taken from us in July, 1760, so suddenly that his very family suspected no danger. We had spent, very agreeably, the day before on Staten Island; after ten at night he left my house perfectly well, in the morning he was as usual, but about nine a servant was dispatched to tell me his master was very ill. I mounted instantly and hurried to his house in Bowery Lane, but on the way was alarmed by a call ‘that all was over,’ and too true I found it; he sat reclined in his chair, one leg drawn in, the other extended, his arms over the elbows, so naturally, that had I not been apprized of it, I certainly should have spoken as

<sup>a</sup> Parker's Post Bros., and MSS. papers.



I entered the room. Nobody but his youngest daughter, a child, was present at the time, so little did the family apprehend the least danger. Never did these eyes behold such a spectacle, or did my spirits feel such an impression. The idea affects me whenever I think of it; to loose such a companion, such a counsellor, such a friend."

James de Lancey married as above stated, Anne, eldest daughter and co-heiress of the Hon. Caleb Heathcote, Lord of the Manor of Scarsdale. By her, he had four sons; first, James; second, Stephen; third, Heathcote; fourth, John Peter; and four daughters; first, Mary, wife of William Walton, who died in 1767; second, Susannah, born 18th November, 1737, died a spinster in 1815; third, Anne, born 1746, and died in 1847, who married Thomas Jones, Justice of the Supreme Court of New York, author of the history of New York during the Revolutionary War; and Martha who died a spinster, aged 19, in 1769.

James De Lancey, the eldest son of the Lieutenant-Governor, born in 1732, was the head of the political party, called by his name, from his father's death to the Revolution and its leader in the Assembly of the Province. He married, August 17th, 1771, Margaret Allen of Philadelphia, daughter of William Allen, Chief Justice of Pennsylvania, whose sister was the wife of Governor John Penn of that Province. The late Mrs. Harry Walter Livingston (born Mary Allen) who died in 1855, was a niece of these two sisters. James de Lancey had two sons, Charles in early life a British naval officer, and James, Lieut-Colonel of the First Dragoon Guards; both died bachelors, the former May 6th, 1840, and the latter May 26th, 1857; and three daughters, Margaret, married July 17th 1794, Sir Jukes Granville Clifton Jukes, Bart. and died June 11th, 1804 without leaving children; Anna and Susan who both died spinsters, the first, August 10th, 1851, and the last April 7th, 1866.

Stephen the second son of Lieutenant-Governor de Lancey was the proprietor of what is now the town of North Salem in this county, which came to his father as part of his share in the Manor of Cortlandt, which town Stephen de Lancey settled. He built a large double dwelling, which he subsequently gave to the town for an Academy which is still in existence.<sup>a</sup> He married Hannah Sackett, daughter of Rev. Joseph Sackett of Crom Pond and died without issue May 6th, 1795. Heathcote, the third son of the Lieutenant-Governor, died young before his father.

John Peter de Lancey, the fourth son of Lt. Governor de Lancey, was born in the city of New York, July 15th 1753, and died at Mamaroneck, January 30th, 1828. He was educated at Harrow School in England, and at the military school at Greenwich. In 1771, he entered

<sup>a</sup> See Town of North Salem.

the regular army as Ensign, and served up to the rank of captain in the 18th, or Royal Irish Regiment of Foot. He was, also, for a time by special permission, Major of the Pennsylvania Loyalists, commanded by Col. William Allen.

He received the Heathcote estates of his mother, in the Manor of Scarsdale; and having retired from a military life, in 1789 returned to America and resided at Mamaroneck. He built a new house, still standing on Heathcote Hill, the site of his grandfather Heathcote's great brick manor-house, which was accidentally burnt several years prior to the Revolution. He married 28th September, 1785, Elizabeth Floyd, daughter of Col. Richard Floyd of Mastic, Suffolk County, the head of that old Long Island family, and had three sons and five daughters. The sons were, 1. Thomas James, a lawyer, who died in 1822, at the early age of 32, leaving by his wife Mary, daughter of Thomas Ellison, an only child, a son, also named Thomas James, who married Frances Augusta Bibby, and died in 1859, without having had issue. 2. Edward Floyd, born 18th June, 1795 and died a bachelor, 19th October 1820. 3. William Heathcote, born 8th October, 1797, at Mamaroneck, and died at Geneva, New York, April 5, 1865, the late Bishop of Western New York.

The daughters were five in number. 1. Anne Charlotte, born 17th September, 1786, married 10th December, 1827; John Loudon McAdam, the celebrated originator of McAdamized roads,<sup>a</sup> and died at Hoddesdon, in England, 29th May, 1852, without issue. 2. Susan Augusta, wife of James Fenimore Cooper, the eminent American Author, born 28th January, 1792, married 1st January, 1811,<sup>b</sup> and died 20th of January, 1852. 3. Maria Frances, born August 3d, 1793; died 17th of January, 1806. 4. Elizabeth Caroline, born 4th March, 1801, and died, single, 25th February, 1860. 5. Martha Arabella, born 10th January, 1803, who is still living unmarried.

William Heathcote de Lancey, the first Bishop of Western New York, was born at Heathcote Hill, Mamaroneck, October 8th, 1797.

After attending school at Mamaroneck, and then at New Rochelle, where his teacher was, Mr. Waite, father of the present Chief Justice Waite of the Supreme Court of the United States, he was sent to the academy of the Rev. Mr. Hart, at Hempstead, L. I., and on the death of that gentleman, was transferred at the suggestion of his father's personal friend, the Hon. Rufus King, to that of the Rev. Dr. Eigen-

<sup>a</sup> She was his second wife. His first wife was Glorianna Nicoll of Suffolk County, Long Island; a first cousin of Mrs. John Peter de Lancey, the mother of his second wife.

<sup>b</sup> This marriage was solemnized in the house of Mr. de Lancey, at Heathcote Hill.

brodt, at Jamaica. Entering Yale College in 1813, Mr. de Lancey graduated in 1817, and at once commenced the study of theology with the celebrated Bishop Hobart, as a private student. He was ordained a deacon by that prelate on the 28th of December, 1819, and a priest on March 6th, 1822.

Mr. de Lancey married on the 22d of November, 1820, Frances, third daughter of Peter Jay Munro, of New York, and of Mamaroneck, the distinguished lawyer, (only child of the Rev. Dr. Harry Munro, the last English Rector of St. Peter's church, Albany, N. Y., by his third wife, Eve Jay, daughter of Peter Jay, the first of that name in Rye, (one of whose younger brothers was Chief Justice John Jay) by his wife Margaret, daughter of the Hon. Henry White, of the Council of the Province of New York, and his wife Eve Van Cortlandt, of Yonkers.

While a divinity student Mr. de Lancey held the first services of the Episcopal Church in Mamaroneck; and with the aid of his father, John Peter de Lancey and Peter Jay Munro, who were its first wardens, founded the Parish of St. Thomas in that village.

After serving for short periods as deacon in Trinity church, and in Grace church, New York, he was invited by the venerable Bishop White of Pennsylvania to be his personal assistant in the "Three United Churches" of Christ church, St. Peter's, and St. James in Philadelphia, of which he was also the Rector. Mr. de Lancey accepted this position and removed to Philadelphia, where he continued to reside in the closest and most confidential relations with Bishop White, until the death in 1836, of that great and venerable prelate, the first Bishop of the American Church, consecrated by Anglican Bishops.

During this period, in 1827, in his thirtieth year, Mr. de Lancey was chosen Provost of the University of Pennsylvania, that old "College in Philadelphia" founded by Benjamin Franklin; and also received the degree of D.D., from his Alma Mater, Yale College—being the youngest man upon whom, up to that time, she had conferred that honor. He remained in the Provostship five years, having brought the University up to a very flourishing condition, when he resigned to resume his profession and was elected assistant minister of St. Peter's church, Philadelphia, with the reversion of the Rectorship upon the death of Bishop White.

That event occurring in 1836, Dr. de Lancey then became Rector of St. Peter's and remained such until 1839, when, upon the division of the State of New York into two Dioceses, he was elected Bishop of that part of the State, west of Utica, and consecrated Bishop of Western New York, at Auburn, May 9th, 1839, and took up his residence at Geneva

in Ontario County, a town nearly in the centre of the new Diocese the same year.

After a long, distinguished and successful episcopate of twenty-seven years, Bishop de Lancey died in his own house in Geneva, on the 5th of April, 1865, in the sixty-eighth year of his age. "In him," said a writer in the *Church Journal*, "the Church in America loses the further services of one of her oldest and wisest Bishops. Descended from one of the oldest and best families in this country—which dates far back in our colonial history, and was from the first one of the staunchest pillars of the Church—Bishop de Lancey had also the good fortune to be personally connected with the leading minds in our American branch of the Church Catholic. After studying for holy orders under Bishop Hobart, and being ordained by him both Deacon and Priest, he became assistant to the venerable Bishop White, and continued in the closest and most confidential intercourse with him to his death in 1836. \* \* \* During his connection with the Diocese of Pennsylvania, he filled numerous posts of dignity and useful service, among which were the Provostship of the University of Pennsylvania, the Secretaryship of the House of Bishops, and of the Pennsylvania Convention; his activity, high character and living influence, were inferior to those of no other Priest in the Diocese. This early promise was not disappointed, but abundantly fulfilled, in his career as the first Bishop of Western New York. He was one of the men whom nature had marked out for a ruler among his fellows. With sound principles, earnest devotion, personal gravity, and spotless purity of life, he possessed a clearness of head, a keen knowledge of human nature, and a coolness, caution, readiness, and boldness, which all combined in making him a successful Bishop. His skill in debate was remarkable, and was fully equalled by his mastery of all the resources of parliamentary tactics, either for carrying a measure which he favored, or defeating one to which he was opposed. His vigilance and unflinching tenacity were fully on a par with his other qualities; and yet his courtesy and gentlemanly bearing, together with a pleasant touch of humor, so lubricated the friction of every contest, that no undue heat remained on either side when the struggle was over. No higher testimony could be given to the manner in which he discharged his high office, than the fact of great and steady growth in his Diocese, together with the maintenance of an internal harmony, unity and peace, such as no one of our great Dioceses has been able to equal, much less surpass; nor was he ever the subject of systematic attack from outside of his own jurisdiction. But his care was not limited to his own immediate charge. While Hobart College, and De Veaux College, and the Theological



Training School, and other flourishing Church schools, manifest his power of organization and maintenance, and his success in rallying aid by means of the confidence which his personal and official character inspired, he never neglected the General Institutions of the Church. Not only in General Convention was he one of the strong men of the Upper House ; but in the Board of Missions, in the Church Book Society, in the General Theological Seminary, he has been among the foremost, sometimes the one of all others to lead the way at critical moments, and to sound the call to which others were glad to rally. His clear-sightedness, indeed, sometimes made him a little in advance of his time ; and no truer proof of wisdom could be given by a tenacious man than the promptness with which he dropped a subject when satisfied that it was not yet ripe for action. One case of this kind was in regard to the General Theological Seminary, which he foresaw must sooner or later change its form from a general to a local institution ; and about twenty years ago he proposed it in the Board. The proposal failed, and was not renewed. The time for that change is much nearer now than it was then, and the shape which it will take, will probably be different in some important respects from Bishop de Lancey's ideas at that time. But his foresight as to the coming change will continue on record. Another and still more important subject was also introduced first by him into General Convention—the adoption of the Provincial System. Bishop White, indeed, had sketched out the plan long before, and he had taken it from the universal system of the Church in all ages and countries ; but Bishop de Lancey was the first to propose it, formally, to the Legislature of the Church. The time had not come ; and the Bishop wisely let it sleep thereafter ; but here, as before, the proof of his foresight as to the approaching and certain needs of the Church is written in the records of her institutions. Bishops of more brilliance in some departments, of more moving eloquence, of more sympathetic temperaments, of more personal popularity, of more rapid visible success, we may behold ; but a Bishop more sagacious, more steady, more true, in laying the foundations of the Church, like a wise master-builder, we never expect to see.”

John Peter De Lancey by will (dated 28th of January, 1823) devised his property in this town to Thomas James De Lancey, the only child of his deceased son Thomas James, and to his son William Heathcote De Lancey the Bishop of Western New York (except a portion of the western end of De Lancey's Neck which he had conveyed in his life time to his deceased son Thomas James, who had devised the same to his only child Thomas James the younger). All the property of Thomas

James the younger lay upon the western part of de Lancey's Neck. The eastern part of that Neck, the Heathcote Hill tract, and sedge lots, with the other lands of John Peter de Lancey in Mamaroneck passed to the late Bishop de Lancey,<sup>a</sup> who devised the same to his four surviving children, Edward Floyd, John Peter, William Heathcote, Jr., and Margaret, wife of Thomas F. Rochester, M. D. The Heathcote Hill estate was devised to them equally, and subsequently by purchase of the shares of his brothers and sister became the sole property of Edward Floyd de Lancey, the present proprietor. Thomas James de Lancey, the younger sold his part of de Lancey's Neck in his lifetime, and it is now held by many owners—among whom are James M. Constable, John Greacen, Leonard Jacob, Mrs. Eldridge and others. The eastern part, except a small portion in the rear sold to Mrs. E. V. Rushmore, is still held by the children of Bishop de Lancey, the extreme south-eastern part being the country seat of Edward F. de Lancey.

Martha Heathcote, the second surviving daughter of Col. Caleb Heathcote, married Lewis Johnson of Perth Amboy.<sup>b</sup> In the year 1771, the above Martha, conveyed all her right and title to her husband.

There is a deed recorded in the town books, between Anne de Lancey daughter of Col. Caleb Heathcote, widow of the Hon. James de Lancey, deceased, and Lewis Johnston of Perth Amboy, physician of the one part, and William Sutton of Mamaroneck, on the other part.

Signed, ANNE DE LANCEY,  
LEWIS JOHNSTON.

JOHN JOHNSTON, }  
HEATHCOTE JOHNSTON. } by ANNE DE LANCEY.

In the presence of John Johnston and Susannah de Lancey.

John Johnston, the eldest son and heir at law of Lewis Johnston and Martha Heathcote, died in 1782, leaving issue by his wife Margaret Barbarie, five sons and two daughters. Heathcote the third son, was the father of Susannah Snowhill Ward, wife of the Rev. John M. Ward, the late Rector of the Parish of St. Thomas.

In the town clerk's office is a small manuscript volume entitled:

“This is the book of records for Mamaroneck.”

<sup>a</sup> In the Spring of 1847, when Bishop de Lancey was in New York, a package was handed to the servant at the door, on opening which the Bishop found an anonymous letter directed to him. The writer stated that being in England thirty or forty years ago, he found some papers relating to the de Lancey family among some waste paper in the house where he was staying; that he had preserved them, and seeing by the newspapers that the Bishop was in the city, he now enclosed them to him. These the Bishop found to be: first, the commission of James de Lancey as Lieutenant-Governor of the Colony; second his commission as Chief Justice of the Colony; third, the freedom of the City of New York voted to him by the Corporation of the city in 1730; fourth, a map of lands owned by them on New York island, prepared by the Bishop's grand-father, and a few letters.

<sup>b</sup> The father of Lewis, was John Johnston, M.D., of Edinburgh, who married Euphemia Scot, on the 18th, April, 1686. John Johnston died at Perth Amboy, 6th Sept., 1732, at 47. The brother of Lewis, Andrew Johnston, married Catharine Van Cortlandt.

The first entry commences April 2d, 1697.

Lieutenant SAMUEL PALMER, Supervisor.

Captain JAMES MOTT, Assessor.

HENRY DISBROW, Collector.

HENRY DISBROW, Surveyor of the highways.

Lt. WILLIAM PALMER, Constable and also Clerk.

At a meeting held by the freeholders of Mamaroneck, on the 18th day of April, in the year 1702, the following officers were chosen:

Captain JAMES MOTT, Supervisor,

NEHEMIAH PALMER, Constable,

OBEDIAH PALMER, Clerk,

JOHN NELSON, Assessor,

JOHN DISBROW, Collector,

HENRY DISBROW, Surveyor of highways.

Samuel Palmer and William Penoyer, chosen fence viewers; Col. Caleb Heathcote and Samuel Palmer, chosen to lay out highways by John Wems, as they shall see most convenient.

The village of Mamaroneck is very pleasantly situated at the head of a fine bay near its confluence with the Mamaroneck river. The channel of the former admits at high water, vessels carrying one hundred tons, to the landing. Indian creek, the north-west channel of the bay, leads to the old ship yard which formerly stood near the western entrance of the village; the site was presented to the town by the Johnston family. Vast quantities of flounders are frequently taken by means of fykes, in this channel. Black Fish, Sheeps-head, and Striped Bass, abound in the waters of the bay. The Mamaroneck river, above mentioned, forms the eastern boundary of the town, and derives its source from Horton's pond. This stream is more remarkable for the romantic valleys it forms, and the rich country it winds through, than for its extent—being generally buried within deep banks. Near its junction with the Sheldrake, (directly north of the village,) it forms a beautiful valley between high rolling hills, upon the sides of which, are boulders of enormous size.

It is the boundary line between Mamaroneck and Rye, and is crossed near its mouth by a substantial iron bridge.

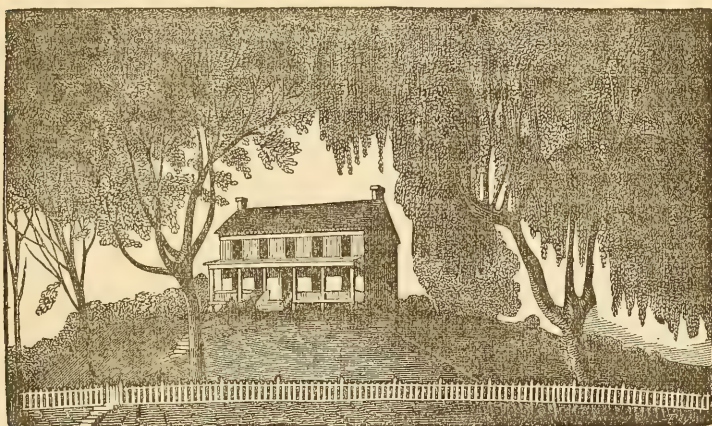
The Sheldrake rises from two springs in Scarsdale.<sup>a</sup> The general surface of the surrounding country is hilly, and abounds in wild and romantic scenery.

<sup>a</sup> The Sheldrake Springs are situated on the land of John Hatfield.

Mamaroneck is one of the most ancient villages in the county, having been laid out in, or about, the year 1660. It now contains two churches, two carriage factories, several stores and about one hundred dwellings.<sup>a</sup>

The former divisions of the high ridge, originally called "Good-Success Ridge," (facing the bay and post road,) are still distinguished by the names of their original proprietors, viz.: Heathcote, Nelson and Budds' hills. Near the entrance of the village from the west, is situated Heathcote Hill, the property of Edward F. de Lancey, Esq.

The old de Lancey residence, upon "Heathcote Hill," stands on the site of a stately brick manor-house, erected by Colonel Caleb Heathcote about the year 1700, as the manor-house of his manor of Scars-



Heathcote Hill, Mamaroneck.

dale, and in which he dwelt until his death in 1721. It was accidentally burned a few years before the Revolution.

Madame Knight in her journey to Boston, A.D., 1704, thus describes the place:

"From New Rochelle we travelled through Merrinack, a neat though little place, with a navigable river before it, the pleasantest I ever see. There are good buildings, especially one, *a very fine seat, which they told me was Col. Heathcote's*, who I heard was a very fine gentleman."<sup>b</sup> The grounds around the present mansion are not extensive, being about fifty acres; but its views of the bay, adjacent necks and distant sound scenery, present charming landscapes. Fine rows of walnuts and locusts

<sup>a</sup> The New York and New Haven rail road depot is situated a quarter of a mile north of the village.

<sup>b</sup> Journal of Madame Knight, N. Y. edition, 1825.



border the property on the south and west. Some distance west of the dwelling house, surrounded by orchards, is the family cemetery of the de Lanceys. This spot was appropriated by John Peter de Lancey, as a cemetery for the remains of the de Lancey family, and for that purpose devised to his son William Heathcote de Lancey, in trust forever, &c. &c.; the family vault beneath Trinity church New York, not having been used since 1776.

Here repose the mortal remains of

JOHN PETER DE LANCEY,

born in the City of New York.

15 July, 1753,

died at Mamaroneck

31 January, 1828.

ELIZABETH DE LANCEY,

wife of

JOHN PETER DE LANCEY,

born 8 August, 1758,

died 7 May, 1820.

THOMAS JAMES DE LANCEY,

born

August 12, 1789,

died Dec'r. 28th, 1822.

Besides other memorials, to various members of the family.

The adjoining estate upon the east is Nelson Hill. This property formerly belonged to the Nelson family; Polycarpus Nelson having purchased it of Henry Penoyer, 1725.



Polycarpus died in 1738, leaving three sons—Polycarpus, Edward and Maharshalaskbar. The name of the latter is supposed to have been derived from his maternal ancestor Akabashka, one of the Indian witnesses to the sale of John Harrison in 1695.

The two younger brothers devised their rights to Polycarpus. The property has since passed through the Horton, Ryer, Bailey, and Stanley families, to Benjamin M. Brown, Esq., whose heirs sold it to Andrew Wilson, from whom the house and garden was purchased by the present owner Matthias Banta, Esq., and the rest of it by various parties.

The house occupies a beautiful situation on the slope of the hill overlooking the Sound and Mamaroneck bay. This place is remarkable for a very distant echo, the true object of which appears to be the opposite residence of Heathcote Hill. In the still dewy evenings of summer when the air is very elastic, and a dead stillness prevails, every word spoken in the neighboring house is plainly re-echoed from the northern bank. "Echo (says White) has always been so amusing to the imagination, that the poets have personified her; and, in their hands, she has been the occasion of many a beautiful fiction. Nor need the gravest

man be ashamed to appear taken with such a phenomenon, since it may become the subject of philosophical or mathematical inquiries."<sup>a</sup>

Several members of the Nelson family are interred north of this residence. Upon the only tombstone remaining, are chiselled two open hands pointing to a heart, with the following inscription :

PALYCARPVS  
NELSON  
WAS                      BORN  
                                            
                    IVLY 21 ABOT · 4 ·  
A · CLOCK · IN · THE · MO  
RNING · IN · THE · YEAR  
1688 · I · FINNIST · MY · CORS  
AND · QVIT · THE · LAND · IN ·  
WITNES · HEREOF · MY · HART · MY  
HAND · DESESED · DESEMBER · 19  
1738.

The neighboring property toward the north-east was formerly vested in the Budd family, whose surname it still retains. The last member that occupied the estate was Col. Gilbert Budd, who served with great distinction in the Continental army during the Revolution. This gentleman was the son of Underhill Budd, of Budd's Neck, Rye. The family cemetery is situated on that portion of the estate which borders the Sheldrake to the north of the village near the New Haven Railroad station.

Here repose the remains of

GILBERT BUDD,<sup>b</sup>  
who died Oct. 14th, 1805,  
aged 87 years.

Whoe'er thou art, with silent footsteps tread  
The hollow mould where he reclines his head;  
Let not thoughtless mirth one tear deny,  
But pensive, pause, where truth and honour lie.  
His gay wit that fond attention drew,  
Of't heard delighted by the friendly few;  
The heart, that melted at another's grief;  
The hand, in secret, that bestowed relief.  
Perhaps e'en now, from yonder realm of day,  
To his lov'd relatives he sends a ray:  
Pleased to behold affections like his own,  
With filial duty raised this votive stone.

COLONEL GILBERT BUDD,  
who departed this life  
Sept. 7, 1808,  
aged 69 years.

JANE BARKER,  
dec'd December,  
1754, aged 42.

<sup>a</sup> White's Selborne.

<sup>b</sup> Gilbert Budd, M.D., a distinguished surgeon, educated at Edinburgh, son of John Budd. See Genealogy.

There are also memorials to members of the Horton, Miller and Seaman families.

The Episcopal church occupies a very pleasant position directly north of the main street. The building is a neat wooden structure, valued at \$15,000. The foundation of the present edifice was laid A. D. 1823, and the church consecrated to God on the 17th of June, 1823, under the name and title of St. Thomas's church, Mamaroneck, by the Right Rev. J. H. Hobart, Bishop of the diocese. Previous to the Revolution, Mamaroneck constituted one of the appropriated towns of Rye parish, having been annexed thereto by acts of assembly, passed in 1693-7. In 1725, Mamaroneck contributed towards the rectors' tax, £18, and in 1767, £19, 2s. 6d. The name of John Disbrow (vestryman from Mamaroneck) occurs in the church records of Rye, A. D. 1710. The parochial clergy appear to have officiated here at a very early period, as Madame Knight incidentally mentions in 1704, "that one Church of England parson officiated in all these three towns," viz., Rye, Mamaroneck and Horseneck, "once every Sunday in turns throughout the year." The French clergy of New Rochelle, also performed occasional services here; this we learn from the records of Trinity church.

Upon the 12th of April, 1814, the present parish was organized, and incorporated in accordance with the act passed on the 17th of March, 1795. At the first meeting of the congregation, held on Tuesday in Easter week, 1814, the following gentlemen were chosen officers for the ensuing year, viz.: John Peter de Lancey and Peter Jay Munro church-wardens. William Gray, Benj. Hadden, Henry Gedney, Samuel Deal, Abraham Guion, and Matthias G. Valentine, vestrymen.<sup>b</sup>

To this church is attached a handsome parsonage and grounds. The communion silver consists of a flageon and a double set of chalices and patens, inscribed

"ST. THOMAS'S CHURCH, MAMARONECK, NEW YORK, 1837."

Besides a smaller set for the private administration of the holy Eucharist. During the incumbency of the present rector, the church has undergone considerable repairs; the parsonage has also been purchased and greatly improved. In 1835-6, Trinity church, New York, liberally endowed this church with the sum of \$800. The first delegate from this parish to the Diocesan Convention was Guy C. Bayley, Esq.

<sup>a</sup> Madame Knight's Journal, p. 59.

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. A., 145. A second incorporation of this church took place on the 9th of June, 1817, when John Peter de Lancey and Peter Jay Munro were elected church-wardens; Jacob Mott, Guy C. Bayley, Monmouth Lyon, Edward Floyd de Lancey, Benjamin Hadden, Henry Gedney, Benjamin Croker and Thomas James de Lancey, vestrymen. Religious Soc. Lib. A., 159.



St. Thomas's Church, Mamaroneck.

## RECTORS OF MAMARONECK.

Institution or call	Incumbents.		By resig.
4th June, 1821,	WM. HEATHCOTE DE LANCY,	Deacon,	ditto.
1st Oct., 1823,	LEWIS P. BAYARD,	Presb.	ditto.
30th Mar. 1824,	WILLIAM C. MEAD,	Presb.	ditto.
21st Sept., 1825,	LEWIS P. BAYARD,	Presb.	ditto.
25th April, 1807,	ALEXANDER H. CROSBY,	Presb.	ditto.
2d Oct., 1830,	JOHN M. FORBES,	Presb.	ditto.
11th Feb., 1832,	WILLIAM M. CARMICHAEL,	Presb.	ditto.
17th Nov., 1834,	PETER S. CHAUNCEY,	Presb.	ditto.
8th Sept., 1836,	ROBERT W. HARRIS,	Presb.	ditto.
14th July, 1837,	WILLIAM A. CURTIS,	Presb.	ditto.
5th July, 1841,	JOHN M. WARD,		

WILLIAM W. MONTGOMERY, *Present Rector.**Notitia Parochialis.*

1847, communicants, 53, baptisms, 10,

The Methodist society of this town was organized upon the 8th of April, 1813, when the following gentlemen were elected trustees: Absalom Tompkins, John Bonnet, William Ward, Elisha Budd, Ransome Burtis, and William Ally.<sup>a</sup> The meeting house is a chaste edifice of wood located upon the highest summit of Good Success ridge. It was subsequently sold and a handsome new one erected on Rye Neck. The old edifice is now the Town Hall.

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 145.





Disbrow House, Mamaroneck.

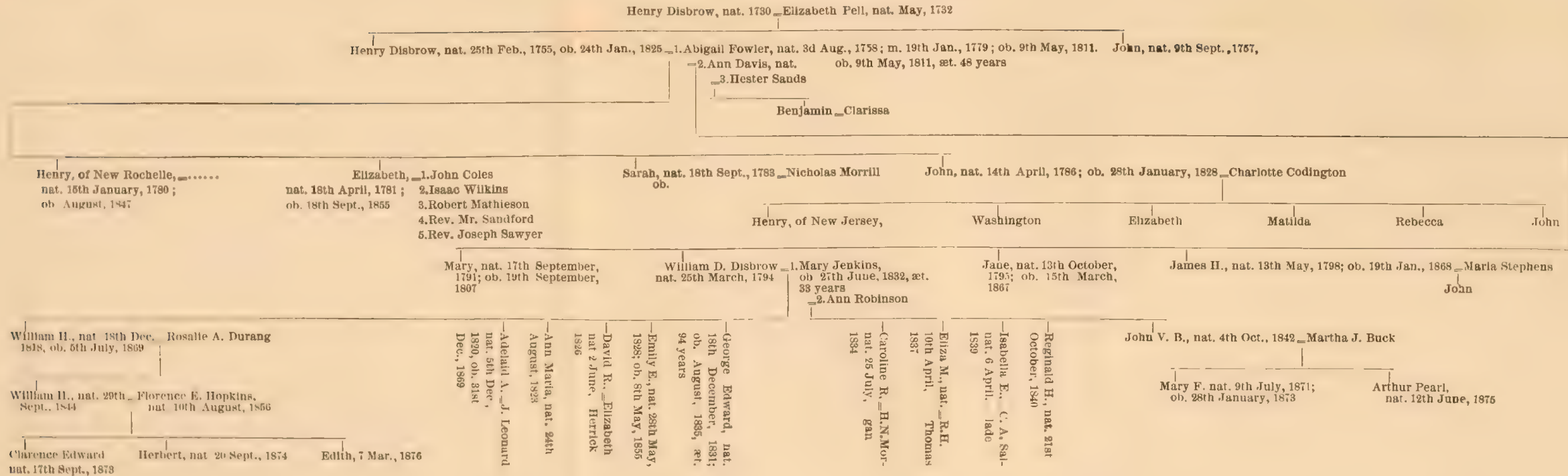
Near the western entrance of the village stands the ancient residence of the Disbrow family, erected A. D. 1677. Mrs. Sanford, the late occupant, being the eighth generation that has resided upon this spot. The old house has been carefully preserved, but near it stands a new house erected by the family about twenty years ago. Both are now owned by Mr. Stringer. The Disbrows were originally from the county of Essex,<sup>a</sup> England, and related to, if not immediately descended from Major General John Disborough or Disbrow, who married Anna Cromwell, sister of the Protector. By this lady John Disborough had seven sons, the youngest was Benjamin Disborough, Esq. Samuel Disborough, Lord Keeper of Scotland, a near relation of the Major General, was one of the first settlers of Guildford, Connecticut, A.D. 1650. "The town of Guildford, says Mr. Lambert, being from the first a component part of New Haven government, was allowed an assistant or magistrate. Mr. Samuel Disborough, who, next to Mr. Whitefield, was esteemed the first and richest of the planters, was the first magistrate. After serving the colony in this capacity about twelve years, he returned to England in company with Mr. Whitefield. After the restoration of King Charles II., he was a subject of royal favor and political distinction, and at one time was a member of the privy council.<sup>b</sup>

Peter Disbrow was one of the first and principal proprietors of Rye, in 1660. John Disbrow, son of Peter, purchased lands of John Richbell in 1674. A second sale occurs in 1685.

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Morant, in his history of Essex, gives the arms of the Disboroughs—argent a fesse, between three bears' heads muzzled, erased sable.

<sup>b</sup> Lambert's Hist. of New Haven, p. 167.

## PEDIGREE OF DISBROW, OF MAMARONECK.





A.D. 1688, Henry Disbrow, son of John, conveys half his lands situated in Mamaroneck to his son Henry Disbrow.<sup>a</sup> Henry Disbrow of Mamaroneck, in 1690, releases a lot of ground lying in the town of Rye, which he formerly bought of John Wascot.<sup>b</sup> The Disbrow estate in this town was originally large and included a valuable tract of woodland, called the Hickory grove.

The family relate the following tradition ; that in the early part of the last century, the Indians came in a large body to the present house and demanded immediate possession of the property. Fortunately the original title deeds had been carefully secured. They were now opened and shown to the Indians, who upon seeing their own signatures appeared perfectly satisfied, and instantly marched off, leaving the Disbrows in undisturbed possession.<sup>c</sup>

There are numerous historical events in connection with Mamaroneck, which deserve to be recorded here.

The day previous to the battle of White Plains, Colonel Smallwood of the American army surprised and cut off a large body of the enemy, under the command of Major Rogers, stationed upon Nelson hill and its vicinity. The event is thus related by General Heath: "Lord Sterling, who was before in this vicinity with his brigade, had formed an enterprise against Major Roger's corps. The old Indian hunter of the last war, who had engaged in the British service, with his corps, now lay on the out-posts of the British army, near Mamaroneck. The enterprise was conducted with good address ; and if the Americans had known exactly how the Roger's corps lay, they would probably have killed or taken the whole. As it was, thirty-six prisoners, sixty muskets, and some other articles, were taken. The Major, conformably to his former general conduct, escaped with the rest of his corps. This was a pretty affair ; and if the writer could recollect the name of the commanding officer, with pride and pleasure he would insert it. He belonged to one of the southern lines of the army, and the whole of the party were southern troops."<sup>d</sup>

On the 31st of January, 1777, a cordon of troops was ordered to be formed, to extend from Dobb's Ferry to Mamaroneck. "February 1, 1777. Foraging being now the object, a large number of teams were

---

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. B. 21.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. B. 65.

<sup>c</sup> The old family Bible, edited by Basket of London, A. D. 1756, contains the Book of Common Prayer, and numerous family entries. There is also preserved a silver-headed walking-stick inscribed "Henry Disbrow, 1697." The above heir-looms are in the possession of William Disbrow of New York.

<sup>d</sup> Heath's Mem. 74. Holt's Gazette. The dead who fell upon this occasion were buried on the south-east side of Nelson's hill.



sent out towards Mamaroneck, and upwards of eighty loads of forage were brought off."<sup>a</sup>

The following letter of Gen. Samuel Parsons, dated at Mamaroneck, Nov. 21st, 1777, to Governor Tryon, with his answer, is copied from a newspaper printed at the time :

"SIR:—Adding to the natural horrors of war the most wanton destruction of property, is an act of cruelty unknown to civilized nations, and unaccustomed in war, until the servants of the King of Great Britian have convinced the impartial world, no act of humanity, no stretch of despotism, are too great to exercise toward those they term rebels.

"Had any apparent advantage been derived from burning the house on Philip's manor, last Monday, there would have been some reason to justify the measure; but when no benefit whatever can be proposed, by burning those buildings and stripping the women and children of necessary apparel, to cover them from the severity of a cold night, and captivating and leading in triumph to your lines, in the most ignominious manner, the heads of those families, I know not what justifiable cause to assign for those acts of cruelty; nor can I conceive a necessity for your further order to destroy Tarrytown.

"You cannot be insensible it is every day in my power to destroy the houses and buildings of Col. Phillips, and those belonging to the family of De Lancey, each as near your lines as those buildings were to my guards; and notwithstanding your utmost diligence, you cannot prevent the destruction of every house this side of King's Bridge. It is not fear, it is not want of opportunity that has preserved those buildings; but a sense of the injustice and savageness of such a line of conduct, has saved them; and nothing but necessity will induce me to copy examples of this sort, so often set by your troops.

"It is not my inclination, sir, to war in this manner against the inhabitants within your lines, who suppose themselves within your king's protection. But necessity will oblige me to retaliate in kind upon your friends, to procure the exercise of that justice which humanity used to dictate, unless your explicit disavowal of your two captains, Emmerick and Barnes, shall convince me these houses were burned without your knowledge and against your order.

"I am, sir, your humble servant,

SAMUEL H. PARSONS."

#### GOVERNOR TRYON'S ANSWER, DATED

"KING'S BRIDGE CAMP, NOV. 23, 1777.

"SIR,—Could I possibly conceive myself accountable to any revolted subject of the king of Great Britian, I might answer your letter, received by the flag of truce yesterday, respecting the conduct of the party under Capt. Emmerick's command upon the taking of Peter and Cornelius Van Tassell; I have, however, candor enough to assure you—as much as I abhor every principle of inhumanity or ungenerous conduct—I should, were I in more authority, burn every committee man's house within my reach—as I deem those agents the wicked instruments of the continued calamities of this country; and in order sooner to purge

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem., 114.

the country of them, I am willing to give twenty-five dollars for every acting committee man, who shall be delivered up to the king's troops. I guess, before the end of next campaign, they will be torn in pieces by their own countrymen, whom they have forcibly dragged in opposition to their principles and duty (after fining them to the extent of their property) to take up arms against their lawful sovereign, and compelling them to exchange their happy constitution for paper, rags, anarchy and distress.

"The ruins from the conflagration of New York, by the emissaries of your party last year, remain a memorial of their tender regard for their fellow beings exposed to the 'severity of a cold night.'

"This is the first correspondence I have held with the King's enemies, on my part in America; and as I am immediately under the command of Sir Henry Clinton, your future letters—dictated with decency—would be more properly directed to his Excellency, I am, sir, your most obedient servant,

"TO GEN. PARSONS."

"WILLIAM TRYON, Major General.

This came on Sunday, the 23d inst., and by some means or other Gen. de Lancey's house at Bloomingdale, on York Island, took fire on the 25th, at night.<sup>a</sup>

"The army marched on the 8th of July, 1778, in two columns to Mamaroneck; the Queen's Rangers were in front of that, on the right. On the 9th, the Commander-in-chief marched with the army to Byram's bridge: on leaving this camp, to return to Mamaroneck, the next day, the Queen's Rangers formed the rear guard. Upon this march, three soldiers, straggling at a small distance from the huts, were taken by the militia; Lieut. Col. Simcoe expressed, in orders, "that he is the most sensibly affected at the loss of the three men, who straggled from their posts during the last march. He feels himself but ill-repaid for the confidence he has placed in the regiment, and his inclination to ease their duty, by never posting an unnecessary sentinal; at the same time, he trusts, that, as this has been the first instance of the kind during the time he has had the honor of commanding the Queen's Rangers, it will be the last; and that the soldiers will reflect what they must suffer by a long imprisonment, from a mean and despicable enemy, who never has, or can gain, any advantage over them, but what arises from their own disobedience of orders."<sup>b</sup>

It was in the vicinity of Mamaroneck, that Lieut. Hickford of the Refugee corps, overtook Col. White, of the Continental army, upon his retreat from Morrisania. Some thirty stragglers, who had taken refuge on the ice, were killed by the British cavalry.

De Lancey's Neck, or East Neck, the ancient Waumainuck of the abor-

<sup>a</sup> Barber's Hist. Col. St. N. Y., p. 591, 592.

<sup>b</sup> Simcoe's Mil. Jour., p. 102, 103.

gines, lies immediately south-east of the village, upon the easterly side of which is situated the Seaman place. It obtained its present name from Giles Seaman, late proprietor, who married Lydia Mott, a lineal descendent of John Richbell, the patentee. This dwelling house and old Mott farm, afterwards owned by Mr. Isaac Hall, is now held by Mrs. Rushmore. The former, a fine wooden structure, occupies a commanding position overlooking the Bay, and opposite the shores of Budd's Neck. Indeed from this spot, the best view is obtained of the village.

Upon the extremity of a point there is a small cemetery, containing several memorials of members of the Seaman, Bain, Disbrow and Vanderbilt families. From the old Boston post-road, a picturesque lane leads to the south-west extremity of de Lancey's Neck, sometimes called Long Beach Point. Extensive woods ornament the shores of the Neck, and add greatly to the beauty of the scenery. The proprietors of this Neck were the Right Rev. William Heathcote de Lancey, and his nephew, Thomas James de Lancey, Esq.

Next in order, on the west of de Lancey's Neck, we have the Prickly Pear Creek, Eagle Hammock, Barker's Hammock and Munro's Gut, which constitutes the division line between it and the Great or Middle Neck, called Munro's Neck. Munro's Neck formerly belonged to the Palmer family. Samuel Palmer, having obtained a confirmation for the same, under the hand of the Indian sachem Ann Hook, in the year 1700-1. From the heirs of Samuel Palmer it passed by purchase to the late Peter Jay Munro, in 1798. From the Munro's it was purchased by Edward K. Collins, Esq., in 1845, who called it Larchmont, and subsequently sold it to Mr. Flint, who laid out upon it the present suburban village of Larchmont.

The mansion erected by Peter Jay Munro occupies a delightful situation near the river, on the highest grounds of the Neck, commanding, on the south and east, extensive prospects of the Sound. A grateful air of seclusion has been studied in the arrangement of the grounds and the grouping of trees. The view from the road was tastefully concealed by a fine plantation of Scotch larch (whence Mr. Collins derived the name of Larchmont,) which added much to the beauty of the place. The late owner, Peter Jay Munro, Esq., was the son of the Rev. Harry Munro, D.D., (for several years rector of St. John's church Yonkers,)<sup>a</sup> by his wife Eve Jay, daughter of the late Peter Jay, of Rye, and sister of Hendrick and John Jay.

Peter Jay Munro was a distinguished member of the bar, and one of

---

<sup>a</sup> This family is a branch of the Munro's of Foulis, Scotland, is now represented by Mr. John White, manor of Pelham, the youngest son of Peter Jay Munro.

the framers of the late constitution of this State. By his wife Margaret White, Mr. Munro left two sons, Henry and John, besides several daughters. Mott's Neck adjoins Munro's on the west, upon which is situated the farm and residence of the late William Scott, Esq. This delightful spot commands pleasing views of the neighboring neck and Sound scenery. Mr. Scott was the son of James Scott, whose father, Walter Scott,<sup>a</sup> took an active part in the political drama of 1745, in favor of Prince Charles; father and son subsequently emigrated to this country, and during the war of the Revolution, distinguished themselves as brave and zealous patriots.

Upon the Flandreau hammocks on the next neck westwardly, is placed the Premium Mill, the property of the late William P. Kellogg, Esq. In this vicinity are the estates of James I. Roosevelt, Esq., (late member of Congress,) now belonging to George E. Vandenburg, and Mrs. Susan Daubeney; the latter adjoins the Palmer burying-ground on the west,<sup>b</sup> and is now owned by Mr. Meyer.

We have previously shown that the town is well watered by numerous streams, some of which have one or more mills standing on them.

The growth of wood is of the usual various sorts. On the highlands, oak, hickory, walnut and chestnut are the chief. The lower grounds, are covered generally with maple, birch and elm, &c.

The principal minerals of the town, are quartz, drusy, calcedony, agate, and jasper. Serpentine of almost every variety, and cromate of iron; veins of the dolomitic marble, and gneiss also occur in various localities.

---

<sup>a</sup> The first Walter of this family was the famous "Auld Wat." the renowned free-booter of the Scottish border.

<sup>b</sup> Near the Palmer burying-ground stood the old Friends meeting house.





# THE TOWN

## OF

# MOUNT PLEASANT.

---

The name of this town denotes its pleasant location upon high hills. Mount Pleasant has been separated from the old town of the same name, and erected into a distinct township;<sup>a</sup> both having been formally included in the Manor of Philipsburgh. It is situated six miles north-west of the village of White Plains, distant thirty-three miles from New York, and one hundred and nineteen from Albany; bounded north by Ossining and New Castle, and east by North Castle, south by Greenburgh, and west by Ossining and the Hudson River.

This tract of land must originally have formed a portion of the ancient domains of Weckguaskeck, as we find Weskora, Sachem of that place, and Ghoharius, his brother, (a chief residing here,) conjointly selling lands bordering the Pocanteco to Frederick Philipse, in the year 1680.

Upon the district situated near the mouth of the Pocanteco River, (called by the English, Mill River,) the Indians conferred the name of Pockerhoe. Pocanteco, the Indian name for the beautiful Mill River, is clearly derived from the Algonquin, Pockohantes,<sup>b</sup> a term expressive of "a run between two hills." The local term Pockerhoe, also points to the same root for its origin.

Be this as it may, however, no signification could be more descriptive of the Weird stream, which pours its swift current through the foldings of a hundred hills. The Dutch styled it, the Sleepy haven Kill,<sup>c</sup> hence the origin of the present term Sleepy Hollow, as applied to the valley.

---

<sup>a</sup> Mount Pleasant was originally organized on the 7th of March, 1788. Rec. Stat. The present town on the 20th of May, 1845.

<sup>b</sup> The Indian name of the illustrious princess of Virginia.

<sup>c</sup> Van der Donck's, H. N. N.

In the rear of the Dutch church, (situated near the entrance of the hollow,) there formally stood an Indian fort, the remains of which, together with several mounds, have long since been leveled with the surrounding ground. For the erection of these forts and strongholds, Van der Donck informs us, that the Indians usually selected a situation on the side of a steep hill, near a stream or river, which is difficult of access except from the water, and inaccessible on every other side, with a level plain on the crown of the hill, which they enclose with a strong stockade work in a singular manner. "Near their plantations they also frequently erect small works to secure their wives and children against the sudden irruption of the small marauding parties of their enemies. When their castles and forts are constructed according to their rude custom, they consider the same very safe and secure places."<sup>a</sup>

The vestiges of a military redoubt at present occupy the summit of the adjoining hill, commonly called Jones' hill. This elevated spot commands the valley of Sleepy Hollow, Tarrytown, and splendid prospects of the Hudson River.

In 1680, the Indian sachem Ghoharius, with the consent of his brother Weskora, for a certain sum of wampum and other goods, released unto Frederick Philipse a large strip of land, lying on each side of the Pocanteco River, for which they acknowledged to have received full satisfaction. This sale was ratified before the Governor of the province, at Fort James, in New York, and subsequently confirmed to Frederick Philipse by royal patent, the same year. The patentee yielding and paying, therefor, yearly unto his Royal Highness, the Duke of York and Albany, a quit rent of one bushel of winter wheat, etc.

Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, &c., Whereas Frederick Philipse of this city, merchant, hath made application unto me for a grant of a certain creek or river, called by the Indians, Pocantico, (whereon to set a mill,) with a proportion of land on each side adjoining thereunto; the same lying within the bounds of the Indians' land at Wickers creek,<sup>b</sup> on the east side of Hudson's river; and by my leave and approbation hath made purchase thereof from the native Indian proprietors, the which they have acknowledged before me, as likewise to have received full satisfaction for the same, from the said Frederick Philipse. The said land adjoining to the creek or river aforesaid lying on each side thereof, north and south 1600 treads or steps, which at twelve feet to the rod makes 400 rods; and runs up into the country as far as the said creek or river goeth, provided always, that if the said creek or river, called by the Indians Neppera, and by the Christians the Yonkers creek or kill, shall come within that space of land of 400 rods on the south side of

<sup>a</sup> Van der Donck's Hist. N. N. N. Y. Hist. Soc. N. Ser. vol. 1. p. 197.

<sup>b</sup> A corruption of the Indian name, Weckquaskeek.

the aforesaid creek or river, that it shall extend no further than the said creek or river of Neppera, but the rest to be so far up into the country on each side as the said creek or river called Pocantico runs, being about north-east. KNOW YE that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given under his Royal Highness, I have given and granted, and by these presents do hereby give, ratify, confirm and grant unto said Frederick Philipse, his heirs and assignees, the afore-recited creek or river, parcels of lands and premises hereinbefore expressed and set forth, together with all the woodlands, meadows, pastures, marshes, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, as also the privilege of erecting and building a mill, making a dam, or whatsoever else shall be necessary and requisite thereunto, with all profits, commodities and emoluments unto the said creek, river and land belonging, or in any wise appertaining, to have and to hold the said creek or river and land with their and every of their appurtenances to the said Frederick Philipse, his heirs and assignees unto the proper use and behoof of him the said Frederick Philipse, his heirs and assignees for ever, he making improvement thereon according to law, and yielding and paying therefor yearly and every year unto his Royal Highness, a quit rent, one bushel of winter wheat in New York, unto such officer or officers as shall be empowered to receive the same. Given under my hand and sealed with the seal of the Province, in New York, the first day of April, in the thirty-second year of his Majesty's reign, Anno Domini, 1680."

From this period we find the Indians gradually yielding their territory to the above patentee. Upon the 5th of June, 1684, (the royal patent says 7th of May,) the Indians; Sepham, Ghoharim, (Ghoharius,) Kakin-sigh, Enhoak,<sup>a</sup> Arradppanint, Kewanghis, a squaw, Niepack, Kewigh-takem, and Teatagoom, sell to Frederick Philipse.

#### INDIAN DEED OF WECKQUASKECK.

All that tract or parcel of land situate, lying, and being to the eastward of the land of Frederick Philipse, between the creek called Neppierha, or the Yoncker's Kill and Bronck's River beginning on the south side at the northerly bounds of the Yoncker's land, and from thence along the aforesaid creek Nippierha, however it runs, till you come to the most northerly bounds of the said Frederick Philipse's land, and from thence northeast into the woods unto Bronck's river, so as it runs southerly to the eastward of the Yoncker's land aforesaid, and from thence, with a westerly line, to the aforesaid Yoncker's Kill, or Nippierha, &c., &c. The goods paid by the grantee were as follows:<sup>b</sup>

130 fathoms of white Wampum,	10 Spoons.
12 Guns,	2 Knives,
14 Fathoms of Duffels,	12 Pair of Stockings.
12 Blankets,	15 Hatchets,
8 Coats,	10 Hoes,
6 Kettles,	10 Earthen Jugs,
6 Fathoms of Stroudwater.	10 Iron Pots,
16 Shirts,	4½ Vats of Beer,
25 lbs of Powder,	2 Ankers of Rum,
20 Bars of Lead,	2 Rolls of Tobacco,

<sup>a</sup> The real name of this chief was Wampage, the place of his residence Annhook's Neck (Pelham Point).

<sup>b</sup> See Town of Yonkers.



The above purchase, (together with other sales, from the Indians,) was confirmed to Philipse by his Excellency, Thomas Dongan, Governor of the Province, on the 23d of December, 1684. The whole were subsequently included within the Royal Patent of Philipsburgh. From the Indian grants and royal patents, we proceed to give our readers a brief account of the Philipse family, collected from the best authorities and original manuscripts still extant.

Frederick Philipse or (as the name was spelt at that early period) Vreedryk or Vrederyck Felypsen, was a native of Bohemia,<sup>a</sup> while others say of Bolswert or Bolsward, in West or East Friesland, Holland, a small town near Wiewerd, where he was born, A.D. 1626. His father was the Honorable Viscount Felyps, of Bohemia, who sprang from the ancient Viscounts of that name and country.<sup>c</sup>

The early members of this family took an active part in favor of the Reformers, John Huss, and Jerome of Prague; and even after the burning of the former in 1415 they still adhered, like the rest of his followers, to their master's doctrines, and engaged with John Zioka, a Bohemian knight, in 1420 (who put himself at the head of the Hussites) in throwing off the despotic yoke of Sigismund who had treated some of their brethren in the most barbarous manner. For their religious opinions the Felyps suffered severely both in person and property, being finally compelled to fly, for better security, to Bolsward in East Friesland.<sup>d</sup> From MSS. in the hand-writing of the late Hon. John Jay (himself a descendant of Eva Philipse, while his wife, Sarah Livingston, was a grand-daughter of Annetye Philipse) we learn "that the first ancestor of this family who settled in this country was Frederick Flypson, and that he was a native of Bohemia, where his family, being Protestants, were persecuted. His mother, becoming a widow, was constrained to quit Bohemia with him and her other children.<sup>e</sup> She fled to Holland with what little property she could save from the wreck of their estate. The amount of that little not admitting her to provide better for Frederick, she bound him to a carpenter, and he became an excellent workman.

<sup>a</sup> Mem. of Philipse family, from MSS. in hand-writing of John Jay. Miscellaneous works by Gen. De Peyster, p. 117.

<sup>b</sup> Mem. of Long Island Hist. Soc. vol. I., Journal of a voyage to New York in 16741-680, Brooklyn, 1867.

<sup>c</sup> The noble descent of this ancient family is not only based on tradition, but amply established by their coat armor, which was borne by them long before the modern assumption of arms, when imposition in this respect was well nigh impossible, and when, if had been practicable, no such parvenu opinions existed with regard to their value. Let those who differ from us prove anything to the contrary.—[Editor.] In the Hall of Records, Amsterdam, Holland, is registered the following coat of arms belonging to the Philipse family: "Az a demi lion rampant, rising out of a ducal coronet ar, surmounted by a ducal coronet or." The crest as borne both by the English and American families is "a demi lion rampant rising out of a Viscount's coronet ar, surmounted by a ducal coronet or."

<sup>d</sup> Burke's Hist. of Landed Gentry of Great Britain.

<sup>e</sup> This partly agrees with a statement made by Miss Susan Robinson in the Philipse MSS. that Frederick, who first came to this country had an only brother named Adolphus.

He emigrated to New York, which was then under the Dutch government, but in what year I am not informed."<sup>a</sup> "Being a man of talent and enterprise he quitted his trade and became a successful merchant."

According to another account the Philipse on leaving, "brought all their servants, furniture and all their property with the consent of their Prince from Germany, which, at that time all must do, unless their names had been disgraced. Some years ago the pass that was given, written on parchment and sealed with the Royal arms, was in possession of the family in this country." The same account adds "that General Redhesel had seen the parchment that had been given by the Prince as his leave to quit the German dominions and he said he must have been a man in high favor with him to have leave and to bring all his effects away likewise"—MSS. relating to Pedigree of the Philipse family belonging to the late Frederick Philipse of Philips town, Putnam County, New York.

The Christian name Vreedryk<sup>b</sup> is of Dutch origin and means literally "peace rich," or "rich in peace,"<sup>c</sup> in allusion probably to the bitter sufferings of former days, as well as the present enjoyment of religious peace. The surname Felypsen is a patronymic from Philip—the F for the PH, and the ij for the single Y; hence the English substitute, Frederick Philipse, which at an early period became the adopted name of the family, the Dutch termination *se* or *sen*, meaning in English son. Vrederyck therefore the son of Felyp. Besides their high rank as nobles, they appear also to have held the office of Grand Veneurs, or keepers of the deer forests in Bohemia; as there is still preserved in the family the collar and badge of office, consisting of a gold chain set with amethysts, diamonds, rubies and emeralds to which was suspended a deer beautifully chased in gold.<sup>d</sup>

In what year Frederick Philipse left Friesland does not appear; but it was not in 1658, as some accounts state, for he was in New Amsterdam in 1653, when we find him named as an appraiser of a house and lot of Augustine Hermans in that city. If he came over with Governor Stuyvesant, as it is asserted and as it is not impossible, then he arrived here in May, 1647.<sup>e</sup> But soon after his arrival, whenever that occurred,

<sup>a</sup> Mem. of the Philipse family from MSS. in hand-writing of John Jay, Miscel. works of Gen. De Peyster.

<sup>b</sup> Vrederyck Felypsen is equivalent to Frederyk Flypsen.

<sup>c</sup> In German, peace is *friede* and rich is *reich*; the compound therefore in that language would be *Friedreich*.

<sup>d</sup> This badge of office was last seen in possession of Miss Susan Robinson, sister of Col. Beverly Robinson.

<sup>e</sup> Mem. of the Long Island Hist. Soc., vol. I, Journal of a voyage to New York in 1674-80., Brooklyn, 1867. The above account represents Philipse "as a carpenter by trade and worked as such at first for Gov. Stuyvesant." If this be correct it had nothing to do with his early origin.—[Editor.

he purchased a large estate, and shortly became one of the wealthiest merchants of New Amsterdam. On the 9th of February, 1658, Governor Stuyvesant granted certain lots within the city of New Amsterdam to Frederick Philipse, which were subsequently confirmed to him by the Governor on the 12th of April, 1667. On the 21st of October, 1664 he took the oath of allegiance as a British subject. In the general tax list of 1674, raised by the Dutch, on their re-conquest of the city and province, we find the estate of Frederick Philipse assessed at 80,000 guilders, "an amount large in those days and yet small compared with his subsequent wealth."<sup>a</sup> He became the largest trader with the five nations at Albany, sent ships to both East and West Indies, imported slaves from Africa and engaged, as it was with good reason alleged, in trade with the pirates of Madagascar. His gains and profits were much enhanced, it was believed, by his intimacy with the governors, by which he obtained immunities not granted to others. He was a member of the Council under all the Governors, from Andros to Bellamont, embracing an uninterrupted period of twenty years, with the exception of the brief usurpation of Leisler. When the latter event occurred he was, in conjunction with Stephen Van Cortlandt, left in charge of the government by Lieutenant-Governor Nicholson. After resisting for a few days the proceedings of Leisler, as became his position, he wisely, when the public sentiment pronounced itself in favor of them, submitted to them as the acts of the government *de facto*, much to the chagrin of Bayard and his associates. He was subsequently clothed by Governor Sloughter,<sup>b</sup> with similar powers, in conjunction with Nicholas Bayard during the absence of that Governor at Albany. He had the ear of Fletcher, who bestowed upon him and his son, Adolphus, extravagant grants of land. When the Leisler party came into power under Bellamont in 1698, he resigned his seat in the Council, in consequence, as he alleged, of his advanced age, which was the seventy-second, though in reality it would seem, to avoid, if possible, the blow which was already given in an order for his removal by the home government, on account of his practices with the pirates, an order which occurred a few weeks after his resignation." In 1680, he acquired, as we have already seen, a piece of land lying on both sides of the Pocantico or Mill River, from the Indian sachem Ghoharius and others, the title to which was confirmed by Royal Patent the same year from Governor Andros. Upon the west bank of the Pocantico, Philipse subsequently erected his first

<sup>a</sup> Mem. of Long Island Hist., Soc., vol. I, as above.

<sup>b</sup> Upon the arrival of Henry Sloughter as governor of the province, on the 19th of March, 1691, we find the following members present at a council meeting, holden the same day, viz., Joseph Dudley, Frederick Philipse, Stephen van Cortlandt, Gabriel Monville, Chudley Brooke, Thomas Willet, and William Pinhorne.

manorial residence, "which on account of its great strength and armament was styled 'Castle Philipse.' There the first lord of the manor lived in rugged fuedal style until the lower manor house was built at Yonkers."

In the assize records at Albany, occurs "a pass to Frederick Philipse, to put on board the sloop called ye Cock 250 schepels of wheat, to be carried to Milford Mill to be ground," &c.

"Permit and suffer Frederick Philipse to land on board the sloop ye Cock 250 schepels of wheat, to be carried to ye mill at Milford for his conveniency of having it ye sooner ground for his occasions, he engaging that the floure and meale thereof shall be brought back to this place. Given under my hand at Fort James, in New Yorke, the 22d day of April, 1671.

To ye officers of ye customs,  
or whom else this may concern."

The annexed items are taken from the family ledger of the Philipse's:

1680, John Reyder is debett,		[Pr Contra is Credytt,	
According to accounte de-		To a house and	
lijwered, £3956:2 yn	£791:16	lot yn hollans,	£2250
wampum, Com in hol-		To som petyoy-	
lans,		ans, left yn the	
To the Sherryf, a byll of		house,	40
Exchange yn hollans,	1500:—		
Apoyt 20 Toyn Sylver,			2290:00
payd £5:0:0 Com'r,			
Hollans, " "	50—	Rest due To me	
To 110 pieces of fryer		pr ballins,	0054:00
wood wyth Cartyng	3:4		
			£2344:00
Nyew Yorck, thys the 21	£2344:00		
day of September, Anno.			
1680	FREDRYCK FLYPSEN.		

The following note occurs among some old documents endorsed Van Fredrich Philipse:

Net Bockmaster, New York the 3 Augst, 1694,  
I have sacket to pay you'n de sume  
Of sich pount twellef shilling voor  
partt of Elyas Pudington  
fogge £6—12—0.

FREDRYCK FLYPSE.

Margaret his first wife was the daughter of Adoloph Hardenbrook, who came from Ervervelt in Holland and settled at Bergen opposite New Amsterdam. She married Peter Rudolphus De Vries a merchant



trader of New Amsterdam in 1659, and had by him one child, a daughter, baptized Oct. 3d, 1660. Rudolphus died in 1661, leaving a considerable estate, which by law, devolved upon his widow and child with a community of interest when the Court of Orphan Masters of New Amsterdam summoned her before them, to render an inventory of her child's paternal inheritance. This she declared she was unable to do, probably in consequence of the commercial character of the assets; whereupon she received the anti-nuptial contract between her and Frederick Philipse in lieu of the inventory, in consequence of its embodying an agreement on his part to adopt the child of Rudolphus as his own, and to bequeath her one half of his estate, unless he had children born to himself, and in that case to give her a share equally with them. Adoption was permitted by the laws, and also the limitation of successory estates by marriage contracts; and the child thus, in legal intendment, became the child of Frederick Philipse upon the consummation of the marriage in December following." "In October, 1662, bans of marriage between Frederick Philipse and Margaret Hardenbrook were published. In the baptismal record the name of the child is written, Maria. This may have been, and probably was, an error of the registrar; certain it is, that Frederick Philipse, by his will," as we shall see by and by, "made provision for a child, which he called his oldest daughter, named Eva, who was not his child by marriage, as it seems, and he makes no provision for Maria, as he was bound to do by his marriage contract, unless it be that for Eva. The conclusion, therefore, seems irresistible, that Eva and Maria were one and the same person." "It is not certain when Margaret Hardenbrook died, though it was not in 1662, as strangely stated by some, for this was the year of her marriage with Frederick Philipse. She was alive and a passenger on the ship with our travelers in 1679, but she must have died before 1692, when Frederick Philipse espoused Catharine Van Cortlandt, widow of John Derval and daughter of Oloff Van Cortlandt, for his second wife."<sup>a</sup>

By his second marriage, Frederick Philipse had no children. By his first wife, Margaret Hardenbrook, he had issue Philip Philipse, baptized March 18, 1664, who pre-deceased his father; Adolphus, baptized Nov. 15th, 1665, Annetge, baptized Nov. 27, 1667, and Rombout, baptized Jan. 9, 1670. The latter probably died in infancy, as his name does not occur in the will of his father.

Frederick Philipse, first lord of the manor of Philipsburgh, died on

<sup>a</sup> Mem. of Long Island Hist. Soc., vol. I., Journal of voyage to New York, 1679-80, Brooklyn, 1867. Frederick Philipse and Margaret, his wife, who was the acknowledged owner and supercargo of the Charles, and was with her daughter, Annetge, a fellow passenger of our travelers in that ship on the voyage to New York in 1679.

the 6th of November, 1702, in the 77th year of his age. His wife thus records his death in the family Bible, "Anno 1702, the 6th of November, Sunday night at 10 o'clock, my husband, Frederick Philipse died, and lies buried in the *church yard in the manor named Philipsburgh.*"<sup>a</sup>



Coat of Arms and Signatures of the Founders of Sleepy Hollow Church.

#### THE LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF FREDERICK FLIPSE.

In the name of God, amen. I Frederick Flipse of ye city of New York being in health of body and of sounde and perfect memory, thanks be to Almighty God, doe make and declare this to be my last Will and Testament in manner and forme following Revoking and Annulling all former Wills and Testaments by me made either by word or writing. First, I surrender and bequeath my soul into ye mercyfull hands of ye infinite God who gave it, and I order my body to be interred at my buriall place at ye upper mills with such charges and in such decent manner as to my executors, herein after named, shall seem concient; and as touching and disposing of my lands, tenements, hereditaments, goods, chattels and credittes I will, devise and dispose of them as follows: I give, grant, de-

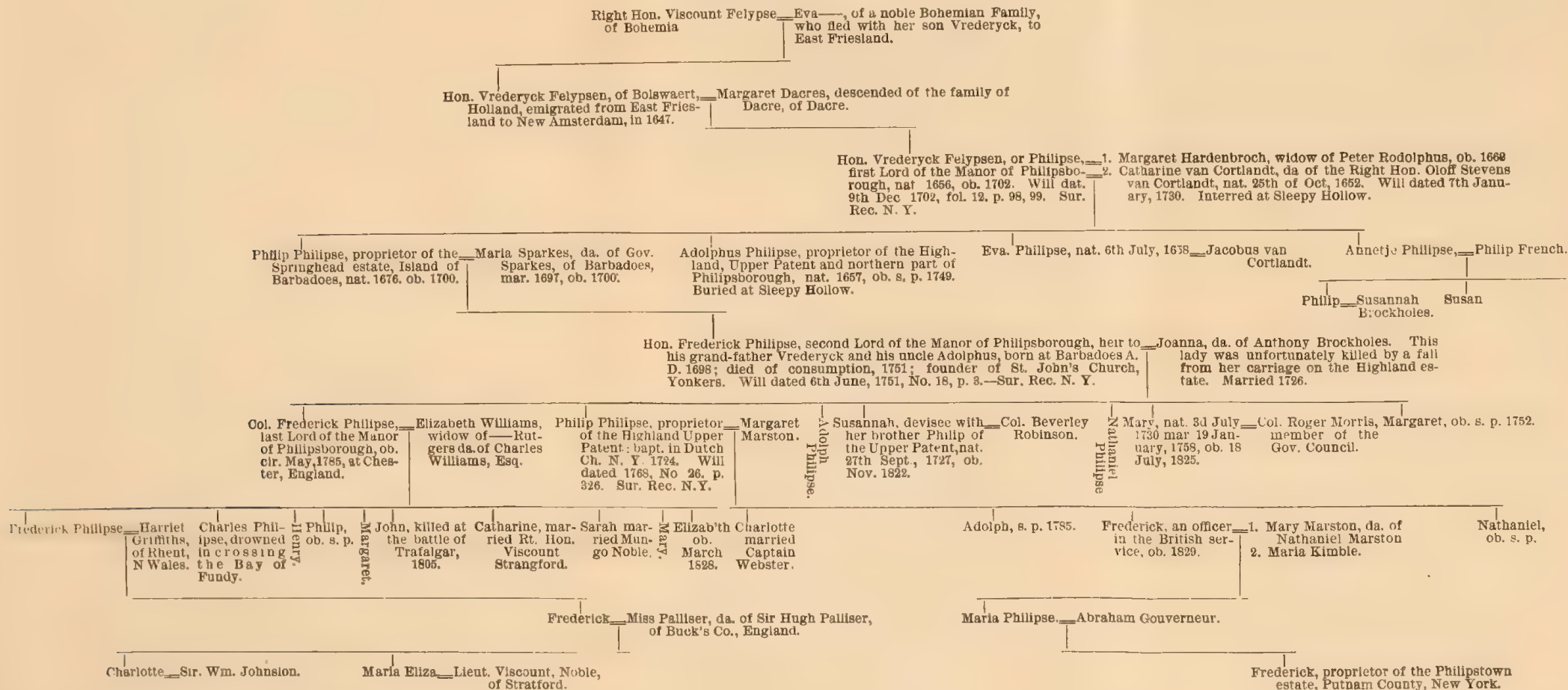
<sup>a</sup> Copied from the Bible of Catharine Van Cortlandt now in possession of Gen. J. Watts De Peyster, of New York.

wise and bequeath to Frederick Flipse, my grandson, born in Barbadoes, ye only son of Philip my eldest son late deeed ye following houses and tenements in ye city of New York (to wit) that dwelling house, with the appurtenances I now live in with ye house called ye Bolting house as also thirt house down to ye said dwelling house and ye ground adjoining soe farr as ye Leanto stands and soe farr as ye Gavell end of ye old kittchin and ye fence of ye widow Dekey and also a warehouse called ye midie warehouse and ye ground behinde it ye breadth of ye same warehouse towards ye New street and so extend in length to ye Broad street ye same ground lying there in breadth between my coopers house and ye ground of Isaac Kipp and all those two dwelling houses and lotts of ground with their appurtenances lying and being near ye old Slaat house at present in ye tenure of Mrs. Carree and Mr. Droylett and also those lands, tenements and hereditaments in the County of Westchester (to wit) that island called Papirini-man, with the meadows and bridge and toll and all ye right and title I leave to ye same, and all those lands and meadows called ye Yoncker's Plantation together with all and singular ye houses, mills, mill dams, orchards, gardens, negroes, negroes children, cattle, horses, swine and whatsoever else belongs to mee within that Patent as well what is tenanted, as nott, as also a piece of land in the Mille Square by mee late bought of Michael Hawdon and all that tract or piece of land extending from the Yonckers patent or Plantation to a creek called by ye Indians, Wysquaqua, and by the Christians, William Portugee's creek, and thence according to ye course of that creek into ye woods to ye head of the same and from thence on an east line to the creek called ye Yonckers creek, and then to continue on the same course to Bronk's river and as far as my right extends, as also all that ye equal half of my meadow lying at Tappan with ye rights, hereditaments, emoluments and appurtenances to ye same and all ye other estate herein before given and devised belonging or in any wise appertaining to have and to hold all ye said reall estate, tenements and hereditaments, with ye appurtenances herein before given and devised to ye said Frederick Flipse, my grandson, and ye heirs male of his body lawfully to be begotten; and for lack of such issue ye remainder thereof to my son, Adolphus Flipse, and ye heirs male of his body lawfully to be begotten and for lack of such issue to ye next right heirs of mee ye said Frederick Flipse, ye grandfather, forever.

Item, I give and devise and bequeath to my said grandson, Frederick Flipse, besides ye negroes at ye Yoncker's Plantation herein before given and devised him a negroe man called Harry with his wife and child, a negroe man called Peter, a negroe man called Wan, ye boat Yoncker with her furniture apparel and appurtenances and ye equall half of all ye cattle, horses and sheep upon and belonging to ye plantation at ye upper Mill. To have and to hold all ye said negroes and ye said personall estate to him his heirs, executors and assignees forever. Item, I give and bequeath to my said grandson, his executors and assignees for ever an equall fourth part of all shippes, vessells, money, plate, goods, merchandise, debts, and personall estate whatsoever which shall belong to mee at ye time of my decease; my Debts and ye particular legacy's in this my will given, being first satisfied and discharged, provided always and I do hereby declare it my will, mind, and true meaning that I give ye lands, hereditaments and their appurtenances, extending from ye Yonckers Plantation to William Portugee's creek, and so to Bronck's River, to my said grandson with this re-

PEDIGREE OF PHILIPSE, PHILIPSBOROUGH.

Arms. az. a demi lion rampant, rising out of a ducal coronet ar, surmounted by a ducal coronet, or. Crest, a demi lion rampant rising out of a Viscount's coronet ar, surmounted by a ducal coronet, or.  
Motto.—*Quod tibi vis fieri facias.*







striction and condition that it is in lew of a tract called Cintquesingte, purchased by mee and intended to be given to his father, my eldest son, soe that if at any time hereafter ye said Frederick Flipse, my grandson, shall claime and recover this tract of land called Cintquesingte, then it is my will and devise that ye tract of land and appurtenances extending from ye Yonckers Plantation to Portuguee's creek before described, shall devolve unto and be vested in my said son, Adolphus his heirs and assignes forever, and I give, devise and bequeath unto my son, Adolphus Flipse, ye following house and tenements in ye city of New York (to witt) that house and ground that Isaac Marque at present lives in with ye right appurtenances to ye same belonging, and a house in ye Stone street next Isaac De Forrests with an old house formerly belonging to John Rider soe farr as to ye Leanto and ye Gavell end of ye old kittchin in length to ye fence of ye widow Dekay and in breadth to ye fence of Isaac Deforrest or soe farr as my right extends as also a house and lott of ground adjoining ye house I live in ; stretching in breadth to ye house of Annake Gomers and in length to ye house of Mr. Anthony Brocholes and also a house and ground lying in ye Broad street by ye ground of Jacobus Kipp with a warehouse in ye New street and ye ground between upon a straight line from ye south corner of ye warehouse to ye south corner of that house (to witt) from ye one street to ye other, as also those lands, tenements and hereditaments in ye County of Westchester (to witt) all that tract of land lying at ye upper Mills, beginning at a creek called by ye Indians Wysquaquas, and by ye Christians, William Portuguee's creek being ye bound of ye lands given hereby to my grandson, and so running up Hudson's River to ye creek called Wegheandagh, whereon is built two grist mills, and from thence along ye said river to a creek called Kightawan, or Croton River soe along that river or creek, according to ye patent, then on an east line into ye woods as far as Bronck's river thence to ye head of that river and along Bronck's river according to its to ye lands herein before devised to my grandson aforesaid, as also ye moyety or equall half of a saw-mill with its appurtenances att Mamaroneck, late by me purchased of Dr. Selimus, and also all that ye one full moyety or equall half of ye meadow at Tappan by mee purchased of Dr. George Lockhart and all that piece of meadow on ye north side of Tappan creek containing in quantity as is exprest in ye patent for ye same. Together with all and singular houses, mills, mill dams, meadows, orchards, gardens, rights, hereditaments, emoluments and appurtenances to ye estate herein before given and devised belonging or in any wise appertaining to have and to hold ye said houses, tenements and hereditaments with their appurtenances to ye said Adolphus, my son, and ye heirs maile of his body lawfully to be begotten and for lack of such issue to my grandson, Frederick Flipse, and ye heirs male of his body lawfully to be begotten and for lack of such issue to ye next right heirs of mee ye said Frederick Flipse ye father for ever. Item, I give and bequeath to my said son, Adolphus Flipse, these negroes and slaves following (to witt), ye negro men called Symond, Charles, Towerhill, Samson, Claes, Billy, Mingo, Hendrick, Bahynne and Hector, ye negro boy, Peter, ye Indian woman called Hannah and her child, ye negro woman, Susan, ye younger and ye negroe woman, Mary. To have and to hold ye said negroes and slaves to my said son, Adolphus, his heirs and assignees for ever. Then I will and order that ye negroe woman, old Susan, shall dwell and continue in plantation at ye upper mills soe long as she lives. Item, I give and bequeath to my son,

Adolphus, aforesaid his executors and assignees for ever ye other equall half of all ye cattle, horses and sheep upon and belonging to ye plantation at ye upper Mills a large boat called ye Unity with her furniture apparell and appurtenances, late by mee bought of Dan Desmaretz, and an equall fourth part of all ye shippes, vessels, money, plate, goods, merchandize, debts, and personall estate whatsoever which shall belong to me at ye time of my decease, my debts and ye particular legacies in this my will mentioned being first paid and satisfied. And I do give, devise and bequeath to my eldest daughter, Eva, the wife of Jacobus Van Cortlandt, the house and ground with ye appurtenances in ye city of New Yorke where they at present live in with all ye right and interest that I have or ever had in and to ye same as also a lott of ground with its appurtenances in ye same city in ye that to the southward of ye old warehouse as it lyes at present inclosed and fenced and by me is owned and possesseth, and an equall fourth part of all ye shippes, vessels, money, plate, goods, merchandise, debts and personall estate, whatsoever which shall belong to mee at ye time of my decease, my debts and the particulars legacies in this my will expressed being first satisfied and paid as aforesaid. To have and to hold ye said houses, tenements and premises to ye said Eva, my daughter, for and during her naturall life, ye remainder after her decease to ye second son of her body to be begotten his, heirs and assignees for ever, but for lack of such issues then ye remainder after her decease to her son Frederick Cortlandt and his heirs and assignes for ever. Item, I doe give, devise and bequeath to my said daughter, Eva, her heirs, executors and assignes forever a certaine morgage of Dr. Henricus Selyns upon ye land of John Richbell, deceased, twenty miles into ye woods with this proviso and exception not to extend over Bronx's river into any of ye land herein devised to my son or grandson. And I do give, devise and bequeath to my daughter, Anneke ye wife of Philip French, that house and ground with ye appurtenance in ye city of New Yorke where they at present live in, as also ye old warehouse and ground thereunto belonging with ye appurtenances in ye same city lying in ye New street and all that my estate of land and the appurtenances in ye County of Berghen in East Jersey (to witt), in ye town of Berghen, a large garden and plantation of fifteen acres of land with eight moeyen or about sixteen acres garden ground and ye right and priviledge in the undivided wood lands of two farms and ye plantation and all those my lands in ye County of Ulster (to witt) a peace of land att Monbachus containing about two hundred and ninety acres, and a peace of land at ye Rondout creek morgaged to mee by John Ward containing about seaven hundred acres, as also after my wife's decease, that lott of ground with its appurtenances in ye city of New Yorke, extending from ye Broadway to ye New street, lying between ye ground late of Robert White, deceased, and within the clock buyer with ye rights hereditaments and appurtenances to all and singular ye premises belonging or in any wise appertaining. Further, I give and bequeath unto Anneke, my said daughter, an equale fourth part of all ye shippes, vessels, money, plate, goods, merchandise, debts and personale estate, whatsoever which shall be found to belong to mee at ye time of my decease my debts and ye particular Legacy in this my will bequeathed being first discharged and satisfied as aforesaid. To have and to hold ye said houses, land and premises to ye said Anneke, my daughter, for and during her naturall life ye remainder after her decease to ye second son of her body to be begotten, his heirs and as-

signes for ever, but for lack of such issue to her son, Philip French, his heirs and assignes for ever, and I doe will order devise and bequeath, that my beloved wife, Catharine, shall have during her naturall life fifty pounds current money of New Yorke pr annum to be paid her out of ye proffitts of my Reall Estate, and that five and twenty pounds thereof pr annum shall be charged and levyed in nature of a Rent charge upon my estate at ye Yonckers devised hereby to my grandson, Frederick Flypse, and ye other five and twenty pounds per annum in ye same manner upon my estate and plantation at ye upper Mills, hereby devise to my son, Adolphus Flipse, and that she, my wife, shall remaine and continue to do in ye house I now live in, and shall have and receive ye money I have engaged and promist her according to our agreement before and upon our marriage preferable to all legacy and payments whatsoever. Item, I will and devise to my said wife, during her naturall life, that lott of ground with ye appurtenances in ye city of New York extending from ye Broadway to ye New Street lyeing between ye ground late of Robert White, deceased, and William ye Clockbuyer, and I do will, order, determine and direct that my said wife shall have ye custody, tuition and guardianship of my grandson, Frederick Flipse, and his estate to his use until he comes to ye age of one and twenty years, who I desire may have ye best education and learning these parts of ye world will afford him not doubting of her care in bringing him up after ye best manner possibly shee can. Lastly, I do make, appoint and ordaine my said son, Adolphus Flipse, and my son-in-law, Jacobus Van Cortlandt, executors of this my last will and testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand and seale this 26th day of October, anno dom, 1700.

FREDEICK FLIPSE. (S)

Signed, sealed and declared in ye presence of ye underwritten witnesses who also in ye presence of ye Testator have subscribed their names, Isaac de fforeest, Olof Van Cortlandt, Philip Van Cortlandt, W. Nicoll, New York, Dec. 9th, 1702. Then personally came before me Edward Viscount Cornbury, Captain General and Governor-in-chief of New York, Ed. William Nicoll, Oloff Van Cortlandt and Philip Van Cortlandt, witnesses, who have subscribed their names to ye within will and made oath upon ye holy Evangelists of Almighty God that they saw ye within named ffrederick fflipse sign, seale and declare ye same will and testament and that at ye time thereof he was of sound mind and memory to ye best of their knowledge, Jurat Coram me

CORNBURY.

New York, December 9th, 1702, Jacobus Van Cortlandt, one of ye within named executors was duly sworne to ye executor of ye within, Jurat Coram me,

CORNBURY.<sup>a</sup>

Philip Philipse, the eldest son of the above testator was born in New York, 1663, and baptized the 18th of March, 1664. From all accounts this individual appears to have been in his youth very wild and gay, and possessed withal of a very delicate constitution, which induced his father to send him to the Island of Barbadoes to look after his property there consisting of a plantation called Penus.<sup>b</sup> Here in 1697 he mar-

<sup>a</sup> Rec. of Wells Surrogates office, N. Y., 1702 to 1712, pp. 101, 105. The above will was proved 9th Dec., 1702.

<sup>b</sup> Philipse MSS. in possession of the late Frederick Philipse Philipstown, Putnam County, New York.



ried Maria Sparks, daughter of the Governor of Barbadoes, who died immediately after the birth of her only child Frederick Philipse in 1698. Philip Philipse did not long survive his wife, dying on the Springhead plantation, Barbadoes in 1700 aged, only thirty-seven. Mr. Philip Philipse's mother had been a Miss Joyce Farmer. . Mrs. Sparks brother, Mr. Farmer, took his wife with him and went to the West Indies, and (on his niece's marriage to Philipse) they resided for some time together. Mr. Farmer had no children of his own,<sup>a</sup> which induced them to take charge of the young orphan, Frederick. Old Mr. Frederick Philipse was so shocked at the death of his eldest son, Philip, that he immediately sent for his grandson to New York. This gave great offence to the child's uncle and aunt, Farmer, who had set their heart on the child; so that although they were very rich they only left him £10,000 in cash and the Springhead plantation, which was afterwards sold to a party named Osbourne.<sup>b</sup>

By the will of Frederick Philipse all that portion of the manor of Philipsburgh north of Dobb's Ferry, including the present town became vested in Adolphus or Adolph Philipse, second son of the Testator. This individual was also proprietor of the Great Highland patent, which included all of the present county of Putnam, granted on the 17th of June, 1697; and the executor of his brother, Philip Philipse's estate, letters of administration having been granted to him in that capacity on the 22d of December, 1714.<sup>c</sup> Adolphus Philipse was born in New York in the year 1665. On the rumor that the French were about to attack Albany, he was sent in 1691 to Connecticut to demand assistance from that Colony. He was called to the Council on the 7th of February, 1704-5, and in 1718 was appointed one of the commissioners for running the boundary line between Connecticut and New York. In 1721 he was removed from the Council, on the representation of Gov. Burnet, for opposing the continuance of the Assembly after his Excellency's arrival.<sup>d</sup> In the following year he was elected to represent the County of Westchester in the assembly, and 1725 was chosen speaker. At the ensuing election in 1726, Mr. Philipse was returned one of the four members for the city of New York, again elected speaker and filled that chair until 1737. At the general election that year, however, he lost his seat; but Gerrit Van Horne, one of the members elect for the city dying soon

<sup>a</sup> Burke's Hist. of Landed Gentry of Great Britain. Another daughter of Gov. Sparks married a Colonel Fullerton, an only son and a man of large property in Scotland. Another daughter of the Governor remained unmarried. When Gov. Sparks went to Barbadoes his wife had delicate health and remained at his estate, Worcestershire, and kept her two youngest daughters with her. The other two accompanied their father. *Philipse's MSS.*

<sup>b</sup> Philipse MSS. in possession of the late Frederick Philipse of Philipstown.

<sup>c</sup> New York Surrogates office Rec., Well's No. vii, 286.

<sup>d</sup> Council Minutes, VI., 34.

after, an election was held to fill the vacancy, and in September Mr. Philipse was declared to be chosen. A great clamor ensued, Sheriff Cosby was accused of having committed the most barefaced villainy in returning him, and the matter was brought before the House by petition. After a month's scrutiny, Mr. Philipse was declared member.<sup>a</sup> Mr. Philipse was re-elected speaker in 1739, and occupied that office until 1745.<sup>b</sup> He died a bachelor in January, 1750, in the 85th year of his age,<sup>c</sup> and was buried in the family vault at Sleepy Hollow, leaving his immense property to be divided equally between his grand-nephew and grand-nieces, viz., Philip Philipse, Susannah Robinson, Mary Morris and Margaret Philipse; the latter dying under age in 1752, her share was divided among the other three. Adolphus Philipse "was a man," says John Jay, "of superior talents, well educated, sedate, highly respected and popular; and except that he was penurious, I have heard nothing to his disadvantage."<sup>d</sup>

The following inventory of money, plate jewels, and household furniture, &c., &c., belonging to the manor house, which was taken in 1752 (after the death of Adolph Philipse,) affords a curious specimen of the habits and tastes of a gentleman at that early period. It is transcribed from the original, preserved among the family papers of Philipstown, Putnam County, entitled:

*A old acc't by Jos. Read, Administrator of Adolph Philipse.*

Dr. the estate of Fred. Philipse, Esq., dec. to Jos. Read, against estate of Fred. Philipse.

1749, Jan'y 25,—

To 1 Boston shilling and 1 lead meddal.....	£0	1	2	
1 cask of apples.....	0	6	0	
1-3 of a ps. broad cloth qt. 10 yards <i>a</i> 20s,	10	0	0	
1 steel or iron tobacco box.....	0	2	0	10 9 2

1750, April 6,—

To 1-8th pt. of cloth, &c., divided among the relations.....	4	0	0	
11 bottles of wine, &c., &c., a small jug with ink.....	1	3	6	
	5	3	6	

1750, May 8,—

To the picture of Mr. Adolph.....	6	0	0	
-----------------------------------	---	---	---	--

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. Doc. Col. MSS., vol. vi, p. 56.—[Editor's notes.]

<sup>b</sup> Journal I. 710, 717, 750, II 2.

<sup>c</sup> N. Y. Doc. Col. MSS. vol. vi, p. 56.—[Editor's notes.]

<sup>d</sup> De Peyster's Genealogy, 118, N. Y. Doc. Col. MSS., vol. vi, p. 56.—[Editor's note.]

<sup>e</sup> This picture is still preserved at Philipstown.

1750, May 20,—

To a razor strap with silver.....	0	6	0	
1 silver tankard, wt. 26oz. 10p. 0gr. at 9s.				
6d. pr. ounce.....	12	11	9	
1 ditto, wt. 23oz. 14p. 12gr. at 10s. 6d....	12	9	1 $\frac{1}{2}$	
1 ditto shaving basin and box, wt. 21oz.				
15p. at 10s. 6d. pr. oz.....	11	8	4 $\frac{1}{2}$	
1 ditto tooth case pick .....	0	13	3	
12 ditto spoons, wt. 23oz. 14p. 12gr. at 10s.				
3d. per ounce .....	12	3	2	
6 ditto, wt. 9oz. 15p. at 9s. 3d.....	4	10	2 $\frac{1}{4}$	
3 ditto, " 3 10 " " " .....	1	12	4 $\frac{1}{2}$	
1 ditto beker, wt. 7oz. 8p. at 9s. 9d. pr. oz.	3	12	1 $\frac{3}{4}$	
1 ditto cup, wt. 2oz. 13p. 12gr. at 9s. 9d.				
pr. oz. ....	1	6	1	
6 ditto tea spoons, wt. 1oz. 19p. at 12s. 3d.				
pr. oz.....	1	3	10 $\frac{3}{4}$	
1 reading glass with a silver rim.....	1	4	0	
1 deer's foot tipt with gold .....	0	11	3	
1 black box with a ps. gold and a ps. sil-				
ver.....	3	15	0	
A parcell of gold beads and pearl, wt. 2oz.				
14p. at 6l. 4s.....	16	14	10	
2 trunks.....	0	6	0	
$\frac{1}{8}$ pt. of a parcell homspun and parcell				
linnen.....	1	13	0	
$\frac{1}{8}$ pt. of a parcell wampum valued at £40.	6	6	6	
$\frac{1}{8}$ pt. of 236oz. 9p. 12gr. silver pigs, valued				
by A. B.....	11	11	6	
4 Arabian ps. gold .....	2	16	0	106 7 11 $\frac{1}{4}$
	85	11	5	

To sundrys bought at public vendue in March,  
1749-50, as per acct. ....To ditto at the manor of Philipsburgh in April,  
1750, as per acct.....

534 16 11 620 8 4

November 25.—

To John Chambers, Esq., pr. assignn for a  
sadle and bridle 54s. 8d., a pr. pistols capt  
with silver 82s., bo't at vendue and paid  
s'd Philipse.....

6 16 0

1752, July 16.—

To Jas. Read for sundreys bo't in co. at ven-  
due as per acct here enclosed.....

10 7 2

17 3 2

 $\frac{1}{8}$  pt. of a parcell whetstones divided among  
the relations, supposed to be worth 20s

0 2 6

Philip Philipse, pr. assignm't, for 2 ps. linnen bo't at vendue 23 March, 1749- 50.....	1 17 6		
492 bushels wheat rec'd by Elbert Aartsen for rent due to Adolph Philipse, which ball. Philipse sold to Johanis Schank at 4s. per bushel .....	98 8 0		
a field of green wheat of ab't 8 bushels sewing which by the opinion of Mr. Wm. Curry, belonged to the personal estate of Adolph Philipse.....	8 0 0		
a bolting box reel and bolting cloath valu- ed by E. Byvanck.....	6 10 0	112 18 0	
	£880 1 0		

Errors E.

JAS. READ,

Estate of Mr.

The daughters of Frederick Philipse and Margaret Hardenbrook were: Eva, born in September, 1660, and baptized 3d of October, following who married Jacobus Van Cortlandt from whom descend the Van Cortlandts of Yonkers and the Jays, of Rye and Bedford. Annetje, the second daughter, married Philip French, originally of Kelsale, Suffolk County, England, where his family were extensive land-holders. He died in 1707 leaving issue a son, Philip French (by a second wife), who married Sussanah Brockholst, and five daughters; the eldest of whom was Susan who married William Livingston, Governor of New Jersey, whose daughter, Sarah, married the Hon. John Jay. Philip French, the third of that name died unmarried.

By the death of Adolph Philipse the whole manor of Philipsburgh became vested in his nephew, the Hon. Frederick Philipse, as the nearest male heir of his grandfather, Frederick. This distinguished personage was born upon the Springhead estate, island of Barbadoes, A.D. 1698. From 1721 to 1728 he filled the office of speaker to the House of Assembly in the province of New York, and in 1733 was Baron of the Exchequer, and third Judge of the Supreme Court—an office which he held until the day of his death. He also founded St. John's church, Yonkers, and liberally endowed it with a valuable glebe. The Council of New York addressing the Duke of New Castle on December 13th, 1733, thus alludes to him "as a very worthy gentleman of plentiful fortune and good education, third Judge of the Supreme Court."<sup>a</sup> The Hon. Frederick Philipse married in 1726 Joanna, daughter of Governor

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. Doc. Col. MSS. vol. v, p. 982.



Anthony Brockholst<sup>a</sup> (who was descended of a very ancient family, originally of Brockholls, which have been seated at Claughton Hall in Lancashire, England, for many centuries) by his wife Susanna Maria Schaack of Pompton, New Jersey. Mrs. Philipse was unfortunately killed by a fall from her carriage on the Highland estate. The Hon. Frederick Philipse died just three days before the opening of the Supreme Court<sup>b</sup> on the 26th of July, 1751, and was buried in the family vault in the Dutch church at Sleepy Hollow on the 28th of the same month. His will bears date the 6th day of June, 1751.<sup>c</sup> The following notice of his death appeared in the New York *Gazette*, for July 29th, 1751: "New York, July 29th, last Friday evening, departed this life in the 56th year of his age, the Honorable Frederick Philipse, Esq., one of his Majesty's Justices of the Supreme Court of this Province, and a Representative in our general Assembly for the County of Westchester. He was a gentleman conspicuous for an abundant Fortune; but it was not his wealth that constituted his Merit—his Indulgence and Tenderness to his tenants, his more than parental affection for his Children, and his incessant liberality to the Indigent, surpassed the splendor of his Estate; and procured him a more unfeigned regard than can be purchased with opulence, or gained by Interest. There were, perhaps, few men that even equalled him in those obliging and benevolent Manners, which, at the same time that they attracted the Love of his Inferiors, gained him all the respect and veneration due to his rank and station. That he was a Lover of his Country, is gloriously attested by his being repeatedly elected into the Assembly for the last twenty-seven years of his Life. He had a disposition extremely social, and was what few ever attain to be, *a good companion*. But what I have said of his character is far from being a finished Portrait, it is only a sketch of some few of his excellent Qualities; many features, I am sure, have escaped me, but I dare say that those I have attempted, are not set off with false colors, but drawn faithfully from the Life."

His two sons, by Joanna Brockholes, were Frederick and Philip; also

---

<sup>a</sup> Gov. Brockholst had been a colonel in the Guards and a great friend of James II. and a rigid Papist. When James abdicated the English Throne, he gave up his government and retired to Pompton with his wife, Susanna Maria Schaack, whose family had emigrated from West Friesland, Holland, about the same time that Frederick Philipse left that country. Their eldest daughter, Mary, was injured by a fall at the fort in New York. Anthony was the eldest; Susanna, the second daughter, married Philip French, son of Philip French by Annetje Philipse, daughter of Frederick Philipse, who had issue four daughters—a Philip French who died a bachelor, and a daughter was by a second wife. The four daughters of Philip French, by Susanna Brockholst were adopted by their aunt, Brockholst. One, Susanna, married Gov. Wm. Livingston. another married Mr. Van Horne; a third Mr. Clarkson of New Jersey; and a fourth married ——. Another daughter of Gov. Brockholst married Mr. Van Vaeck, but left no children; Joanna, another daughter, married, as we have seen, the richest man in the province of New York.

<sup>b</sup> N. Y. Doc. Col. MSS. vol. vi, 737.

<sup>c</sup> Surrogates office, N. Y., No. xviii, p. 8.

three daughters, Susannah, Mary and Margaret. The eldest son, Frederick Philipse being heir of his father, became devisee intail male of the manor in Philipsburgh, tenant for life, under the will of his father, with remainder intail male, while the upper Highland Patent of Philips-town passed to the second son, Philip devisee intail of those lands among whose descendants it still remains.

Frederick Philipse, the eldest son and last lord of the manor of Philipsburgh, was born in New York, 12th of September, 1720. He was educated at Kings College (now Columbia), New York, and became a most accomplished gentleman, and a person of considerable literary attainments. He was also an ardent Churchman, and a liberal benefactor. In fact, to his untiring efforts, under God, does St. John's parish, Yonkers, owe much of her present prosperity; it was through his generosity that the parochial church was erected, in 1752-3. He was elected a member of the Venerable Propagation Society in 1764, and his name appears among the list of vestrymen of Trinity Church, New York, from 1779 to 1782. He was also a member of the House of Assembly and held the commission of Colonel in the Provincial militia. "This Frederick," says the late Hon. John Jay, "I knew. He was a well-tempered, amiable man; and a kind, benevolent landlord. He had a taste for gardening planting, &c., and employed much time and money in that way. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Charles Williams, Esq. (an English gentleman, who held an office in the Custom House)," by his wife, Sarah Olivier. "She was a handsome, pleasing woman," born in New York, 5th of August, 1732, and married 9th Sept., 1756. Her first husband was ——— Rutgers. "At the commencement of our Revolution," continues Mr. Jay, "he, Frederick Philipse," was inclined to the Whigs, but was afterwards *persuaded* to favor the tories.<sup>a</sup> He was removed to Connecticut on his *parole*. Nothing could have been more favorable to him, circumstanced as he was, than to be placed in

---

<sup>a</sup> Sabine in his Biographical sketches of American loyalists, says of Frederick Philipse: "He occupied an elevated position in colonial society, but he does not appear to have been a prominent actor in public affairs. He was, however, a member of the House of Assembly, and held the commission of colonel in the militia. Nor does it seem that, though a friend of existing institutions, and an opposer of the Whigs, he was an active partisan. In April, 1775, he went to the ground appointed by the Whigs of Westchester county, to elect deputies to Congress, and declared, that he would not join in the business of the day; and, that his sole purpose in going there was to protest against their illegal and unconstitutional proceedings. On some other occasion he pursued a similar line of conduct, but his name is seldom met with in the documents of the time. Soon after 1771, Colonel David Humphreys, who subsequently became an aid to Washington, and under the Federal government, minister to Portugal and Spain, and who had just completed his studies at Yale College, became a resident in his family, then living on Philipse manor. The late President Dwight was well acquainted with him at this time, and speaks of him as "a worthy and respectable man, not often excelled in personal and domestic amiableness;" and of Mrs. Philipse, he remarks, that she "was an excellent woman." In the progress of events, Col. Philipse abandoned his home, and took refuge in the city of New York, and finally embarked for England. In person he was extremely large, and on account of his bulk his wife seldom rode in the same carriage with him."

such a state of tranquil neutrality. On a certain occasion he obtained permission to go to New York while in possession of the enemy. On being afterwards required to return, he very improperly and unwisely yielded to the importunities of certain of his friends, and refused to return. His estate was confiscated.<sup>a</sup> He left issue Frederick Philipse—who married Harriet Griffith, of Rhent, North Wales—father of Lieutenant-Colonel Frederick Charles Philipse, of Rhual, Flint County, whose two sons are Frederick Philipse, born 1829, and Edward William Philipse, born 8th of April, 1830.

Charles Philipse, second son of Col. Frederick and Elizabeth Williams, was drowned in crossing the Bay of Funday. Philip died without issue. Captain John was killed at the battle of Trefalgar in 1805. Maria Eliza, their eldest daughter, married, in 1779, Lionel Smythe, seventh Viscount, Strangford, father of Percy Clinton Sydney Smythe Viscount Strangford and Baron Penshurst of Penshurst in the County of Kent, England;<sup>b</sup> Sarah, the second daughter, married Major Mungo Noble; Elizabeth died 8th of March, 1828, and Charlotte, the youngest, married Captain Webber.

Col. Frederick Philipse died at Chester, England, on the 30th of April, 1785; and was buried in the Cathedral church of that city, where there is a monument erected to his memory, on which is the following inscription:

Sacred to the memory of  
**FREDERICK PHILIPSE, ESQ.,**  
 late of the Province of New York.

A gentleman, in whom the various social, domestic, and religious virtues were eminently united. The uniform Rectitude of his Conduct, commanded the esteem of others, whilst the Benevolence or his heart and gentleness of his manners secured their love. Firmly attached to his sovereign and the British constitution he opposed at the hazard of his life, the late Rebellion in North America; and for this faithful discharge of his duty to his King and Country, he was proscribed, and his estate, one of the largest in New York was confiscated by the usurped Legislature of that Province. When the British troops were withdrawn from New York in 1783, he quitted a province to which he had always been an ornament and Benefactor and came to England, leaving all his Property behind him, which reverse of fortune he bore with that calmness, Fortitude and Dignity which had distinguished him through every former stage of life.

Born at New York the 12th day of September in the year 1720,  
 Died in this place the 30th day of April in the year 1785, AGED 65 YEARS.

<sup>a</sup> MSS. in hand-writing of John Jay, furnished by his son, the late Judge Wm. Jay, brother of the late Peter A. Jay, Misc. books of Gen. De Peyster. Sabine in his biographical sketches of American Loyalists, says, "Frederick Philipse applied to the British government for compensation and was allowed £62,075 sterling, or about \$300,000. In 1809, in an English work, the value of the two manors was estimated at six or seven hundred thousand pounds. But it is to be remembered, that lands in 1783 hardly had a fixed value; while in 1809, the impulse which the Revolution had given to settlements, to increase of population, &c., had already created vast changes in the marketable prices of real property."

<sup>b</sup> Penshurst was brought into the Smythe family by the marriage of Sir Thomas Smythe, K. B., first Viscount Strangford in 1628 with Lady Barbara Sydney, seventh daughter of Robert first Earl of Leicester.

The Beeckmans who succeeded the Philipsses in this portion of the manor of Philipsburgh, Willem or William Beekman, Lieutenant-Governor of the South River (Delaware). His ancestors had been respected for their talents and virtues, and had suffered much persecution for religion's sake. He was the son of Henry Beeckman and Maria Bandartus (a celebrated name among the clergy of the Reformed Church in Holland), and was born at Hasselt in Overysse, April 18th, 1623. We are indebted to the *Evening Gazette* for the subjoined notice of this remarkable lady: "Cornelia Beeckman was the second daughter of Lieutenant-Governor Pierre Van Cortlandt, by his wife, Joanna Livingston, whose birth took place in the old manor house, by the banks of the Croton, on the 2d of August, 1753. Here her infancy and youth glided away, and but a short time before the war, she left its scenes for a life in New York, whither she removed upon her marriage with General Beeckman. When the Revolutionary troubles ran high, she came back to the old house at Peekskill, where part of her family resided. Exposed, of course, to all manner of insult and aggression, well-known herself, and in connection with her father, subsequently Lieutenant-Governor of this State, under Clinton, (but at that time, president of the Committee of Public Safety,) with her brother serving in the army, and many relatives and intimates, all zealous Whigs and devoted Americans, her unconquerable will and high spirit bore her safely and uncompromisingly through those trying scenes. We copy from a graphic sketch, by an able and we fancy well-known pen the following notice of her life during this disastrous period.

"One little incident we recollect to have read in a letter written by herself, in 1777. A party of royalists, under Colonels Bayard and Fanning, came to the Peekskill house, and commencing their customary course of treatment, one insultingly asked her, 'Are you not the daughter of that old rebel Pierre Van Cortlandt?' She replied, 'I am the daughter of Pierre Van Cortlandt, but it becomes not such as you to call my father a rebel.' The tory raised his musket, when she, with great calmness, reproved him for his insolence and bade him begone. The coward turned away abashed, and she remained uninjured. The narrative thus continues:—'Her letters written about this time, many of which are now in existence, abound in patriotic spirit. Excited by personal wrongs and the aggressions she witnessed all around her, she gave vent to her feelings in most severe reproaches upon the enemy, and in fervent prayers for the American success. But although thus exposed, she refused to leave her home, and continued to reside in the same place until the close of the war. Mrs. Beeckman possessed a powerful memory, and to the close of her life could relate with exact minuteness, the interesting events of which she was cognizant; and the



recital of those incidents abounded in interest, as all who know her can well bear witness.'

"A number of years after the war, Mrs. Beeckman removed to the old manor house, on Philips' manor, situated in what is now known as Beeckmantown, where she continued to reside to the day of her death.

"Mrs. Beeckman was a lady of the old school, possessed of a high sense of honor, exact principles and an unconquerable will, with a vigorous mind and a powerful memory. She retained her faculties unimpaired to the day of her death. She lived beyond the allotted period of life, and could almost gaze upon the face of a second century of existence. The scenes of her childhood were ever before her; but of the friends of her childhood, how few remained. Her destiny was fulfilled; and on the fourteenth of March, 1847, a Sabbath morning, she gave a farewell glance o'er the scenes of her eventful life, and without a sigh resigned her spirit to the God who gave it."



Dutch Reformed Church, Sleepy Hollow.

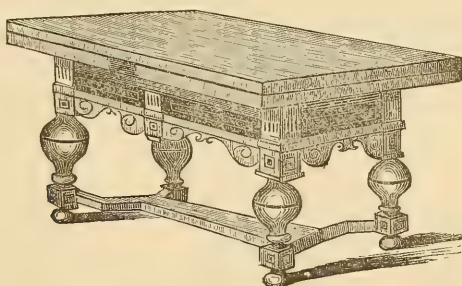
This ancient Dutch church is agreeably situated a short distance from the manor house, near the northern edge of the Hollow. The venerable edifice, believed to be the oldest church now standing in the State, is built of stone and brick, the latter having been imported from Holland for the express purpose. Its antique belfry and hipped roof, presents quite a picturesque appearance. The entrance was formerly through a porch on the south side; this has been recently changed to the western end facing the road.

On the north side of the doorway is inserted a stone tablet, inscribed as follows:

ERECTED AND BUILT BY  
FREDERICK PHILIPS AND CATHARINE VAN CORTLANDT  
HIS WIFE, IN 1699.

"Tradition says that when Frederych Vlypse, the first lord of the domain, began to build the church, he laid the foundation, and then withdrew his laborers that they might repair the damage done to the dam by a recent freshet. No sooner, though, had they finished the dam than another freshet came one night and washed it away the second time. Nothing daunted, they soon had a stronger structure erected, when, lo ! another freshet came and destroyed it. This discouraged the proprietor, and he was about to give up in despair, when Harry, his favorite slave, dreamed that the cause of his ill-success was the withdrawal of his men from the church. Let that be finished first, the warning said, and the dam will stand. He forthwith resumed work on the church, and afterwards built the dam which is doing good service at this day."<sup>a</sup>

The interior of the building has undergone considerable repairs and alterations, semi-Gothic lights having supplanted the old fashioned



Communion Table.

square headed windows. The pulpit and Heilig Avondmaal (holy communion table) were, like the bricks, originally imported from Holland. The former being a capacious affair, surmounted by a sounding board. Like the church itself, we are sorry to say, the pulpit and canopy have not escaped the hands of modern innovation ; we believe they are now spread piece meal throughout the country ; but thanks to a few generous spirits, the communion table still remains unchanged, a venerable relic of a by-gone age.

The bell of this church was cast to order in Holland, and presented by Frederick Philips. It is richly ornamented, and bears the following inscription :



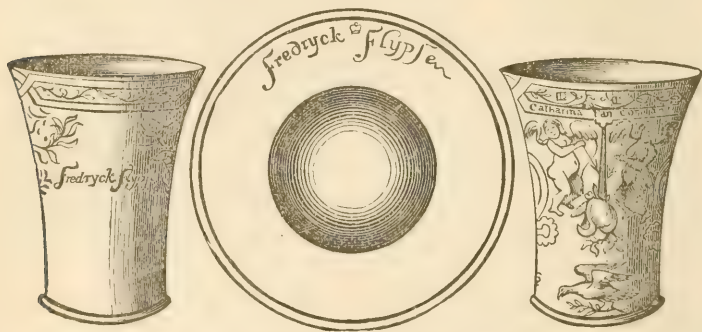
<sup>a</sup> Reminiscences of Sleepy Hollow. Harper's New Monthly Magazine, No. CCCXI, April, 1876, vol. lli, p. 23.

The western end of the building is surmounted by a curious vane, in the shap of a flag bearing the initials of the illustrious founder, Vrederick Felypsen.

At an early date, Mr. Felypsen of the city of New York, records the brand mark for himself and all his plantation in the county of Westchester, viz. :<sup>a</sup>



The communion service presented by the Philipse family, consists of two silver bekers; the first richly engraved with floriated tracery, bears the name of Fredryck Flypse, and stands about seven inches high. The second is also richly engraved with antique figures, representing angels, birds, fruits and flowers, besides, three ovals containing emblematic figures of Faith, Hope and Charity; near the top is engraved the name of Catharina Van Cortlandt; this cup stands nearly six inches and a half high.



The Bekers and Baptismal Bowl.

There is, likewise, a baptismal bowl composed of solid silver, eight inches and half in diameter, bearing the name of Fredryck Flypse.

These articles are rendered extremely valuable by the distinguished character who gave them, and well deserve the stranger's notice; they are at present under the care of the sexton, who resides at Tarrytown. Catharine Philipse the liberal benefactress of this church, by her last will dated on the 7th of January, 1730, bequeathes one of the bekers, the damask table cloth and communion table to her son-in-law, Adolph

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. A. 221.

Philipse, and to his heirs forever in trust for the church, in the following manner :

Item. I give and bequeath unto my son-in-law Adolph Philipse and to his heirs forever, a large silver beaker, on which my name is engraved, a damask table cloth, five Dutch ells and three quarters long, and two and a half broad, with a long table, in trust to and for the congregation of the Dutch church erected and built at Philipsburgh, by my late husband Frederick Philipse deceased, according to the discipline of Dort, which beaker and cloth I will and direct shall be always kept at the mansion house of the said Adolph Philipse and his heirs, in that part of the manor of Philipsburgh, whereon the said church is erected, to and for the use of the said church and congregation, and to and for no other use or purpose whatever, &c. Item, I give and bequeath unto the children of Paulus Vanderhidrs, the sum of £25 current money, &c. Item, I will and direct, that Matty and Sarah, my Indians or muster slaves, shall be manumitted and set at full freedom.<sup>a</sup> Item, all the residue and remainder of my whole estate, both real and personal whatsoever and wheresoever, I do give, devise and bequeath, to my brother Jacobus van Cortlandt, one-fifth; and to all the children of his deceased brother Stephanus, and the daughters of his eldest son Johannes, a fifth part, share and share alike; another fifth part to the children of my deceased sister, Marietje van Renssalar, &c.; another fifth part of my said estate to the three grand children of my deceased sister Sophia Teller, to be divided between her grand-son Andrew, and the children of her son Oliver, deceased; the remaining fifth part and residue, unto the children of Philip Schuyler deceased, eldest son of my sister, Cornelia Schuyler deceased, and Oliver Schuyler, &c.<sup>b</sup>

Tradition asserts that Catharine Philipse was in the habit of riding up from the city of New York on horseback, mounted on a pillion behind her favorite brother, Jacobus Van Cortlandt, for the purpose of superintending the erection of this church; her husband was at this time a merchant in the city. These journeys were generally performed during moonlight nights. Who could relate the interesting conversations that must have passed between the affectionate brother and sister, as they thus sat on horseback pursuing their lonely route from the metropolis, and the joy of the latter when the glorious work was completed? This illustrious lady must certainly have taken a very active part, not only in the building, but in the procuring and subsequent settlement of the ministry therein—which plainly appears from the ancient records of the Dutch church, where her name occurs, as first on the list of its members, in 1697.

<sup>a</sup> It is a well-known fact, that slavery existed in this county at an early period of its settlement, of which abundant evidence can be produced; but no record appears that native Indians were enslaved until 1705, when we find the following deed of gift executed by Elizabeth Legget, of Westchester, in favor of her daughter Mary: "I hereby give, grant and confirm, unto the said Mary, her heirs and assigns forever, my two negro children, born of the body of Hannah, my negro woman, of the issue of the body of Robin, my Indian slave. There are also several bills of sale recorded of Indian squaws being furnished by a dealer in New York, named Jacob Decay. *Westchester Rec.*

<sup>b</sup> Surrogate's office, N. Y., No. XI. 85.



"First and before all the right honorable, God-fearing, very wise and prudent, my lady Catharina Philipse, widow of the lord Frederick Philipse, of blessed memory, who have promoted service here in the highest praiseworthy manner." The Dutch church and its vicinity is thus described in the well-known legend of Sleepy Hollow. "The sequestered situation of this church," says the author of the legend, "seems always to have made it a favorite haunt of troubled spirits. It stands on a knoll surrounded by locust trees and lofty elms, from among which its decent whitewashed walls shine modestly forth, like Christian purity, beaming through the shades of retirement. A gentle slope descends from it to a silver sheet of water bordered by high trees, between which peeps may be caught at the blue hills of the Hudson. To look upon its grass-grown yard where the sunbeams seem to sleep so quietly, one would think that there at least the dead might rest in peace. On one side of the church extends a wide woody dell, along which laves a large brook among broken rocks and trunks of fallen trees. Over a deep black part of the stream, not far from the church, was formerly thrown a wooden bridge; the road that led to it and the bridge itself were thickly shaded by overhanging trees, which cast a gloom about it even in the day time, but occasioned a fearful darkness at night."<sup>a</sup>

The second son of the Hon. Frederick Philipse by Joanna Brockholes, and brother of the last mentioned Col. Frederick, was Philip Philipse, proprietor and devisee intail of the Upper Hight and Patent. He was born in New York A. D. 1724, and married Margaret, daughter of Nathaniel Marston,<sup>b</sup> who is described as "a worthy woman," and died May 9th, 1768. The following obituary notice appeared in the *New York Mercury*, for May 16th, 1768:—"Monday last, departed this life at his house in King Street, in this city, Philip Philipse, Esq., in the forty-fourth year of his age." His will bears date ——— 1768.<sup>c</sup> His eldest son, Adolph Philipse, was "admitted to King's College in 1758"<sup>d</sup> He died without issue in 1785. Frederick, the second son of Philip Philipse, was an officer in the British service, and died in 1829, leaving issue by Mary, (a daughter of his mother's brother, Nathaniel Marston, Jr.) a daughter, Mary Philipse, who married Samuel Gouverneur and left Frederick Philipse, who assumed the name of Philipse and became proprietor of the Philipstown estate, Putnam County, New York.

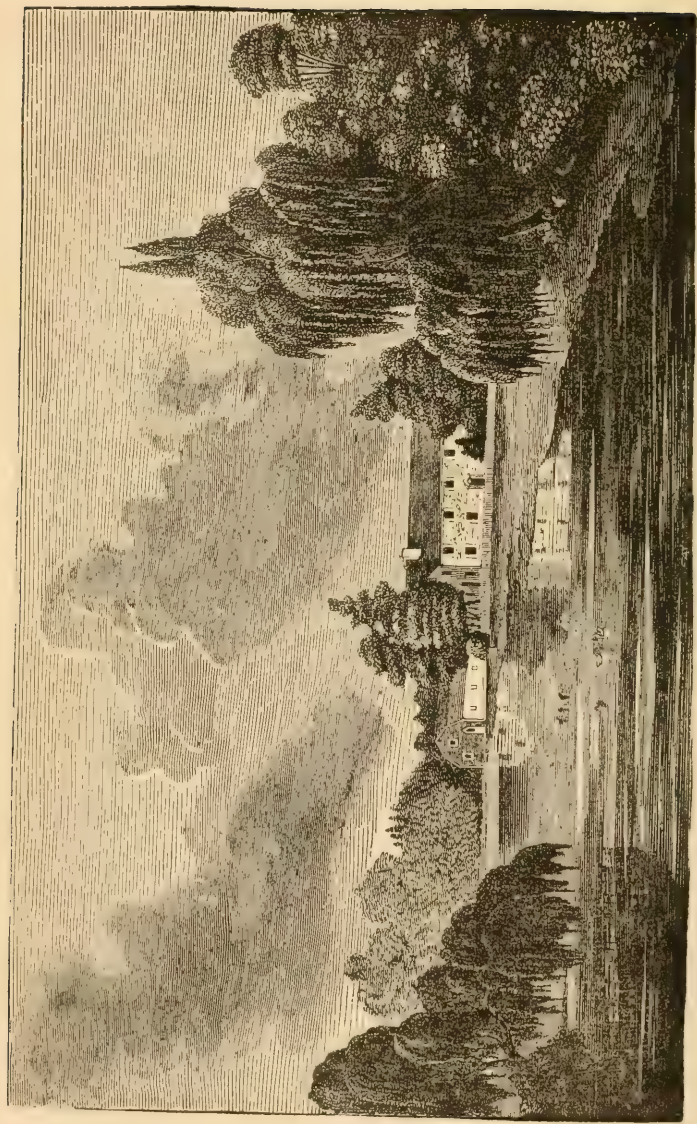
<sup>a</sup> Legend of Sleepy Hollow, by Washington Irving.

<sup>b</sup> The arms of Marston as taken from the Philipse MSS. sa. a fess ermine between three crescents ar. a mallet for difference. Motto—"Decus virtute soli."

<sup>c</sup> Surr. office N. Y. Rec. of Wills No. 26, p. 326.

<sup>d</sup> Rec. of Kings College.





PHILIPSE MANOR HOUSE, MT. PLEASANT.

In 1779 the lands in this town, together with the rest of the manor of Philipsburgh, became by the attainder of Colonel Frederick Philipse, vested in the State of New York, after having been in possession of the Philipse family nearly a century. In the year 1784, the State, by commission, parcelled out these lands to various individuals. One of the principal grantees was Gerard C. Beeckman, Esq., who purchased one thousand six hundred acres in the vicinity of Tarrytown, upon which is situated the old manor house. Mr. Beeckman married Cornelia van Cortlandt; thus after the forfeiture of the Philipses a portion of the manor again reverted to a connection of that ancient family; Jacobus van Cortlandt having married Eva Philipse, daughter of the Hon. Frederick Philipse.

In the south-west corner of Mount Pleasant, between the André brook and the Mill river, (Pocanteco,) is situated Beekmantown, commonly called the Pocanteco suburb of Tarrytown. This place derives its name from the family of the Beeckmans. The residence of the late Stephen D. Beeckman, M. D., son of the former proprietor, stands upon the highest ground of the village immediately west of the Irving Institute.

To the north of Beekmantown lies the romantic region of Sleepy Hollow.

“A pleasing land of drowsy head it was,  
Of dreams that wave before the half-shut eye;  
And of gay castles in the clouds that pass,  
For ever flushing round a summer sky.”

—*Castle of Indolence.*

Castle Philipse, the ancient residence of the lords of Philipsburgh, occupies a pleasant position on the west side of the mill-pond, nearly facing the old Dutch church; having acquired the appellation from the fact that, in the early days of the colony, it was strongly fortified with cannon—a necessary precaution against any sudden attack of the Indians. The embrasures or port holes can yet be traced on the cellar walls.

The western end of the building is evidently the remains of a much older edifice, probably coeval with the erection of a mill in 1683.

The mansion is seen to the best advantage from the Sleepy Hollow bridge. The principal entrance is through a porch on the north-east front.

Here within the compass of a broad territory, the Philipses enjoyed every distinction, feudal and ecclesiastic, which the Colonial Government could bestow. The manor, baronial courts, hunting, fishing,



advowson, and family sepulchre, together with all the blessings which the retirement of a country life and religion could afford.

The old mill adjoining the mansion is quite in unison with the scenery of the Hollow. In the palmy days of the manor, the tenants brought hither their grain to be ground, and from hence the lords of the manor shipped their flour for the metropolis.

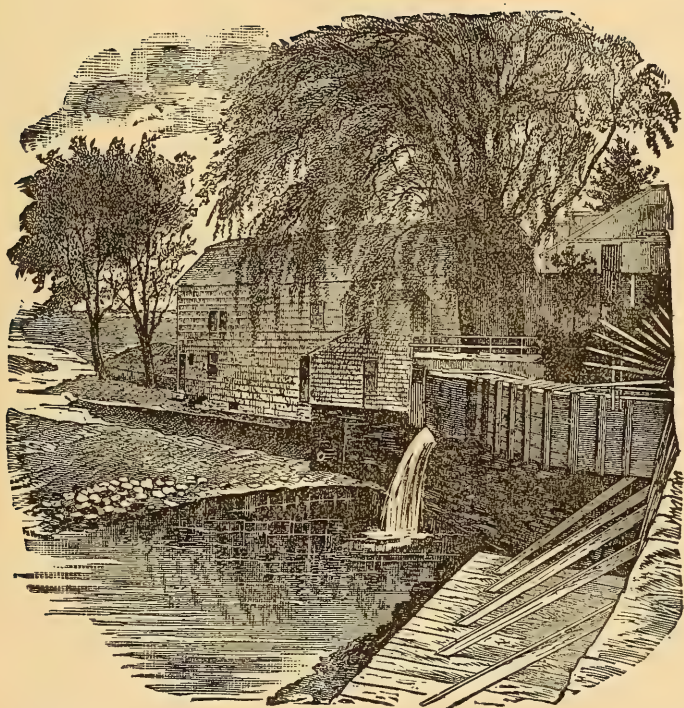
The keel of the famous Roebuck that so often navigated the neighboring waters with her cargo to and from the city, quietly reposes in the muddy bed of the Pocanteco creek. The old miller (who lived to the advanced age of 94,) was in the habit of calling it his iron mine, as the keel actually furnished him with bolts and nails for his lifetime.

The manor house was for many years the residence of the late Mrs. Cornelia Beeckman, widow of Gerard G. Beeckman, Esq.

The old house is full of associations. In 1756 Colonel George Washington, then Commander-in-chief of the Virginia forces, had occasion to communicate with General Shirley, and for this purpose left his head-quarters at Winchester and travelled to Boston on horseback, attended by his aides-de-camp. On his way he stopped in New York for a few days; and, while there, was entertained by Mr. Beverly Robinson, between whom and himself a strong friendship existed. It happened while he was the guest of his host that he met Miss Mary Vlypse, or, as we spell it now, Philipse—the daughter of Vrederyck Vlypse, who was born and reared here—and was deeply impressed by her rare accomplishments and beauty. “My father,” said the narrator, “used to tell it as a fact, well established in his day, that the Colonel once rode up here to pay his respects to the object of his regard. However that may be, it is certain that he did stop at the castle very frequently in after years, when the country was in the throes of the Revolution.”

A very singular story illustrates well the bravery of the matrons of the times which tried men's souls. The subject of it was the before mentioned Mrs. Cornelia Beeckman:

“Some time before the capture of André, John Webb, an aide-de-camp of the Commander-in-chief, while on his way from New York to Peekskill, stopped at the castle and asked Mrs. Beeckman to take charge of his valise, which contained his new uniform and a sum of gold. ‘I will send for it,’ he added, ‘in a few days; but do not deliver it to anyone without a written order from me.’ A fortnight after his departure, Mrs. Beeckman saw an acquaintance, Joshua Smith, (whose loyalty to the national cause was doubtful,) ride up to the house, and heard him ask her husband for Lieutenant Webb's valise. Mr. Beeckman was about to comply with his request, when his wife advanced and demanded a writ-



BEEKMAN MILL, MT. PLEASANT.



ten order before she would relinquish her custody of it. Smith replied that he had none, the officer having had no time to write one; but added: 'You know me very well, Madam; and when I assure you that Lieutenant Webb sent me for the valise, you ought not to refuse to deliver it to me, as he is in very great need of his uniform?' Mrs. Beeckman had conceived a great dislike for Smith before this; his known sympathy with the royalist cause being in marked contrast to her enthusiastic devotion to the colonies; and influenced by it, she determined to hold on to her charge until a written order of undoubted genuineness should compel her to surrender it. Smith was vexed at her doubts; but his entreaties had no effect on her resolution; and disappointed at the ill-success of his effort, he rode away. The result proved that he had no authority to make the application; and it was subsequently ascertained that, at the very time of this attempt on his part to secure the uniform, André was concealed in his house. After André's capture, the Lieutenant called in person for his valise, and bore a message from Washington, thanking Mrs. Beeckman for the prudence that had prevented an occurrence which might have caused a train of disasters, for Webb and André were of the same height and form; and, beyond all doubt, had Smith obtained possession of the uniform, André would have made his escape through the American lines."<sup>a</sup>

"It was in this church that the never-to-be-forgotten Yankee pedagogue, "Ichabod Crane," in rivalry of the old dominie, led off the choir, making the welking ring with the notes of his nasal psalmody. It was, too, in the ravine, just back of the church, that this redoubtable hero, Ichabod, had his fearful midnight encounter with the *headless horseman* and forever disappeared from the sight of the goodly inhabitants of Sleepy Hollow."<sup>b</sup>

The following notice of the death of "Ichabod Crane" appeared in the Westchester *Herald* for Nov. 30th, 1852:—Jesse Merwin died at Kinderhook on the 8th instant, at the age of seventy years: Mr. Merwin was well known in this community as an upright, honorable man in whom there was no guile. He was for many years a Justice of the Peace, the duties of which he discharged with scrupulous fidelity and conscientious regard to the just claims of suitors, ever frowning upon those whose vocation it is to "foment discord and perplex right." At an early period of his life, and while engaged in school teaching, he passed much of his time in the society of Washington Irving,

<sup>a</sup> A Reminiscence of Sleepy Hollow.—*Harper's New Monthly Magazine*, No. CCCXI, April, 1876, Vol. LII., p. 23.

<sup>b</sup> Legend of Sleepy Hollow, by Washington Irving.



then a preceptor in the family of the late Judge Van Ness, of this town.



Ichabod Crane.<sup>a</sup>

Both were engaged in congenial pursuits, and their residences being only a short distance apart, the author of the "Sketch Book" frequently visited the "Old School House," in which "Squire Merwin" was employed in teaching the young idea how to shoot, and subsequently immortalized his name by making him the hero of one of his inimitable tales—"The Legend of Sleepy Hollow."

Every one who has read that inimitable legend—and what lover of genuine humor has not?—will remember that hapless wight, Ichabod Crane, and his terrible adventure with the "Headless Horseman." Mr. Merwin was the original of that character, in the portrayal of which Irving's matchless fancy glows and sparkles as brilliantly as in almost anything he ever penned.

The following letter will show how intimate Irving was with Merwin, the teacher of the "Old School House."

#### ONE OF IRVING'S LETTERS.

*(Kinderhook Correspondence of the Albany Express.)*

While seated last evening in the library of the friends whose guest I had the fortune to be, looking over some famous autograph letters, I came across one written thirty years ago by Washington Irving to Jesse Merwin, of this village. Irving was a great admirer of Kinderhook in the long ago, and used to spend months enjoying its moral and social delights. Merwin was the village pedagogue, and was the original Ichabod Crane in Irving's "Legend of Sleepy Hollow." The letter to which I allude is so charming and flowing, so rich in that eloquent description which was a graceful characteristic of the purest writer in American literature, that I obtained a copy of it by kind permission, and here it is:

SUNNYSIDE, FEB. 12, 1851.

You must excuse me, my good friend Merwin, for suffering your letter to remain so long unanswered; you can have no idea how many letters I have to answer, besides fagging with my pen at my own literary tasks, so that it is impossible for me to avoid being behind-hand in my correspondence. Your letter was indeed most welcome, calling up, as it did, recollections of pleasant scenes

<sup>a</sup> This sketch is probably the only authentic one of the original and genuine Ichabod Crane now in existence. It is supposed to represent the gentleman whose quaint figure and peculiar style first suggested to Washington Irving the outlines of his hero of Sleepy Hollow.

and pleasant days passed together in times long since at Judge Van Ness's, at Kinderhook. Your mention of the death of good old Dominie Van Nest recalls the apostolic zeal with which he took our little sinful community in hand, when he put up for a day or two at the Judge's; and the wholesome castigation he gave us all one Sunday, beginning with the two country belles who came fluttering into the school-house during the sermon, decked out in their city finery, and ending with the Judge himself on the stronghold of his own mansion. How soundly he gave it to us! How he peeled off every rag of self-righteousness with which we tried to cover ourselves, and laid the rod on the bare backs of our consciences! The good, plain-spoken, honest, old man! How I honored him for his simple, straightforward earnestness, his homely sincerity. He certainly handled us without mittens, but I trust we were all the better for it. How different he was from the brisk, dapper, self-sufficient little apostle who cantered up to the Judge's door a day or two after; who was so full of himself that he had no thought to bestow on our religious delinquencies: who did nothing but boast of his public trials of skill in argument with rival preachers of other denominations, and how he had driven them off the field and crowed over them. You must remember the bustling, self-confident little man with a tin trumpet in the handle of his riding-whip, with which I presume he blew the trumpet in Zion.

Do you remember our fishing expedition in company with Congressman Van Allen to the little lake a few miles from Kinderhook, and John Moore, the vagabond admiral of the lake, who sat couched in a heap in the middle of his canoe in the centre of the water, with fishing-rods stretched out in every direction, like the long legs of a spider; and do you remember our piratical prank, when we made up for our bad luck in fishing by plundering his canoe of its fish when we found it adrift? And do you remember how John Moore came splashing along the marsh, on the opposite border of the lake, roaring at us; and how we finished our frolic by driving off and leaving the Congressman to John Moore's mercy, tickling ourselves with the idea of his being scalped, at least? Oh, well-a-day, friend Merwin; these were the days of our youth and folly; I trust we have grown wiser and better since then; we certainly have grown older. I don't think we could rob John Moore's fishing canoe now. By the way, that same John Moore, and the anecdote you told of him, gave me the idea of a vagabond character—Dirk Schuyler, in my Knickerbocker history of New York, which I was then writing.

You tell me the old school building is torn down, and a nice one built in its place. I am sorry for it. I should have liked to see the old school-house once more, where, after my morning's literary task was over, I used to come and wait for you, occasionally, until school was dismissed; and you would promise to keep back the punishment of some little tough, broad-bottomed Dutch boy, until I should come, for my amusement—but never kept your promise. I don't think I should look with a friendly eye at the new school-house, however nice it may be.

Since I saw you in New York I have had severe attacks of billious intermittent fever, which shook me terribly; but they cleared out my system, and I have ever since been in my usual excellent health—able to mount my horse and gallop about the country almost as briskly as when I was a youngster. Wishing you the enjoyment of the same inestimable blessing, and begging you to remember

me to your daughter, who penned your letter, and to your son—whom, out of old kindness and companionship, you have named after me—I remain ever, my good friend, yours, very truly and cordially,

WASHINGTON IRVING.

JESSE MERWIN, Esq.

The grave-yard is delightfully situated on the north side of the church, upon a gentle declivity. "Some of the tomb-stones are of the rudest sculpture; upon many of them are inscribed, in Dutch, the names and virtues of the deceased, with their portraits curiously carved in the similitude of cherubs."

Heer legt Begraven  
Het Lechaam van  
Hendrick van Tassel,  
Gebooren den 7 Aug. 1704.

Heer legt Begraven  
Het Lechaam van Jochum van  
Wert overleeden den 18  
van Aug. 1770, out  
zynde omtrent 72 yaaren.

MORS VINCIT OMNIA

Te Geduchtenis van  
Catriena Ecker, wedue van  
Petrus van Tessel, geboren  
Nov. 10, 1736, overleeden  
de 10 van Jan'y, 1793, out zynde  
56 yaaren en i maanden, &c.

PETER PAULDING,  
an officer in the Revolutionary army,  
who died March 3, 1842,  
in the 73d year of  
his age.

Sacred  
to the memory of Colonel  
BARNARDUS SWARTWOUT, JUN.,  
a soldier of the Revolution,  
born Sept. 26th, 1761.  
deceased Oct. 8th, 1824.

In  
Memory of Captain  
JOHN BUCKHOUT,  
who departed this life April the 10th, 1785,  
aged 103 years, and left  
behind him when he died,  
124 children and grand-children.

There are vaults in the yard belonging to the Paulding, Brown, Beeckman and Brush families.

A short distance north of the church, beautifully situated upon a gentle slope which descends into the gorge of the Pocanteco, is the

Irving lot. What strikes the visitor is the perfect simplicity apparent in all its appointments. Within the enclosure, ranged in two lines, are the different graves. Each has a plain head-stone of marble, on which are inscribed the name and age at death of the occupant. The grave of Washington Irving does not differ from those of the rest of the family. The inscription simply tells that

WASHINGTON,  
Son of WILLIAM and SARAH S. IRVING,  
DIED  
Nov. 28, 1859,  
Aged 76 years, 7 mo. and 25 days.<sup>a</sup>

"In a little while," says Irving, "this genial warmth which still lingers around my heart, and throbs, worthy reader—throbs kindly toward thyself, will be chilled forever. Haply this frail compound of dust, which, while alive, may have given birth to naught but unprofitable weeds, may form a humble sod of the valley, whence may spring many a sweet wild flower, to adorn my beloved island of Manna-hata!"<sup>b</sup>

"Why," he writes, "should we thus seek to clothe death with unnecessary terrors, and to spread horrors around the tomb of those we love? The grave should be surrounded by everything that might inspire tenderness and veneration for the dead, or that might win the living to virtue. It is the place not of disgust and dismay, but of sorrow and meditation."

Irving appears to have had a special fondness for this spot. In "Wolfert's Roost" he says:—

"And now a word or two about Sleepy Hollow, which many have rashly deemed a fanciful creation, like the Lubberland of mariners."

In the Legend, in the Sketch Book, he thus fancifully describes it:—

"From the listless repose of the place, and the peculiar character of its inhabitants, who are descendants from the original Dutch settlers, this sequestered glen has long been known by the name of Sleepy Hollow, and its rustic lads are called Sleepy Hollow Boys throughout all the neighboring country. A drowsy, dreamy influence seems to hang over the land, and to pervade the very atmosphere. Some say that the place was bewitched by a high German doctor, during the early days of the settlement; others, that an old Indian chief, the prophet or wizard of his tribe, held his powwows there before the country was discovered by Master Hendrick Hudson. Certain it is, the place still continues under the sway of some witching power that holds a spell over the minds of the good

<sup>a</sup> Reminiscence of Sleepy Hollow.

<sup>b</sup> History of New York.



people, causing them to walk in continual reverie. They are given to all kinds of marvellous beliefs; are subject to trances and visions, and frequently see strange sights, and hear music and voices in the air. The whole neighborhood abounds with local tales, haunted spots, and twilight superstitions; stars shoot and meteors glare oftener across the valley than in any other part of the country, and the nightmare, with her whole nine fold, seems to make it the favorite scene of her gambols."

The Dutch church at Sleepy Hollow appears to have been first organized in 1697; for the ancient books are still extant, containing the names of members at that early date. We have previously shown that the present edifice was erected in 1699.

Prior to the year 1771, this society, (like the rest of the Dutch churches in the colony of New York,) was under the supervision of the Classis of Amsterdam, the latter body being subordinate to the Synod of North Holland. In the contest concerning the substitution of the English for the Dutch preaching cir. 1764, the members of this church took an active part—some supposing that by the suppression of the last it would necessarily involve in course of time the loss of the doctrines, the mode of worship, the government, nay even the very name of the church itself. The Rev. Mr. Johannes Ritzema, at this time the officiating minister at Sleepy Hollow, uniformly acted throughout this trying period, as the friend of the English party. Upon the formation of the General Synod of the Reformed Church in North America, in 1771, this church was decreed to belong to the Assembly of New York, now called the Classis of New York. The articles of union agreed upon by the Synod of 1771 were subscribed (among others) by Johannes Ritzema and Pierre van Cortlandt of Westchester County. The Dutch Reformed church at Tarrytown is attached to the mother church, its pastor having the charge of both congregations. The first minister of the church, A. D., 1697, was the Rev. William Barthoff—styled in the church records, the well learned and Godly Dominus Guillaume Barthoff.

This individual resided at Hackensack, New Jersey, but performed services here three or four times a year; he continued his ministrations with great acceptance until the year 1715.

The following item occurs in the church books, (relating to the expense of bringing and returning the abovesaid minister:) "We have paid Thomas van Houtten, who has fetched said minister and brought him over and taken him back again, whom we have satisfied according to our bounden duty; and with that, it may please the Almighty and merciful God to grant him to come for a long time."

The successor of Mr. Barthoff was the Rev. Johannes Ritzema,

styled in the church records "*veræ doctrinæ minister*," (minister of the true doctrine.) This gentleman continued to supply the church until the commencement of the Revolution.<sup>a</sup>

From this general account of the church, we proceed to give a few extracts from its original records. The oldest book is thus entitled, "*Het notitie der Christeutycke Kerck op de Manner op Philipsburgh*;" that is, "The Memorandum Book of the Christian Church of the Manor of Philipsburgh." Upon the back of this volume is the following motto:—

"Endraght maakt magt, maar twist verquist."

"Unity makes might, but discord squanders."

The first line of the above was originally adopted as the national motto of the United Netherlands, in 1578, "when the seven northern provinces united for mutual interest and defence, which union actually proved the precursor of their deliverance and establishment as a nation."<sup>b</sup>

The preface of the original book runs thus, viz.:

"To give the kind reader a right idea why, and at what time, this church book, or particular memorandum according to Christian church order, is made, to be for the satisfaction of every one. Also, first with regard to his Royal Majesty of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. has pleased towards the year of our Lord Jesus Christ, 1680, by prerogative, consent and license to give to the Hon. Lord Frederick Philipse to purchase freely as or for hereditary purchase, a parcel of land or valley, so, and as it is situated in the county of Westchester in America, beginning at the river of Spyten Devil's kill, running north along the river, until the kill of Kitchawong, &c., &c., as in the license and patent is contained, which is called Philipsburgh; to indicate further in what manner and good affection these first Christian inhabitants have shown in the middle of heathenism, and with and about heathens to live, as true Christians, having first thought good and highly necessary, on the Lord's day, to gather together, and in a place for that purpose fit, to pray together, God the Lord with their whole heart to praise, and thank Him with psalms and hymns, &c.

"Furthermore it was also thought very necessary to look for a Reformed preacher, and to want him to preach three or four times in the year, and to administer the holy sacraments, and that the congregation might become participant thereby, and so much the better by the grace of God, with the covenants of His holy sacraments, according to the true Christian Reformed religion.

"And as the Hon. servants of the church experience that up to this time, being the 3d day of November, in the year of our Lord 1715, there are no church memorandum, it has appeared necessary and good to us

<sup>a</sup> One of the sons of the Rev. T. Ritzema was a Colonel under Washington at New York, and tried for treason in August 1776; when he left the American cause and became a commissioned officer in the British service. This gentleman, prior to the Revolution, kept a military school at Tarrytown.

<sup>b</sup> Pro. N. Y. Hist. Soc. p. 56.

for what is past, forasmuch as we can find out according to the upright proof to put it down, also first and successively to put down the annotations in this book by one of our members of Jesus Christ, whom we judge to be able and to possess the knowledge thereto, to put rightly and successively what will come to our knowledge and experience, that which we can find out with truth as will follow."

The volume itself is divided into eight special books, the last of which contains the previous memoranda abbreviated and concluded for the accommodation of the kind reader.

*The first book* contains the first memorandum of the yearly ministry of the word of God and the holy sacraments, as also the salary for each journey, per year and date as noted.

*In the second book* is registered the names of the members of Jesus Christ, who after Christian examination and exhortation have disposed themselves to receive the Lord's holy communion.

*In the third book* of the church memorandum are also registered the names from year to year of the election of elders and deacons to be accepted and confirmed thereto, the year and date, with the addition of the resigning elders and deacons after they will have served two years.

*The fourth book* contains the names of the baptized children, together with the names of their respective parents, also the names of the witnesses, and in what year and month, etc.

*The fifth book* contains the names of those who in the sight of God and His communion, after three previous solemn proclamations, have let themselves been confirmed in the lawful matrimonial state, and in what year and month.

*The sixth book* in which is notified the receipt and the expenditure of the deacons, according to the list thereof, etc., in order to see the settlement of accounts.

*The seventh book* in which is noted the expenditure and receipt of the chest of the poor, with addition to whom and wherefore.

*The eighth and last book* being the conclusion of all the previous books.

*In the first book* occurs the following entry :

"Finding out from the memorandum of Mr. Abraham de Riviere that the well-learned, godly Dominus Guillaume Barthoff has accepted according to request of the first inhabitants and respective congregation of Philipsburgh, in the year of our Lord, 1697, to come to preach here three or four times God's holy word, and to teach and to serve the holy sacraments, which through God's particular grace he has continued to do laudably up to this present date, the 2d November, 1715, and have given the said minister, according to our bounden duty, his contentment and satisfaction ; as also to Theunis van Houtten who has fetchen said minister from Hackinsack, etc., for which we are particularly and gratefully obliged, to show for the beneficence of the High, Hon. and very prudent my lady Mrs. Catharine Philipse."

"In the second book is registered all the names of the Hon. persons, who after Christian examination and exhortation, have disposed themselves to have been accepted members of Jesus Christ, and worthy to

appear at the table of the Lord, and to receive the holy sacrament of communion, A. D. 1697. First and before all the Right Honorable God-fearing, very wise and prudent my Lady Catharine Philipse, widow of the Lord Frederic Philipse of blessed memory, who have promoted divine service here in the highest praiseworthy manner."

"The continuation of the congregation of Philipsburgh:—

Abraham de Reviere; Dirck Storm and Maria his wife; Isaac Sie, the elder, and Esther his wife; Isaac Sie, Jr.; Jacob van Texel and Aletje his wife; Joacham van Weert and Christyntje his wife; Sebastiaen Michgielze and Galanti; Sybouw Krackheyt and Marytje his wife; Gregoris Storm and Engeltje his wife; Ryck Abramse and Tryntje his wife; Powlus Reetan and Angelica his wife; Albret Gardenier and Maritje his wife; Peter Sie and Pizonella his wife; Jan Ecker and Magdaleentje his wife; Jacobus Sie and Catharina his wife; Jan Fowseer and Eva his wife; Jan Louwrensz and Marytje his wife; Andries van Dyck and Gessje his wife; Jan van Texel and Catharina his wife; Isaac van Dyck and Barbera his wife; Abram de Vauw and Marytje his wife; Abram de Reviere, Jr., and Weijntje his wife; Geertje wife of Pieter Breys; Gerridit van Weert and Cathalijna his wife; Annetje Brackert wife of Hendrick Krankheyt; Jan Hart from Switzerland; Beellitje wife of Jacob van Weert; David Storm and Esther his wife; Louwrens Mathysie Banckert and Neitje de Groot his wife; Barent Duytsen and Maritje; Lodewyck Ackerman and Hillegenda; Margarietje wife of Joseph Escoth; Rachel the wife of Thos. Hyert; William Artzen, his daughter above named; Abram van Dyck and Elizabeth; Herman Jurckze and Maria; Antje van Weert wife of Samuel Canckle; Antje Sybouw wife of Jan Beesly; Peter Storm and Margarietje; Antje wife of Henderick Krankheyt; Antje van Lent wife of Corel Davidson; Cornelius van Texel and Antje his wife; Antje Keninck wife of Lowies Bowle."

*The sixth church book commences with the following preface:*

"In this book is noted from the existing notes the receipt and expenditure of each outgoing deacon, since the year of our Lord, A. D. 1697. Being intended to note said accounts uprightly, as per contents of the notes in this book, as much as will be possible according to truth; but as it is very dangerous for a good pilot to arrive safely in a strange harbor without falling on a bar or rock, principally in dark weather, I request accordingly very earnestly and in a friendly manner, from the kind reader, to please to take in good part if any obscure notes might come in my way as according to our opinion, we find some somewhat obscure; it is, however, my intention, with the help of God, according to the best of my knowledge to close the following accounts according to truth and to make a beginning firstly outgoing deacon as follows:

1697, the 30th October, Jan Ecker received in his deaconship for £85 1s.

1699, the 6th of August, Jan Ecker having finished his time, as appears by his delivered notice of his service as deacon, shows his receipt of the communion money to be £54 16. Further I find a notice dated 25th August, 1702, in which Jan Ecker acknowledges when he was dea-



con. to remain of his receipts above the expenditure up to £149 in money. By which it would appear as said above. The receipt at two periods of the deaconship by said Jan Ecker has been and will amount to £288 17 0.

The receipts of Jacobus Sic, deacon in 1701, were £254 1s. Credit expenditure for the church for bread and wine for communion to the sum of £61 10. And the present moneys are found to be, £192 11; which have been put in the box at the church. £254 1s."

Upon the 24th of August, 1787, Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Cortlandt (Commissioners of forfeitures for the southern district of New York,) conveyed to the trustees of this church and their successors, etc., "all that certain church and two acres of land adjoining thereto, including the burial ground situated near the upper mills in the said manor, bounded southerly and west by the post road or highway, and north and eastwardly by the land of Gerardus G. Beeckman; and also that certain farm of land situate and lying and being in the said manor of Philipsburgh, etc., bounded westwardly by Hudson's river, northerly by land now or late belonging to John van Wart, easterly by land now or late belonging to Jacob Buckhout, and southerly by land now or late Gloud Requa's containing 100 acres more or less," etc.<sup>a</sup>

The first incorporation of the Reformed Protestant Dutch church in Philips manor took place on the 24th of January, 1792.<sup>b</sup>

#### PREDIKANTEN VAN DE KERK OF PHILIPSBURG.

TYD VAN BEVESTEGING.	PREDIKANTEN.
1697, DOM. GULIELMUS BARTHOLOFF,	verge doctrine minister.
1760, DOM. JOHANNES RITZEMA,	V. D. M.
1785, DOM. STEPHEN VAN VORHEES,	V. D. M.
1795, DOM. JOHN F. JACKSON,	V. D. M.
1798, DOM. THOMAS SMITH,	V. D. M.
1838, DOM. GEORGE DUBOIS,	V. D. M.
Jan. 28th, 1845, DOM. JOSEPH WILSON,	V. D. M.

#### KERKELYK AANTEKEN.

A D. 1697, Communicants, 73,	Baptisms, <sup>c</sup> 11,
A.D. 1707, " "	" 13,
A.D. 1760, " "	" 48,
A.D. 1845, " 218,	" 3,

<sup>a</sup> From the original document in possession of the Trustees.

<sup>b</sup> This church was again incorporated on the 20th of June, 1792. Religious Soc. Lib. A. 99.

<sup>c</sup> The first child baptized in this church was Rebecca, daughter of Jan and Maria Heyert, Ryck Abramse and Clyntje, his wife, witnesses.

DE OUDERLINGEN EN DIAKENEN VAN DE KERK OF PHILIPS-  
BURG

## A.D. OUDERLINGEN.

1697. ABRAM DE REVIERE,  
 1698. RYCK ABEAMSE,  
 1699. JOACHIM WOUTERS,  
 1700. SYBOUT HERRIKSEN,  
 1701. JAN HART,  
 1702. DAVID STORM,  
 1703. DAVID STORM,  
 1704. JAN ECKER,  
 1705. JAN HART,  
 1706. WOLFFERT ECKER,  
 1707. DAVID STORM,  
 1708. ABRAM DE REVIERE,  
 1709. DAVID STORM,  
 1710. DAVID STORM,  
 1715. JAN HARMSE,  
 JAN HART,  
 1716. DAVID STORM,  
 1717. CORNELIUS VAN TEXEL,  
 1718. SYBOUT HARCKSE,  
 BARENT DUYLSER,  
 1719. GERRIT VAN WEERT,  
 1720. ABRAM VAN DYCK,  
 1722. BARENT DUYSTER,  
 1723. DAVID STORM,  
 1724. ABRAM DE VOUW,  
 1725. JEREMIAS HENNIFF,  
 1726. DAVID STORM,  
 1727. JAN VAN TESSEL.  
 1728. ABRAM MARTELINGH.  
 1729. DAVID STORM,  
 1730. ABRAM MARTELINGH,  
 THOMAS STORM,  
 1731. GERRIT VAN WEERT,  
 1732. JACOBUS STOUTENBURGH,  
 1733. DAVID STORM,  
 1734. JAN BOUCKHOUT,  
 1735. WILLIAM KEMMEN,  
 1736. JAN VAN TESSEL,  
 THOMAS STORM,  
 1737. BARENT DUYTSE,  
 PETER BUYS,  
 1738. JACOBUS STOUTENBURGH,  
 JAN VAN TEXEL,

## DIAKENEN.

- JAN ECKER,  
 WOLFFERT ECKER,  
 DAVID STORMS,  
 ABRAM DE REVIERE, JR.,  
 JACOBUS SIE,  
 JAN ECKER,  
 ANDRIES VAN DYCK,  
 ABRAM DE REVIERE,  
 GERRIT VAN WEERT,  
 BARENT DUYTSE,  
 ISAAC VAN DYCK,  
 ABRAM DE VOUW,  
 CORNELIS VAN TEXEL,  
 GERRIT VAN WEERT,  
 JACOB SIE,  
 JAN VAN TEXEL,  
 THOMAS STORM,  
 DELIEFFERIUS CONOKLIN,  
 ABRAM MARTELINGH,  
 JAN BOUCKHOUT,  
 THOMAS STORM,  
 PETER BUYS,  
 HENDRICK KRANCKHEYT,  
 DELIEFFERIUS CONOKLIN,  
 WILLEM KEMMEN,  
 JAN BOUCKHOUT,  
 JACOBUS STOUTENBURGH,  
 MATTHES CANOKELY,  
 JACOBUS STOUTENBURGH,  
 JONAS JUEL,  
 JOANNES CLEMENS,  
 JAN BELYOE,  
 JOACHIM VAN WEERT,  
 DELIEFFERIUS CONOKLIN,  
 JOANNES DE VOUW,  
 ADOLPH BANCKERT,  
 STEPHEN ECKER,  
 DAVID ACKERMAN,  
 HENDRICK VAN TEXEL,  
 ADOLPH BANCKERT,

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1739. DAVID STORM,<br>JAN BOUCKHOUT,            | JACOB VAN WEERT,<br>HARMANIS GARDENIER,        |
| 1742. JOHANNIS CLEMANS,<br>THOMAS STORM,        | JOHANIS SYFFER,<br>JAN STORM,                  |
| 1743. PETER BUYS,<br>JONAS JUEL,                | WILLIAM DAVIDSEN,<br>DIRCK VAN TEXEL,          |
| 1744. JOHANNES CLEMANS,<br>JOHANNES DE VOUW,    | EVERETT BRUYN,<br>HENDERICUS STORM,            |
| 1745. JAN BOUCKHOUT,<br>HENDRICK VAN TESSEL,    | JOHANNES DUYSER,<br>JACOB BUYS,                |
| 1746. JORIS JUEL,<br>THOMAS STORM,              | HARMEN JURCKSE,<br>JAN BALYE,                  |
| 1748. WILLIAM DAVIDS,<br>JOHANNET SEYFER.       | MATTHYS CANCKLINGH,<br>BARENT DUYSER,          |
| 1749. ABAHAM MARTLINGH,<br>HENERICK VAN TESSEL, | WILLIAM VAN WEART,<br>DAVID SORM,              |
| 1750. THOMAS STORM,<br>HENDRICK VAN TESSEL,     | HENDRICUS STORM,<br>HARMAN TURCKSE,            |
| 1751. WILLIAM DAVIDS,<br>JAN BOYLE,             | HENDRICK STORM,<br>JOACHIM VAN WAERT,          |
| 1753. WILLAM HEMMAN,<br>JORIS JUELL,            | WILLIAM BRIT,<br>JEREMIAS MEVE,                |
| 1754. HENDRICK VAN TESSEL,<br>JAN BOCKHOUT,     | BARENT DUYSER,<br>HARMAN DAVIDS,               |
| 1756. JORIS JUELL,<br>HENDRICK STORM,           | DIRCK STORM,<br>ABRAHAM MARTLINGHS, JR.,       |
| 1757. THOMAS STORM,<br>JOHANNES SIFFER,         | JOHANNES VAN TESSEL,<br>WILLIAM VAN NOOSTRAND, |
| 1758. WILLIAM AERTSE,<br>DAVID STORM,           | JAN ENTENS,<br>JOHANNES VAN TESSEL,            |
| 1760. HENDRICK STORM,<br>JOHANNES DUYSER,       | DAVID SIE,<br>JOHANNES VAN TESSEL,             |
| 1762. HENDRICK VAN TESSEL,<br>BENJAMIN BROWN,   | WILLIAM TURCKSE,<br>HENRY VAN WORMER,          |
| 1763.   | ISAAC HEMMEN,                                  |
| 1764. THOMAS STORM,<br>JAN ENTENS,              | NICKLASS STORM,                                |
| 1766. WILLIAM VAN WERT,<br>WILLIAM ARSE,        | WILLIAM BREIS,<br>ARIE VAN WORMER,             |
| 1767. DIRCK VAN TESSEL,<br>HENDRICK STORM,      | ABRAM BRUIN,<br>JAN HEMMEN,                    |
| 1769. WILLIAM VAN NORSTRAND,                    | ABRAHAM STORM,                                 |
| 1769. WILLIAM AERSE,                            | THOMAS SAMPEWA,                                |
| 1770. CLAES STORM,<br>WILLIAM TURCKSE,          | MARTEINES VAN WERT,<br>JACOB VAN TESSEL,       |
| 1771. WILLIAM VAN WART,<br>ABRAHAM BRUYN,       | JACOBES DAVIDS,<br>JACOBUS SIE,                |
| 1773. JAN ENTENS,                               | BARENT LEMETTER,                               |

1773.	ABRAHAM STORM,	JACOB BOCKHOUT,
1774.	WILLIAM AARSE,	PETER HICK,
	MARTYNIS VAN WART,	JAN STORM,
1776.	HENDRICK STORM,	JACOB VAN WART,
	DAVID SIE,	PETER SIE,
1790.	ISAAC JOHNSON,	WILLIAM VAN WART,
	HENDRICK STORM,	JAN VAN TESSEL.
	THOMAS BUYS,	

The Pocanteco river has a two-fold source; the first being on the lands of Isaac Lounsberry, in the vicinity of the Chappequa hills, and the other a short distance from it.

After a progress of four miles, these streams unite and become a beautiful river, which is subsequently strengthened and augmented by numerous tributaries flowing from an extensive district of hills and valleys.

The whole course of this river, from its spring-heads to its outlet in the Hudson, is fraught with scenes of picturesque and romantic beauty. "Far in the foldings of the hills," says the author of the Sketch Book, "winds this wizard stream—sometimes silently and darkly through solemn woodlands, sometimes sparkling between grassy borders or fresh green meadows, sometimes stealing along the feet of rugged heights, under the balancing sprays of beech and chestnut trees. A thousand chrystal springs, with which this neighborhood abounds, sent down from the hill-sides their whimpering rills, as if to pay tribute to the Pocanteco."<sup>a</sup> In the neighborhood of the aqueduct, is a deep ravine, which forms the dreamy region of Sleepy Hollow. A narrow and broken path which sweeps along the south-east bank of the Hollow, leads to the foot of the redoubted hill where once stood the school-house, in which the celebrated Ichabod Crane "tarried," for the purpose of instructing the youth of this vicinity. "The whole of the neighborhood," observes the author of the Sketch Book, "abounds with local tales, haunted spots and twilight superstitions." "The dominant spirit, however, that haunts this enchanted region, and seems to be commander-in-chief of all the powers of the air, is the apparition of a figure on horseback without a head. It is said, by some, to be the ghost of a Hessian trooper, whose head had been carried away by a cannon ball in some nameless battle during the Revolutionary war, and who is ever and anon seen by the country folks, hurrying along in the gloom of the night, as if on the wings of the wind."

"It is alleged that the body of the trooper having been buried in the

<sup>a</sup> Knickerbocker Magazine for 1839.



church-yard, the ghost rides forth to the scene of battle, in nightly quest of his head, and that the rushing speed with which he sometimes passes along the Hollow, like a midnight blast, is owing to his being belated and in a hurry to get back to the church-yard before daybreak."

Such is the general purport of this legendary superstition. The spectre is known by the name of the "*Headless Horseman of Sleepy Hollow*."<sup>a</sup>

The bridge so famous in goblin story, crossed the Hollow a few yards east of the present structure; the road having been altered within a few years.

A little north of Sleepy Hollow church, lies the Beeckman forest, an extensive tract of woodland, ranging principally east and west of the Albany post-road. These woods formerly covered a much larger district of country, and abounded in fine timber; while the thickets and glades served as a favorite haunt for large herds of wild deer. The perpetual harrassing of this noble game, in spite of fines and imprisonment, has long ago exterminated the whole race in this country. In the year 1705, (to prevent, if possible, their entire destruction,) it was enacted by the governor, council, and general assembly, "that whosoever within the County of Westchester, Christian or Indian, freeman or slave, after the first day of January, which will be in the year of our Lord, 1705, shall kill or destroy any buck, doe or fawn, or any sort of deer whatsoever, at any time of the year, except only between the first day of August and the first day of January, shall forfeit and pay the sum of twenty shillings lawful money of New York, or in default thereof, suffer imprisonment for the time and space of twenty days without bail or mainprize; and all dogs also found chasing deer, to be shot during those times."<sup>b</sup>

These special enactments were, doubtless, procured through the influence of the Philipses and Van Cortlandts, whose families were both represented in the governor's council at that period, especially, as the lord of the manor of Cortlandt was ranger within the forests of Cortlandt. The manorial proprietors of Philipsburg and Cortlandt, had a charter of free warren, *i. e.*, an exclusive right of pursuing and killing game throughout their respective patents, a privilege which they previously conceded to their tenantry. This beautifully wooded region contains many wild and picturesque scenes, united with charming prospects of the river.

In the immediate vicinity, and bordering the shores of the Hudson, are located several fine residences, among which may be enumerated

---

<sup>a</sup> Legend of Sleepy Hollow.

<sup>b</sup> Acts of Colonial Assembly, 64.

those of A. C. Kingsland; L. Ludovici; Gen. John C. Fremont; Mrs. Anson G. Phelps; Bartlett Castle, the seat of the late William H. Aspinwall, Esq.; Rockwood, the seat of Lloyd Aspinall; and Inclenburg, the residence of W. F. Bearns. About a mile north from the mouth of the Pocanteco is a beautiful little cove called the "Havenje," a Dutch term, which is the diminutive of haven, and means a little haven or harbor, near which is situated the former estate and residence of Gen. James Watson Webb. The Beeckman family can be traced to a remote period in Germany. Cornelius Beeckman, (who married Christiana Huygens of Cologne, who died December 4, 1506,) flourished about 1478; his son Gerard, born at Cologne on the 17th of May, 1558, married Agnes Stuning of Cleves, (born January 13, 1557,) studied divinity at Frankendoel, 1576, 1577 and 1578, and was conversant with the Latin, French, Italian and German languages; after completing his education he traveled extensively through Europe. During the great religious persecution, which commenced about this time, (1612,) several delegates were selected to meet the Duke of New Berg, the elector of Brandenburg at Berlin, and King James of England—whom the Protestant world flatteringly denominated "Protector de la Foi" (Protector of the Faith) to obtain assistance in behalf of the reformed religion. Gerard Beeckman and Velt Keyser, a gentleman of inferior abilities, were chosen for this important mission, which they executed with so much credit to themselves that King James caused the coat of arms of the Beeckman family to be remodelled, as it now is, viz: "a rose on either side of a running brook." After the death of his wife at Mulheim, on the 10th of March, 1614, he became auditor and secretary of the electoral chamber at Cleves, in the service of the Elector of Bradenburgh. He died at Emeric on the 31st of January, 1625, ætat 66. His eldest son was Hendrick or Henry Beeckman, who was born at Cologne, Sept. 14, 1585; fled from Emeric and settled at Berg. He married for his second wife, Mary, daughter of Wilhelmus Bandetius, minister of the Reformed church at Tutphen Guilderland; she was born January 24, 1621, and died the 17th of September, 1631. Hendrick Beeckman died at Wezel, Dec. 2, 1642. Their son, William Beeckman, was born at Hasselt, Overysse, April 18th, 1623. In 1647, he came to New Amsterdam,<sup>a</sup> and was appointed Lieut. Governor of the South River in 1659. He continued in that station till 1664. "In the summer of 1664, Gov. William Beeckman was transferred from the Delaware and commissioned Sheriff of Esopus—an appointment which he held until the close of Lovelace's administration, when he

<sup>a</sup> Beeckman Family. Misc. works of Gen. Depeyster. See Holgate's Geneology pp. 66-68.

returned to New York. He filled the office of Burgomaster of New Orange in 1674, and was Alderman subsequently under the English, from 1678 to 1682; and again in 1685; and 1691 down to 1696, when he retired from public life."<sup>a</sup> "In 1652 he purchased Corlear's Hook for 750 guilders; in 1677 he is mentioned as a brewer in New York, where the present "William" and "Beeckman" streets still bear his name." He died in New York in 1707 in the 85th year of his age, leaving by his wife, Catharine de Bough, six children. Henry Beeckman, the eldest son, settled in Kingston, was Judge of Ulster County and member of the Provincial Legislature. Gerardus, the second son, was President of the Provincial Council; and, in 1710, temporarily Governor of the Colony of New York. By his wife Magdalen Abeel he had a son, Gerardus Beekman, who was born in 1693. In the north-west corner of this town is situated the parochial church of St. Mary's, Beechwood. Mount Pleasant was formerly included within the Manor of Philipsburgh, one of the four precincts of the parish of West Chester.

From the MSS. of the venerable Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, it appears that as early as 1759, there were people enough in Philips' Manor for a large congregation without any minister at all. In 1761 the Rev. Ebenezer Dibble of Stamford, Conn., who visited this part of the country, says:—"I found a great want of a regular clergyman to officiate in these parts, to prevent confusions in religion, which hath too much obtained; and there seems a general good disposition to the Church, if they could be favored with a settled teacher. This deficiency was in some measure supplied by the appointment of the Rev. Harry Munro to the mission of Philipsburgh in 1765; but for nearly seventy years afterwards, St. John's church, Yonkers, served the purposes of divine worship to a district which now contains seven Episcopal churches. It is more than probable that, as the last lord of the Manor was an active Churchman and also a member of the Venerable Propagation Society, some of the ministers of the county were induced to visit this part of the county even before 1761.

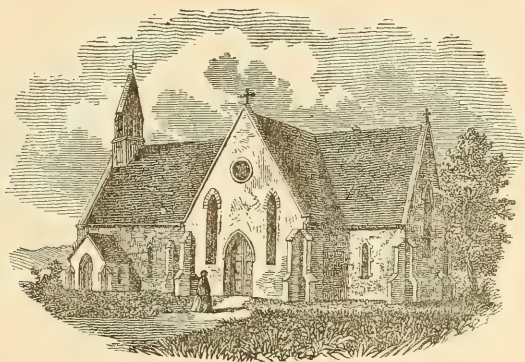
St. Mary's church is beautifully located on high ground above the Hudson River, about two miles south of the village of Sing Sing, and was erected in 1850, principally at the cost of the late Rev. Wm. Creighton, D.D., and of his son-in-law, the late Rev. Edward N. Mead. The whole structure cost about \$7,500. Besides the lot of one acre, on which the church stands, the Rev. Founder has purchased two and a half acres adjoining, for a glebe and parsonage. The chancel arrange-

<sup>a</sup> O'Callaghan's Hist. of New Netherlands, Vol. II, p. 472. Note.

ments are not yet completed. Towards these George H. Swords, Esq., has made the very liberal donation of \$300.

Besides St. Mary's church, Beechwood, Sunday services are now regularly performed at St. Johns, Pleasantville, in this Parish, where a congregation was gathered by the Rev. Robert Harris in 1853, and incorporated under the title of "St. John's church, in the town of Mount Pleasant;" a lot was purchased on Rail Road Avenue, and a neat wooden edifice erected the same year.

Within the fertile valley of the Nepara or Saw Mill, a few miles east of Beeckmantown (on what is now termed East Tarrytown) stands the



St. Mary's P. E. Church, (Beechwood.)

county poor house or hospital, an incorporated and endowed institution for the afflicted and indigent. Its officers consist of three superintendents, (who are nominated by a board of county supervisors,) a keeper, a physician and teacher. The buildings are extensive and principally constructed of stone. Its inmates, at present, number one hundred and eighty-four. There are accommodations for three hundred, if necessary. To the south-east of the poor-house, lies the Paulding Homestead farm.

Mrs. J. E. See related the following anecdote about her uncle, Col. Hammond:—He lived in the first house on the right-hand side of the road leading from Tarrytown to White Plains, just beyond the brick school, now known as D. C. Reynolds' property, directly west of Mr. Bonnar's farm, and adjoining it. The house used to have tall pine trees, and very old box borders in front; it is now owned by Mr. Kingsland. A part of the American army under his command had been laying in front on the fine plateau. General Washington came one day to con-



sult with him, and stayed quite late in the evening, after which he returned to his head-quarters near White Plains. The army had also been withdrawn, and the Colonel was left alone for the night. Just before day-break the Colonel's wife was awakened by a heavy, rumbling noise, and she awoke her husband; but he thought it was only distant thunder. Soon it became louder and louder, and then it stopped directly opposite their door. This was followed by loud rapping at the door, and demands to open. The Colonel dressed as quickly as possible; and, as he opened the door, several English soldiers demanded his surrender and all within. The Colonel replied, "I do surrender, and all with me." They then demanded: "Where is General Washington?" The Colonel replied, "He left yesterday evening." Upon looking out of the door, he saw two small field pieces planted directly opposite. They were very much disappointed, but took him prisoner to Brooklyn, and there he remained for a whole year. The truth was, a loyalist woman living in the neighborhood had seen General Washington go there, and immediately started on foot for the English line, and came back with the company. I asked who she was. With a toss of the head and considerable contempt, Mrs. See replied, "One Anna Brity—good-for-nothing old thing!" Whilst the Colonel was prisoner in Brooklyn, there was also a Dutchman confined with him. One day he came to the Colonel and asked him to write a letter to the officer in command. The Colonel asked, "What do you want me to say?" "Tell him I a'int no hog. I a'int no hog!" "What do you mean by that?" "Why, they give us nothing but corn to eat—I a'int no hog, I tell you!"

The surrounding neighborhood is rendered peculiarly attractive, from the contiguity of high hills rising to bold heights, crowned with rich hanging woods. One of these is that noble hill called "Kaakeout." The meaning of the word being "Look out." This hill is, therefore, a sort of Lookout mountain of the North. It was occupied by the coast surveyors, and considered the second highest hill in Westchester County. The landscape which it overlooks is magnificent; from it a long and large sweep of the Hudson River is seen, extending from the Highlands at the North to the sea itself—where the river is lost in the beautiful bay of New York. From it can be seen the city of New York with its spires, and glancing across the river you behold the fields and towns of New Jersey; and turning to the westward and northward, you see the spurs by which the Kaatskills descend to the plains; and turning to the east you behold hill and dale, wood and meadow simply charming. Washington Irving must have often climbed its summit. Sleepy Hollow winds along beneath its feet; to the west of it gleams a shaft in Sleepy Hollow Cem-

etery, near by the plain and simple slab that marks the grave of the modest and gentle author of the "Legend."

Near the foot, southward, lives J. R. Stevens upwards of eighty years of age, in full possession of all his faculties. He married a Miss Davis, descended from Wm. Davids, born in 1707 (the name having been corrupted). Her parents had owned the place long before; here she was born and brought up. They cannot remember when the family of the Davids first came in possession of it. The house is old fashioned, with the same doors as stood there during the Revolution. At one time it was occupied by four or five English soldiers, who, returning after a raid, amused themselves by hacking with their swords the doorway casings. The front door has five or six deep hacks now, and the inner door two. In the south sitting-room is a door leading into the kitchen with a small pane of glass inserted in it, which was used in old times when slaves were kept to peep occasionally at the little darkies, especially when there was any disturbance.

In the west room of the house General Washington had several times passed hours, in consultation with his officers and other friends of the cause of liberty; and we can easily imagine him ascending the summit of the hill and there standing wrapped in thought and prayer, during those dark and gloomy days of the Revolution, and looking and planning for the future. He could there look down on Arnold's treason and André's forlorn and desperate venture, and wonder at the mysterious ways of providence that lead to its defeat.

The road leading north from the county house, passes near the celebrated Raven Rock, around which cluster a thousand strange stories and superstitions. The rock is said to have derived its name from the fact, that it was once the favorite haunt of that ominous bird, whose hoarse croakings were believed to prognosticate approaching ill. The ferocious wife of Macbeth, on being advised of the approach of Duncan, whose death she had conspired, is made to say in the language of the poet:

"The raven himself is hoarse  
That croaks the fatal entrance of Duncan  
Under my battlements."—*Macbeth, Act I. Scene 5.*

This ill-omened bird—once very numerous on our coasts—has long since retired with the wild game into the interior.

But the dark glen of Raven Rock is now haunted by a far different object, viz., the lady in white; whose shrill shrieks are said to be often heard during the long, weary winter nights, as if presaging a storm. Tradition asserts she perished here in a deep snow.

“The hungry worm my sister is,  
This winding sheet I wear,  
And cold and weary lasts my might,  
Till the last morn appear.”—*Margaret's Ghost.*

The wild and romantic scenery of the glen, seems to favor these superstitions.

In this vicinity, Jacob Acker and Isaac Van Wart, two well known patriots, made a bold attack upon a small party of British cavalry. For the purpose of annoying the enemy they concealed themselves in a neighboring wood, from whence they could obtain a view of the road; and, as the British passed in full gallop, Acker fired at the commanding officer. The sudden report of the musket frightened the horse, which immediately commenced plunging; the rider in his efforts to restrain the restive animal, lost his hat, which Acker determined to possess himself of; he was again reloading his piece, when the enemy, not knowing the number of assailants, deemed it proper to retire, which they effected with much haste and confusion.

Jacob Acker, commonly called Rifle Jake, is reported to have killed with his own hands, on different occasions, five or six of the enemy.

Two miles north-east of the county house are situated the “*four corners*,” (so called in contradistinction to the upper,) better known as *Young's burt house*.

We learn from the petition of Martha Young, Samuel Young, and Thomas Young, (former proprietors of this place,) and the report of the committee made thereon, that at the commencement of the revolutionary war Joseph Young, father of said Samuel Young, resided about four miles east of Hudson river, on the road leading from Tarrytown to the White Plains; that after the British took possession of the city of New York and part of the county of Westchester, that road was denominated the American lines. The elevated situation of the dwelling house and the number of out-buildings, rendered it a convenient post for the American troops; that from August, 1776, until February, 1780, the said dwelling-house was occupied as headquarters for the several commanders in those lines, and the out-houses were occupied as barracks for the soldiers, and places of deposit for their provisions and military stores; that on the night of the 24th of December, 1778, Captain Williams of the American army, who, with about forty soldiers, was quartered in the dwelling-house and barns, was attacked by the British refugees, under the command of Major Barrymore; that said Captain Williams and a party of soldiers, and said Joseph Young, were taken prisoners; that the said Young was himself confined in the provost of

the City of New York about one year; that the barn of the said Joseph Young was burned by the British refugees, who also took from the said Joseph Young a large and valuable stock of cattle; that in the winter of 1779, said dwelling-house and other buildings were occupied by the said continental troops, under the command of Colonel Burr, and in the spring of that year by Major Hull, (afterwards General and Governor of Michigan); that in the winter of 1780 they were occupied by Colonel Thompson of the American army, who then commanded the American troops stationed on the lines; that the prisoners and military stores belonging to said detachment were deposited in said buildings; that on the third of February, 1780, an attack was made on that post by about 1000 British troops and refugees, under the command of Colonel Norton; the action commenced in the dwelling-house, and continued in and about it until Colonel Thompson had lost, either in killed or wounded, about 50 of his men, when he surrendered; that immediately thereupon the buildings of the said Joseph Young were burnt, by order of the British commander; that all the clothing, bedding and furniture of the said Joseph Young were destroyed at that inclement season of the year.<sup>a</sup>

This spot is celebrated in the Westchester Spy, as the site of the hamlet of the Four Corners; whilst a little west of the present Van Wart residence stood the "Hotel Flanagan, a place of entertainment for man and beast." In front of this imposing edifice, on a rough board suspended from a gallows-looking post, was written in red chalk,

"ELIZABETH FLANAGAN, HER HOTEL."

This illustrious personage, (who is said to have invented the well-known beverage vulgarly called "cock-tail,") was the widow of an American soldier who had fallen in the service of his country. She appears to have gained her livelihood by driving a cart to the various military encampments; and as the Four Corners happened at this time to be the headquarters of the Virginia horse, Betty Flanagan had emigrated thither with the troops. Here she was stationed when the lawless Skinners dragged in the pedler spy.<sup>b</sup>

After Colonel Burr left the command of the troops on the lines, in the year 1779, Colonel Thompson, a man of approved bravery, assumed it, and fixed his headquarters at this place. "On the morning of the 3d of February, 1780, about nine o'clock, says General

<sup>a</sup> American State Papers on Revolutionary Claims. Doc. 600, page 858. Joseph Young had been exchanged but a short time previous to this event. He died in 1789. Amer. State Papers, Vol. XIX. Claims, p. 859.

<sup>b</sup> See Westchester Spy, by Fenimore Cooper.



Heath,) the enemy made an attack on Lieut.-Colonel Thompson, who commanded the troops on the lines; the colonel's force consisted of two hundred and fifty men, in five companies, properly officered; they were instructed to move between Croton River and the White Plains, Hudson's River and Bedford; never to remain long at any one place, that the enemy might not be able to learn their manner of doing duty, or form a plan for striking them in any particular situation. The colonel had for some days taken post himself at Young's, not far from the White Plains. Capt. Watson, with his company, was with the Lieut.-Colonel, Capt. Roberts and Capt. Stoddard, with their companies, were on the right; Capt. Lieutenant Farley, and Capt. Cooper, on the left. The force of the enemy consisted of four flank companies of the first and second British regiments of guards, detachments from two Hessian battalions, some mounted yaugers, and mounted refugees—the whole under the command of Colonel Norton, of the guards. The roads were so filled with snow, that the enemy advanced but slowly, and were obliged to leave their field-pieces behind on the road. They were discovered at a distance by Mr. Campbell, one of our guides, who, from the goodness of his horse, reconnoitred them pretty near. He gave the lieutenant-colonel notice of their advancing, and that their force was considerable, and advised him to take a stronger position a little in his rear. But the lieutenant-colonel was very confident that the enemy were only a body of horse, and that he could easily disperse them, and would not quit his ground. They first attacked a small advanced guard, consisting of a sergeant and eight men, who behaved well, and meant to reach the main body in season; but were prevented by the horse, and all taken prisoners. The enemy's horse soon appeared in sight of the Americans, and discharged their rifles at long shot, and waited the coming up of the infantry, when a warm action commenced; the enemy scattered, taking advantage of the ground and trees in the orchard, and closing up on all sides. The three companies of the detachment which had joined, fought well. After about fifteen minutes sharp conflict, our troops broke; some took into the house, and others made off; the enemy's horse rushing on at the same instant, and the whole shouting. At this time, the two flank companies came up, but, finding how matters stood, judged it best to retreat; Capt. Stoddard's company giving a fire or two at long shot. Capt. Cooper's, from their distance, not firing at all. Some who were engaged effected their escape, others were overtaken by the horse. The enemy collected what prisoners they could, set Mr. Young's house and buildings on fire, and returned.

Of the Americans, thirteen were killed on the spot; and Captain

Roberts, who was mortally wounded, lived hut a few minutes. Seventeen others were wounded, several of whom died. Lieut.-Colonel Thompson, of Marshall's; Capt. Watson, of Greateon's; Capt.-Lieut. Farley, of Wesson's; Lieut. Burley, of Tupper's; Lieut. Maynard, of Greateon's; Ensign Fowler, of Nixon's; Ensign Bradley, of Bigelow's; with eighty-nine others, were taken prisoners. The enemy left three men dead on the field, and a captain of grenadiers was wounded in the hip, and a lieutenant of infantry in the thigh. The British, in their account of their action, acknowledged that they had five men killed, and eighteen wounded. Lieut.-Colonel Badlam, with the relief for the lines, was at the time of the action far advanced on his march; but not within reach of those engaged.

One Mayhew, a pedler, well known in Massachusetts, was of this detachment; he made off up the road, but finding the horse rushing on, he struck off into the snow, almost up to his hips. Two of the enemy's horse turned in his track after him; and, gaining fast upon him, he asked them if they would give him quarter; they replied, "Yes, you dog, we will quarter you." This was twice repeated, when Mayhew, finding them inflexible, determined to give them one shot before he was quartered; and, turning round, discharged his piece at the first horseman, who cried out, "The rascal has broken my leg;" when both of them turned their horses round, and went off, leaving Mayhew at liberty to tread back his path to the road, and come off."<sup>a</sup>

Thacher, in his Military Journal, thus describes the action:—

"February, 1780, Lieutenant Colonel Thompson had the command of about two hundred and fifty men, as an advanced party, on our lines. He was instructed to be constantly alert, and in motion, that the enemy might not be able to take advantage, and form a plan for his destruction. It happened, however, that a detachment of British, Hessians, and mounted refugees, were discovered advancing towards him; but on account of a very deep snow obstructing the road, they marched slowly, and Col. Thompson resolved to defend his ground. The enemy's horse first advanced and commenced skirmishing till their infantry approached, when a sharp conflict ensued, which continued about fifteen minutes; some of our troops manifested symptoms of cowardice, and gave way. The enemy secured the advantage, and rushed on with a general shout, which soon decided the contest. The Americans lost thirteen men killed, and Captain Roberts,<sup>b</sup> being mortally wounded, soon expired; seventeen others were

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem., p. 229.

<sup>b</sup> It was afterwards related by Isaac van Wart, that the day previous to this fatal occurrence, Captain Roberts, in a conversation with him, mentioned that his father had been killed in the old French war, and he was sure he should fall in the present struggle. He fell, alas! not by the hand of a foe, but by one of his own countrymen, a refugee named Hammond, who, as he recognized this brave officer, exclaimed, "Now I will give it you!" and fired with deadly effect. His body was found after the conflict, with one of his fingers barbarously bitten for the purpose of obtaining a gold ring. His murderers had also inhumanly placed their feet upon the body to draw off his boots. It may be as well to mention here that Col. Norton was promoted for his services on this occasion.—EDITOR.

wounded. Lieut. Col. Thompson, and six other officers, with ninety-eight rank and file, were made prisoners. Of the enemy, two officers and eighteen men were wounded; and five men killed."<sup>a</sup>

The British advanced by the southern road, and divided at the junction of the Four Corners—one party going west, the other marching directly upon the house. The party moving west intercepted or cut off Isaac van Wart and a small company under his command, who were attempting to succor their comrades. The dead, who fell in this engagement, were buried on the east side of the road, upon the rising bank of a small hollow north-east of the Van Wart residence.

"On this occasion," (says Samuel Young, in a letter written to Commodore Valentine Morris, dated Mount Pleasant, 25th January, 1814,) "my father's house with all his out-houses were burnt. After this disaster our troops never made an effort to protect that part of the country. The American lines were afterwards changed and extended from Bedford to Croton bridge, and from thence following the course of that river to the Hudson. All the intermediate country was abandoned and unprotected, being about twenty miles in the rear of the ground which Colonel Burr had maintained, when posted on the lines. Samuel Young served under the command of Colonel Burr during the Revolutionary war.

A letter from Judge Young, of Westchester County, New York.<sup>c</sup>

MOUNT PLEASANT, JAN. 25, 1814.

*Dear Sir:*

Your letter of the 30th ult., asking for some account of the campaign in which I served under the command of Col. Burr, during the Revolutionary War, was received some days ago, and has been constantly in my mind. I will reply to it with pleasure, but the compass of a letter will not admit of much detail. I resided in the lines from the commencement of the Revolution until the winter of 1777, when my father's house was burnt by order of the British General. The County of Westchester, very soon after the commencement of hostilities, became, on account of its exposed situation, a scene of the deepest distress. From the Croton to Kingsbridge, every species of rapine and lawlessness prevailed. No man went to his bed but under the apprehension of having his house plundered or burnt, or himself or family massacred before morning. Some, under the character of Whigs, plundered the Tories; while others, of the latter description, plundered the Whigs. Parties of marauders assuming either character, or none, as suited their convenience, indiscriminately assailed both Whigs and Tories. So little vigilance was used on our part, that the emissaries and spies of the enemy passed and repassed without interruption. These calamities

<sup>a</sup> Thacher's Military Journal, 185.

<sup>b</sup> Davis's Mem. of Burr, vol. 1, 165.

<sup>c</sup> We are indebted for this important letter to our friend and neighbor, T. S. Randall, LL.D., of this village. Editor: *Historical Magazine*. Copied from *Historical Magazine*, new series, vol. ix, No. 6, June, 1871, page 284.

continued undiminished until the arrival of Col. Burr, in the autumn of the year 1778. He took command of the same troops which his predecessor, Col. Littlefield, commanded. At the moment of Col. Burr's arrival, Col. Littlefield had returned from a plundering expedition (for to plunder those called Tories was then deemed lawful) and had brought up horses, cattle, bedding, clothing, and other articles of easy transportation, which he had proposed to distribute among the party; the next day Col. Burr's first act of authority was to seize and to secure all this plunder, and he immediately took measures for restoring it to the owners. This gave us much trouble, but it was abundantly repaid by the confidence it inspired. He then made known his determination to suppress plundering. The same day he visited all the guards, changed the position, dismissed some of the officers whom he found totally incompetent, gave new instructions. On the same day, also, he commenced a register of the names and characters of all who resided near and below his guards—distinguishing by secret marks the Whig, the timid Whig, the Tory, the horse-thief and those concerned in or suspected of giving information to the enemy. He also began a map of the country in the vicinity of the fort—of the roads, bye-roads, paths, creeks, morasses, etc., which might become hiding-places for the disaffected, or for marauding parties. This map was made by Col. Burr himself, from such materials as he could collect on the spot, but principally from his own observations. He raised and established a corps of horsemen from among the respectable farmers and young men of the country, of tried patriotism, fidelity and courage. These also served as aids and confidential persons, for the transmission of orders. To this corps I attached myself as volunteer, but did not receive pay. He employed discreet and faithful persons, living near the enemy's lines, to watch their motions and give him immediate intelligence. He employed mounted videttes, for the same purpose, directing two of them to proceed together; so that one might be dispatched, if necessary, with information to the Colonel, while the other might watch the enemy's movements. He established signals throughout the lines; so that, whether by night or by day, instant notice might be had of an attack or movement of the enemy. He enforced various regulations for concealing his position and force from the enemy.

The laxity of discipline, which had before prevailed, enabled the enemy frequently to employ their emissaries to come within the lines and learn the precise state of our forces, supplies, etc. Col. Burr soon made an end of these dangerous intrusions, by prohibiting all persons residing below the lines, except a few whom he selected—such as Parson Barstow, Jacob Smith, and others whose integrity was unimpeachable—from approaching the out-posts. If any one had a complaint or request to make of the Colonel, he procured one or more of the persons he had selected, to come to his quarters on his behalf. This measure prevented frivolous and vexatious applications, and the still more dangerous approach of enemies in disguise. All these measures were entirely new; and, within eight or ten days, the whole system appeared to be in complete operation, and the face of things was totally changed.

A few days after the Colonel's arrival, the house of one Gedney was plundered in the night, and the family abused and terrified. Gedney sent his son to make a representation of it to the Colonel. The young man, not regarding the orders which had been issued, came to the Colonel's quarters undiscovered by the sen-



tinels, having taken a secret path through the fields for that purpose. For this violation of orders the young man was punished. The Colonel immediately took measures for the detection of the plunderers; and, though they were all disguised and wholly unknown to Gedney, yet Col. Burr, by means which were never yet disclosed, discovered the plunderers, and had them all secured within twenty-four hours. Gedney's family, on reference to his register, appeared to be Tories; but Burr had promised that every quiet man should be protected. He caused the robbers to be conveyed to Gedney's house, under the charge of Capt Benson; there to restore the booty they had taken; to make reparation in money for such articles as were lost or damaged; and for the alarm and abuse, the amount of which the Colonel assessed; to be flogged ten lashes, and to ask pardon of the old man. All which was faithfully and immediately executed. These measures gave universal satisfaction; and the terror they inspired effectually prevented a repetition of similar depredations. No further instance occurred during the time of Col. Burr's command.

The measures adopted by him were such that it was impossible for the enemy to have passed their own line without his having immediate knowledge; and it was these very measures which saved Major Hull, on whom the command devolved for a short time, when the state of Col. Burr's health compelled him to retire.

These measures, together with the deportment of Col. Burr gained him the love and veneration of all devoted to the common cause; and conciliated even its bitterest foes. His habits were the subject of admiration. His diet was simple and spare in the extreme—seldom sleeping more than one hour at a time, without taking off his clothes, or even his boots; he was on a blanket or a mattress, before the fire. Between midnight and two o'clock in the morning, accompanied by two or three of his corps of horsemen, he visited the quarters of all his captains and their picket guards, changing his route, from time to time, to prevent notice of his approach. You may judge of the severity of this duty, when I assure you that the distance he thus rode, every night, must have been from sixteen to twenty-four miles; and that, with the exception of two nights only, in which he was otherwise engaged, he never omitted these excursions, even in the severest and most stormy weather. Except the short time necessarily consumed in hearing and answering complaints and petitions from persons both above and below the lines, Col. Burr was constantly with the troops. He attended to the minutest article of their comfort, to their lodgings, and to their diet; for those off duty, he invented sports—all tending to some useful end.

During two or three weeks after the Colonel's arrival we had many sharp conflicts with the robbers and horse thieves, who were hunted down with unceasing industry. In many instances, we encountered great superiority of numbers, but always with success. Many of those were killed and many taken.

The strictest discipline prevailed, and the army felt the fullest confidence in their commander and in themselves, and by these means became really formidable. During the same winter, Gov. Tryon planned an expedition to Horse-neck, for the purpose of destroying the Salt Works erected there, and marched with about two thousand men. Col. Burr received early information of their movements, and sent word to Gen. Putnam to hold the enemy at bay for a few hours; and he, Col. Burr, would be in their rear and be answerable for them.

By a messenger from him, Col. Burr was informed by that general that he had been obliged to retreat, and that the enemy were advancing into Connecticut. This information, which unfortunately was not correct, altered Col. Burr's route towards Mamaroneck, which enabled Tryon to get the start of him. Col. Burr then endeavored to intercept him in East Chester according to his first plan, and actually got within cannon shot of him. But Tryon ran too fast; and in all haste, left most or all of his cattle and plunder behind him, and many stragglers who were picked up.

I will mention another enterprize which proved more successful, though equally hazardous. Soon after Tryon's retreat, Col. De Lancy, who commanded the British Refugees, in order to secure themselves against surprise, erected a block house on a rising ground below De Lancy's bridge. This, Col. Burr resolved to destroy. I was in that expedition, and recollect the circumstances. He procured a number of Grenades, also rolls of port fire and canteens filled with inflammable material, with contrivances to attach them to the side of the Block House. He set out with his troops early in the evening, and arrived within a mile of the block house by two o'clock in the morning. The Colonel gave Capt. Black the command of about forty volunteers who were first to approach, twenty of them to carry the port fires, &c., &c. Those who had hand grenades had short ladders to enable them to reach the port holes, the exact height of which Col. Burr had ascertained. Col. Burr gave Capt. Black his instructions in the hearing of his company, assuring him of his protection if they were attacked by superior numbers; for it was expected that the enemy, who had several thousand men, at and near Kingsbridge, would endeavor to cut us off as we were several miles below them. Burr directed those who carried the combustibles to march in front as silently as possible; that on being hailed, they should light the hand grenades, &c., with a slow match, provided for the purpose, and throw them into the port holes. I was one of the party that advanced. The sentinel hailed and fired. We rushed on—the first hand grenade that was thrown in drove the enemy from the upper story, and, before they could take any means to prevent it, the block house was on fire in several places. Some few escaped and the rest surrendered, without our having lost a single man. Though many shots were fired at us, we did not fire a gun. During the period of Col. Burr's command, but two attempts were made by the enemy to surprise our guards—in both of which they were defeated.

After Col. Burr left this command, Col. Thompson, a man of approved bravery, assumed it; and the enemy, in open day, advanced to his head-quarters, took Col. Thompson and took, killed and wounded all his men with the exception of thirty. My father's house, with all his out-houses, were burnt. After these disasters our troops never made an effort to protect that part of the country. The American lines were afterwards changed and extended from Bedford to Croton Bridge, and from thence, following the course of that river, to the Hudson. All the intermediate country was abandoned and unprotected; being about twenty miles in the rear of the ground which Col. Burr had maintained. The year after the defeat, Col. Thompson, (a brave, and in many respects a valuable officer,) took the command; making his head-quarters at Danford's, about a mile above the Croton. The position was well chosen; but Col. Greene omitted to inform himself of the movements of the enemy, and, consequently, was sur-

prised ; himself, Major Flagg, and other officers were killed ; and a great part of the men were either killed or taken prisoners. Yet these officers had the full benefit of Col. Burr's system.

Having perused what I have written, it does not appear to me that I have conveyed any adequate idea of Burr's military character. It may be aided a little by reviewing the effects it produced.

The troops of which he took command were undisciplined, negligent and discontented. Desertions were frequent. In a few days, these very men were transformed into brave, honest defenders—orderly, contented and cheerful ; confident in their own courage ; and loving to adoration their commander, whom every man considered as his personal friend. It was thought a severe punishment, as well as a disgrace, to be sent up to the camp, where they had nothing to do but to lounge and eat their rations. During the whole of his command, there was not a single desertion—not a single death by sickness—not one made prisoner by the enemy—for Col. Burr had taught us that a soldier, with arms in his hands, ought never, in any circumstances, to surrender ; no matter if he was opposed by thousands, it was his duty to fight.

After the first ten days there was not a single instance of robbery. The whole country under his command enjoyed security. The inhabitants, to express their gratitude, frequently brought presents of such articles as the country afforded ; but Col. Burr would accept no presents. He fixed reasonable prices, and paid in cash for everything that was received ; and, sometimes I knew that these payments were made with his own money ; whether these advances were ever repaid I knew not.

Col. Simcoe, one of the most daring and active partizans in the British army, was, with Col. Emerich and De Lancy, opposed to Burr, on the lines ; yet, they were completely held in check.

But, perhaps the highest eulogy of Col. Burr is, that no man could be found capable of executing his plans, though the example was before them.

When Burr left the lines, a sadness overspread the country ; and the most gloomy forebodings were too soon fulfilled, as you have seen above. The period of Col. Burr's command was so full of activity that every day afforded some lesson of instruction.

But you will expect only a general outline ; and this faint one, is the best in my power to give. I am, with real esteem,

Your obedient servant,

To R. V. MORRIS, Esq.,

SAMUEL YOUNGS.

*Mem. of Assembly.*

In the summer of 1820, a stranger was observed loitering around the residence of Mr. Van Wart. Upon being questioned, this person stated that he had taken an active part in the above engagement, and well remembered the spot where he stood (pointing to a stone) when the British guard was first seen advancing from the west. He had just discharged his piece, and was engaged in loading it, when he received a bullet in his breast, which passed through his body. Fortunately he happened to be leaning a little to the right, otherwise the vitals could

not have escaped. The old veteran further stated that he was then on his way to obtain certificates for a pension.

At the Four Corners, Thaddeus Kosciusko also fixed his headquarters, when the American army lay encamped in this vicinity.<sup>a</sup> From Samuel Young the Corners passed to Isaac van Wart, one of the captors of André, who exchanged the original farm granted by the State for this property. It is at present owned by his son, the Rev. Sandy van Wart.

In the south-east corner of this town is situated, upon lands of William Fowler, a gloomy cavern, commonly called Kettle Hole, near the mouth of which rises a mineral spring.

The settlement of the upper corners is situated three miles north of the lower. Here stands the well known tavern of Isaac Twitchings, whose name has conferred on the place the appellation of Twitching's Corners. During one period of the Revolution, a Continental picket guard was stationed here.

On the 30th of August, 1779, Captain Hopkins, of Moylan's light dragoons, together with a small detachment from Sheldon's horse, proceeded from their quarters in North Castle, to the vicinity of the upper cross roads; here they ascertained that Colonel Emmerick was advancing by way of White Plains. Emmerick himself having received similar information of Hopkin's advance, had previously dispatched Colonel Baremore, with a strong body of De Lancey's cavalry, directing them to proceed by the way of Davis's brook, east of the upper cross roads. Hopkins pursued another route, inclining west of Twitchings', passing the residences of Mr. Avery and Colonel Hammond, where he posted a strong detachment of light dragoons, under the command of Cornet Pike, (afterwards General Pike) south of the Tarrytown road. He then proceeded with the rest of his detachment, to meet Emmerick in person. He soon perceived the enemy advancing with a small body of cavalry.

Hopkins now retreated, leading Emmerick into his ambushade stationed in Storms's wood. The consequence of this sudden surprisal was the destruction of the whole corps, with the exception of Emmerick and a few dragoons. Twenty-three of the enemy were killed in this en-

<sup>a</sup> Near the blacksmith's shop, (on the road leading from the Corners to White Plains,) a duel was fought between General Gates and Colonel Wilkins, September 11, 1779. Two shots, says Thacher, were exchanged without bloodshed, and a reconciliation was effected. The gentlemen, it is said, displayed a firmness and bravery becoming their rank and character, and have established their claim to the title of gentlemen of *honor*, &c., &c. Thacher's Military Journal, p. 145.

In this neighborhood resided the noted Brom Boyce, "who at the early age of sixteen, enrolled himself among the minute men of the American army. He was soon distinguished for his bravery and daring, and was recognized as the best guide to be procured in this vicinity." "Boyce, after the Revolution, followed the business of a carman in the city of New York. He was a member of the Bedford Street church about thirty-five years, and died in 1839, aged eighty-two years. His remains were interred at Tarrytown."—*Noah's Sunday Times*.



counter. Hopkins now turned upon Emmerick, pursuing him so closely for the distance of half a mile, that several strokes were exchanged between both parties, until Emmerick cleared a stone wall, behind which he had concealed his riflemen. The whole company instantly rose and fired simultaneously upon Hopkins, who escaped uninjured; but Isaac Odell, who rode by his side, was slightly wounded. Hopkins thus in turn taken by surprise, wheeled to the west with his party, and succeeded in overtaking his prisoners, resolving to make good his retreat by the way of the poor-house road. He had proceeded no great distance, when he beheld approaching a strong body of Baremore's horse, in the neighborhood of Avery's mill, a little north of the poor house. Finding his retreat thus intercepted, he was compelled to take the Bedford road; but he had scarcely arrived at See's store, when he found Emmerick again drawn up to dispute the passage. Hopkins a second time discovering his retreat terminated, decided upon a vigorous charge, and succeeded in cutting his way through the detachment with the loss of a few prisoners. A running fight now ensued for about two miles, when Hopkins again found his course blockaded by Colonel Wurmb's yagers. The post road also was guarded by Pruschanck's corps, so that Hopkins had no resource left but the fields. He therefore crossed the mill creek a little north of the Dutch church, Sleepy Hollow, the whole body of the enemy joining in the pursuit. This was kept up until Hopkins arrived near the house of Job Sherwood, a short distance from the present arch of the Croton Aqueduct, on the road to Sing Sing. Hopkins now rightly judging that the best horses of his pursuers were far in advance of their comrades, instantly checked his horse, and in turn became the pursuer. At the spring brook which crosses the road in the Beeckman wood, he succeeded in capturing one or two prisoners, in the very face of the enemy, and made good his retreat.<sup>a</sup>

Near Twitchings' tavern formerly resided John Yerks, one of the seven volunteers connected with the capture of André. Mr. Yerks served for several years in the capacity of a water guard, and remembered to have seen on one occasion as many as fifty British vessels and galleys stationed on the Hudson River. Near his place of residence, himself with nine others engaged in a deadly conflict with a party of twenty Cow Boys. In this skirmish they brought off three prisoners and four horses, besides leaving six of the enemy dead on the field.

The road from Twitchings' descends gradually to the valley of the saw mill, on the east bank of which stands the church and hamlet of Unionville, delightfully sheltered by high hills. The most prominent

<sup>a</sup> The above was related to the author by Jacob Romer, an eye-witness of the engagement.

object in the immediate vicinity is the Buttermilk mountain, which towers, like a giant, far above the neighboring scenery. A small perennial spring rises on its eastern edge, which has conferred this fanciful name on the hill. The summit of the mountain commands an extensive view of the Hudson River and surrounding country.

During the progress of the United States coast survey, the Buttermilk formed one of its stations.

The Dutch Reformed church of Unionville, was first organized in 1820,<sup>a</sup> under the pastoral charge of the Rev. Thomas Smith, and incorporated on the 8th of August, 1842, by the title of the "Minister, Elders and Deacons of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of Unionville." First elders, John Newman, Abraham Onderdonck, and Isaac G. Graham, Jun.; first deacons, Abraham Yerks, Thomas Angevine and Ebenezer Newman.<sup>b</sup> This church is in connection with the New York Classis.

In the immediate neighborhood of Unionville is the residence and estate of the late Isaac G. Graham, M.D., for some years a member of General Washington's medical staff, and a lineal descendant of the ancient and honorable family of the Grahams of Montrose in Scotland, who derive their origin from the renowned Græme in the fifth century. In this vicinity, also, resided the late Mr. Walter Hunt, an aged soldier of the revolution.

Pleasantville, (formerly Clark's Corners,) lies nearly midway between the Pocanteco and Saw Mill rivers on the north-east border of Mount Pleasant; the village is delightfully situated on the western edge of Bear Ridge. A beautiful vale extends south, while through the gap of the western hills may be seen the distant mountains of Rockland. It contains one church, two stores, a post-office, and several dwellings.

The Methodist Episcopal Church of Pleasantville appears to have been the first of that denomination founded in this section of the country. As early as 1800 a class meeting was organized on Bear ridge, near the residence of Mr. Jesse Barker. The present building was erected in 1820. Its pastor, in 1847, was the Rev. Charles T. Pelton. A small burying-ground surrounds the church, which contains memorials to the Clarks, Brouwers, Montroses, Searles, Romers, Ackers and others.

A short distance west of the village is situated the Westchester railroad depot and hotel, in front of which rise high hills crowned with luxuriant woods; among the former are most conspicuous, Searles' and Wild Boar hills.

<sup>a</sup> The present church edifice was erected the same year.

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec., Lib. B. 73.

To the West of Pleasantville, almost bordering the Bronx river, rises Bear Ridge—so called from a venerable relict of the bruén race, that in early provincial times resided in the stump of an ancient oak on its summit. Upon the south-eastern extremity of this elevated portion of the town, is situated the “Westchester Nursery,” the property of the late Edward Jessup Carpenter, whose father, David R. Carpenter, bought the estate about twenty-five years ago of Underhill Quimby; it having formerly belonged to the Baker family. Nothing can be finer than the views from this beautiful spot, which commands a most extensive prospect of eight counties, viz: Suffolk, Queens and Kings, Long Island; Fairfield, Conn.; Putnam, New York; Rockland, Orange and Bergen; besides beautiful views of the North and East rivers, the Palisades and the Hook on the west side of the former, the Dunderberg or Bread Tray Mountain, (so called on account of its shape,) on which the line runs between Orange and Rockland Counties. Bear Ridge, too, is noted as being the water-shed of this section of Westchester County—on the east the Bronx, which rises in the Dark valley, within only three-quarters of a mile, flows into the East River; while on the west, the Nepera, which has its source from among the springs or little trout streams of the neighborhood, rising from Prospect Ridge, Fox Hill, Locust Hill and other high points. The neighboring estates belong to the late James M. Bard—Fairview, to James V. Stoutenburg; Valleyview, to Edward Haight; Brook Dale, to David H. Lane; Prospect Hill, to Stephen White; Casa Perdida, to E. C. F. Judson; Palmer Homestead, to John W. Palmer; Fruit Farm, to G. M. Purdy; and Prospect Ridge, to D. Hull, with many others.

“There is in this town a great variety of timber and wood, being a good proportion of almost every kind which is known to grow in this part of the counrty.” The surface of the town is mostly hilly, the soil productive and well cultivated. Mount Pleasant has the reputation of being rich in mineral productions; an iron mine has recently been opened on the land of the late David Acker. Native iron ore also (probably of meteoric origin) is frequently found on the surface of the earth in various parts of the town. The following town officers were elected in pursuance of the act of 1845:

ISAAC COUTANT, *Supervisor*;  
JACOB T. BROWER, *Town Clerk*;  
WILLIAM BROWN, *Town Superintendent*;  
ABRAHAM BROUWER, *Trustee of the Poor*;  
HERVEY ROMER, *Assessor*;  
HENRY CLARK, JR., *Commissioner of Highways*;  
AMOS CLARK, *Overseer of the Poor*;  
HEBBY BROWN, *Sealer of Weights and Measures*;  
ANDREW VINCENT, *Constable*.

# THE TOWN OF NEW CASTLE.

---

This township is situated ten miles north of the village of White Plains, and distant one hundred and twenty-one miles from Albany; bounded North by Cortlandt, Yorktown and Somers, East by Bedford, South by North Castle, and West by Ossining and Mount Pleasant. New Castle was taken from the older town of North Castle, and set off as a separate or distinct township on the 18th of March, 1791.

By the Indians it was called Shappequa, or Chappequa; which tradition asserts to mean literally, "*The Laurel Swamp*,"<sup>a</sup> it might have been, however, a mere corruption of the Algonquin term, "Chapacour," which signifies "a vegetable root."<sup>b</sup> The name still survives in the Chappequa hills, and has been conferred on a small hamlet in the Southern part of the town.

The chief aboriginal proprietor of these lands, in 1696, was the Indian Sachem Wampus, whose principal residence is said to have been situated near the pond of that name in the south-west part of the town. An Indian village formerly stood on the Chappequa hills in the rear of the late Abraham Hyatt's residence; while another settlement was located on the southern bank of Roaring Brook. There is also an Indian burying ground in this locality on the property of the late James Weeks now owned by his grandson, James Hunt; human bones are occasionally disinterred, here on working the roads, together with Indian pestels or pounders and arrow heads. The late Abraham Hyatt, Esq., well remembered, when a youth, to have seen seventeen Indians from the Chappequa hills passing the old homestead, near Roaring Brook, in file on their way to Rye or Sawpitts by the sound for salt or "to salt"

<sup>a</sup> Testimony of the late Abraham Hyatt, Esq., of Chappequa, who has always heard this meaning given to the word for eighty years past. There is an extensive laurel swamp on the Hyatt farm near Roaring Brook.

<sup>b</sup> Beverly's Hist. of Virginia, p. 121.



as they termed it. On the south side of Kirby's pond, at New Castle corner, the Indians had their wigwams and a burying ground. Their tools are frequently found in the adjoining fields. The Indians are said to have been very numerous in this town seventy years ago.

In 1666 John Richbell, of Mamaroneck, purchased of the Indians (who claimed to be lords of the soil) a large tract of land extending twenty miles north of the sound. This grant comprised the entire township of New Castle.

The next proprietor was Colonel Caleb Heathcote, who obtained of Mrs. Anne Richbell a patent right to purchase lands, "which are already included in her husband's sale of 1660;" upon the 12th of October, 1696, his excellency, Benjamin Fletcher, captain general and governor of his Majesty's province of New York, &c., did grant unto Caleb Heathcote, Esq. "Free liberty and license to purchase vacant land in the County of Westchester, between Croton's river and the south bounds of Mr. Harrison's purchase, &c."

Twelve days after the date of the above license, occurs the following deed from the Indians :

#### THE INDIAN DEED OF WAMPUS'S LAND.

"This indenture made on the 19th of October, in the eighth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord William the Third, by the grace of God, &c., &c., and in the year of our Lord Christ, 1696, between Wampus, Indian sachem, and others, whose names are hereunto set and seals affixed, native proprietors of all that tract of land, situate, lying, and being in the county of Westchester in the Province of New York in America, bounded north by Scroton (Croton) river, easterly by Byram river and Bedford line, southerly by the land of John Harrison and his associates, and the line stretching to Byram river aforesaid, and westerly by the land of Frederick Philipse."

"*Now know all men* that said Wampus, Cornelius and Coharnith, Indian sachems, and others, whose names are hereunto subscribed and seals affixed, the native proprietors of all the aforesaid tract of land, have, for and in consideration of the sum of £100, good and lawful money of New York to them in hands paid by the said Caleb Heathcote, at and before the ensealing and delivery of these presents, the receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge, and themselves and each and every of them to be therewith fully satisfied, contented and paid, and thereof and every part and parcel thereof, they do by these presents forever acquit and discharge the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs, executors and administrators, &c. having given, granted, bargained and sold, aliened, enfeofed, released and confirmed, and do by these presents clearly and absolutely give, grant, bargain and sell, alien, enfeof, release and confirm unto the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns, for ever, all that the before mentioned tract of land within the county of Westchester, bounded as above expressed and set forth, together with all and singular, the messuages, tenements, gardens, orchards, arable lands, pastures, feedings, woods, underwoods, meadows, marshes,

lakes, ponds, rivers, rivulets, mines, minerals, (royal mines only excepted,) fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, rights, privileges, hereditaments, and appurtenances to the same belonging or in any way appertaining, and all the estate, right, interest, claim, possession, property and demand of the said Wampus, Cornelius and Coharnith, sachems, and the other Indians whose names are hereunto subscribed, and each and every of them, in and to the premises, in and to every part and parcel thereof, *to have and to hold* the before mentioned tract of land and all other the above granted premises to him the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns, to the only proper benefit and behoof of him the said Caleb Heathcote, his heirs and assigns forever. In testimony whereof, the parties to these presents have hereunto set their hands and affixed their seals, the day and year first above written.<sup>a</sup>

Sealed and delivered in  
presence of

WILLIAM LAWRENCE, and  
JOSEPH SAMUEL.

Pathunk.

Coharnus.

Betty Pathunk.

Willro Coharnus's wife.

Wacapo ✂ her mark.

Wampus, Indian, ○ his mark.

Cornelius, ∞ his mark.

Roe Roe, ⊏ his mark.

The above sale included the township of New Castle, and all that portion of North Castle lying West of the Byram river.

Upon the fourteenth day of February, 1701-2, the following letters patent were issued under the great seal of the province of New York, to Robert Walters and his associates; they rendering and paying therefore to the King or his heirs and surveyors, the yearly rent of six pounds five shillings, current money of New York, in lieu and stead of all other demands, &c.

#### THE WEST PATENT OF NORTH CASTLE.

“William the Third, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, etc., to all whom these presents shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas, our loving subjects, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Chollwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Simes, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens, have, by their petitions, presented unto our trusty and well beloved John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief of our province of New York, and the territories depending thereon in America, etc., prayed our grant and confirmation of a certain tract of land in our County of Westchester, bounded northerly by the manor of Cortlandt, and eastwardly with Bedford line of three miles square, the white fields and Byram River, southerly by the land of John Harrison, Rye line stretching to Byram River aforesaid, and the White Plains, and westwardly by Bronck's River and the manor of Philipsburgh, excepting out of the bounds aforesaid, all the land in Mr. Richbell's patent, according to the lines of the said patent, now in the tenure and occupation of Colonel

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. Indian deeds, warrant for survey. Lib. I, 52-53.

Caleb Heathcote, which first above named tract of land was purchased by Colonel Caleb Heathcote and others, with whom he has agreed, excepting James Mott and Henry Disbrow, whom he hath undertaken to satisfye. Within which bounds there are, by estimation, about five thousand acres of profitable land, besides wastes and woodlands, which reasonable request we being willing to grant, *know ye*, that of our special grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion, wee have given, granted, ratified, and confirmed, and by these presents doe, for us, our heirs, and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto our said loving subjects, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Simes, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens, all the above recited tract of land within our County of Westchester, and within the limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and singular the woods, underwoods, trees, timber, feedings, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, ponds, pools, waters, water courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, brooks, streams, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, mines, minerals, (silver and gold mines excepted,) and all other profits and benefits, privileges, and libertyes, advantages, hereditaments, and appurtenances whatsoever, to the aforesaid tract of land within the limits and bounds aforesaid mentioned, belonging, or in any ways appertaining, *to have and to hold*, all the aforesaid tract of land, together with all and singular the woods, underwoods, trees, timber, feedings, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, ponds, pools, waters, water courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, brooks, streams, fishing, fowling, hunting and hawking, mines, minerals, (silver and gold mines excepted,) and all other profits, benefits, privileges, liberties, advantages, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever to the aforesaid tract of land within the limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging or in any ways appertaining unto them, the said Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Simes, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens, their heirs and assigns, to the only proper use, benefit, and behoof of them, the said Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Simes, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens, their heirs and assigns forever, to be holden of us, our heirs, and successors, in free and common soccage, as of our manor of East Greenwich, in our County of Kent, within our Realm of England, yielding, rendering and paying therefore yearly, and every year forever, at our city of New York, unto us, our heirs and successors, or to such officer or officers as shall from time to time be empowered to receive the same, the annual and yearly rent of six pounds, five shillings, current money of New York, in lieu and stead of all other rents, dues, duties, services and demands whatsoever. In testimony whereof, we have caused the great seal of our said Province to be here unto affixed. Witness, John Nanfan, Esq., Lieut. Governor and Commander-in-chief of our province of New York, and the territories depending thereon in America, and vice-Admiral of the same, at our fort in New York, this 14th day of February, 1701, and in the 13th year of our reign.<sup>a</sup>

M. CLARKSON,

By his Honour's Command,

*Secretary.*

JOHN NANFAN.

<sup>a</sup> Albany Book of Patents, Vol. VI., p. 383. Original in possession of David W. Smith of Kensico.

This grant was subsequently known as the West Patent of North Castle.

Upon the 18th of February, 1701, occurs an "Indenture Decempartite" between Robert Walters, of the city of New York, Esq., of the first part; Leigh Atwood of the same place, Esq., of the second part, and eight others, named in the before mentioned patent, which recites the patent of 14th of February, 1701, and wherein it is covenanted and agreed upon between all parties "that no survivorship shall take place or affect in case of death of any of them, the said parties; and the lands and premises aforesaid shall with all convenient expedition be set out and divided equally into ten several distinct parts," &c., and cause devises, conveyances and assurgents in the law whatsoever for the better, more sure, perfect and absolute settling of said land and premises, &c.; "also to receive one-tenth part of all the rents and yearly profits which in the meantime shall be due, &c., sharing, costs," &c.<sup>a</sup>

February 21st, 1743, an agreement between the Receiver General and others, "concerning money that is coming to the former on the behalf of the King, for quit-rent of the *West Patent*."<sup>b</sup>

The same year Robert Walters and Peter Fauconier had rights concerning quit-rents in the West Patents. Peter Fauconier,<sup>c</sup> Esq., one of the early proprietors of this town, "was an attendant of Lord Cornbury to this country in 1702, afterwards a New York merchant, and receiver-general of the province, who in 1717 purchased Milesard's interest in one of the Newtown Patents on Long Island."<sup>d</sup>

Baird speaks of him as "a native of France, high in favor with Bellamont and Cornbury, Governors of New York, by the latter made collector and receiver-general of the province in 1705. He obtained large grants of land from the governors, and among the rest a patent to a tract within the territory originally claimed by the town of Rye. This, long known as Fauconiers West Patent, is now a part of the town of North Castle. On the application of the people of Rye for a patent in 1720, the council examined Mr. Fauconier, who made no objection to the granting of the petition."<sup>e</sup>

Peter Fauconier, Esq., left issue, William, whose children were Josiah, Ruth, Catharine and Hannah. John, second son of Peter, who resided at East Chester, was born December 18th, 1747, and died June 24th,

<sup>a</sup> Copied from the original doc. in possession of David W. Smith, of Kensico.

<sup>b</sup> Town Rec., vol. 1, p. 4.

<sup>c</sup> A family by the name of Faulkenner was seated in Surrey County, England. Arms, Pale of 8, ar and sa over all on a bond of the last, 3 cinquefoils or Crest a falcon ppr. belled or. The same arms with little variation, belong to the Fawconers or Fawkoners.

<sup>d</sup> Recker's Annals of Newtown, L. I., p. 152.

<sup>e</sup> Baird's Hist. of Rye.



1831, married Elizabeth Purdy who was born May 31st, 1749, and died Dec. 22d, 1799. Their children were David, of New York, born Dec. 10th, 1772; Jonathan, of Miltown, New York, born February 14, 1774; Roger, of New Jersey, born Aug. 20th, 1775; Josiah, of New York, born May 1st, 1780; William, of New York, born May 1st, 1780; Anne, born Dec. 9th, 1779, married Matthew Fogel; Elizabeth, born July, 1781, married William Baldwin; and Catharine, born Jan. 8, 1782, married John Fisher of White Plains.

In 1744 Joseph Hutchins and Caleb Green were appointed "assessors for the west side of the branch of Byram river;" "also Thomas Walters for the *West Patent*."

John Halleck, of North Castle, in 1755, "sold to Joseph Fowler and Caleb Fowler three quarters of an acre of undivided land in North Castle, within a certain Patent known and called by the name of Fauconier's *West Patent*, and to be in the right of Thomas Weaver, who was one of the Patentees of said Patent, it being a part of a greater right purchased 13th of March, 1753, of John Thomas, one of the representatives of Westchester county."

In the Secretary of State's office at Albany is a map of part of a tract of land (granted by letters patent under the great seal of the colony of New York, bearing date the fourteenth day of February, 1701-2, to Robert Walters and others) "which remains unsold, and contains four thousand one hundred and fifty-one acres, divided into sixteen lots by Charles Clinton, Jonathan Brown, and Elisha Budd, Commissioners, and Nathaniel Merritt, Surveyor, appointed by virtue of an act of the Lieutenant Governor, the Council, and the General Assembly of the colony of New York, passed the eighth day of January, 1762, entitled an act for the more effectual collecting of his Majesty's quit-rents in the colony of New York, and for partition of lands in order thereto," &c.<sup>a</sup>

Upon the 10th of June, 1776, occurs the following public notice for the sale of the above lands:

"WHEREAS his late majesty, King William the Third, by letters patent under the great seal of the colony of New York, bearing date the 14th day of February, 1701-2, and of the 13th year of his reign; did grant and confirm unto Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Simes, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens; a certain tract of land in the County of Westchester, bounded northerly by the manor of Cortlandt, easterly with Bedford line of three miles square, the White Fields and Byram river; southerly by the land of John Harrison, Rye line stretching to Byram river aforesaid, and the White Plains: and westerly by Bronck's river, and the manor of Philipsburgh, excepting out of the

<sup>a</sup> Field Book, Sec. of State's office.

bounds aforesaid, all the lands within Richbell's patent, according to the lines of the said patent, now in the tenure and occupation of Col. Caleb Heathcote; which first above named tract of land was purchased by Col. Caleb Heathcote, and others, with whom he has agreed, except James Mott, and Henry Disbrow, whom he hath undertaken to satisfy; within which bounds, there are by estimation, about 5,000 acres of profitable land, besides wastes and wood lands. And, whereas, we, the subscribers, in pursuance of a certain act of the lieutenant-governor, the council, and general assembly of this colony, entitled, An Act for the more effectual collecting of his majesty's quit-rents in the colony of New York, and for partition of lands in order thereto, have lately made a survey of all that part of the lands above mentioned, which have not been sold by the proprietors and owners thereof. We do hereby give notice, that true maps and field books of the survey of the said part thereof, and of the allotments made, specifying the bounds of every lot; on which maps the lots are laid down and numbered, and the number of acres in every lot; and the said maps and field books signed by us, and by Nathaniel Merrit, our surveyor, are filed, one of the said maps and field books in the office of the Clerk of the County of Westchester, and the other in the Secretary's office in the city of New York. And we do hereby appoint Wednesday, the 6th of August next, at the City Hall of the city of New York, to be the day and place for balloting for the said lots and allotments; and do require all persons interested, then and there to attend, and to see the several allotments balloted for. Given under our hands this 23d day of June, 1766.

[Pat. 7,223.]

“CHAR. CLINTON, } Surviving  
“JONATHAN BROWN, } Commissioners.”

We find the following indenture, on the 5th of April, 1774, between Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton, all of the *West Patent* of the North Castle, &c., of the first part, and Caleb Sands of Bedford, of the other part, witnesseth that his gracious majesty, King William the Third, of glorious memory, by letters patent, under the great seal of the province of New York, bearing date the fourteenth day of February, in the fourteenth year of his reign, granted unto Robert Walters and others a certain tract of land in the county of Westchester, bounded, &c., &c., all of which tract of land is called the West Patent of North Castle; and whereas the said Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton were deputed for to, and did, make a purchase of the greater part of the above-said tract of land for themselves and their associates,<sup>a</sup> as by a general map of the same may appear. Now this indenture witnesseth, that for and in consideration of the sum of £15 12s. of good current and lawful money of the province of New York, well and truly paid by the said Caleb Sands, one of the associates in making of the above said purchase, we the said Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton doth acknowledge by these presents, and therefore have given, granted, and released unto him, the said Caleb Sands, his heirs and assigns, all that certain part of the above recited tract of land containing thirty-nine acres, bounded as follows: by a heap of stones at the south-west corner of Bedford new purchase, so called, and running

<sup>a</sup> The original document was in the possession of the late Mr. Caleb Sands, of North Castle.

north with Bedford line till it comes to a chestnut oak tree, marked with a heap of stones about it, at the south-east corner of the land of Benjamin Hall, then westward to a white wood tree with a heap of stones about it, then south-eastwardly as the fence stands to a large black oak tree, marked, then more southerly as the fence stands to an oak stump or a cliff of rocks, still southerly to a chestnut sapling, on a knoll of rocks, then eastwardly as the fence stands, to a chestnut oak tree, marked, still eastwardly as the fence stands to the land of Peter Disbrow, from thence to the first bounds, a heap of stones, &c., &c.

BENJ. SMITH,  
CALEB FOWLER.

The principal proprietors of New Castle are the Wards, Concklins, Hiatts, Underhills, Haight, Carpenters, Greens, Kirbys, Davenport, Van Tassels, Griffens, Tomkins, Kipps, Secors, Bradys, Reynolds, Quinbys, Suttons, Sarles, and Merriots, &c., &c.

The Sutton family, who have been seated in this town for 136 years, derive their origin from Joseph Sutton, whose father John emigrated from the county of Linconshire, England, to Massachusetts. The family were anciently resident at Sutton, in Lincolnshire,<sup>a</sup> and represented by Robert Sutton, armiger, sheriff of that county, 22d of Henry VII (1506). Joseph Sutton, who removed to Long Island, died between 1765 and 1770, aged 80; married Mary Sands, and had issue; Joseph Sutton of this town, who died aged 80, leaving several children by his wife Deborah Haight, of Chappaqua. Caleb, the second son of first Joseph married Abby Pell, and died aged 70, leaving issue, Edward, Andrew, Pell, Mary, Sophie, Solomon, Henry and Caleb. James, third son of first Joseph, resided in Croton Valley, married Elizabeth Brown, and left issue, Mary, Jerusha, Hannah, Joseph, Amy and James. William of Croton, fourth son of first Joseph, married Dorcas Clapp, and died aged 80, leaving Jesse, William and Alice. Richardson of Croton, fifth son of Joseph first, was born July 11, 1732, and died 1776; married Elizabeth, daughter of Moses Quimby, who was born February 28, 1736—their issue being, Esther, born March 15, 1752, married Joseph Totten; Moses, born March 15, 1756; Daniel, born May 22, 1758; Deborah, born June 17, 1760; Robert, born April, 1762; Samuel, born January 22, 1764; Phœbe, born August 27, 1765; Mary, born March 7, 1767; Jerusha, born September 2, 1768; Abigail, born December 12, 1770; and Frances, born December 13, 1772. The daughters of the first Joseph were: Abby, who married Robert Fields; Mary, who married Samuel Palmer; Sophia, and Jerusha, who married Benjamin Field.

<sup>a</sup> The arms of Sutton are—ar. on a chev. betw. three armulets gu. as many crescents or Crest. a greyhound head couped erm., collared gu. garnished and ringed or. on the collar three armulets of the last.

Among the associate patentees of this town appears to have been Colonel Matthews, who held twelve hundred and eighty acres in the "West Patent."

The first election for town officers took place on the 5th of April, 1791, when the following individuals were chosen for the year ensuing: Isaac Smith, supervisor; Abraham Hyatt, town clerk; Sutton Craft, constable; Benjamin Carpenter, collector; and Caleb Carpenter, security; Caleb Haight, Nathaniel Smith, Henry Slason, assessors; Caleb Carpenter, Abraham Hyatt, overseers of the poor; Caleb Haight, Nathaniel Smith, Henry Slason, commissioners of roads; James Underhill, pounder; and Nathaniel Concklin, Jesse Brady, Isaac Powell, damage prizers and fence viewers,

"Isaac Smith, Caleb Carpenter and Isaiah Green, were deputed to meet a committee from the town of North Castle for to settle all disputes which may exist between the town of New Castle and the aforesaid town of any nature or kind whatsoever, also to settle the line between the two towns."

New Castle corners<sup>a</sup> is pleasantly situated in the north-east angle of the town, on the west side of Kirby's pond. It contains several stores, a post-office, a grist mill, optical works, and several dwelling houses. The neighborhood of this beautiful spot abounds with most romantic scenery. It is now about one hundred and twenty-eight years since the first families settled in this place. They appear to have met with great discouragements, and to have endured severe trials; for they were in the midst of a wilderness, and constantly exposed to Indian depredations. The Rev. Robert Jenney, minister of Rye, writing to the Propagation Society in 1722, thus alludes to the place: "I have lately been to a *settlement in the woods*, where I had good success, having baptized a whole family, parents and children."<sup>b</sup> This evidently refers to the present village, for in 1728 the Rev. T. Wetmore, his successor informs the same society, that "at North Castle, a *new settlement in the woods*, there are more than forty families—most of which are unbaptized, and that he preaches there every fifth Sunday."<sup>c</sup>

Prior to the Revolution, North Castle formed one of the precincts or districts of Rye Parish, which accounts for the parochial clergy officiating here at this early period. In 1725, North Castle contributed towards the minister's rate and poor of the parish, £2 9s. *od.* The same year Mr. Dwight was school-master at North Castle with a salary of £10 a year.

<sup>a</sup> Formerly called North Castle.

<sup>b</sup> Rep. Propagation Soc.

<sup>c</sup> Propagation Soc. Rec.



At a vestry meeting, held March the 1st, 1730, for the parish of Rye, it was ordered, that "whereas the vestrymen of the district of *North Castle* have neglected to make up their parish rate last year and this year, though often requested thereto, ordered therefore by ye vestry and justices, that the *North Castle vestrymen*, for ye last year and this year do appear at Rye at Francis Doughty's, on the 16th of this month at noon, in order to make their rates without any farther delay, or ordered to be presented immediately, and that the clerk do send forthwith a copy of this order to said *North Castle vestrymen*."<sup>a</sup> The Rev. Mr. Wetmore, writing to the Propagation Society in 1753, states, "that his congregations at Rye, White Plains, North Castle and Bedford are large and flourishing; the new light preachers have removed from Bedford, and there is some hopes of the people uniting with North Castle towards supporting a minister."

Among the reports of the Society in 1761, occurs the following: "Second Sunday in October, 1761, the Rev. Mr. Dibble preached at the opening of St. George's church, North Castle. Mr. St. George Talbot, the pious and noble benefactor, was present, and was highly pleased with the number and devout behaviour of the people. The same day, Mr. Dibble baptized thirteen infants, and one adult.

In the spring of 1762, St. George's church was visited by the Rev. George Dibble and St. George Talbot, Esq. Of the latter gentleman, Mr. Dibble thus writes to the Society: "He is indefatigable in his endeavors to serve the interests of true religion and our holy Church, whose services I find universally acceptable, and his life agreeable to his public character. He was (continues Mr. Dibble) surprised both at the number and devout behaviour of the people at *North Castle*, for the church could not contain them," &c.<sup>b</sup>

The following inscriptions are copied from monuments in the graveyard:

IN  
Memory of  
ISAAC LOUNSBERRY,  
Who was born October 11th, 1703.  
and died March 3,  
1773.

IN  
Memory of  
JAMES WRIGHT,  
Who was born March 14, 1721,  
and departed this life  
May the 17th, 1776.  
Aged 55 years, 1 mo. and 25 days.

There are also memorials to the Greens, Woolseys, Ferrises, Sarleses,

<sup>a</sup> Rye Rec.

<sup>b</sup> Hawkin's Hist. Not. of the Missions of the Church of England. Original letters in Lambeth collection, vol. xix. 208.

Harts, Pinckneys, Tompkinses, Carys, Seamans, Forshays, Haineses, Millers, Carpenters, Clapps, Merritts, Montrosses, &c.

The Methodist Episcopal church of this place was first incorporated in 1824. Caleb Kirby, James Fish, John B. Horton, Tyler Fountain and Benjamin Kirby, trustees.<sup>a</sup>

The second church was enlarged in 1843, and the present church was erected in 1867.

During the war, this part of the country was greatly annoyed by the enemy, who frequently made sudden inroads, plundering and capturing the defenceless inhabitants. Religious services were consequently suspended; and, for a long time, St. George's church was occupied as a guard-house and hospital by the Continental troops.

The first incorporation of this church, subsequent to the Revolution, took place on the 19th of April, 1784, under the style and title of "The Trustees of the Protestant Episcopal Church, in the townships of Bedford and North Castle."<sup>b</sup>

In consequence of an Act passed for the relief of the Protestant Episcopal church on the 17th of March, 1795, this church was again incorporated under the name and title of "the Protestant Episcopal church in the united towns of Bedford and New Castle, to continue by the regular name of St. George's church." Charles Haight of New Castle, and William Miller, Esq., of Bedford, church-wardens; Samuel Raymond, Gabriel Smith, David Haight, James McDonald, Marmaduke Foster, Gilbert Martin, Nicholas Haight and Samuel Smith, vestrymen.<sup>c</sup> Chas. Haight gave the site for the church; and, being a carpenter and vestryman, built the church. At this period the Rev. Theodosius Bartow appears to have been officiating minister for the united parishes of Bedford and New Castle. From 1804 to 1819 services were performed here by the clergy of Bedford. At a meeting of the vestry, November 12th, 1796, it was ordered "that William Miller, Esq., be empowered to commence and carry on a suit against Philip I. Livingston, for money left by St. George Talbot to the churches of Bedford and North Castle." At a meeting of the same, held on the third of March, 1803, "Mr. Miller informed the board, that the money bequeathed to the united churches by the late St. George Talbot, had been recovered by a judgment, obtained in the Supreme Court, against Philip I. Livingston; and the said money, after deducting charges, will probably amount to about twenty-five hundred dollars." In 1804, Trinity church, New York, liberally endowed the united parishes with the

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. A. 183.

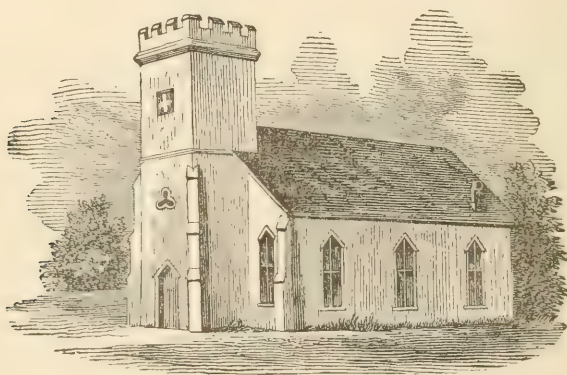
<sup>b</sup> Incorporation of Religious Societies, Lib. A. 12.

<sup>c</sup> Incorporation of Religious Societies, Lib. A. 64.

sum of one hundred and fifty dollars ; also in 1808, the further sum of one hundred and fifty dollars.

St. George's church, which had stood for nearly sixty years, was dismantled in 1819 ; and, by Mr. Godfrey Haines, (acting under authority of the vestry,) sold at public auction for the paltry sum of forty shillings. It deserves, however, to be recorded that Judge Miller, one of the wardens of the united parishes, strenuously opposed its destruction. The principal part of the timber is still preserved in a barn on the property of Mr. Hezekiah Raymond, a short distance only from the old burying-ground. From that time, until within a short period, services have been entirely confined to Bedford.

In 1852, through the zealous efforts of the Rev. Dr. Harris, of White Plains, a new church was built within a few yards of the site of old St.



St. Mark's Church ; built 1852.

George's. It is a very neat and church-like structure, and is pleasantly situated on the west side of Kirby's pond, the waters of which empty into the Pepemighting or Kisco river. St. Mark's church was opened for divine service, January 25th, 1852 ; on which occasion the Rev. Dr. Harris preached a sermon from Haggai ii : 9—"The glory of this latter house shall be greater than of the former, saith the Lord of hosts : and in this place will I give peace, saith the Lord of hosts."

St. Mark's church was incorporated on the 7th of October, 1850 ; Gilbert Martin and Henry D. Tyler, wardens ; Gilbert Brundage, Thomas Wright, Thomas Searles, John Cary, Andrew Dunn, Simeon Woolsey, George W. Brower, and Lewis Tripp, vestrymen.

## LIST OF CLERGY.

## RECTORS.

REV. ROBERT W. HARRIS,  
 REV. ISAAO DYCKMAN VERMILYEA,  
 REV. JOSEPH W. HYDE,  
 REV. C. W. BOLTON,  
 REV. ALEXANDER HAMILTON,  
 REV. JAMES W. SPARKS,  
 REV. JOSEPH H. YOUNG,  
 REV. CHARLES B. MEE.

During the Revolution, this part of the country was greatly annoyed by the enemy, who frequently made sudden inroads, plundering and capturing the defenceless inhabitants. February 7th, 1782, (says General Heath,) about fifty of De Lancey's horse came out within four miles of Chappequa, where they halted. On the 8th they moved toward North Castle, but turned off by Wright's Mills; from thence to King Street, Rye." <sup>a</sup> For a long time St. George's church was occupied as a guard-house and hospital by the Continental troops.

In the vicinity of Abraham Week's mill-dam, in this town, a party of British refugees waylaid and murdered a French doctor of some distinction. It appears that the unfortunate man was on his route to the American hospital at New Castle, when arrested by his murderers, who dragged him from his horse, and conveyed him into an adjoining swamp. Here, having secured their victim, they proceeded to play a game at cards—as to which of them should be his executioner. In vain their victim pleaded in broken English for his life, numbering his children upon his fingers. The lot fell upon one Totten, who, approaching the doctor, instantly shot him dead as he knelt on the ground. He was now stripped of his clothing, watch and money, and dragged a few rods further into the bushes. The skeleton was afterwards found, and interred upon the spot. <sup>b</sup>

Near the centre of the town is situated the small hamlet of Sarlesville. Here the town business is principally transacted.

In the south-west corner are located the Friends' meeting houses. The Friends' Society was organized here some time prior to the Revolution. <sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Heath's Mem. 328.

<sup>b</sup> Tradition reports that the following remarkable accident befell the assassin soon after: he was struck by lightning, which dissolved the metal on his shoe buckles. When asked if this was a fact, the conscience-stricken murderer replied, "If I should say yes, that would be an admission of my guilt." Totten is said to have been a terror not only to himself, but all who knew him. This miserable man lies in the Friends' burying-ground at Pines Bridge.

<sup>c</sup> The Methodist Episcopal Church was erected in 1845.



The general surface of New Castle is uneven, hills and vales interspersed; soil gravelly, clay and sandy loam. The natural growth of wood is of various kinds—as oak, chestnut, hickory, ash, maple, walnut, elm and white wood, &c. The Chappequa hills in this town are worthy of particular notice. They begin near the great hill known by the name of the *Buttermilk* Mountain, and extend north-easterly four miles, terminating northward in the Kisco Mountain. These hills are very stony and rocky in general, but afford vast quantities of excellent timber. At the foot of the Kisco Mountain is situated the Westchester and Harlem railroad depot. New Castle is exceedingly well watered by rivers, rivulets and springs. The Saw Mill River (Nepera) takes its rise from two springs near the centre of the town, one of them situated on the land of Job Collins, the other on the property of Willett Kipps. The Bronx River (Aquehung) has its source in the *Dark Valley* of this town. The Mill River (Pocanteco) rises on the lands of Isaac Lownsberry.

There are two or three large ponds, which supply valuable mill seats. Kirby's Pond receives its waters from Simmons's Pond, while its outlet passes into the Pepemighting, or Kisco. Wampus Pond is situated on the boundary line between New and North Castle. This pond covers about fifty acres, and empties into the Byram (Armonck) River. Fish were never caught here until within a few years, when pike were put therein, which have multiplied exceedingly.<sup>a</sup> Upon the west side of Wampus Pond rises *Prospect Hill*, the property of Mr. Edward Quimby.<sup>b</sup> It is impossible to describe the variegated prospect that meets the eye from its summit, a more extensive view is not to be had in the town. Near this hill an iron mine was opened seventy-four years ago; but, the war commencing, put a stop to the project, which has never since been resumed.

The Chappequa sulphur springs, which have acquired some celebrity, are situated “four miles north-east of Sing Sing. They issue from a cleft in the rock, near the base of a hill about two hundred feet in height. The water, as it rises from the rocks, is transparent, but in its course deposits a reddish yellow powder. The salts held in solution are said to be sulphate of lime, chloride of calcium, and the muriate of iron, and manganese. The water is supposed to possess medicinal properties, similar to those usually ascribed to sulphur springs.”<sup>c</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Ten years ago vast flocks of wild duck and geese used to frequent this pond.

<sup>b</sup> The Quimby family were among the first settlers of this part of New Castle, and descend from John Quimby, one of the patentees of the town of Westchester, in 1664. Jno. Quimby, of Stratford, 1654, had one child born there, but after some years removed, and was one of the first settlers of W. C.

<sup>c</sup> Nat. Hist. of N. Y. Part III, 141. Sulphuretted hydrogen is the gas evolved.

It is a singular fact, that sulphuretted springs are to be found at short distances from this spot to Fort Miller, in Washington County, a distance of a hundred and fifty miles.

In the north-east corner of the town lies the romantic valley of the Pepemighting,<sup>a</sup> through which the river of that name meanders in its passage to the Croton. This part of New Castle has been recently taken from the adjoining township of Somers.<sup>b</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> Misnamed the Kisco.

<sup>b</sup> Laws of N. Y., May 12, 1846. 69th Session, chap. 249. The Sutton family settled in this part of the town 104 years ago.



# THE TOWN OF NEW ROCHELLE.

---

The town of New Rochelle (so-called after La Rochelle, capital of the department of Lower Charente in France, named Rupella by the ancient Romans) formerly constituted a portion of the manor of Pelham, and is situated on the south-east side of the county, distant eight miles south of the village of White Plains, and one hundred and forty miles from Albany—bounded by Scarsdale on the North, by Mamaroneck and



Indian Image Stone.

Scarsdale on the East, by Hutchinson's river and Pelham on the West, and on the South by the Sound.

This tract of land was originally included in the grant made by the Indians in the year 1640, to the Dutch West India Company; but no settlement was actually commenced upon it until long after Thomas Pell's purchase, which occurred in 1654.

The Aborigines, who were one of the seven tribes of the sea coast called "*Siwanoy*," appear to have resided principally on Davenport's Neck, where they had a large settlement denominated "*Shippa*." About 1746, as we are assured by the old inhabitants, the Neck was covered with Indian wigwams; of this, the extensive "shell-beds" on its southern shore afford conclusive evidence. A few settlements were also scattered



along the fertile meadows bordering the various fresh water streams, especially in the northern part of the town. One of these was situated on the property of the late John Soulice, where there is also a quarry of quartz from which the Indians manufactured their javelins and arrow-heads. Here also was discovered, a few years ago, the celebrated image-stone,—an object of great veneration with the Aborigines. Beneath this curious object lay a smooth stone (weighing seven pounds) resembling in shape a kidney and encompassed with a circular groove.

As late as 1695 the Indians were in the habit of coming down into the northern part of New Rochelle from the neighborhood of White Plains, for a cider frolic, which they considered as a kind of usu-fruct title to the soil. The remains of an oak tree which they burnt upon one of these occasions, is still visible on the farm of the late John Soulice. This seems to have been the last chapter in their history connected with New Rochelle; although as late as 1767 a small remnant of the Aborigines (then inhabiting the Highlands) visited the town.

Upon the sixth day of October, 1666, Richard Nicolls, governor of the province, did give, grant, ratify and confirm unto Thomas Pell, gentleman, all that tract of land lying to the eastward of Westchester bounds (subsequently known as the manor of Pelham.) &c., “which said tract of land hath heretofore been purchased of the Indian proprietors, and ample satisfaction given for the same.”<sup>a</sup>

In 1669 the patentee devised the whole manor of Pelham to his nephew, John Pell (commonly called Lord Pell,) who obtained a further confirmation for the same from Thomas Dongan, governor of the province, on the 29th of October, 1687.<sup>b</sup>

There can be no doubt that some of the French Huguenots had already commenced a settlement at New Rochelle prior to the above mentioned confirmation from Dongan to Pell; for Maria Graton, widow of William Cothonneau, had conveyed to Alexander Allaire a tract of land, in what is now New Rochelle, on the 24th of September, 1686; and Allaire also states that he had sold a tract of land to Theophilus Forestier, of New Rochelle, on the 17th of March, 1687.<sup>c</sup>

Upon the 20th of September, 1689, we find John Pell, lord of the manor of Pelham, and Rachel, his wife, conveying to Jacob Leisler of the city of New York, merchant, “all that tract of land lying and being within the manor of Pelham containing six thousand acres of land, &c., &c. (the present township of New Rochelle.) The grantee and his heirs

<sup>a</sup> See Pelham for Thomas Pell's Patent.

<sup>b</sup> See Pelham for John Pell's confirmation.

<sup>c</sup> White Plains Rec. Book of Deeds, vol., E, p. 29, vol. F p. 2.

yielding and paying unto the said John Pell and his heirs, &c., as lords of the said manor, *one fat calf* on every four and twentieth day of June (festival of St. John the Baptist) yearly, &c., if demanded, &c."

#### JOHN PELL'S GRANT OF NEW ROCHELLE.

*To all Christian people* to whom this present writing shall come, John Pell, proprietor of the manor of Pelham, within the county of Westchester, in the province of New York, within the dominion of New England, gentleman, and Rachel his wife, sendeth greeting in our Lord God everlasting. KNOW YE that the said John Pell and Rachel his wife for and in consideration of the sum of sixteen hundred and seventy-five pounds and twenty-five shillings sterling, current silver money of this province, to him in hand paid and secured to be paid at the, or before, the ensealing and delivery thereof by Jacob Leisler of the city of New York, merchant, the receipt whereof they, the said John Pell and Rachel his wife, do thereby acknowledge themselves to be fully satisfied and contented, and thereof, and of every part and parcel thereof, do hereby freely and clearly acquit and exonerate and discharge the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs, executors, administrators, and every of them, by these presents have granted, bargained and sold, and by these presents do grant, bargain and sell unto the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees, all that tract of land lying and being within said manor of Pelham, containing six thousand acres of land, and also one hundred acres of land more, which the said John Pell and Rachel his wife, do freely give and grant for the French church erected, or to be erected, by the inhabitants of the said tract of land, or by their assignees, being butted and bounded as herein is after expressed, beginning at the west side of a certain white oak tree, marked on all four sides, standing at high water mark at the south end of Hog Neck, by shoals, harbour, and runs, north-westerly, through the great fresh meadow lying between the road and the sound, and from the north side of the said meadow where the said line crosses the said meadow, to run from thence due north to Bronckes river, which is the west division line between the said John Pell's land and the aforesaid tract, bounded on the south-easterly by the sound and salt water, and to run east-northerly to a certain piece of salt meadow lying at the salt creek which runneth up to Cedar Tree brook, or Gravelly brook, and is the bounds to southern. Bounded on the east by a line that runs from said meadow north-westerly by marked trees, to a certain black oak tree standing a little below the road, marked on four sides, and from thence to run due north four miles and a half, more or less, and from the north side of the said west line, ending at Bronckes's river, and from thence to run easterly till it meets with the north end of the said easternmost bounds, together with all and singular the islands and islets before the said tract of land lying and being in the sound and salt water, with all the harbors, creeks, rivers, rivulets, runns, waters, lakes, meadows, ponds, marshes, salt and fresh, swamps, soils, timber, trees, pastures, feedings, enclosures, fields, quarries, mines, minerals, (silver and gold mines only excepted,) fishing, hunting, fowling, hawking, and also all the messuages, houses, tenements, barns, mills, mill dams, as they were at the time of the ensealing and delivery of the articles of agreement of sale for said land, bearing date the second day of July, in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred and

eighty-seven. As relation being thereto had, doth more fully and at large appear, as also the reversion and reversions, remainder and remainders of a certain lott of land and meadow, now in the tenure and occupation of John Jefferd, and Olive his wife, being part of the aforesaid six thousand acres of land, with all the privileges belonging thereto or any wise appertaining, or therewith now used, occupied and enjoyed, as all the right, title, interest, reversion, remainder, property, claime, and demand whatsoever, of, in, and to the same, and any part thereof, as is hereafter expressed. To have and to hold the aforesaid tract of land, with all other the above granted premises, unto the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assigns, for ever, to his and their own soul and proper use, benefit, and behoof, for ever, yielding and paying unto the said John Pell, his heirs and assigns, lords of the said manor of Pelham, to the assignees of him or them, or their or either of them, as an acknowledgment to the lords of the said manor, one fat calf on every four and twentieth day of June, yearly and every year forever if demanded. The said John Pell and Rachel his wife, for themselves, their heirs, executors, and administrators respectively, do hereby covenant, promise, and grant to and with the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees, in manner and form following, that is to say, at the time of the ensealing hereof, they, the said John Pell and Rachel his wife, do avouch themselves to be true, sole, and lawful owners of all the afore bargained premises, and that they are lawfully seized of and in the same and every part thereof in their own proper right of a good and indefinable estate of inheritance in fee simple, and have in themselves good right, full power and lawful authority to sell and dispose of the same as aforesaid; and the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees, shall and may from henceforth and forever hereafter, peaceably, quietly, have, hold, occupy, possess, and enjoy the above granted premises, and every part and parcel thereof, free and clear without any charge or intimidation, caused, made, suffered, or granted by said John Pell and Rachel his wife, or either of them, their or either of their heirs in estate, right, title, interest in law or equity, trust, charge, or other molestation, whatsoever. And the said John Pell and Rachel his wife, for themselves respectively, and for their respective heirs, do covenant, promise, and grant to warrant and defend the above granted premises with their appurtenances, and every part and parcel thereof, unto the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assignees, forever, against the lawful charges and demands. In witness whereof the said John Pell and Rachel his wife have hereunto set their hands and seals in New York, the twentieth day of September, in the first year of the reign of our sovereign lord and lady, William and Mary, King and Queen of England, &c., &c., in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred eighty and nine.

JOHN PELL.

The mark of<sup>a</sup>

R

RACHEL PELL.

Whenever the *fat calf* was demanded as an acknowledgment by the lords of the manor on the festival of St. John the Baptist each Huguenot paid his proportion toward its purchase. This ceremony was last performed in a house which occupied the site of James Morgan's residence in Eastchester; a feast invariably followed the presentation.

<sup>a</sup> Copied from original document in possession of the late Bonnet Underhill, Esq., of Upper Rochelle.

Leisler, the above grantee (who only survived this conveyance about eighteen months) was authorized by the Committee of Public Safety (a body appointed by the people) on the 16th of August, 1689, "to use the power and authority of commander-in-chief, until order should come from their majesties," King William and Queen Mary; "and further, to do all such acts as are requisite for the good of the province, taking counsel with the militia and civil authority as occasion shall require."

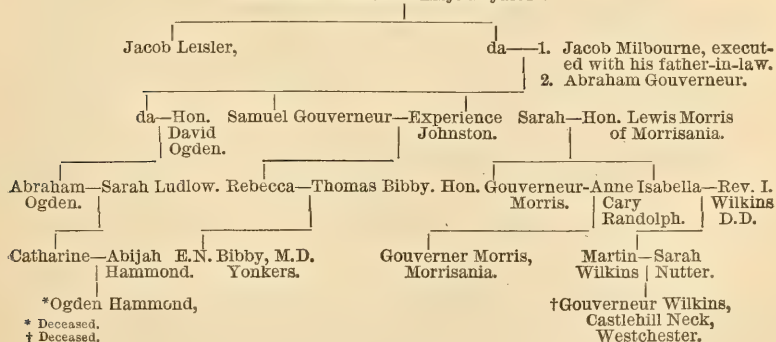
For assuming the government on this occasion Leisler was afterwards tried on a charge of high treason and executed on the 17th of May, 1691. "But everything proves that Leisler was condemned unlawfully and executed unjustly," but afterwards the act of attainder was reversed; this was done at the instance of young Leisler and the French Huguenots.

It has been the policy (continues Dunlap) of men of all ages to preserve the memory of the founders of the nation they claimed as their own. It serves to perpetuate nations. Rome, the eternal, bears the name of its reputed founder. The founder of the Democracy of New York was Jacob Leisler, and New York is now an empire founded on Democracy. The line that says, "an honest man is the noblest work of God," has been received as a truism. And Jacob Leisler was truly an honest man, who—though a martyr to the cause of liberty, and sacrificed by injustice, aristocracy and party malignity—ought to be considered as one in whom New York should take pride. In the possession of E. N. Bibby, Esq., of New York, is a gold piece, of the time of James II., said to have been in the possession of the unfortunate Leisler, the night preceding his execution. Around the edge of which is an inscription cut with his penknife.

The descendants of this illustrious man were once quite numerous in this county, as may be best described in the following table:

DESCENDANTS OF LEISLER, RESIDENT IN WESTCHESTER COUNTY.

Hon. Jacob Leisler—Elsje Thymens.





Throughout the year 1690, (the one preceding his execution,) we find Jacob Leisler releasing to the exiled Huguenots, the lands which he had purchased in their behalf, of John Pell, in 1689.

To all Christian people to whom this present writing shall come, Jacob Leisler of the city of New York, merchant, sendeth greeting in our Lord God everlasting. Whereas, John Pell of the manor of Pelham, Esq., together with Rachel his wife, have, by their certain deed in writing, from under our hands and seals, bearing date the 20th of September, A.D., 1689, given, granted, bargained and sold, unto the said Jacob Leisler, his heirs and assigns forever, all that tract of land lying within the said manor of Pelham, containing six thousand acres of land, and also one hundred acres of land more, which the said John Pell and Rachel his wife, hath given freely to such, or cause to be erected for the French Church, by the inhabitants residing thereon as relation thereunto being had, doth more fully and at large appear, *now know ye*, that I the said Jacob Leisler, for and in consideration of a certain sum of money to me in hand paid or secured, at or before the ensembling and delivery hereof, by John Neufville, of the city of New York, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, and thereof, and of any part and parcel thereof, have granted, bargained and sold, and by these presents do grant, bargain and sell, unto the said John Neufville all that certain piece or parcel of land situate and being within the manor of Pelham, being 200 acres of land, 40 acres thereof being in the small lot bounded on the north by the Boston road, on the south by the creek, on the east by the land of Mary Levilaine, and on the west by the land of Lewis Carre and one hundred and sixty acres of land on the great lott with Mary Levelaine, Gabriel Le Voiteurs and Machett, which are not divided lands, his proportionable interest in the commons of the six thousand acres of land, and in the fresh and salt meadows of the said six thousand acres therein, comprehending four acres of land on the little commons, together with all the appurtenances thereunto belonging, to have and to hold the said land and premises with their appurtenances, unto the said John Neufville, his heirs and assignees for ever, and the said Jacob Leisler doth by these presents covenant, grant and agree to and with the said John Neufville, his executors, administrators and assignees, in his and their quiet and peaceable possession and seizen, according to the same right and title, as to me appertaineth by the afore-said deed of sale, made and delivered to me, the said Jacob Leisler, and no farther, he the said John Neufville, paying his proportion of the quit-rent on the land mentioned and expressed. In witness whereof, I, the said Jacob Leisler, have set my hand and seal to these presents, this one and twentieth day of May, A.D. 1699.

The quantity of acres I acknowledge be above the limits, I will not engage at all.

Signed,

New York, 31 May, 1690.

JACOB LEISLER, ELSJE LEISLER.

The same year, Jacob Leisler, with the consent of Elsje, his wife, conveyed to Alexander Allaire, one hundred acres. Also to Louis Guion, a tract consisting of one hundred and thirty-eight acres, &c., &c.

The annexed receipt is taken from the town records :

NEW YORK, 8th Sept. 1690.

*a* Item: received of Mr. John Bouteillier, the sum of nine and twenty pounds seven shillings and two pence, being in full for the last payment of his lands.

Received by me,

RACHEL PELL.

The township of New Rochelle was first surveyed and divided into lots or farms on the 20th of November, 1693, by Alexander Allaire and Captain Bond, the latter being a surveyor. This division was made by running a straight line directly north from the old Boston road to Hutchinson's river, and laying out lots on each side of it. The land south of the Boston road, was divided into twenty-six lots. Leisler's and La-counte's neck (now Davenport's neck) contained, according to the survey, two hundred acres.

Upon the 20th of November, 1700, Sir John Pell<sup>b</sup> and Rachel, his wife, granted to Daniel Sampson and Isaac Cantin, one hundred acres, "provided that the purchasers and their assignees, shall do suit and service, now or at any time hereafter, from time to time in the manor court, and pay their proportion to the minister of the place."<sup>c</sup>

The Huguenots,<sup>d</sup> or French Protestants of New Rochelle, were a part of the vast multitude who were driven from France by persecution for conscience sake, and sought a refuge in lands where they might enjoy religious freedom. Some of them, it is said, came directly from the West Indies, where they had lived for some years after leaving France, while others came no doubt from England, and were a part of the 50,000 persecuted who fled into that country four years before the revocation of the edict of Nantz. This is confirmed by the charter of Trinity Church in New Rochelle, wherein they specify that "*they fled from France in 1681.*"

They were, no doubt, aided in their escape from France by the English vessels that lay for some time off the Island of Rhé, opposite La Rochelle, in which they were conveyed to England. Tradition says, that they were subsequently transported to this place in one of the King's ships, and landed on Davenport's Neck, at a place afterwards called Bauffet's or Bonnefoy's Point. Soon after their arrival we find them thus addressing Governor Fletcher :

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. 20.

<sup>b</sup> So styled in the Town Records.

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec. p. 10.

<sup>d</sup> The epithet Huguenot (which has been a subject of much discussion) is traced to the word Eignot, derived from the German Eide-genossen—federati or allied.—Mr. G. P. Disosway.

## PETITION FROM NEW ROCHELLE.

“To His Excellency Col. Benjamin Fletcher, Governor in Chief, and Captain General of ye Province of New-York, and dependencies, &c.

The humble petition of ye inhabitants of New Rochelle,

HUMBLY SHEWETH,

That your petitioners having been forced by the late persecutions in France to forsake their country and estates, and flye to ye Protestant Princes. Their Majestyes by their proclamation of ye 25th of Aprill, 1689, did grant them an azile in all their dominions, with their Royall protection; wherefore they were invited to come and buy lands in this province, to the end that they might by their labour help the necessities of their families, and did spend therein all their smale store, with the help of their friends, whereof they did borrow great sums of money. They are above twenty (MS. torn) poor and needy, not able . . . . tles and clothing, much . . . . they did hitherto beare above their . . . . thereby reduced to a lamentable condition, as having been compelled to sell for that purpose the things which are most necessary for their use. Wherefore your petitioners humbly pray,

That your Excellency may be pleased to take their case in serious consideration, and out of Charity and pity, to grant them for some years what help and priveleges your Excellency shall think convenient,

And your petitioners in duty bound shall ever pray, &c.

THAUVET ELSI COTHOUNEAU.”<sup>a</sup>

“The cruelties which they suffered in France are beyond anything of the kind on record, and in no age was there ever such a violation of all that is sacred, either with relation to God or man; and when we consider the exalted virtues of that glorious band of brothers, we are amazed, while we are delighted with their fortitude and courage. Rather than renounce their Christian principles they endured outrages shocking to humanity, persecutions of unheard of enormity, and death in all its horrors. The complaint of Justin Martyr to the Roman Emperor, that the Christians were punished with torture and death upon the bare profession of their being such, might have been made by the French Protestants. To be a Huguenot, was enough to ensure condemnation.

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Hist. N. Y., vol. iii, p. 926. The Rev. Antoine Verren, D.D., in a discourse delivered on the 26th June, 1862, at the laying of the corner stone of the Prot. Epis. French Ch. Dieu St. Esprit, N. Y., says: “I have it from a parishioner more than octogenarian (the deceased pious *Vaultiere* of Beade street, whose loneliness during the first months of my arrival among you I used frequently by the side of his bed to comfort with the words of the Lord, who related to me that he had seen here himself old men the fathers of whom had told them often that they had emigrated to this country after the capture (1628) of La Rochelle, by the Cardinal *ministre*, and by hundreds, hundreds, hundreds, under his successors, and *before* that monarch had repealed the *Edict of Nantes*; for already our poor brethren had settled churches and pastors at Narraganset and Boston, which is a *fact* shown by our correspondence with them all then preserved to this day, in our archives, and the first minutes of our own old records, are, by several years, of a date anterior to that revocation. “The Huguenots.” A discourse by Rev. Antoine Verren, D.D. Translated from the French by Rev. William Morris, LL.D. New York: George F. Nesbit & Co., printers, 1862.

Whoever bore this name were imprisoned, arraigned for their lives; and adhering to their profession, were condemned by merciless judges to the flames. Some, of the name and character, were murdered in cold blood, and massacred without any legal forms of justice.

"It is a singular fact, (continues Mr. Disosway, to whom we are indebted for the materials of this sketch,) that the Reformation originated in France, upon her own soil, and its earliest seeds were germinated in the University of Paris, then a stronghold of Romanized faith. At this time, the University was the principal seat of European learning and Roman Catholic orthodoxy.

"Among the people of Picardy and Dauphiny, the first principles of the great work appeared before they were manifest in any other country. This is the fact, if we regard dates; and, therefore, the earliest honors of the Reformation belong to France; a circumstance which has been generally overlooked. Still Luther, in zeal, knowledge and success, was the master-spirit of the age; and, in its fullest sense, he deserves the epithet of the first reformer.

"Among the first doctors of theology in Paris, who zealously embraced the ever-blessed Reformation, was Lefevre; who, while engaged in a task of collecting the legends of saints and martyrs, felt a ray of divine light from on high suddenly flash into his mind; and, abandoning his work, cast away such foolish things and embraced the Holy Scriptures. The new impulse grew rapidly in his heart, and he soon communicated its divine truth to his classes in the University. Of this individual, Beza remarked; 'It was he who boldly began the revival of the holy religion of Jesus Christ.' Thus a new era opened in France, and the Reformation soon made rapid progress. One of its first witnesses in the court of royalty was the celebrated princess, Margaret of Valois, Duchess of Alencon, and sister to the reigning monarch, Francis the First.<sup>a</sup> She is said to have dignified her profession by a pure, religious and blameless life, amidst the dissolute and literary household of her royal brother, etc.

"The Bishop of Meaux, through Margaret, sent to the king a translation of St. Paul's epistles richly illuminated, adding: 'They will make a truly royal dish of a fatness that never corrupts; and, having a power to restore all manner of sickness, the more we taste them, the more we hunger after them, with desires that are ever fed and never cloyed.'

"The fires of persecution now began to rage against this new sect.

<sup>a</sup> Margaret selected for her emblem the marigold. "Which," says Brantome, the annalist of the court, "in its flower and leaf has the most resemblance to the sun, and, turning, follows its course." Her device was, 'Non inferiora secutus'—'I seek not things below;'—signifying," continues our author, "that her actions, thoughts, purposes and desires, were directed to that exalted Sun, namely God."



John Le Clerc was the first martyr of the gospel in France. He was the pastor of the Church at Meaux. For writing against Antichrist of Rome, he was seized by the enraged priest, whipped three successive days, and then branded as a heretic with a heated iron on his forehead. But the martyr uttered not a groan, and he was again set at liberty. He then withdrew to Metz, where more awful sufferings awaited him; and again in the power of his enemies, they cut off his right hand; and, tormenting him with red-hot irons, he was at last consumed by a slow fire. During all these horrid tortures his mind was kept in perfect fidelity and peace, and he ejaculated solemnly: 'Israel trust in the Lord; He is their help and their shield.' Such was the first confessor of Jesus Christ who suffered and died in France; and, therefore, demands our especial notice. A system of terror soon began over the whole of France.

"But in vain, did its enemies oppose; the glorious march of the Reformation was onward and sure. France had now been baptized with the blood of the martyrs!

"In the midst of perils, opposition and persecution, the first national synod was called at the metropolis of the kingdom. This council published to the world their confession, which is entitled, 'The Confession of Faith held and Professed by the Reformed Churches of France, Received and Enacted by their First National Synod, Celebrated in the City of Paris, and year of our Lord, 1559.'

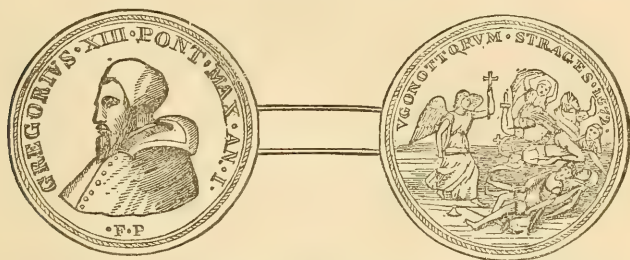
"In their contests at this period the Huguenot forces were led by the celebrated and brave Coligny and the Prince of Condé, two illustrious names in their annals. 'The Duke of Guise headed the papal armies. Towns were taken and retaken; when the Huguenots triumphed, they destroyed altars and images; and the Romanists in their turn burned all the Bibles they could seize. Such were the effects of fanaticism on both sides. To assert that the excesses were only committed by one party would be untrue, and that some of our race were allied to angels; but we hazard nothing in saying that the reformed, in almost every instance, resorted to arms from motives of self-preservation."

"Upon Sunday, August the 24th, 1572, was perpetrated the massacre of St. Bartholomew. De Thou, a popish historian, relates that thirty thousand perished on this terrible occasion. Another estimates one hundred thousand. In Paris alone, they amounted to ten thousand; and, among the number, five hundred Huguenot lords, knights, and military officers, with several thousand gentlemen.

"This massacre, which was perpetrated on St. Bartholomew's day, in the year of our Lord 1572—a year most aptly designated as infamous by

Lord Clarendon, may be pronounced the foulest and the bloodiest of ancient or modern times. The black deed has handed down the names of Catherine de Medicis and her son, Charles IX., to the universal detestation of after ages.

"Charles, by a public edict, proclaimed himself the author of it, pretending that he was forced to the measure by the Admiral Coligny and his friends. In honor of it, high mass was performed by the pope; salvoes of artillery thundered from the ramparts of St. Angelo; a *Te Deum* was sung to celebrate the atrocious event, and a medal was struck for the same purpose. If every Protestant account of this terrible trans-



Fac-simile of Papal Medal in honor of the Massacre of St. Bartholomew.

Kindly furnished by Mr. Edward Walker, publisher of "Dowling's History of Romanism."

action must encounter suspicion, we ourselves will be satisfied with the testimony of this medal alone of Gregory XIII., at that time the Pope;—evidence that scatters to the winds of heaven all the excuses and attempted apologies for those who perpetrated the St. Bartholomew Massacre. The medal has, as usual, on the obverse a head of the Pope, Gregory XIII. Pont. Max. An. I. The reverse exhibits a destroying angel, with a cross in one hand and a sword in the other, pursuing and slaying a flying and prostrate band of heretics. Strange work for an angel!<sup>a</sup> The legend is:—'Hugonottorum Strages,'—('Slaughter of the Huguenots.')

1572.<sup>b</sup>

The city of La Rochelle in France, which had always stood firmly at-

<sup>a</sup> Sketch of the Huguenots, by Mr. G. P. Disowsay. See *Christian Intelligencer*.

<sup>b</sup> There was an original medal in the possession of the late Rev. S. Farmer Jarvis, D.D., LL.D., of Middletown, Conn., who obtained it at the mint in Rome. Electrotpe copies of this medal are very numerous; "and yet we are told that the Papal Church is not answerable for its acts and deeds; but only for such words as it thinks proper at this time to acknowledge? That it is not answerable for the Crusade which it proclaimed against the Albigenses? For the Marian Persecution? For the tragedy of St. Bartholomew's Day? For the Inquisition? For the sufferings of the Vandois? For the Irish Massacre? and for the Dragoonades of Louis XIV.? Sir, it is to history that I look for what the papal religion has manifested itself to be. I find its character in its actions. "A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Wherefore, by their fruits ye shall judge them."—Vind. Eccles. Anglicanæ, by Robert Southley, Esq., LL.D., London. John Murray, 1826.

tached to the reformed interests, appears to have afforded (in 1572,) an asylum for the survivors of the bloody massacre of St. Bartholomew. It was here they issued their famous declaration stating the affair to be one of unheard of cruelty, and bidding defiance to their enemies the house of Guise. "And it was here they armed and fortified themselves, trusting in a just cause and to the favor of Heaven. For nine months they fought most gallantly in defence of La Rochelle, killing 40,000 of their enemies, who besieged them with the strongest and mightiest army of France without success. It was however in 1627, that this city made its last and ever memorable stand for the cause of the Huguenots.

"And it may safely be said, that this mighty city would never have fallen (such was the undaunted heroism of the Rochellese themselves) had it not been for the powerful minded genius of Cardinal Richelieu, who planned and executed such a mighty work against it, that in gigantic extent it has been compared by historians to the similiar one executed by Alexander the Great, for Tyre. The powerful mind of Richelieu saw at a glance that it was useless to carry on the longest siege against the city of La Rochelle, whilst a free communication remained open to the sea, on which the town was situated. He therefore closed the mouth of their channel by the erection of a prodigious mole, 4482 feet across the harbor, with a central opening. The frame work of this mole consisted of huge piles which was filled up with stones, and sixty hulks sunk with the same material, for the purpose of buttresses. One arm of this immense dyke overlapped the other, so that the entrance instead of being in front was lateral. A stockade of piles, interlaced with chains effectually stopped the passage. This work he completed and defended by 45,000 men, while forty pieces of cannon on the one shore, and twenty-five on the other, flanked the approaches; and the narrow passage in its centre (of one hundred and fifty feet) guarded by a flotilla of vessels."<sup>a</sup>

"The brave Rochellese manfully defended themselves amidst warfare and stravation. They were reduced from over 27,000 to 5000, and out of a company of nearly 600 English allies, only 62 survived. 'Assure the Rochellese that I will not abandon them,' was the message of Charles of England to the closely besieged city; and just as Buckingham was taking command of the desired expedition, he was assassinated. This event created further delay, and the expedition arrived too late to relieve the place. The citizens bore their trials most manfully, and with perseverance seldom equalled. The bearer of a letter was arrested, and compelled by torture to confess that he had swallowed it concealed in a

<sup>a</sup> Smedley's History of Reform. Religion in France, vol. iii., p. 774, Harper's edition.

silver almond ; and he, with the silver-smith who made the almond, were both hanged. Two illustrious ladies, the Duchess of Rohan and her daughter, who were not named in the capitulation, are thus referred to by a writer of that day. ‘Rigor without precedent, that a person of her quality, at the age of seventy, on quitting a siege in which she and her daughter had lived for three months on horse flesh and four or five ounces of bread per day, should be held a captive, deprived of the exercises of religion.’ ‘Protestants were no longer allowed to reside in this ‘city of refuge,’ unless they had been inhabitants before the arrival of Buckingham’s expedition. The walls were prostrated, the fortifications razed, and a cross erected. Thus perished this little Christian republic which had defied the crown of France for seventy years.”

“History does not afford an example of more malignant or desolating



Arms of La Rochelle.

war than that which raged in France during the seventeenth century. Louis XIV., the easy dupe of the Jesuits, confessors, and the designing Madame de Maintenon, and led on, also, by the Cardinal Mazariné, determined to convert the Reformers to the Roman faith. Not only force, but bribery was now employed ; converts were to be purchased, and proselytism in every form resorted to.”<sup>a</sup>

To enter into the minute particulars of this disastrous period would be surperfluous ; suffice it to say, that now commenced a renewal of the outrageous proceedings of former years. Commissioners were sent into the provinces to dispossess the Reformed of all they held as citizens ; nothing awaited them but fines, humiliation, and poverty. Troops of soldiers were quartered among them, who inflicted the most horrid barbarities, while others scoured the country, and dragooned men into false confessions. And not only this ; hundreds were condemned to the gal-

<sup>a</sup> Sketch of the Huguenots, *Christian Intelligencer*, Mr. Disosway.



leys, and sent to the French provinces in America. One of their own ministers, Jurieu, informs us that a friend of his saw a great number of men, at Arles, fastened to the horses, underneath, by means of cords, followed by long carts filled with men and women, tied by their waists to the carts! and these were carried to Marseilles, to be shipped to America; others again were sent to the islands of this country in the king's ships, to be sold, like slaves, to those who would give most for them.<sup>a</sup> Wearied with the incessant persecution, and despairing of repose around their native hearths, the Huguenots began to leave France for more secure regions. Their well-known industry and skill made them welcome in every Protestant country. No less than five hundred thousand thus escaped, and found homes in Germany, Holland, and England."<sup>b</sup> King Charles II. granted letters of denization in council, under the great seal, and assured the exiles that, at the next meeting of Parliament, he would introduce a bill by which they should be naturalized; relieved them at the moment from importation duties and passport fees, and encouraged voluntary contributions for their support."<sup>c</sup> This order was issued on the 28th of July, 1681, the same year in which many of the Huguenots of New Rochelle fled from France,<sup>d</sup> conclusive evidence that they constituted a part of those exiles who accepted the royal offers, and afterward, under the patronage of the government, purchased and settled here in 1689. Some of the Huguenots must have been "aided in their escape from France by the English vessels that lay for some time off the Island of Rhé, opposite La Rochelle, in which they were conveyed to England."<sup>e</sup> Tradition says that many of them were subsequently transported to this place in one of the king's ships. The point on Davenport's Neck called Bauffet's or Bonnefoy's Point, was the spot where they first landed. Others who afterwards joined them—viz., Theroulde, Allaire, Le Vilain, Machet, Bongrand, Thauver, Mercier, Mastier and Jouneau, &c., had been in New York a year or more previous to their settlement at New Rochelle.

Upon the 17th of April, 1695, we find letters of denization granted to Francis Le Count, under oaths appointed to be taken.<sup>f</sup>

On the 6th of February, 1695-6, letters of denization were issued under the seal of the province, "to David de Bonrepos, Alexander Allaire, Henry Beignon, Esaye Vallean, Andrew Thauvet, David Bonne-

<sup>a</sup> Jurieu's Pastoral Letters.

<sup>b</sup> *Christian Intelligencer*; Mr. Disosway's Sketch of the Huguenots.

<sup>c</sup> Smalley's Hist. of the Reformed Religion, iii. 217.

<sup>d</sup> See Charter of Trinity Church in this town.

<sup>e</sup> So rapid and instantaneous appears to have been their flight, that one family in particular (the Gulons) "left their pot boiling on the fire." An earthen jug, rescued on this occasion, was in the possession of the late Mrs. Julia Lawton, daughter of Frederick Gulon.

<sup>f</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. vi. 527.

foy, Louis Guion, and Louis Guion his son, Pierre Das, Pierre Palcot, Andrew Naudin, and Andrew and Louis Naudin his sons, Theophile Fourrestier, Charles Fourrestier, Ambroise Sycard, and Ambroise, Daniel, and Jacques, his sons, Guillaume Landrin, Guillaume Cothonneau (*i. e.*, senior) Isaac Caillard, Marie Cothonneau, and Guillaume Cothonneau her son, Jean Neufuille, Estensie Lavinge, and Jean Coustant (*i. e.*) Jean Coutanti, of foreign birth, and a writ of '*dedimus potestatem*' directed to Col. Caleb Heathcote, for administering the oaths under them."<sup>a</sup>

They continued to arrive from England, as far as can be ascertained, till the year 1700; for there is still preserved in the Bonnett family (of this town) the following passport from the mayor of Bristol, in England, of this date, to their ancestor, Daniel Bonnett:

CIVITAS BRISTOL.—These are to certify that the bearer thereof, Daniel Bonnett, weaver, (as we are very well assured by persons of credit and repute of the French refugees here,) is a French Protestant of good repute, and hath here lived ten years. But in hopes of better maintaining himself and family, is intending to settle himself, with his wife and four children, in some of his Majestie's plantations in America. In testimony whereof, we have hereto subscribed our names, and caused the seal of the mayoralty of this city to be hereto affixed this sixteenth day of November, one thousand and seven hundred.

THOS. CARY, Clerk.

WILLIAM DAINES, Mayor.

RICHARD LANE,

SAMUEL WALLIS,

WILLIAM JACKSON,

THOMAS DAY.

On Daniel Bonnett's arrival in New Rochelle, he purchased land of Bartholomew Le Roux, one of the first settlers, which property is still occupied by his descendants. Some of his family appear to have been elders in the Church of Chaalous upon Saone, for at the Synod of Gap in 1603, for Burgundy, Lyonois, &c., was one Job James Bonnett.<sup>b</sup> Daniel was born in France in 1665, his wife Judy in 1670. Their children were Daniel, John, Peter, Mary, Johanna, and Susanna. Daniel Bonnett took out naturalization papers in New York on the 3d of July, 1700.

The following incident is related of this family: "Daniel and his wife were attempting to reach the French coast with two small children, concealed in the paniers of a donkey, covered with fresh vegetables. The mother having enjoined upon the children to keep perfect silence, no matter what might occur, they had scarcely commenced their jour-

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Book of Pat. Vol. I.

<sup>b</sup> Quick's Synodicon, Vol. II, 306. The artists and mechanics of the Huguenots remained in the city, and the farmers removed into the country.

ney when they were overtaken by a *gend'arme*, who demanded to know what the paniers contained. The mother replied, 'fresh vegetables for the market.' As if doubting her words, the rough soldier rode up to the side of the donkey, and thrust his sword into the nearest panier, exclaiming as he rode away, '*Bon voyage mesamis!*' The agony of the parents may be conceived, until the soldier was well out of sight, when the panier was immediately opened, and the child was found to have been pierced through the calf of his leg. Fortunately nothing more occurred to interrupt their journey to the coast.

On the testimony of Dr. John Pintard, we were assured that on some occasions the devoted inhabitants of this town walked on communion Sundays to New York, a distance by the road at that time of twenty miles, to attend the services at the old French church in Pine street; and returned on the same evening to their homes to be ready for their weekly avocations on Monday. To them, the service of the temple was a delight. They invariably commenced their march on Sunday morning, by singing one of the psalms of Clement Marot. The 60th psalm appears to have been a particular favorite.

"O Lord Thou didst us clean forsake,  
And scatter all abroad, &c."

We are also indebted for the following particulars, to the recollections of the late John Pintard, LL.D.

"The holy sacrament was administered to the Huguenots at New Rochelle, four times a year, viz., Christmas, Easter, Whit-Sunday, and the middle of September. During the intermissions that occurred, the communicants walked to New York for that purpose. Prior to their departure on a Sunday, they always collected the young children, and left them in the care of friends, while they set off early in the morning and walked to the city barefooted, carrying their shoes and stockings in their hands. About twelve miles from New York, at a place since called the Blue Bell, there was a large rock by the road side covered with cedars; here they stopped for a short time to rest and take some refreshment, and then proceeded on their journey till they came to a fresh water pond, (within the bounds of the city) here they washed their feet, put on their shoes and stockings, and walked to the French church, where they generally arrived by the time service begun. After they had received the sacrament, they adjourned to the consistory room and partook of the provisions they had brought with them. The interval between the services was short for their accommodation, as they had to walk home again the same evening to their families. This religious duty

was often repeated, an evidence that their piety was ardent and sincere. They continued to worship after this manner, till the American Revolution broke out, when this part of the county became harassed and overrun by the British troops. The people, in consequence, were scattered, and the younger folks grew up without going to any regular place of worship.

The French church in New York had two doors, behind which boxes were placed to receive the contributions of the congregation. At the conclusion of the services, the minister never failed to add '*Souvenez vous les pauvres,*' remember ye the poor. Upon which, every person, old and young, on going out of church, dropped a copper into the box.<sup>a</sup> The money collected in this manner was divided the next morning among the poor, who came regularly to receive their allowance at nine o'clock in the consistory room. At that early period, a large loaf of bread could be purchased for four coppers, so that this money supplied the indigent for one week. It is a well known fact, that the French Huguenots always made it a matter of conscience to support their own poor, and the Scripture remark has more than once been applied to them. 'Yet have I not seen the righteous forsaken, nor his seed begging bread.' The French clergy were derived from Geneva, and greatly distinguished for their learning. Governor Burnet, of New York, the son of Bishop Burnet, was much censured for his partiality to them; but being well educated, he knew how to appreciate their merits. The Huguenots were very careful in the domestic education of their children. In the common sitting-room of most houses, the mantel-piece was finished with Dutch tiles, containing chiefly the history of the New Testament and the Parables.<sup>b</sup>

They were taught to learn the subject by these tiles on Sunday evenings, for at that period Sunday evening services were not common; other denominations first introduced them. The consequence has been that domestic instruction has declined, a method by which children of earlier days derived more benefit, than by being carried to evening churches."<sup>c</sup>

In the possession of the late Hon. Joshua Purdy, of North Salem, was (a few years ago) the original French Bible belonging to the Guion family of New Rochelle, containing the forms of prayer, with the manner of administering the sacraments; celebrating marriage, and the visitation

---

<sup>a</sup> Mr. Pintard remembered, as a child, to have been lifted up for the purpose of dropping his mite into the box.

<sup>b</sup> Such may yet be seen in this place in the house of the late Mr. Samuel Davis.

<sup>c</sup> From John Pintard's recollections, communicated by the late Mrs. Servoss of New Rochelle.



of the sick, as formerly practised in the French Reformed church of this place in 1697. One of the prayers is thus entitled :

*“ Oraison au fidele détenu en captivité.”*

The catechism of the French church is also added, and the psalms in metre with their appropriate tunes. On a blank leaf occurs the following memoranda :

Cette Bible appartient  
a moy Valthier Humbert  
du Locke & de la  
du fond Bourgeois  
Mangin Lau-  
le Sept cent  
et un  
F I.

Au nom de Dieu  
Isaac Gieon a Marié ma fille Marie  
le 25 d'aoust 1710 par Monsieur Le roux ministre  
de l'eglise Francoise de la nouvelle York ✂  
en presence de monsieur Paul Drouillet ancien  
& pour temoins abraham Girard et sa femme ✂

For some time, all the exertions the Huguenots could make—men, women and children united—were necessary to prepare the land for cultivation, and enable them to pay for its purchase ; which perseverance at last accomplished. Yet, amid all the hardships and suffering incident to a laborious life, in an uncultivated and strange country, they wrote to their friends in France, expressing their gratitude to Heaven for the advantages they enjoyed in this land of liberty.

That heart must be hard indeed that cannot appreciate the following pious ejaculations set forth in the last will of John Machet, one of these sufferers for conscience sake :

Our help be in the name of God, which made the heavens and earth, Amen.

I, John Machet, a ship carpenter, born and bred in ye town of Tremblade, in France, and dwelling in Bordeaux, and being fugitive by the persecution, with my family, viz : Jeanne Thomas my wife, and Peter, John, Jeanne and Mary Anne Machet, my children, sons and daughters, and having all abandoned and forsaken all my goods for my religion's sake, which I profess in the purity of a Christian commonly called Protestant, and being now established in these places, lands and dependencies of New York, in the town called *New Rochelle*, under the dominion of the high and mighty monarch, our king, William of plaine memory, to which God preserve his sceptre and crowne, and that under his reign we might live in God's fear, and being sick of body with a fever, notwithstanding sound of mind and memory, and willing to provide my business for the

tranquility of my family, etc. Imprimus, I commend my soul to God, the Father Almighty, the Creator of Heaven and Earth, that he might receive *her* in His Heavenly kingdom among His blessed children. And as for my corpse, to be buried after the custom and manner of my religion and discipline, till the accomplishment of times, and until the resurrection when our Lord shall come for to judge the quick and the dead, &c., &c. The above will is dated New Rochelle, 17th of April, 1694.

Among the Lespinard papers (at Upper New Rochelle) is preserved a diary kept by a member of that family, prior to their leaving France, from which we make the following extracts (the originals are in the French language):

"*September* 20th, 1671.—I have been married to Abel de Forge. I beg the good God, that He gives us the grace to live a long time in His holy fear, and that it will please Him to give us a good paradise at the end.

*October* 2d, 1672.—My wife has been confined of a girl Margaret, at about ten o'clock of the day, on a Wednesday. Margaret died, and has given her spirit to God, between six and seven o'clock of the afternoon."<sup>a</sup>

In 1710 Margaret Lespinard, or Lepperner, (as it was then spelt) who was born in France in 1644, was living in New Rochelle with her two children, Anthony and Susanna.

"Between the French Huguenots who settled at Oxford in Massachusetts, and those who came to New York, it appears by the Bernon papers that there was some correspondence."<sup>b</sup>

The Freeholders of New Rochelle in 1708 were as follows:

Daniel Lambert,	Jacob Scurman,
Elie Badeau,	Ambroise Sycart,
Daniel Giraud,	Benjamin Faneuil,
Gregoire Gougeon,	Alexander Allaire,
Daniel Bonnett,	Jean Pemeau,
Elie de Bonrepos,	J. Levillain,
Jean Magnon,	— Bolts,
— Besly,	Daniel Rayneau,
Isaac Mercier,	Guillaume Le Counte,
Bartholomew Le Roux,	Francois Le Counte,
Pierre Valleau,	Zacharie Angevin,

Frederick Schorman.

Upon the 17th of April, 1724, we find the following freeholders

<sup>a</sup> Extracts from the Lespinard Diary in possession of the late Peter Gaulladet, Upper Rochelle. The French Huguenot ladies brought out their Bibles rolled up in their hair. One of these Bibles is now in possession of Servoss, Esq., of Harlem.

<sup>b</sup> Massachusetts Hist. Collect. Vol. II. 84.

"granting to Anthony Lespinard a portion of land (situated on Davenport's Neck) for the erection of a mill."<sup>a</sup>

— Besly,	Peter Samson,
Oliver Besly,	John Coutant,
Simon Mabe,	F. Bolt, jr.
Francis Ganyard,	Zaccarie Angevin,
Frederick Scurman,	Pierre Elisee Gallaudet,
Gilleaume Clapp,	Isaac Mercier,
John Clark,	Lancinie Thauvet,
John M. Martin,	Aman Guion,
Estienne Guerin,	Andre Naudain,
Benj. Petit,	Alexander Allaire,
Josias Le Conte,	Gregoire Gougeon,
Abel Devoux,	James Roubet,
Samuel Barnard,	Henry Shadden,
John Moras,	Rachel Neufille. <sup>b</sup>

The records of this town commence on the 2d of December, 1699.

"At a general meeting of all the inhabitants of this town, according to Justice Pinckney, his warrant, Peter Le Roux, heretofore Constable, has been discharged, and Robert Bloomer has been named in his place, for to exercise the said charge of Constable, and that, nomine contradicente. In the same assembly, Peter Frederick and Joseph Devane have been named for to be surveyors about the fences in all the plantations of this place, for to preserve the peace.

April, 1700.

Robert Bloomer, Supervisor.  
Ambroise Sicard, Collector,  
Peter Vallean, Assessor,  
Peter Frederick, } Surveyors of Highways.  
Andrew Barehut, }

Occasionally the entries occur in the French language :

"Le premier jour d'avril, 1710, nous les inhabitants de La Nouvelle Rochelle, assemble a l'autorite par un warant de Justice Gougeon daté du en mars nous eumes é nommer pour officiers pour suivre le canton.

Ponr Supervoyser, Ollivier Besly,  
Pour Constable, Zacarie Angevin,  
Pour Collectuer, Jacque Flandreau,  
Pour Toon Man, Isaac Mercier et Pierre Vallean,  
Pour Survoyeur, Jonas Le Villain et Daniel Reyneau."

The first independent election for officers of this town took place in 1723.

At a town meeting, held the 22d of December, 1783, at the house of Gilbert Brush, inn-keeper, for choosing town officers for the town of New Rochelle, in pursuance of an ordinance of the Council, appointed by the act of the Legislature, entitled an act to provide for the temporary government of the southern

<sup>a</sup> The site now occupied by Mr. Secor's mill.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. lib. F. 150.

part of this State whenever the enemy shall abandon or be dispossessed of the same, and until the Legislature can be convened, passed 23d of October 1779, the following town officers are elected :

Benjamin Stephenson, Supervisor,	
James Willis, Town Clerk,	
James Reynolds, Constable and Collector,	
Benjamin Stephenson, }	Assessors,
James Ronalds, }	
James Willis, }	
David Guion, }	Overseers of the Road
James Willis, }	
Abraham Guion, }	for the Upper Quarter,
Josiah Guion, }	
Peter Flandreau, }	Lower Quarter,
Elias Guion, }	
	Damage Viewers,

The village of New Rochelle, which was incorporated by an Act of the Legislature passed December 7, 1847,<sup>a</sup> is agreeably situated on the Boston Turnpike, extending to Long Island on the south, where there is a convenient steamboat landing, distant eighteen miles from the city of New York. There is also a depot of the New York and New Haven Railroad, together with a branch of the New Haven and Harlem River Railroad, connecting with steamboats at Morrisania, upwards of forty trains running daily to and fro. Extensive engine and freight houses have been recently erected east of the depot. The population is about 4,000. There are, 1 Protestant Episcopal, 1 Roman Catholic, 1 Presbyterian, 2 Methodist, 1 Baptist, 1 German Lutheran, 1 German Methodist Episcopal church, a post office, a bank, 2 hotels, and several extensive boarding houses, many spacious stores, 2 grist mills, and 2 carriage factories. There is a fire-brick edifice erected in 1871 by the Westchester Fire Insurance Company. This well-known institution was first organized under the name and title of the "Westchester Mutual Insurance Company," on the 1st of April, 1837—David Harrison, President, and James T. Ells, Secretary; George Fail, of Eastchester, first Treasurer. In 1870 the company merged into a stock company. It had accumulated \$279,425.87. The present company put to this sum \$200,000 paid up capital. In 1874 the company removed to New York city, where they have an elegant office and over \$1,000,000 assets.

The settlement of New Rochelle was commenced by the Huguenots probably as early as 1686-7, who gave it the name it now bears, in remembrance of their native residence, La Rochelle, in France. This favorite asylum of the French Protestants was, at a very early period,

<sup>a</sup> First President, Albert Smith, M.D. An act to amend, passed April 20th, 1864, and amended April 11, 1872. Since its incorporation, the streets have been lighted with gas, the side and cross walks of the streets have been flagged, and the roads macadamized.



a place of some resort—not only for the acquirement of the French language, but on account of the hospitality and politeness of its inhabitants. Here some of the most distinguished men in the country have received the elements of their education (under the charge of the French clergy.) Among them may be enumerated the Hon. John Jay, (the grandson of a Huguenot), “who made the celebrated treaty of Paris, for the independence of our country, and exerted a powerful influence in extending the limits of the United States to the Mississippi.” Also General Philip Schuyler, so conspicuous for his services and successes in the Revolutionary war, and Washington Irving, the world-renowned author. It is a little remarkable, “that three of the nine presidents of the old Congress who conducted the United States through the Revolutionary war, were descendents of French Protestant refugees, who had emigrated to America in consequence of the edict of Nantes—Henry Laurens, of South Carolina, John Jay, of New York, and Elias Boudinet, of New Jersey.”

For two generations the Huguenots of New Rochelle preserved in its purity the French language, thus testifying their attachment to their native land, the sepulchre of their forefathers, and to which, perhaps, they cherished the hope of a return at some future period.

The first dwelling-houses were erected on each side of the high street,<sup>a</sup> in the vicinity of the old stone church. At a very early date of the settlement, this appears to have been a flourishing place; for Madame Knight, who travelled through the village in 1704, thus describes it:

“On the 22d of December we set out for New Rochelle, where being come, we had good entertainment, and recruited ourselves very well. This is a very pretty place, well compact, and good, handsome houses, clean, good, and passable roads, and situated on a navigable river, abundance of land, well fenced and cleared all along as we passed, which caused in me a love to the place, which I could have been content to live in it. Here we rid over a bridge made of one entire stone, of such a breadth that a cart might pass with safety, and to spare. It lay over a passage cut through a rock to convey water to a mill not far off.<sup>c</sup> Here are three fine taverns within call of each other, and very good provision for travellers.”<sup>c</sup>

The advantages presented by the proximity of the sound are of great importance to New Rochelle.

Upon the whole, New Rochelle is a place of considerable wealth and enterprise, and from its fine location it must eventually arrive at some importance.

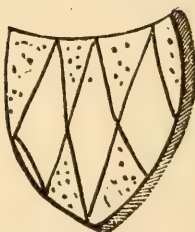
<sup>a</sup> The present street which passes in front of the Episcopal church. The Guion family appear to have been among the first residents and proprietors of the village.

<sup>b</sup> This stone must have occupied the site of the present bridge which crosses the Chrystal Lake stream.

<sup>c</sup> Madame Knight's travels in 1704.



1695



*John Pell of Pelham*

*Michael Pickney Pell*

*March 19 1695*

*This Church Erected*

PELL AND PICKNEY COAT OF ARMS, FOUND UNDER THE  
FOUNDATION-STONE OF TRINITY CHURCH,  
NEW ROCHELLE.

Coeval with the foundation of the village was the organization of a church, in which the Huguenots appear to have adhered to the principles and as far as they were able at that time to have maintained the Articles, Liturgy, Discipline and Canons, according to the usage of the Reformed Church in France. "It was for their religion that they suffered in their native country, and to enjoy its privileges unmolested they fled into the wilderness."

As soon as the church was organized, the most active measures were taken for the erection of an edifice. Provision had been partly made for this purpose in the grant to Jacob Leisler on the 20th of September, 1689. It was there declared that John Pell, lord of the manor, with the consent of Rachel, his wife, did (besides the six thousand acres) give and grant "to the said Jacob Leisler, the further quantity of one hundred acres of land for the use of the French church, *erected, or to be erected* by the inhabitants of the said tract of land."

The first church edifice of which anything is known, was built by the Huguenots in 1692—as appears from documents taken from the corner stone soon after the church was burnt, about 1723.

It was constructed of wood, and stood a little below Mr. Stephen Carpenter's house, almost on the site of his barn, near the Presbyterian church and directly fronting the old Boston post road. It appears to have been held for many years by a small minority of the Huguenots who resisted the conformity of their brethren to the Church of England in 1709<sup>a</sup>. Near the same time that the church was erected, Louis Bongrand did give unto the inhabitants of New Rochelle a piece of land forty paces square for a church yard to bury their dead,<sup>b</sup> A house and about three acres and a half of land were subsequently given by the town to the church forever. Upon this land the parish house and front roadway, or the minister's dwelling place, was afterwards erected; and upon a portion of it now stands the present Trinity church. At this early period the inhabitants appear to have enjoyed the ministrations of the Rev. David Bonrepos, D.D., a French Protestant minister who was born in France, circ 1654, and accompanied the first settlers in their flight

<sup>a</sup> The late Mr. William Lawton, of New Rochelle, Oct, 15th, 1861, informed the author that the old French church stood below Mr. Carpenter's house; and her mother, Mrs. Jemima, wife of Frederick Guion, in her life time always wondered how it was that the minority of the Huguenots should have held the church so long as they did. The shield on the right of the plate bears the arms of Pell, that on the left the coat armor of Pickney, or 3 fusils in fesse gu.

<sup>b</sup> "Louis Bongrand purchased of Jacob Leisler and Elsie, his wife, 31st May, 1690, and sold to Francis Tierens and Valentine Cruger, on the 22d June, 1693. In the conveyance of the latter to Joost Bane, 9th May, 1698, the above gift is specified." New Rochelle, Town Rec., p. 70. "In a deed from Lewis Guion to Zacarie Engevin, &c. On the 26th Dec., 1701. The former was to have a particular lane or road to serve the latter from Boston road giving to the church yard, all along the swamp, &c., making a door (gate) which shall be shut by those who will make use of it," &c. New Rochelle, Town Rec., p. 20.



from that country. From which part of France this individual came it is now impossible to say; he might have been related in some way to the Sieur de Bonrepos, "a French calvinistic officer," who accompanied the Canadian expedition in its descent on New York between the months of November, 1689, and November, 1690,<sup>a</sup> whose family were originally Seigneurs de Bonrepos.<sup>b</sup>

The name of Bonrepos, as pastor of the church in New Rochelle, appears in the following letter to Governor Leisler:

[TRANSLATION.]

N. ROCHELLE, 20 Octob., 1690.

*Sir*:—I have too much respect for your orders not to execute them punctually, so that pursuant to what you did me the honour lately to give me, I spoke to the principals of this New Colony about the nomination of some persons for the vacant office of Justice of the Peace; but as the condition you require—that is a knowledge of the English tongue—has precluded them from making the election of two or three according to your order, they cannot pitch upon any except Mr. Strang, saving your approbation which, if you will have the goodness to accord them, you will oblige them infinitely. Mr. Pinton has also delivered me, this day, an order to be communicated to the s<sup>t</sup> inhabitants relative to the election and nomination of Assessors, Collectors, and Commissaries, for levying, imposing and receiving taxes for his Majesty's service. The time is very short, since it is the twenty-seventh inst., they must be at Westchester; but they look for some forbearance and delay from your goodness in case, notwithstanding their diligence, they may not be able punctually to answer. It is not through any unwillingness to exert themselves to meet it, but you know their strength as well as I. Notwithstanding, despite their poverty and misery, they will never lack in submission to the orders on behalf of his Majesty, both for the public good and interest. This they protested to me, and I pray you to be persuaded thereof. I am with respect, and I pray God for your prosperity, Sir,

Your very humble and very obedient servant,

D. BONREPOS,

*Pastor of this French Colony.*

Address, a Monsieur,

MONSIEUR DE LEISLAR,

Lieut. Gouverneur pour le

Roy d'Angleterre, du fort,

William a la Nole York.<sup>c</sup>

Nothing is known in regard to the Rev. David Bonrepos' ministry or character. He must have resigned his charge here in 1694, for the Rev. John Miller describing the Province of New York in 1695, says: "There is a meeting-house at Richmond, (Staten Island,) of which Dr. Bonrepos is the minister." Upon the 9th day of March 1696, "David

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Hist. N. Y. vol. i. p. 298.

<sup>b</sup> In 1400 Jean de la Baume appears as Seigneur de Bonrepos and de Valusin, voyez tome vij de cette histoire, p. 45, 420, Tom vij.

<sup>c</sup> Doc. Hist. N. Y., vol. ii., p. 304.

de Bonrepos of New York City, Doctor of Divinity, and Blanche, his wife, did grant to Elias de Bonrepos of New Rochelle, husbandman—all that certain parcel of land situate and lying at New Rochelle, in the manor of Pelham, &c., containing fifty acres of ground."<sup>a</sup> Upon the 6th day of February, 1696, letters of denization were granted to David de Bonrepos, V. D. M.<sup>b</sup> He must have died sometime in the Spring of 1734.

#### THE WILL OF DAVID DE BONREPOS.

In the name of God amen the sixteenth day of June in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and thirty-three, I, David de Bonrepos, minister of the Gospel in the County of Richmond and the Province of New York, being by the grace of God in good health and of perfect mind and memory. Therefore calling to mind the mortality of my body, and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die, Do make and ordain this my last Will and Testament, that is to say and principally and first of all I give and recommend it to the earth to be buried in a Christian and decent manner, at the Discretion of my executors, nothing doubting but at the General Resurrection at the Last Day, I shall receive the same again by the mighty power of God. As touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me, in this life I Give, Bequeath, Devise and Dispose of the same in the following manner and Form. Item, I Give and Bequeath unto my Dearly Beloved wife Martha De Bonrepos for her Dowry, fifty pounds, to be entirely at her Disposal. Item, I give unto her as addition to the Dowry, first the three pounds conditioned as it will appear by the Bonds. Second a negro woman, called Tenah and her daughter called Sarah, which is at Jacob Bibyous; thirdly, for her maintenance she shall have and receive so long as she shall remain a widow the interest of all my bonds, that shall be due to me at my decease; and for my other negro wench, named Judde, and her child called Elizabeth, I give the child Elizabeth to my wife, and the mother of the child Judde I give unto my Heir named hereafter. I give unto my said wife and to her own use and Disposal, all my household goods, excepting a silver Tankard and a silver cup. I give and Bequeath to Mr. John Lafort of New York the sum of forty pounds. Item, I give and Bequeath unto Blanchard De Bonrepos, wife to Henry Chaden of New Rochelle, thirty pounds. Item, I give and Bequeath to Anna Pamer and Hester Le Count, my niece, the sum of ten pounds to each of them. Item, I give and Bequeath to the three youngest sons of Alexander De Bonrepos of New York, Deceased, the sum of ten pounds, to be paid to each of them. Item, I give my Silver Tankard and silver cup and all the Rest of my estate Real and Personal, unto David De Bonrepos, and the son of Alexander De Bonrepos aforesaid. Item, I will that after my Decease my negro man Sasfasson shall be maintained by my heirs and executors at their discretion. Item, I constitute and ordain Messrs. Barnt Martlings, Paul Michaux and Nicolas Stillwell, grandson to my wife, all of Staten Island, for my Executors to this my last will and Testament; and I do hereby Revoke, utterly disallow and disannull all and every other former Testaments, Wills, Legacies,

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. Liber. a 112.

<sup>b</sup> Naturalization Rec. State papers, Albany.

and Executions by me in any wise before this Time named and willed and bequeathed. Ratifying and Confirming this and no other to be my last will and Testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year above written—1733.

DE BONREPOS.

Signed, sealed, pronounced, published and declared by the said David Bonrepos as his last will and Testament, in the presence of us, Charles Taylor, Jacob Bellum,

his  
SOLOMON *o* MACLEAN.<sup>a</sup>  
mark.

His brother, Elias Bonrepos who was born in France in 1656, by his wife, Jane, had living at New Rochelle in 1710 four children, namely: John, Hester, Blanche and Mary. Elias Bonrepos was licensed to keep school at New Rochelle in 1705, as appears by the following:

“Edward Visco’t Cornbury, Capt. General and Governor-in-chief of ye provinces of New York, New Jersies and Terri’es depending thereon in America and vice-admiral of ye same, &c. To Elias Bon Repos greeting you are hereby im-powered and lycens’d to keep school within ye town of New Rochelle in ye County of Westchester and carefully and diligently to instruct ye children under yo’ care and tuition in ye art of Reading and writing during my pleasure, given under my hand and seal at New York this 23d day of June, 1705, and in ye 4th year of her ma’tys Reign,

CORNBURY.

By his Excell’y command,

WILL ANDERSON, D. Secretary,<sup>b</sup>

ROBERT HUNTER, Esq.,

Capt.-Generall and Governor-in-charge of

New York, New Jesey and Territories thereon

depending in America, and Vice-admiral

of the same year.

To Elias Bon Repos greeting as above

Twelfth day of December, eleventh year of her M. R. A.D., 1712,

R. N. HUNTER.<sup>c</sup>

The following entry occurs in the town Records:

“The year of grace, 1693, we, the elders of the church of New Rochelle, in the province of New York, according to the intention and will and desire of the inhabitants of this said church, have accorded to

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate’s office, N. Y., Rec. of Wills, No. 12, 1733 to 1736, pp. 55-76-77. Proved 6th May, 1734. The will of his wife Martha bears date 8d March, 1734-5. In which she bequeaths to her daughter Rachel her negro wench Tenno and a large brass kettle; daughter Martha, her girl Bess; daughter Mary, “bed and furniture where I now lay;” daughters Anne and Rachel, “the other best bed and furniture and brass kettle; son-in-law, Cobus Billoe, granda Martha Brittain, Wm. Brittain, das. Nicolas Brittain, da. Martha Cobus Billoe, da. Martha, Peter Laycount, da. Martha. Remainder to be equally divided among her children, Francis Brittain, Anne Billoe, Rachel Brittain, & Thos. Stillwell’s children—Nicolas Stillwell, Anne Musko, Mary Happer, 2 eldest das. Mary Jurne, Elizabeth Jurne, to all of them as much as one of my das. Frances, same as Rachel,” &c. Sur. office, N. Y., Wills No. 13, 1736-1740, p. 30.

<sup>b</sup> Albany deed book X 65, secretary’s office.

<sup>c</sup> Albany deed book X 65, secretary’s office. The will of Elias Bonrepos written in France is still preserved in the Surrogate’s office, N. Y., No. 9, p. 55, bears date 13 April, 1719, son Elias, beyond sea, das, Ester, Lamiabie and Marianne exec Alex. Bonrepos, 1718 to 1725.

Ambrose Sicard, Jr., and Daniel Sicard to convert in moneyed rents at six per cent, the forty shillings that each of them owes which make four pistoles for ten acres of ground sold to them by said inhabitants, &c., and begin to pay the rent from the first to the last of May of the year, 1694. Signed,

THAUVET ECOTONNEAU, J. MACHET,  
THEROUDE, GUILLAUME LE CONTE and  
DANIEL STREING."<sup>a</sup>

By an act of General Assembly passed on the 24th of March, 1693, which was subsequently confirmed, the manor of Pelham became one of the four districts or precincts of Westchester parish. In 1702, New Rochelle contributed towards the rector's maintenance and poor of the parish £7 3s. In 1720 her quota had increased to £12 14s 1½d. At a meeting of the church wardens, vestrymen, free holders and parishoners of ye borrough of Westchester, &c., in Westchester, 10th day of January, *Anno Domini* 1709-10, &c., &c., Mr. Anthony Lespinard was chosen and appointed a vestryman of New Rochelle.

The next minister of the French Reformed church of New Rochelle was the Rev. Daniel Bondet, A.M., a native of France. He was born in the year 1652, studied theology at Geneva, and afterwards entered the ministry. On the revocation of the edict of Nantes he fled from France to England.<sup>b</sup> Here he received Holy Orders from the Right Rev. Henry Compton, Lord Bishop of London, and soon after accompanied the French emigrants who arrived at Boston, Mass., in the summer of 1686. For eight years he was employed by the Corporation for propagating the Christian Faith among the Indians<sup>c</sup> at a place called New Oxford, near Boston, and was also a minister of the French congregation there as appears from a letter written by him to some person in authority, (probably Gov. Dudley,) complaining of the sale of rum to the Indians without order and measure, and of its baneful effects—the date is lost with a line or two at the beginning, but it is endorsed: *Mr. Daniel Bondet's representation referring to New Oxford, July 6, 1691.*<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Town Rec. Lib. A., 23.

<sup>b</sup> "Upon the revocation the rest of the ministers were allowed fifteen days for their departure; but it can hardly be believed to what cruelties and vexations they were exposed." "And yet," adds the English historian, "through rich mercy very few revolted; the far greatest part of them escaped, either into England, Holland, Germany or Switzerland; yea, and some are now in New England." Quick's *Synodicon* introduction in Sept., 1686. Twenty-six pounds were contributed for the relief of the French Protestants who came to New England, Mass. Hist. Col., 3rd series, vol. IV., 62. "In 1693, Cotton Mather speaks of Mr. Bondet as a faithful minister to the French congregation at New Oxford in the *Nipmug*," Magnalia B. C. C. 6, 32, vol. 2, p. 382, 8vo. ed., Hart, 2 vols., 1920.

<sup>c</sup> On the restoration of Charles Second, the charter for the Promoting and Propagating of the Gospel of Jesus Christ in N. E. (founded in 1649,) was renewed through the influence of Mr. Ashurst and Richard Baxter, with the Lord Chancellor Hyde, and the powers under it were enlarged; for now the Corporation was styled "The Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in New England and the parts adjacent in America."

<sup>d</sup> "Soon after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, Jos. Dudley and other proprietors, brought over thirty French Protestant families into this country and settled them upon the easternmost part or end of the said tract of land, now known by the name of Oxford."—Oxford Town Records.



Mr. Bondet must have continued his labors at New Oxford and its vicinity until near 1695; for in another communication we find that "In 1695 Mr. Bondet, a French Protestant minister, preached to the Nipmug Indians." After this we hear no more of him at New Oxford.<sup>a</sup> He probably removed to this place sometime during the Summer or Fall of 1695, for the inhabitants of New Rochelle addressing the Propagation Society in 1709, declare that "By the assistance of Colonel Heathcote they had been provided fourteen years ago with a worthy minister, Mr. Daniel Bondet, ordained by the Bishop of London." To this event, Col. Heathcote himself alludes in a letter to the Society dated 10th of April, 1704:—"I did propose to the Vestry of Westchester a medium in that matter, which was, that there being at Boston a French Protestant minister, one Mr. Bondet, a very good man, who was in orders by my Lord of London, and could preach both in English and French; and the people of New Rochelle being destitute of a minister, we would call Mr. Bondet to the living, (of Westchester) and the parish being large enough to maintain two, we would likewise continue Mr. Mather and support him by subscriptions. The Vestry seemed to be extremely well pleased with this proposal and desired me to send for Mr. Bondet, which I immediately did—hoping by that means to bring them over to the Church; but Mather apprehending what I aimed at, persuaded the Vestry to alter their resolutions, and when he came they refused to call him."<sup>b</sup>

So that projection failing, (of inducing Mr. Bondet to the Parish of Westchester) Colonel Heathcote obtained his services for the French church at New Rochelle. At this early period both Mr. Vesey of New York and Mr. Bondet preached in several parts of the country, and administered the rite of Holy Baptism. Mr. Bondet's destitute condition soon after his settlement, is proved by the following document:—

#### PETITION OF REVEREND MR. BONDET, OF NEW ROCHELLE.

[TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH.]

"To His Excellency Milord Cornbury,  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

MY LORD: I most humbly pray your Excellency to be pleased to take cognizance of the petitioner's condition.

I am a French refugee minister, incorporated into the body of the ministry of the Anglican Church; I removed about fifteen years ago into New England with a company of poor refugees, to whom lands were granted for their settlement; and to provide for my subsistence, I was allowed one hundred and five pieces

<sup>a</sup> His name does not occur in a list of the principal inhabitants in 1696, the year the settlement was broken up by an incursion of the Indians.

<sup>b</sup> See Westchester Parish, p. 25.

per annum, from the funds of the Corporation for the Propagation of the Gospel among the savages. I performed that duty during nine years with a success approved and attested, by those who presided over the affairs of that Province.

The murders which the Indians committed in those countries caused the dispersion of our company, some of whom fell by the hands of the barbarians. I remained after that, two years in that province—expecting a favorable season for the re-establishment of affairs; but after waiting two years, seeing no appearance, and being invited to remove to this province of New York, by Colonel Heathcote, who always evinces an affection for the public good, and distinguishes himself by a special application for the advancement of religion and good order, by the establishment of churches and schools, the fittest means to strengthen and encourage the people, I complied with his request and that of the company of New Rochelle, in this province, where I passed five years on a small allowance promised me by New Rochelle, of one hundred pieces and lodging, with that of one hundred and five pieces which the corporation continued to me until the arrival of Milord Belamont who, after indicating his willingness to take charge of me and our Canton, ordered me thirty pieces in the Council of York, and did me the favor to promise me that at his journey to Boston he would procure me the continuation of that stipend that I had in times past. But having learned at Boston, through Mr. Nanfan, his lieutenant, that I annexed my signature to an ecclesiastical certificate which the churches and pastors of this province had given to Sieur Delius, Minister of Albany, who had not the good fortune to please his late Lordship, his defunct Excellency cut off his thirty pieces which he had ordered me in his Council at York, deprived me of the Boston pension of twenty-five pieces, writing to London to have that deduction approved, and left me, during three years last past in an extreme destitution of the means of subsistence.

I believed, my Lord, that in so important a service as that in which I am employed, I ought not to discourage myself; and that the Province of God, which does not abandon those who have recourse to His aid by well doing, would provide in its time for my relief.

Your Excellency's equity; the affection you have evinced to us for the encouragement of those who employ themselves constantly and faithfully in God's service induce me to hope that I shall have a share in the dispensation of your justice to relieve me from my suffering, so that I may be aided and encouraged to continue my service, in which, by duty and gratitude, I shall continue with my flock to pray God for the preservation of your person, of your illustrious family and the prosperity of your government. Remaining your Excellency's most humble and most respectful servant.

DANIEL BONDET.<sup>a</sup>

“Order and report on the above.

At a Council held at ffort Wm. Henry, tnis 29th day of June, 1702.

Sa. Sh: Broughton,  
Garrard Beekman, } Esqrs.  
Rip Van Dam,

Caleb Heathcote, Esq., John Bridges,  
Doctor of Laws.

Upon the motion of Coll: Heathcote that the Minister of New Rochelle had formerly a salary allowed him out of the Revenue which

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Hist. of N. Y., vol. iii. 929.

the late Earl of Bellamont deprived him of, it is hereby ordered that the petition of the said minister formerly D<sup>d</sup> to his Excellency, be referred to the s<sup>d</sup> Coll: Heathcote, who is to examine into the allegations and and report the same.

By order of his Excellency and Council,

B. COSENS, *Cl'k Council.*"

"May it please yr Excell :

In obedience to yr Excell commands: I have examined into the allegations of the within Petition, and do find that the Petitioner was employed about fifteen years ago by the corporation for propagating the Xtian faith amongst the Indians at a place called New Oxford, near Boston, with the allowance of a salary of £25 a year, where he consumed the little he brought with him from France in settling himself for that service, and being afterwards by reason of the War compelled to fly from thence, his improvements were wholly lost. During the time of his stay there, which was about eight years, it appears by a certificate under the hands of the late Lieut. Governor Stoughton, of Boston, Wait Winthrop, Increase Mather, and Charles Morton, that he with great faithfulness, care and industry, discharged his duty, both in reference to Xians and Indians, and was of an unblemished life and conversation. After his being called to New Rochelle the Corporation afore-mentioned, in consideration of his past services and sufferings, were pleased to still continue him his salary, which he enjoyed until the arrival of the late Earl of Bellamont, who having settled £30 a year upon him out of the Revenue, used afterwards his interest with the said Corporation to take off the salary, they had all along allowed him, which no sooner was effected but he immediately suspended him also from the £30 a year he had settled upon him, by which means the Petitioner is left with a very deplorable condition, not being able with the salary that is allowed him at New Rochelle, which is only £20 a year to support himself and family. All which is humbly submitted by

Yr Excell's obedient humble servant,

CALEB HEATHCOTE."<sup>a</sup>

It is a singular fact that the first settled Episcopal minister in this country should have been a French Protestant refugee, and that New Rochelle, the favorite asylum of the Huguenots, should claim the honor of having called him.

Upon the 20th of November, A. D. 1700, "Sir John Pell,<sup>b</sup> and Rachel his wife, granted to Daniel Sampson and Isaac Cantin, one hundred acres—provided that the purchasers and their assignees, shall do suit and service, now or at any time hereafter, from time to time in the Manor Court, *and pay their proportion to the minister of the place.*"<sup>c</sup>

"In consideration of £100—150 acres, beginning at the end of 25 rods westward from the marked tree, said to be marked for the division

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Hist. of New York, vol. iii, pp. 929, 930, 931, 932.

<sup>b</sup> So styled in the Town Records.

<sup>c</sup> Town Records, p. 10.

lines of the French, in New Rochelle purchase, being between the land of the said Pell and the aforesaid purchase."

"July the 22nd, 1700. In a General Assembly of the inhabitants of this place, according to Justice Mott's warrant, it has been agreed by the plurality of votes, that above the hundred acres of land given by Sir John Pell *for the church of this place*, the said one hundred acres shall be taken on the undivided land, according to the choice of the *elders of the church*, as they will find the more profitable for the church and people."<sup>a</sup>

At a meeting of the Justices and Vestry, held in the town of Westchester, on the 5th day of May, 1704, appeared Mr. Peter Hulse, (constable for the town of New Rochelle in 1702,) who produced two receipts for £5, the minister's rate for that year."<sup>b</sup>

The clergy of New York, addressing the Society on the 17th of October, 1704, says: "Mr. Daniel Bondet has gone further and done more in that good work (converting the heathen,) than any Protestant minister that we know; we commend him to your pious consideration as a person industrious in ye service of the Church and his own nation, *ye French*, at New Rochelle."

The following is Dr. Bondet's first letter to the Secretary of the Venerable Society.

#### MR. BONDET TO THE SECRETARY.

NEW ROCHELLE, *July 24th*, 1707.

SIR:—Col. Heathcote has done me the favor to communicate to me the extract of a letter, where you make mention to him of me, and the part the Honorable Society is pleased to take in what concerns my life and service. If it had pleased God that the ships had come hither, which he expected, I doubt not but according to your opinion, I had had proofs of their good will and approbation, as also directions from my Lord Bishop of London, concerning those things whereof I did myself the honour to inform his Lordship, with the testimony of several eminent and creditable persons. 'Twould be needless, Sir, to repeat things whereof my Lord of London and the Honourable Society are fully informed. I'll only say for my comfort and the honour of my service, that amongst the many misfortunes that have happened to me, never any one opened his lips to reproach me of my life and doctrine, and God has supported me in all those cases in which men have abandoned me. I immediately looked upon that which his Excellency, my Lord Cornbury, ordered me out of Her Majesty's revenue as a sure fund; but the payments thereof is so remote from one another that I am ready to perish in the mean time, insomuch, that 'tis very surprising to all them that hear it. My Lord is so kind as to give me some warrants; but to this hour I have some by me of four years' standing, whereof Mr. Neau is soliciting one with Mr.

<sup>a</sup> Town Records, Lib. A, p. 5.

<sup>b</sup> Westchester Vestry Book.



Bearsly, the Receiver, without being able to get anything. The favour I ask of you, Sir, and the Honourable Society, is, that you would be so good as to get me such an order from the said Society as you shall judge most proper for the payment of my arrears; and if it be Her Majesty's good pleasure to confirm to me what two Governours, by the advice of the Council, have ordered as a necessary provision for my subsistence, viz., 430 out of Her Majesty's revenue, and that pension be paid to me quarterly according to the time of its establishment. If I obtain this favour of the Honourable Society, I shall be obliged to you for having contributed thereunto by your representation according to your justice and charity. I pray God to give us the opportunity of giving satisfaction to that venerable body (whereof you are a member) by the joyful tidings of the great progress which the Gospell makes in these parts, through their great care and piety. I have seen with pleasure the beginning of Mr. Neau's exercises, as also, from time to time, the progress and good order of his proselytes. It were to be wished that the civil powers would take the same care of the slaves in the country. I have often proposed this to our company, among whom there are several slaves; the poor creatures might easily receive the same edification by the care of the minister in their several places; if that was recommended in such a manner that the servants, the masters and pastors, might understand that this order which our superiors require is both reasonable and just. I should be always ready, if it pleased the Lord with His help, to discharge my duty and follow the directions which shall be given me by my superiors, for whom I will continue to pray heartily that God would direct them how to labour successfully in all things for the advancement of His glory in the midst of His people, and that He would please to continue unto you life and grace to further His work in your generation.

I am, Sir, &c., &c.,

DANIEL BONDET.<sup>a</sup>

The following extract, from a letter of Col. Heathcote to the Secretary, shows that the Society must have immediately granted the favor which Mr. Bondet so earnestly solicited. The writer also recommends the payment of an annual salary to Mr. Bondet, and that he be directed to use the English Liturgy at all times:

#### COLONEL HEATHCOTE TO THE SECRETARY.

[EXTRACT.]

WORTHY SIR:

"MANNOR OF SCARSDALE, DEC. 18th, 1707.

I desire my hearty thanks may be given them for their favours in remembering Mr. Bondet, and it was truly a seasonable relief to him, he having for many years been only fed with fair promises from the Government; being, I think, at this time about four years in arrear. As to what you mention of my Lord of London recommending him to our governour, I can't tell what service it may do him to his Lordship's successor; but it will be of little use or service to him now. As for his being able to preach in English, I do assure you he can and doth it every third Sunday, using the liturgy of our Church in the town where he lives, which is part of and belongs to Mr. Bartow's parish and where he hath to this day never

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i, pp. 163-4-5. (Hawk's.)

preached one sermon, although they contribute one-fifth part or thereabouts towards his maintenance. Now, if the Society think fit to settle a constant allowance on Mr. Bondet, he must then be directed by my Lord of London, at all times, whether he preacheth in English or French, to use our liturgy, which he above all things desires; and it will then be advisable that Common Prayer Books in French be sent over for his congregation. And as to the improvement of his time, that he may not receive the Society's money without doing them service for it—when notice is given that they have been pleased to establish him, Mr. Muirson, Bartow, Colonel Morris and myself, will have a meeting; and taking to our assistance the soberest inhabitants of the country, we will consider of the properest ways not only for improving Mr. Bondet, but likewise at the same time think of the most effectual means for taking care, besides the two parishes, of such parts of the country as are included in neither; and had I not formerly been opposed, this had not been to be done now; and in case any of the missionaries shall refuse a reasonable compliance the Society shall most faithfully have an account thereof that if by them they can't be persuaded to their duty, their allowances may be withdrawn; for I can't tell what others may think of it, but for my own part, to connive at the misapplication of the money given to that pious use, I think to be equal to one's being concerned in plundering of churches.<sup>a</sup>

At first, Mr. Bondet used the French Prayers, according to the Protestant churches of France; and subsequently on every third Sunday, as appears by the above letter, the Liturgy of the Church of England; but in 1709 his congregation, with the exception of two individuals, followed the example of their French Reformed brethren in England, by conforming to the English Church. This memorable event is thus recorded in the charter: "That on the 12th day of June, in the year of our Lord, one thousand seven hundred and nine, all the inhabitants of the township of New Rochelle, who were members of the said French church, excepting two, unanimously agreed and consented to conform themselves, in the religious worship of their said Church, to the Liturgy and rites of the Church of England as established by law; and by a solemn act or agreement did submit to, and put themselves under the protection of the same."

Six days prior to their conformity, the members of the church addressed the following letter to Colonel Heathcote. This was probably the document alluded to in his letter of the 12th, which Mr. Bondet read at the meeting:—

HONOR'D SIR:

*"New York, June 6th, 1709.*

Since it is by your charitable assistance and concurrence that the company of New Rochelle find themselves provided with the ministry, that your prudence and wise management hath hitherto composed and aswaged our difficulties about these matters of Church settlement; we have thought that it was our duty and that it should be your pleasure of charity, to assist us with your presence and directions, that we may come to some terms of Resolution for to have our church in full conformity with the national Church of England; and for to have the protection and assistance of the rules and encouragers of the same, that the service

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. 1, pp. 167, 168, 169. (Hawks).

of God may be established in our place according to that holy rule, and the weakness of our place considered, that she may be enabled to support the charges of the ministry, as your Honor knows enough of our circumstances, be upon that trust of your candour, sincerity and charity, for refuge Protestants, well meaning in the duties of our holy religion. We remain, Honor'd Sir,

Your most humble and dutiful servants,

ELIAS BADEAU,  
ANDREW RENEAU,  
J. LEVILLAIN.

[Signed by twenty-six others."<sup>a</sup>]

The services on this occasion were held in the old wooden church, erected in 1697, upon Monday, June the 13th, A. D. 1709.<sup>b</sup> Mr. Bartow, the rector of the Parish, who was present and read prayers, gives the following account to the Secretary of the Venerable Propagation Society:

[EXTRACT.]

*"From Westchester in New York, in America,  
June 10th, 1709."*

SIR:—This night being Friday, Mr. Sharp is come to my house on his way to Rye where he intends to preach next Sunday, and I have appointed to meet him at New Rochelle next Monday, to try if we can persuade Mr. Bondet's congregation to conform to the Church of England, which if they will do, Col. Nicholson has engaged to procure their minister (Mr. Bondet) an allowance from the Society, whom they are not able to maintain: in regard to the £30 per annum, formerly paid out of the Queen's revenue, it is discontinued.

*"Tuesday, June 14th."*

I was at New Rochelle yesterday, where I read the service of our Church and Mr. Sharpe preached a sermon: and Colonel Heathcote being there likewise, after sermon, we proposed their conformity to the Liturgy of the Church of England, to which they all who were there present (the chief and principal inhabitants) assented—as you will see by their several names subscribed to the writing sent by Col. Heathcote, to which I refer you.

JOHN BARTOW.<sup>c</sup>

Colonel Heathcote, who was also present on the occasion, thus writes:

#### COL. HEATHCOTE TO THE SECRETARY.

WORTHY SIR.

*"Manor of Scarsdale, June 13th, 1709."*

After I had finished my other letters, Mr. Bondet gave me an account by letter, that his people were in a very good temper to receive and conform to the Liturgy of our Church, in their congregation; whereupon I went to New Rochelle, being accompanied by Mr. Sharp, Chaplain to the forces—he being at my house, having

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i, p. 189-90. (Hawk's.)

<sup>b</sup> And not on Sunday the 12th, as the charter declares. The lessons for the day were the 19th Chap. of Job, and 13th of St. Mark.

<sup>c</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i, pp. 194-5. (Hawks.)

yesterday preached and administered the sacrament at Rye. Mr. Bartow did us also the favour to meet us at Mr. Bondet's, and his congregation being desired to be at church, after the service had been performed by Mr. Bartow, and a very good sermon preached to them by Mr. Sharp, the heads of their congregation desired Mr. Bondet to read and present me with a paper, returning me thanks for my endeavours in settling them in their religious affairs, which I send you herewith. Whereupon, those gentlemen of the clergy and I did advise them to address the Society; acquainting them with their resolution of conforming to the rules and discipline of the Church, to pray their assistance in supporting their minister, and to send them a number of common prayer books in the French language, which is here enclosed, and also an instrument in French, being a declaration of their inclinations to conform to the rules of the Church. We all of us promised them not only to recommend them in the best manner we could, but also to prevail with Col. Nicholson and Col. Morris to do the like. I believe I need not use many arguments to persuade the Society to do what they can conveniently for them; for Mr. Bondet, besides his serving the people of New Rochelle, will be of great use in assisting the ministers of the other Parishes—and not only that, but if these people are favourably received and encouraged, it will be a great means to influence the French congregation in New York likewise to conform; and I am not without hopes of effecting my desired end of having this county divided into three Parishes, by which means we should effectually shut out all sectaries from ever crowding in upon us. I can hardly express how great comfort and satisfaction it is to me to see this work brought near so happy an issue and for which I have been laboring in vain many years; and the only thing that obstructed it was, that the Government would not give us leave—and which was almost the only cause that none of your churches have throve better in this Province. The fleet are just upon sailing, and I am in a very great hurry in concluding my letters, but I must beg leave to refer you to my next and remain, worthy sir,

Your affectionate humble servant,

CALEB HEATHCOTE.<sup>a</sup>

The subjoined address is from the inhabitants of New Rochelle to the Society. It must have been written in 1709, and not the previous year as the MSS. has it:—

TO THE RIGHT REVEREND AND RIGHT HONOURABLE AND  
VENERABLE SOCIETY FOR PROPAGATION OF  
THE GOSPEL IN FOREIGN PARTS.

“The humble petition of several inhabitants of the town of New Rochelle, in the Province of New York, in behalf of themselves and other inhabitants of the said Place.

The extraordinary care that your Honorable Society hath shewn in these parts of America, for the settlement of the Church in places which want directions and encouragement, to come to the happy terms of union and conformity to the national Church of England, makes us confidently to hope that your charity will

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. I, pp. 187-8-9. (Hawks.)



be pleased to take into your pious consideration the condition of a poor company of refugees, inhabitants of the town of New Rochelle, whose case hath been represented already several times by the Hon. Col. Heathcote, by whose assistance and concurrence we were provided fourteen years ago with a worthy minister, Mr. Daniel Bondet, ordained by the Lord Bishop of London; who, by his constancy and tender condescension hath shewed us how confidently and with good conscience we may comply with the Church of England and further our edification in the knowledge and grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, for whose sake we have left our native country and have been with great pity and charity relieved in England.

We have now happily brought that work to a fair and resolved conclusion. The Hon. Col. Francis Nicholson, Colonel Heathcote and Colonel Morris, have promised to use their interest with the Venerable Society to have some regard to the just representation of our circumstances which are unable to support the charges of a ministry, having been able to pay to Mr. Daniel Bondet but £20, this country money, per annum—sometimes more, often less. Notwithstanding which, he hath courageously continued to edify us by his doctrine and irreproachable conversation.

The £30 per annum proposed to be paid him out of the revenue of this Province, hath for several years been unpaid, as will appear by the joynt representation of the said Col. Heathcote and the Reverend Clergy, with an account of the unpaid warrants. The revenue is now expired by its own limitation, and we have no other hope or support for the maintenance of our minister than in your piety and charity, which we beg leave to implore in these our indigent circumstances, and that you will be pleased to send over a considerable number of common prayer books, in the French language. We are already above one hundred communicants, and if we can enjoy the benefits of an English schoolmaster sent amongst us, we hope we and our posterity daily to improve, under the happy constitution of the English Church and Government.

We conclude with our hearty prayers to God for the peace of the nation, the enlargement and prosperity of the Church, and a blessing on your pious endeavors for promoting the Gospel of Jesus Christ, and are with profound respect,

Rt. Reverend, Rt. Honorable and Venerable,

Your most obedient humble servants,

ISAAC GUIONS,  
LOUIS GUIONS JEJEUNE,  
ANTHONY LISPENAR,  
PIERRE VALLEAU.

[With twenty-two others."<sup>a</sup>]

In this act of conformity to the Church of England, the Huguenots followed the sentiments of their own Church—which from the beginning of the Reformation to this time, had allowed it to be lawful to do so, and condemned those who made any separation, but from the Church of Rome.

Beza, one of the most powerful advocates for the Huguenots, wrote

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS. from Archives at Fulham, vol. i, pp. 107-8. (Hawk's).

to some of them who were discontented in England, conjuring them by all that was good and sacred, not to forsake the communion of the Church of England, for such indifferent rites and ceremonies as were there imposed upon them.<sup>a</sup> Whilst Calvin, the founder of the French Churches, passed an anathema upon those who forsake the communion of orthodox bishops where they are to be had; witness that solemn declaration of his in his book, "*De Necessitate Reformandæ Ecclesiæ* : "Talem si nobis exhibeant hierarchiam, in qua sic emineant episcopi, ut Christo subesse non recusent—ut ab illo tanquam unico Capite pendeant, et ad ipsum referentur—tum nullo non anathemate dignos fateor, si qui erunt qui non eam reverenter, summaque obedientia observent." "Give us such an hierarchy," says he, "in which bishops preside who are subject to Christ, and Him alone as their Head; and then I will own no curse too bad for him that shall not pay the utmost respect and obedience to such an hierarchy as that."

"The truth is, Calvin and Beza, and the French Church, set up such a government and discipline at the Reformation as the state of their affairs would bear; but they never absolutely condemned Episcopacy, or thought their own model ought to be the rule to other churches. Beza expressly disclaims that, as a false and slanderous imputation in any that should say, "They prescribed their own example to be followed by any other Church, like those ignorant men who think nothing right done but what they do themselves."<sup>b</sup>

The Rev. Joseph Bingham, in that admirable discourse of his entitled, "*The French Church's Apology for the Church of England*," concludes with "A serious address to Dissenters and to the Refugees of the French Church, to join in constant and full Communion with the Church of England." "I have nothing more to do, (he observes) but to close this discourse with a serious exhortation to such persons as are concerned in it, who are chiefly such dissenters as make use of the arguments I have examined in this book, to justify their separation from the Church of England."

Upon this conformity of the French Church at New Rochelle, we find the Venerable Society making an annual allowance to the Rev. Daniel Bondet, and directing him to use the Liturgy of the Church of England.

At the same time, Governor Ingoldesby issued the subjoined order to the Consistory, putting Mr. Bondet in possession of the Church and its appendages :

<sup>a</sup> Beza, Ep. xii, p. 105.

<sup>b</sup> Bingham's *Antiquities of the Christian Church*, vol. viii, pp. 209-10.

COMMISSION OF REV. DANIEL BONDET, TO BE MINISTER OF  
NEW ROCHELLE.

“Richard Ingoldesby, Esq., Lieut.-Gov. and Commander-in-Chief of their Majesties Province of New York, New Jersey, &c. To Capt. Oliver Besly and his Brethern, General of ye Consistory of New Rochelle in ye County of Westchester, greeting:—

GENTLEMEN,

The bearer hereof, Mr. Daniell Bondett, an orthodox minister of the Church of England, haveing laid before me the orders of ye Right Hono'ble and Right Reverend ffather in God, Henry, by Divine mission, Lord Bishop of London and Diocesan of this Province, to officiate in your church and Parrish according to ye Rules & Constitution of the Church of England, as by law established, bearing date June 16th, 1706, as also a letter from ye Venerable Society for Propagation of ye Gospel in florreign parts, bearing date June 6th, with an Extract of their Journal, June 3d, 1709, Constituting and appointing him one of their Missionaries, and a yearly sallary for his service in your church. You are therefore hereby directed to receive him as such.

Given under my hand and seal this ninth day of November, in the eight year of ye Reign of our Sovereign Lady Queen Anne of Great Britain, &c. Anno Dni. 1709.

RICHARD INGOLDESBY.”<sup>a</sup>

In Mr. Bondet's report to the Venerable Society for the year 1710, occurs the following extract :

MR. BONDET TO THE SECRETARY.

“NEW YORK, 14TH JULY, 1710.

SIR—Our Church is kept up in good order by the Grace of God, notwithstanding the troubles and unexpected oppositions it has met with. I hope through the good reception that his Excellency has given us at our first visit, that his equity and prudence will remove those difficulties which still remain to be surmounted; to the end, that there may be a good understanding amongst us. I acquainted you on my last, that we had celebrated the Holy Communion three times at the three quarters that are passed. Since our conformity, there have been two other quarters past since; and for fear that my last should not have come to hand, I will repeat to you the number of communicants in each:—

10th of July, 1709,	35
17th of October,	29
1st of January, 1709-10,	38
9th of April, being Easter Day,	43
11th of June,	32

Yours, &c.,

DANIEL BONDET.”<sup>b</sup>

At this period it seems the congregation had so far increased as to stand in need of further accommodation, and to require the erection of a new church. On the 20th of March, 1709, nearly three months be-

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Hist. of N. Y. vol. iii. p. 941.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i. pp. 217-10 (Hawks).

fore the conformity, Governor Ingoldesby issued an order or license, empowering the inhabitants to erect the same.<sup>a</sup> The undertaking, however, met with such violent opposition from the enemies of the Church, that nothing seems to have been done—either towards locating or building the proposed edifice, during the remainder of Ingoldesby's administration. This honor was reserved for his successor, Col. Robert Hunter, who vigorously espoused the cause of the Church; and upon the 2d day of August, 1710, issued the following:—

#### LICENSE TO ERECT A CHURCH IN NEW ROCHELLE.

“By His Excellency Robert Hunter, Esq., Capt. Generall and Commander-in-Chief of Her Majesty's Provinces of New York, New Jersey, and all the Territories Depending thereon in America, and Vice-Admiral of the same, &c.

To the Hon'ble Coll. Caleb Heathcote, Coll. Lewis Morris. To the Rev. Mr. Bondett, Minister of New Rochelle, to Capt. Oliver Besley, Dr. John Neville, Isaiah Le Villain and the other Inhabitants of the town of New Rochelle, in the County of Westchester, Communicants of the Church of England, as by Law Established, Greeting: Whereas, I am informed of your pious design to build a church for the worship and Service of God according to the form and manner Prescribed in the Liturgy of the Church of England, & am applyed to for Lycence to erect it in the Publick street. I have thought fitt and doe hereby give Leave and Lycence to you to Erect such Building in such Convenient Place of the said street as you shall think most Proper, Providing the Breadth of such Church do not Exceed thirty foot; and further, I do authorize and Impower you to Receive and Collect such sums of money and other helps as Charitable People shall be disposed to Contribute to this good work.

Given under my hand and seal at New York, this second day of August, 1710.

ROBERT HUNTER.

*By his Excellency's command.*

GEORGE CLARKE.”

In pursuance of this Lycence, we, the within Nominated Trustees, appoynted by his Excellency for the building of a Church for the worship of God according to ye Liturgy of the Church of England at New Rochelle, have agreed to Build it on the North side of ye high street in the said Town of New Rochelle, in ye County of Westchester, the said Church forty foot in length and thirty foot in breadth, between the Dwelling houses of Francis Le Conte and Zachary Anseuvain, as Judging it the most Convenient Place.

Witness our hand this Eighth day of August, 1710, Newville, Daniel giraud, Isaac Quantin, Debonrepos, Andre Naudain, daniel bennet, Caleb Heathcote, Lewis Morris, Daniel Bondet, Besley, E. Valleau, Pierre Valleau, F. LeConte, ambroise Sicart, J. Levillain.”<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> See County Records, Lib. D. p. 72.

<sup>b</sup> Documentary Hist. of N. Y., vol. iii. pp. 942, 943.



As soon as the site was determined upon, a subscription was set on foot for the building of the church. The names of the subscribers and the amount of their contributions are preserved in the following document :

“An account of the money collected by the Reverend Mr. Sharpe, Chaplain of the forces of her majesty at New York, and Mr. Elias Neau, from the members of the Church of England, for building a church at New Rochelle for the worship of God according to the forme and manner prescribed in the Liturgy of the Church of England :

His Excellency, Coll. Hunter, our Governour,	£6	0	0
Coll. Nicholson,	5	0	0
The Reverend Mr. Evens,	5	0	0
The Reverend Mr. John Talbot,	5	0	0
The Reverend Mr. John Sharpe,	1	2	0
The Reverend Mr. Vesey,	1	0	0
The Reverend Doctor Innis,	1	10	0
The Reverend Mr. Vaughn,	1	10	0
The Reverend Mr. Bridge,	2	0	0
Rev. Mr. Thomas,	1	0	0
The Reverend Mr. Henry Boys,	1	0	0
The Reverend Mr. Thomas Barclay,	1	10	3
The Reverend Mr. Holyday,	1	0	0
The Reverend Mr. Bartow,	1	0	0
Coll. Bayard,	1	2	0
Mr. Elias Romaines,	1	2	0
Mad. Mackham, 3 dolars,	0	16	6
Mr. Jeremiah Colert, 3 dolars,	0	16	6
Mrs. Mary Laurens,	0	2	9
Mr. Nathaniel Marston,	0	13	2
Mr. Mosent,	0	1	5
Mr. John Meklany,	0	2	7
Mr. John Baley, one dolar,	0	5	6
Dr. Letrice,	0	1	7
Mad. Wenham,	1	2	0
Mr. Suire, payed,	0	9	0
Cap. Thomas,	1	6	0
Coll. Moris,	3	5	0
Mr. Mastin,	2	0	0
Mr. Bartholemy LeRoux,	1	2	0
Mr. Reignier,	1	0	0
Mr. Thomas Dutey,	1	6	0
Mr. James Neau,	1	10	0
Coll. Graham,	1	2	0
Alexander More,	1	2	0
Mr. Elias Neau,	1	0	0
Mr. Peak, purser of the Kingsale, 2 dolars,	0	11	0
Mr. William Hacking,	1	0	0

Mr. George Clark, . . . . .	1	0	0
Mr. John Creok, . . . . .	1	0	0
Cap. Davis, commander of the Maidstone, . . . . .	3	0	0
Master May Vickley, . . . . .	1	2	0
Mr. Lawrence Read, 3 dollars, . . . . .	0	16	0
Mr. Remison, . . . . .	1	2	0
Mr. George Nethew, 2 dollars, . . . . .	0	10	0
Cap. Cleyton, commander of the Kingsale, . . . . .	1	6	0
Mr. Christopher Rugby, . . . . .	1	0	0
Capt. Wilson, mayor of the city, . . . . .	1	2	0
Capt. Lancaster Simes, . . . . .	2	0	0
Mr. Andrew Bornet, . . . . .	1	0	0
Lieutenant Tathem, . . . . .	1	4	0
Mr. Collector Bayesly, . . . . .	2	0	0
Daniel Rouet, . . . . .	0	6	0
The Commander of the Feversham, . . . . .	1	6	0
Mr. Daniel Airauld, . . . . .	1	4	0
Capt. Hamilton, . . . . .	1	2	0
Mr. Robert, of Boston, Merchant, . . . . .	2	0	0
Mr. John Read, . . . . .	1	0	0
Capt. Gordon, . . . . .	1	7	0
Coll. Partridge, . . . . .	0	2	0
Cap. A. Chalwell, . . . . .	0	3	0
Coll. Heathcote, . . . . .	3	10	0
Dan. Cromelin, . . . . .	3	12	0
On Board of the Ship Feversham's Company, . . . . .	1	1	0
From the master of the Feversham's ship, . . . . .	0	11	0
From the Purser of the same ship, . . . . .	0	11	0
From the Cap. Mostenan, 3 dollars, . . . . .	0	16	6
From Mr. Lisau, . . . . .	0	5	0
From Mr. Livingston, a mayor of Albany, . . . . .	0	9	6
From Lieutenant Jay, . . . . .	0	6	7½
From Leftenant More, . . . . .	0	12	4
Mr. Watts, . . . . .	0	16	6
Mr. Sharpes, . . . . .	0	11	0
Mr. Reggs, . . . . .	0	5	6
Mad. Hamilton, . . . . .	0	11	0
The Col. Morris, . . . . .	2	0	0
Mr. George Willack, . . . . .	2	0	0
By a Legacy from Mr. Zamain, . . . . .	5	0	0
By Cap. Wims, . . . . .	1	6	0
By Mr. Broeck, one dolar, . . . . .	0	5	6

The subscriptions, though not very large, must be regarded in reference to the relative value of money at that period and the present. The new church, which was begun in the autumn of 1710, and completed by November of the same year, stood a little east of the present Episcopal church, at the entrance of the lane leading to Mr. Elias

Guion's former residence. The building, which was constructed of stone, formed nearly a square, being perfectly plain within and without. So anxious were all to contribute something towards its completion, that even females carried stones in their hands, and mortar in their aprons, to complete the sacred work.



Upon the erection of the church, measures were immediately taken to secure a Royal Patent for the same, as appears from the following :

#### PETITION FOR A PATENT FOR THE CHURCH AT NEW ROCHELLE.

“ To his Excellency Robert Hunter, Esq., Captain General and Gouverneur-in-Chief of her Majesties Provinces of new-york, New Jersey, and Territories Depending thereon in aMerica, &c., vice admiral of the same, &c.

The Petition of Daniel Bondet, minister, olmer Besley, and other Inhabitants of New Rochelle, of the communion of the Church of England, in behalf of themselves and others,

HUMBLY SHEWETH :

That whereas they have been favoured with your Excellency's license Bearing date the 2d of August, 1710, Empowering them to collect and Receive the charitable contributions of piously disposed Christians and apply them towards building a house for the worship and service of God, according to the form and manner of the Church of England as by Law established, and further Granting unto them the priviledge to build and Erect such church in such place of the publick Street as to them should seem most convenient and proper That by virtue of the said License and Encouragement and the contributions Thereby collected, They have proceeded to build, and have now finished a convenient building for use aforesaid according to the directions, limitations, and Restrictions Therein mentioned.

May it Therefore please your Excellency to grant them a patent for the said Church, and the ground whereon it stands, that it may be secured for the use of the Church of England to them and their posterity for ever, against all attempts, claims and pretensions that hereafter may be made, and your petitioners as in duty bound, shall ever pray, &c.

DANIEL BONDET,

*New Rochelle, the 11th of November.*

F. ALLEAU,

BESLEY,

P. VALLEAU,

ELIE DE BONREPOS."

### REPORT THEREON.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR EXCELLENCY :—" In obedience to your Excellencie's order in Council, of ye nineteenth day of November last, made on ye petition of Daniel Bondet and others, for a Patent for a church, lately erected in the Street of New Rochelle, and for the ground whereon it stands, wee have fully Examined into ye matter of the said petition, and are humbly of opinion that her Majesty may Grant such Patent for the said church and ground, according to ye prayer of the said petition. All which is nevertheless submitted to your Excellency, by

Your Excellencie's most obedient, humble Servants,

A. D. PEYSTER,

S. STAATS,

RIP VAN DAM,

CALEB HEATHCOTE,

T. BYERLEY.<sup>a</sup>

*Read 31 July, 1711-12.*

For his commendable zeal in Church affairs, Colonel Hunter was reviled and misrepresented by those from whom a different course might have been reasonably expected. The two following extracts speak for themselves :—<sup>b</sup>

### COLONEL HEATHCOTE TO THE SECRETARY.

[EXTRACT.]

"NEW YORK, JANUARY 30TH, 1711.

"The more I consider of Colonel Hunter's being represented as an enemy to the Church, the more I am amazed at it ; because no Governor in this Province, that I ever knew, besides Col. Fletcher, did ever as heartily espouse her interest, if we are to judge of men by their actions. I think Mr. Bondet and I was about seven years endeavoring to settle the Church at New Rochelle, but never could thoroughly effect it until he was our Governor ; who, without giving us the least stop or delay, did every thing we desired of him."<sup>c</sup>

### COL. LEWIS MORRIS TO THE SECRETARY.

"NEW YORK, 20TH FEBRUARY, 1711.

"Because the Governor (Col. Hunter) would not go all the length they desired, he was industriously represented to the people as no Churchman. I can't see

<sup>a</sup> Documentary Hist. of N. Y., vol. iii. p. 948.

<sup>b</sup> "Governor Hunter was as devoted a member of the Church of England as any of the early Governors."—Macdonald's Hist. of the Presbyterian Church in Jamaica, Long Island, p. 51.

<sup>c</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i. p. 356. (Hawks.)



what end this could serve, besides gratifying too much ill nature, except it were the discouraging the Church and encouraging the Dissenters, (if either of them should believe the person at the head of affairs here was a dissenter,) or really making the Governor what they pretended he was. But it was not in the power of some men that wear the Church's livery, by an imprudent conduct to make the Governor an enemy to the Church,<sup>a</sup> for no sooner was application made to him in behalf of the church of New Rochelle, the building of which had been a long time opposed, but he gave an order to Col. Heathcote and myself to appoint a place for it in the High Street, which we did; saw the foundation laid, and it is now finished, or very nigh it—being a good stone building; and his purse, as well as power, has contributed to make it what it is.”<sup>b</sup>

In the year 1711-12, the Venerable Propagation Society presented to Mr. Daniel Bondet, “for the use of the inhabitants of New Rochelle, (who, under the influential ministry of the Rev. Mr. Bondet, have built them a *new church of stone*, for the worship of God, and are, many of them, reconciled to the ways of the Church of England) one hundred French prayer books of the small sort, and twenty of a larger impression.” In consideration of the great learning and piety of Monsieur Bondet,, at New Rochelle, and his long and faithful discharge of his office, they have augmented his salary from £30 to £50 per annum.<sup>c</sup> Mr. Neau, writing to the Secretary from New York, on the 5th of July, 1710, bears the following testimony in regard to Mr. Bondet's character, “most Honored Sir:—Mr. Bondet is a good old man, near sixty years of age, sober, just and religious.”<sup>d</sup>

Another supply of one hundred Prayer Books in French, occurs in 1713, to the Rev. Monsieur Bondet, minister of the Reformed Congregation at New Rochelle. Upon this, he remarks, “The books came very seasonable, and is much to the comfort of that people, as to engage their thanks to the Society, for their charity in the care of them, when their enemies reported they were derelicted.”

The same year, the Society forwarded to the Rev. Daniel Bondet, “minister of the French Calvinistic congregation at New Rochelle, £10, in consideration of his diligence and care in performing English service every third Sunday, for the edification of the French youth who have learnt so much of that language as to join with him therein.”

Upon the 7th of February, 1714, Queen Anne, in answer to the peti-

<sup>a</sup> In an address of the New York clergy to Governor Hunter, May 14, 1712, “they thank him for his favor to Daniel Bondet, and his congregation of French Refugees, and generous bounty towards erecting of a new church, and granting a patent for the same to the Church of England, and that the utmost gratitude is due for the same.” This was signed by D. Bondet and eight others.—Doc. Hist. of N. Y., vol. iii. p. 129.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i. p. 327. (Hawks.)

<sup>c</sup> The Society's Abstract says: “That Mr. Bondet's congregation at New Rochelle has a competent number of communicants, and meets for divine service, not only on Sabbath days, but all others appointed by the Church.”

<sup>d</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i., pp. 216, 217. (Hawks.)

tion, was pleased to grant and confirm the new church or chapel, and the ground whereon it stood, to the minister and members in the following manner:—

#### ROYAL PATENT FOR THE CHURCH AND GROUND AT NEW ROCHELLE.

“Anne, by the grace of God, of Great Britian, France and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c., &c., to all whom these presents may come or in any wise concerne, sendeth greeting: Whereas, the inhabitants of New Rochelle, in the County of Westchester, &c., with the leave and lycense of our trusty and well beloved Robert Hunter, Esq., Captain General and Governor-in-chief of our province of New York, and territories depending thereon in America, and Vice Admiral of the same, have, by the voluntary contributions of well disposed Christians, erected and built in the High street of the said town of New Rochelle—to wit., on the north side thereof, a church or chapel for the worship and service of Almighty God, according to the rites and ceremonies of the Church of England as by law established; and whereas Daniel Bondet, now minister at New Rochelle aforesaid, Isaias Valteau, Oliver Besley, Peter Valteau, Elie Debonrepos, in behalf of themselves and other the inhabitants of New Rochelle aforesaid, of the Communion of the Church of England, by their petition presented to our trusty and well beloved Robert Hunter, Esq., Captain General and Governor-in-chief as aforesaid in Council, have prayed our grant and confirmation of the said church or chapel and ground whereon the same is erected and built, to and for the use of the service aforesaid, the which petition we being willing to grant—*Know ye*, that of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, we have given, granted, released, ratified, and confirmed, and by these presents, for ourselves, our heirs and successors, do give, grant, release and confirm unto the said Daniel Bondet, Isaias Valteau, Oliver Besley, Peter Valteau, and Elias Debonrepos, and to their heirs and assignees, all that church or chapel aforesaid, and all and singular the ground whereon the same now stands, being 40 feet in length and thirty feet in breadth; the which said church or chapel and ground is situate, standing and being in the north side of the High street of the said town of New Rochelle, in the County of Westchester aforesaid, between the dwelling houses of Johannes Le Conte and Zachary Anjouvaine, together with all and singular the ways, easements, emoluments, profits, benefits, privileges, liberties, advantages, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever to the same belonging, or in any wise of right appertaining, to the estate, right, title, interest, benefits, advantages, claims and demands in any way of, in, or to the said church or chapel, ground and premises, with appurtenances or any part or parcel thereof, and the reversion and reversions, remainder and remainders thereof, to have and to hold the said church or chapel ground and premises with the appurtenances hereby granted, released and confirmed, or meant, mentioned, or intended to be hereby granted, released and confirmed, unto the said Daniel Bondet, Isaias Valteau, Oliver Besley, Peter Valteau and Elie Debonrepos, their heirs and assignees forever, to the only proper use and behoof of them, the said Daniel Bondet, Isaias Valteau, Oliver Besley, Peter Valteau and Elie Debonrepos, their heirs and assignees, for ever in trust, nevertheless and to the intent, the aforesaid church or

chapel with the appurtenances, may and shall forever hereafter, continue, remain and be unto all and singular the inhabitants, residents of the said town of New Rochelle for the time being in Communion of the Church of England, a free church or chapel for the performing of the worship and services of Almighty God, according to the rites and ceremonies of the Church of England, as by law established, to and for no other service, use, intent or purpose whatsoever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, in free and common soccage, as of our manor of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, within our kingdom of Great Britain, yielding and paying therefor yearly and every year from henceforth, unto us, our heirs and successors, at or upon the feast of the Nativity of our Lord, commonly called Christmas, the yearly rent of one pepper corne only, (if the same shall be lawfully demanded,) in lieu and stead of all other rents, dues, duties, services, and demands, whatsoever; provided nevertheless, that nothing herein contained shall be construed, deemed, or taken in any manner to exempt the said inhabitants of New Rochelle aforesaid, or any of them, of and from the payment of any rate, sum or sums of money now due or hereafter to be due from them or any of them to the parish church of Westchester, in the county aforesaid, or for or in respect thereof, or of and from the performances or execution of any parochial office or duty in the same parish, or to prejudice, or in giving any the rights, privileges, enoluments and authorities of the present rector of the said parish of Westchester aforesaid, or the rector of the same parish church for the time being; but that the same shall and may continue, remaine and be as fully and amply to all intents and purposes whatsoever, as the same now are, and as if this present grant had never been made, anything herein before contained to the contrary thereof in any wise notwithstanding. In testimony whereof we have caused these our letters to be made patent, and the seal of our said province of New York to our said letters patent to be affixed to the same, to be recorded in ye secretary's office of our said province. Witness our trusty and well beloved Robert Hunter, Esq., captain-general and governor-in-chief, in and over our province of New York aforesaid, and territories depending thereon in America, and vice-admiral of the same, and in council at our fort at New York aforesaid, the seventh day of February, in the tenth year of our reign, and in the year of our Lord God, 1713.<sup>a</sup>

About this period, "the town gave a house and three acres of land, adjoining the church, for the use of the clergyman forever."<sup>b</sup>

During the year 1714, Mr. Bondet, at the request of the Society, took charge of the Mohegan or River Indians.

The next communication from Mr. Bondet to the Venerable Society is as follows:—

#### MR. BONDET TO THE SECRETARY.

*"New-York, 3d April, 1714.*

HONORED SIR:—By my last of the 25th of Nov., 1713, if happily come to your hand, you are informed of the reception of yours of the 28th July, 1712, and of my gratitude to the Honorable Society for their bounty, having brought my

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. Lib. viii. pp. 1, 2, 3.

<sup>b</sup> Missions of the Church of England, by Ernest Hawkins, B. D., 232.

salary to the rate of £50. That seasonable relief of their equitable regard hath rescued me from several inconveniencies, who had rendered the maintenance of my family difficult and uneasy. I was in a perfect resolution to continue my service, trusting in the Lord, that when my circumstances should come plainly and truly to be known by the Honorable Society, their piety should resolve something for my relief, of which you have been pleased to inform me, as also of one hundred French Common Prayer Books, who came not with your letter, but are come since in very good order. That new token of the pious care of the Honorable Society for our company, hath renewed our thanks and blessings upon their charity and rebuked the temerarious suspicions suggested by our contradiction that our labor and confidence should come to nothing, being abandoned and left to our weakness, but thanks be to God, who hath rebuked the scorns and relieved our simple and sincere endeavors, by the continuation of the Honorable Society's benevolence and charity, as also by the wise and serious concurrence of his Excellency, our Governor, Colonel Hunter, who in this affair, as in all others, hath showed the regard of a grave and pious ruler, who, with a philosophic patience, hears and considers everything, and with sound judgment declares his mind among the contending parties, and with a constant equity, countenances by his authority the right and lawful claim of his protection. These favourable junctures of Providence have produced effects answerable, constancy and thankfulness of our people, and a daily increase of consenters to the Church. By my antecedent accounts, the Honourable Society hath been informed of the number of our communicants, which hath been from the beginning of our conformity, four times in the year, between thirty and forty communicants of our town, sometimes above forty, but this last Easter there was fifty communicants; three families reunited to the flock, which were the most sober and sensible persons of our disturbed inhabitants; those who remain yet backward, showing rather the humour of seditious, obstinate disturbers, than the spirit of sound, religious Christians; but I live peaceably and civilly with them, knowing that the most forward may, by the grace of God, turn docile; as I have with patience and moderation waited for others, so shall I continue to do for the few remaining back, ready to help them for their own good and the full and perfect gathering of the flock. It remains that I inform the Honourable Society, that as I continue to do the service in English every third Sunday, as I did from my first entrance in this place; that I have done it till now with a Bible of small volume and character, that the Honourable Society be pleased to allow us the benefit of an English Bible, with a small quantity of English common prayers, because our young people, or some of them, have sufficiently learned to read English for to join in the public service when read in English. Concerning the books I have received from the Society, they are disposed of according to their intention, with an exact memorial of the persons who have received them, and that which remain of those or of my own shall be left and conveyed, I hope, to my successor; entreating the Honourable Society that he may be a missionary fit for to perform the divine service in French and English as I have done, for the edification of our people, and perpetuating the memory of this conformity to the national Church of England, in which we shall continue to pray for the life and prosperity of her Majesty and dominions, for the preservation and welfare of the Church, and as bound by our just acknowledg-



merit for the most Honourable and Venerable Society, that they may continue in present and future generations examples, encouragers, and promoters of true godliness. This premised, I recommend myself to your benevolence, and remain,

Honourable Sir, &c.,

DANIEL BONDET.<sup>a</sup>

In another letter he thus writes to the same :

#### MR. BONDET TO THE SECRETARY.

NEW ROCHELLE, Oct. 17th, 1716.

HONORED SIR.—Concerning the present state of our church, I have nothing, thank God, to acquaint you with which discourage my service, nor the favour of the Honorable Society. We stand orderly and peaceably under the protection and favour of our worthy Governor. The number of our first disturbers is decreased, who have increased our congregation. The door of my heart is always open to reconciliation, as the gates of the church for their reception. The 2nd of April, Easter Day, we had fifty-two communicants; the 7th of July, fifty; the seventh of October we had forty-seven. The Hon. Col. Nicholson being in these parts in the beginning of the Church settlement in this province, was pleased at his parting to leave in the hands of the Rev. Mr. Vesey, rector of the church of New York, a bill of £20, to be distributed among the ministers of the Province, who being then in convention at New York, Mr. Vesey declared it to the Assembly, which was of seven of us, and as they were about calculating how much it was for every one, one of the brethren being generously moved towards me, who had then nothing for my support but the poor contribution of New Rochelle, he said, the Brother Bondet is the poorer of us, let him have the whole—to which all consented: but this disorder of the affairs of the prayer assigned, hath caused the bill to be unpaid, till of late that Mr. Vesey informed me that he had finally received the money, remembering also how it was agreed in the before-mentioned convention. I said to him, that Providence having since relieved and comforted me by the favour of the Honorable Society, that I was remitting my pretension to the gift to procure glass to our church, which Mr. Vesey liked very well.”<sup>b</sup>

The following year Mr. Bondet informs the Society of the death of Jane Bondet his wife. The subjoined was probably his last letter to that Venerable Body, although he continued faithfully at his post more than three years afterwards.

#### MR. BONDET TO THE SECRETARY.

“NEW ROCHELLE, NOV. 12TH, 1717.

HONORED SIR :—That I be not wanting in duty to the Honorable Society and their orders, I inform you that I am alive and thank God in good health, considering my age, having lost this year my wife, God having crowned the hardships of her pilgrimage with a honorable end. I keep and rule my house, as I ought to be exemplary in house ruling as in church ministering. My congrega-

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. 1, pp. 475, 476. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. 1, pp. 512, 513. (Hawk's.)

tion continue in the same terms that you have been informed by my precedents, forty, fifty and sixty communicants. I have of late admitted to the communion two negroes to the satisfaction of the Church, who heard them often before giving promise of their Christian instruction, and having good report among our people. There is nothing wanting in respect of the outward order, but as I have represented before that our town might have the privilege of Church, and enjoy the benefit of the law for to contribute towards the support of the minister who serveth them. I pray not on that point by ambition nor as complaining of any indigence, but it does not look well that a minister who hath served past twenty years in this province, founded a church and put it in the order where it appears to the public approbation, be left to voluntary contribution, and the contribution raised by law be applied to another place. I leave that to your wise consideration, depending entirely on the favour and approbation of the Honorable Society for which I pray daily, as I am bound in duty, that their good works may continue and prosper, to the confirmation and propagation of ever truth and godliness.

I remain, Reverend Sir, Your very humble servant,

DANIEL BONDET."<sup>a</sup>

The latter period of this good man's ministry, (whose age and infirmities, at least, should have entitled him to some degree of respect,) was embittered by the outrageous conduct of the seceders from their *own* church, aided by one Moulinars, and the Consistory of the French church of New York. It appears that Monsieur Lewis Roux, a man of learning and the lawful pastor of the French church in New York, absolutely refused to abet these seceders, at New Rochelle, which ultimately led to his unjust dismissal from the pastoral charge, and the usurpation of the above mentioned Moulinars. The whole matter is thus represented by Governor Hunter to the Venerable Society:—

#### COL. HUNTER TO THE SECRETARY.

“BATH, SEPT. 21<sup>ST</sup>, 1710.

“SIR:—I had the honor of yours with Mr. Bondet's enclosed, Monsieur Roux's moderation procured him the chagrin of a colleague of a different disposition, who was not so easy to hearken to advice, which was all that was in my power. The case stands thus: part of the inhabitants of New Rochelle separated from the rest from the time that Mr. Bondet owned his Episcopal ordination, and being without a pastor of their own they met on Sundays, at Mr. Alard's house, where they continued their religious exercise after their own manner. Monsieur Roux, refused to go thither either to preach or administer sacraments, being persuaded that they were not without a lawful pastor of their own, on whom he would not intrude; which got him enemies amongst the most zealous and considerable of his congregation, which ended in their calling an assistant, tractable to their warm disposition. I foresaw what has happened, and begged of Mr. Bondet to enter into no discussions with the Consistory at New York, where his

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i. 535-6. (Hawks.)

enemies would be his judges, but to bear all with patience and to represent it to the Society. If the chief of the ministers of the French Congregational Churches could be persuaded to write to Monsieur Molinar to forbear intruding where he has no lawful call, as his colleague has hitherto done, I believe that would answer all the ends Monsieur Bondet has in view, and keep things quiet there.

I am with respect, Sir Your most obedient humble servant,

ROBERT HUNTER."<sup>a</sup>

Monsieur Roux, in a memorial to the Governor, dated New York, Feb. 18, 1724-25, says:—"In opposition to this National Church, they (Moulinars and friends) have entertained and fomented for several years a *scandalous schism at New Rochelle*, where the incapacity of providing for a minister, obliged the inhabitants to establish an Episcopal Church, through the bounty and protection of the Society in England, and they would still support this *schism* if their M—— was not taken up in the custody of our Church, of which he keeps the keys, in order to keep me out unjustly." Wonderful to say, throughout this dispute, Moulinars and his party not only undertook to defend their *independency* from the discipline of the French Church, but labored to prove their attachment to the Church of England. In answer to the first, Mr. Roux very justly observes, (in the above mentioned memorial) "that if he is not mistaken, the true principles of the *Independent* are expressly condemned in our discipline," As to the second, he says:—"They have always been enemies of the Church of England as by law established; they have always railed at her liturgy, her service, her Church government, and her ceremonies." This strife continued for some time, until at length, the New York seceders "being fearful of a decree, that might expose their own estates to the payment of Mr. Roux's salary, thought it advisable to drop their debates, reinstate the minister and leave the Church."<sup>b</sup>

In New Rochelle the seceders erected a meeting house, styled themselves "The French Protestant Congregation," and remained violently opposed to their lawful pastors; and not only so, but in opposition to their own founders, prescribed the Church of England in her doctrine, discipline, ordinances, usages, rites and ceremonies, as popish, rotten and unscriptural. How different this from the views of their great reformer Beza, who addressing Queen Elizabeth, says:—"But you, O Queen, and your people, by your means, enjoy what perhaps no other kingdom does—the complete profession of the pure and sincere doctrine of the Gospel. To which, if you add (what all good men hope for, and the most faithful Bishops of your kingdom have long desired,) the

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i., pp. 564-5. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> Smith's Hist. of N. Y., pp. 166, 167. "About the middle of the last century," the Historian of New York says, "the French Church of New York by the contentions, in 1724, and the disuse of the French language is now reduced to an inconsiderable handful."

full restoration of ecclesiastical discipline also ; in truth I do not see what England can desire more of you, or your majesty can confer more upon it.”<sup>a</sup> Here are none of those home-bred charges of superstition, idolatry, anti-Christianism, or popery, brought against the liturgy ; but it is owned to be the pure worship of God, purged from the filth and dregs of anti-Christianism.<sup>b</sup> As the poet Cowper well observes :—

“ All zeal for reform, which gives offence  
To peace and charity, is mere pretence.”

But there is one thing which it will not be amiss to mention here, which is, that these seceders not only proscribed the established Liturgy of the Church of England, but altogether discarded the public Liturgy or Form of Prayers and Administration of Sacraments, which all ministers of the French church were obliged to use in their daily service. Calvin gave this advice to the heads of the English Reformation in King Edward's days, and we do not doubt but he took care to put it in practice in his own country :—“ As to what concerns a form of prayer and Ecclesiastical rites,” says he, “ I highly approve of it, that there be a certain form, from which the ministers be not allowed to vary ; that first, some provision may be made to help the simplicity and unskillfulness of some. Secondly, that the consent and harmony of the churches, one with another, may appear ; and lastly, that the capricious giddiness and levity of such as affect innovations may be prevented ; to which end I have shown that a catechism will be very useful. Therefore, there ought to be a stated catechism, a stated form of prayer, and administration of the sacraments.”<sup>c</sup>

“ If we had no clearer light or evidence concerning the practice of the French Church in this matter,” says Bingham, “ this were a strong presumption what it must be, considering how great a hand Calvin had in its reformation.” But we have most certain and undeniable evidence in the case. Their Book of Discipline in one canon determines the controversy beyond all dispute, (Chap V, Art. 32,) where it says, “ If any pastor break the Church's union, or stirs up contention about any point of doctrine or discipline, or about the form of catechising or administration of the sacraments, or of our common prayers and celebration of marriage, and conform not to the determination of the Classis, he shall then be suspended from his office, and be further prosecuted by the Provincial or National Synod.” Here we see conformity to the Liturgy and all its parts, as well as to the Confession of

<sup>a</sup> Bingham's *Antiquities of the Christian Church*, vol. viii. 97-8.

<sup>b</sup> Mr. Skinner, the grand-father of the late Primus of Scotland, somewhere observes, that Subter-stition is quite as bad as Super-stition.

<sup>c</sup> Calvin Ep. ad. Protector. Angl. p. 4169. Bingham's *Antiq. of Ch.* vol. viii. B. viii. p. 87.



of Faith and Discipline, is made necessary to the Church's union.<sup>a</sup> So that Moulinars and his party of seceders at New Rochelle were truly Independents, condemned by the discipline of the French Church.

The Rev. Daniel Bondet died sometime in September, 1722, aged sixty-nine years, having been nearly twenty-six years minister of this church. He was eminently useful in keeping the congregation together, under its adverse circumstances, and as he lived greatly beloved, so he died greatly lamented. His mortal remains were interred beneath the chancel floor of the old church. His will bears date the 24th of March, 1721-2, and was proved on the 21st of September following.

#### THE WILL OF DANIEL BONDET, CLERK.

"IN THE NAME GOD, AMEN, The four and twentieth day of March, one thousand seven hundred and twenty-two, I, Daniel Bondet, minister of the Gospel, of New Rochelle, being sick in body but of good and perfect memory, thanks be to Almighty God, and calling to remembrance the uncertain state of this transitory life, and that all flesh must yield unto death, when it shall please God to call: do make, constitute, ordain and declare, this my last Will and Testament in manner and form following:—Revoking and Annulling by these presents, all and every Testament and Testaments, Will and Wills heretofore by me made and declared, either by word or writing, and this is to be taken only for my last Will and Testament, and none other. And first, being penitent and sorry, from the bottom of my heart, for all my sins past, most humbly desiring forgiveness for the same, I give and commit my soul unto Almighty God, my Saviour and Redeemer, in Whom, and by the merits of Jesus Christ, I trust and believe assuredly to be saved and to have full remission and forgiveness of all my sins; and that my soul with my body at the general Day of Resurrection shall rise again with joy, and through the merits of Christ, seek and pass in, possess and inherit the Kingdom of Heaven prepared for his Elect and Chosen: and my body to be buried in such place where it shall please my Executors hereafter named to appoint. And now for the settling of my Temporal Estate, and such Goods, Chattels and Debts, as it has pleased God for alone my Deserts to bestow upon me, I do order, give and dispose of the same in manner following: that is to say, First, I will that all those Debts and duties that I owe in Right or Conscience to any manner of person or persons whatsoever, shall be and truly contented and paid or ordained to be paid, within convenient time after my decease, by my Executors hereafter named. ITEM.—I give, bequeath and constitute for my only heirs, Lieutenant Oliver Besley, Jun., of New Rochelle; desiring him after my Decease to come and take possession of all my goods, chattels and debts, with obligations which is belonging to me, with a Negro Woman called Toinetta, Ready Money, Plates, Jewells, Rings, Household Stuff, Apparels, Utensils, Brass, Pewter, Bedding and all other of my substance whatsoever, moveable and immoveable. ITEM.—I do Give to Bety Cantin, one obligation from Peter, which is now in the hand and possession of her Father, Jean Cantin,

<sup>a</sup> Bingham's Antiq. of Ch. Ch. vol. viii. B. iii. p. 88.

and that she shall have from this present time and hereafter, lawful for her to receive the said Due, Debt or Interest to her proper use or benefit, without molestation hereafter, from any body whatsoever. ITEM.—I do give to Judith Robinseau, a little Negro Girl, named Charlotte, for her proper use and benefit, without molestation hereafter from any body whatsoever. ITEM.—I do give to the use of the Church of New Rochelle all my Books. *In witness* I have put my hand and seal, this twenty-fourth day of March, 1721-2.

DANIEL BONDET, (P. S.)

Sealed and signed in presence of us,

ISAAC MERCIER,

AMAN GUYONS,

CÉSAR F. SUIZE."<sup>a</sup>

During the interval between the death of Mr. Daniel Bondet and the appointment of his successor, services were performed by the Rev. John Bartow, rector of the parish, as appears from the following communication to the Honorable Society :—

#### MR. BARTOW TO THE SECRETARY.

NEW YORK, Nov. 15th, 1722.

*Worthy Sir*:—"By the death of the late Rev. Mr. Bondet, last September, the care of New Rochelle is wholly devolved on me, till the Reverend and Honorable Society be pleased to send another missionary for that place, which I hope will be speedily, being unfit to travel so far at fixed times by reason of age and uncertain indispositions; but by God's leave, shall attend the care of that people as much as I can without doing wrong to the rest of my parish. I preach now at four towns—Eastchester, Westchester, Yonkers and New Rochelle; the last, eight miles, Yonkers, six miles, Eastchester four from home, and do other occasional offices. I have preached twice at New Rochelle, since Mr. Bondet died; and intend, God willing, to administer the sacrament of the Lord's Supper there the first Sunday in the next month. According to the proportion of their annual payment to the Church, I must preach there about eight Sundays in the year; and if the Society do think me worthy, should be glad if they would allow me something for traveling charges until they send another missionary. Mr. Bondet bequeathed in his last will all his books to the use of the Church. Sir John Pell, Lord of the Manor of Pelham, of which New Rochelle is a part, has given one hundred acres of land within the said manor, which land Mr. Bondet enjoyed to the use of the church for ever. A house and about three acres of land adjoining New Rochelle church, was given by the town to the church for ever; all which I do presume have and do belong to me, *durante vitæ*, but should gladly acquit all to such missionary of the Church as the Society shall think fit to send, together with the perquisites as Mr. Bondet enjoyed them. I humbly pray that the Society would send them a missionary that can preach to them in their mother tongue, and that he be desired to preach once a month in English, at Eastchester; for I can't attend the people so often as they require, which was the

<sup>a</sup> Rec. of Wills, Surrogate's Office, N. Y., vol. IX., p. 332-333. Mrs. Jane Bondet, his wife, who was born in France, A.D., 1654, died between 1716 and 1720.

occasion about three years since of the hiring a Presbyterian minister, who is now removed to Bedford within the parish of Rye, of which the Rev. Mr. Jenny has undertaken the care of, with the Society's approbation. I now by the bearer received my money of Mr. Perry, about which I have been so impertinent to you, through a mistake; and humbly beg the Society's pardon and venerate their justice, and shall not cease to pray for the blessing of God on their pious endeavors, who am, Sir, Your humble and obedient servant,

JOHN BARTOW.<sup>a</sup>

In 1723, Mr. Bartow received from the Society £10 for his extra services at New Rochelle.

Mr. Bondet was succeeded in 1724 by the Rev. Pierre Stouppe, A.M. This individual was also a native of France, and nearly related to, if not a son, of the Rev. Mr. Stouppe, minister of the French Church in London, who was sent by Oliver Cromwell in 1654 to Geneva, to negotiate in affairs relating to the French Protestants.<sup>b</sup> He was born in 1690, studied divinity at Geneva, and afterwards accepted a call as minister to the French Church in Charleston, South Carolina. Here he continued until the summer of 1723, when he resigned his charge, conformed to the Church of England, and crossed the Atlantic to be ordained. At Christmas, 1723, he was admitted to holy orders by the Rt. Rev. Edmund Gibson, D.D., the then Lord Bishop of London, and licensed to officiate as a missionary in the Government of New York. At the same time he was appointed the Venerable Society's missionary to New Rochelle, with a salary of £50 per annum. In July, 1724, he received his commission from Governor Burnet. He proved very acceptable to his flock because he could preach in French, which language, only, most of them understood. In 1724, the Society's Abstracts says that "Mr. Stouppe's congregation is much increased since his arrival, and that the number of his communicants is thirty-eight."

#### REV. PETER STOUPPE'S ANSWERS TO THE QUERIES OF THE BISHOP OF LONDON.

[QUERIES TO BE ANSWERED BY EVERY MINISTER.]

NEW ROCHELLE, 1724, the 12th October.

Q. How long is it since you went over to the plantations as a missionary?

A. Your Lordship knows that I went over as a missionary but since the last spring.

Q. Have you had any other church before you came to that which you now possess; and if you had, what church was it, and how long have you been removed?

A. I had the French church of Charleston, in South Carolina, and left it about eighteen months ago.

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. 582-3. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> Dr. Vaughan's Protectorate of Cromwell, vol. i, p. 12. "1654, June 1st, Mr. Stouppe came to us." Pell's Diary. Vaughan's Prot. of Cromwell, vol. ii, p. 486.

Q. Have you been duly licensed by the Bishop of London to officiate as a missionary in the Government where you now are ?

A. I have been licensed by your Lordship himself.

Q. How long have you been inducted into your living ?

A. I have been inducted since the month of July last.

Q. Are you ordinarily a resident in the parish to which you have been inducted ?

A. I reside constantly there.

Q. Of what extent is your parish, and how many families are there in it ?

A. The extent of it is two miles in length and three miles in breadth, and is reckoned to contain seventy families, among whom are some Presbyterians.

Q. Are there any Infidels, bond or free, within your parish, and what means are used for their conversion ?

A. There is in all but a few negro slaves, some of which come on Sundays out of their free will to church without their master's order ; but no other means are used for their conversion.

Q. How often is divine service performed in your church ; and what proportion of the parishioners attend it ?

A. Divine service is performed twice every Sunday, in the morning and evening, and upon Christmas Day, Easter Day and Communion days ; there is a preparation sermon upon some day of the week, which, as well as other public service, is always attended by the most part of the parishioners conformed to the Church.

Q. How oft is the sacrament of the Lord's Supper administered ; and what is the usual number of communicants ?

A. The sacrament of the Lord's Supper is administered four times a year, and the number of communicants is sometimes more, sometimes less, but commonly between forty and fifty.

Q. At what time do you catechise the youth of your parish.

A. The youth is catechised all the Summer long, six or seven months in the year.

Q. Are all things duly disposed and provided in the Church, for the decent and orderly performance of divine service ?

A. Every thing is provided in the church for the decent and orderly performance of the service according to the church's ability.

Q. Of what value is your living in sterling money and how does it arise ?

A. I cannot tell your Lordship of what value my living will be in sterling money, depending only upon voluntary contributions, and having not yet received one farthing to that purpose : the people is but very poor, and besides, New Rochelle is included in Westehester parish. They are obliged to pay towards Mr. Bartow's salary, appointed to him by act of Assembly, which rendered them incapable of doing anything for me, except otherwise should be provided.

Q. Have you a house and glebe ; is your glebe in lease or let by the year, or is it occupied by yourself ?

A. There is a house and one hundred acres of land belonging to it, but at some distance, which land is let by the year for four pence sterling an acre.

Q. Is care taken to preserve your house in good repair and at whose expense is it done ?



A. There is but indifferent care taken to preserve the parish house in good repair, and as for the expenses, they are taken upon the members of the church each one.

Q. Have you any more curès than one, if you have, what are they, and in what manner served?

A. I have no other curè than the aforesaid.

Q. Have you in your parish any public school for the instruction of youth?

A. There is no public school within the precinct of New Rochelle—the parents take care to instruct their own children.

Q. Have you a parochial library; if you have, are the books preserved, and kept in good condition; have you any particular rules and orders for the preserving of them; are these rules and orders duly observed?

A. My predecessor, Mr. Bondet, has left four hundred volumes for the use of the church for ever; they are kept in pretty good condition, but I know no particular rules of preserving them.

My Lord, &c.,

PETER STOUPPE."<sup>a</sup>

At the date of Mr. Stouppe's arrival, the elders or ancients (as they are sometimes styled,) of this church, were Isaac Quantein and Isaac Guion. The following extract is taken from Mr. Stouppe's first letter to the Society:

#### MR. STOUPPE TO THE SECRETARY.

[EXTRACT.]

"NEW ROCHELLE, PROVINCE OF NEW YORK, MAY 12TH, 1725.

SIR:—"But there are yet thirty families unconformed within New Rochelle bounds, and were it not for fear of the eager censures of Mr. Moulinars, one of the French ministers of New York, who comes quarterly amongst them, and some of the most creditable members of his congregation, who jointly with him do support their separation from the Church, all those yet dissenting families, without exception, would have been come over to it already. The proceeding is so unjust that I cannot forbear to complain of, and set down to the consideration of the Honorable Society, some of the arguments they make use of to keep the Dissenting inhabitants of New Rochelle in their division, from the Church—and even to pervert, if possible, its truest defenders. They not only at all occasions inspire them with a disadvantageous opinion of the Church of England, but they raile in a plain manner at its Liturgy and Ceremonies. The said Mr. Moulinars has declared (as can be proved) that he finds our Church and that of Rome as like one another as two fishes can be; besides, the said minister and his party have threatened the yet dissenting French inhabitants of New Rochelle of breaking with them all commerce, and of suspending all acts of charity and support towards them, if ever they should dare to join themselves at any time to the Church; nay, for instance, the said Moulinars and his party convinced long ago of Mr. Roux, the other minister of the French in New York, and his inclination and good affection to the Church, and of his always openly blaming and disapproving Mr. Moulinars, his colleagues irregular practices against the Church in

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. i., p. 673. (Hawks.)

general, and especially his keeping up and fomenting our unhappy divisions in New Rochelle. The said Moulinars and his party in revenge, have pretended to depose Mr. Roux, and suspend him accordingly of all his accustomed ministerial functions amongst them, as you may see it more largely in this collection of papers on that subject which I beg of you to put into the Honorable Society's hands, and which will justify in general the matters I here acquaint them with. They will find that one of the chiefest reasons of this violence against Mr. Roux, has no other ground than his constant affection to the Church, and the public approbation he has at all times and occasions given to its ceremonies and doctrine; and this affair is so far gone that the Honorable Council of this province could not forbear to take notice and to interpose their mediation and authority, which having been unsuccessful on the French dissenters part, Mr. Roux intends by the advice of his friends to carry his complaints into Chancery, where it is not doubted but he will find protection and justice. I thought it necessary to make you this relation that the Honorable Society might be more sensible of the great prejudice Mr. Moulinars and his adherents do in general to the Church of England, and in particular to that of New Rochelle; and that there is no unlawful practice which they scruple to make use of, for the detriment of it. After Mr. Bondett's, my predecessors death, they engaged the dissenters to build a meeting house about two hundred yards distant from the church in which I officiate twice every Sunday; they incited them also to reclaim the one hundred acres of land which Mr. Bondet enjoyed, and which were given by the Lord Pell to the use of the church, in order to deprive me of it; and notwithstanding all the friendly presentations made from time to time to the said Mr. Moulinars by some gent of this country, and also by the late Lord Bishop of London, of which Master Aufere, one of the Society members, may give a more full and exact account; all this, I say, did not prevail with him, nor induce him to keep his own congregation and not to intrude himself into those of others, and consequently not to trouble their union and peace. He also of late eagerly consumed some of the dissenters of New Rochelle, who to save expenses and inconveniences they would lay under bringing their children to York to be christened by him, or who by reason of having no aversion from the Church do not think fit to defer their baptism till he come amongst them, according to his desire have required me to baptize them. I heartily wish the Honorable Society would pity our assaulted Church, and take some effectual means for the removing of the cause and instrument of the unhappy divisions we are in; our endeavors here without their assistance having proved of but little and of none effect. For there is no irregular practice which in their opinion is not supported, and which they do not find justified and authorized by the benefit of toleration and liberty of conscience granted to them, in such manner they abuse that great and inestimable privilege. You will, Rev. Sir, very much oblige me in giving me notice as soon as possible, of the Honorable Society's intention and resolution about that affair.

I am, Reverend Sir, &c.,

PETER STOUPPEL."

Writing to the Propagation Society in 1726, he thus describes the state of his church: "That he has baptized six grown negroes and seven negro children, fitted eight young people for the sacrament of the Lord's

Supper, to which they have been accordingly admitted; and that the number of his communicants at Easter last, was thirty-three." <sup>a</sup>

### MR. STOUPPE TO THE SECRETARY.

"NEW ROCHELLE, *Dec. 11th, 1727.*

REVEREND SIR:—According to the Honorable Society's order, signified unto me by your last of the 16th June, 1717, here you have the best accounts I could get upon the several heads and matters intimated unto me in the aforesaid years.

1st. As to the church. It was built in the year 1708, upon the public or king's road, of strong materials, joined together with mortar, the inside plastered and whitewashed, of 40 feet length and 30 breadth. Partly by its own members, the inhabitants of New Rochelle, who gave a number of days work towards it, partly by the contributions of the following charitable persons, members of the Church of England or well-wishers to it, settled in divers parts of this province, as you will see by the list here set down and recorded in our church book.

Fifty paces from the said church there is a glebe of three and a half acres of land, upon part of which stands the parish house or the minister's dwelling place, built of wooden materials, the inside plastered, consisting of two rooms on a floor, a garret and a small kitchen-house; the other part of said glebe serves for a dwelling place.

The salary subscribed for the minister by the members of New Rochelle church amounts at present to £10 19s., money of this province, of which, through negligence or pretended poverty of the subscribers, there is little more than half part of it actually paid; so that the provisions of firewood which they make to their minister for the time being, is by much the better part of his salary—though little in itself.

There is no other endowment belonging to the church that I know of. This is all what I can say upon that head.

2nd. I come now to the second. The number of people that first settled New Rochelle was about a dozen families; the most part of them were in Europe, trading-merchants; being French refugees, they were all at first addicted to the Confession of Faith of the formerly Reformed Protestant Church of France. These few families, I say, have conjointly bought of the Lord Pell, 6000 acres of land and divided it into lots and parcels, from 20 to 30, 40, 50, 60, 100, 200 and 300 acres a piece: have sold afterwards the said lots and parcels to any who had a mind to buy them, English, French or Dutch; but so it happened that more of the French than of the other two nations proved desirous to settle among them. To this, if you add the increase and settlement of their children since that time, each of which have their particular houses, or dwelling places, being settled upon so many respective lots and parcels of ground, the present number of inhabitants, comprehending young and old of both sexes, amounts to very near 400 persons. There is a dozen of houses near the church, standing pretty close to one another, which makes that place a sort of town; the remainder of the houses and settlements are dispersed up and down as far as the above said 6000 acres of land could bear. Nay, besides those, there were several other French families members of

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. 1, pp. 665-6-7-8. (Hawks.)

New Rochelle settled without its bounds. They are little, or not at all, improved in their fortunes ; and, a few tailors and shoemakers excepted, they live upon the produce of their own land.

There is no church near or about New Rochelle, save one which from the one side of its bounds is three miles distant, and from the other side seven miles distant ; and divine service is no oftener performed in it than once in a month, or twelve times in a year. Travelling is in all seasons difficult in this country, it being very rough and uneven—full of rocks and stones, hills, valleys, creeks, loose and bad bridges. The Fall is attended with great showers, and the Winter with ice, snow, and exceeding sharp winds.

3rd. As to the 3rd head. There is two Quaker families, three Dutch ones, four Lutherans, and several of the French. The first never assist our assemblies ; the Dutch and Lutheran, on the contrary, constantly assist when divine service is performed in English—so that they may understand it—and their children likewise have all been baptized by ministers of the Church. Only the French Dissenters have deserted it upon Mr. Moulinars, formerly one of the French ministers of New York, coming and settling, now a year ago, among us ; and 'tis also by his means and inducement, that while he yet was minister of New York, that they have built a wooden meeting-house within the time they was unprovided for—that is, from my predecessor's death to my arrival here. The said Moulinars and followers, to the number of about one hundred persons, and the said meeting-house built by his persuasion, are the sole dissenting teacher, people, and meeting-house within New Rochelle bounds. The said Moulinars is supported partly by the contributions of his hearers, partly by the assistance of some of the French Dissenters of New York, who, in my predecessor's time, as well as now, have done much harm to our poor church, and always obstructed their reconciliation thereto.

4th. There is no school nor schoolmaster as yet in New Rochelle ; the parents take care to instruct their own children, and that they do generally pretty well, besides what instructions are given to them in the church during Summer by the minister.

5th. As to the fifth article. I don't question but the Honorable Society knows that the Lord Pell when he sold the 6,000 acres of New Rochelle ground to the aforesaid families of refugees who first settled it, gave in the same time 100 acres of land for the encouragement and benefit of any minister that would serve them ; which land being laid out by the buyers in one of the worst places, upon a very rocky ground, and distant a mile and one half from the parish house, has been let by my predecessor and by me for four pence sterling an acre, yearly rent, bating 20 acres holden by a distracted woman, not supported by the parish before last year, &c.

There is no other library but that which Mr. Bondet has left to the church, consisting of about 400 volumes.

6th. The number of slaves within New Rochelle is 78 ; part of them constantly attend Divine service, and have had some instructions in the Christian Faith by the care and assistance of their respective masters and mistresses—so that my predecessors did not scruple to baptize some, and even to admit to the Communion of the Lord's Supper ; and I myself have, for the same consideration, baptized fifteen of them within these three years—some children and some



grown persons, indifferently well instructed in the fundamentals of our Holy Religion.

I assure you, sir, that they shall always have a convenient share in my assistance and care, and as far as will be necessary to make them good and religious persons, without the least prejudice to the rest of my flock. These, Sir, are the sentiments which I entertain, and of which I shall endeavor to give to the Honorable Society the most convincing proofs.

I am, Reverend Sir, your most Obedient Servant,

PETER STOUPPE.<sup>a</sup>

In 1729 he writes: "That he continues his diligence in all parts of duty: that besides the white, he hath baptized ten negro children and one grown person, and hath thirty-four communicants." The next year he informs the Society, "That the French and English prayer-books sent there by the Society have been of great use, and even thankfully received by the people. His congregation improves, the number of communicants increases, and in the space of six months he baptized fifteen white children and three negroes.' Upon the 7th of April, 1733, he acquaints them, "That his congregation increases, that he had thirty-three communicants last Easter, and hath within six months baptized eleven white and five negro children."<sup>c</sup> The next communication from Mr. Stoupe is the following :

#### MR. STOUPPE TO THE SECTETARY.

NEW ROCHELLE, *Aug. 10th, 1733.*

REV. SIR.—In my last, April 10th, 1792, by Capt. Saml. Bourdet, bound for Bristol, there being then no ship besides in this town bound for England. I informed you how I had heard of the Rev. Mr. Vesey, our Commissary, that the last 4 doz. of Common Prayer Books sent by the Honorable Society to be given to the people, who desire them, were in his hands. Now, Sir, I must inform you that I have received the same some time ago, and distributed some to the people as they made application for them. I say as they made application for them, for these people being none of my parishioners, but Dr. Standard's, I cannot sufficiently discern those that deserve to have them from those that do not; as my intentions are sincere, I am apt to think every man's so. Sure it is, the Honorable Society receive a great deal of praise and blessings of them on that account, which I doubt not will have one day a good effect; and beget in time, not only love and respect, but a thorough conformity and willing adherence to the Church.

As for my particular church, Sir, I have had 35 communicants last July communion, and since my last, of the 7th of April, I have baptized five white children. I have always a constant good number of hearers; and when divine

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. 1, 678-9-80-1-2. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Society.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid.

service is performed in English, the congregation is so numerous of late that people scarce can sit—some resorting from Eastchester, some from Mamaroneck, especially in the summer season, besides the English and Dutch of this town, who have all hitherto applied to me for supplying their spiritual necessities, particularly for administering baptism to their children.

Now, Reverend Sir, one thing I beg leave to offer to the Honorable Society's consideration is, that Christmas next there will be ten years since I have been admitted into Holy Orders by the present Right Reverend the Lord Bishop of London, and thereupon appointed the Honorable Society's missionary for this place. That during the said space of ten years, besides their annual salary to me, I have received but very small contributions from my hearers—not for want of good will or good understanding between them and me, (God forbid) there is no congregation in the province better united than we are, but because being crowded upon one another they have but little land; and being generally encumbered with the maintenance of large families of their own, they are unable to do it—and can but just pay their contributions to Westchester parish, whereof they make a part and have not as yet been discharged from.

Upon this account, Sir, my circumstances are but straight in comparison to those of other missionaries, who by law are allowed yearly some £60, this country money, besides their salary from the Honorable Society: and as I conceive my sincere intentions and endeavors for the good of the Church, as well as the actual and constant performance of duty, to come short to that of none of my brethren, I make bold to intreat that Honorable Society in consideration thereof, and in consideration that clothing and moveables are very dear in this country, that they would be pleased in their goodness to allow and bestow upon me any small gratification, not that it may quicken my zeal for the church and diligence in discharging my duty—for either of them can hardly receive any addition—but that it may comfort and ease me and my family under my present low circumstance. However, if the Honorable Society's fund will not permit them to grant this my humble request, I shall look upon a refusal on that account with all the resignation imaginable.

I am, Reverend Sir, Your most obedient, humble Servant,

PETER STOUPPE."<sup>a</sup>

June 1st, 1855, he acquaints the Society:—"That the members of the church increase at New Rochelle, that there is always a very handsome auditory when Divine service is performed, especially in the summer season of the year, when the English, Dutch and Germans settle within a mile or two, do join with them; and that he hath baptized since Christmas last, nine white and five negro children." Upon the 4th of November, 1737, he transmitted the following account:—"That the state of his church continues good, the members thereof being very assiduous and punctual in attending Divine service all the parts of the year, and being thankful for that blessing. He hath 32 communicants, and hath baptized within the year 12 white and 6 black children."<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. 265-6. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Society.

In his letter of November 16th, he writes:—"That the people do regularly attend divine service at all seasons, that the last time he had thirty-six at the Holy Communion. That in the last year he hath baptized 11 white children, and 4 blacks."

The subjoined extract from a letter of Leonard Lispenard, and other inhabitants of New Rochelle to the Reverend Mr. Orem, dated New Rochelle, December 1st, 1742, shows that some of the former were disaffected to Mr. Stoupe. But whether its authors were members of the Church or not, is very uncertain:

"I went to Mr. Lispenard's who lives in ye place to enquire concerning the inhabitants of it, who reckoned up with 80 families in the boundaries of the place, 34 of which were such as understood no French, 24 were Calvinists, and only 4 persons which are from old France, that come to ye Church of England, and they are very ancient people; wherefore I and a great many others are of opinion, that although the place is so situated that there seems to be an absolute necessity for a minister, yet we humbly conceive, he needs not be a Frenchman, nor be ordered to read and preach in French, considering how things are circumstanced at present. I and several others, therefore, entreat you to condescend so far as to represent our case truly, as I have done to you, either to Mr. Bearcroft or any other gentleman whom you think has interest enough to procure us a minister in Mr. Stoupe's stead, who the English complain has disappointed them very much since I have been to England, and for 9 weeks together, never repeated the service of the Church in English; but was either sick or gone to New York, or made some excuse always on the Sunday when he should have preached in English."<sup>a</sup>

In the year 1743, we find the members of the Church addressing the Venerable Society on behalf of their minister as follows:—

"NEW ROCHELLE, JUNE 1ST, 1743.

DR. BEARCROFT:

*Rev. Sir:*—Our minister, ye bearer hereof, having communicated to us his letter to you of ye ninth of Oct., 1742, wherein he expressed a desire of revisiting his native country, and asked ye Honorable Society's leave for that purpose; we took that declaration as if he had resolved to leave us altogether and to serve our church no longer; and therefore, made bold to address ourselves unto ye Honorable Society for providing us with another, that we might not remain destitute.

But learning now from his own mouth that he designs to go no further than London, and is willing to return, with ye Hon'ble Society's permission, for the service of our church. We therefore, upon this consideration, take ye liberty to declare and acquaint you that our said minister, since his first coming, has constantly resided among us, preaching (as directed by ye Hon'ble Society,) two Sundays in French and one in English, much to our satisfaction and edification, his

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii, p. 138. (Hawks.)

doctrine being very sound, and his pronuciation full, clear, and intelligible—upon which account we could have wished that he had finished his days among us without interruption, and we expected nothing else ; but as it happens, a strong desire to hear from his relatives has prevailed with him to take a journey for Europe. However, seeing now he explains his mind, and promises to return among us, we beg of the Hon'ble Society that they would accordingly be pleased to send him again to us, by the first and next opportunity. But if, contrary to our expectations, it should fall out otherwise, we repeat our former petition, and beg leave to entreat ye Hon'ble Society not to leave us destitute, but to continue to us their charity in providing us with another in his room, as in their great wisdom they shall think fit. Such is the prayer of us underwritten members of New Rochelle church, who are with great respect, Reverend Sir,

Your most obedient humble servants, and in ye name of all,

JEAN SOULICE,  
 PETER BONNET,  
 GILLE LIEURE,  
 PETER SICARD,  
 JOHN BADEAU,  
 AMAN GUION,  
 ISAAO GUION, JR.,  
 BARNARD RYNLANDER,  
 PHILIP JACOB RHINLANDER,  
 JOSEPH DONALDSON.  
 JONAS SPOCK,  
 DANIEL CICAET,  
 ISAAO SICARD,  
 his  
 PAUL ✕ SICARD,  
 mark,  
 JACQUE PUREOT,  
 ISAAO GUION,  
 JAINES DE BLEZ,  
 MARSIL NE FUELLE,  
 JOSIAS LE CONTE.  
 JEAN SICARD,  
 JACQUES BONNET,  
 JEAN BONNET,  
 WILLIAM RHINLANDER,  
 JACQUE FLANDREAU.  
 her  
 LA VEUVE ✕ JEAN JUIN,  
 mark  
 ANNE PALMER,  
 MARY ANNE PALMER,  
 JOHANN PIETER RITTER,  
 his  
 SAMUEL ✕ BERNARD,  
 mark,

JEAN ANGVIN,  
 JACQUES P. SICARD,  
 ALEDA BOLBT,  
 PETER BERTAIN,  
 J'ANNE NE A FUILLE,  
 ROBERT LIVINGSTON,  
 ABM. BANOKER, JR.,  
 ABRM. GUION,  
 DANIEL ANGEVIN,  
 his  
 TRUSTUM ✕ SOBY,  
 mark,  
 CATHERINE ANGEVIN,  
 AMBROISE A. SICARD,  
 DANIEL GIRAUD,  
 DANIEL GIRAUD, JR.,  
 JOHN MORE,  
 his  
 \*FREDERICK ✕ SELURMAN,  
 mark,  
 MICHAEL CROESNY,  
 JEAN PARCOT,  
 ISAAO COUTANT,  
 JOHN ALLEE,  
 JOHN FLANDREAU,  
 ISAAO DAAS,  
 WILLIAM RODMAN,  
 JAM. BARTAIN,  
 JACQUE SICARD,  
 JOHN CHADEAYNE,  
 GIDEON FLORANCE,  
 DANIEL SICARD,  
 GUILLEAUME LANDRIM,  
 JANNE BONNIN,  
 OLIVER BESLY,



In 1743, Aman Guion gave one acre and three quarters of land, "which is now in possession of the Rev. Peter Stoupepe," for the use of the minister and communicants of the French church.

#### DEED FOR CHURCH LOT IN NEW ROCHELLE.

"To all Christian People to whom this Deed of Sale shall come: Aman Guion of New Rochelle, in the County of Westchester and Province of New York, Blacksmith, sendeth Greeting: Know ye that the said Aman Guion, for and in consideration of the sum of five pounds ten shillings, current money of the Province of New York, to him in hand paid by Isaac Guion and John Soulis, of New Rochelle aforesaid, church-wardens or elders of the French church, in New Rochelle aforesaid, according to rules and form of the Church of England, as by law established, now at or before ye ensembling and Delivery hereof, the receipt whereof I do hereby acknowledge and myself therewith fully satisfied, contented and paid, and thereof and of and successors, for the use of the minister and communicants of the French church, in New Rochelle aforesaid, as is therein settled according to the Rules and form of the Church of England, as by law established. That is to say, a certain small parcel of land containing one acre and three quarters, more or less, which is now in the possession of the Reverend Peter Stoupepe, now minister of the aforesaid church, in New Rochelle, and bounded as follows: Northerly by the Burying Place, Easterly by the land of Aman Guion, or a Lane or Road. Southerly, by the land that formerly belonged to De Borrepas, and Westerly by the land of William LeConte, as it is now in fence, together with all and singular the fences, fencing and other appurtenances belonging to said land. To have and to hold said granted and bargained, or intended to be hereby granted and bargained Land and Premises, to them the said Isaac Guion and John Soulis, and their successors forever, for the use of the French Minister, and communicants of the French church in New Rochelle aforesaid, as it is therein settled according to the rules and form of the Church of England as by law established to them and their successors own and only proper use, benefit and behoof. And it shall and may be lawful for them the said Isaac Guion and John Soulis and their successors from time to time, and at all times for use hereafter, lawfully, peaceably and quietly to have, hold, use, occupy, possess and enjoy the before granted and bargained Land and premises, free and clear for the use aforesaid, freely and clearly acquitted, exonerated, released and Discharged from all manner, former and other gifts, grants, bargains, sales, leases, mortgages, entails, jointures, wills, Dowrys, Judgments, Executions, Extents, and every other trouble and incumbrance whatsoever, to these before granted and bargained Lands and premises, to them the said Isaac Guion and John Soulis, and their successors for Ever, for the use above said. He, the said Aman Guion, his heirs, executors and Administrators, shall and will forever hereafter warrant and Defend by these presents, and that against all the just and lawful Claims of all and every other person or persons whatsoever claiming or that shall and may hereafter claim any just right, title, interest, property or demand, of, in or to said granted and bargained land and premises, or of, in, or to any part or parcel thereof. In witness whereof, he the said Aman Guion

has hereunto set his hand and seal, the twenty-sixth day of March, in the sixteenth year of the reign of King George the Second, Anno Domini, one thousand seven hundred and forty-three.

AMAN GUION."<sup>a</sup>

From this time until 1750, nothing particular occurs with regard to the parish in the reports of the Society.

#### MR. STOUPPE TO THE SECRETARY.

"NEW ROCHELLE, JUNE 8TH, 1750.

REV. SIR:—"In my former of ye 25th Oct., 1749, I informed you of the religious zeal which the members of New Rochelle church do show on all occasions wherever divine service is performed among them. How they do prefer ye hearing of a sermon to all idle and vain amusements, and had no more severed from ye church by taking up with fanatical notions, contrary to sound doctrine, however current and common such notions had become some time ago; and I do with pleasure acquaint you now, that they are still the same people, very devout, constant and steady members of ye church, and will continue such to the end of their days.

The number of actual communicants continues likewise to be 68; for as often as we lose some old ones by death, there are young persons who desire to be received and admitted in their stead; and since my last, have baptized 15 infants, viz: 11 white, and 4 black.

There being due to me a whole year's salary, unpaid last Lady day, 1749-50, I have drawn for the same on the Honorable Society's treasurer; and hope my letting it run into a year's salary will occasion no trouble to ye treasurer, for otherwise I shall draw for it every six months. This, Sir, is what offers at present from,

Rev. Sir, Your most obedient humble servant,

PETER STOUPPE."<sup>b</sup>

The following is from the Society's abstracts for A.D. 1756:—"The Rev. Mr. Stoupe, the Society's missionary both to the English and French, at New Rochelle, informs the Society, by his letter of June 16th, 1756, that the Church continues there in a good state, and he officiates to numerous congregations, both of English and French; and that the number of the communicants is increased to eighty, and he had baptized, in the preceding twelve months, thirty-four white and six black children."<sup>c</sup>

Mr. Stoupe informs the Society, by his letter of June 5th, 1758, "that since the war broke out, there have been great alterations in his congregations, which have lost many of the members by removals, and

<sup>a</sup> Town Book, Lib. A. 178. "Upon the petition of fifty-six free-holders and inhabitants of New Rochelle on the 2nd of April, 1771, the Commissioners of the Town closed a certain road, formerly laid out, running between the land of Joseph Drake and the Church Glebe' beginning at the school house, and so to run up to the post road, the highway, or containing by estimation two acres and three quarters of land, which money was to be applied and paid by the Town Clerk to the collector, for and towards the parish rates for the year ensuing." Town Rec. pages 178, 268.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. pp. 153, 154. (Hawks.)

<sup>c</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc. from 20th Feb., 1756, to 18th Feb., 1757.

by enlistings in the King's service and by death; nevertheless, the number of his communicants is seventy-four, and he had baptized within the present half year, fifteen white and five black children."<sup>a</sup>

The ministry of this zealous and successful missionary was brought to a close by his death in July, 1760. The Rev. Henry Barclay, D.D., rector of Trinity church, New York, in a letter dated September 3d, 1760, encloses the following address to the Society from the church at New Rochelle, wherein they acquaint that body with the death of the Rev. Pierre Stouppe, who for thirty-seven years had been their missionary:

#### VESTRY OF NEW ROCHELLE TO THE SECRETARY.

"NEW ROCHELLE, *July ye 30th, 1760.*

REV. SIR.—We, the members of the Church of New Rochelle, in the Province of New York, in communion with the Church of England, beg leave to acquaint the Venerable Society, that it hath pleased Almighty God to call home to Himself their late worthy missionary, and our faithful pastor, the Rev. Mr. Stouppe, by whose death we are bereaved of the inestimable blessing of the regular dispensation of the divine ordinances. This loss will be irreparable, unless we may be allowed to hope for the continuance of ye bounty, which has hitherto been dispersed for the support of the gospel amongst us, wherein if it shall please the Honourable Society to indulge us, we beg leave humbly to request that a successor may be sent to Mr. Stouppe who is competently versed in the French language, that he may sometimes officiate therein for the benefit of some of our ancient people; but if this be not practicable, we shall be content to have the service wholly in the English tongue, which is by most the best understood by the greatest part of the congregation.

We have a parsonage house and glebe of 90 acres of land, which if properly improved may become valuable; and we shall always, we trust, exert ourselves to the utmost of our abilities to make a missionary living as comfortable as possible. Rev. Sir, be pleased to represent this to the Venerable Board, with our most dutiful respects and grateful acknowledgements of their former bounty, which will greatly oblige,

Rev. Sirs, &c.,

JAMES DE BLEZ,

BARNARD RYNLANDER,

*Church-wardens.*"<sup>b</sup>

and others.

"Mr. Stouppe (says Mr. Hawkins) was a simple-minded, conscientious man, who continued for seven and thirty years faithfully to discharge the duties of his mission. During this long incumbency, the number of his communicants had been raised from thirty-three to eighty."<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc. from 24th Feb., 1758, to 23d Feb., 1859.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. p. 273. (Hawks.)

<sup>c</sup> Missions of the Church of England, by Ernest Hawkins, B. D.

His remains were also interred beneath the chancel of the old French church at New Rochelle, where he had served so faithfully, here to await the morn of the resurrection, and to receive, we trust, the eulogy of the gospel, "Well done thou good and faithful servant, enter thou into the joy of thy Lord."

In a postscript to a letter from Mr. Barclay to the Secretary, dated New York, December 10th, 1760, he says: "Mrs. Magdalene Stoupe, the widow of the late missionary, desired me to recommend her to the Venerable Board, hoping to receive their usual bounty."

The Rev. Andrew Fowler, in his MSS. Biographies of the Clergy, says of Mr. Stoupe, that "he was a worthy clergyman, and greatly beloved by his congregation. When I read prayers and sermons in that place (New Rochelle) in 1784 and 1785 and 1786, as a layman, I heard him often spoken of in the highest terms of respect by some very aged people, upon whose veracity I could depend."<sup>a</sup>

Mr. Stoupe was succeeded by the Rev. Michael Houdin, A.M. He was born in France circ., 1705, and bred a Franciscan friar. On Easter day, 1730, he was ordained priest by the Archbishop of Treves, and afterwards preferred to the office of superior of a convent of Recollects or Franciscan friars, at Montreal in Canada.<sup>b</sup> Disgusted with the monastic life, he left Canada in the beginning of the French war, and retired to the city of New York, where on Easter day, 1747, he made a public renunciation of the errors of popery, and joined himself to the Church of England. He afterwards lived with very good character, and attained great proficiency in the English language. In June, 1750, he was invited by the inhabitants of Trenton, and other places in New Jersey, to go and officiate among them, whereupon he addressed a letter to the Venerable Society, from which we extract the following:

<sup>a</sup> Rev. A. Fowler's MSS. Biog. of the Clergy, vol. ii. p. 130.

<sup>b</sup> The following notice, probably of this individual, occurs in the New York Council Minutes: "On the 29th of June, 1744, Governor Clinton acquainted the Council that one Monsieur Michael Houden, and a woman, said to be his wife, were lately come to town from Canada, from which place they had lately fled, and that on their arrival, he had confined them to their lodgings, and had placed two sentinels over them, and had ordered the said Michael Houden to be brought before him in Council this day, in order to be examined. The said Michael Houden being without, was called in and examined by his Excellency in Council, and afterwards remanded to his lodgings. At a Council held on the 5th of July following, the Governor communicated to the Board a letter he had lately received from Lieutenant Lindesay, giving his Excellency advice of Monsieur Michael Houden, passing by Oswego, and that he learnt from him that the French intended to attack Oswego with 800 men, as soon as the provision ships from France should arrive, the French having a great desire of being masters of that place. On the 11th of August, 1744, his Excellency acquainted the same Body: That he had received several letters from Monsieur Houden, complaining as his circumstances are very low, and he was by his Excellency's order obliged to live at Jamaica, where he can do nothing to get his living, that his wife and himself must soon come to want, unless his Excellency will be pleased to take him into consideration, and therefore praying he may have leave to come with his wife and live in town; and thereupon his Excellency required the opinion of the Board. 'As to Michael Houden, the Council are of opinion to advise his Excellency to give him leave to come to town, on his taking the oath of allegiance.'"—Council Minutes, xix, 292, and xix, 273, 276. In the *Liste Chronologique* of the Clergy of Canada, we find the name of Potentien Houdin, a Recollect, who is recorded as having left that country in 1748.



## MR. HOUDIN TO THE SECRETARY.

[EXTRACT.]

"TRENTON, NEW JERSEY, *Nov. 1st, 1750.*

REV. SIR.—“Having my residence at New York, I heard of repeated complaints made by gentlemen and principal inhabitants of this place, Allen's Town, and Borden's Town, it being for many years past destitute of a Church of England minister, and without any sort of application of mine, about five months ago some of them were pleased to press me by letter to come amongst them. I, being then conscious to myself that I had no license from the Lord Bishop, or sanction from the Society, I deliberated some time till I had consulted several gentlemen of the clergy in New York, the Governour and others, who unanimously advised me to go over to them, and hear their proposals. When I waited on them, I really found they were destitute indeed, there not being a minister of the Church of England nearer than Burlington.”<sup>a</sup>

To this may be added the following, from the Society's abstracts for 1753:—“The Rev. Mr. Houdin, having for some years officiated at Trenton and the neighboring places in the Province of New Jersey, among the members of the Church of England, upon such slender support as they, in their poor circumstances would afford him, with the addition of one gratuity of £30 from the Society; they have lately thought fit, upon the especial recommendation of the Rev. Mr. Barclay, rector of Trinity church in the city of New York, and of other worthy persons, bearing witness to Mr. Houdin's merits and diligence in the pastoral office, to appoint him their itinerant missionary to officiate in Trenton, and in the parts adjacent. Mr. Houdin is a converted priest from Popery, formerly superior of a convent in Canada—and from his letters of orders, it appears he was ordained priest by the Archbishop of Treves on Easter day, 1730; and on Easter day, 1747, he made a public renunciation of the errors of the Church of Rome, received the holy communion according to the liturgy of the Church of England, in the city of New York, and he afterwards took the oaths of allegiance, and subscribed to the XXXIX Articles of our Church: and after having made himself a tolerable master of the English language, he began to officiate in it and hath behaved, according to full testimonials, as it becometh a good Christian and a good clergyman—and by his letters of thanks to the Society, dated Trenton, Nov. 4th, 1753, it appears that he is usefully, and to very good purposes employed, he having baptized from the 13th of December preceding, forty-five children and five adults, after proper instruction; and at Annwell, a town within his mission, above two hundred Presbyterians and some families of Anabaptists, during the last summer, joined with

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. (Hawks.)

the members of the Church of England in the public worship of God, and many of them observing the peace and charity among our congregations, and the troubles and dissensions among others, contributed towards the finishing of the church, which, at the date of Mr. Houdin's letter, he blesses God, was then quite done."<sup>a</sup>

In the year 1759 Mr. Houdin accompanied the celebrated General Wolfe in his expedition against Quebec as a guide, which appears from the subjoined extract:—<sup>b</sup>

"The Rev. Mr. Houdin, the Society's itinerant missionary in New Jersey, intreats the Society in his letter, dated Quebec, October 23d, 1750, that his absence from his mission may not bring him under their displeasure, as he was in some measure forced to it in obedience to the commands of Lord Loudon, and other succeeding commanders, who depended much on his being well acquainted with that country. And after the reduction of Quebec, he asked leave to return to his mission, but General Murray ordered him to stay, telling him that there was no other person could be depended on for intelligence of the French proceedings, and promised to acquaint the Society therewith." Mr. Houdin adds, "that himself, as well as the public, hath received a great loss by the death of the brave General Wolfe.<sup>c</sup> who promised to remember his labor and services, which are not so well known to General Murray; but he hopes the Society will take these things into consideration, and continue their kindness to him, and he will return to his mission in the spring."<sup>d</sup>

Dr. Barclay, writing to the Secretary of the Venerable Society, on the 3d of June, 1761, says:—"Messrs. Ogilvie and Houdin are still detained by General Amherst in Canada. I shall take care to forward your letters to them."<sup>e</sup>

It appears from the following notice in the *New York Post Boy* for June the 4th, 1761, that whilst Mr. Houdin was stationed at Quebec, under the command of General Murray, an attempt was made by the Vicar-General of Canada, to seduce him from his allegiance, by an offer of great preferment in the Romish Church:—"We hear from Montreal that the Vicar-General of all Canada, residing at Montreal, has wrote a pressing invitation to the Rev. Mr. Udang, the chaplain of a regiment at Quebec, to return to the Romish religion, with a promise

<sup>a</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc. for 1753.

<sup>b</sup> The Rev. Michael Houdin preached to the provincial troops destined for the expedition against Canada, in St. Peter's church, Westchester, from St. Matthew, x chap. and part of 28th verse, "Fear not them which kill the body, &c."

<sup>c</sup> General James Wolfe fell on the Heights of Abraham in the moment of victory, September 13th, 1759.—[Editor.]

<sup>d</sup> Printed Abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc. 15th Feb. 1754, to 15th Feb., 1760.

<sup>e</sup> New York MSS. from Archives at Fulham, vol. ii, 287. (Hawks).

of great preferment in the Church, which Mr. Udang put into the hands of General Murray, who sent it enclosed to General Gage, who upon the receipt of it, sent a guard to take the Vicar-General into custody; what will be the issue, is not known."

Mr. Houdin must have returned to New York in 1761, for about August of that year he was appointed by the Venerable Society to be their missionary at New Rochelle. With regard to this appointment, the Society's abstracts say:—"That the French refugees are, according to Dr. Barclay, a very orderly, sober, and religious people; to whom, at their earnest request, he had preached twice lately, and had administered the holy communion, and was much pleased with their devout behavior. All this being maturely considered, the Society have thought proper to remove the Rev. Mr. Houdin, itinerant missionary, whose chief residence was at Trenton in New Jersey, to the mission at New Rochelle, he being a Frenchman by birth, and capable of doing his duty to them both in the French and English language; but he is to officiate for the most part in English, that being well understood by much the greater part of the congregation."<sup>a</sup>

The Rev. John Milner, rector of the parish, who arrived from England, May 13th, 1761, in a letter to the Secretary the 3d of October of that year, says:—"He was obliged to attend three churches, and till Mr. Houdin came to New Rochelle officiated there once a month."

It appears from the following document, that in appointing Mr. Houdin, the Society had carefully stipulated with the people at New Rochelle, that they should not only give him a comfortable support, but immediately put the old parsonage house in order:—

#### PETITION FOR LEAVE TO COLLECT FUNDS FOR BUILDING A NEW MINISTER'S HOUSE AT NEW ROCHELLE.

"To the Honorable Cadwallader Colden, Esq., Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-Chief of the Province of New York, and Territories thereon depending in America, &c.

*A Petition of Sundry of the Inhabitants of New Rochelle, belonging to the Church of England.*

SIR:—"The Society for Propagation of the Gospel in foreign Parts have Been so Charitable as to appoint Mr. Houdin, a French Refugee, a Gentleman of good character, Successor to their late worthy Missionary at New Rochelle, the Reverend Mr. Stoupe. In consideration of which particular regard, they require and Insist that the people at New Rochelle should do their utmost to make Mr. Houdin a comfortable support, and that they should Immediately put the Parsonage House in good repair. We are ready and willing to exert ourselves to the utmost according to our Abilities. But to those that are acquainted with the Circum-

<sup>a</sup> Printed abstracts of Ven. Prop. Soc. for 1761.

stances of the people professing the church at New Rochelle, it will appear to require the utmost exertion of our abilities to afford that necessary support to Mr. Houdin, that the Society expect and require; and if we should be Obligated to raise four hundred pounds, to build a new Parsonage House, the old being so decayed, that It is thought by no means worth Repairing, especially at this Burthensome Time, we have the greatest reason to fear that it will be so extremely heavy, that many will be Discouraged—and in that case that Mr. Houdin must leave us, tho' he is the only Minister in the place; and Indeed there are but few Besides professors of the Church of England in the Place, and we have reason to hope that they may be induced to conform, should a worthy Minister continue among us. Upon those considerations, we beg your Honor will be pleased to grant a Brief, through this Province, to collect the aforesaid sum of four Hundred Pound, for building a new Parsonage House, to repair the church in this place, and your Petitioners as in bound, shall ever Pray, &c.,

BARNARD RYNLANDER,	PETER BARTINE,	ISAAO GUION,
JACOBUS BLEECKER,	JAMES DEBLEZ,	JEAN SOULICE.
DAVID LISPENARD,		

August 19th, 1761, read in Council and granted."<sup>a</sup>

During the incumbency of Mr. Houdin, Trinity church received its first charter from King George the Third, under which the present corporation still enjoys its trust and exercises its powers. The following extracts are taken from the petition to the Governor:

#### PETITION OF THE FRENCH CHURCH AT NEW ROCHELLE.

"To the Honourable Cadwallader Colden, Esq., Lieutenant Governor and Commander-in-Chief of the Province of New York, and the Territories depending thereon in America, &c.

*In Council.*

The petition of the Subscribers, Inhabitants of the Township of New Rochel in the Manor of Pelham, in the County of Westchester,

HUMBLY SHEWETH:

That the petitioners are members of the French Church at New Rochel aforesaid, and principally descendants from French Protestants, who fled from the religious persecution in France in the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-one, &c.

And the Petitioners further shew unto your Honour, that their said Church is at presently greatly decayed and out of repair, and their Minister or Pastor but indifferently provided for, &c.

Your Petitioners therefore most humbly pray, that your Majesty's Royal Charter confirming to them the said Church, and the Lands and other Rights thereunto appertaining, and also creating and constituting them, and the rest of the members of the said Church, a body politic and Corporate, &c.

And the Petitioners as in duty bound shall ever pray, &c.

NEW ROCHELLE, 1st of Feb., 1762.

MICHAEL HOUDIN, *Minister.*

(signed by 91 others.)

12th of May, 1762, read in Council and granted."<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Hist. of N. Y., vol. iii. pp. 954-5

<sup>b</sup> Doc. His. of N. Y., vol. ii, p. 955.



The Royal Charter granted in 1762 was exemplified by his Excellency George Clinton, in 1793, after the following manner:

#### CHARTER OF TRINITY CHURCH.

*“ The people of the State of New York, by the grace of God free and independent:*

To all whom these presents shall come, greeting. *Know ye,* that we having inspected the records remaining in our secretary's office, do find there recorded certain letters patent in the words and figures following, to wit: George the Third, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, and so forth. To all to whom these presents shall come, greeting. Whereas, our loving subjects, Michael Houdin, Jacob Bleecker, Jas. de Blez, David Lispernard, Isaac Guion, Elias Guion, Isaac Guion Junior, Peter Bertain, John Soulice, Paul Secord, Lidia Secord, Jean Abby, Jos. Antuny, Content Antuny, Peter Bonnett, Mary Bonnett, Peter Parquot, Daniel Sulis, Benj. Seacord, Abraham Seacord, Elizabeth Parquot, Jane Seacord, Mary Seacord, Peter Guion, Abigail Bleecker, Judith Leconet, Allida Guion, Catherine Bertain, Mary Bertine, Peter Bertain, jun., Josiah Le Conte, David Guion, Elizabeth Lispernard, Judith Bertain, Moses de St. Croix, Marie de St. Croix, Deborah Foulon, Mary Guion, Marie Neufville, Mary Stouppe, Marthe de Blez, Rachel Guion, Jan Nicholle, Arquez, Ante Nicolle, Thomas Guion, John Bryan, Oliver Besley, Isaac Besley, Cornelia Besley, Frederick King, Benjamin Guion, Esaie Guion, Elizabeth Guion, Elizabeth Guion, Susanna Landrin, Dina Guion, Anne Danielson, John Houdin, Catherine Houdin, Kitty Houdin, Elizabeth Houdin, Rutger Bleecker, Sarah Bleecker, Mary Rodman, Hester Leconte, Agnis Donaldson, Daniel Secord, Francis Le Conte, John Le Conte, Judith Le Conte, Abraham Guion, Mary Angevine, Esther Angevine, Joshua Solis, Thomas Steel, Jane Contine, Susanna Contine, Jane Mauraux, Jonathan Seicord, Esther Le Conte, Sarah Secord, James Pine, Susannah Soulis, Jane Guion, Ester Soulis, Magdalene Soulis, John Bonnet, Mary Bonnet, Daniel Bonnet, Mary Bonnet, James Besley, Edward Smith and James McCurers, inhabitants of the township of New Rochelle in Westchester county, by the humble petition presented to our trusty and well beloved Cadwallader Colden, Esquire, our Lieutenant Governor and Commander-in-chief of our province of New York; and the territories depending thereon in America, in council on the twelfth day of May last past, did set forth that they, the petitioners, are members of the French church at New Rochelle aforesaid, and principally descendants from French Protestants, who fled from the religious prosecution in France, in the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-one, and shortly thereafter settled a tract of six thousand acres of land, now known by the name of the township of New Rochelle, which was granted to Jacob Leister, from whom the petitioners' said ancestors purchased by John Pell, then Lord of the manor of Pelham, in the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-nine. That the said John Pell at the same time, did also give and grant to the said Jacob Leister, the further quantity of one hundred acres of land for the use of the French church erected or to be erected by the inhabitants of the said tract of land or township, or by their assigns; that the petitioners' ancestors had long since built a decent church within the said township, and dedicated the same to the service of Almighty God, and that they and

the petitioners had enjoyed the same with the said tract of one hundred acres of land, as a glebe thereto to that day.

That on the twelfth day of June, in the year of the Lord one thousand seven hundred and nine, all the then inhabitants of the said township who were members of the said French Church, excepting two, unanimously agreed and consented to conform themselves in the religious worship of their said church to the liturgy and rites of the Church of England as established by law, and by a solemn act or agreement did submit to, and put themselves under the protection of the same; that fourteen years before, and ever since such conformity, their respective ministers and pastors have been invested with holy orders by episcopal ordination, and had received their principal support from the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts; and that divine service, since the conformity, had constantly been performed in their said church, agreeable to the rites and liturgy of the Church of England as by law established—two Sundays out of three in the French tongue, and every third Sunday in English—for the instruction of such of the inhabitants as frequented the said church and were ignorant of the French language; and the petitioners did further set forth, that their said church was then greatly decayed and out of repair and their minister or pastor but indifferently provided for; and that, although they were sincerely disposed to make a suitable provision for both, yet they could not accomplish this good design, unless, by being incorporated, they should become enabled to receive, apply, and improve the donations and contributions that might be collected among themselves, and given for these purposes by other pious and charitable people. The petitioners, therefore, most humbly prayed our royal charter, confirming to them the said church and the lands and other rights thereunto appertaining, and also creating and constituting them and the rest of the members of the said church a body politic and corporate for the managing and conducting the affairs and interests of the said church, with such powers, privileges and immunities as should appear fit and reasonable: which petition having been then and there read and considered of, our said Council did afterwards, on the same day, humbly advise our said lieutenant governor and commander-in-chief to grant the prayer thereof. Wherefore, we being graciously disposed to encourage and promote the pious intentions of our said subjects, and to grant this their reasonable request, *Know Ye*, that we of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, have made, ordained, constituted, granted and declared, and by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, do make, ordain, constitute, grant and declare, that the said petitioners and the rest of the members in communion with the said French church at New Rochelle aforesaid, being the most ancient French church now there, and known by the name of Trinity church, be, and their successors, the minister and members in communion with the said French church at New Rochelle aforesaid for that time, shall be, from time to time, and at, all times forever hereafter, a body politic and corporate in deed, fact and name, by the name and style of the Minister and Members of Trinity church at New Rochelle, in the County of Westchester, and them and their successors, the minister and members in communion with the said church at New Rochelle aforesaid, for the time being by the name of the Minister and Members of Trinity church at New Rochelle, in the County of Westchester, one body politic and corporate in deed, fact and name, really and fully, we do for

us, our heirs and successors, erect, make, constitute, declare and create by these presents, and that, by the same name, they and their successors, the minister and members in communion with the said church at New Rochelle aforesaid, for the time being shall and may have perpetual succession, and shall and may be responsible and capable in the law to sue and be sued, to implead and be impleaded, to answer and be answered unto, and to defend, and be defended in all courts and elsewhere, in all and singular suits, causes, quarrels, matters, actions, demands and things of what nature and kind soever: and also, that they and their successors by the same name be and shall be forever hereafter capable and able, in the law, to take, except of, and acquire and purchase, receive, have, hold and enjoy in fee, forever or for life or lives, or for years, or in any other manner, any messuages, buildings, houses, lands, tenements, hereditaments and real estate, and the same to lease or demise for one or more years, or for life or lives, or to grant, alien, bargain, sell and dispose of in fee simple, and also to accept of, take, purchase and possess any goods, chattels or personal estate, and the same to have, let, sell or dispose of at their will and pleasure, and all this as fully as any other corporation or body politic within that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or in our province of New York, may lawfully do, *provided* that such messuages and real estate as they for their successors shall have or may be entitled unto, shall not at any one time exceed the yearly rent of five hundred pounds, over and above the said church and the ground on which the same stands; and, further, we do will and ordain, and by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, declare and appoint, that for the better ordaining and managing the business and affairs of the said corporation, there shall be one minister of the Church of England as by law established, duly qualified for the care of souls, two church-wardens and six vestrymen, from time to time constituted, elected, and chosen for the said church in manner and form as is hereafter in these presents expressed; which minister and church-wardens, or any two of them, together with the vestry, or the major part of them for the time being shall have, and are hereby invested with full power and authority to dispose, order and govern the business and affairs of, and concerning the said church, and all such lands, tenements, hereditaments, real and personal estate as shall or may be purchased or acquired for the use thereof as aforesaid; and further, we do will and grant, that the said minister and members of Trinity church at New Rochelle, in the County of Westchester, and their successors, shall and may forever hereafter have a common seal to serve and use, for all matters, causes and affairs whatsoever of them and their successors, and full power and authority to break, alter, change and new make the same, or any other common seal, from time to time, at their will and pleasure, as they shall think fit; and for the better execution of our royal will and pleasure herein, we do assign, constitute and appoint the said Jacob Bleecker and James de Blez, to be the present church-wardens, and the said David Lispenard, Isaac Guion, Elias Guion, Isaac Guion, junior, Peter Bertain and John Souliee, to be the present vestrymen of the said church—to hold and enjoy their several offices until the first Tuesday in Easter week next ensuing and no longer. And further our will and pleasure is, and we do for us, our heirs and successors, establish, appoint and direct, that on the said first Tuesday in Easter week next ensuing, and once in every year forever thereafter on Tuesday in Easter week in every year, at the

said church, the members in communion with the same church for the time being or the major part of them, then and there assembled, shall elect, choose, and appoint two of their members to be church-wardens and six other of their members to be vestrymen of their said church for the ensuing year, which church-wardens and vestrymen, so to be chosen and appointed, shall immediately enter upon their respective offices, and hold and exercise the same for and during the term of one whole year from the time of such election respectively, and until other fit persons shall be elected in their respective places. And we do ordain and declare that as well the churchwardens and vestrymen by these presents nominated and constituted, as such, as shall from time to time hereafter be elected and appointed, shall have, and they are hereby invested with full power and authority to execute and perform their several and respective offices, in as full and ample manner as any churchwardens or vestrymen in that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or in our province of New York, have or lawfully may or can do ; and if it shall happen that any or either of the churchwardens or vestrymen by these presents named and appointed, or hereafter to be elected and chosen, shall die or remove, or refuse or neglect to officiate in the said respective offices before their or either of their appointed time of service therein be expired, then and in every such case it shall and may be lawful to and for the said minister and members in communion with said church at New Rochelle aforesaid, for the time being, or the major part of such of them as shall assemble together for that purpose at the said church, at some day within a month next after such death, removal, refusal or neglect, to be appointed by the minister and churchwardens for the time being, or any two of them, to proceed in manner aforesaid, and make a new election and appointment of one or more of their members for the time being, to supply the room or place of such person or persons so dying, removing, refusing or neglecting to act in his and their respective office and offices as aforesaid, and so as often as shall be needful and requisite. And for the due and orderly conducting and carrying on the respective election of churchwardens and vestrymen by these presents established and ordained, our will and pleasure is, and We do declare and direct that the minister of the said church for the time being, shall give public notice thereof from time to time, as they may become necessary, and are hereby appointed, by publishing the same at the said church immediately after divine service on the Sunday next preceding the day appointed for such elections. And, furthermore, We do will, and by these presents for us, our heirs and successors, ordain, appoint and direct that the minister and churchwardens of the said church for the time being, or any two of them, shall and may from time to time, upon all occasions assemble and call together the said minister, churchwardens and vestrymen for the time being, or the greater number of them, the said vestryman ; which said minister and churchwardens, or any two of them, together with the said vestrymen, or the major part of them, shall be and by these presents are authorized and empowered to consult, advise and consider, and by a majority of voices to direct, manage, transact and carry on the interests, business and affairs of the said church, and to hold vestries for that purpose. And we do further give and grant unto the said minister and members of Trinity church at New Rochelle in the county of Westchester aforesaid, and to their successors forever, that the minister and churchwardens of the said church for the time being, or any



two of them, together with the vestrymen of the said church for the time being, or the major part of them in vestry assembled, shall have full power and authority from time to time, and at all times hereafter, to make, ordain and constitute such rules, orders and ordinances, for the good discipline and government of the members of said church and corporation and interests thereof, as they, or the major part of them, shall think fit and necessary, so as such rules, orders and ordinances be not repugnant to the laws of that part of our kingdom of Great Britain called England, or our province of New York, or the present or future canons of the Church of England, as by law established; but as near as may be agreeable thereto, which rules, orders and ordinances, shall be from time to time fairly entered in a book or books to be kept for that purpose. And further our will and pleasure is that it shall and may be lawful for the minister and churchwardens of the said church, or any two of them, and the said vestrymen, or the major part of them, at a vestry to nominate and appoint a clerk and a sexton or bell-ringer for the said church, and also a clerk and messenger to serve the said vestry at their meetings, and such other under officers as they shall stand in need of, to remain in their respective offices, so long as the said minister, churchwardens and vestrymen for the time being, or the major part of them, shall think fit and appoint. And further We do for us, our heirs and successors, declare and grant that the patronage, advowson, donation or presentation of and to the said church shall appertain and belong to, and is hereby vested in the churchwardens and vestrymen of the said church for the time being, and their successors forever, or the major part of them, whereof one churchwarden shall always be one; provided always, that whenever the said church becomes vacant, such donation and presentation shall be made within six months thereafter. And that on every lapse or default herein, the right of such donation and representation shall be in us, our heirs and successors; and further know ye, that we of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto the said minister and members of Trinity church at New Rochelle, in the county of Westchester aforesaid, and their successors for ever, all that the said church and ground on which the same stands, and the cemetery belonging to the same, and also all that the before-mentioned tract of one hundred acres of land situated and being within the township of New Rochelle aforesaid, so by the before-mentioned John Pell, formerly given and granted to the aforesaid Jacob Leisler, for the use of the French church erected, or then to be erected by the inhabitants of the township of New Rochelle, or by their assigns as hereinbefore is recited and set forth, together with the hereditaments and appurtenances to the same belonging or appertaining, to have and to hold all and singular the premises aforesaid, with the appurtenances unto them, the said Minister and members of Trinity church at New Rochelle, in the county of Westchester aforesaid, and their successors, to their only proper use and behoof forever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, in free and common soccage as, of our manor of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, within that part of our Kingdom of Great Britain, called England, yielding, rendering, and paying therefor unto us, our heirs and successors, yearly and every year forever, on the feast day of the Annunciation of the blessed Virgin Mary, at our City of New York, unto our or their Receiver-General there, for the time being, the annual rent of one

peppercorn, if demanded, in lieu and stead of all other rents, dues, duties, services, claims, and demands whatsoever, for the premises. And lastly, we do, for us, our heirs and successors, ordain and grant unto the said minister and members of Trinity church at New Rochelle in the county of Westchester aforesaid, and their successors, by these presents that this our grant shall be firm, good, effectual and available in all things in the law, to all intents, constructions and purposes whatsoever, according to our true intent and meaning herein before declared, and shall be construed, reputed and adjudged in all cases and causes most favorably on the behalf and for the best benefit and advantage of the said minister and members of Trinity church at New Rochelle, in the county of Westchester aforesaid, and their successors; although express mention of the yearly value, or certainty of the premises or any of them, in these presents is or are not made any matter, cause or thing to the contrary thereof in anywise notwithstanding. In testimony whereof we have caused these our letters to be made patent, and the great seal of our said Province of New York to be affixed, and the same to be entered on record, in our Secretary's Office of our said Province, in one of the books of patents there remaining. Witness our said trusty and well beloved Cadwallader Colden, Esquire, our Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York, and the territories depending thereon in America, at our Fort George in our City of New York, the second day of June, in the year of our Lord, one Thousand Seven Hundred and Sixty-two, and of our reign the second. All of which we have exemplified by these presents. In testimony whereof we have caused these our letters to be made patent, and the great seal of our said State to be hereunto affixed. Witness our trusty and well beloved George Clinton, Esquire, Governor of our said State, General and Commander-in-chief of all the militia and admiral of the navy of the same, at our City of New York, the fourteenth day of February, in the year of our Lord one thousand, seven hundred and ninety-three, and in the seventeenth year of our independence."<sup>a</sup>

The subjoined letter of Mr. Houdin to the Secretary, shows the unlawful method taken by the Calvinists to obtain possession of the Church glebe:—

#### MR. HOUDIN TO THE SECRETARY.

"NEW ROCHELLE, OCT. 10TH, 1763.

"REV'D SIR:—I received your kind letter some time last summer, in which you acquaint me the Venerable Society is desirous to be acquainted with our troubles. To give you a true account, I must come up to the first establishment of New Rochelle. One Jacob Leisler made a purchase of John Pell for the French Refugees of a tract of land (called since, New Rochelle) of 6000 acres of land, and in the said deed it is said that John Pell and Rachel his wife, do also give one hundred acres of land more for a French Church erected or to be erected by the inhabitants of the said tract of land or their assigns. The French Refugees took possession of these 100 acres of land from the beginning and did possess the same until the year 1709, the time when upon the representation of their

<sup>a</sup> Hist. of Westchester County, vol. ii: p. 413.

minister, the whole Congregation, excepting two or three families, conformed to the Church of England, and kept from that time possession of the church and land until my coming here, when they made appear a deed, given by the son of Jacob Leisler, in which the two opponents to the conformity of the Church are made trustees of the land, and Lord Pell's deed altered in such a manner, for a French church who shall perform Divine service according to the French Calvinists of the old French, and that deed bearing date four months after the conformity of our Church; and upon such title, the Calvinists at my arrival here debauched our tenants, who took leases under them, and by that keep us out of our possession. Upon which the churchwardens applied to a lawyer for advice; and upon mature consideration it was found that John Pell who had given the land for a French church, erected or to be erected by the inhabitants of the said tract of land or their assigns, had never divested himself of the legal right of the said 100 acres of land. These considered, our churchwardens applied to the Executors of the heir at law of said Pell, who have released all the right of Pell to the church for £100, the executors having power to sell by the will of the present heir's father. With this title, joined to fifty-three years possession, our churchwardens did serve three ejectments upon the three tenants, and the Calvinists entered defendants, and on the 15th day of September last we had a trial at the Supreme Court, when the Jury brought their verdict in favor of our Church, upon which the attorneys of the Calvinists' party offered a bill of exception: so that we must wait the issue of said bill at the Supreme Court at New York, to be held the 18th day of this inst. We have to deal with very stubborn and litigious people, which make me afraid they will not be contented before they have brought us before all the different tribunals; and by that means deprive me of all the benefits of the land, which causes me a great prejudice. The congregation is very unanimous and in good harmony, ready to defend their right to the last, seeing the Calvinists will not agree upon any terms of peace proposed to them by our Church; but we are in hopes the strong bleeding of their purse will bring them to an agreement after New York Court.

Reverend Sir, yours, &c.,

MICHAEL HOUDIN.<sup>a</sup>

The release, alluded to in the above letter, was given on the 2nd of February, 1763, and is as follows:—

#### RELEASE OF CHURCH GLEBE, FROM EXECUTORS OF JOSEPH PELL TO DAVID GUION.

“THIS INDENTURE, made the second day of February, in the third year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, King George the Third, Annoque Dom. one thousand seven hundred and sixty-three, between Phebe Pell, widow, and Samuel Sueden and Jacobus Bleecker, Esqs., all of the County of Westchester, Executors, with power to sell of the last will and testament of Joseph Pell, Esqr., late of the manor of Pelham, in the County of Westchester aforesaid, deceased, of the one part, and David Guion of New Rochelle in the said County of Westchester, on the other part. *Whereas*, John Pell, formerly lord of the said manor of Pelham was seized in fee of six thousand one hundred acres of land, part of the said Manor

<sup>a</sup> N. Y. MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii., pp. 325. 326. (Hawks.)

of Pelham, and being so seized did sell the said six thousand acres of land to one Jacob Leisler, and did set apart the remaining one hundred acres of land for the use of the French church, erected or to be erected by the inhabitants of the said six thousand acres called New Rochelle. But the said John Pell never did dispose or divest himself of the legal estate and right in and to the said one hundred acres of land. *And whereas*, the said John Pell afterwards died intestate and left Thomas Pell his eldest son and heir at law, by means whereof the inheritance and legal right to the said one hundred acres of land became vested in him, the said Thomas: *And Whereas*, the said Thomas Pell on the third day of September in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and thirty-nine, did in due form of law make his last will and testament; and therein, and thereby, after several specific legacies, after declaring that his other sons had received their shares and proportions out of his estate, did give and bequeath unto his son Joseph Pell, in fee simple, all and singular his land, meadows, houses, tenements, buildings and so forth, which then belonged unto him, by means whereof the legal right and estate in and to the said one hundred acres of land became vested in him the said Joseph Pell, Jun. *And whereas*, the said Joseph Pell on the thirty-first day of August in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and fifty-two, did make his last will and testament, and thereof did ordain and constitute his wife, the aforesaid Phebe Pell, and his friend John Bartow, (who hath since legally renounced the same) and the said Samuel Sneden and Jacobus Bleecker, parties to these presents to be Executors, and did thereby give and grant unto them his full power, strength and authority in and over all his goods, chattels, lands and tenements, to take and use all lawful ways for the recovery and defence of the same against any encroachments, depredations, claims or demands of any person or persons whatsoever; and did likewise empower them if there should be any need thereof, to sell any part of his lands as to them should seem meet to enable them to carry on any suit for the defence of the rest. *And whereas*, after the decease of the said Joseph Pell, a certain fraudulent deed was so exhibited and set up, by which one Caleb Pell, a brother of the said Joseph, did claim the chief part of the real estate of him the said Joseph Pell as the gift of him the said Thomas Pell, the father to him the said Caleb Pell. *And whereas*, they the said executors of the said Joseph Pell, parties hereto of the first part, in consequence of said claim were obliged to lay out and expend divers large and considerable sums of money to defend and secure the estate of the said Joseph Pell against the same, and there still remains due upon that account one hundred pounds, which they have been obliged to borrow and take up at interest; and they the said parties of the first part, in order to discharge and satisfy the same, do find it necessary to dispose of part of the real estate of their said testator and have accordingly agreed to grant and release all the right and title of their said testator in and to the said one hundred acres of land before mentioned and hereafter described for the consideration thereafter mentioned to him the said David Guion. NOW THEREFORE THIS INDENTURE witnesseth, that they the said parties of the first part, in pursuance and by virtue of the power and authority in them reposed and to them given by their testator for and in consideration of the sum of one hundred pounds current money of the province of New York, to them in hand paid by the said David Guion, at or before the ensealing and delivery of these presents, the receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge and themselves



therewith to be fully satisfied, contented and paid and thereof do acquit, release and discharge the said David Guion, his executors, administrators and assigns, by these presents, HAVE GRANTED, BARGAINED, SOLD, ALIENATED, RELEASED and CONFIRMED, and by these presents DO GRANT, BARGAIN, SELL, ALIEN, RELEASE and CONFIRM unto the said David Guion in his actual profession, now being by virtue of a bargain, sale and lease for one year to him thereof made by the said parties of the first part, by indenture bearing date the day next before the day of the date hereof, and also by force of the statute made for transferring of uses into possession and to his heirs and assigns for ever, ALL THAT certain tract or parcel of land, situate, lying and being in the said township of New Rochelle, commonly called and known by the name of the GLEBE, beginning at the creek or salt water, thence running north-westerly by the road that runs between the land of Benjamin Brown and the tract hereby granted, to the fresh meadow. Westerly by the road that runs along the said meadow, south-easterly by the land now in possession of John Arnaud, which was bought out of the commons. Easterly by the Creek or Salt Water, to the place where it first began, containing one hundred acres, be the same more or less. Together with all and singular the PROFITS, PRIVILEGES, ADVANTAGES, IMMOBILITIES, RIGHTS, MEMBERS, IMMUNITIES, LIBERTIES, BUILDINGS, IMPROVEMENTS, HEREDITAMENTS and APPURTENANCES whatsoever, to the same belonging or in anywise appertaining. AND ALL the ESTATE, RIGHT, TITLE, PROFIT, POSSESSION, REVERSION, CLAIM and DEMAND whatsoever, which he, the said Joseph Pell, at the time of his death had, or which they the said parties of the first part, by virtue of his last will and testament have, of, in or to the same. TO HAVE and to HOLD the said premises hereby granted or mentioned, or intended to be hereby granted, unto the said David Guion, his heirs and assigns, to the only proper use and behoof of him the said David Guion, his heirs and assigns forever, in as full and ample manner to all intents and purposes, as he the said Joseph Pell, in his lifetime held and enjoyed the same and not otherwise. IN WITNESS WHEREOF, the parties to these presents have hereunto, interchangeably set their hands and seals, the day and year first above written. Sealed and delivered in the Presence of us,

MARY PELL,  
DAVID LISFENARD,  
PHEBE PELL,  
SAMUEL SNEDEN,  
JACOBUS BLEECKER."<sup>a</sup>

On the fourth day of February, 1763, David Guion released the same to the minister and members of Trinity church, New Rochelle, for the sum of £100.

"Isaac Guion, Peter Flandreau, Samuel Gelliott<sup>b</sup> and Magdalen

<sup>a</sup> Book of Records, County Clerk's Office, Lib. H. pp. 342, 345.

<sup>b</sup> Upon the 31st of Oct. 1767, Peter Flandreau and Samuel Gelliott, released to the ministers and members of Trinity church at New Rochelle, "all that certain 100 acres of land, &c., which was given and granted by John Pell and Rachel his wife, by deed poll dated 20th of September, 1689, for the French church, also granted by the said deed poll (excepting and reserving hereout a certain messuage and dwelling house wherein James Flandreau now lives, and also about two acres of of ground lying on the east side of the main road in New Rochelle town aforesaid, which the said Peter Flandreau holds by virtue of a title derived under Mrs. Morin, and also excepting hereout one acres of ground more, lying on the west side of the said two acres and adjoining thereto and being bounded on a creek and also by a

Stouppe, (sole executrix and heir of the last will and testament of ye Reverend Peter Stouppe of New Rochelle, in the County of Westchester and province of New York, late deceased,) also gave releases to the Church in 1767."<sup>a</sup>

The old church glebe was sold during the years 1800 and 1804, and the purchase money subsequently loaned on the late parsonage lands, &c., which fell to the church by a foreclosure of the mortgage in Chancery, A. D., 1821.

The Rev. Michael Houdin continued his labors here until October, 1766, when he departed this life. He was esteemed a worthy missionary, of considerable learning and irreproachable morals. His remains were interred by the side of his predecessors, Bondet and Stouppe, beneath the chancel of the old French church; but since the removal of this edifice, the ashes of these worthy and laborious missionaries repose in the highway, without a stone to mark the spot or commemorate their worth.

Mr. Houdin's funeral sermon was preached by his old friend and companion in arms, the Rev. Harry Munro, A. M., of Yonkers, from Hosea, iv. chap. and part of 12th verse, "Prepare to meet thy God."

The following extract is from a letter of the Rev. Mr. Auchmuty to the Secretary of the Venerable Society, written a few days after Houdin's death:—

"I beg the Society will not think of appointing another missionary to New Rochelle at present, the people really do not deserve one; not one farthing did they contribute towards the support of the two last, besides they are too small a number to be indulged with a minister to themselves—and are distant from Eastchester church only four miles, from Westchester five, from Rye church five, and from Phillipsburgh church nine miles."<sup>b</sup>

From the death of Mr. Houdin until the period of the Revolutionary War, services were performed here by the Rev. Samuel Seabury, rector of the parish. The following extract, relating to New Rochelle, occurs in Mr. Seabury's first report to the Secretary on the 25th of June, 1767:—

"By the death of Mr. Houdin, New Rochelle has fallen under my care for the present; I have preached there several times, and once administered the communion to fifteen communicants. The congregation

public highway leading from the said creek and which divides the aforesaid 100 acres of land from the lands of Benjamin Browne,) and of, in and to all, &c." County Records, Lib. H. p. 350. "1763, affidavit of Jonathan Fowler, Charles Vincent, Thomas Butler and Lewis Guion, all of the County of Westchester in the suit of Trinity church at New Rochelle against Peter Flandreau, Samuel Gelliott and Elizabeth Rylander." Land Papers, Vol. 1.-1643, 1803, p. 30. "Dec. 23, affidavit of Jacobus Bleecker in an action of the minister &c. of the Church of New Rochelle against Peter Flandreau and others." Land Papers, Vol. 1.-1643, 1803, p. 30.

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Lib. G. pp. 554, 556. See also Lib. H. 349.

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. (Hawks.)

consists of near two hundred people, decent and well behaved, part English and part French. The French all understand English tolerably well; and except half a dozen old people in whose hands is the chief management of affairs, full as well as they do French. The greatest part of them would prefer an English to a French minister; and none are warm for a French one, but the half a dozen above mentioned.

They had a glebe of near one hundred acres of land left them formerly, thirty acres of which they have recovered; the rest is kept from them under pretence that it was given to a *Presbyterian or Calvinistic* French church. They have also a parsonage house; but whether these endowments are so made, that an English minister could not enjoy them, I cannot yet learn. New Rochelle is seven miles from this place, three from Eastchester, eight from Rye and perhaps about that distance from Philipsburgh. I have been thus particular, that the Society may be able to judge whether it is expedient for them to send another missionary to New Rochelle or not. Dr. Auchmuty has informed me that he has wrote to the Society upon this subject, and I find it is his opinion that a missionary is less necessary there than in many other places where they have none. If the Society should decline sending a missionary there I could attend them in summer, every other Sunday, in the morning, and be at Eastchester in the afternoon, and in winter every fourth Sunday; and, indeed, these churches are so near that most of the people might attend at either. I would not, however, be understood as dissuading the Society from sending another missionary to New Rochelle, but only as informing them in what manner they might be provided for in case they decline it; and should the Society put them immediately under my care I should very readily submit to their consideration what allowance should be made me on that account."<sup>a</sup>

The next year he again writes as follows:—

#### MR. SEABURY TO THE SECRETARY.

[EXTRACT.]

“WESTCHESTER, OCT. 1ST, 1768.

REV. SIR:—I am sorry the people of New Rochelle have deservedly fallen under the censure of the Society. They seem to keep things too much in the dark with regard to their glebe; but as soon as I can get such an account of that matter as shall enable me to write intelligibly to the Society about it, I will lay it before them. In the mean time as there is a number of strolling teachers, especially of the sect of Anabaptists, who ramble through the country, preaching at private houses for the sake of making proselytes and collecting money, I have thought it best to visit them occasionally, as well to prevent any ill effects that might arise, as for the sake of a number of well disposed people who lived there. I shall, however, carefully attend to the caution you give not to neglect my particular cure of East and Westchester.”<sup>b</sup>

During the American Revolution the church must have been closed, for the congregation was much scattered.

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. p. 429. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. p. 452. (Hawks.)

Shortly after the treaty of peace the parish was organized under Mr. Andrew Fowler, (afterwards the Rev. Mr. Fowler,) who read prayers and sermons from 1781 until 1786, and at the same time had the charge of a school in this place. Mr. Fowler was the eldest child of Andrew Fowler, of Guilford, Conn., (who was born there August 1728,) by his wife Martha Stone, (who was born August 1737, and died in 1794.) Andrew Fowler, sen., who was a lineal descendant of John Fowler, one of the original planters of Guilford in 1639-40, died Oct. 18, 1815. The Rev. Andrew Fowler died at Charleston, S. C., Dec. 29th, 1850. Mr. Fowler was succeeded by Mr. Bartow, as a lay reader, who continued his services in this capacity until he received holy orders.

The Rev. Theodosius Bartow was the son of Theodosius Bartow, second son of the Rev. John Bartow, first rector of the parish of Westchester, and by his mother Bathsheba Pell, a lineal descendant of John Pell, second lord of the Manor of Pelham. He was born at Westchester, in this County, A.D., 1747, where he received his early education. In 1786, as we have seen, he succeeded Mr. Fowler as a lay-reader. In 1788, at a Convention of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the State of New York, held in the city of New York, on Wednesday, November 5th, 1788, it was resolved,—“That the thanks of the Convention be returned to Mr. Bartow, for his services as a reader in the Episcopal church at New Rochelle, that the Convention consider him as eminently useful to the Church in that situation and wish him to continue therein; and as they have the highest sense of his zeal for religion, and just respect for his moral character, they would recommend his application to such studies as may qualify him for holy orders, in conformity to the Constitution of the Church; and that a copy of these resolutions be delivered to Mr. Bartow by the Secretary, in testimony of the approbation of this Convention.”

The next year, at the solicitation of the congregation, he applied for holy orders, and was ordained Deacon, on Wednesday, 27th of January, 1790, and Priest on the 19th of October following, by Bishop Provoost. A definite invitation appears to have been given to Mr. Bartow soon after his ordination, by which he became the first rector of this parish—the church having been without a minister fourteen years. Occasional services, however, may have been held during that time. The salary at this period amounted to £30 per annum, and appears to have been principally paid for many years, by Lewis Pintard, Esq. In 1787 James de Blez, first junior warden of the parish, bequeathed the sum of £100 to Trinity church, which money appears to have been laid out in repairing the old edifice by Mr. Bartow. The following item is



preserved among the Guion papers, entitled:—"Memorandum of the collection in the church by Peter Shute:—"

The first collection was May 17th, 1792.

May 17th, collected,	. . . . .	8 1-2
" 24th, "	. . . . .	12 6

At a meeting of the Rector, Wardens and Vestrymen, of Trinity church at New Rochelle, on the 24th of October, 1803, it was resolved:—"That in consideration of the decayed state of the present church, that it was expedient to erect a new building for the celebration of Divine worship; and it is hereby earnestly recommended to the members of the congregation of the said church, and to all pious and benevolent persons to render every aid which their circumstances will admit, in effecting the above design, and may the blessing of God rest on every contributor to the aforesaid useful object." In 1804 Mr. Bartow makes report to the Convention of eighteen communicants, &c.

Mr. Bartow continued rector of this parish until June, 1819, when he ceased the labors of the sanctuary and resigned his office. At a meeting of the vestry held Monday, June 7th, of that year, on motion it was resolved:—"That the thanks of this Board be given to Mr. Bartow, to wit:—"The vestry of Trinity church, New Rochelle, return the Rev. Theodosius Bartow their thanks for his long and faithful services in said church, and request that he will accept their wishes that the residue of his days may be serene, joyful and happy." His long service of nearly thirty years, is still cherished with grateful remembrance. On Friday, November the 12th, 1819, this venerable missionary of the cross was called from his earthly labors and sufferings on earth, we trust, to the enjoyment of that rest which remaineth for the people of God. His mortal remains repose in the grave yard on the west side of Trinity church, not far from the site of the old French church, in which, during thirty years of his ministry, he faithfully dispensed the word of life.

The following notice of his death appeared in the *Christian Journal* of Dec., 1819:—"Died at New Rochelle, Westchester County, New York, on Friday, November 12th, the Rev. Theodosius Bartow, in the 72d year of his age, for nearly thirty years rector of Trinity church in that place." Mr. Bartow married Jemima Abramse, by whom he left several children. The late Rev. John V. Bartow, rector of Trinity church, Baltimore, was his sixth son. The late Rev. Theodore Bartow and the late Rev. Henry B. Bartow, sons of Jacob Bartow, Esq., both of the Protestant Episcopal Church, were his grand-sons. Upon the resignation of Mr. Bartow, the Rev. Revaud Kearny, A. M., was elected minister of the

parish in 1819. In 1821, a committee appointed by the vestry to foreclose the land lately given by the late Rev. Theodosius Bartow, reported "that the same is accordingly foreclosed, by which the land becomes the property of the Church."<sup>a</sup> In 1822 Mr. Kearny relinquished the rectorship, and was succeeded by the Rev. Pintard Bayard, A. M. This individual was born on the 23d day of July, 1791, at the residence of his great-uncle Elias Boudinot, LL.D., at Frankfort, near Philadelphia, Pa. His mother was the only daughter of Lewis Pintard, LL.D., of New York, whose long and devoted services to the Church have endeared him to the hearts of all who seek her welfare and pray for her peace. At the early age of three years, Lewis P. Bayard went to England with his father, who was sent by the United States Government to that country, we believe, on a private embassy. During his father's residence in London, young Bayard received the rudiments of an English education, and some knowledge of the French language. For some years after his return from England, he resided in the family of his grandfather, at New Rochelle. Here the foundation of his classical education was laid by several successive teachers, among whom was Mr. Corbet, a graduate of Trinity College, Dublin. His father afterwards removed to New York, and placed him under the tuition of the late Rev. Edmund Barry, D. D., rector of St. Matthew's church, Jersey City, N. J., from whose excellent instructions he appears to have derived the most decided and permanent benefit. Having been thoroughly prepared for College under Dr. Barry, he became a member of Nassau Hall, Princeton, N. J., in the Fall of 1804, where he remained four years, and graduated with the usual honors in the summer of 1808. For some time he hesitated which of the professions to choose; but, "after long and mature consideration," he says, "I felt inwardly called and moved to take upon myself the office of a minister of Christ;" and he accordingly commenced, in 1809, a course of theological study under the direction of Bishop Hobart. Although nurtured in the bosom of the Presbyterian denomination, he became convinced, after a faithful investigation of the subject of Episcopacy, aided by Divine light and guidance in prayer, and diligent and humble examination of the Scriptures, that it was his duty to connect himself with the Episcopal Church as one "divine in its institution, apostolic in its ministry, pure and evan-

---

<sup>a</sup> The purchasers of the old glebe, (Elijah Ward and others,) having paid off their bonds to the Church, and the monies being deposited in the rector's hand, the latter, to secure the same to the Church, mortgaged a tract of land of about sixty acres, situated in the town of New Rochelle, which was foreclosed as above; this land has since been sold by an order of the Court of Chancery, and is now occupied by Benjamin Le Fevre, Capt. Oliver Cutts, the late John G. Horton, Francis Baptist, Peter Sherwood, the late Leonard P. Miller, Esq., the public school, &c.

gelical in its doctrines, authoratative in its sacraments, and Scriptural and primitive in its discipline and worship."

During the prosecution of his theological studies Mr. Bayard resided at Princeton, N. J., and was admitted a candidate for Holy Orders on the 2d of May, 1811, in the Diocese of New Jersey; he received Deacon's Orders, August 2d, 1812. In May, 1813, he was called to the rectorship of Trinity church, Newark, N. J., which charge he resigned in 1820; after this, he officiated for some time in the neighboring parish of Eastchester. In connection with his pastoral charge, he thought it his duty to be engaged in the avocation of the in-



THE CHURCH.

structor of youth—peculiar facilities having been offered him at New Rochelle, the place of his residence, for engaging in that work. In 1821, as we have seen, he became rector of this parish.<sup>a</sup> He subsequently removed to New York, and organized St. Clement's church in that city. In 1840 he obtained leave of absence from his congregation to make a tour through Europe to Syria and the Holy Land, for the benefit of his health. A little more, however, than four months from the time of his embarkation, this eminent soldier of the Cross rested from his labors—having died at sea, on his return from the Holy Land, Sept. 2d, 1840. For Mr. Bayard's successors, see Catalogue of Rectors.

The present church edifice which is of stone, comprises a nave, apsi-

<sup>a</sup> It was during the incumbency of Mr. Bayard that the old church edifice was erected and consecrated.

dal, chancel and vestry-room, with a square tower and spire—the whole a very elegant design by Upjohn. The windows of the chancel contain memorials of the Rev. Daniel Bondet, Pierre Stoupe and Michael Houdin. Near the site of the present edifice stood the French school house, while a few rods to the eastward, close to the highway, is the site of the second French church of stone, under which repose the remains of the three French clergymen last mentioned. While a little west of the church, formerly stood the second wooden church, erected in 1724, the old French parsonage, or “parish house,” which was rebuilt in 1761. The original bell presented by Sir Henry Ashurst, of London, to the French church Dieu St. Esprit, of New York,<sup>a</sup> we are sorry to say, was loaned some years ago by the vestry, to the fire department of the village, and now hangs in their engine house. It bears the following inscription:—

“SAMUEL NEWTON MADE ME, 1706.”

The noble donor of this bell, Sir Henry Ashurst, was the eldest son of Henry Ashurst, Esq., of London, eminent for great benevolence, humanity and piety, and a chief person in founding the corporation for propagating the Gospel in foreign parts temp. of Charles II., to whom he acted as treasurer, and died 1680. Sir Henry was created a baronet by King James II, 21st July, 1688; he sat in Parliament in the reigns of Charles II and William III, for the burroughs of Truro, in Cornwall, and Wilton, in Wilts. He was the intimate friend of the Honorable Robert Boyle, to whom he was executor and trustee for founding the lecture which bore that gentleman's name. He acted as agent for Massachusetts until 1702, and died at Waterstock, 13th April, 1710, and lies buried there. By his wife, Hon. Diana Paget, daughter of William, 5th Lord Paget, he had one son—Sir Henry Ashurst, M. P. for Windsor, in 1714—who died in 1732, without issue, whereby the title became extinct.

Suspended in the tower of the church, is a large bell weighing 1863 pounds, cast by Meenely of West Troy, and presented by the ladies of the parish, Anno Domini, 1864.

“Chime joyfully, at the first dawn at Christmas and Easter morn.

Ring out gladsome lays on our festal and bridal days.

Strike the passing knowl of the dying and dead to toll.

Toll with sad and mourning cast at our burials and solemn fast.”

<sup>a</sup> In 1823 it was ordered by the vestry of the church Dieu St. Esprit, that this bell, then in the care of St. Stephen's church, New York, be presented for the use of the French church at New Rochelle.

<sup>b</sup> Hist. Mg. vol. iv. second series, No. iii, p. 137. Burke's Extinct and Dormant Baronetcy. Col. Hist. N. Y., London Doc., vol. iv. p. 631.



The communion plate consists of a large silver chalice and paten, the gift of "good Queen Anne," oldest daughter of James, Duke of York and Albany, afterwards King James Second; also two smaller chalices, presented by a member of the Davenport family of, Davenport Neck. The old Communion-table, presented to the old stone church by Aman Guion in 1710, is still preserved in the vestry-room. The organ, which cost \$5,000, was constructed by Erben, of New York; has two banks of keys, and three octaves of foot-pedals; the whole is gorgeously finished with blue pipes, decorated with scarlet and gold.

## TOMB-STONES.

In the rear of the church is situated the old burying-ground, where lie, awaiting the resurrection of the just, many of the persecuted and exiled Huguenots. The inscriptions on the earliest tombstones are wholly illegible. Among others that have been preserved, however, are the following:—

Voici le corps de  
ISAAC COUTANT,  
Agé 50 ans.

1741 M. D. A. G. 49.

Here lies the body of  
JAMES FLANDREAU,  
Aged 69 years.

Died Feb. 19, 1726.

Here lies the body of  
JOHN CLARK,

Who departed this life

on ye 6 day of M. R., A. D. 1754,

Aged 56.

Voici le corps de  
SUSANNE LANDRIN,  
Ag. de 18 M. Se 6 D. S. L. 1750.

Here lies the body of

ANDRÉ RANOUD,

who departed this life on Friday ye  
2 day of Dec. A. D. 1758, aged 25 yr.

There are also monuments in the yard to members of the Guion, Alaire and Secor families, &c.

The cemetery on the west side of the church contains a neat marble monument, consisting of a base and pyramid, with the following inscription (surmounted by a medallion likeness of the deceased):—

To

WILLIAM LEGGETT,

the eloquent journalist,  
 whose genius, disinterestedness  
 and courage ennobled his profession—  
 who loved truth for its own sake,  
 and asserted it with most ardor  
 when weaker minds were most dismayed  
 with opposition ;  
 who could endure no form of tyranny,  
 and raised his voice against  
 all injustice,  
 on whomsoever committed,  
 and whoever were its authors.

THE DEMOCRATIC YOUNG MEN

of New York,  
 sorrowing that a career so glorious  
 should have closed so prematurely,  
 have erected this monument.

---

WILLIAM LEGGETT,

born in New York, April 30, 1801,  
 died at New Rochelle,  
 May 29th, 1839.

PRINCIPAL BENEFACTORS.

Queen Anne, John Pell, Jacob Leisler, Col. Benjamin Fletcher, Col. Robert Hunter, Col. Caleb Heathcote, Rev. John Sharpe, Elias Neau, Rev. Daniel Bondet, Lewis Bongrand, Aman Guion, James de Blez, Lewis Pintard, Peter J. Munro, Hon. John Hunter, Lloyd S. Daubeny, Philip Rhinelander Underhill, Town of New Rochelle, the Venerable Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, and the Corporation of Trinity church, New York.

The first delegate from this parish to the Diocesan Convention, held in New York, Wednesday, June 22nd, 1785, was Mr. Andrew Fowler.

## MINISTERS AND RECTORS OF NEW ROCHELLE.

INST. OR CALL.	MINISTERS.	VACATED BY.
20 Sept. A.D. 1689,	REV. DAVID DE BONREPOS, D.D. Cl.,	resig.
20 June, A.D. 1695.	REV. DANIEL BONDET, A.M., Cl.,	death.
20 July, A.D. 1724,	REV. PIERRE STOUPPE, A.M., Cl.,	"
20 Aug., A.D. 1761,	REV. MICHAEL HOUDIN, A.M., Cl.,	"
20 Oct., A.D. 1790,	REV. THEODOSIUS BARTOW, Presb.,	resig.
12 May, A.D. 1819,	REV. RAVAUD KEARNY, A.M., Presb.,	"
23 Jan., A.D. 1821,	REV. LEWIS P. BAYARD, A.M., Presb.,	"
21 May, A.D. 1827,	REV. LAWSON CARTER, A.M., Presb.,	"
13 May, A.D. 1839,	REV. THOMAS WINTHROP COIT, D.D., Presb.,	"
10 Dec., A. D. 1849,	REV. RICHARD UMSTEAD MORGAN, D.D., Presb.,	

Rector Emeritus resigned July, 1873.

1 Jan., A. D. 1874, REV. JOHN H. WATSON had charge of the Parish to May 1, 1876.

20 Oct., A. D. 1876, REV. CHAS. F. CANEDY, M.A., present incumbent.

The Baptismal Register of this church commences, in 1724 :—

"Ce Dimanche 14 Mars, 1724, a ete baptise sortie service du matin Peter fils de Thomas Wallis, and Madelaine sa femme le Peter a ete presente, au saint bapteme, par Denys Woertman and Elizabeth sa femme Parrain et Marraine le dit Peter est ne le six du dit mois."

THOMAS WALLIS,

DENIS WOERTMAN,

her

ELIZABETH  $\bowtie$  WOERTMAN,  
marque.

PETER STOUPPE,

ISAAC QUANTEIN, ancien.

ISAAC GUION, ancien.

In 1710 the population of New Rochelle and its districts was as follows:—Male Christians, 67; Female do., 139; Male Slaves, 23; Female do., 34; Total, 261.

A few rods west of the Episcopal church, is situated the former residence of the Guion family, at present owned by William Lawton, Esq., of New Rochelle, who married the daughter of the late Frederick Guion, Esq. This property was originally purchased by Louis Guion, in 1691. Upon the 8th of October, 1725, we find Louis Guion, Sr., conveying to Aman Guion, his son, sixty-four acres of land in that part of the manor called New Rochelle. The Guions were from La Rochelle in France; one branch of whom were lords of Salbetter, represented by Peter Guion lord of that place, and elder in the Church of Manars, who appeared for the Province of Dolphiny, at the Synod of Vitré, in 1617.<sup>a</sup> Louis, the more immediate ancestor of the Guion family of New Rochelle emigrated

<sup>a</sup> Quick's Synodican, Vol. II., page 476. Two of this name were pastors in the French church. First, Simon de Guyon, pastor of the Church of Bordeaux; second, Mr. Paul Guion, pastor of the Church of Dieu le-Sit, 1620. A branch of this family appears to have settled upon Staten Island at a very early period; for on the 13th of October, 1664, we find Governor Nicolls granting to Jacques Guion 200 acres, situated on that island. Of this family was John Guion, Deputy Mayor of New York in 1677.

from England in 1687, having fled from La Rochelle in 1681; letters of denization were granted under the great seal of the province to Louis Guion and his son Louis, Feb. 6th, 1695-6. Louis Guion, Sr., of New Rochelle, in 1710 appears to have been born in France in 1654; Mary, his wife, in 1656. Their children were Louis, Aman, Isaac, and Susanna. There was a Gregory Guion in New Rochelle in 1710, who, by his wife Mary, had five children—Gregory, Judy, Hester, Joanna and Anna. The oldest residence of the Guions was erected in 1696, and stands a little to the west of the more modern mansion, erected in 1800 by Mr. Frederick Guion, and is now occupied by William Lawton, Esq., who has done so much towards bringing into notice the celebrated blackberry which bears his name. This famous berry was discovered about twenty-five years ago on the old parsonage property given by John Pell to the Huguenots in 1689 which is now owned by Frederick Prime, Esq. Some of these plants were removed by Mr. Lewis Secor to his garden in New Rochelle where he began to cultivate them. Mr. Lawton took great interest in the berry and brought it to the notice of the American Institute and the Farmer's Club—where from its size and flavor it was universally admired; and there it received the name of the Lawton Blackberry. In a short time this new fruit became widely known and has spread all over the country.

In a portion of the Guion property once owned by the late George Case, Esq., and nearly opposite the old Eels mansion on North street, leading to the depot, was discovered a few years since the remains of a large bed of charcoal, marking the site of the summary execution of a negro, one hundred and ten years ago, for murder, as appears from the following:

“New York *Post Boy*, January 16th, 1766: A few days since a negro man belonging to Mr. George Trail, of New Rochelle, killed a woman, (Miss De Blez), his house-keeper, by a blow with a small ax on the head, of which wound she expired; the villain immediately fled and concealed himself in a haystack, where he was found after a diligent search, tried by three Justices of the Peace and ordered to be burnt, which sentence was put into execution in New Rochelle last week.”

Near the western entrance of the village stands the Presbyterian church—a beautiful gothic stone edifice with tower and spire. The Presbyterian Society claims succession from the original French church gathered together soon after the settlement of the place in 1689. In this view, they must represent some minority of the Huguenots; for in 1709 the majority conformed to the Church of England, according to the charter of Trinity church, New Rochelle—which specified that on the



twelfth day of June, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and nine, all the then inhabitants of the said township who were members of the said French church, excepting two, unanimously agreed and consented to conform themselves and the religious worship of their said church to the liturgy and rites of the Church of England as established by law; and by a solemn act or agreement did submit to, and put themselves under the protection of the same; that fourteen years before, (1695), and ever since such conformity their respective ministers and pastors have been invested with Episcopal ordination and had received their principal support from the Society for Propagating the Gospel in foreign parts, etc. Fourteen years after this conformity we find Alexander Allaire conveying a certain lot of land, lying in the town of New Rochelle, unto Isaac Mercier and others for a public assembling place for the worship of God for the French Protestants inhabiting within the town of New Rochelle in the following manner :

“To all Christian people unto whom these presents shall or may come, Alexander Allaire of New Rochelle, in the County of Westchester, in the province of New York, sendeth greeting in our Lord God everlasting : Know ye, that he the said Alexander Allaire, for and in consideration of the love and affection which he hath and beareth unto his brethren in Jesus Christ, Isaac Mercier, Daniel Samson and Zachary Angevin and other the members of the French Protestant congregation gathered together at New Rocelle aforesaid, according to the discipline and church government heretofore established and exercised in the Protestant Church of France, before their late persecution and destruction in that kingdom, hath granted, released, and confirmed, &c., &c., unto the said Isaac Mercier, Daniel Samson, and Zachary Angevin, all that certain lot or tuft of ground, situate, lying and being in the town of New Rochelle aforesaid, being butted and bounded by the road or highway from the corner of Chapron's land along the road one hundred and twenty foot, from thence northerly along the other land of the said Alexander Allaire seventy-five feet, and from thence along the line of Chapron's land sixty foot easterly, and from thence along the line of said land ninety foot, together with all and singular the edifices, buildings, liberties, &c., unto the said Isaac Mercier, Daniel Samson, Zachary Angevin, and their heirs for ever, for the only, sole and proper use, benefit, and behoof *for a public assembling place* for the worship of God, for the French Protestants inhabiting within the town of New Rochelle aforesaid, who exercise the discipline and church government according to the usages, orders, customs and directions heretofore used, practised, established and exercised in the Reformed Protestant Churches of the kingdom of France, before the last persecution and destruction of the same in the said kingdom of France, for ever, and to no other use and purpose whatsoever; but in case these premises shall be applied to any other purpose, then they shall immediately revert unto the said Alexander Allaire, his heirs and assignees for ever.”

ALEXANDER ALLAIRE.

This 20th day of January, 1723-4.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Count. Rec. Lib., E, 388, 99. The original Document is in the possession of Mr. Drake of Scarsdale.

According to information derived from the Allaire family the above lot embraces the site of the present Presbyterian parsonage, the northern part of which lot was formerly used as a grave yard. On this spot the "Reformed Protestant Congregation of New Rochelle" erected a church about 1723-4; this edifice having fallen into decay was afterwards removed in 1783 by John Guerrineau, carpenter. We have already seen that the first edifice erected by the Huguenots on March 19, 1697, stood a little east of the last mentioned structure and was destroyed by fire about 1723.

The first pastor of the Reformed Protestant church at New Rochelle, after the conformity, was the "Reverend Jean Brumeau de Moulinars, who was undoubtedly a son of Jean Brumaud, Sieur de Moulinars, pastor of Champagne Mouton, Poitou, France, and afterwards of Chatellerault, who fled to Holland after the Revocation. Jean Joseph was ordained by the Walloon Synod in Holland, and came to New York in 1718 to be colleague of the Rev. Louis Rou. He seems to have been highly esteemed by the people; but disagreeing with Rou, he retired to New Rochelle where he had previously officiated at stated times from the period of his coming to America."<sup>a</sup> Moulinars treatment of his superior, Monsieur Rou, is very much censured by many members of the New York congregation in 1724. In a petition to Governor Burnet, Roux's friends say, "that they are too sensibly touched with the disadvantages they lye under from the misfortunes of their want of his Pastoral care over them, whose exemplary Piety and Instruction for upwards of fourteen years have rendered him exceedingly estimable to all who know him, and which can't but be acknowledged even by those who are now the occasion of your Pet'r's, giving your Excellency this trouble and who side with his assistant, Mr. Moulinar, from whom both as a Brother and a Christian better offices might have been expected than to have found him the penman of such Instrument which are the present motive of all our troubles, &c."<sup>b</sup>

In Mr. Louis Rou's third memorial in answer to gentlemen of the French Consistory in a petition to the Governor in 1724-25, speaking of the Dissenters from the Church of England as by law established, he says:

"In opposition to this *National Church* they have entertained and fomented for several years a scandalous schism at New Rochel, where

<sup>a</sup> From Rev. Charles Baird's forth-coming Hist. of the Huguenots in America.

<sup>b</sup> Doc. Hist., N. Y., vol. iii., p. 466. See Moulinar's answer, ditto, p. 470. At a meeting of the committee of the Council, March 4th, 1724-5, to report to the Governor, they assert that the congregation of the French Protestant church had no authority to suspend their minister, p. 470.

the incapacity for providing for a minister obliged the inhabitants to establish an *Episcopal Church* through the Bounty and Protection of the Society in England; and they would still support this *schism*, if their M—— was not taken up in the custody of our Church of which he keeps the keys to keep me out unjustly. In short they have always looked upon my inclination, esteem, and respect for the *Church of England* as a *crime* in me." Mr. Rou adds, "They have always been enemies of the *Church of England as by law established*; they have always railed at her *liturgy*, her *services* and *ceremonies*"<sup>a</sup> About one year after these disgraceful proceedings in New York, Moulinars retired to New Rochelle to annoy Monsieur Stoupe, the lawful minister of that place. "The will of John Joseph Moulinar in the County of Westchester and Province of New York, minister of the Holy Evangille in New Rochelle," bears date 1st of October, 1741, and was proved 13th October, 1741,<sup>b</sup> so that he must have died somewhere between the first and thirteenth of October of the same year. His wife was Judith Marie. On the 17th of October, 1726, John Parcot of New Rochelle, sold to Judith Marie Moulinars, gentle woman of the same place, his farm of forty-seven acres in New Rochelle. Moulinars had a daughter, Susanne Helene, born Feb. 8, 1719; and a son Jean, born Feb. 13, 1722; both of whom were baptized by Monsieur Rou, in New York. This son, Jean, I conjecture, was the John Moulinars who "entered the service as first lieutenant, June 15, 1746."<sup>c</sup>

It deserves to be mentioned here that the French Reformed church at New Rochelle had been for some time annexed to the French Reformed church of New York; maintaining, however, their own Consistory, a state of things that continued until the Revolutionary war.

From the following document it appears that Monsieur Jean Carle had succeeded Moulinars in the pastorate at New Rochelle:

Certificate of Dismission given to Mr. Jean Carle, pastor of the Reformed French church, New Rochelle, April 13, 1764,

*In the name of God, amen.*

Certificate given to Mr. Jean Carle, our pastor. We the undersigned elders and deacons who now compose the consistory of the Reformed French church at New Rochelle, in the government of New York, in America, certify and declare that Mr. Jean Carle, minister of the holy Gospel, has been our pastor during about ten years, that he had resided in this government; that we have been edified by his Christian and worthy walk as a minister of Jesus Christ the great Shepherd

<sup>a</sup> Doc. Hist. N. Y. vol. iii. p. 1169.

<sup>b</sup> Surrogates Rec. N. Y. Lib., xiv. p. 150.

<sup>c</sup> Rev. Chas. Baird's Huguenots in America. See English MSS. in Sec. of State's office, vol. lxxv. p. 64.

and Saviour of our souls, as well as by his preaching in which we have always found a doctrine, truly pure and evangelical, sound and edifying, and consequently, the only one which accompanied and aided by the grace of God is able to conduct our souls unto eternal life.

We add further, that we have seen with sincere regret the request which Mr Jean Carle has made for his dismissal from the Reformed French church in New York with which we are (an annexé,) for we truly desired that he would finish his days with us, we being much edified by his ministry; but wishing to acquiesce, we join with sorrow our consent with that of our sister church, the Reformed French church of New York, and accord to Mr. Jean Carle his dismissal which he has requested. In consequence he has given us his farewell sermon, this Lord's day morning, April 15, 1764, we accompanying it with our own most sincere prayers, praying that God would take him under His mighty protection, conduct happily wherever His providence may call him, and bestow His blessing upon his person and his ministry, to the end that he may contribute effectually to the glory of our great God, and lead souls captive to the obedience of Jesus Christ. Done in Consistory, and a true copy given to Mr. Jean Carle at New Rochelle, this 15th day of April, 1764.

(Signed,)

SAMUEL P. GILLET,  
MICHEL HONORE,  
JEAN BADEAU,  
JEAN PARCOT.<sup>a</sup>

From this time (1764) no record appears to have been made of the state or progress of the French Protestant congregation in New Rochelle, as a distinct body; probably about this period, such of its members as had not conformed to the Church of England, allied themselves to the Presbyterian form of worship.

Upon the 23d of February, 1808, the Presbyterian church was incorporated under the title of the "French Church in New Rochelle," Matson Smith, John Reid, Thomas Carpenter, Robert Givan, Gideon Coggeshall, and James Somerville, trustees. A re-organization appears to have taken place "on the 30th of May, 1812, under the direction of a committee appointed by the Presbytery of New York, consisting of the Rev. Walter King, Philip Milledolar, D.D., and Henry Rutgers, elder." The church edifice was raised in 1815, and dedicated the same year. The land on which it stood was the gift of Mr. George Pelor, 12th of May 1814. In 1827 Samuel Bayard, of the borough of Princeton, in the State of New Jersey, and the Rev. Lewis P. Bayard,<sup>b</sup> of the town

<sup>a</sup> Translated from the original MSS. by the Rev. Gorham D. Abbott in 1837. In April, 1764, the Rev. Jean Carle returned to Europe. Smith, the historian, writing in 1751, observes, the present minister in the French church in New York is Mr. Carle, a native of France, who succeeded Mr. Rou, in 1754. "He bears an irreproachable character, is very intent upon his studies, preaches moderate Calvinism, and speaks with propriety, both of pronunciation and gesture." Smith's Hist., N. Y. 194.

<sup>b</sup> The father of Lewis P. Bayard was Hon. Samuel Bayard, a ruling elder in the Presbyterian church and the author of letters on the Lord's Supper. Col. Samuel Bayard was a liberal benefactor of this church.



of New Rochelle, trustees of Lewis Pintard deceased, conveyed to the "trustees of the Presbyterian church of the town of New Rochelle, *formerly known by the name of the French church*, a certain piece of land lying in the town of New Rochelle, beginning at a corner formed by the intersection of the lot of ground on which the Presbyterian church aforesaid is erected, and the old Boston road, etc."<sup>a</sup>

To these gifts Albert Smith, M.D., has since added three lots and a half at cost; bounded on the east by the property of Mr. Charles Roosevelt.

#### A LIST OF MINISTERS OR PASTORS OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH OF NEW ROCHELLE.

MINISTERS, ETC.	DATE OF CALL.		DATE OF RESIGNATION.
Rev. ISAAC LEWIS, Jr.,	from	April, 1815,	to July, 1821.
Rev. ELIJAH D. WELLS,	"	June, 1823,	to June, 1825.
Rev. J. D. WICKHAM,	"	June, 1825,	to June, 1828.
Rev. GEORGE STEBBINS,	"	June, 1828,	to August, 1835.
Rev. JOHN MASON,	"	Nov., 1835,	to November, 1837.
Rev. GORHAM D. ABBOT,	"	Nov., 1837,	to November, 1840.
Rev. P. SNYDER,	"	1841,	to 1843.
Rev. HENRY MARTIN SCUDDER,		1844,	to 1845.
Rev. CHARLES HAWLEY,	from	Jan., 1845,	to June, 1848.
Rev. CHARLES E. LINSLEY,	"	June, 1849,	to Oct. 5, 1858.
Rev. JAMES H. TAYLOR,	"	Nov., 1859,	to August, 1862.
Rev. ERSKINE N. WHITE,	"	Dec., 1862,	to August, 1868.
Rev. DAVID HOPKINS,	"	Jan., 1869,	to November, 1869, by death.
Rev. EDWARD R. BURKHALTER,		Oct., 1870,	to Sept., 1876.
Rev. ANTHONY R. MACOUBREY,		1877,	Resigned.
Rev. RANDELL HOES,		Nov. 21, 1878,	Present.

The present church edifice, which stands near the junction of the old Boston turnpike and the Boston Boulevard at the western entrance to the village, is constructed of stone (obtained from boulders on the Smith farm) in the Gothic style. It was erected in 1860-1, at a cost of \$15,000. The tower, which is finished with a spire, cost \$2,000. Beneath the foundation of the latter was deposited, by Dr. Albert Smith, the door-step of the old Reformed French church, erected in 1697. The whole structure consists of a nave, two side-aisles, tower and lecture-room. The old church was converted into a parsonage in 1860 and removed to a site directly north-west of the present edifice given by Albert Smith, M.D., who also improved it and presented the whole as a free gift to the corporation.

<sup>a</sup> From original document in possession of trustees.



[illegible]

This Church, which was formerly attached to the Bedford Presbytery, is now in connection with the Presbytery of Westchester.

In this part of the town are situated the property of Rev. Charles Hawley, (the old Bayard estate,) and the late Matson Smith, M.D., now occupied by his son Albert Smith, M.D. Dr. Matson Smith was a native of Lyme, Connecticut, and a graduate of Yale College in 1787; and was among the early settlers of the place, and for more than half a century distinguished for his high professional skill and attainments, being for many years president of the Medical Society of Westchester County. He was a man of strictly religious habits; and, for some time, a ruling elder in the Presbyterian church.

A large portion of land, situated in this vicinity, constituted the old



HOME OF JAMES P. HUNTINGDON, ESQ.

Allaire estate, purchased by Alexander Allaire, the Huguenot, in 1691; letters of Denization, under the great seal of the province were granted to Alexander Allaire, Aug. 5th, 1695. The ancestors of the Allaires claim to descend from the famous Baldwin, King of Jerusalem, who died in 1118, and possessed a fair inheritance in France, at a very early period. The more immediate ancestor of the family, however, was Pierre Allaire Ecuyer, living at La Rochelle, in 1465. Among the pastors of the French Reformed Church in 1637, was the Rev. "Paul Allard, a Rocheller, minister of the Church of Sancerre." Sometime prior to the revocation of the edict of Nantes, Alexander Allaire, fifth in descent from the fore mentioned Pierre Allaire Ecuyer, who was born in France in 1660, fled from La Rochelle to England, and soon after from thence to America. He also owned the property now belonging to



James Pitcher Huntingdon, Esq. Among the inhabitants of this town in 1710, were Alexander Allaire and Jane, his wife, with their children, Peter, Philip Jean and Isaac. Alexander was the great grandfather of the late James P. Allaire, proprietor of the Allaire Iron Works of New York. "This individual long occupied a high place in the ranks of American mechanics; and the excellent steam machinery turned out at his extensive foundry has carried his name to every part of the world, and made him famous wherever steam is known. He attained the ripe age of seventy-three years; and, in the course of his prolonged experience in active manufacturing business, won universal respect and esteem from all with whom he came into connection." "He died on Thursday the 20th of May, 1858, at the Howell Works, Monmouth County, New Jersey," and his remains were interred among those of his ancestors in the old French burying ground in this place. In 1710, Alexander Allaire conveyed to Louis Guion a tract of forty acres in New Rochelle, which he had formerly sold to Theophilus Forestier of New Rochelle, March 17th, 1687.<sup>a</sup> "On the 24th of September, 1686, Alexander Allaire conveys to Peter Barberie a tract of land which had been conveyed to him by Marie Graton, widow of William Cothonneau."<sup>b</sup>

Near the western extremity of the village, bordering the railroad, is the Beechwood Cemetery incorporated January 30th, 1854. This pretty piece of wood land is tastefully laid out in walks and drives. It was Albert Smith, M.D., who first observed the natural availabilities of the location in 1850, and soon after brought it to the notice of the public.

There is a large and respectable Methodist Episcopal society in the village which was organized Aug. 22d, 1791, and incorporated the same year, Peter Bonnett, Sr., Benjamin Morgan, Thomas Shute, Gilbert Shute, John Bonnett and Ranson Burtis, first trustees.<sup>c</sup>

The Roman Catholic church, the Church of the Blessed Sacrament, is a fine wooden structure erected in 1873, and stands fronting on Centre Street, to which is attached the Roman Catholic chapel. The present minister is the Rev. Thomas McLoughlin.

The Baptist church is of stone, and stands on the corner of Maine Street and Locust Avenue. The property on the corner of Drake's Lane and Pelham Road belongs to the Wright family, but was formerly owned by the late William Leggett, Esq., for many years the able conductor of the "*Evening Post*." Mr. Leggett died in 1839, soon after his appointment to the Gautemala Mission, and has a handsome monu-

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. of Deeds, vol. E., p. 29.

<sup>b</sup> Co. Rec. of Deeds, vol. F., p. 2.

<sup>c</sup> Religious Societies, Lib. A. p. 24.

ment erected to his memory in the church-yard of the Episcopal church. In this neighborhood formerly resided Capt. Samuel Pintard, the son of John, and grand-son of Anthony Pintard, who came originally from La Rochelle, in France, and settled in Shrewsbury, New Jersey. Captain Samuel Pintard was greatly distinguished for his services in the Low Countries in 1759. "At the battle of Minden he was severely wounded, and afterwards found on the battle ground, wrapped up in a standard of colors which he had captured with his own hands from the enemy. He subsequently returned to this, his native country, full of honors and wounds, and located himself on the Robert Gallagher estate, at the corner of Drake's Avenue and Pelham road. His brother, Louis Pintard, was appointed by Washington, Commissary for the American Prisoners in New York. This individual occupied the Rumsey property in New Rochelle. There were two other brothers of this family—Anthony, of New York, and John Pintard; the latter was the father of the late venerable John Pintard, LL.D., whose grandson, Servoss, formerly resided in this town. The two brothers, Samuel and Lewis Pintard, married sisters of the Stockton family, of New Jersey.

The estate of the late Charles F. Wright, Esq., formerly belonged to Mr. James Bleeker, son of Rutger Bleeker, mayor of the city of Albany in 1828. The house, which has been greatly improved within a few years, is said to have been used by the British as an hospital for the wounded soldiers in 1776.

The Le Count family still occupy a portion of the old family estate, situated on the south side of the road leading to the village. Guillaume le Coate was born in France in 1658,<sup>a</sup> and Francis le Coate was born in France in 1665, and fled from the former country to England prior to the edict of Nantes. On the 17th of April, 1695, Francis le Coate took the oath of allegiance in New York. In September, 1710, the two brothers and their families were living in the town of New Rochelle—consisting of William le Coate, Jr., born in 1694; Hester le Coate and Jean le Coate; Francis le Coate and Mary, his wife; Josiah le Coate and Mary le Coate.

Near this property there is a landing, from which sail several sloops, trading with the New York market.

The Rhinelanders were also extensive land-holders in this part of the town. Bernard Rhineland settled on the place now owned by his great-grandson, Philip R. Underhill, Esq. The father of Bernard was Philip Jacob Rhineland, a French-Protestant refugee.

The steamboat landing is delightfully situated about half a mile

<sup>a</sup> In the Colloquy of valle Lusón was Thomas Comte, a pastor-emeritus.—*Quick's Synodicon*.

south-west of the village, on a small wooded island, connected with the main by a solid stone causeway which leads to the dock and to a well-built hotel called the Neptune House. This establishment is well located, on account of its close vicinity to the Sound. At high water, the scenery presented in front of the hotel is altogether unrivalled: the harbor, in the foreground; the long surface of the waters, stretching five miles across to Long Island; the winding streams of the creek on each side, and Davenport's Neck and Island around, help to fill up the landscape; and, in addition to the healthiness of the spot, give it advantages possessed by few of our watering-places. This commodious hotel has been lately newly furnished throughout, and placed under competent management. The grounds contain twenty acres of land, part of which is a beautiful grove. The adjacent island, commonly called Locust Island, was formerly owned by the family of the late consul, John William Schmidt; but it has lately been purchased by Mr. J. H. Starin of New York, and is now called Glen Island and become quite celebrated as a place of resort for excursionists. During the past summer several thousand people landed daily and enjoyed its many attractions and amusements, which are provided to suit the tastes of all.

The neighboring waters abound with bass and black-fish, and which last, at the proper season, are taken in large quantities. According to the old rhyme the proper season is indicated by the chesnut leaf, for

“When chesnut leaves are as big as thumb nails,  
Then bite black-fish without fail;  
But when chesnut leaves are as big as a span,  
Then catch black-fish if you can.”

The size of the black-fish varies from seven to eight pounds, although some have been taken in this vicinity weighing eighteen pounds. The adjacent bays and creeks are the common resort of innumerable flocks of wild ducks. Immense numbers of these birds are killed annually, either for sale or domestic use. The favorite method for shooting is technically called “lining,” which is performed in the following manner: A number of sportsmen form a continuous line of boats, at convenient distances from each other, directly across the line of flight. The moment the ducks rise the firing commences at the head of the line, and is continued in succession by the whole chain of gunners. In this way, hundreds of ducks are annihilated, unless they happen to dash through an opening in the line of boats, when they are sure to escape.

Three hundred ducks have been shot by one individual placed in the line. The species commonly killed by this destructive method are the long-tailed duck, commonly called the squaw or old-wife, (*Anas Glaci-*

alis, Linn,) and the velvet duck, commonly called the coot, (Anas Fusca, Wil.) Another mode is by means of decoys, which is practised until the months of April or May, when the ducks take their departure to the north.

In this place deserves to be recorded the capture of an enormous turtle, upon the 9th of Sept., 1773. "On Tuesday a turtle of an enormous size and singular form and marks was taken with a harpoon, by Mr. Bleecker and some others, near New Rochelle. His length is eight feet from fin to fin, and seven feet three inches from stem to stern. He is spotted under the fore fins like a leopard, and discovered amazing swiftness after being struck by the harpoon. He had been seen among the rocks in the neighborhood of New Rochelle, but was not known till just before his capture to be a turtle. What a noble repast would this prove to the Blow-bladder street fraternity in London, for he is found to be upwards of 800 cwt."<sup>a</sup>

In the vicinity of New Rochelle the waters of the Sound, or "*Manunketesuck*," are studded with numerous islands, which add much to the beauty of the surrounding scenery. The opposite shore of Long Island, also, forms another charming addition to the landscape—sprinkled as it is, in all directions, by neat farm houses and villages.

"The Sound! Oh! how many delightful reminiscences does the name bring to our recollection. The Sound! with its white sand banks, and its wooded shores, its far broad bosom covered with fleets of sails, scudding along in the swift breeze in the open day, and its dark waves rolling and sweeping in whole streams of phosphorescent fire from their plunging bows, as they dash through it in the darkness of midnight. The Sound! redolent with military story. The Sound! overflowing with supernatural legend and antiquated history." "Are there not the 'Brothers,' unnatural that they are, who, living centuries together, never to one another have as yet spoken a kindly word, and the great savage 'Executioners,' and 'Throgs,' and 'Sands,' and 'Etons,' all throwing hospitable lights from their high beacon towers, far forward, to guide the wandering mariner; and the 'Devil's Stepping Stones,' o'er which he bounded when driven from Connecticut; and the great rocks, too, inside of Flushing Bay, on which he descended, shivering them from top to bottom as he fell. And are there not the 'Norwalk Islands,' with their pines,—'Old Sasco,' with her rocks,—'Fairweather,' with the wild birds' eggs deep buried in her sands,—and the far-famed fishing banks off the 'Middle Ground.' Ay! and is it not from the fierce boiling whirlpools of the 'Gate' to 'Gardiners,' and the lone beacon tower of 'Old Montaukett,'

<sup>a</sup> Rivington's Gazette, N. Y., 1773.



one continuous ground of thrilling lore and bold adventure. In her waters the 'Fire ship'<sup>a</sup> glared amid the darkness; her phantom crew, like red hot statues, standing at their quarters, as rushing onwards, in the furious storm, she passed the shuddering mariner, leaving comet-like long streams of flame behind. Beneath her sands the red-shirted buccaneers did hide their ill-gotten, blood-bespotted treasure. Ay! and 'twas on her broad bosom that with iron-seared conscience, sailed that pirate, fierce and bold—old Robert Kidd; and to this very day his golden hoards, with magic mark and sign, still crowd her wooded shores."<sup>b</sup>

Capt. Kidd, the notorious freebooter, whose name is so inseparably connected with these shores, appears to have been employed by the government in 1696 to suppress the buccaneers, (at that time very numerous on our coast,) "from the knowledge he possessed of their numbers, strength, and places of resort." In 1699 he "returned from the East Indies, whither he had sailed after making several unsuccessful cruises on the American coast; during his absence, having been engaged in the very practices he had engaged to prevent. This result appears to have been, in a measure, foreseen by the provincials. Governor Fletcher, writing to the board of trade, June 22, 1697, says: "One Captain Kidd lately arrived here, and produced a commission, under the great seal of England for suppressing of piracy. When he was here many flocked to him from all parts—men of desperate fortunes and necessitous, in expectation of getting vast treasures." "He sailed from hence with 150 men, as I am informed; a great part of them are of this province. It is generally believed, here, they would have money *per fas aut nefas—that if he miss of the design intended for which he has commissioned, it will not be in Kid's power to govern such a horde of men under no pay.* His subsequent career is well known; in 1699 he was made prisoner in Boston,<sup>c</sup> sent to England, and there executed in 1701."<sup>d</sup>

The following ballad (attributed to Kid,<sup>e</sup> pretends to set forth his veritable history. It is entitled—

---

<sup>a</sup> The tradition is, that she was taken by pirates, all hands murdered and abandoned, after being set on fire by the buccaneers. Some accounts state that a large white horse which was on board, was left near the foremast to perish in the flames, and in storms of peculiarly terrific violence, that she may be seen, rushing along enveloped in fire, the horse stamping and pawing at the heel of the foremast, her phantom crew assembled at quarters.—*Gallop among American Scenery*, by A. B. Silliman.

<sup>b</sup> *Gallop among American Scenery*, by A. B. Silliman, 212.

<sup>c</sup> Hutchinson says (vol. ii. 119) that when the officer arrested him he attempted to draw his sword, but was prevented by a person in company.

<sup>d</sup> *New Jersey Hist. Soc. Collect.*, 146.

<sup>e</sup> The author of the ballad has evidently mistaken the Christian name of the pirate, which was William.

“YE LAMENTABLE BALLAD AND YE TRUE HISTORIE OF CAP-  
TAIN ROBERT KIDD, WHO WAS HANGED IN CHAINS AT EX-  
ECUTION DOCK, FOR PIRACY AND MURDER ON YE HIGH  
SEAS.’

You captains bold and brave, hear our cries, hear our cries,  
You captains bold and brave, hear our cries,  
You captains brave and bold, tho’ you seem uncontroll’d,  
Don’t for the sake of gold lose your souls, lose your souls,  
Don’t for the sake of gold lose your souls.

He calleth upon  
the captains.

My name was Robert Kidd, when I sail’d, when I sail’d,  
My name was Robert Kidd, when I sail’d,  
My name was Robert Kidd, God’s laws I did forbid,  
And so wickedly I did, when I sail’d,

He stateth his  
name and acknowl-  
edgeth his wicked-  
ness.

My parents taught me well, when I sail’d, when I sail’d,  
My parents taught me well, when I sail’d,  
My parents taught me well to shun the gates of hell,  
But against them I rebell’d when I sail’d.

He beareth wit-  
ness of the good  
counsel of his par-  
ents.

I cursed my father dear, when I sail’d, when I sail’d,  
I cursed my father dear, when I sail’d,  
I cursed my father dear and her that did me bear,  
And so wickedly did swear, when I sail’d.

He curseth his fa-  
ther and his mother  
dear.

I made a solemn vow when I sail’d, when I sail’d,  
I made a solemn vow when I sail’d,  
I made a solemn vow, to God I would not bow,  
Nor myself one prayer allow, as I sail’d.

And blaspheme-  
meth against God.

I’d a Bible in my hand when I sail’d, when I sail’d,  
I’d a Bible in my hand when I sail’d,  
I’d a Bible in my hand by my father’s great command,  
And I sunk it in the sand when I sail’d.

He burieth the  
Good Book in the  
sand.

I murdered William Moore, as I sail’d, as I sail’d,  
I murdered William Moore, as I sail’d,  
I murdered William Moore, and left him in his gore,  
Not many leagues from shore as I sail’d.

And murdereth  
William Moore.

And being cruel still, as I sail’d, as I sail’d.  
And being cruel still, as I sail’d,  
And being cruel still, my gunner I did kill,  
And his precious blood did spill, as I sail’d.

And, also, cruelly  
killeth the gunner.

My mate was sick and died as I sail’d, as I sail’d,  
My mate was sick and died as I sail’d,  
My mate was sick and died, which me much terrified,  
When he called me to his bedside as I sail’d.

His mate, being  
about to die, re-  
penteth, and warn-  
eth him in his ca-  
reer.

And unto me he did say, see me die, see me die,  
 And unto me he did say see me die,  
 And unto me he did say, take warning now by me,  
 There comes a reckoning day, you must die.

You cannot then withstand, when you die, when you die,  
 You cannot then withstand when you die,  
 You cannot then withstand, the judgments of God's hand,  
 But bound then in iron bands, you must die.

He falleth sick,  
 and promiseth re-  
 pentance, but for-  
 getteth his vows.

I was sick and nigh to death, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I was sick and nigh to death as I sail'd,  
 And I was sick and nigh to death, and I vowed at every breath,  
 To walk in wisdom's ways as I sail'd,

I thought I was undone as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I thought I was undone as I sail'd,  
 I thought I was undone and my wicked glass had run,  
 But my health did soon return as I sail'd.

My preentance lasted not, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 My repentance lasted not, as I sail'd,  
 My repentance lasted not, my vows I soon forgot,  
 Damnation's my just lot, as I sail'd.

He steereth thro'  
 Long Island and  
 other Sounds.

I steer'd from sound to sound, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I steer'd from sound to sound, as I sail'd,  
 I steer'd from sound to sound, and many ships I found,  
 And most of them I burn'd as I sail'd.

He chaseth three  
 ships of France.

I spy'd three ships from France, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I spy'd three ships from France, as I sail'd,  
 I spy'd three ships from France, to them I did advance,  
 And took them all by chance, as I sail'd.

And, also, three  
 ships of Spain.

I spy'd three ships of Spain, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I spy'd three ships of Spain as I sail'd,  
 I spy'd three ships of Spain, I fired on them amain,  
 Till most of them were slain, as I sail'd.

He boasteth of  
 his treasure.

I'd ninety bars of gold, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 I'd ninety bars of gold, as I sail'd,  
 I'd ninety bars of gold, and dollars manifold,  
 With riches uncontroll'd, as I sail'd.

He spieth four  
 teen ships in pur-  
 suit, and surren-  
 dereth.

Then fourteen ships I saw, as I sail'd, as I sail'd,  
 Then fourteen ships I saw as I sail'd,  
 Then fourteen ships I saw and brave men they are,  
 Ah! they were too much for me as I sail'd.

Thus being o'ertaken at last, I must die, I must die,

Thus being o'ertaken at last, I must die,

Thus being o'ertaken at last, and into prison cast,

And sentence being pass'd, I must die.

Farewell the raging sea, I must die, I must die,

Farewell the raging main, I must die,

Farewell the raging main, to Turkey, France and Spain,

I ne'er shall see you again, I must die,

He biddeth fare-  
well to the seas,  
and the raging  
main.

To Newgate now I'm cast, and must die, and must die,

To Newgate now I'm cast, and must die,

To Newgate I am cast, with a sad and heavy heart,

To receive my just desert, I must die.

He exhorteth the  
young and old to  
take counsel from  
his fate.

To Execution Dock I must go, I must go,

To Execution Dock I must go,

To Execution Dock will many thousands flock,

But I must bear the shock, I must die.

Come all you young and old, see me die, see me die,

Come all you young and old, see me die,

Come all you young and old, you're welcome to my gold,

For by it I've lost my soul, and must die.

Take warning now by me, for I must die, for I must die,

Take warning now by me, for I must die,

Take warning now by me, and shun bad company,

Lest you come to hell with me, for I must die,

Lest you come to hell with me, for I must die.<sup>a</sup>

And declareth  
that he must go to  
hell, and be pun-  
ished for his wick-  
edness.

Smith, the historian, observes, "that it is certain the pirates were frequently in the Sound, and supplied with provisions by the inhabitants of Long Island, who, for many years afterwards, were so infatuated with a notion, that the pirates buried great quantities of money along the coast, that there is scarce a point of land, or an island, without the marks of their *auri sacra fames*. Some credulous people have ruined themselves by their researches, and propagated a thousand idle fables current to this day, among our country farmers."<sup>b</sup> There is a tradition that Kidd buried money beside a rock on Huckleberry Island.<sup>c</sup>

Almost every boulder and erratic block in this vicinity has been examined by the gold hunters in search of pirates' money.

On the opposite shore of Long Island is a small promontory which runs into the entrance of Hempstead bay, called to this day, Kidd's

<sup>a</sup> Gallop among American Scenery, by a A. B. Silliman.

<sup>b</sup> Smith's Hist. N. Y. English edition, 92.

<sup>c</sup> Amusing stories are related of the gold hunters and their mode of conducting operations, which generally resulted in the marvellous revelations of Kidd himself, seated on his treasure, holding a drawn sword.



point, "upon which several companies of diggers for Kidd's money have expended much time and labor."<sup>a</sup> At a short distance from the village and east of the steamboat landing, is Davenport's Neck, designated in the early division of the town as Leisler's and Le Count's Neck, containing 200 acres. This neck subsequently became the property and residence of the Lespinards—an old family of French extraction, claiming descent from the ancient nobles<sup>b</sup> of France. Antoine or Anthony Lisenard was born in France in 1643, and emigrated to the West Indies; from thence he removed to America, about the year 1681, with the Huguenots. He finally settled at New Rochelle, when the town was first purchased of John, Lord Pell, in 1689, and died some time in July, 1696. The will of Antonie Lisenard, of New Rochelle, bears date July 5th, 1696, in which he bequeaths to his wife Abigail and his children—Anthony, Margaret and Abigail—all his estate situated upon what is now known as Davenport's Neck, New Rochelle. His son, Anthony Lisenard, on the 3d of November, 1705, married Elizabeth, daughter of Leonard de Klyn, of New York. He died in the latter part of the year 1758, at an advanced age, leaving issue five children, viz: Leonard, David, Magdalena, Abigail, Mary, and three grand-children—daughters of his deceased son Anthony, by his wife Sarah Barclay. The will of Anthony Lisenard is dated Aug. 16th, 1755, and is proved Jan 3d, 1759.<sup>d</sup> Leonard, the eldest son of Anthony, removed from New Rochelle to the city of New York prior to the death of his father. He was assistant-alderman of the North Ward from 1750 to 1755, and alderman of the same from 1756 to 1762. He married Elsie Rutgers, the daughter of Anthony Rutgers, of the Kalck Hook.<sup>e</sup> He became a very prominent citizen of New York, and for a period of fifty years filled the highest offices of honor and trust. In 1765 he was a delegate to the first Congress of the American Colonies, held in New York on the 7th of October of that year, and represented the Colony of New York with Robert R. Livingston, Philip Livingston, John Cruger and William Bayard. From 1759 to 1768 he was a representative in the Colonial General Assembly of New York. He was also a member of the Provincial Convention which met in New York on the 20th of April, 1775; and on the 23d of May, 1775, was a deputy to the first Provincial Congress of New York. During this period he was one of the active sons

<sup>a</sup> *Geology of N. Y.*, vol. vii. No. 200, p. 128.

<sup>b</sup> Family tradition says that the Baroness Lisenard emigrated from the West Indies to New York. In September, 1719, Marget Leppener, (who was born in France in 1644,) with her two children, Anthony and Susanna, were living at New Rochelle.

<sup>c</sup> This will was proved July 29, 1696. *Surr. office, N. Y., Lib. V., 161.*

<sup>d</sup> *Surr. office, N. Y., Lib. XXI. of wills, p. 171.*

<sup>e</sup> The residence of Anthony Rutgers was on the site of the old New York Hospital grounds fronting on Broadway, where he lived for many years.





OLD MAP OF NEW ROCHELLE.

of liberty. After the death of his father-in-law, (Mr. Anthony Rutgers,) in 1746, he became the proprietor of that portion of the Rutgers estate afterwards known as the "Lispenard Meadows," then in the outskirts of the city, where he erected a handsome mansion and resided until his death, which took place on the 14th of February, 1776. The following notice of his demise appeared in the *New York Journal and Weekly Register* for February 18, 1790:—

"Died, on Sunday last, at his seat *near this city*, greatly lamented,  
LEONARD LISPENARD, Esq."

His remains were interred in the family vault in the rear of Trinity church, New York, near the south-west corner of the present edifice, where there is a white marble slab bearing his name. Leonard Lispenard had three children by his wife Elsie Rutgers, viz: Anthony, Leonard and Cornelia. The latter married Thomas Marston, Feb. 5th, 1759. Their daughter, Alice Marston, married Francis B. Winthrop, April 22d, 1779; Their grandsons are the present H. R. Winthrop and F. B. Winthrop; the latter of whom now resides at New Rochelle. The three streets which were cut through the old "Lispenard Meadows," in New York, viz: Lispenard, Leonard and Anthony, (now Worth,) derive their names from the Lispenard family, which is now believed to be extinct in the male line. The old family mansion on Davenport's Neck, formerly stood at the east end of the mill-pond. Upon the 17th of April, 1724, we find the freeholders of New Rochelle granting to Anthony Lispenard a portion of land situated on the Neck for the purpose of erecting a grist mill. The mill was soon after erected on the east side of the creek. Among the Lispenard papers occurs the following receipt, for quit-rent, from Thomas Pell, brother of Joseph Pell, lord of the manor of Pelham:—

"NEW YORK, Dec. 20th day, 1742.

"I have received of John Lispenard, the sum of £8, 5s, 2d, in full, for 84 bushels of wheat, 34 lbs. of butter, and 21 lbs. of cheese. THOS. PELL."

The Lispenard cemetery is located on the south side of the Neck, and contains several memorials to this family

In 1786 the Neck was purchased by Newbury Davenport, father of the late proprietors, Lawrence and Newbury Davenport, Esq's. Bonnefoy's or Bauffet's Point, situated on the north-east side of the Neck, has been already alluded to as the landing place of the French Huguenots, about 1689. A further interest is imparted to this locality, from its being the spot upon which the first house in this town was erected by the Huguenots, and held by them as common stock, the remains of



which are still visible.<sup>a</sup> The first child born here was a Guion. There is a tradition that one of the old Huguenots, who daily repaired to this place, "and turning his eyes in the direction where he supposed France was situated, would sing one of Marot's hymns, and send to heaven his morning devotions; others joined him in these pious remembrances of their God, and of their beloved climes from which they had been so cruelly driven by the merciless fires of persecution." It is more than probable that the Bonnefoy family gave name to this portion of the Neck. The name of Bonnefous, or Bonnefoy, frequently occurs in a history of the French Synods; for at the Colloquy or Conference of Ronerigus, there appeared Peter Bonnefous, one of the ministers of Miland Cressel and Senerate; and at the Colloquy of Sauragais, appeared John Bonnefous, of Pay Laurens and Pechandier. The Coutant family, of New Rochelle, possess the Bonnefoy Bible, printed at Amsterdam, by

JEAN FREDERIC BERNARD,

Revue et corrigée sur le texte Grec par les  
Pasteurs et les Professeurs de l'Eglise de Geneva.

Davenport's Neck, which has a fine deep water front, is now laid out in choice building sites occupied by the residences of the late T. W. Thorne, Honorable Clarkson N. Potter, Adrian Iselin, Robert R. Morris, W. W. Evans, Robert Edgar, Montgomery G. Davenport, son of the late Lawrence Davenport, Esq., De Lancey Kane, Daniel Edgar, and others. This neck suffered severely during the Revolutionary War, both from the enemy's shipping and the incursions of the whale boat men. Here General Knyphausen landed the second division of Hessians and the Twenty-second Regiment of Waldeckers, October, 1776, ten days previous to the battle of White Plains. On the Cedar street road, near the entrance of the neck, is Rockton, the residence of Robert C. Fisher, which commands beautiful views of the neck and adjoining waters.

"Castle View," owned by the estate of the late Simeon Leland, is also in this neighborhood.

On the property of David Harrison, Esq., in the vicinity of the neck there is a sloop landing and place of business; near the outlet of what was formerly the Crystal Lake stream, stood Jacob Leisler's mill long since removed. Near the site of the mill a spring issues out of the bank, the water of which is medicinal. Many people, who have drunk freely of it, have found great relief; it is chiefly useful for cutaneous diseases.

In the south-east angle of the town are located the premium mills,

<sup>a</sup> A cave in the rocks is still called the "old fire-place," from the fact that the Huguenots built their first fires here. This spot now belongs to A. B. Hudson.

property of the late P. H. Kellogg. This enchanting spot commands a most extensive view of the sound and adjacent shores. Many of the residences in this vicinity are very fine, especially that of John Stephenson.

The northern road from New Rochelle to the White Plains divides the ancient farms of the Huguenots. These were originally laid out in parallel narrow strips, containing each from fifty to sixty acres, and distinguished from the southern, by the name of the eastern and western divisions. Many of the early settlers had double lots, and some from eight to ten, amounting to four or five hundred acres in all.

The southern division of the town was also laid out in a similar manner, the lots running from the south side of the Boston turnpike to the Sound. Among the descendants of the ancient proprietors who still occupy the original strips of farms, may be enumerated in the west division, the Coutants; the ancestor of this Isaac who emigrated from England in 1689 was John Contant, or Couton,<sup>a</sup> he married Susanna Bonnefoy, and left issue three sons; of these, John, the eldest was the father of Isaac Coutant. In a list of the town of New Rochelle, September 9th, 1710, we find John Couton who was born in France, in 1658; Susannah Couton, his wife, born in 1660; and their children, John Couton, Junior, Peter Couton, Judy Couton and Hester Couton. A large portion of the Coutant farm, which consisted of 307 acres, is now divided among several proprietors. The present Coutant residence was erected in 1769, the cemetery in 1776.

The next farm was occupied by the Drakes who represent the Parquots or Parcots. Peter Parcot was born in France in 1663 and was living at New Rochelle in 1710, and Catherine, his wife; their children were John Parcot, Andrew Parcot, Sarah Parcot, Judy Parcot, Hester Parcot. The Badeaus still occupy the original farm purchased by their ancestor, Isaiah Baddo, who was born in France in 1664. In 1703 occurs the name of Elie Badeau as one of the freeholders of New Rochelle. In 1710, Isaiah Baddo and his wife, Hester Baddo, Isaiah Baddo, Junior, Andrew Baddo and Mary Baddo were living in the town of New Rochelle. The present Albert Badeau, Esq., is the son of James, and grandson of John, whose brother was the above mentioned Elias, sons of Isaiah.

The Secors were another of the western division of the ancient proprietors. The ancestor of this family was Ambrose Secor, or Sycar, a Protestant refugee, who fled from France in 1681. In 1710 several of

<sup>a</sup> At the Colloquy, or Conference of Annix was Isaac Coutant pastor of Sales, Tarra and La Jarrye-Quick Synod, vol. ii. p. 371.

this name occur in a list of inhabitants in the town of New Rochelle.<sup>a</sup> The late Louis Secord, a lincal descendant of Daniel Sycar, who was born in France in 1660, was the first discoverer and cultivator of the well known "Lawton Blackberry."

In the east division of the town are the Bonnett's, already alluded to, and the Soulices; the ancestor of this family was John Soulice,<sup>b</sup> a native of the Pyrenese, living in 1672, who married Jane Curterrie, a native of the Rhine, who had two sons—Joshua and John. John was born in the Pyrenese, A. D., 1692; fled from the persecution of the Protestants in France, and emigrated to America, A. D., 1700. He finally settled in New Rochelle, and married Mary, daughter of Daniel Bonnett, who was born in France in the year 1695. They had, first, John, of New Rochelle; secondly, Daniel, ancestor of the Soulices of Nova Scotia; third, Joshua, who married Susannah Guion and left a son Joshua, of New Rochelle, who married Mary Bonnett, great-grand-daughter of Daniel Bonnett, the Huguenot, who had one son—the late John Soulice, Esq., of Upper New Rochelle—whose nephew, Thomas S. Drake, now occupies the property. In the east division are also the Scurmans; the ancestor of this family was Frederick Scurman, who was born in France in 1630; and Mary, his wife, born in France in 1640. Mary Scurman, Margaret Scurman, Jacob Scurman, Altia Scurman, Jacob Scurman, Jr., Miles Scurman, Alexander Scurman, Anne Scurman, and Sarah Scurman; together with Frederick Scurman, born in France in 1666; Judy Scurman, his wife; Margaret, Susannah, Elizabeth and Isabelle, all appear to have been residents in New Rochelle in 1710. Frederick Scurman was a free-holder in this town in 1708.

In the southern division of the town, were the Guions, LeCounts and the Rhinelanders, already alluded to, and the Fflandreaus or Fflanders. James Fflanders, a native of France, in 1664, appears as a resident of this town in 1710, together with Catherine, his wife, and their children, James, Jr., Peter and Betty. The name of James Fflandreau is attached to the list of church-members, in 1743. The farm of the late Nehemiah Purdy, in the eastern division of the town, formerly belonged to Frederick Bevoe, who is styled "yeoman" in the records. This individual was indicted for treason 10th November, 1780, and judgment signed 5th July, 1783;<sup>c</sup> whereupon the farm was conveyed

<sup>a</sup> See Scarsdale.

<sup>b</sup> The following entries are made in the Soulice Family Bible, "written in New Rochelle, by John Soulice, Sen.:" "The 7th of December, in the year of our Lord, 1737, there was an earthquake which was terrible—which never was known in America before; it began about 10 o'clock at night, and so continued to be heard at times very loud, until the middle of March following. . . . In the year of our Lord Christ 1741, the Sound was frozen over from New Rochelle unto Long Island until 19th of March."

<sup>c</sup> A record of judgments, under the Confiscation Act, in possession of George H. Moore, of New York.

under the confiscation act, by the State government act, to the notorious Thomas Paine, for services he had rendered the country during the Revolutionary struggle for independence. This remarkable man was the son of a Quaker, a stay-maker by trade, and was born at Thetford, Norfolk, England, in 1737. His mother was the daughter of an attorney—herself a member of the Church of England. In her religious principles, the son appears to have been educated; for we find he was confirmed, at the usual age, by the Bishop of Norwich. After leaving school, (at the early age of thirteen,) Paine embraced his father's trade as a stay-maker, in which he continued five years. He next ventured on a sea-faring life. In 1759 he again established himself in stay-making, and married his first wife, Mary Lambert, who died the next year, in consequence of his bad treatment of her.

Two years after this, he obtained a place in the excise, from which he was twice expelled for mal-practices. In 1771 he married his second wife, Elizabeth Olive, from whom in three years he obtained a divorce. In 1774 he composed his first production, (an election song,) for which he obtained three guineas. The great Franklin found him a garret writer in London, and was the first person who advised him to come to this country. In Philadelphia, under the auspices of such men as Rush, Franklin and others, he prepared and published his "Common Sense;" a work which appears to have been well-timed, and calculated to rouse the enthusiasm of the brave asserters of independence. As a work of merit, it was well suited to the times in which it was first published; but, as his own biographer remarks, "it is defective in arrangement, inelegant in diction, with a few exceptions showing little profundity of argument, no facility of remark, no extent of research, and no classical allusion, and cannot be appealed to as authority on government." Its popularity was owing entirely to the critical juncture of the times.

He afterwards published his "Crisis." In 1777 he was elected secretary to the Committee of Foreign Affairs, from which office he was dismissed, in 1779, for a scandalous breach of trust; and this was decreed by the assembled wisdom of the States. About this period, the State of New York presented the farm which he afterwards occupied.

In 1787 he formed the design of producing a revolution in England, his native country. At this time the infidels of France were ripening their plots in Paris; Paine joined with them, and viewed with rapture the rising revolution in England. His infidel and revolutionary principles were opposed by the powerful and eloquent Burke, who, with other noble-minded coadjutors, crushed the revolution in that country, and sentenced Paine as an outlaw.



To promote the "revolution of the world,"<sup>a</sup> he published his "Age of Reason," well entitled a complete piece of ribaldry.

As a companion of the blood-thirsty Robespierre, we find him next sitting on the trial of the innocent Louis.

He was subsequently confined in the dungeons of Paris, where he had a narrow escape of his life.<sup>b</sup>

In 1796 he published his letter to General Washington, which contained a causeless, ungrateful, virulent and useless attack on one of the best of men.

Shortly after this, he was expelled from the society of his fellow infidels, and a second time committed to prison. He now deemed it expedient to fly to America, taking under his charge a lady named Madame Bonneville, and her three sons. Soon after his arrival in New York, we find him in possession of the farm at New Rochelle. A portion of the house in which he lived (at this period) is still standing: here he had a small room, the furniture of which embraced a miserable straw bed, deal table a chair, *Bible*, and jug of spirituous liquors. His breakfast table is thus described by an eye witness (Mr. Carver): "The table-cloth was composed of newspapers! on it was a tea-pot, some coarse brown sugar, part of a rye loaf, and quarter of a pound of butter."<sup>c</sup>

As to Tom Paine's drunkenness, which has been stoutly denied, we have the following proof.

A writer in one of the daily papers said of Paine's habits:

"The stories of his drunkenness and licentiousness are the wicked invention of the clergy whose path he has dared to cross, and who only refrain from practicing the abominable cruelties of past ages upon those who differ from them—not because of want of will, but because their strength is shorn."

---

<sup>a</sup> The "Revolution of the World" was a toast given by Paine at a public meeting in London.

<sup>b</sup> One evening (says Grant Thorburn) Mr. Paine related to me the following anecdote. He said it was in the reign of Robespierre, when every republican that the monster could get in his power was cut down by the knife of the guillotine. Paine was in the dungeon, and his name was on the list, with twenty-four others, ordered for execution next morning. It was customary for the clerk of the tribunal to go through the cells at night, and put a cross with chalk on the back of the door of such as were to be guillotined. In the morning, when the executioner came with his gaard, wherever they found a chalk, the victim was brought forth. There was a long passage in the cellar of this Bastille, having a row of cells on each side containing the prisoners; the passage was secured at each end, but the doors of the cells were left open through the day, and the prisoners stepped into one another's rooms to converse. Paine had gone into the next cell, and left his own door open back to the wall, thus having the door inside out. Just then came the chalers, and probably being drunk, crossed the inside of Paine's door. Next morning, when the guard came with an order to bring out twenty-four, and finding only twenty-three chalks, (Paine being in bed and the door shut,) they took a prisoner from the further end of the passage, and thus made up the number; so Mr. Paine escaped. Before the mistake was discovered, or about forty-eight hours after, a stronger party than Robespierre's cut off his head and about thirty of his associates—so Paine was set at liberty; and being afraid to trust his head among the good republicans for whom he had written so much, he made the best of his way to this country."—*Reminiscences of Grant Thorburn.*

<sup>c</sup> Abridged from Chatham's Life of Paine.

The Rev. J. D. Wickham, D.D., replies to this statement as follows :

"The writer of this communication was more than fifty years ago a resident of New Rochelle, N. Y., where the body of Paine was buried. His grave was in one corner of a farm, which, having being confiscated as the property of a Tory during the Revolutionary War, had been presented to Paine by the State of New York for his patriotic service in aid of the Revolution. A monument, erected by friendly hands, marked the place of burial. His bones had not then been removed, as they afterwards were, to England, for no good object on the part of those who under cover of the night disinterred, boxed, and carried them away. On this farm he spent his latter days with a solitary female attendant. I have heard the physician who visited him describe the condition in which he was accustomed to find his patient, and to which his vicious habits, and especially his habitual drunkenness, had reduced him. This he represented as revolting to his sensibilities, making even his necessary calls to prescribe for his relief exceedingly unwelcome and repulsive. This physician was an esteemed elder in the church of which I was at that time pastor, highly regarded not only for skill in his profession, but as a man of sound judgment and unimpeachable veracity. He has been dead many years. But the name of Matson Smith, M.D., is still held in honored remembrance by all who knew him. His grandson, Rev. Matson Meier Smith, D.D., it is stated, is about to remove from Hartford, Ct., to Philadelphia, to be a professor in the Episcopal Divinity School. The animus of the article, which the above statement is intended to contradict, appears plainly in the article itself. While the audacity of its aspersions forbids the hope that the eulogist himself will acknowledge his error, it is proper that others, who might else be misled by it, should understand that the real motive to this perversion of the facts of history must have been hatred of Christianity, and especially of its ministers, the clergy of all denominations."<sup>a</sup>

The subsequent career of this unfortunate man is well known. On the 8th of June, 1809, Thomas Paine breathed his last, aged seventy-two years and five months. Shortly after his decease his body was brought up from New York, in a hearse used for carrying the dead to Potter's Field, a white man drove the vehicle, accompanied by a negro to dig the grave. The body was interred on the farm near the site of the present monument. The following lines are said to have been uttered impromptu by an old colored man named Jack Hull over the remains of the notorious Thomas Paine, author of "The Rights of Man" and "Common Sense," at the open grave :

"Poor Tom Paine ! here he lies,  
Nobody laughs and nobody cries,  
Where he's gone and how he fares,  
Nobody knows and nobody cares."

In 1819 the remains of Paine were disinterred by William Cobbett,

<sup>a</sup> *New York Observer.*

and conveyed to England. Among the household goods and chattels of the late William Cobbett, was found *a box of bones*.

The site of his grave has been recently purchased by his friends, and a handsome marble monument erected upon it. On the side facing the road is a medallion likeness, beneath which is inscribed :

THOMAS PAINE,

author of

"COMMON SENSE."

In the northern part of this town is situated the hamlet of Upper Rochelle containing a Methodist church, a school house, two stores and several dwellings. The high grounds in its vicinity command extensive prospects of the surrounding country and of the Sound. At Cooper's Corners in this part of the town stands St. John's church, Wilmot, erected in 1860, on land given by Daniel T. Cox at a cost of \$1100. At first it was a chapel of ease to Trinity church, New Rochelle. The following gentlemen were trustees, John Soulice, Clarke Davis and Townsend Cox, Jr. The first election for wardens and vestrymen took place on the 8th day of December, 1860; Townsend Cox and Charles F. Alvord, wardens; John Soulice, Clarke Davis, Nicholas Stephens, James F. Cox, Andrew D. Archer, William H. Underhill, William Cornell and Charles V. Morgan, vestrymen. The Rev. John W. Moore was called as officiating minister. The bell, weighing 306 pounds, was presented by Mr. Townsend of New York City.

#### LIST OF MINISTERS AND RECTORS OF ST. JOHN'S CHURCH, WILMOT.

NAME,	CALLED,	RESIGNED,	NO. OF YEARS.
JOHN W. MOORE, of Min.	Feb. 1860.	— —	1
JOHN W. MOORE, Rector.	Jan. 16, 1861.	May, 1861.	6 mos.
DAVID DOREMUS, "	May 4, 1861.	May 27, 1864.	4
SAMUEL D. DENNISON, O.M.	June 1, 1864.	April, 1865.	1
ANGUS M. IVES.	" April, 1865.	Deceased, April, 1880.	

St. John's church was formally united with the Diocesan Convention first Wednesday in November, 1861, and was consecrated November 17, 1861. In the possession of George I. Davis, of Upper Rochelle, is a curious painting in oils, representing Major John André "waiting his doom when in prison." This picture formerly belonged to Mr. Ball, residing in Bethany, Conn., whose daughter Statira married Mr. Truman Davis. The picture represents André seated in a chair in military costume, his left hand reclining, the right resting on a small round

table, upon which lies an ink-stand ; the hair is of a dark-brown color, tied up with a queue ; in the back-ground is represented a river, bordered by hills ; a figure on horse-back (supposed to be Washington) riding among the tents. In the possession of Mr. Davis is a letter written by General Washington, and his picture, together with a lock of his hair. We give the letter entire.

STATE OF NEW YORK, August 10th, 1782.

*Gentlemen:—*

The Masonick ornaments which accompanied your Brotherly address of the 23d of January last, though elegant in themselves, were rendered more valuable by the flattering sentiments and affectionate manner in which they were presented.

If my endeavors to avert the evil with which this Country was threatened by a deliberate plan of Tyranny, should be crowned with the success that is wished, the praise is due to the *Grand Architect* of the Universe ; who did not see fit to suffer his superstructures and justice to be subjected to the Ambition of the Princes of this World—or the rod of oppression, in the hands of any person upon Earth.

For your affectionate views, permit me to be grateful ; and offer mine for true brothers in all parts of the world ; and to assure you of the sincerity with which I am

Yrs,

Messrs. WATSON & COSSON,  
East of Nantes.

GO. WASHINGTON.

The picture has on the reverse the following lines:—

The god-like

WASHINGTON,

Died 14th December, 1799.

*All America in tears.*

“The within is the best likeness I have seen. The hair is off his own head—this will increase its value with time. It is my earnest request this may be preserved to succeeding generations. The hair was presented to me by Major Billings, Com. army.  
E. WATSON.”

CERTIFICATE.

“This may certify that the within hair was enclosed by General Washington in a letter to me, dated Newburgh, June 13, as his own hair.

“Jan. 1, 1810.

AND'W BILLINGS.”

From the commencement of the Revolutionary war, New Rochelle appears to have suffered considerably from the incursions of the enemy and their emissaries. On the 18th of October, 1776, Lord Howe, the British commander, took post in the village ; General Washington occupying the intermediate heights between the two rivers. Whilst in New Rochelle, the enemy were joined by the second division of Germans, under the command of General Knyphausen, and by an incomplete



regiment of cavalry from Ireland, some of whom had been captured on their passage.

The Scotch Highland Battalion occupied the heights of New Rochelle. From this place both armies moved toward White Plains, on the 25th of October, 1776. Upon the 29th of January, 1777, General Wooster's division was ordered to New Rochelle.<sup>b</sup> At the east end of the village, a severe skirmish took place between a body of American light horse, under Colonel Moyland, and the Queen's Rangers, commanded by Lieut. Colonel Simcoe.<sup>c</sup> In this affair, Colonel Moyland greatly distinguished himself by beating off the enemy, (who far outnumbered him,) and making good his retreat to Horse Neck.

The lands of this town are, in general, level and stony; but the soil is very productive, and much of it is a wet loam or clay, good for grass. The soil is also very propitious to the cultivation of fruit trees of all kinds. Most of its unimproved lands are covered with wood and timber: these lie principally on the east and west sides of the town. On the highlands grow chestnut, oak and hickory; on the lower grounds—ash, birch, maple, elm, pine and hemlock, &c. It is also sufficiently watered by springs and brooks. New Rochelle furnishes an extensive list of minerals. Among the most important may be mentioned quartz, drusy, calcedony, agate, jasper, serpentine of almost every variety, and chromate of iron. Hydrate of magnesia and carbonate of magnesia, compact and crystalline, are also found here, according to Mr. Mather.<sup>d</sup> There are several islands in the Sound attached to this town; among others may be enumerated Goat, Maskett's, Hurtleberry, Hewlet's, Locust, Pea and Vacluse Islands.

---

<sup>a</sup> Marshall's Life of Washington, vol. i: p. 111.

<sup>b</sup> Heath's Mem. 113.

<sup>c</sup> Subsequently Governor-General of Canada.

<sup>d</sup> See Geological Survey of N. Y. 1840.

# THE TOWN OF NORTH CASTLE.

---

The township of North Castle is situated six miles North of White Plains, thirty-six from New York, and one hundred and twenty-nine from Albany—bounded North by New Castle and Bedford, East by Poundridge, South-easterly by the State of Connecticut and the town of Harrison, and West by Mount Pleasant. The tradition is that the town acquired its present name from an Indian palisaded fort or castle that once stood near the residence of Benjamin A. Birdsall a short distance south from the village of Armonk. By the Indians it was emphatically styled “Wampus’s Land,” while that portion of the town situated east of the Byram River was called by the first white settlers the “White Fields,”—a name derived from the white Balsam, (*Gnaphalium Margaret-accum* of Linnæus.) The whole town (including New Castle) is frequently denominated in the colonial records, the “Liberty of North Castle.” The present township was organized on the 7th of March, 1788.<sup>a</sup>

From the general tenor of the Indian grant made to Nathaniel Turner of Quinnepeac (New Haven) in 1640, we infer, that the greater part of the lands originally belonged to the Indian sachems, Ponus and Wassucsee. At this early period, however, the Indians were in the habit of making repeated and almost unlimited grants of land into the “wilderness,” as they termed the interior of the country. Thus, we have Shana-sockwell’s grant to the people of Rye in 1660, which extended twelve miles north of the Sound; also the same year, the Indian sale to John Richbell, of Mamaroneck, running twenty miles north of the Sound. In 1695 the lands west of the Byram appear to have belonged to the Sachems—Wampus, Cornelius, Coharnitt, and others; while the territory west of

---

<sup>a</sup> Laws of New York. New Castle was set off from North Castle in 1791.

the Mehanas River, and south of Catonah's land, (Bedford,) was in a peculiar manner the domains of Serrinqua, or Sorringoe.

The principal Indian village in this town was situated upon the northern bank of Rye Pond. On ploughing the ground (in this vicinity) a few years ago, extensive "*beds of clam shells*" were discovered beneath the soil. These, together with Indian utensils found there, prove this was a favorite place of resort. From this spot are some charming views, both of the pond and surrounding hills. There are also some vestiges of Indian villages on the banks of the Armonck (Byram Lake.) A variety of Indian weapons—such as Indian anchors, manufactured of stone, and large pestles, axes, and arrow heads of the same material, have been likewise found in this neighborhood.

The Indian burying ground is situated near Wampus Pond.<sup>a</sup> In the south-east angle of the town is a beautiful hill, generally known by the name of Mount Misery,<sup>b</sup> which acquired its present appellation from the fact that a large body of Indians were surprised and cut to pieces here by the Huguenots, in retaliation for a descent upon New Rochelle.

From the summit of this mount, (which is between two and three hundred feet above the valley,) on a clear day, may be seen the distant mountains beyond the Hudson, the hills of North Castle and Greenburgh, the village of White Plains, the country bordering the Sound as far as the eye can stretch, and the Bronx meandering through a rich and fertile valley—the *tout ensemble* forming a scene truly beautiful and romantic. On the brow of the hill are the remains of a small fortification.

We have already shown that the Indian grant of 1640 embraced a large proportion (perhaps the whole) of the present town. Some of these lands must have subsequently reverted to the aborigines; for in 1660 we find the Indians again releasing them to John Richbell, of Mamaroneck. Upon the 19th of October, 1696, Caleb Heathcote obtained a further release from the Indian sachems, Wampus, Patthunck, and others, "of all that tract of land situate, lying and being in the County of Westchester, &c.; bounded north by Croton River, easterly with Byram River and Bedford line, northerly by the land of John Harrison and his associates, and the line stretching to Byram River aforesaid, and westerly by the land of Frederick Philipse."<sup>c</sup> The above sale included the west patent of North Castle. Caleb Heathcote had previously obtained a patent right from Mrs. Anne Richbell to purchase lands "which were already included in her husband's deed of 1660."

---

<sup>a</sup> Testimony of Mr. Sands.

<sup>b</sup> Testimony of Mr. Merritt in 1826.

<sup>c</sup> See New Castle for Indian deed.

Upon the 21st of May, 1696, John Brundage "made application for himself and Richard Griffen, to purchase 100 acres of vacant land in the County of Westchester, on Byram River, near fourteen miles from the Sound, for which they desire a patent."<sup>a</sup>

The second sale to Heathcote and others included a portion of the former purchase.

"Witness these presents, we Serrinqua, Quarrarequa, Wyapera and Patthunk, Indian proprietors, in consideration of a certain sum of money to us in hand paid, at or before ensealing and delivering of these presents, by Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Captain Joseph Theal, Lieutenant John Horton, and Mr. Joseph Purdy, of Mamaroneck and Rye, have bargained and sold, and do by these presents bargain, sell and alienate unto the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, and Joseph Purdy, their heirs and assigns for ever, a certain parcel and tract of land, bounded as followeth—southerly by Byram River, northerly to the north-west corner of a great swamp, commonly called the Round Swamp,<sup>b</sup> thence a south-westerly line to Rye great pond, and bounded by the said pond westerly and so runs to Harrison's great marked tree, to have and to hold the above mentioned tract of land to the said Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, and Joseph Purdy, their heirs and assigns for ever; and it shall and may be lawful for the said Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, and Joseph Purdy, their heirs and assigns, at all times thenceforward, to have, use, occupy and enjoy the above mentioned premises, without any lett, hindrance, or molestation, from us the said Serrinqua, Quarrarequash, Wyapera, Patthunk, their heirs and assigns for ever, or from any by, for, or under them, in witness whereof the said Serrinqua, Quarrarequash, Wyapera, Patthunk, have hereunto set their hands and seals, this eleventh day of June, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and one. Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of us,

SOPHIA HORTON,  
her X mark,

THOMAS REPPERSON,  
WARRATTINS,  
his Y mark,

COCK COCKTIMUS,<sup>c</sup>  
his N mark.

SERRINQUA,  
his O mark

QUARRAREQUASA,  
his C mark,

WYAPERA,  
his W mark.

Upon the 4th of July, 1701, occurs the following license :

"I underwritten do give free liberty so far as it lyes in my power, (by virtue of a grant to me from Colonel Benjamin Fletcher, late Governor of New York,) unto Robert Lockhard, Richard Scofield, Nathaniel Sellick and Gershom Lockhard, to purchase of the Indian proprietors, the lands hereafter mentioned from Mehanas River to Byram River, and so run northward three miles into ye woods,

<sup>a</sup> Indian deeds warrant for survey. Albany, Lib. i. 44. Daniel Griffen, of Greenwich town, a descendant of the above family still resides in the neighborhood.

<sup>b</sup> Supposed Tamaruck swamp in the north-west corner of this town.—EDITOR.

<sup>c</sup> Cockarouse was a title of honor among the Algonquin Indians.



upon Byram River, and one mile into ye woods, on the Mehanas River, provided it does not injure the right of Bedford or Greenwich, nor is within my patent right from Mrs. Ann Richbell. Witness my hand, **CALEB HEATHCOTE.**

Mamaroneck, July 4th, 1701.

On the same day the Indians conveyed to Col. Caleb Heathcote, Capt. James Mott, Robert Lockhard, Gershom Lockhard, Jonathan Lockhard, Nathaniel Sellick, Richard Scofield, Gershom Lockhard, Gershom's son, and Henry Disbrow, of the one part, and Seringoe, Raresquash, Washpaken, Ramhone and Packanain on the other part, witnesseth, that the said Serringoe, Raresquash, Washpaken, Ramhone and Packanain, in consideration of a certain sum of good and lawful money to them in hand paid, at the ensealing and delivery of these presents, the receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge, and themselves therewith to be fully satisfied, contented and paid, and thereof and therefrom do acquit, exonerate and discharge the said Col. Caleb Heathcote, Captain James Mott, &c., their heirs, executors, &c., have given, granted, bargained, sold, enfeoffed, released and confirmed, &c., unto the said Col. Caleb Heathcote, Captain James Mott, &c.

"A certain parcel or tract of land, bounded as followeth, to begin at Byram River at the colony line, and so to run to Mehanas River as said line goes, running northerly on Mehanas River, as the river goes, a mile into the woods, and from the colony line on Byram River, three miles northerly as the river runs into the woods, and from the head of said line to the head of the other line aforementioned, to have and to hold the before recited parcel or tract of land, with all and every of its appurtenances, unto the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, Captain James Mott, &c., &c., their heirs and assigns for ever, &c., &c. In witness whereof, we the said Serringoe, Raresquash, Washpackin, Ramhone and Packanain, have hereunto put our hands and seals, the 4th day of July, in the year of our Lord, 1701.<sup>a</sup> Signed and delivered in presence of us,

BENJAMIN DISBROW,

BENJAMIN COLLIER,

COHORNET,

WRALICUS,

TOPORONE,

KINHATEM,

WAPATONG,

RARATTA,

MEEKRUM,

The mark of

○

SERRINGOE,

The mark of

✕

RARESQUASH,

The mark of

▷

WASHPACKIN,

The mark of

└

RAMHONE;

The mark of

PACKANAIN.

<sup>a</sup> The above sale embraced that tract of land called the White Fields.

By a deed bearing date the 5th of July, 1701, Serringoe, Raresquash, Packanain and Ramhone conveyed to Col. Caleb Heathcote of Mamaroneck, gentleman, Joseph Theal and Lieutenants John Horton and Joseph Purdy of Rye.

"All that tract of land bounded southerly by colony line, easterly by Mehanas river, northerly by Bedford line, and marked trees to Mehanas river, and southerly as said river goes against the stream, by ye head of the river, and so by colony line, &c."

Signed and sealed in the presence of us,

SARAH UNDERHILL,  
BENJAMIN COLLIER.

The mark of  
X  
WASHPAKEN.

The mark of  
V  
TAPORANECAM.

The mark of  
L  
COHORNET.<sup>a</sup>

This Indian purchase was subsequently confirmed by royal letters patent to Col. Caleb Heathcote, and his twelve associates, on the 17th of February, 1701-2; to be held of the king, his heirs and successors, in free and common soccage. The patentees yielding and paying therefor yearly, on the Feast day of the Nativity of our Blessed Lord, the annual rent of one pound, seven shillings and sixpence, current money of New York, &c.

#### THE MIDDLE PATENT OF NORTH CASTLE.

"William the Third, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c., to all to whom these presents shall come or may concern, sendeth greeting: Whereas our loving subjects, Col. Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Matthew Clarkson, Lancaster Sims, Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, John Chollwell, Robert Lurting and Barne Cosens, have, by their petition, presented unto our trusty and well beloved John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieut. Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, &c., and prayed our grant and confirmation of a certain tract of land in the county of Westchester, bounded southerly by the colony line of Connecticut, easterly by Mahanas river, northerly by Bedford line and marked trees to Mahanas river again, and southerly as the said river goes against the stream to ye head of the said river, and so to the said colony line, which said tract of land, on the 5th day of July last past, was by our said Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton and Joseph Purdy, &c., purchased of the native proprietors, and containing within the limits aforesaid, by estimation, about 1,500 acres of profitable land, besides wastes and wood lands, which reasonable request, we being willing to grant, *know ye*, that of our especial

<sup>a</sup> Indian deeds, warrant of survey. Alb. Rec. Lib. i., 94.

grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents doe for us, our heirs and successors, give, grant, ratify and confirm unto our said loving subjects, Col. Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theal, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Robert Walters, Leigh Atwood, Matthew Clarkson, Lancaster Sims, Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, John Chollwell, Robert Lurting and Barne Cosens, all the afore-recited tract of land within the county of Westchester, and within the limits and bounds aforesaid, together with all and singular the woods, underwoods, trees, timber, feedings, pastures, meadows, marshes, swamps, ponds, pools, waters, water-courses, rivers, rivulets, runs, brooks, streams, fishing, fowling, hunting, hawking, &c., mines, minerals, &c., (silver and gold mines excepted,) and all other profits, benefits, privileges, liberties, advantages, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever to the aforesaid tract of land, within the limits and bounds aforesaid, belonging or in any way or ways appertaining unto them, the said Col. Caleb Heathcote, &c., &c., their heirs and assigns, to the only proper use, benefit and behoof of him, the said Colonel Caleb Heathcote, &c., &c., their heirs and assigns forever, to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, in free and common soccage as of our manor of East Greenwich, in our county of Kent, within our realm of England, yielding, rendering and paying therefor yearly and every year, on the Feast day of the nativity of our Blessed Saviour, the annual yearly rent of one pound, seven shillings and sixpence, current money of New York, in lieu and stead of all other rents, dues, duties, services and demands whatsoever. In testimony whereof, we have caused the great seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed. Witness, John Nanfan, Esq., our Lieutenant Governor and Commander-in-chief of our Province of New York and territories depending thereon in America, and Vice-Admiral of the same, at our fort in New York, this 17th day of February, 1701-2, and in the 14th year of our reign."<sup>a</sup>

JOHN NANFAN."

The above grant embraced the eastern portion of what is still known as the "Middle Patent" of North Castle, and was so named because situated between the colony line of Connecticut and the patent of Bedford.

Upon the first of April, 1705, the Indian proprietors, Patthunck, Sr., Panridge and Wapeto Patthunck, Jr., absolute lords of a tract of land "lying situate in Westchester County upon the northermost side of the great pond called Rye pond, have sold, for a sum of money and other goods,

"All the land above mentioned, from the said north-west side of said pond, running west northerly three miles, more or less, and from thence running north-easterly four miles, more or less, on a run or river called Bruncks' river, and from thence east-northerly three English miles, more or less, and then from thence runs south-westerly to the place from whence it began, taking in and including a small pond called Cranberry pond, unto John Clapp, his heirs, executors, administrators, &c., reserving three hundred acres for our own use, for the

<sup>a</sup> Alb. Rec. Book of Patents No. vii., 224.

sum of £10, that is to say, four pieces of eight, or money, and the other £8 10s. in such goods as are agreed upon by said parties."<sup>a</sup>

Signed, sealed, and delivered in

presence of us,

ROGER THORYON,

The mark of

⌘

DANIEL HEADLEY.

The mark of

CO

PATTHUNCK, SR.

The mark of

⌘

PANRIDGE.

The mark of

△

WAPETO PATTHUNCK, JR.,  
and younger PATTHUNCK

○

his mark,

On the 28th of March, 1705, the Indian proprietors, Serringoe, Rare-squash and Paquerekin, (for and in consideration of a valuable consideration in hand paid,) release to George Booth and his heirs, &c.

"A certain tract of land in Westchester county, bounded south by a certain tract of land formerly sold by said Serringoe, &c., to Richard Schofield,<sup>b</sup> and on the west by Byram pond, on the North by Catonah's land, and on the east by Mahanas river," &c.

Signed, sealed, and delivered in

presence of us,

RICHARD SCHOFIELD,

JOSEPH SEELY,

The mark of

○

SERRINGOE.

The mark of

⌘

RARESQUASH.

The mark of

△

The mark of

C

PAQUEEKEIN.

RAM OTES WAPETO TAPAWMAK.

The mark of

⌘

JOHN COAK MANGAWUM.

A further release from the Indian proprietors, Serringoe, Magerack, Pawenack, Sackema, Wigzac, Shickham, Wasse, Waewag, Kemego, Warrea Sekis, and Geshegeopogh, occurs on the 14th of July, 1705, to George Booth, John Bond, Andreis Meyer and John Van Horne, &c., viz. : "Of all the land, swamp and meadow that the said Indians have in Westchester County, &c." From this time we hear no more of the aboriginal proprietors of North Castle.

<sup>a</sup> Indian deeds, warrant of survey, Alb. Rec. Lib. i., 130. See Harrison.

<sup>b</sup> See Indian sale to Caleb Heathcote and others on the 1st of July, 1701. Richard Schofield was one of the proprietors of the Middle Patent.



The eastern portion of the "Middle Patent" was confirmed by royal letters patent to Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson and others on the 25th day of September, 1708. The patentees yielding and paying therefor yearly to the King and heirs at the Custom-house in New York, to the collector, at or upon the feast day of the Nativity of St. John the Baptist, the yearly rent of £2 10s current money of the Province.

"Anne, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c., To all to whom this shall come, sendeth greeting: Whereas by our letters patent bearing date the 2d day of March, 1705,<sup>a</sup> in the fourth year of our reign, we have given, granted, ratified and confirmed unto our loving subjects, Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson, George Booth, William Anderson, William Bond, John Persor, Daniel Clarke, John Clapp and Lewis Perant, all that certain tract or parcel of land in the County of Westchester, beginning at a certain small brook called Cohamong brook<sup>b</sup> where the said brook empties itself into Mehanus River, and runs thence up the said river Mehanus southerly to the head thereof, to a beech tree standing by a small spring, and marked with the letters T. M., and thence south to the colony line of Connecticut, which runs in the rear of the town of Greenwich and Horseneck, and so by the said line as it runs westerly to Byram River, thence by the river (including the said river) to the head thereof, to two certain white ash trees standing on the north end of a certain bog meadow, marked with three letters, D. G., P. C., T. C., and thence westerly in a direct line to the head of Cohamong brook as it runs to the place where it begun, bounded west by Byram River, east by Mehanus River, north by Bedford line and Cohamong brook, and south by colony line, together with all the woods, underwoods, &c., &c. And whereas said Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson, &c., &c., by their indenture of lease and release bearing date the 18th and 19th days of September, in the fifth year of our reign, and for considerations therein mentioned, did grant and convey unto Thomas Wenham, Esq., and to his heirs and assigns, one tenth part of the said premises. And whereas the said Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson, George Booth, William Anderson, William Bond, John Persor, Daniel Clarke, John Clapp, Lewis Perant and Thomas Wenham, have since by their petition presented to our right trusty and well beloved cousin, Edward Viscount Cornbury, captain-general and governor-in-chief, in and over our province of New York and territories thereon depending in America, and vice-admiral of the same, &c., in council therein, setting forth that having made some improvements on the said lands, and fearing some disputes may arise hereafter what shall be esteemed a settlement, &c., the which petition wee being minded to grant, *know yee*, that for diverse considerations us thereunto moving of our special grace, &c., wee have given, granted, released, ratified and confirmed, and in and by this present, for ourselves, our heirs and successors, do give, grant, release, ratify and confirm unto the said Anne Bridges, Roger Mompesson, &c., &c., within the bounds and limits above in our said recited letters patent, &c., &c., in ten equal parts to be divided, &c., to be holden of us, our heirs and successors, &c., in free and common soc-

<sup>a</sup> See Alb. Rec. Book of Patents, Lib. vii. 341.

<sup>b</sup> Cohamong brook empties into the west side of Mehanus River.

cage, as of our manor of East Greenwich, in our county of Kent, within our realme of England, yielding, rendering, and paying therefor, yearly and every year henceforward, and unto our heirs, at our custom-house at New York to our collector or receiver general then for the time being, at or upon the feast day of the nativity of St. John the Baptist, the yearly rent or sum of £2 10s. current money of the province of New York, &c., this 25th day of September, in the seventh year of our reign, A.D. 1708.<sup>a</sup> EDWARD CORNBURY."

This town also included a large portion of "*Fanconiers*" or the "*West Patent*" granted by the Crown in 1701-2 to Robert Walters and others.

Upon the 25th day of February, 1701, Robert Walters and his associates purchased of the native Indian Proprietors, Catonah, Wakemane and Weewanessege, a certain tract of land in the County of Westchester, bounded to the south by the East Division line between the province of New York and the colony of Connecticut; and on the east by the other Division Line, and so along the said line until it meet with the Patent of Adolph Philips; and so along his Southern Boundaries till it meet the Patent of the Manor of Cortlandt, and from thence by a Line that shall run upon a direct Course until it meet with the end of the first Easterly Line of twenty Miles of the said Manor of Cortlandt; and from thence along the said Line Westerly until it meet with the Patent granted to Robert Walter and others; then southerly along the said Patent, until it meet with the Bounds of the Township of Bedford, and thence along the said Bounds till it meet with the Patent granted to Col. Caleb Heathcote and others; and along the bounds of the said Patent unto the Colony line;" "as also a small Tract of Land beginning Westerly at a great Rock on the Westernmost side at the Southernmost End of a Ridge known by the name of Ruhbel or Horse Ridge; and from thence North-West and by North to Bronckx River, Easterly, beginning at a marked Tree at the Easternmost side on the Southernmost end of the said Ridge; and thence North to Bronckx River; which Tract of Land was by the said Caleb Heathcote purchased of the native Indian Proprietors; the said two Tracts containing by Estimation about 62,000 acres of profitable land."

William the Third, by his Letters Patent, under the Great Seal of the Colony of New York, bearing date the second day of March, in the 14th year of his reign (1701) did grant and confirm unto Robert Walters, John Cholwell, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, Barne Cosens, Lancaster Symes, Matthew Clarkson, Robert Lurting, Peter Matthews and Caleb Heathcote, the two before-mentioned tracts of land; the patentees yielding and paying therefor to the King, his heirs and successors, or governors appointed by him, on the Feast day of the Nativity of our Blessed Lord, the annual quit-rent of seven pounds, fifteen shillings.

<sup>a</sup> Book of Pat. Alb. No. vii. 191, compared with original in possession of David W. Smith Kensico.

This grant was subsequently known as the "East Patent," and included not only a small portion on the eastern side of this town, but the township of Poundridge and part of Lewisboro.<sup>a</sup>

The following notice of a survey and balloting for lots and allotments of the before mentioned tracts of land, in the "East Patent," occurs in a public newspaper of June, 1766 :—

"And, whereas, we, the subscribers, in pursuance of a certain act of the Lieutenant Governor, the Council, and General Assembly of this Colony, entitled, An Act for the more effectual collecting of His Majesty's Quit-Rents in the Colony of New York, and for partition of Lands in order thereto, have lately made a survey of the first above recited Tract of Land. And we do hereby give Notice, that true Maps and Field Books of the Survey of the said Tract, and of the Allotments made, specifying the Bounds of every Lot; on which Maps the Lots are laid down and numbered, and the Number of Acres in every Lot; and the said Maps and Field Books, signed by us, and by Nathaniel Merritt, our Surveyor, are filed; one of the said Maps and Field Books in the Office of the Clerk of the County of Westchester, and the other in the Secretary's Office in the City of New York. And we do hereby appoint Thursday, the 7th of August next, at the City Hall of New York, to be the Day and Place for Balloting for the said Lots and Allotments; and do require all Persons interested, then and there to attend, and to see the several Allotments Balloted for. Given under our hands the 23d day of June, 1766.

CHARLES CLINTON, ) Surviving  
JONATHAN BROWN, ) Commissioners."

On the 29th day of March, 1701, Samuel Quinby, of the West Patent of North Castle, for the sum of three pounds, sold Benjamin Smith, of the said Patent, "all that certain piece of land containing three quarters of an acre, or thereabouts, bounded as followeth: Beginning at the brook on the west side of the high ridge, near the house where Nathaniel Smith lives, and running along the west side of the road northward to a heap of stones, thence eastward and southward along the partition fence, and as the same stands to the said brook, then up said brook to where it began to have and to hold," &c.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 28th day of September, 1725, Richard Ogden, of Rye, for the sum of six pounds, sold to Russell Wood, of North Castle, "a parcel of land," that is to say, "twelve acres of undivided land, &c., within a tract of land commonly called Ffanconier's Purchase, to be laid out to my right when ye said lands shall be divided," &c.<sup>c</sup>

On the 25th day of October, 1737, Thomas Hutchings, and Penelope, his wife, of North Castle, for the sum of £262 conveyed to Benjamin Smith, of the same place, "a certain tract or parcel of land situate, ly-

<sup>a</sup> See Poundridge.

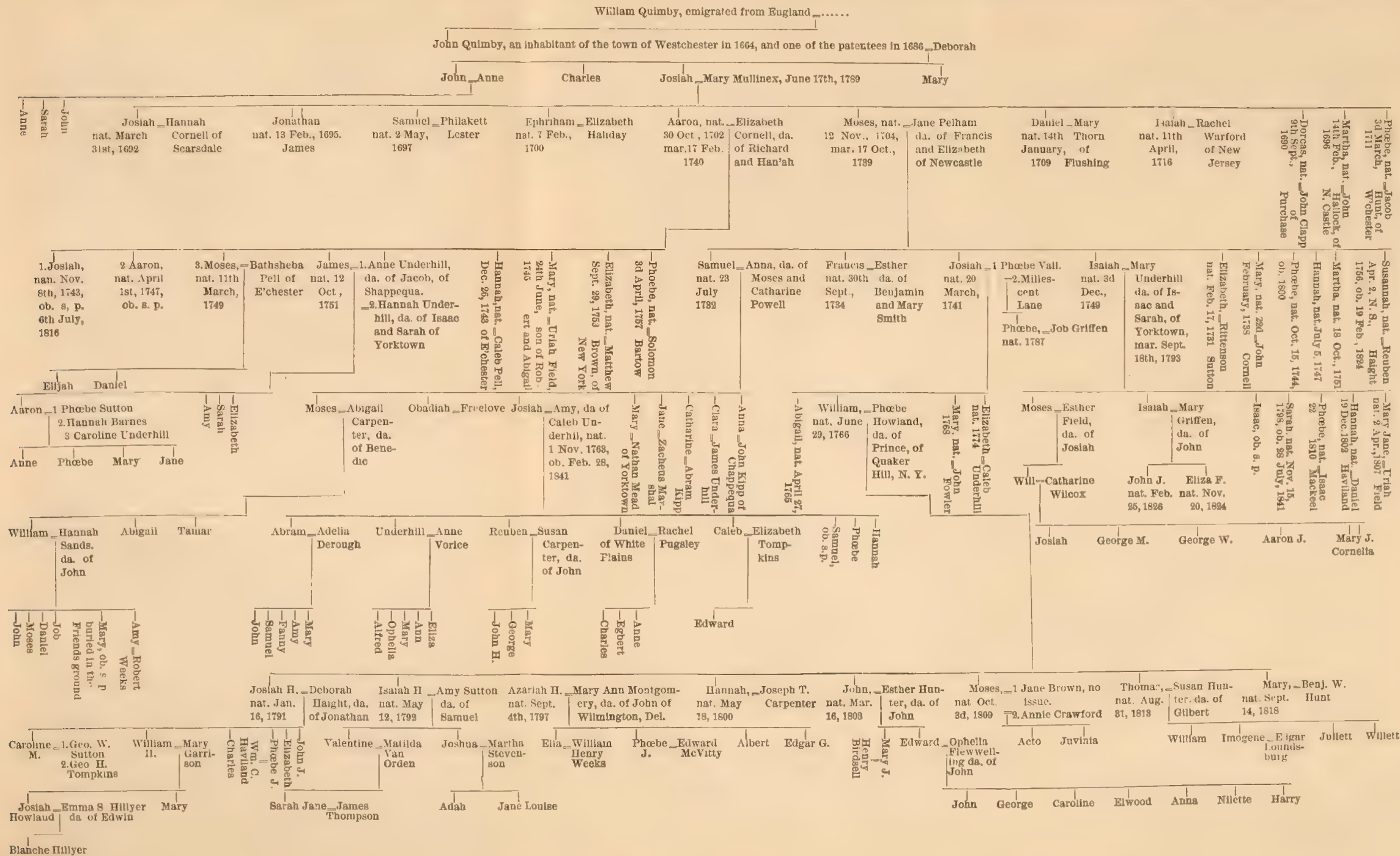
<sup>b</sup> Copied from original in possession of David W. Smith.

<sup>c</sup> Copied from original in possession of David W. Smith, Esq., of Kensico.



PEDIGREE OF QUIMBY, OF NORTHCAST.

**Arms:**—Or, on a bend sa. three trefoils slipped, ar. **Crest:**—A cubit arm, erect, vested, or, with three slashes in the sleeve, in the hand ppr. a cimetar, hilted of the first, the blade embued in blood.







ing and being on the Great Ridge in Ffanconier's Patent, commonly so called; which tract, or parcel of land I bought of Francis Pelham. It is lying in the County of Westchester in the Province of New York, &c.;" "beginning at a certain heap of stones by the colony line of Connecticut, thence to run by the colony line forty chains to a red oak, marked; or a heap of stones by the said colony line; thence to run northerly a line five and twenty chains by the land of Fauconnier's as yet undivided; thence to run southward of the west forty chains, and thence to run a southerly line five and twenty chains to the first mentioned heap of stones," &c.<sup>a</sup>

On the 9th of March, 1740, Henry Franklin, of Greenwich, Conn., for the sum of £197, sold to Benjamin Smith, of North Castle, "all that one hundred acres of land, situate, lying and being in North Castle aforesaid, within a certain patent commonly known and called by the name of Peter Ffaucniar's & Companies West Patent, &c.; which said hundred acres are lying and situate on a certain ridge commonly known and called by the name of Wampises Ridge; which said right is derived from Josiah Quinby and John Clapp, deceased, as by said deed may appear; and originally derived from Robert Walters, Lancaster Syms, and Ffanconier and others, in companye not yet divided," &c.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the 13th of December, 1761, Edward Burling, of East Chester, and Benjamin Cornwell, of Scarsdale, farmers, for the sum of £430, did grant and sell to Benjamin Smith of the township of North Castle "a right to take up two hundred acres of land in the West Pattent of North Castle commonly called Fauconier's and Companies West Pattent, and that by virtue of a right deriving from John Cholwell who was one of the pattentees in said pattent by a deed from the executrix of the said John Cholwell bearing date the twenty-fourth day of January, 1720. Reviresance thereunto being had may apear unto Josiah Quinby late of Mamaroneck, and from the said Josiah Quinby unto Richard Cornwell by deed bairing date the sixteenth day of June, 1722, and from the said Richard Cornwell to his sons, Edward Burling and Benjamin Cornwell, by deeds bearing date the eighteenth day of May, 1750, which above said right we the said Edward Burling and Benjamin Cornwell doth covenant for ourselves, our heirs, &c., to and with the said Benjamin Smith, his heirs," &c. "Doth sell, and convey, and confirm unto the said Benjamin Smith, his heirs," &c., "a certain possession of land containing two hundred acres, situate in the above said patent, and bounded as foloeth: north, by Joseph Sutton's land; westerly, by

<sup>a</sup> Copied from original in possession of David W. Smith, Esq.

<sup>b</sup> Ditto.

William Cornwell's land ; southerly, by Benjamin Kipp's land ; easterly, by John Brady's land and Joseph Week's land," &c.

On the 10th of November, 1763, Levinus Clarkson, (merchant,) and Anne, his wife, late of the city of Amsterdam, (now, or late, both residing at Voorburgh, near the Hague,) by David Clarkson, of the City of New York, their attorney, granted and released to Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton, for the sum of £1025 "all that one full and equal undivided tenth part of the West Patent, granted 14th of Feb., 1701," &c.; containing in all, about 12,300 acres, &c., in the following manner :—

#### A RELEASE FROM LEVINUS AND ANNE CLARKSON TO BENJAMIN SMITH AND OTHERS.

THIS INDENTURE, made the tenth day of November, in the year of our Lord, one thousand, seven hundred and sixty-three, between Levinus Clarkson, late of the city of Amsterdam, merchant, and Anne Clarkson, late of the same place, spinster, (now, or late, both residing at Voorburgh, near the Hague,) by David Clarkson, of the City of New York, merchant, their attorney of the first part, and Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton of the County of West Chester in the Province of New York, yeomen, and their associates of the second part ; *Whereas*, His most gracious majesty, King William the Third, of glorious memory, by his letters patent under the great seal of the Province of New York, bearing date the fourteenth day of February, in the fourteenth year of his reign, granted unto Robert Waters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Chollwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Syms, Robert Lurting and Barne Cosens, and to their heirs and assigns forever, All that, a certain Tract of Land, in the County of Westchester, bounded northerly by the manor of Cortlandt ; easterly, with Bedford line of three miles square, the White Field and Byram River ; southerly, by the land of John Harrison Rye, line stretching to Byram River aforesaid, and the White Plains ; and westerly by Brunk's River and the manor of Philipsburgh, (excepting out of the bounds aforesaid all the land within Richbell's Patents.) And, *whereas* the said Levinus and Anne Clarkson are entitled to one-tenth part of the lands in and by the said Letters Patent granted ; and *whereas* the said Levinus Clarkson and Anne Clarkson, by their certain Letter, or Power of Attorney under their hands and seals, duly executed, bearing date the ninth day of March, in the year of our Lord, one thousand and seven hundred and fifty-four, made, constituted, ordained and appointed their Nephews, Samuel Hazard and Matthew Clarkson, both of the City of Philadelphia and Province of Pennsylvania, merchants ; and Freeman Clarkson and the said David Clarkson, both of the city of New York, aforesaid, merchants, them, and each of them, their and each of their true, sufficient and lawful attorney and attornies, jointly and severally, for them, and each of them, and in their name or names, to enter and make any entry or entrys into all and singular their and each of their lands, tenements and hereditaments, situate, lying or being in the respective counties of West Chester, Orange and Ulster, in the Province of New York, aforesaid, or elsewhere, and also for them and in their

names, or in the name of either of them, to grant, bargain, sell and convey all or any Part or Parcel of their said Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments aforesaid, to any Person or Persons whatsoever, and to and for such Sum or Sums of money as to their said attornies, jointly or severally, should seem meet and convenient, and to execute good and sufficient Deed or Deeds, Conveyance or Conveyances in the Law for the same, to the Purchaser or Purchasers thereof, with such Covenants and warranties as to their said attornies, jointly or severally, should seem meet and reasonable; thereby ratifying and Confirming all and whatsoever their said attornies jointly or severally should do or cause to be done in the Premises or any Part thereof, by Virtue of the said letter or Power of attorney, as by the said Letter or Power of Attorney. Reference being thereunto had among other things more fully may appear. Now, therefore, *this Indenture Witnesseth* that for and in consideration of the Sum of one thousand and Twenty-Five pounds, lawful money of New York, to the said David Clarkson, attorney for the said Levinus and Anne Clarkson, in hand paid at or before the Ensealing and Delivery of these Presents by the said Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton, in Behalf of themselves and their Associates, the Receipt whereof the said David Clarkson, as attorney for and to the use of the said Levinus and Anne Clarkson, doth hereby acknowledge they, the said Levinus and Anne Clarkson, by the said David Clarkson, their attorney aforesaid, have, and each of them, hath granted, bargained, sold, aliened, released and confirmed, and by these presents do, and each of them, doth grant, bargain, sell, alien, release and confirm unto the said Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton, and their associates, (in their actual Possession now being) and to their heirs and assigns forever, All that one full and equal undivided Tenth part of the said Tract of Land in and by the above in Part recited Letters Patent granted, and all and every, and any other or greater Part, Share or Proportion of the said Levinus Clarkson and Anne Clarkson, or either of them, of, in or to the said Tract of Land, in and by the said Letters Patent granted; and all the Estate, Right, Title, Interest, Trusts, Parts, Shares and Proportions, Claim and Demand whatsoever, both in law and equity, of them, the said Levinus Clarkson and Anne Clarkson, and each of them, of, in and to the said Tract of Land and Premises in the said Letters Patent above mentioned, or intended to be granted, and every Part and Parcel thereof, with the appurtenances, and all Messuages, Houses, Building, Gardens, Orchards, Lands, Meadows, Commons, Pastures, Feedings, Woods, Ways, Waters, Water-courses, Easements, Profits, Commodities, Advantages, Emoluments and Hereditaments whatsoever, to the same Tract of Land belonging or in any Wise appertaining; and the Reversion and Reversions, Remainder and Remainders, Rents and Services of all and singular the said Premises above mentioned, and of every Part and Parcel thereof, with the Appurtenances (excepting and always reserving unto the said Levinus Clarkson, and Anne Clarkson, their Heirs and Assigns forever, all the Estate, Right, Title, Interest, Trusts, Parts, Shares and Proportions of them, the said Levinus Clarkson and Anne Clarkson, and each of them, of, in and to all that Part of the said Tract of Land, being the North-easterly Part thereof, which is now possessed, or claimed, or held by any Person or Persons under Bedford new Purchase, supposed to contain about seven thousand acres, To Have and to Hold all and singular the said one full and equal undivided Tenth Part, and all and every, and any other or greater Part, Share or Proportion of the said Tract of



Land, Hereditaments and Premises above mentioned, meant or intended to be hereby granted and released, and every Part and Parcel thereof, with the Appurtenances, (except as before is excepted,) unto the said Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton, and their Associates, their Heirs and Assigns, to the only proper use and behoof of the said Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton, and their Associates and their respective Heirs and Assigns forever, as Tenants in common, and not as Joint-tenants. And, *Whereas* seven thousand acres of the above Tract of Land is now supposed to be in the possession of the Inhabitants of Bedford new purchase, and is above excepted out of this Release, and the Parties to these Presents of the Second Part have before purchased the Rights of John Cholwell and Robert Waters, and one-half of the Right of Richard Slater, three of the said Patentees, supposed to contain Eight thousand, acres more, and of some of the other Patentees or others, claiming under them four thousand seven hundred acres more. *Now, therefore*, the said Levinus Clarkson and Anne Clarkson, by the said David Clarkson, their Attorney for themselves and their Heirs, the said one full and equal undivided Tenth Part of the remaining Part of the said Tract of Land and Premises in and by the said Letters Patent granted, supposed to contain about twelve thousand, three hundred acres, be it more or less, against them, the said Levinus Clarkson and Anne Clarkson, and their heirs, and against all and every other Person and Persons whomsoever claiming by, from or under them, or either of them, or under their Rather, Matthew Clarkson, one of the said Patentees to the said Parties of the second part, and to their respective Heirs and Assigns forever, shall, and will warrant and forever defend by these Presents. In testimony whereof the Parties to these Presents have hereunto interchangeably set their Hands and Seals the day and year first above written.

DAVID CLARKSON, *Attorney for*  
LEVINUS AND ANN CLARKSON.

ANN CLARKSON,  
*by her Attorney*, DAVID CLARKSON.

LEVINUS CLARKSON,  
*by his Attorney*, DAVID CLARKSON,<sup>a</sup>

In 1766, a partition of the *middle* and *west patent* took place, (in pursuance of an act of the Lieutenant-Governor, the Council and General Assembly of the colony of New York, passed on the eighth day of January, 1762,) "for the more effectual collecting of his majesty's quit-rents." Upon the 23d day of June, 1766, the several allotments were balloted for, and sold to numerous individuals.

Upon the 21st of April, 1769, occurs a release between Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton, both of the West Patent of North Castle of the first part, and Benjamin Smith of the same of the second part, which release recites Patent of 14th of February, 1701, to Robert Walters and others and thus continues:

"Know ye that wethe above named, Caleb Fowler, Joseph Sutton and Benjamin Smith, did make a purchase of a great part of the above said tract of land as by a general release may appear bearing date the seventh day of June, one

<sup>a</sup> County Rec. Book H, p. 310.

thousand seven hundred and sixty-three, reference being thereunto had may more fully and largely be made appear, wherein is granted unto us the said Caleb Fowler, Joseph Sutton and Benjamin Smith, and our associates, a great part of said tract of land. Now this indenture witnesseth that for and in consideration of the sum of one hundred and sixty-nine pounds of good and lawful money of the province of New York, well and truly paid by the said Benjamin Smith which is his proportionable part or share of money paid for the above said tract of land; we the said Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton doth acknowledge by these presents and therefore by these presents, give, grant and release unto him the said Benjamin Smith, his heirs and assigns, all that certain part of the above recited tract of land containing four hundred acres, two hundred and twelve acres where he the said Benjamin Smith now lives and one hundred and eighty-eight acres at Shapequau where his son, Abel Smith, now lives, all situate and being in the above said Patent, and also his equal share in all and every part and parcel of the above said tract of land which was purchased as above said which we have now in possession and that may be found belonging to the said West Patent of North Castle. To have and to hold, &c.,

Sealed and delivered in the presence of

CALEB HAIGHT,  
JOHN NILES,

CALEB FOWLER,  
JOSEPH SUTTON.

Proved 16th October, 1770."<sup>a</sup>

On the 26th of April, 1770, Abel Smith, of the West Patent of North Castle, conveyed to Benjamin Smith of the said Patent for the sum of £340. "all that certain piece or lott of land situate, lying and being in the above said Patent bounded as followeth: Beginning at the north-west corner of the north end of the ten acres which I the said Abel Smith sold to Benjamin Smith, the younger, lying on the east side of the road that leads from Joseph Sutton to Benjamin Kipps and running northward along the east side of said road till it comes to the partition line between the lott of land herein conveyed and the land of Joseph Sutton, then eastward and northward along said partition line to a certain walnut tree standing at a corner, then eastward on a straight corse to a certain black oak tree with a stone in a crotch of said tree, &c."<sup>b</sup>

On the 8th day of March, 1784, Benjamin Smith, of the West Patent of North Castle, farmer, sold to Benjamin Smith of the same Patent letter for the sum of five hundred pounds "all that peace or parcel of land situate, lying and being on the aforesaid West Patent of North Castle containing one hundred and eighty acres be the same more or less, bounded as followeth: Beginning at a heap of stones at the north-east corner joining the land of Silas Worshbörn, and from thence north-westerly to a walnut tree marked, then westerly to a black oak bush,

<sup>a</sup> Entered in the Rec. of Deeds of Westchester County, Lib. K., pp. 41-42, 11th June, 1787 per Richard Hatfield, clerk.

<sup>b</sup> Copied from original doc. in possession of David W. Smith of Kensico. Witnesses, John Niles and Maurice Smith.

then westerly to an oak tree marked, then northerly to a chestnut tree marked, then easterly to a heap of stones, then northerly to the first mentioned heap of stones ; to have and to hold, &c."<sup>a</sup>

The Smiths who have been for so long a period such extensive land owners in this town descend from Richard Smith, patentee of Smith-town, Suffolk County, Long Island. This individual came from England with Richard, his father, to Boston in 1630 ; and by his first wife, Sarah, had issue, Jonathan, Obadiah, Richard, Job, Adam, Samuel, Daniel, Elizabeth and Deborah. Job, the fourth son, married Elizabeth Thompson and had issue, Job (second), Richard, Timothy, Adam, James, Joseph and Elizabeth. Joseph, son of Job (first), married Mary Aldrich, and had issue, Joseph, David, Stephen, Gershom, Gilbert, Rhuamah, Jane, Mary and Mahitable. Joseph, son of Joseph, married Sarah Saxton ; their children were Eliphalet, Joseph, William, Daniel, Selah, Catharine, Rhuamah and Sarah. William, son of Joseph (second), married Sophia, daughter of Benjamin Hawkins, and had issue, Benjamin Smith. Benjamin Smith moved from Long Island to Rye, Westchester County ; from whence he removed to this town about 1740, and became, as we have already seen, one of the patentees in connection with Joseph Quinby and Caleb Fowler. Benjamin Smith married Deborah Harker and had issue, Morris, Abel, Benjamin, Nathaniel, Isaac (killed in discharge of his duty as sheriff<sup>b</sup>), Richard, James, Elizabeth, Sarah, Deborah and Esther. Abel, son of Benjamin, married Bersheba Hutchings and left issue, John, Benjamin, Abel, James, Isaac, Charity, Deborah, Jerusha, Bersheba. Sarah, Abigail and Elizabeth. Abel, son of Abel, married first, Esther Purdy ; issue, William, Joseph and John ; secondly, married Mary Waterbury, issue, Isaac, Julia, Ann, Thomas, Elizabeth, Abel, David W., Mary and Sarah. David W., son of Abel, married Hannah Barnes ; their children are Annie B., Abel, Mary Elizabeth, Samuel B. and Naomi.

Benjamin Smith, the Patentee, represented the county in the Legislature for a number of years ; and was Supervisor of this town, from 1747 to 1754. Abel Smith, son of Benjamin, was a man of considerable influence in the county, which he represented in the State Legislature for about eight years, and was supervisor for a number of years, between 1790 and 1800. He died in the year 1810. Abel, son of Abel, was born March 24th, 1782, and died December 22d, 1860. He was a man of considerable influence in the town ; represented his

<sup>a</sup> Rec. of Westchester County Book K. of Deeds, pp. 42, 43. This deed was proved 25th of August, 1786. Witnesses, Gilbert Horn and William Dalton.

<sup>b</sup> On Friday last the Court of Oyer and Terminer held for this State in Westchester County, passed sentence of death on John Ryer, for the murder of Isaac Smith, late Deputy Sheriff, in said county. He is to be executed on the second of October next.

district in the State Legislature during the years 1829 and 1830, and held various offices in the town. His son David W. Smith now occupies the homestead farm, a portion of the West Patent, which has been owned in the family since the first settlement.

Numerous descendants of the original patentees, still reside in the town; among them may be enumerated the Brundages, Griffins, Lockhards, Sellecks, Scofields, and Claps.

In 1724 we find the inhabitants of the *Liberty of North Castle* petitioning the Court of General Sessions for permission to erect a public pound.<sup>a</sup> Benjamin Platt appears to have been assessor for the middle patent in 1744.<sup>b</sup>

Upon the first of April, 1746, Jonathan Ogden and Benoni Platt were appointed trustees for the *Middle Patent*, also George Dennis and Caleb Fowler for the *West Patent*, "to clear up the quit-rents."<sup>c</sup>

The following items occur in the town records:

"April ye 6th, 1736, at a lawful town meeting for to choose town officers in North Castle," were elected,

GEORGE DENNIS, Supervisor.

MOSES QUIMBY, Clerk.

JONATHAN OGDEN, Constable.

SHUBEL ROWLEY, }  
BENJAMIN CARPENTER, } Assessors.

SAMUEL DEAN, }  
SHUBEL ROWLEY, } Highway  
JOSEPH GREEN, } Masters.

JONATHAN OGDEN, Pounder.

SAMUEL DEAN, } Fence and  
JOHN MERRITT, } Damage Viewers.

"At a lawful town meeting held in North Castle on Tuesday, the 7th of April, 1772, by the *West* and *Middle Patents* to choose and elect town officers, and to make such prudential acts as said Patents or the inhabitants thereof hath power, and shall think proper," &c.

In 1778 it was voted that a committee of three be appointed to represent the town, "and with other members to represent the county."

The village of Armonk is situated in a valley, about the centre of the town, with the hills rising boldly around it. The settlement of this place was commenced sometime prior to 1722, principally by a company of Englishmen from Rye, who gave it the name it now bears. Armonk at present contains a post-office, two churches,<sup>d</sup> a school-house, four stores, and several dwellings.

<sup>a</sup> Co. Rec. Court of Sessions, Lib. B. 1.

<sup>b</sup> See Newcastle, for Assessor of West Patent.

<sup>c</sup> Town Rec. The Woolsey family appear to have had a claim on the Middle Patent.

<sup>d</sup> In this town a party of Continental troops were stationed during the Revolutionary war.



St. Stephen's church, North Castle, is situated midway between the two settlements, Kensico village and North Castle post-office, in the village of Armonk. Sometime prior to 1753 a site was selected for a church edifice, on the undivided land of the Middle patent, not half a mile from the spot now occupied for this purpose, and was designated by the letter C inscribed on a rock. The letter is still legible, and the ancient deed is still in existence. "On the 10th of October, 1755, John Hallock, of North Castle, for the sum of £10, conveyed to Joseph Fowler and Caleb Fowler, of the same place, a certain piece of land, lying



St. Stephen's Church, North Castle.

in North Castle, bounded as follows: Beginning on the east side of the highway, that leads from the said John Hallock's house to Aaron Forman's, Senr., at a certain neck which lyes at the northwest corner of the said Aaron Foreman's home lot, with the letter C cut thereon; and from thence extending south 65 degrees, easterly, or thereabouts, along by the land of the said Aaron Forman's, as the fence now stands, three chains and fifty links (of Mr. Gunter's chain) to a stake stuck in the ground with stones about it; from thence, running southeasterly 47 degrees, 2 chains, to a marked chestnut tree, standing on the edge of the brook, a little to the north end of the said John Hallock's new grist mill; from thence, running west two chains and eighty links to the aforesaid road; and from thence, running something to the east of the north three chains and ten links to the first bound, containing three-quarters of an acre," &c.<sup>a</sup>

For some reasons, now unknown, it was determined to erect the church five miles further north, in the town of New Castle.

<sup>a</sup> From the original deed in the possession of Job Sands, of North Castle.

The Rev. Robert Jenney, rector of Rye, wrote the Venerable Propagation Society, in 1722: "I have lately been to a settlement in the woods, where I had good success, having baptized a whole family—parents and children." This refers to the present parish; for in 1728 Mr. James Wetmore, his successor, informs the same, "that at North Castle, a new settlement in the woods, there are more than forty families, most of which are unbaptized, and that he preaches there every fifth Sunday." For a number of years North Castle was destitute of religious privileges, until the Rev. Robert Harris, D.D., revived the cause.

The present church, St. Stephens, was organized on the 10th of October, 1842, in a log cabin, at Mile Square (as the village was then called), and a church edifice erected, at a cost of \$2,000, and was consecrated September 13, 1843. The rectory was built in 1870, on ground presented by William R. Carr, Esq., at a cost of \$4,000.

## LIST OF RECTORS.

CALL.	NAME.	RESIGNATION.
1842	Rev. ROBERT HARRIS, D.D.	1853
1853	Rev. J. D. VERMILYE,	1864—died
1865	JOSEPH WM. HYDE,	1867
1867	C. W. BOLTON,	Resigned Nov., 1880.

The old Methodist church stood north of the village in the old burying ground, and was one of the oldest churches, out of the city of New York—being incorporated 2d February, 1792; it was sold in 1875, and a new church erected in 1873, in the village of Armonk, at a cost of \$11,000, on the corner of two highways, on land bought of William R. Carr, Esq., and near where the old log cabin stood. Upon Wampus brook a grist mill stands, which, on the 5th of April, 1737, John Hallock received permission to erect, near Able Weeks'.

One of the principal proprietors of Bedford New Purchase in 1746 was Othniel Sands<sup>a</sup> whose son, Caleb, subsequently removed to North Castle. In 1728 Jas. Sands, of Nassau Island, conveyed to his son, Othniel, a farm. On the 16th of October, 1790, Thomas Sands (son of Caleb) purchased of William Latting and Sarah, his wife, "one hundred and twenty acres of land and all the buildings and mills on the same, which said land and mills are situated in the town of North Castle," &c. The Sands family were originally seated at St. Bees, in Cumberland County, England, and are descended from Richard del Sandys, who was returned a knight for the shire in 1377.<sup>b</sup> Of this family was Comfort

<sup>a</sup> Situated in the township of Oyster Bay.

<sup>b</sup> Burke's Hist. of the Commoners of England.

Sands, of Sands Point, Long Island, who "united with his brothers, Richardson and Joshua, in a contract with Robert Morris, to supply the northern army with provisions for 1782."<sup>a</sup>

Within a few rods from Mr. Sands' late residence stands an old wooden barn, formerly the head-quarters of Lieutenant-Colonel Jameson of the Continental army. Here (on the 23d of September, 1780.) the unfortunate André was delivered up to that officer, with all the papers which had been found upon his person.<sup>b</sup> "The course pursued by Jameson



COL. JAMESON'S HEAD-QUARTERS AT NORTH CASTLE.

The building attached to the barn on the left is the one in which André was confined.

observes Mr. Sparks) was extraordinary and inexplicable. On examining the papers, he found them to be in the undisguised hand-writing of General Arnold, with which he was perfectly acquainted. Their contents and the manner of their being found was such, as one would think, could not fail to excite suspicion in the most obtuse mind, whatever might be the rank or character of the party concerned."<sup>c</sup>

"With these papers in his hands, bearing incontestable marks of their origin, and procured in a way that indicated most unequivocally the designs of the person with whom they were found, Jameson resolved to send the prisoner immediately to Arnold! How far he was influenced by the persuasion or advice of André, is uncertain; but it cannot be doubted, that all the address of the latter was used to advance a purpose, which opened the only possible door for their escape. Could he proceed

<sup>a</sup> Thompson's Hist. of Long Island. For a further account of this family, see pedigree.

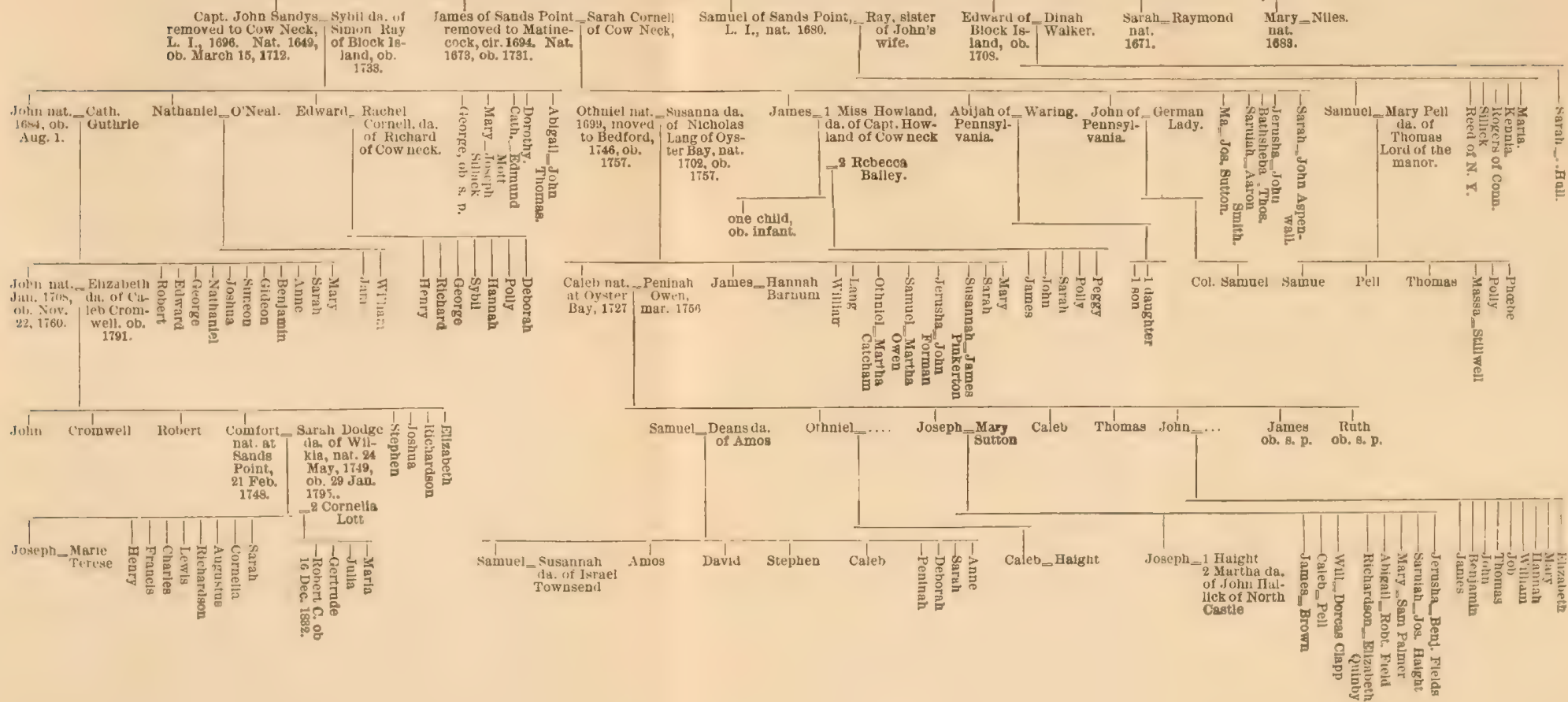
<sup>b</sup> The room occupied by André is still shown to the visitor.

<sup>c</sup> For the André papers, see Greenburgh.

## PEDIGREE OF SANDS, OF SANDS POINT AND NORTH CASTLE.

Arms, or, a fesse, dancettée betw. three crosses botonée fitchée gu. Crest a griffin segeant per fesse or and gules.

Capt. James Sandys, a native of Reading, County of Berkshire, England, who emigrated to Plymouth, Mass in 1653. In 1660, with fifteen others, he purchased Block Island of the Indians, called Manisses; for which they obtained a charter in 1672 by the name of Shorum. Nat. 1622, ob. 13th March, 1695, set. 73.







to Arnold at West Point before the report of his capture should go abroad, it might be practicable for them both to get within the British lines, or to take such other steps for securing themselves, as the extremity of their affairs should make necessary. It has been represented, that André's magnanimity was the principal motive by which he was actuated in concealing the agency of Arnold. His subsequent conduct gives him every claim to the praise of honor and nobleness of mind; yet, on the present occasion, it is obvious that his own personal safety was as much consulted, to say the least, as his sentiments of generosity towards his associate.

Jameson penned a hasty line to Arnold, saying merely that he sent forward, under the charge of Lieutenant Allen and a guard, a certain John Anderson, who had been taken while going towards New York. He had a passport, said Jameson, signed in your name; and a parcel of papers taken from under his stockings, which I think of a very dangerous tendency. He then described these papers, and added that he had sent them to General Washington.

There appears to have been some misgiving in the mind of Jameson, although he was not prepared to suspect the patriotism and political fidelity of his commanding general. Washington said afterwards that, either on account of his "egregious folly, or bewildered conception, he seemed lost in astonishment, and not to know what he was doing." This is as lenient a judgment, perhaps, as can be passed on his conduct. No one ever doubted the purity of his intentions. Perceiving the mischievous tendency of the papers, and knowing them to have been copied by Arnold, at the same moment that he sent André under guard to West Point, he dispatched an express with the papers to meet General Washington, then supposed to be on the road returning from his interview with the French commanders at Hartford. Two reasons were subsequently assigned by Jameson, for a course which seemed so extraordinary to every body else; first, that he thought the affair was an imposition by the British, intending to destroy the confidence of the Americans in Arnold; secondly, that, not knowing the *Vulture* was up the river, he supposed Arnold could not get to the enemy, without passing through the American out-posts on the lines, where he would be taken.

Major Tallmadge, next in command under Jameson was absent on duty below White Plains when André was brought in, and did not return till evening. He was filled with astonishment when Jameson related what had happened, and could not refrain from expressing his surprise at the course that had been pursued. To his mind the case was so clear, or at all events was attended by such peculiar circumstances, as

not only to justify but require prompt, bold, and energetic measures on the part of Jameson. In short he declared his suspicions of Arnold, and offered to take on himself the entire responsibility of proceeding upon that ground. To this idea, Jameson would not listen. He was agitated and irresolute at first ; but finally refused to sanction any measures, which should imply a distrust of Arnold.

Failing in this object, Tallmadge earnestly requested that the prisoner might be brought back, to which Jameson with some reluctance consented. As the parties from below had been higher up the country than the post at North Castle, there was room to apprehend that he might be re-captured ; and this was, probably, the prevailing reason of Jameson for countermanding his order. Strange as it may seem, however, (if any thing can seem strange in such a string of blunders,) he would insist on sending forward the letter he had written to Arnold, as will appear by his order of countermand to Lieutenant Allen :

“ From some circumstances, which I have just discovered,” said he to that officer, “ I have reason to fear that a party of the enemy is above ; and as I would not have Anderson re-taken, or get away, I desire that you will proceed to Lower Salem with him, and deliver him to Captain Hoogland. You will leave the guard with Captain Hoogland, also, except one man, whom you may take along. You may proceed to West Point, and deliver the letter to General Arnold. You may also show him this, that he may know the reason why the prisoner is not sent on. You will please return as soon as you can.”

The messenger, with his letter, overtook Lieutenant Allen, and he came back with his charge to North Castle late at night, or early the next morning ; although from the tenor of the letter, it might be inferred that Colonel Jameson supposed he would proceed by some other route to Lower Salem. As soon as Major Tallmadge saw the prisoner, and especially when he observed his manner of walking to and fro on the floor, and turning on his heel to retrace his steps, he was struck with his military deportment, and conceived that he had been bred to arms. Jameson gradually came into the same way of thinking, though there is no proof of his confidence in Arnold having been shaken ; but he agreed with Tallmadge, that it was best to keep Anderson in close custody—till something more should be known about him, or till orders should be received from Arnold or General Washington.” From North Castle the prisoner was subsequently removed to Lower Salem.<sup>b</sup>

The hills which lie along the western side of the town present a very rough and rocky appearance, and in some places rise to considerable height.

<sup>a</sup> Spark's Life of Benedict Arnold, 226, 7, 8, 9, 30, 31, 32, 33.

<sup>b</sup> See Lewisborough.

Upon the edge of one of them is a remarkable split rock, which was, in all probability, rent asunder ages ago, by some convulsion of nature. The gap is commonly called Brimstone Alley. Hard by is a dismal cavern, styled the Devil's Den. In the north-easterly corner of the town lies the Dark Valley, a part of which falls within the limits of New Castle. From the gloomy woods of this valley issues the northern branch of the Bronx.<sup>a</sup> On the east side of the Dark Valley rises Whippoor-will Hill, an appellation given to it on account of its being a haunt of that well-known bird.<sup>b</sup> "The notes of this solitary bird, (observes Wilson, the ornithologist,) from the ideas which are naturally associated with them, seem like the voice of an old friend, and are listened to by almost all with great interest. At first they issue from some retired part of the woods, the glen or the mountain; in a few evenings, perhaps, we hear them from the adjoining coppice, the garden fence, the road before the door, and even from the roof of the dwelling house, long after the family have retired to rest. Some of the more ignorant and superstitious consider this near approach as forebodings of no good to the family—nothing less than sickness, misfortune, or death, to some of its members. These visits, however, so often occur without any bad consequences, that this superstitious dread seems on the decline. He is now a regular acquaintance. Every morning and evening his shrill and rapid repetitions are heard from the adjoining woods; and when two or more are calling out at the same time, as is often the case in the pairing season, and at no great distance from each other, the noise, mingling with the echoes from the mountains, is really surprising." "These notes seem pretty plainly to articulate the words which have been generally applied to them—*Whip-poor-will*—the first and last syllable being uttered with great emphasis, and the whole in about a second to each repetition; but when two or more males meet, their Whip-poor-will altercations become much more rapid and incessant, as if each were straining to overpower or silence the other." "Towards midnight they generally become silent; unless in clear moonlight, when they are heard, with little intermission, till morning. If there be a creek near, with high precipitous, bushy banks, they are sure to be found in such situations. During the day, they sit in the most retired, solitary, and deep-shaded parts of the woods, generally on high ground, where they repose in silence." "I shall not, (continues Mr. Wilson,) in the manner of some, attempt to amuse the readers with a repetition of the unintelligible names given to this bird by the Indians, or the superstitious notions generally entertained of it

<sup>a</sup> The eastern branch of the Bronx originates from the Rye ponds, and, running through Kensico, unites with the northern in the southern part of this town.

<sup>b</sup> *Caprimulgus Vociferous*.—*Wilson*.



by the same people. These seem as various as the tribes, or even families, with which you converse ; scarcely two of them will tell you the same story. It is easy, however, to observe, that this, like the owl and other nocturnal birds, is held by them in a kind of superstitious awe, as a bird with which they wish to have as little to do as possible. The superstition of the Indian<sup>a</sup> differs very little from that of an illiterate German or Scotch Highlander, or the less informed of any other nation. It suggests ten thousand fantastic notions to each ; and these, instead of being recorded with all the punctilio of the most important truths, seem only fit to be forgotten. Whatever, among either of these people, is strange and not comprehended, is usually attributed to supernatural agency ; and an unexpected sight, or uncommon incident, is often ominous of good, but more generally of bad fortune to the parties. Night, to minds of this complexion, brings with it—its kindred horrors, its apparitions, strange sounds and awful sights ; and this solitary and inoffensive bird, being a frequent wanderer in these hours of ghosts and hobgoblins, is considered by the Indians as being, by habit and repute, little better than one of them. All these people, however, are not so credulous ; I have conversed with Indians who treated these silly notions with contempt.”

The favorite places of resort for these birds are on high, dry situations ; it is probably on this account, that they are to be found here in such numbers. The following lines are so appropriate, that no apology can be necessary for their insertion :—

#### SONG OF THE WHIP-POOR-WILL.

Swiftly the hours of day-light have fled,  
Dark hang the clouds o'er the sun's wavy bed ;  
Stilly the cool dews of evening are falling,  
And the night-loving owl from her wood haunt is calling,  
Now swiftly from my dark home I'll silently fly,  
And glide through the glen with my bright beaming eye.

On the slope of the hill is the gleam of my wings,  
Through the limbs of the oak where the rain prophet rings,  
By the skirt of the green wood where hangs the light dew,  
O'er the grass of the meadow my flight I pursue ;  
Through the star lighted paths of the forest I'll fly,  
And pierce the gray gloom with my bright gleaming eye.

<sup>a</sup> “The Indians say, that when the leaf of the white oak, which puts forth in the spring, is of the size of the ear of a mouse, it is time to plant corn : they observe, that now the whip-poor-will has arrived, and is continually hovering over them, calling out his Indian name, ‘*Wekolies*,’ in order to remind them of the planting times, ‘*Hackihack*,’ ‘go to planting corn.’”  
*Yamoyden*—note to stanza 27.

The author of the “History of Virginia” makes mention of a bird, said to contain the soul of one of their princes, by the Indians. P. 185.

Wo! to the night moth that flits in my way,  
 Wo! to the tribes in the still air that play,  
 Wo! to the wretch in the night dew that sings,  
 For the death spirit waits on the rush of my wings;  
 High and low, swift and slow, through the shadow I fly,  
 While the wolf's in her track, and the owl hooteth high;  
 When the moon from her cloud-cinctured ear brightly gleams,  
 And starts the shades with her tremulous beams.  
 Then loud in the night winds I pour my wild song,  
 Whip-poor-will, Whip-poor-will, through the mists rolling gray,  
 And the tremulous moon-beams on high wings I play.

Now the owl to the gloom of the forest has flown,  
 And the deer to her covert hath stealthily gone;  
 The lone prowling wolf to his lair is returning,  
 For night's shadows are lost in the blush of the morning,  
 Now swift to my dark home I'll silently fly  
 And close on the daylight my broad, gleaming eye.

—*Knickerbocker Magazine.*

Whip-poor-will Hill is very high, and contains much arable land, especially adapted for pasturage. With the exception of Prospect Hill, it overtops all others in the neighborhood. In this vicinity is Wampus Pond,<sup>a</sup> whence issues a tributary to the Byram River, as mentioned in the description of New Castle. Byram Lake lies in the north-east part of the town towards Bedford, not far from the village of North Castle. This lake is fed by numerous springs from the Cohamong or Armonck hills, which border it on the east. The north-western shore is bounded by steep, rocky acclivities, covered with woods.<sup>b</sup> It is an extensive and beautiful sheet of water, constituting the head of Byram (Armonck) River, which waters the southern part of the town. The lake abounds with pickerel, which were introduced here from the western lakes by a number of enterprising gentlemen in the neighborhood.<sup>c</sup>

On the eastern shore of the lake is situated the estate and residence of the late Samuel Lyon, Esq., whose family have been long settled in this part of the town.

In 1772, Roger Lyon of North Castle held a captain's commission in the middle battalion of the Westchester militia. At one period of the Revolution, this gentleman had the honor of entertaining General Washington and suite on their route to White Plains. It is related by his grand-son that during the entertainment, Captain Lyon being blind,

<sup>a</sup> It is said that clowder fish were very abundant in this pond prior to the introduction of pickerel.

<sup>b</sup> A fine specimen of the white-headed or bald eagle (*Falco Leucocephalus*) was shot on the shores of the lake in 1840.

<sup>c</sup> Messrs. Hunt, Lyon, Carpenter and Tripp.

handed the General a draught of good cheer, with these words, "General! the ladies say you are a very handsome man, but I cannot see." "Tell the ladies," rejoined Washington, "I am afraid they are as blind as yourself."<sup>a</sup> Samuel Lyon, his eldest son, received from Governor Tryon a commission in the Westchester militia, which he afterwards resigned for a Major's commission in the Continental army, whereof Samuel Drake was Captain. During the war, Major Lyon was unfortunately surprised in the night, by a party of Totten's refugee corps. The marauders, after the most inhuman treatment, plundered the house and farm, and carried off their prisoner to New York. His brother, Captain Gilbert Lyon, also held a commission in the Continental service.<sup>b</sup> The son of Major Lyon, is the present Samuel Lyon, Esq., of North Castle. Opposite the site of the old residence on Lyon Hill lies the family cemetery, which contains, among other memorials, the following:

In  
Memory of  
MAJOR SAMUEL LYON,  
who departed  
this life  
January 23, 1819,  
Æ. 71 years, 8 mo. and 9 days.

In  
Memory of  
MARY,  
wife of  
SAMUEL LYON,  
who departed this life  
January 10, 1792. Æ. 84.

About a mile east from Byram Lake is situated the Cohamong Pond, so denominated from the adjoining hills. This pond has no observable inlet, and is said to be of great depth. There is a delightful eminence in the vicinity, from which the spectator has a noble prospect—comprehending a horizon to the north, east, and south, of forty miles at least.

The name of the *Middle Patent* is still applied to all that beautiful district of country lying in the north-east corner of the township. Within this part of North Castle rises the Mehanas river; which, after running some distance north into Bedford, turns and takes a southerly course, forming the boundary between North Castle and Poundridge on the east. In the Mahanas valley is a small settlement, consisting of a Methodist church and several scattered dwellings. The Methodist society appears to have been the first organized here, in 1825. A new church edifice has been recently erected on a beautiful site, commanding a good view of the valley. Upon an eminence near the meeting-

<sup>a</sup> The silver cup used upon this occasion is still preserved in the family.

<sup>b</sup> This individual was likewise captured by the enemy and confined with his brother in the New York sugar-house. Captain Gilbert Lyon is the father of Mr. Jesse Lyon of Eastchester.

house, is the burying-ground of the ancient proprietors. The oldest grave-stones are inscribed as follows:—

S x B  
J. 29, 1743.

Here lies the  
body of

A. H. N.  
1776.

SAMUEL BANKS,

who departed this life the 19th of September, 1773,  
in the 86th year of his age.

From the Rye Ponds, situated on the southern border of this town, issues the principal branch of the Bronx River. Upon this stream stands the small hamlet of Kensico, formerly called Robbin's Mills. Here is a Methodist church, two wollen manufactories, a saw and grist mill, a spring and carriage manufactory, two stores and several dwellings. In the north-west angle of Connecticut, which projects into this town, lies the boundary-rock, marked with the royal initials, G. R.<sup>a</sup> The *Heights of North Castle* are well known in the annals of the Revolution. It was to these hills that General Washington retired, soon after the battle of White Plains. Upon the summit of *Fort Hill*, in the vicinity of Rye Pond, vestiges of a military encampment are still to be seen. General Washington's troops encamped here on their retreat after the battle of White Plains. The property is now owned by William Fields, Esq. *Camp Field* is also situated in this town. "The general surface of North Castle is broken into hills and valleys, but all admit of cultivation—either as arable, meadow or pasture lands."<sup>b</sup> "The soil is a sandy loam and clay." The principal growth of wood consists of oak of all kinds, chestnut, hickory, elm, locust, &c., &c. In our topographical description of the town, we have shown that it is a well watered district.

#### LEASE AND RELEASE.

This indenture, made the twenty-third of October, in the twelfth year of the reign of our Sovereign, Lord George the Second, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King Defender of the Faith, &c., and in the year of our Lord Christ, one thousand seven hundred and thirty-eight, between Cornelius Depeyster, of the city of New York, merchant, of the one part, Abraham Depeyster, of the same city, merchant; Philip Courtlandt, of the city of New York, aforesaid, merchant, in right of Catherine, his wife, John Hamilton, of Perth Amboy, in the Province of New Jersey, Esq., and Elizabeth, his wife, Isaac Depeyster, of the said city of New York, merchant, and Ann, his wife, and Peter Depeyster, of the said city of New York, merchant of the other part. Whereas, his late Majesty, King William the Third, by his Letters Patent, under the broad

<sup>a</sup> Four towns about upon Clapp's ridge in the south-east corner of North Castle.

<sup>b</sup> Spafford's Gazetteer.

<sup>c</sup> Disturnell's Gazetteer.



seal of the Province of New York, bearing date the fourteenth day of February, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and one, did grant unto Robert Walter, Leigh Atwood, the said Cornelius Depeyster, Caleb Heathcote, Matthew Clarkson, John Cholwell, Richard Slater, Lancaster Symes, Robert Lurting and Barne Cosens, a certain tract of land, situate and being in the county of Westchester, bounded northerly by the manor of Courtland, easterly with Bedford line, of three miles square, the Whitefield and Byram rivers: southerly, by the land of John Harrison, Rye line, stretching to Byram river, aforesaid, and the White Plains, and westerly by Brunk's river and the manor of Philipsburg. Excepting thereout all the lands in Richbald's Patent; as in and by the said written Letters Patents, relation being thereunto had may more fully and at large appear. In which said tract of land he, the said Cornelius Depeyster, is interested, and entitled to one-tenth part. And, whereas, his said late Majesty, King William the Third, by other Letters Patents, under the said broad seal of the said Province of New York, bearing date on or about the seventeenth day of February, and in the fourteenth year of his reign, and in the year of our Lord Christ, one thousand seven hundred and one, did, in like manner, give and grant unto Caleb Heathcote, Joseph Theale, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Robert Walter, Leigh Atwood, Matthew Clarkson, Lancaster Symes, the said Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, John Cholwell, Robert Lurting, and Barne Cosens, their heirs, and assigns, forever, at, and under the yearly quit-rent of one pound, seventeen shillings and six pence, payable on the twenty-fifth day of December, yearly, forever, all that other tract of land further up in the Wilderness, in the said county of Westchester and Province of New York, bearing date on or about the second day of March, in the said fourteenth year of his reign, and in the year of our Lord Christ one thousand seven hundred and one, did, in like manner give, and grant, unto Robert Walter, John Cholwell, Leigh Atwood and the said Cornelius Depeyster, Richard Slater, Barne Cosens, Lancaster Symes, Matthew Clarkson, Robert Lurting, Peter Mathews and Caleb Heathcote, their heirs and assigns forever, at, and under the yearly quit-rent of seven pounds, fifteen shillings, payable on the Twenty-Fifth day of December, yearly, forever. All that other part of land situate, lying and being further up in the said Wilderness, in the aforesaid county of Westchester, and Province of New York, aforesaid, bounded to the south by the Division line between the said Province of New York and the said Colony of Connecticut, and so along the said line until it meets with the patent of Adolph Philipse, and so along his Southern bounds until it meets with the manor of Courtland, and from thence by a line that shall run upon a direct course until it meets with the first Easterly line of Twenty miles of the said Manor of Courtland, and from thence along the said line Westerly until it meets with a patent granted unto Robert Walter and others, thence Southerly along the said patent until it meets with the bounds of the Township of Bedford, and thence round along the said aforesaid bounds until it meets with the Patent granted to Colonel Caleb Heathcote and others, and along the bounds of the said Patent unto the Colony line where it first begun; and, also, all that small tract of land beginning Westerly at a great rock on the Westmost side at the Southwest end of a ridge known by the name of Rithbell, or Horse-ridge, and from thence Northwest and by North to Brunk's river, Easterly beginning at a marked tree at the Eastmost side on the Southwest end of the said Ridge, and thence North to

Brunk's river, which said Two last mentioned tracts of land do contain, by estimation, Six thousand Two Hundred acres of profitable or improvable Lands, or thereabouts (be the same more or less), as by the said Three several Letters Patents remaining upon record in the Secretaries office of the Province of New York, reference being unto them severally had more at large, may appear. By means of which said several Letters Patents the said Cornelius Depeyster became seized, and as yet, doth stand seized of a good Estate of Inheritance in fee simple of, and in, One full and equal undivided south part or share of the said first-mentioned Tract of Land; and also of, and in, one undivided Thirteenth part or share of the said Second-above mentioned Tract of Land, and also of, and in, one full and equal undivided Eleventh part or Share of the said Two last mentioned tracts of land, with the appurtenances to the same several tracts of land severally and respectively belonging. Now, this Indenture Witnesseth that the said Cornelius Depeyster for, and in consideration of the Sum of Five Shillings, current money of New York, to him in hand paid by the said Abraham Depeyster, Philip Courtlandt, John Hamilton, Isaac Depeyster, and Peter Depeyster, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, he, the said Cornelius Depeyster, hath granted, bargained, sold and demised, and by these presents Doth grant, bargain, sell and demise unto them, the said Abraham Depeyster, Philip Courtlandt, in right, as aforesaid, John Hamilton, and Elizabeth, his wife, Isaac Depeyster, and Ann, his wife, and Peter Depeyster. All that the said undivided Tenth part, and all other part, purpart and share, parts, purparts and shares, of him, the said Cornelius De Peyster, of and in all that, the said tract of land first above mentioned containing by situation or measure, Five Thousand acres of profitable or Improvable lands, or thereabouts, (be the same more or less,) besides Wastes and Wood-lands, as aforesaid, with all and singular the appurtenances thereunto belonging, and also all that, the said undivided Thirteenth Part or Share, and all other part, purpart parts, purparts and shares of him, the said Cornelius De Peyster, of and in all that, the said Tract of land Second above mentioned, containing, by estimation or measure, One Thousand Five hundred acres of profitable and improvable lands, or thereabouts, besides Wastes and Wood-lands, with the appurtenances thereunto belonging, and likewise all that, the said undivided Eleventh part or share, and all other parts, purparts and shares of him, the said Cornelius De Peyster, of and in all these, the said Two Tracts of land last above mentioned, containing, by estimation, One thousand Two hundred acres of profitable or Improvable lands, or thereabouts, with their appurtenances together, also with the like several and respective parts, purparts and shares, as are before mentioned, of all and singular Plantations, Farms, Messuages, Houses, Erections, Buildings and Improvements, which now are standing, remaining or being, or shall or may at any time hereafter be erected, built or made in, upon or about the said several Tracts of lands, premises, or any or either of them, and also of all and singular houses, out-houses, yards; besides gardens, Orchards, Woods, Underwoods, Springs, Groves, Wastes, Commons and comon of Pasture, Ways, Passages, Waters, Water-Courses, Ponds, Pools, Fishings, Royalties, Preemints, Easements, Commodities, Profits, Hereditaments and Appurtenances whatsoever to the said several Tracts of land and Premises belonging, or in any wise appertaining and the reversion and reversions, remainder and remainders thereof, to Have and to Hold all and Singular the said premises above mentioned,

and every part and parcel thereof, with their appurtenances, unto the said Abraham De Peyster, Philip Courtlandt, in right as aforesaid, John Hamilton, Catharine, his wife, Isaac De Peyster and Ann, his wife, and Peter De Peyster, their Executors, Administrators and Assignees, from the day next before the day of the date hereof, for and during, and unto the full one and term of one whole, from thenceforth, next, and immediately succeeding and following, and fully to be complete and ended, Yielding and Paying therefor one Pepper-Corn, in and upon the Feast day of St. Michael the Archangel, if the same be lawfully demanded, To the Intent that, by virtue of these presents, and by force of the Statute for transferring uses into possession, they, the said Abraham De Peyster, Philip Courtlandt, in right amsior, John Hamilton and Elizabeth his wife, Isaac De Peyster and Ann his wife, and Peter De Peyster, may be in the actual possession of the said premises with their appurtenances, and thereby be enabled to accept and take a grant and release of the reversion and inheritance thereof to them and their heirs, to the proper use and behoof of them, the said Abraham De Peyster, Philip Courtlandt, John Hamilton and Elizabeth his wife, Isaac De Peyster and Ann his wife, and Peter De Peyster, their heirs and assigns forever. In witness whereof the said parties have to these presents interchangeably set their hands and seals, the day and year first above written.

Signed,

C. DE PEYSTER.

Sealed and delivered in the presence of the several raisures and interlineations, having been first made in the within indenture as certified by the said Cornelius De Peyster.

MARY DE PEYSTER.

JNO. CHAMBERS.<sup>a</sup>

This Indenture made the eighth day of August, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and sixty-three between Abraham De Peyster, of the city of New York, Esq., Elizabeth Hamilton, of the city of New York, widow, Isaac De Peyster, of the city of New York, gentleman, and Ann, his wife, and Peter De Peyster, of the city of New York, gentleman, of the first part, and Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton, of the County of Westchester in the province of New York, yeomen and their associates of the second part; whereas His most gracious Majesty King William the Third of glorious memory by his Letters Patent under the great seal of the province of New York bearing date the fourteenth day of February in the fourteenth year of his reign granted unto Robert Waters, Leigh Atwood, Cornelius De Peyster and others and to their Heirs and assigns for ever, All that certain Tract of land in the County of Westchester; bounded northerly by the manor of Cortland, easterly with Bedford line of three miles square, the White Field and Byram River, southerly by the land of John Harrison, Rye line stretching to Byram River aforesaid and the White Plains, and westerly by Bruncks River and the manor of Philipsburgh (excepting out of the bounds aforesaid all the land within Richbell's Patent) which said Tract is now called and known by the name of the West Patent; and whereas the said Cornelius De Peyster, one of the Patentees in the said Letters Patent named by Indentures of Lease and Release bearing date the twenty-third and twenty-fourth days of October, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and thirty-eight, reciting as therein is recited, did grant and convey

<sup>a</sup> Copied from the original in the possession of D. W. Smith, Kensico, N. Y.

among other things one undivided tenth part and all other Part, Purpart and Share, Part, Purparts and Shares of him the said Cornelius De Peyster of all that the said Tract of land above mentioned with the appurtenances unto the said Abraham De Peyster, Philip Van Cortlandt since deceased by the name of Philip Courtland, of the city of New York, merchant, John Hamilton since deceased and the said Elizabeth, then his wife, and the said Isaac De Peyster and Ann, his wife, and Peter De Peyster, their heirs and assigns for ever To have and to hold one fifth part thereof to the said Abraham De Peyster, his heirs and assigns for ever, one other fifth part thereof to the said Philip Van Cortlandt, his heirs and assigns for ever, one other fifth part thereof to the said John Hamilton and Elizabeth, his wife, their heirs and assigns for ever, one other fifth part thereof to the said Isaac De Peyster and Ann, his wife, their heirs and assigns for ever, and the other fifth part thereof to the said Peter De Peyster, his heirs and assigns for ever; and whereas the said John Hamilton is since deceased, and the said Elizabeth, his wife, party to these presents both survived him. Now, therefore, this indenture witnesseth that for and in consideration of the sum of eight hundred and twenty pounds lawful money of New York to the said parties of the first part in hand paid at or before the ensealing and delivery of these presents by the said parties of the second part, the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, and the said parties of the second part their Heirs, Executors, Administrators and Assigns thereof and therefrom and of and from every part and parcel thereof acquitted, released and for ever discharged by these presents, they the said Abraham De Peyster, Elizabeth Hamilton, Isaac De Peyster and Ann, his wife, and Peter De Peyster have and each of them lots granted, bargained, sold, aliened, released and confirmed and by these Presents do and each of them doth grant and bargain, sell, alien, release and confirm unto the said Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler, and Joseph Sutton and their associates in their actual Possession now being; and to their heirs and assigns forever all the Estate, Right, Title, Interest, Trusts, Parts, Shares, Proportions, Claim and Demand whatsoever both in Law and Equity of them the said Abraham De Peyster, Elizabeth Hamilton, Isaac De Peyster and Ann, his wife, and Peter De Peyster and of each and every of them of in and to all and singular the said tract of Land and Premises in and by the said Letters Patent above in Part recited, granted or intended to be thereby granted, and every Part and Parcel thereof with the appurtenances and all Messuages, Houses, Gardens, Orchards, Land, Meadows, Commons, Pastures, Feedings, Woods, Ways, Waters, Water Courses, Easements, Profits, Commodities, Advantages, Emoluments, and Hereditaments, whatsoever to the same Tracts of land belonging or in any wise appertaining or which now are or formerly have been accepted, reputed, taken, known, used, occupied or enjoyed to or with the same or as Part, Parcel or Member thereof, or of any Part thereof and the Reversion and Reversions Remainder and Remainders, Rents and Services of all and singular the said Premises above mentioned and of every part and Parcel thereof with the appurtenances; To have and to hold all and singular the said Premises herein before granted and released, or meant, mentioned or intended to be hereby granted and released, and every part and parcel thereof, with the appurtenances, unto the said Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler, and Joseph Sutton and their associates, their Heirs and Assigns, to the only proper use and behoof of the said Benjamin Smith, Caleb Fowler and Joseph Sutton and their associates, their respective Heirs and Assigns



for ever as Tenants in common and not as Jointtenants, and whereas seven thousand acres of the above Tract of land is supposed to be now in the Possession of the Inhabitants of Bedford New Purchase, and the parties to these Presents of the second part have heretofore purchased the Rights, of John Cholwell and Robert Waters, and one half of the Rights of Richard Slater, three of the Patentees named in the said Letters Patent supposed to contain Eight Thousand acres more of some of the other Patentees, or others claiming under them four thousand seven hundred acres more; Now therefore, the said Abraham De Peyster, Elizabeth Hamilton, Isaac De Peyster, for himself and Ann, his wife, and Peter De Peyster, for themselves generally and not jointly, nor one for the other and for their respective Heirs, their respective parts, shares and proportions above particularly recited of and in the remaining Part of the said Tract of Land and Premises above mentioned, supposed to contain about twelve thousand three hundred acres, be it more or less against them the said parties of the first part and their Heirs and against all and every other Person and Persons whomsoever claiming by from or under them, or any or either of them respectively, or under the said Cornelius De Peyster the Patentee to the said parties of the second part and to their respective Heirs and Assigns for ever shall and will warrant and forever defend by these presents. For Testimony whereof the parties to these presents have hereunto interchangeably set their hand and seal the day and year first above written.

PIERRE DE PEYSTER, ANNE DE PEYSTER,  
ISAAC DE PEYSTER, ELIZABETH HAMILTON,

Sealed and delivered in the presence of,

A. D: PEYSTER.

By ABRAHAM DE PEYSTER in the presence of  
SAMUEL JONES; CATHARINE LIVINGSTON, by  
ELIZABETH HAMILTON in the presence of TOBIAS  
HOETRABURGH, JOHN MONTANGE.

Sealed and delivered by the within named  
ISAAC DE PEYSTER, ANN, his wife, and PETER  
DE PEYSTER in the presence of us, SAMUEL  
JONES, ABRAHAM DE PEYSTER, JUN.<sup>a</sup>

#### PATENT.

GEORGE THE SECOND, by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c.<sup>a</sup> To ALL to whom these presents shall come, Greeting: *Whereas*, our Loving Subjects, William Smith, Esq., our Attorney and Advocate-General of our Province of New York, and James Brown, of the County of Westchester, gentleman, by their humble Petition, presented to our Trusty and Well-beloved George Clinton, Esq., our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of our Province of New York and Territories therein depending in America, Vice-Admiral of the same, and Admiral of the White Squadron of our fleet, and read in Council on the second day of July, one thousand seven hundred and fifty, did pray our Letters Patent for four thousand Acres of the land called the Equivalent Lands, formerly surrendered by the Colony of Connecticut to the Colony of New York, which Petition having been then and there read in Council, did afterwards, to wit: in the same day humbly Advise our said Governor to grant to the

<sup>a</sup> Rec. of the County of Westchester, Book II., p. 305, &c., Aug. 26th, 1774, fees 17s. Endorsed by JNO. BARTOW, clerk.

Petitioners our Letters Patent for four thousand Acres of the said Lands to be laid out in one Tract only. AND WHEREAS, the said William Smith and James Brown, by their further Petition presented unto our said Governor, and read in Council on the nineteenth day of November last past, Suggesting, that by prior surveys of sundry parts of the said Equivalent Lands, they found it impossible to lay out the said four thousand Acres of Land in one place, so as to be of any Advantage to them, the Petitioners did pray that the said four thousand Acres of Land might be laid out in so many pieces as should be found Convenient; WHICH PETITION having been then and there also Read, our Council did, on the same day, humbly advise our said Governour to issue a Warrant to our Surveyor-General to survey and lay out the said Lands in any Number of Tracts not exceeding four. IN PURSUANCE whereof and in Obedience to our Royal Instructions for that purpose, our Commissioners appointed by said Instructions for the setting out of all Lands to be granted within our said Province, HAVE set out for the said Petitioners, William Smith and James Brown, ALL those four several Tracts of Land within that Tract of Land called the Equivalent Lands, lately Surrendered by our Colony of Connecticut to our Colony of New York, and which are not included in or granted by our Letters Patent, under the Great Seal of our Province of New York; the first of which Tracts begins in the Western Bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, at the South-West corner of a Tract of Land in the Lands Granted to Thomas Hawley and others, known by the name of Lot No. 9, and runs thence along the Lines of the said Lot and of a Tract of Land Granted to John Ayscough, to the Eastern Bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, then along the said Eastern Bounds one mile southerly to Lot No. 8 of the said Lands, Granted to Thomas Hawley and others, then along the North Bounds of said Lot No. 8, and of Lot No. 7, to the Western Bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, and then along the said Western Bounds to the place where this first Tract began, Containing one thousand and one hundred Acres of Land and the usual allowance for Highways, the Second of which Tracts begins at the North West corner of the Lands granted to John Ayscough, being two White Oak trees growing out of one Root, the one marked C G the other W S, being likewise the North-east Corner of Lot No. 12, of the said Lands granted to Thomas Hawley and others, and the Southeast Corner of Lot No. 13, of the same Lands, and runs thence along the bounds of the said Lands granted to Thomas Hawley and others, being the Line of the said Lott No. 13 to Lott No. 16, then along the bounds of said Lott No. 16 to Lott No. 18, then along the line of the said Lott No. 18 to the Eastern Bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, then along the said Eastern Boundary two hundred and seventeen Chains and two Rods to the said Lands granted to John Ayscough, and then along his Line to the place where this Second Tract began, Containing one thousand Acres of Land, and the usual allowance for Highways; the third of which Tracts begins at the twenty-eighth Mile Monument in the Western bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, and runs thence South eighty-three degrees, East sixty-seven Chains, then North twelve degrees and thirty minutes, East twenty Chains, then South seventy-seven degrees and thirty minutes, East forty Chains, then South twelve degrees and thirty minutes, West one hundred and three Chains to Lott No. 44, of the said Lands granted to Thomas Hawley and others, and then along the Lines of said Lott and of Lott No. 43 to the Western Bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, and then along the said Bounds to the place where this third

Tract began, Containing eight hundred and ninety Acres of Land and the usual allowance for Highways, and the fourth of which Tracts begins at a Rock with a heap of Stones upon it, which is at forty-two Chains distance, measured on a Line running North eighty degrees East from the thirtieth Mile Monument in the western Bounds of the said Equivalent Lands, and runs from said Rock South twelve degrees and thirty minutes West eighty Chains, then south seventy-seven degrees and thirty minutes East fifty-four chains, then North ninety chains, then East fifteen Chains, then North fifty-five Chains, then North seventy-eight degrees, thirty minutes, West thirty-seven Chains, then South twelve degrees and thirty minutes West sixty-two Chains to the place where this fourth Tract began, Containing six hundred Acres of Land and the usual allowance for highways, the said four Tracts Containing together three thousand, five hundred and ninety Acres of Land, and the usual allowance for Highways; and in Setting out thereof the said Commissioners have had regard to the profitable and unprofitable Acres, and have taken care that the Length of the said Tracts, or either of them, do not extend along the Banks of any River otherwise than is Conformable to our Royal Instructions for that purpose, as by a Certificate thereof under their hands, bearing date the thirtieth day of July last past, and entered on Record in our Secretary's Office in our City of New York, may more fully appear, which said Four Tracts of Land, Set out as aforesaid, according to our Royal Instructions, We being willing to Grant to the said William Smith and James Brown, their Heirs and Assigns forever, KNOW YE, that of our especial Grace, certain Knowledge and mere motion, We have given, granted, Ratified and Confirmed, and Do by these presents for us, our Heirs and Successors, Give, Grant, Ratify and Confirm unto the said William Smith and James Brown, their Heirs and Assigns forever, ALL the said Tracts or Parcels of land so set out, marked, abutted, bounded, mentioned and described as is above expressed Concerning the same, TOGETHER with all and singular the Woods, Underwoods, Trees, Timbers, Feedings, Pastures, Meadows, marshes, Swamps, Ways, Waters, Water-Courses, Rivers, Brooks, Rivulets, Runs and STREAMS of Waters, Fishings, Fowling, Hunting and Hawking, Mines and Minerals of all sorts whatsoever, (except Gold mines and Silver mines,) which now are standing, growing, lying, being or found, or at any time hereafter shall be standing, growing, lying, being or found in or upon the above Granted Lands, or any part thereof, or within the Bounds or Limits of the same, and all the profits, liberties, privileges, Tenements, Hereditaments and Appurtenances whatsoever to the same Lands and premises, or any part thereof belonging or in any wise appertaining, and all our Estate, Right, Title, Interest, Possession, Benefit, Claim and demand whatsoever, of, in and to the same Lands and Premises, and every or any part thereof, and the Reversion and Reversions, Remainder and Remainders, of all and Singular the said premises, Except also and always reserved out of this our present Grant, unto us, our Heirs and Successors, for ever, ALL Trees of the Diameter of twenty-four inches, and upwards at twelve inches from the Ground, for Masts for our Royal Navy, and also all such other Trees as may be fit to make Planks, Knees and other things necessary for the use of our said navy, only which now are standing, Growing or being, or at any time hereafter shall be standing, Growing or being in or upon the above Granted Lands, or any part thereof, with free Liberty and lycence for any person or persons whatsoever, by us, our Heirs or Successors, to be thereunto especially appointed under our or their Sign

Manual, either with or without workmen, Horses, Wagons, Carts, or any other Carriages, to enter and come into and upon the said Lands, and every or any part thereof; and there to fall, cut down, root up, Hew, Square, Saw, work up, Have, Take and Carry away the same for the uses aforesaid. To HAVE AND TO HOLD the one moiety or half part of the said Tracts or Parcells of land, Tenements, Hereditaments, Mines, Minerals and Premises, with their and every of their Appurtenances, by these presents Granted, Ratified and Confirmed, or meant, mentioned, or intended to be hereby Granted, Ratified and Confirmed, (except as is hereinbefore excepted) unto the said William Smith, his heirs and assigns, to the only proper use and behoof of him, the said William Smith, his Heirs and Assigns, forever; AND TO HAVE AND TO HOLD the other Moiety or half part of the said Tracts or Parcells of Lands, Tenements, Hereditaments, Mines, Minerals and Premises, with their and every of their Appurtenances, by these presents Granted, Ratified and CONFIRMED, or meant, mentioned, or intended to be hereby granted, ratified and CONFIRMED, (except as is hereinbefore excepted,) unto the said James Brown, his Heirs and Assigns to the only proper use and behoof of him, the said James Brown, his Heirs and Assigns, forever; TO BE HOLDEN of us, our Heirs and successors in free and Common Soccage, as of our Manor of East Greenwich, in the County of Kent, within our Kingdom of Great Britain, yielding, rendering and paying, therefore, yearly, and every year, forever, unto us, our Heirs, and Successors, at our Custom House, in our city of New York, unto our, or their Collector and Receiver-General there for the time being, on the Annunciation of the blessed Virgin Mary, commonly Called Lady Day, the Yearly Rent of two shillings and six pence for each hundred acres of the above Granted Lands, and so in proportion for any Lesser quantity thereof (the Land allowed for Highways only excepted) in Lieu and Stead of all other rents, Services, Dues, Duties and Demands whatsoever for the above Granted Lands, Mines, Minerals, Tenements, Hereditaments and Premises, or any part thereof, PROVIDED, always and upon Condition that if our said grantees, their Aeirs and Hssigns, or one of them, shall not, within three Years next ensuing the date hereof Plant, Settle and effectually Cultivate at least three Acres of every fifty Acres of such of the above Granted Lands as are capable of cultivation; or if our said Grantees, their Heirs or Assigns, or any other person or persons by their or either of their privity Consent or procurement shall set on fire or Burn the Wood on the said Lands, or any part thereof (so as to destroy, impair or hinder the Growth of any of the Trees there that are or may be fit for Masts, Planks, Knees or other things fit for our Royal Navy, that then, and in either of these Cases, this, our present Grant, and everything therein Contained, shall cease and be void. Anything hereinbefore Contained, to the Contrary, notwithstanding; DECLARING nevertheless that nothing in these presents, Reserved or Contained, shall or ought to be Construed to extend or be intended to prohibit, or in any wise hinder our said Grantees, their Heirs or Assigns, or either of them from such Burning of the Woods or Cutting down or falling of the Trees that are or shall be Growing or being on the above Granted Lands, or any part thereof, as shall be necessary or Conducive to the Cleaning and effectual Cultivating the same lands or any part thereof, or to or for their own use or uses. And we do hereby further Declare, that by the said Burning of the Woods is only meant and intended that our said Grantees, their Heirs and Assigns, are to be restrained only from Setting fire to and burning any Timber or Trees whilst they are standing and Grow-



ing upon the above granted lands or any part thereof. And we do likewise Declare, that the Reservation of all Trees of the Diameter of twenty-four inches and upwards, at twelve inches from the Ground, for Masts for our Royal Navy, and of such other Trees as may be fit to make Planks, Knees and other things necessary for the use of our said Royal Navy, is not and ought not to be construed to hinder our said Grantees or either of them, their or either of their Heirs or Assigns from Cleaning or effectually Cultivating the above granted Lands or any part thereof. And we do, moreover, of our especial Grace, Certain Knowledge and meer notion, Consent and Agree that this, our present Grant, being entered on Record as is hereinafter particularly expressed, shall be good and effectual in the Law to all intents, Constructions and purposes against us, our Heirs and Successors, notwithstanding any misreciting, misbouding, misnaming or other Imperfections or Omissions of or in anywise Concerning the above Granted, or intended to be hereby Granted Lands, Tenements, Hereditaments, Mines, Mineral and Premises or any part thereof. IN TESTIMONY, whereof, We have Caused these, our Letters, to be made Patent, and the Great Seal of our said Province, to be hereunto affixed, and the same to be entered on Record in our Secretary's Office in one of the Books of Patents there remaining. WITNESS our said Trusty and Well-Beloved George Clinton, our Captain-General and Governor-in-Chief of our Province of New York and Territories thereon depending, in America, Vice-Admiral of the same and Admiral of the White Squadron of our Fleet, at our Fort, in our city of New York, the second day of August, in the Year of our Lord, one thousand, seven hundred and fifty-two, and our Reign the twenty-sixth.

CLARKE, JUN.

In the preceeding certificate and Letters Patent, the following erasures, &c., appear, viz: page 449, line 11 (Smith) wrote on erasure; line 15 and 16 (the first of which tracts) obliterated; last line of same page, (the) obliterated; page 452, between the 2d and 3d lines, (begins); between 10 and 11 lines, (first) interl<sup>d</sup>; line 20, (the) obliterated, and page 453, line 19th, (purpose) wrote on erasure. Exam<sup>d</sup> and Comp<sup>d</sup> with the Original, by me.

GEORGE BANYAR, D. Sec'y.

I do hereby Certify the preceeding Certificate and Patent to be true Copies of their respective Original records, word *Petitioners*, 15 line, page 451, on Rasure. Compared therewith by me.

LEWIS A. SCOTT, *Secretary*.

# THE TOWN OF NORTH SALEM.

---

North Salem is situated twenty-four miles north of the village of White Plains, distant fifty-six miles from New York, and one hundred and twenty-two from Albany, bounded North by Putnam County, East by the State of Connecticut, South by Lewisboro', and West by Somers. Its extent east and west is about six miles, medial width four miles.

Prior to the Revolution, the two towns of Upper and Lower Salem constituted the old township of Salem proper within Cortlandt's manor. The present township was erected on the 7th of March, 1790.

Upon the 8th of August, A.D. 1699, Sachima Wicker, sachem of Kightawonck and his associates sold to Stephanus Van Cortlandt, all their rights as owners and proprietors in the "land lying and being within Cortlandt's manor, beginning on the south side of Kightawonck creek, and so along the said creek to a place called Kewighecock, and from thence along a creek called Peppeneghek to the head thereof, and then *due east to the limits of Connecticut*, and from thence northerly along the limits of Connecticut aforesaid, to the river *Matteglicos* ten miles, and from thence due west to the Hudson river, &c., &c."<sup>a</sup>

A portion of the Salem lands, if not the whole, may have originally belonged to the great sachem Catonah, whose territory extended from the Sound as far north as Danbury in Connecticut; his possessions on the west appear to have been bounded by the western line of Bedford.

"In the year 1708, John Belden, Samuel Keeler, Matthew Seymour, Matthias St. John, and other inhabitants of Norwalk, purchased a large tract of land (the north-west corner of which was styled by the natives, Mamanusquag) lying between that town and Danbury, bounded west on *the partition line* between Connecticut and New York. This purchase

---

<sup>a</sup> See Cortlandt.

was made of Catonah, the chief sachem, and the other Indians, who were the proprietors of that part of the country."<sup>a</sup>

Van der Donck, the historian, in his map of 1656, locates the Indian village of Pechquenakonck somewhere in this vicinity. The Indian burying ground is situated on the estate of the late Hon. Isaac Purdy, in this town, a little north-west of the mansion house. In 1778 upwards of forty mounds were visible. Vast quantities of arrow and spear heads are found on the higher grounds of this town, showing that Mamanusquag and Appamaghphogh were once great hunting grounds. The Titicus river still retains a portion of its ancient Indian name, Mutighticoos.<sup>b</sup> This beautiful stream rises from the West Mountain, a portion of the "Asproom Ledges" or hills, in the town of Ridgefield, Connecticut, upon the estate of Thomas Smith, commonly designated as the "Indian Farm," near which were the two ponds denominated Nassopack and Askeeto. Tradition asserts that the Mutighticoos was sometimes called *Buffalo Creek*. What similarity exists between the Indian name and its English substitute, or if any, we are unable at this distant period to determine. The latter certainly bears ample testimony to the fact, that the vast gorges of the Highlands and these vales once abounded with the buffalo. Van der Donck, the patroon of Yonkers, writing in 1656, says of this animal: "Buffaloes are also tolerably plenty; these animals mostly keep towards the southwest, where few people go." "Again, it is remarked (says the same writer) that the half of these animals have disappeared and left the country."<sup>c</sup> It ought to be remembered that, long after the discovery of this country by the Dutch in 1609, and up to a very late period, Salem and the adjoining territory was an unexplored wilderness. A small tributary of the Mutighticoos bears the Indian name of Mopus.

Stephanus van Cortlandt, the first grantee under the Indians, by his last will, dated 14th of April, 1700, devised and bequeathed the whole manor of Cortlandt to his eleven children, who thus became seized in fee. In 1734 the devisees and the legal heirs of those who were dead, made a partition of the manor among themselves. By this division, North Salem fell to the share of Mr. Andrew Teller, Col. John Schuyler and Stephen de Lancey, in the following order:—north lot, No. 8, Andrew Teller; ditto No. 9, John Schuyler; ditto No. 10, Stephen de Lancey.

The latter individual subsequently became vested in lot No. 9. The

<sup>a</sup> Trumbull's Hist. of Connecticut. Philip Money, a lineal descendant of the aboriginal proprietors was living in this town, A.D. 1784. Absalom, the son of Philip, left issue, Philip and Philander, besides a daughter, Sarah.

<sup>b</sup> So called in the Cortlandt Manor map.

<sup>c</sup> Van der Donck's Hist. of the New Netherlands, N. Y. Hist. Soc. vol. i. 168.

two lots together were called "De Lancey Town," and form the present town of North Salem, except the small strip in the oblong.

Stephen de Lancy married Anne van Cortlandt, one of the above devisees, and left issue five sons and two daughters. By will, Stephen de Lancey devised all his property in this town to his eldest son, James de Lancey. On the 29th of December, 1744, James de Lancey conveyed all his lands in North Salem to his second son, Stephen de Lancey,<sup>a</sup> whereby the latter stood seized for the use of the same for life, with remainder to his issue male, in fee tail male. The following is the indenture:—

This indenture, made the twenty-ninth day of December, in the year one thousand, seven hundred and forty-four, between James de Lancey, Esq., Chief Justice of the Province of New York, of the one part, and Stephen de Lancey, son of the said James de Lancey, of the other part, witnesseth, that the said James, for, and in consideration of the natural love and affection which he, the said James, beareth to his said second son Stephen, doth for him and his heirs, covenant and grant to and with the said Stephen and his heirs, that the said James and his heirs shall and will, from henceforth, stand and be seized of, and in all that tract or parcel of land in the manor of Cortlandt, in the county of Westchester, distinguished and known by the name of north lot, number nine, and north lot, number ten, whereof the said James is now seized of an estate in fee simple, to the use of the said James for and during the term of his natural life, and after his decease to and for the use of his said son Stephen, for and during the term of his natural life; and, after his decease, to the use and behoof of the heirs male of his body, lawfully begotten, and for default of such issue, to the use and behoof of the right heirs of him, the said James, for ever—

Provided always, and it is hereby covenanted and agreed by and between the said parties to these presents, that it shall and may be lawful to and for the said James at any time or times during his natural life by his last will in writing, by him signed and published in the presence of two or more credible witnesses, or by any other writing or writings by him signed and sealed in the presence of two or more credible witnesses, to revoke or alter all or any the use or uses of all or any part of the said land and premises, any thing in these presents contained to the contrary notwithstanding. In witness whereof, the parties to these presents have interchangeably put their seals the day and year above written.

JAMES DE LANCEY.<sup>b</sup>

Sealed and delivered in the presence of

A. DE PEYSTER,  
J. ROBERTS.

The De Lancy Patent, as it was sometimes called, embraced Great North Lot, Nos. 9 and 10, of the manor of Cortlandt. These were again subdivided into thirty-six smaller lots or farms, which were leased on long terms by Stephen de Lancey. The whole was about four miles

<sup>b</sup> For a full account of this family, see Mamaroneck.

<sup>a</sup> The above was drawn by Chief Justice de Lancey, and is in his own hand-writing.



square. In the year 1769, Stephen de Lancey and Hannah, his wife, conveyed to the Rev. Epenetus Townsend certain lands situate in North Lot, No. 10. The same year, also, part of farm No. 12, in Great North Lot, No. 10, to Nathaniel Delavan. Prior to the year 1775, Stephen de Lancey re-leased certain lots in the town to the Carpenters, Baileys, Rodgers, Lobdells, Nashs, Purdys, Nortons, Tituses and Reynolds, &c., &c.

The following items are taken from the rent rolls of the De Lancey family:—

"Lot No. 25, Timothy van Scoy, tenant of one-half, for cash due for rent, January ye 1st, 1773, £1 5s." ... "No. 12, Crow Hill lot leased to Hannah Delavan, wife of Abraham Delavan, to cash due for rent, January ye 1st, 1774, the sum of £4," &c., &c.

Upon the first of Jannary, 1795, Stephen de Lancy, (sometimes called Stephen J., conveyed all the remainder of his estate in this town to his brother, John Peter de Lancey, of Mamaroneck. The last will and testament of Stephen de Lancey, who died late in 1795, commences in the following manner:—

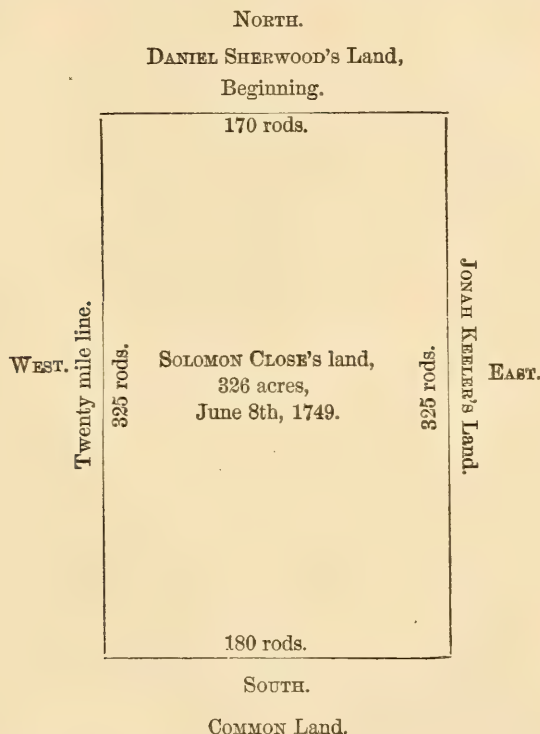
"In the name of God, Amen, I, Stephen De Lancey, a reader of divine service of the Protestant Episcopal Church, in Beeckmantown, in the county of Dutchess, and State of New York, esquire, and first principally I do commit my precious immortal, and never-dying soul into the hands of my most merciful Creator, whose I am and whom I desire to serve in the Holy Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, Who giveth life and health and all things; hoping, trusting, and relying only on the most meritorious satisfaction of our Lord Jesus Christ, before whose dreadful tribunal I and all mankind must appear and give a strict account of all their works, whether they be good or whether they are evil, and Who, I trust and am persuaded, shed His most precious blood on the altar of the cross for my eternal salvation, &c., &c. In conclusion, he desires his body may be buried under the chancel of the church at Beeckmantown, unless his brother should order otherwise," &c.<sup>a</sup>

John Peter De Lancey, by his last will, dated the 28th of January, 1823, devised all his farms and lands at North Salem, in fee (subject to the leases of the same) to his three daughters, Elizabeth Caroline, Martha Arabella and Susan Augusta De Lancey, wife of James Fenimore Cooper, Esq. From them, their father, or their uncle, Stephen De Lancey, the title, to all the lands in this town, except in the "oblong," is derived. Prior to 1731, that part of the township of Salem called "North Salem," consisted only of a tract of land about four miles square, the same being a part of Courtland's Manor. Subsequently that portion of the oblong lying east of it, was also included in the township of North Salem, thus

<sup>a</sup> Surrogate's office, White Plains.

making it about six miles from east to west and four miles from north to south.<sup>a</sup>

The "oblong" (or "Equivalent Lands"), consisting of 62,000 acres, was a strip one mile, three-quarters and twenty rods wide, and nearly sixty-two miles long, set off by Connecticut to New York, May 14th,



1731; and a grant of fifty thousand acres thereof made to Hawley & Co., on the 8th of June, 1731, which left some twelve thousand acres still vested in the Crown. The latter were denominated, common or undivided lands.

James Brown, of Ridgefield, and subsequently of Lower Salem, was one of Hawley's company; and, therefore, rightly seized of certain lands in the East Patent. The oblong map shows that he held lots 34 and

<sup>a</sup> Upon the 8th of Sept., 1775, Stephen De Lancey leased farm No. 8, in Lot No. 10, containing 176 acres, to Nathaniel Delavan, for the term of 99 years, who assigned the same to John Knox in 1788. This farm, known as the "Knox farm," was held by the De Lanceys until the lease expired by its own limitation in 1874, a portion of the same continuing in the possession of the descendants of John Knox, as tenants, till that time. In 1875 the fee was sold by the De Lanceys to Harrison Byington.

38, and parts of 29 and 78 of that grant. On the 8th day of June, 1749, James Brown, then of Norwalk, Conn., sold to Solomon Close, of Greenwich, Conn., for one hundred and sixty-three pounds, current money of New York, "a tract of land which is part of the southermost ten miles of said oblong, and is situated north of and near unto the pond called and known by the name of Long Pond, and is bounded as follows, viz: Beginning at Jonah Keeler's northwest corner and running south seventy-seven and a half degrees west, one hundred and twenty rods, then south twelve degrees and a half west, three hundred and twenty-five rods:—then north seventy-seven and a half degrees east one hundred and eighty rods:—then north, eight degrees east, three hundred and twenty-five rods; the whole containing 326 acres, be it more or less; bounded north by Daniel Sherwood's land; west by the twenty mile line; south by Common land; and east by Jonah Keeler's land."<sup>a</sup>

One of the principal proprietors of the oblong portion of this town, was the Rev. Thomas Hawley, the first pastor of the Congregational church of Ridgefield, son of General Joseph Hawley, of Northampton, Mass., who was a representative of that place as early as 1683, and a graduate of Harvard College in 1674; descended from the Hawleys<sup>b</sup> of the counties of Somerset and Dorset, England. The Rev. Thomas Hawley, who was settled as pastor at Ridgefield, in 1713, was born at Northampton, September 10th, 1689, and died at Ridgefield, November 8th, 1738, and by his wife Abigail, who died April 17th, 1749, had six sons. Joseph Hawley, the second son, was a distinguished scholar and antiquarian, and father of Ezekiel Hawley, one of the Proprietors of the oblong in 1753; also a commissioned officer in the Continental service, and chairman, throughout the Revolutionary war, of the Committee of Public Safety. Ezekiel died suddenly in 1788, leaving four sons—Ezekiel, Peter, Joel and David. Joel, the third son, was the father of the present Alfred S. Hawley, Esq., who occupies the ancient homestead in this town. Thomas Hawley, the fourth son of Rev. Thomas, was born February 20, 1722, married Elizabeth Gould, and left seven sons; the fourth, Ezekiel, had Gould Hawley, of South Salem, and William Hawley and Elijah Hawley, of Ridgefield. Abigail, only daughter of Thomas Hawley, married James Rockwell (third son of Thomas), the father of Gould Rockwell, and grandfather of the present Gould Rockwell, of Ridgefield, Conn.

The Keelers, who own much land on the southeast side of the town,

<sup>a</sup> Copied from the original deed in possession of the late Ebenezer Close, of North Salem.

<sup>b</sup> The arms of the Hawleys, &c., vert, a saltier eng. ar. Crest. An Indian's goat's head, holding a three-leaved sprig of holly ppl. Motto—*Suivez moi.*

bordering on Fairfield county, called Keelerville, are descended from Jonah Keeler, another of the proprietors of the oblong, in 1731. The first ancestor in this county, of whom we find any record, was Ralph Keeler, residing at Hartford in 1639.<sup>a</sup> In 1650, Ralph Keeler appears to have been one of the fourteen who agreed with Roger Ludlow for the settling and planting of Norwalk, and the next year bought lands of Rurckinhage and other Indians. He must have died before 1679, leaving several sons—John, Samuel, Ralph, &c., one of which was probably the Father of Jonah Keeler. Three of the same name, viz: Samuel Keeler, Sen., and his son Samuel Keeler, Jr., and Joseph Keeler, then inhabitants of Norwalk, purchased of Katonah, sachem, and other Indians, Candatowa, or Ridgefield, in 1708. In 1731-2, Jonah Keeler obtained the following release from the other patentees of the oblong, or Equivalent, on condition of his always paying the yearly quit-rent of two shillings and sixpence for each hundred acres of land, "to our Lord, the King, at Lady Day, yearly."

#### RELEASE OF OBLONG PROPRIETORS TO JONAH KEELER.

This Indenture, made this 10th day of March, in ye sixth year of ye reign of our Sovereign Lord, George the Second, King of Great Britain, &c., Annoq Domini 1731-2, witnesseth, that whereas we, Thomas Halwey, Nathan St. John, Samuel Smith, Benjamin Benedict, Richard Olmsted, Thomas Smith, Ebenezer Smith, David Sherwood, Benjamin Burt, Thomas Hyatt, Benjamin Willson, Joseph Lee, Joseph Keeler, James Benedict, Richard Osburn, Samuel Smith, Daniel Olmsted, Timothy Keeler, Matthew Seamore, Joseph Northup and James Brown, together with Adam Ireland, Benjamin Birdsall and John Thomas, having jointly obtained a patent of fifty thousand acres of ye Oblong or Equivalent lands, of his Excellency John Montgomery, Esq., late Governor of New York, and having since obtained a release of said Ireland, Birdsall and John Thomas, of the Southern ten miles of said pattend, and others also, whose names are not in said pattend or release, being interested therein by obligation from us, and no division having been made of ye premises. Wherefore, we, Thomas Hawley, Nathan St. John, Samuel Smith, Benjamin Benedict, Richard Olmsted, Thomas Smith, Ebenezer Smith, Daniel Sherwood, Benjamin Burt, Thomas Hyatt, Benjamin Willson, Joseph Lee, Joseph Keeler, James Benedict, Richard Osburn, Samuel Smith, Daniel Olmsted, Timothy Keeler, Matthew Seamore, Joseph Northrup and James Brown, do now proceed to make a division thereof; and do give, grant, enfeoff, aliene, convey, release and confirm, and by these presents have given, granted, enfeoffed, aliened, conveyed and confirmed, unto Jonah Keeler, his heirs and assigns forever, on consideration of a lease obtained of said Jonah Keeler, and bearing date herewith, the Following tract of Land, viz: Be-

<sup>a</sup> E. Halls, Norwalk; p. 19—ditto. p. 32-35. For a table of "estates of lands, and accommodations for Norwalk, in 1655, occurs the names of Ralph and Walter Keeler. E. Halls, Norwalk, p. 17. Samuel Keeler, Jr., who married Rebecca, daughter of James Benedict, of Danbury, January 18, 1704, died 8th of May, 1763, leaving Samuel, born January 14th, 1705, and Reuben, born October 28, 1708; by his second wife left Matthew, born March 14, 1717.



ginning at James Benedict's north-west corner and runs south twenty-seven degrees and a half west an hundred and fifty rods ; then south eight degrees west three hundred and twenty-five rods, then north twenty-seven degrees and an half, east an hundred and eighty rods, then north fourteen degrees east, an hundred, sixty and five rods, then north fourteen degrees, west an hundred and fifty rods, and is bounded South by undivided land, West, by James Brown, north, Joseph Keeler and Daniel Sherwood, east, Thomas Smith and Ensign Benedict. The said Keeler being in lawful possession thereof. To Have and to Hold said granted and released premises, with all ye privileges and appurtenances, to ye same belonging or in any wise appertaining, as timbers, trees, stones, minerals, water-courses, springs, herbage, and all profits and advantages y<sup>t</sup> may arise, or whatever may in any wise accrue therefrom, & We, ye above named Thomas Hawley, Matthew St. John, Samuel Smith, Benjamin Benedict, &c., and all ye afore-mentioned proprietors of said released ten miles, say we have released, made over and granted ye above described tract of land, unto said Jonah Keeler, his heirs and assigns forever, to his and their sole and proper use and behoof and benefitt, who shall and may forever, by virtue hereof, Enter upon, possess and Enjoy ye same, convey, convert, alienate and improve it in what way and manner, to what use and end soever the said Keeler, his heirs and assigns shall see convenient ; yet reserving to ourselves, heirs and assigns, ye usual allowance of five acres to ye hundred, for high-ways and roads, which shall be laid out by a committee choosen from time to time (as occasion requires) by ye major of ye said proprietors of said released ten miles, ye major part to be derived by their interest, which roads and highways shall be laid out in such place and manner as said committee shall see necessary and most convenient ; and we, ye above named Thomas Hawley, Nathan St. John, Samuel Smith, &c., and ye rest of ye proprietors above said, do Joyntly and Severally Covenant and agree for ourselves and heirs and assigns, with ye said Jonah Keeler, his heirs and assigns, shall and may freely and clearly for Ever, Have, Hold and Enjoy ye above released premises, without any manner of claim or incumbrance whatsoever saving : y<sup>t</sup> we do hereby oblige said Keeler, his heirs and assigns, within ye space of three years from ye date hereof, effectually to cultivate three acres in every fifty, according to Pattern ; and 'tis also understood, and t'is the true intent and meaning of both parties of ye said Keeler, his heirs and assigns, shall always pay ye yearly quit-rent at ye rate of two shillings and sixpence for each of hundred acres reserved, payable by Letters patent to our Lord ye King : at Lady day yearly and this we insert as an abiding duty and obligation always attending this release, and as a special Condition thereof. Furthermore, we, ye said Thomas Hawley, Nathan St. John, Sam<sup>l</sup> Smith, Benjamin Benedict, Thomas Smith, Ebne<sup>r</sup> Smith, Daniel Sherwood, Benjamin Burt, Thomas Hyatt, Benjamin Willson, Joseph Lee, Joseph Keeler, James Benedict, Richard Osburn, Sam<sup>l</sup> Smith, Daniel Olmsted, Timothy Keeler, Matthew Seamore, Joseph Northrup, and James Brown, and ye survivors and survivour of us, our heirs and assigns, shall, and will, at any time hereafter upon ye reasonable request and at ye cost and charge in ye law, of ye said Jonah Keeler, his heirs or assigns, make, do, acknowledge, Execute and Perform all such further and reasonable act and acts, thing and things, assurances and conveyances in the law for ye more perfect describing, limiting, conveying or assuring ye above released premises unto ye said Keeler, his heirs and assigns

(provided ye same do not contain further Covenants, than are contained in these presents, or anything contrary to ye true intent and meaning hereof, as by ye said Jonah Keeler, his heirs and assigns, or his and their Council learned in ye law, shall be reasonably advised, devised or required. In witness, whereof, we do hereunto set our names and seals ye day and year above written.

In presence of us witnesses :

RECOMPEN THOMAS,  
JOHN ROCKWELL,

THOMAS HAWLEY,	BENJAMIN BENEDICT,
RICHARD OLMSTEAD,	BENJAMIN BURT,
JOSEPH LEE,	JOSEPH NORTHRUP,
THOMAS SMITH,	DANIEL OLMSTED,
NATHAN SAINT JOHN,	JOSEPH KEELER,
EBENEZER SMITH,	TIMOTHY KEELER,
THOMAS HYATT,	JAMES BENEDICT,
SAMUEL SMITH,	DANIEL SHEERWOOD,
RICHARD OSBURN,	MATTHEW SEAMORE,
BENJAMIN WILLSON,	JAMES BROWN,
SAMUEL SMITH.	

Memorandum this 20th day of March, 1738, then appeared before me Recompence Thomas and under oath declared that he sawe all the grantors signe this Release, and also sawe John Rockwell signe with him, as a witness to the same and I have examined and finde no metterall mistak, and allowe the same to be Recorded.

JOHN THOMAS, *ye Judge.*<sup>a</sup>

Jonah Keeler was one of the first settlers in this part of the Town, and when he moved up here from Ridgefield it was a complete wilderness infested with bears and wolves. His first residence was a log cabin which formerly stood near the brook adjoining the present mansion of Floyd Keeler. His son, Jeremiah Keeler, by will devised the Keeler estate to his three sons, Jonah, Nathan and Lewis; the two former bought out their younger brother's interest. Jonah Keeler, Jr., left two sons—Walter and Jesse B. Keeler—who with Floyd, the son of Nathan, now jointly own Keelerville which consists of three hundred acres. Lewis Keeler, the youngest son of Jeremiah, removed to Madison County, N. Y., and left four sons—Sarles, Joel, Hiram and George.

The views from Floyd Keeler's residence are, indeed, charming; embracing hills and woods, and a fine panoramic landscape of the Mutigticoos valley looking north-west with the distant mountains bordering on Putnam County and Hudson River. On the north is the mansion of Mr. Walter Keeler, beautifully surrounded with evergreens and other shubbery. This gentleman has done much to improve the neighboring village of North Salem, having erected a fine store in the upper portion

<sup>a</sup> Copied from the original document in the possession of Floyd Keeler, Esq., of Keelerville, North Salem. Endorsed on the back March 1, 1774; recorded in Lib. No. 2, folio 10, per Abijah Gilbert, clerk.

of which is occupied as Union Hall a large room for assemblies and public occasions while adjoining is Floral Hall for fairs and horticultural exhibitions.

In the midland section of the town are some fine grazing farms; among which may be mentioned the Lobdell estate. This property originally consisting of nearly two hundred acres was formerly included in the manor of Cortlandt, and leased by Ebenezer Lobdell of Stephen James De Lancey before the Revolution, and subsequently purchased by him at a sheriff's sale. Ebenezer Lobdell at his death divided the farm between his two sons, Ebenezer and Jacob; the latter had four sons—Anson, Nathan, Joshua and Samuel. Nathan was the father of the present Mr. Henry Lobdell, who resides on a portion of the old estate.

This parish, which appears to have been formerly united with Ridgefield and Ridgebury, was first organized under the ministry of the Rev. Ebenezer Dibblee, D.D., of Stamford, Conn., about the year 1749.<sup>a</sup> At that period, there was no minister of the Church in the county nearer than Rye, between thirty and forty miles distant from Salem.

Mr. Dibblee was the eldest son of Wakefield Dibblee, of Danbury, Conn., whose ancestor, Thomas Dibblee,<sup>b</sup> was a freeman of Dorchester, Mass., in 1639. He was born at Danbury, in 1712. In the will of Wakefield Dibblee, which was proved May 2d, 1734, he directs his executors to pay all "ye charges which do, or may arise upon ye education of his son Ebenezer; also £30 towards furnishing him with books," &c.<sup>c</sup>

Mr. Dibblee was graduated A.M. and S.T.D. at Yale, in 1734, and D.D. at Columbia, in 1793. After leaving college he was at first licensed as a candidate among the Dissenters, and allowed to preach in their congregations; he soon, however, left the Congregational persuasion of religion, and became a convert to the Episcopal Church. He went to England for Holy orders in 1747, returned to New York the 23d of October, 1748, and was appointed missionary at Stamford, where he arrived on the 25th.<sup>d</sup>

The following extract occurs in a letter of his to the Venerable Society:

---

<sup>a</sup> Dr. Dibblee, says: "Arrived at my mission (Stamford) the 26th of October, 1748, and began to do duty the Sunday following." From his parochial register it appears that his first ministrations commenced in the oblong November 11, 1749; and he continued, with but short intervals, his services both in the Oblong and Cortland Manor, until February, 1790.

<sup>b</sup> Arms of Dibblee or Dibble—'Sa, on a chief arg. a lion passant, gu.—Crest, on a chapeau a lion statant guardant and ducally gorged, tail extended.

<sup>c</sup> Will made January 1st, 1733-34. Fairfield Prob. Rec. 1716-1735, page 263.

<sup>d</sup> Conn. MSS. from archives at Fulham (Hawks).

## MR. DIBBLEE TO THE SECRETARY.

"STAMFORD, IN CONN., N. E., March 25th, 1761.

"REV. SIR:—I preached at Salem, in the Upper District, on Sunday, the 22d of February last, to a very large congregation; and the poor people scattered about in the wilderness, are, I am informed, concerting measures to build a small church, as a private house will seldom contain the people that went to church when I preach among them—which is as often as the duties of my extensive mission will permit."<sup>a</sup>

The next year, Mr. St. George Talbot, a liberal benefactor of the Church in this county, thus addresses the same:

## TO THE SECRETARY.

(Extract.)

"BARN ISLAND, July 10, 1763.

"On my return from Connecticut I desired Mr. Dibblee to accompany me to Salem, where he preached the first Sunday in Trinity to a large congregation; notwithstanding it was a very rainy day, too many to be accommodated in a private house, and gave the communion to about thirty persons, who behaved very decently. There they have built and almost covered a church; this is in the Province of New York, which people Mr. Dibblee hath taken principally care of for several years. This church at Salem is about four miles from Ridgebury, to the west, and seven miles from Ridgefield, where they have raised a church, &c."<sup>b</sup>

The church to which Mr. Talbot alludes, in the foregoing letter, was built on land given for that purpose by Stephen de Lancey, in 1763, and appears to have been first opened for Divine worship on Sunday the 31st of August, 1766, by the Rev. Ebenezer Dibblee; who, a few months later, sends the subjoined communication to the secretary:—

[Extract.]

"STAMFORD, CONN., N. E., Oct. 7th, 1766.

"REV. SIR:—I preached on Sunday, in August,<sup>c</sup> in the new church in the upper district of Salem, to a numerous and devoutly-behaved congregation; and gave the Holy Communion to about thirty communicants, and baptised fifteen children. In compassion to their circumstances, and the people of Ridgebury and Ridgefield, who are contiguous upon the borders of Connecticut, Mr. Leaming and I have recommended to read divine service and sermons to them, Mr. Epenetus Townsend—a very exemplary, sober, worthy young gentleman, gradu-

<sup>a</sup> Conn. MSS. from archives at Fulham (Hawks).

<sup>b</sup> New York MSS., from archives at Fulham, vol. i, p. 317.

<sup>c</sup> Dr. Dibblee records the following in his register:—"Salem, Sunday, 1776, Aug. 31," baptised "Fred. Knox, Rob't Knox, Jos. Lobdell, Daniel Lobdell, Levy Lobdell, Jacob Lobdell, Rob't Lobdell, Ebenezer Lobdell, Abigail Cable, Sam'l Cable, Mary Morehouse, John and Deborah Morehouse, Theophilus, Daniel and Mary Morehouse, Philip Pukett Platt, Isaac Platt, Jemima Patterson, William and Anna Patterson, (two children, names and parents forgotten,) Cornelius Delivan, Timothy and Hannah Delivan, Stephen Brush, Stephen and Abia Brush, Sarah Palmer, Gideon and Jane Palmer, Walter Lockwood, Joseph and Ann Lockwood." On Sunday, the 25th of August, 1765, he had baptized fifteen at Salem. (St. John's Rec., Stamford.)



ated at King's College, New York, who is very acceptable to the people, whom we wish to have settled among them, provided, upon their qualifying themselves, they might be so happy as to obtain the Honorable Society's encouragement. Contiguous to Salem is Cortlandt's manor and Philipse's Patent, where numbers of poor people are settled, and stand in great need of proper instruction—many already professing, and others well disposed to our holy Church, notwithstanding their distance, it being about twenty-five miles to the upper district of Salem. As no other missionary is contiguous—to be as extremely useful as may be, and in tenderness to their spiritual wants—I have afforded them what assistance I could, consistent with the duties of my particular curè, for fifteen or sixteen years past, to the prejudice of my family, and my income for twelve years, being too considerable to my necessities."<sup>a</sup>

The worthy and venerable Dr. Dibblee, the founder of this parish, died at Stamford, Conn., Thursday, May 9th, 1799, "old and full of days, highly respected and much lamented by his congregations. His funeral was attended by a large concourse of people, and he went to the grave like a shock of corn, fully ripe for the garner."<sup>b</sup> "He is described as a venerable man, of dignified appearance; his long white locks flowing gracefully over his shoulders."<sup>c</sup> A neat marble tablet has been since erected over his remains in St. John's church, Stamford, which bears the following inscription:

I. H. S.

REV. EBENEZER DIBBLEE, D.D.,

Rector of St. John's Church,

Stamford, Conn.

As a missionary of the Society of the Gospel in Foreign parts, he entered upon the duties of his sacred office, October 26th, 1748, and continued to discharge them in this capacity with great fidelity and zeal until the close of the Revolutionary war. Subsequently to this period he fulfilled his duties unconnected with the Society in England until 1799, when he died full of years, in peace with God and charity with man.

As Rector of St. John's parish for 51 years, he became endeared to all by his unwavering devotion to their best interests, his holy life and unwearied zeal in the cause of Christ and His Church."

About the year 1764, this parish united with the churches of Ridgefield and Ridgebury, in Connecticut, and engaged Mr. Richard S.

<sup>a</sup> Conn. MSS. from archives at Fulham, p. 520. (Hawks.) One of the missionaries of the Society, writing in 1760, says:—"Rye tried to prevail upon him, (Mr. Dibblee,) but the good man, though in greater need of better support, apprehensive of the great detriment it would be to that Church (Stamford) has refused."

<sup>b</sup> Churchman's Magazine, new series, vol. iv: 269-270.

<sup>c</sup> Meade's Hist. of Greenwich; p. 271.

Clarke<sup>a</sup> to read divine service and sermons on Sundays. He was succeeded by Mr. Epenetus Townsend, who had been strongly recommended by Dr. Dibblee, as a lay reader.

On the 17th of October, 1767, the Rev. Samuel Auchmuty, D.D., rector of Trinity church, New York, addressed a letter to the Venerable Propagation Society, enclosing the following petition from the church-wardens and vestrymen of Salem:—

THE CHURCH-WARDENS AND VESTRY OF SALEM, &c., TO THE SECRETARY.

“SALEM IN WESTCHESTER COUNTY, PROVINCE OF NEW YORK, }  
AUGUST 31st, 1767. }

MAY IT PLEASE THE VENERABLE SOCIETY :

We, the church-wardens and vestry of Salem, and parts contiguous in the Province of New York in America, beg leave in behalf of ourselves and poor brethren, professors of the Church of England, to lay before you our unhappy circumstances; for want of proper religious instruction and constant administration of God's word and sacraments, according to our religious profession, there being no minister of our Holy Church in the Province nearer than Rye, between thirty and forty miles distant to Salem, and upon Cortlandt's manor and Philipse's patent. Many of us already have a high esteem for the doctrines, worship and government of the Church of England; some of us embrace every opportunity we have of communicating with the same, and a number of others are well disposed to the Church, many of whom are not under the care of a minister of any denomination. Through the goodness and compassion of the Rev. Mr. Dibblee, the nearest missionary (about twenty-five miles distant), who for many years hath annually visited, preached and administered divine ordinances to us and our children, as often as he judges consistent with the duties of his extensive curé, our numbers, and zeal to the Church establishment have increased. To prepare the way for the settled administration of religion, we have erected a decent church with galleries, on the borders of Cortlandt's manor, a convenient spot of ground for the church and burying yard, being given us for that purpose by the good Mr. Stephen De Lancey, present proprietor. We have covered, closed and glazed the house, and have met in it for some time. As the laws of this Government have made no provision for the establishment and support of religion in general, and the Lord's Day is too little regarded; in tender regard to ourselves and families, and to prevent our children falling a prey to one or more of the numerous sects, which abound among us—such as Quakers, New Light Independents, Baptists, Antinomians, &c., whose principles, both civil and religious, we think destructive of all religion, peace and good order—we formerly united with our brethren of the Church at Ridgefield and Ridgebury, on the borders of Con-

<sup>a</sup> Richard Clarke was the fifth son of Samuel Clarke, of West Haven, Conn., where he was born A.D. 1737. He was graduated A.M. at Yale, in 1762. He received also the degree of B.A. from Kings (now Columbia) College, New York, the same year, and that of A.M. in 1766. In 1776, went to England for Holy orders, and was licensed February 25, 1767. He was first appointed to Guilford, Conn., where he remained until 1786; then went to New Brunswick and was settled at Gazetoria, in that Province. A son of his is the present minister of that parish. He died at St. Stephen's, on the St. Croix, in 1824.

necticut Colony, and engaged the Rev. Mr. Clark to read divine service and sermons to us on Sundays. Since Mr. Clark left us, by the advice of the Rev. Mr. Dibblee and Mr. Leaming, we have employed the worthy Mr. Epenetus Townsend, who hath for some time alternately read to us, and the people of Ridgefield and Ridgebury; whose exemplary life, sober conversation and devout performance of religious offices, highly recommend him to our esteem; and as we have advice, that he hath leave from the Society to go for Holy Orders, we humbly beg the Venerable Society in compassion to our unhappy state, would be pleased to appoint him their missionary to us at Salem, in the Province of New York, and to itinerate among such poor people as stand in need of his instruction, with such a salary as in their wisdom they think proper. We have already purchased six acres of good land contiguous to the church, and made it over for a glebe for the use of a minister of the Church of England, or missionary for the time being, forever, and promise to build a decent, convenient house for his use when required; and as the poor people of Ridgefield and Ridgebury by the concurrence of the Churchwardens and Vestry in this memorial hope to be indulged in being included under his care, having formerly a conjunction with some of the neighbouring places in the Province of New York experienced the goodness and compassion of the Venerable Society in appointing the Rev. Mr. Lamson to officiate among them, being many in number, having built a church in each of those places. Ridgefield but eight, and Ridgebury but four miles from Salem, but at such a distance from Norwalk that they can expect but very little service from the Rev. Mr. Leaming; whereupon we have unitedly sent our respective bonds to the Rev. Dr. Auchmuty, of New York, in trust, obliging ourselves to pay in each place equal to £10 sterling per annum, on the whole amounting to £30 per annum, to the missionary for the time being, and we no longer expect the Society's favor than we shall *continue* to deserve it."<sup>a</sup>

Upon the receipt of this petition the Society granted their request, and appointed the Rev. Epenetus Townsend, A.M., missionary; a gentleman educated in King's college, and whose exemplary life and sober conversation, they have already had experience of. He was the third son of Micajah Townsend and Elizabeth Platt, the grandson of John Townsend,<sup>b</sup> of Oyster Bay, L. I., who settled at that place in 1677. He was born at Cedar Swamp, near Oyster Bay, in April, 1742, entered King's college (now Columbia) in 1755, was admitted Bachelor of Arts *pro forma* in 1758, and graduated Master of Arts in 1762. After officiating for a short time as a lay-reader, he went to England in the Fall of 1767, for Holy Orders.

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. p. 433-5. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> This ancient family deduces its descent from Ludovic, a noble Norman, who, settling in England during the reign of Henry I, assumed the surname of Townsend, and by marrying with Elizabeth, daughter and heiress of Sir Thomas De Haville, obtained the manor of Raynham, in the county of Norfolk, which has ever since remained the possession of his descendants. Among the early English emigrants to Boston and its vicinity, were John, Henry and William Townsend, brothers. John Townsend, of Oyster Bay, in 1677, had five sons. Micajah, his second son, was born in 1699, married 23d of April, 1732, and died November 9, 1781. Micajah, in his will, made the 30th of April, 1782, proved 16th of May, 1782, bequeath "unto his son Epenetus £435, which, with that I have already given him, makes the sum of £1,800." Surrogate's Rec., N. Y.

In a letter of Oct. 1st, 1767, Mr. Dibblee of Stamford, writes to the Secretary as follows:—"Mr. Townsend thankfully accepts the leave to go home for Holy Orders; and if the Society is not pleased to appoint him their missionary at Salem and parts contiguous, where he is much wanted, he will submit to the superior wisdom and direction of the Society."<sup>a</sup> Mr. Townsend's license from the Bishop of London to officiate as a missionary in this province, bears date December 21st, 1767. The following notice of his return appeared in the *New York Mercury* for April 25th, 1768:—"The Rev. Mr. Townsend arrived last Saturday, (22d) in the 'Hope' from London." Upon the 29th of September, 1768, he informed the Venerable Society:—"That he arrived at his mission, on the 26th of May, 1768, and was kindly received. The churchwardens also of Salem, in the name of the people belonging to the mission, have returned thanks to the Society for Mr. Townsend's appointment." "At Salem and Ridgefield, there are one hundred and fifty Church people. At Ridgefield, eighty." Mr. Townsend was formally inducted on Sunday, the 29th of May, 1768, by his predecessor, the Rev. Ebenezer Dibblee, who preached a sermon on the occasion.<sup>b</sup>

Eight months prior to this event Mr. Dibblee writes, Oct. 1st, 1767:—"I preached on Sunday, 23d of August last, at Salem to a numerous and devout congregation, baptized sundry children and gave the communion the first and second Sundays after Trinity last."<sup>c</sup> Mr. Townsend was married to Lucy Beach, in St. James' church, Newtown, L. I., on the 10th of September, 1769. Upon the 13th of June, 1769, Stephen De Lancey and wife conveyed to the Rev. Epenetus Townsend "all that land being part of farm No. 12 in north lot No. 10, beginning at a white oak bush, and runs south-west twenty-six degrees, eight chains and twenty-four links, to a pile of stones, thence south-west seventeen degrees, sixteen chains and thirteen links, to a pile of stones, thence north-east eighty-eight degrees, twenty-five chains and fifty links, to a pile of stones, thence south-east seventy-four degrees and a half, six chains and forty-five links to a stake and stones by the church, then north-east fifteen degrees, five chains and thirty-five links to the *oblong line*, then south-east ten degrees, twenty-one chains and twenty-five links to a stake on the same line, then south-west to the place of beginning, containing sixty acres, inclusive of *the ground upon which the church, church yard and burying ground stand*, which is not included

<sup>a</sup> Conn. MSS. from archives at Fulham, p. 541. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> Fowler's MSS. Biographies of the clergy, vol. vi. 1061.

<sup>c</sup> Conn. MSS. from archives at Fulham, p. 541. (Hawks.) In his register Mr. Dibblee writes—"Cortlandt's manor, Province of New York, Salem, 1767, Aug. 23d, baptized James Dickinson."



in this grant. &c.<sup>a</sup> On this land, adjoining the church, Mr. Townsend erected the same year a large dwelling house, which is still standing, and occupied at one time by the late Venerable Epenetus Wallace, M. D., who was born in 1766, and a god-son of the Rev. Epenetus Townsend, by whom he was baptized on Friday, April 10th. 1767.<sup>b</sup> The above mentioned house was the one which Mr. Townsend's father enabled him to build in 1769 and the sixty acres of land which he had bought for him, all of which were taken possession of by the Continental Convention, 1776. Dr. Wallace's predecessors must have purchased the property from the executor of Micajah Townsend, father of Epenetus; for in 1786, Jonathan Townsend, executor of the last will of Micajah Townsend (died 9th of November, 1781), late of Queens County, deceased, sold lands in this town to Nath. Brown and others.<sup>c</sup> Upon the 29th of September, 1769, he thus addresses the Society:—

#### MR. TOWNSEND TO THE SECRETARY.

(Extract.)

“SALEM, PROVINCE OF NEW YORK, SEPT. 29TH, 1769.

REV. SIR:—“Having nothing of importance to acquaint the Society with in the spring, I deferred writing till now. I have constantly performed divine service equally in my three churches of Salem, Ridgefield and Ridgebury, in each of which places, people are zealous in their attendance on public worship; and I have the pleasure to observe that through the divine blessing on my labors, each of those congregations is something increased. Since my arriving to the mission I have baptized in the year past, two adults and thirty infants, and have received between three or four communicants, but expect several more, very soon. The fatigue which necessarily arises from a steady performance of my duty in these three places, I have hitherto, and I trust in God I shall for the future be enabled to undergo with cheerfulness; though I expect it will in a little while be increased—occasioned by the building of a new church in Salem, which, when it is finished, I propose, with the Society's leave, to officiate in sometimes. To acquaint the Society with the propriety of building a new church at Salem I would observe, that Salem is a township twelve miles in length and but two in breadth, joining on the one side to Connecticut and on the other partly to Cortlandt's manor, which extends twenty miles westward to Hudson river, and partly to another patent, which extends several miles westward toward Bedford, which is the utmost limit of Mr. Avery's mission. The church which is already built, is situated within about two miles of the north end of Salem, on the borders of Cortlandt's manor, as the Society was informed in the petition of the Church-wardens and Vestry. It was built by the people of this part of Salem and Cortlandt's manor in conjunction, and this congregation is something larger than either of those in Connecticut—there being generally, in

<sup>a</sup> County Rec. Lib. H., p. 384.

<sup>b</sup> Dr. Dibblee records in his register: Salem, 1767, April 10th, baptized Epenetus Wallis, John Wallis.

<sup>c</sup> County Rec.

good weather, in the summer season, upwards of two hundred people assembled. The church which I expect will soon be built in Salem, will be about five or six miles to the southward, and about two or three miles to the westward from Ridgefield, Conn., where I have been informed there are near thirty families of Church people, besides a considerable number in places very contiguous, for whom it is extremely difficult to attend public worship, either at Ridgefield, or at the church towards the north end of Salem, in the borders of Cortlandt's manor, where I reside. When this church is built, (if the Society approves of my officiating in it sometimes, besides my attendance at the other three churches,) I would request the favor of the Society to give a quarto Common Prayer Book and Bible to that, as they have to the other churches of Salem and Ridgebury. I know that my fatigue in attending so many churches must be great; and that people cannot receive so much profit as might be wished from the labors of a minister, when they are divided between so many places. But as for the fatigue, I trust that God will enable me to bear it; and I hope yet, in some future time, the Society will be able to provide better for the edification of the people, by dividing the mission, as it might conveniently be done, into two equal parts. I beg leave to request some Common Prayer books, which are very much wanted for the poor. I brought but two dozen, together with a great number of small tracts, but a much larger number of Prayer Books is required; as many people in my mission are poor and unable to purchase books or any thing that is not absolutely necessary to the maintenance of their families. I beg leave to acquaint the Society likewise, that, besides the attending the duties of my own mission, I preached last spring, on the next Sunday after Easter, at Woodbury, a town in Connecticut, thirty miles distant from Salem, to a congregation of upwards of one hundred and fifty, who behaved with the greatest decency and devotion—most of them being professors, and many of them worthy members of our Holy Church. This town, though included in Mr. Clark's mission, enjoys but a small proportion of his labors, not through any neglect of his, but by means of the extensiveness of his charge; and yet it is a town containing six parishes of Congregationalists, and part of another; in all which, there are some professors of the Church earnestly desirous, if possible, to enjoy the public worship of God according to their Holy profession. And in compliance with their earnest intreaties, till something more could be done for the supply of their spiritual wants, several of the Connecticut clergy agreed to preach among them by turns. The summer past, the first Sunday after Trinity, I preached at Sharon, a town in Connecticut adjoining this province, about fifty miles to the northward, where they have a neat little church and a pretty congregation. The next day I preached in the north precinct of the Oblong in this Province, about five or six miles from Sharon. There they have a new church just raised, which they intend to cover in the summer, and finish as soon as might be. There is a large body of people whose religious circumstances truly deserve compassion; and here, undoubtedly, would soon be a fine congregation, if they could enjoy the benefit of having a sober minister of our Church settled among them, by the assistance of the Society, which they intend earnestly to request as soon as they can qualify themselves for it, by finishing their church and procuring a glebe. I beg liberty to request a favor from the Society, which may perhaps be of considerable service to me; the professors of the Church in Connecticut are taxed for the sup-

port of the minister of the Church in the same proportion as the Congregationalists for the support of their minister. This tax is levied and collected by the Congregationalists, together with their own, and by them paid to such ministers of the Church as are appointed over them by the Society. Now, Ridgefield and Ridgebury being in Connecticut, the committee appointed for raising and paying the minister's rate at Ridgebury have been in some doubt whether I am entitled to the rates of the Church people there; because it is certain they were formerly under Mr. Leaming's care, and had no written appointment or anything from under the Society's hand to convince them that the Society had now included them within this mission. Should the Venerable Society mention Ridgefield and Ridgebury in an abstract as parts of my mission, together with Salem; or should they, in a letter to the Church-wardens and Vestry of Ridgefield and Ridgebury, or in some other method, give assurance that Ridgefield and Ridgebury belong to my mission, it must be of advantage to me, as it would remove all doubt whether I was by the laws of that Colony entitled to the Church people's rates in those places."<sup>a</sup>

In the year 1771, the Rev. Epenetus Townsend again addresses the Society as follows:—

#### MR. TOWNSEND TO THE SECRETARY.

[Extract.]

SALEM, WESTCHESTER CO., MARCH 25th, 1771.

REV. SIR:—This is a large county, full of people without any constant public worship in any method; and as they have not enjoyed the benefit of any regular and constant administration of God's word and sacraments, since the first settlement of the country, vice and immorality abound among them. The Sabbath is, by great numbers, spent in riding, visiting, hunting, fishing and such like diversions; and by some, it is profaned by practices still worse. There are some Church people, Presbyterians, Baptists and Quakers scattered among them, and great numbers who don't belong to any particular denomination of Christians. It has been proposed by some of them to build a church or Presbyterian meeting house, but nothing is yet concluded. I believe the Church people would exert themselves and immediately build a small church, were there any hopes the mission might be divided so as they might be included, and enjoy some stated portion of a minister's labors; and, indeed, considering their destitute circumstances and the prospect of advancing the interest of the Church and promoting piety among them, or at least of stopping the growth of immorality—considering also the increasing fatigue of this mission, in which are three churches at present, and a fourth building—I would humbly request, with submission to the Society, that such a division might be made; and if Danbury also was included, which is in great need of a minister of the Church, it might conveniently be divided into two equal parts, each containing three churches; and after some time, as the people grow more able, another mission might be added to great advantage, each of the three having the care of two churches."<sup>b</sup> The Society's abstracts for 1772;

<sup>a</sup> New York MSS. from archives at Fulham, Vol. ii., 490, 491, 492, 493. (Hawks.)

<sup>b</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. 549-50. (Hawks.)

say: "That Mr. Townsend, missionary at Salem, states his congregations to be increasing. Hath baptized sixty-two infants and two adults."<sup>a</sup> In 1775, they say "that Mr. Townsend is constant in the performance of his duty in his own parish and preaches frequently in the parts adjacent. From Lady Day to Michaelmas he baptized twenty-one infants and one adult, and admitted two new communicants."<sup>b</sup> The abstracts for 1776 add: "That one letter from Mr. Townsend on September 29th, 1775, gives the same account of his mission, in which he hath baptized thirty infants, buried seven, and married three couple in the preceding half year."<sup>c</sup>

The last communication the Society received from Mr. Townsend was in June, 1777, soon after he had been compelled to leave the scene of his labors by the threatening state of affairs.

#### MR. TOWNSEND TO THE SECRETARY.

"SALEM, PROVINCE OF NEW YORK, JUNE, A.D. 1777.

"REV. SIR:—From the first existence of the present rebellion, I could—give the Honorable Society no account of my conduct with respect to public affairs—because my distance from New York, and the excessive vigilance of the Rebel committees in getting and examining all letters, rendered such a step extremely dangerous; but, being now, by God's good Providence, banished from among the Rebels for my loyalty to his Majesty, I think it my duty to give the Honorable Society a short account of my conduct, from the beginning of these troubles, and of the treatment I have met with from the Rebels.

"In the latter part of the year 1773, and the beginning of 1774, I strongly suspected that the leaders of the opposition to government in America were aiming at Independence, and the Eastern Provinces, at the subversion of the Church, likewise;<sup>d</sup> and that in pursuit of those ends, they would, if possible, influence the people to a revolt; but when the first Congress approved the rebellious resolves of the County of Suffolk in Massachusetts Bay, I had no longer any doubt of their intentions. In this state of things, therefore, I did every thing that lay in my power, by preaching, reading the Homilies against Rebellion, and by conversation, to give my parish and others, a just idea of the sacred obligations laid upon us by Christianity—to be good and peaceful subjects, even if it had been our lot to have lived under wicked and oppressive rulers, and much more so, as Providence hath blessed us with one of the wisest and best of princes. This, I chose to do before any blood was shed—while people's tempers were yet cool; lest if the instruction had been deferred till some blow was struck, the acts of misrepresentation, which had been used from the beginning, might influence their passions and hurry them into criminal acts before reason could resume its

<sup>a</sup> Society's abstract from 21st February, 1772, to 19th February, 1773.

<sup>b</sup> ditto ditto from 17th February, 1775, to 16th February, 1776.

<sup>c</sup> Ditto ditto from 16th February, 1776, to 21st February, 1777.

<sup>d</sup> The following extracts are from a letter of John Adams to Dr. J. Morse, dated Quincy, 2d Dec., 1815:—"That the apprehension of Episcopacy contributed, fifty years ago, as much as any other cause, to arouse the attention, not only of the enquiring mind, but the common people, and urge them to close thinking on the constitutional authority of Parliament over the colonies." "This, nevertheless, was a fact as certain as any in the history of North America. The objection was not merely to the office of a Bishop—though even that was dreaded—but to the authority of Parliament, on which it must be founded."—"Life and Works of John Adams," by Chas. Francis Adams; vol. X., p. 185.



place and tend to the obligations of religion. And blessed be God, I have this satisfaction, that the Church people in all my parishes have almost unanimously (there being but three or four exceptions) maintained their loyalty from the first, for which many of them suffered greatly.

In May, 1776, I was called before the Rebel Committee of Cortlandt's manor, who invited me to join their association; upon which I told them freely that I esteemed their resistance of his Majesty's authority to be repugnant to the precepts of the Gospel, and, therefore, could not give it my countenance. I was soon after required to furnish some blankets for the use of the Rebel soldiers; which, not consenting to do, I was sent under guard to the Committee, and, at the same time, a guard was set at my house, who, after their savage manner, were very lavish of their insults to Mrs. Townsend. The Committee, after having in vain endeavored to persuade me to furnish the blankets, gave orders to search my house and get them; but the proper steps having been taken, none were found. The next time the Committee met, they ordered me to pay upwards of thirty shillings to these guards, which I refused; and was again put under guard till I did pay it. I was soon after sent to the County Committee of Westchester, on a complaint from the Committee of Cortlandt's manor, that I entertained principles inconsistent with the American cause. The County Committee referred the matter to the Provincial Committee; but as my principles were only complained of, without any part of my conduct being impeached, and the Declaration of Independence being then just at hand, which, it was thought, would bring the clergy in general under persecution, I was, for that time dismissed.

"I continued the services of the Church within my mission for three Sundays after the Declaration of Independence by the Congress, and should have proceeded still and took the consequences, but I was informed that all the clergy, in this and the neighboring provinces, had discontinued the public service till it might be performed under the protection of his Majesty, excepting only Mr. Beach, of Connecticut, who hath continued his church till very lately. Under these circumstances, I considered that my dissenting from the practice of my brethren would not only set me up as a single mark of vengeance—and as every appearance of disunion among the clergy might be disadvantageous to the Church hereafter; viewing the matter in this light, I thought it best to comply with the general practice of the clergy. On the 21st of Oct. I was made a prisoner and sent to the Court of Fishkill as an enemy to the Independence of America, when (except that sometimes I was indulged to visit my family a few days) I was kept on parole through the winter at my own expense, which was very great. The shocking insolence and inhumanity of the Rebels toward the friends of Government of which I was a daily spectator, rendered the place of my imprisonment very disagreeable; and the cruel treatment which my family received from them in my absence, was exceedingly distressing. They had taken me from a wife and four small children the two youngest not sixteen months old, which was my whole family—and during my confinement they forbade people coming to my house, and they threatened all that should assist the family in any respect; by this means they suffered much for want of free intercourse with their friends, those that would gladly have assisted them, not daring to do it unless when it might be done privately. In this situation I know not how they could have long subsisted, had it not been

for a man with a small family who had removed from the seat of war at the White Plains, and had as yet no settled habitation, by taking this family into my house about Christmas, Mrs. Townsend had a friend of Government, though under some disguise, who, living under the same roof, was able to do many things for her benefit. To this, as well as many other instances during my imprisonment, the good providence of God always found some method, unforeseen by us, to support us under the greatest difficulties, and after he had thus continued us under the Rebel discipline for near six months, he then granted us a happy deliverance; for on the 31st of March, in consequence of my refusing the oath of allegiance to the State of New York, I received an order to depart within eight days with my family, apparel and household furniture, to some place in possession of the King's troops, on penalty of my being confined in close jail and otherwise treated as an open enemy of the State. With this order I readily complied; and after procuring a flag from a Rebel general to transport my family and furniture to Long Island, I set out. The Convention taking a genteel house which my father had enabled me to build, sixty acres of land which he had bought for me, with thirty acres of wood land, a horse and a small stock of cattle into their possession. At Norwalk, where I had procured a boat to cross the Sound, I was stopped four days, most of my furniture after being put on board was relanded, and all of it ransacked under pretence of searching for letters, prohibited articles, &c., whereby many things were much damaged, and others stolen. I was then obliged to pay the expenses of these abuses in detaining, searching, &c., which amounted to nine pound currency, and then was permitted to proceed. On the 11th of April we landed on Long Island, with hearts full of gratitude to God for having at length delivered us from the malice and cruelty of the Rebels.

I am, Rev. Sir, &c.,

EPENETUS TOWNSEND."<sup>a</sup>

In 1779, Mr. Townsend was appointed chaplain to one of the loyal battalions then stationed at New York. Here he remained until it was ordered to Nova Scotia, when himself and family embarked on board a vessel bound for that Province. The ship foundered in Boston bay, and every soul on board perished. Thus terminated the short and sad career of the first rector of this parish, whose "only crime was, that he was a clergyman of the Church of England, and of course attached to the government and the constitution of Church and State." The names of *Townsend*, *Avery* and *Babcock*, belong to the catalogue of worthies, who once faithful soldiers of Christ's Church Militant, are now singing praises to Him who redeemed them with His Blood, in the Church Triumphant above. The last account the Venerable Society received of their faithful missionary was the following:

#### MR. INGLIS TO THE SECRETARY.

"NEW YORK, NOV. 26TH, 1779.

REV. SIR:—Mr. Townsend, the Society's missionary for Salem in this Province, after being driven within the King's lines by the Rebels was appointed

<sup>a</sup> New York, MSS. from archives at Fulham, vol. ii. 62I, 622, 623, 624. (Hawks.)

chaplain to one of the new raised loyal battelions. His battalion was ordered for Halifax, and he embarked here, with his wife and five children to join it. A violent storm rose, soon after the fleet in which he sailed left Sandy Hook, the fleet was dispersed, several of the ships perished, and poor Townsend has not since been heard of. I greatly fear the vessel in which he went has shared the same fate."<sup>a</sup>

"Sleep on—sleep on—the glittering depths  
Of Ocean's coral caves :—  
Are thy bright urn—thy requiem  
The music of its waves :—  
The purple gems for ever burn  
In fadeless beauty round thy urn ;  
And pure and deep as infant love,  
The blue sea rolls its waves above."—G. D. PRENTICE.

The names of the children, with the dates of their birth, as recorded by Mr. Townsend himself, are as follows: "Epenetus, born 31st of October, 1770; Lucy, born 3d of November, 1772; Micajah and John, twins, born 28th of June, 1875." Mr. Townsend, when he removed to Salem left a younger brother, Jotham, who continued at Oyster Bay, and died in 1815. He left a son, Col. Micajah Townsend, now living at Cedar Swamp, L. I. Micah, another brother, is the father of the Rev. Micajah Townsend of Clarcenceville, Canada East.

Previous to his embarkation, Mr. Townsend had deposited in the hands of the Rev. Benj. Moore, (afterwards Bishop Moore) the library, silver chalice and velvet cushion belonging to St. James' church desiring him to keep them until called for. The latter, in 1785, informed Mr. John Wallace and Ebenezer Lobdell, church-wardens of the parish: "That the above mentioned articles were left with him for safe keeping, and that St. James' church might have them by sending an order for that purpose. The Rev. David Perry was accordingly deputed to receive them in the name of the vestry." "At a society meeting legally warned and holden at the Independent School House," in Ridgefield, "on the 18th day of April, 1803, voted—that the Society meeting desire Dr. Perry to deliver to Epenetus Wallace and Joshua Purdy, Esq., of North Salem, the Library of Books which are in his care, and which he received of Dr. Moore of the city of New York, being those books which were sent by the Missionary Society in England for the use of Mr. Townsend."<sup>b</sup>

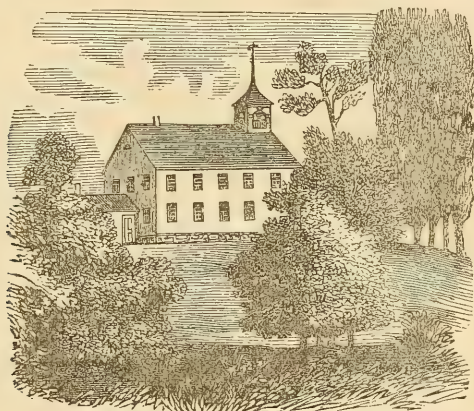
The Rev. Micajah Townsend, (son of Micah, youngest brother of the Rev. Epenetus Townsend,) of Clarenceville, Canada East, in a letter ad-

<sup>a</sup> The Rev. Dr. Inglis, the rector of Trinity church, N. Y., reports: "That the state of the clergy of New York is much the same; and with the aforementioned losses, is to be lamented that of Mr. Townsend, missionary at Salem, who with all his family was lost in a ship which sunk in its passage to Halifax." Society's abstracts for 1779.

<sup>b</sup> Rec. of first Episcopal Soc., Ridgefield, Conn., June, 1784, Liber I.

dressed to the author, says: "A few ancient theological books had strayed from the library of my uncle Epenetus to that of my father, and are now in my possession."

Soon after the Revolutionary war, the Rev. David Perry, A.M., M.D., officiated here and in the neighboring parishes. This individual was the son of — Perry. He was born —, 1750; admitted B. A. at Yale College, 1772, and graduated A.M. 1776; studied medicine, and settled at Ridgefield as a physician. "He was ordained Deacon by Bishop Seabury, June 6th, 1790; Priest, 16th of October, 1791; and took charge



St. James' Church, North Salem, erected A.D. 1810.

of the parishes of Salem, Reading, Ridgefield and Danbury. Neglecting to attend the convocations of the clergy and the Conventions of the Diocese of Connecticut (probably because of his practice as a physician), he fell under censure; finally resigned his letter of orders, and relinquished the clerical profession June 3d, 1795. He continued the practice of medicine, and died —, 1817."<sup>a</sup> His son was the late Nehemiah Perry, M.D., of Ridgefield, the father of the present Nehemiah Perry, M.D., of that place. The parish appears to have been favored with occasional services only, until 1804, when the churches of Bedford, North Salem and Stephentown united, for the purpose of settling a minister "who should perform divine service in the different towns of Bedford, New Castle, North Salem and Stephentown so often as should be in proportion to amount of their several subscriptions." Upon the 4th of September, 1804, the Rev. George Shebeck was called to and accepted the rectorship of the united parishes, which he resigned in March, 1805.

<sup>a</sup> Hist. Not. of clergy ordained by Bishops Seabury and Jarvis, appended to the Convocation Journal of Convention No. 38.



"In 1807, the Rev. Dr. Moore and the Rev. Messrs. Wilkins and Rogers were directed by the Diocesan Convention to supply North Salem, and the other congregations in West Chester county, on some days in the same week of their appointments at Bedford."<sup>a</sup> For nearly four years the parish appears to have been vacant, but in the spring of 1810 the Rev. Nathan Felch was called as minister. The same year he reported to the Convention, "That the Episcopal congregation in North Salem is exceedingly prosperous; many have been added to them in a few months past, and they are now erecting a church." For Mr. Felch's successors, see list of ministers and rectors.

St. James' church occupies an elevated situation directly opposite the junction of the cross-roads, at Salem Centre, and presents quite a picturesque object, when viewed from the valley of the Mutigticoos. The new church was erected in 1869 at a cost, including furniture, of \$9,900; and was consecrated by the Right Rev. Horatio Potter, D.D., LL.D., D.C.L. Bishop of the Diocese, on Wednesday, June 2d, 1869. The style of the edifice is early pointed, and consists of chancel, nave, vestry room, recess on the west for the organ and choir, and tower; height of the tower and spire, about ——— feet. The roof is arched inside, with timbers displayed. The chancel window is of three lights, the centre containing an effigy of the Saviour, the whole ornamented with appropriate symbols.

#### MINISTERS AND RECTORS.

INST. OR CALL.	INCUMBENTS.	VACATED BY.
A.D. 1750,	Rev. EBENEZER DIBBLEE, D.D., Clericus,	resig.
29th May, 1768,	Rev. EPENETUS TOWNSEND, A.M., Cl.,	death.
1790,	Rev. DAVID PERRY, M.D., Deacon,	per resig.
4th Sept., 1804,	Rev. GEORGE STREBECK, Presb.	"
1810,	Rev. NATHAN FELCH, Deacon.	"
16th June, 1816,	Rev. GEORGE WELLES, A.M., Deacon. <sup>b</sup>	"
1820,	Rev. SAMUEL NICHOLS, Presb.	"
1829,	Rev. HIRAM JELIFF, Presb.	"
1835,	Rev. ALEXANDER FRASER, Presb.	"
23 July, 1836,	Rev. BENJAMIN EVANS, Presb.	"
1841,	Rev. DAVID SHORT, Presb.	"
1842,	Rev. ALBERT P. SMITH, Presb.	"
1847,	Rev. NATHAN W. MUNROE, Presb.	"
June, 1848,	Rev. ORSAMUS H. SMITH, Presb.	"
24 May, 1851,	Rev. JOHN WELLS MOORE, A.M., Presb.	"
Oct. 1854,	Rev. D. H. SHORT, D.D., Presb.	"
1864,	Rev. JOHN S. STONE, D.D., Presb.	"
June, 1865,	Rev. RUSSELL TREVETT, D.D., Presb., death. <sup>c</sup>	
June, 1869,	Rev. R. CONDIOT RUSSELL, Presb.,	present incumbent.

<sup>a</sup> In 1807, this church was supplied by the services of the Rev. Benjamin Moore, D.D., Isaac Wilkins, D.D., and the Rev. John Henry Hobart.

<sup>b</sup> This gentleman died rector of Christ church, Nashville, Tenn. He was the author of a reply to the review of Dr. Wyatt's sermon, and Mr. Sparks' Letters on the Protestant Episcopal Church, published in Boston, 1821. Also editor of the *Church Register*, an Episcopal periodical printed in Philadelphia.

<sup>c</sup> A Dr. Trevett died suddenly March 8th, 1865. He was formerly professor in St. James' College [Torn copy] and the author of a volume of —

St. James' church was first incorporated on the 3d of June, 1786, under the name and title of the "Episcopal Reformed Protestant Church at Upper Salem;" Ebenezer Lobdell, Daniel Smith, and Joseph Purdy, trustees.<sup>a</sup> A third incorporation of St. James' church, at North Salem, occurs on the 30th of June, 1797; James Bailey and Benjamin Close, church-wardens; Epenetus Wallace, John Lobdell, Gershom Hanford, Joshua Purdy, Gilbert Bailey, Daniel Sherwood, Jacob Lobdell, and Joseph Knox, vestrymen.<sup>b</sup> The first delegate from this parish to the Diocesan Convention was Joseph Purdy, Esq.

In the year 1797, the first church edifice was erected—in 1763 upon a glebe farm given by Stephen De Lancey, was found to be in a ruinous condition; whereupon it was dismantled and sold at public auction May 23d, 1797. About 1810 the late venerable Epenetus Wallace, M. D., induced the vestry to exchange the old location for the site of the present church; which old location, a few years ago, was sold to the Presbyterian Society upon which they have erected their present parsonage.

Epenetus Wallace thus describes the dismantling of the old church and the erection of the second edifice in a MSS. attached to the vestry minutes, with which we have been favored by Mr. Henry Lobdell, the present clerk of the vestry:

"The Society being scattered and many of them died during the war, continued broken; and divine service not being performed, until peace took place, and the old church went to decay during the war, and the ravages of time, and the society diminished, it was resolved to take down the church and sell it by parcels for what it would fetch; accordingly it was taken down, and the timber, boards, nails and what glass remained were sold in lots. The silver cup was sold for about \$100. The proceeds, together with the rent of the parsonage, were put on interest which in after years amounted to some hundreds of dollars.

The old wardens being dead, (John Wallace and Ebenezer Lobdell) their successors, Benj. Close and Gershom Hanford, together with the vestry, resolved on building a new church—although the funds of the church was not adequate to finish it. It was commenced in the year 1810, the lot given by Epenetus Wallace on which the new church stands containing about three roods of land. The funds, with the subscription money, amounted to about \$1000. The timber and lumber were procured, the frame was raised, covered and closed and completed in the year 1841; having received a donation from Trinity church, New York, of \$1000. The whole cost about \$2000.

The Society of St. James' church met on Thursday, 30th of August, 1810, at the church ground and the first corner stone being laid (which

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. A. S.

<sup>b</sup> Ibid., Lib. A. 33, 73.

is the south east corner of said church with the date on it) by the wardens, Ben. Close and Gershom Hanford, the Rev. Nathan Felch delivered a well adapted discourse from fourth chapter of Zachariah before a numerous and respectable audience, he standing on the said stone."

The second church erected in 1810, consecrated in 1816, and removed 1868 occupied the site of the present building. The principal contributors towards the erection of the second structure were Epenetus Wallace, M.D., and Joseph Purdy. Trinity church also liberally contributed the sum of one thousand dollars, in 1813, as above stated.

Mr. Stebbins Baxter, a resident of this town, who died on the 28th of February, 1820, bequeathed his entire property to St. James' parish, amounting (according to an inventory of his estate) to \$3000, which, after deducting general expenses, &c., left a balance of \$2000. The parish, however, owing to the failure of his executors, only obtained the sum of \$1100.

Upon the death of Mr. John Hanford, and his sisters, a legacy fell to the church of \$300; and Mrs. Elizabeth Lobdell Palmer bequeathed to the same, the sum of \$500.

At no great distance from the church is situated the parsonage, erected in 1842 by public subscription at a cost of \$1100. It deserves to be mentioned that the former parsonage was erected by the vestry about 1768, upon the church glebe which was purchased of Stephen De Lancey in 1766, just previous to the first rector's going to England for holy orders. From a petition to the court of Chancery in 1842, it appears that all the real estate then held or owned by the Rector, Wardens and Vestry—except the church edifice and a small lot of land on which it stood—consisted of about six acres of land situated in the town of North Salem and bounded as follows, viz:

"On the west by land of Charles Cable and land of Epenetus Howe, and on the north by the land of Benjamin B. Gray, on the east by land of the above named Epenetus Howe, and on the south by the highway leading from Ridgefield to Somers."<sup>a</sup> This property was donated to the church by John Wallace and Benjamin Close.

In 1767-8, the church was furnished by the Venerable Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, with a parochial library and a quarto Bible and Prayer Book. The old Bible, which is handsomely bound in parchment and printed by Mark Baskett, printer to the University of Oxford, A.D. 1765, was exchanged in 1850 for the present one now in use, by some members of the Vestry, and removed by the Rev.

<sup>a</sup> Extract from petition to mortgage said property in fee, to secure the sum of \$350. This is the present glebe now owned by the church.

John W. Moore,<sup>a</sup> a former rector of the parish, and a great nephew to Dr. Benjamin Moore, afterward Bishop of New York. It may be remembered that Dr. Moore received this very book from the hands of the Rev. Epenetus Townsend for safe keeping in 1779. The ancient Prayer Book, which was printed at Cambridge, England, by Joseph Bentham, in 1764, is still preserved in the parish. About 1767, Susannah De Lancey presented to the church a silver chalice, which was subsequently sold by order of the vestry. This lady was the oldest daughter of the Hon. James De Lancey, Lieutenant-Governor of the Province of New York in 1747, and Anne Heathcote, daughter of Col. Caleb Heathcote, and great grand daughter of Anne van Cortlandt, one of the daughters and devisees of the Hon. Stephanus von Cortlandt, Lord of the Manor of Cortlandt. She died unmarried in 1815, and was interred in the family cemetery, on Heathcote hill, Mamaroneck.

Upon an elevated piece of ground, on the west side of the church, over-looking the village on the east, is a large enclosure, in which numerous interments have taken place. Here repose the mortal remains of the celebrated Sarah Bishop, the hermitess. Also the following :

COL. THADDEUS CRANE,

died  
Sept. 1st, 1800,  
aged 71 years, 5 mo.  
and 20 days.

Erected

to the memory of the

REV. ABRAHAM PURDY, A. M.,

who died at Somers,  
on the 7th day of August,  
A.D. 1825, in the 44th year  
of his age.

Beneath this Monument

lies the remains of

Doctor

BENJAMIN DELAVAN,

of the

United States Army,  
who died at Natchitoches,  
State of Louisiana,  
26th Nov., A.D. 1827,  
in the 36th year of his age,  
and was interred here  
the 18th of March, A.D. 1829.

<sup>a</sup> The Rev. John W. Moore, of Red Hook, N. Y., when respectfully asked to restore this gift of the Venerable Propagation Society, to the old parish, declined on the ground that he made a fair exchange for it; besides which, he considers it unfit for use and a sort of *family* heir loom.



Upon a beautiful marble monument, surmounted with the sitting figure of the angel of the resurrection, his left hand pointing upward, and his right holding the trumpet, is the following inscription to the memory of Dr. Trevett, a former rector of the parish :

SACRED

To the memory of

REV. RUSSELL TREVETT, D.D.,

who departed this life

March 8th, 1865,

Aged 47 years,

2 months and 6 days.

"I am the resurrection and the life, saith the Lord : he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live ; and whosoever liveth and believeth in me, shall never die."

"The graves of his saints were blessed,  
When in the grave He lay ;  
And rising thence, their hopes He raised  
To everlasting day.

"Soar we now where Christ has led,  
Following our exalted Head ;  
Made like Him, like Him we rise,  
Ours the cross, the grave the skies."

We have reason to believe that a Presbyterian congregation was gathered in this town not long after its settlement, or between the years 1750 and 1760.

Among the founders of this congregation was Mr. Solomon Close,<sup>a</sup> the father of three Presbyterian ministers—John, David and Tompkins ; (David was settled at Patterson, New York.)

From the first mention of this people, in 1765, they appear to have been destitute of a settled ministry. Other adverse circumstances are also referred to in the minutes of the Presbytery. The congregation continued under the care of the Presbytery for, at least, ten years ; during which application was made repeatedly for advice and aid. In 1772, John Blydenburgh, a candidate, was permitted by the Presbytery to preach for a while at North Salem. In 1774 the people again applied for direction, but the Presbytery declared itself unable to refer them to a candidate, and granted them supplies for two months.<sup>b</sup>

In the church register-book, entitled "The Records of the Congregational Church at Upper Salem, now North Salem, copied in the year 1814," occurs the following memoranda : "Upper Salem, August 20th, 1779. At a meeting of the church members living in Upper Salem,

<sup>a</sup> Solomon Close was, however, at this time, an *elder* of South Salem Congregation.

<sup>b</sup> The Records of Presbytery do not mention North Salem after this.

Cortlandt's manor and other places adjacent, to consult whether they were desirous of uniting for forming into church order. Present, Peter Benedict, Jehiel Tyler, Jonathan Rogers, Thaddeus Crane, Solomon Close, Ezekiel Hawley, Jesse Trusdale, Joseph Doolittle, John Platt, James Wallace and Peter Ferris, voted Mr. Peter Benedict moderator." "August 25, 1779, it was voted to form and unite as a church in the order of the Gospel. Mr. Mead invited to attend." "At a meeting of the Society of the upper end of Salem, 11th of May, 1779, at the upper Presbyterian Meeting House," it was voted "that Jesse Trusdale, Solomon Close and Nathaniel Delavan should form a committee for one year to get preaching."

In the records of the North Salem Presbyterian Society is the following:—"Agreeable to notice, the Society met at the meeting-house on the 21st day of June, 1840. Richard Lockwood was elected moderator, and John Close was appointed secretary. On motion, resolved, that a quit-claim of the land whereon the Presbyterian meeting-house now stands, given by Jesse Close to the said Society, be recorded in the County Clerk's office."<sup>a</sup>

The first settled pastor appears to have been the Rev. Joel Benedict, in 1783. This individual was the son of Peter Benedict of North Salem, who was deacon of this church for many years, and grandson of Deacon James Benedict,<sup>b</sup> of Ridgefield, brother also of the Rev. Abner Benedict, pastor of the Presbyterian church in this place, somewhere between 1787 and 1792, and of Lieut. Peter Benedict, of the Revolution. The Rev. Joel Benedict was graduated A. M., at Princeton, in 1765, from whence he received his degree of D. D., and was settled in the ministry at Lisbon, Conn., eleven years; and afterwards, leaving North Salem, was settled at Plainfield, Conn., where he died February, 13, 1816.

The incorporation of this church took place on the 1st of February, 1786, under the style of the "Congregationalist Society in Upper Salem;" John Platt, Benjamin Wood, Abraham Lockwood, David Smith, Bonage Starr, and Moses Richard, trustees.<sup>c</sup>

In 1832, this church was placed under the jurisdiction of the Bedford

<sup>a</sup> Rec. of North Salem Presb. Soc., L. 3.

<sup>b</sup> The first ancestor of this family, of whom any trace has been found, was William Benedict, who, tradition says, was born in Nottinghamshire, England, about the year 1500, and that he was the only son of his father. This only son was William, of Nottinghamshire; whose son was also William, of the same county. Thomas, son of the latter, was born in England 1617; he came to New England, and first settled in the Massachusetts Bay, then removed to Southhold, L. I., from thence to Huntington, and finally to Norwalk, in 1665. He died in 1690. John, his second son, was the father of James, born January 5, 1685, married Sarah, daughter of Thos Hyatt, of Norwalk, in 1709, and settled in Ridgefield. He was one of the original settlers of that place, and bought of the Indians. He died Nov. 25, 1762; he was the deacon above alluded to—the father of Peter.

<sup>c</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. A, p 8.

Presbytery. As a Presbyterian church, it was first incorporated on the 25th of September, 1832; John Wallace Horace Barnum, and Richard H. Lockwood, trustees.<sup>a</sup>

## LIST OF PASTORS AND SUPPLIES.

INST. OR CALL,	MINISTERS,	VACATED BY
1783	REV. JOEL BENEDIOT,	resig.
	REV. JOHN BLYDENBURGH,	do
1787	REV. AMZI LEWIS,	do
	REV. ABNER BENEDIOT,	do
1792	REV. RICHARD ANDREWS,	do
1798	REV. ——— PHELPS,	do
99	REV. JOHN MCNIECE,	do
	REV. ——— CORNWALL,	do
1815	REV. ABRAHAM PURDY,	do
1817	REV. HERMAN DAGGETT,	do
	REV. DAVID DELAVAN,	do
1835	REV. ALEXANDER LEADBETTER,	do
1841	REV. JOSEPH NIMMO,	do
March 1850	REV. DAVID IRVING,	do
April 1856	REV. JOHN WHITE,	do
Oct'b'r 1857	REV. A. H. SEELY,	do
Sept'r 1863	REV. E. F. MUNDY,	do
Dec'r 1868	REV. CHARLES H. HOLLOWAY,	do
29 Janu'y 1872	REV. HENRY MARTIN HAZLETON,	present pastor.
First Elders, 1832	RICHARD H. LOCKWOOD, JOHN WALLACE.	
Present Elders,	G. C. BENEDIOT, JAMES O. EGGLESTON and DANIEL D. SMITH.	

The present church edifice was erected in 1847 (upon land purchased of Tompkins D. Wallace, the year previous), and dedicated on the 15th of October, of the same year. From a date on a semi-circular stone, lying in front of the door, we learn that the old church, or meeting house, which stood east of the present building, was erected as early as 1764, upon land given by Jesse Close. This is confirmed by the following items, taken from an old account book in the possession of Mr. John Close:

“October, the year 1764, T. Ebenezer Brown, of Salem, have received of Samuel Cole, of Cortlandt manor, the full and just sum of five pounds, received by me on the acompt of the Meetin House.”

“November the 20th, the year 1764, Ebenezer Brown, of Salem, have received of Solomon Close two pounds, seven shillings and tenpence, on the account of the Meetin House. Received by Ebenezer Brown.”

“To cash by Nathan, £o, 5s, 0d, 1765; Abner Benedict. cradit to a

<sup>a</sup> Religious Soc. Co. Rec. Lib. B, p 10.

log for the fore, that made 140 feet to 158 feet of oak boards, £0, 2s, 16d. For the Meetin House, £0, 7s, 11d. To 370 feet of bords, by Crane, £0, 18s, 6d."

This old building and site were sold to Mr. Alfred B. Mead, in 1847

Attached to the church is a small parsonage, which occupies the site of the first Episcopal church, erected in 1763.<sup>a</sup>

The Methodist-Episcopal Society of North Salem, was first organized in the early part of the present century, and incorporated 6th of January, 1832; Jonas Keeler, Abel Smith, William Cable and Stephen Ryder, trustees.<sup>b</sup> The church edifice was erected in 1833. The present pastor is the Rev. Aaron Coons.

The Baptist congregation in the town of North Salem was incorporated on the 1st of April, 1833: Ebenezer Whelppy, Edward Ganong, John Wesley Searles, John Braden and James Milis trustees.<sup>c</sup>

An Universalist Society was incorporated upon the 23d of January, 1832; Levi Smith, Epenetus Howe, William Howe, Henry Hunt, Samuel Hunt and Thomas Smith, trustees; Gilbert Hunt, collector; Jesse Smith, treasurer. The first church was erected in 1833; the present beautiful structure was built in 1869, at a cost of about \$7000; its pastor is the Rev. T. S. Lathrop.

The Friends' meeting house is erected in the north-east part of the town.

A little west of the Episcopal church stands the North Salem Academy.

"This edifice was erected prior to 1770 by Stephen De Lancey, one of the principal proprietors of this town. It was intended for his own residence, and occupied by him as such for many years. In 1786 it was purchased by a company and completed as an Academy, which went into operation about that date, under the care of the Rev. Amzi Lewis. During several years it continued in a very flourishing state under Mr. Lewis, and was incorporated by the regents of the university, April 19th, 1790, on the application of Benjamin Haight and thirty-eight others. It was the first incorporated academy in the county, and the third in the State; Erasmus Hall at Flatbush, and Clinton Academy in East Hampton, having been incorporated near the close of 1787. Many individuals, who afterwards became eminent, were prepared for college or finished their education here." Among the most distinguished may be reckoned, De Witt Clinton, Governor of the State; Daniel D.

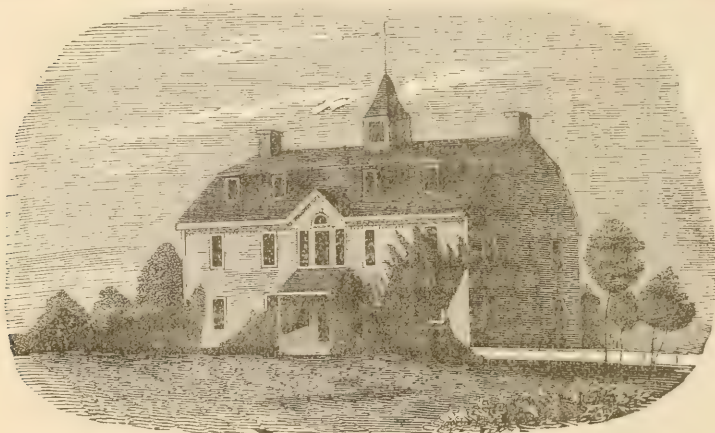
<sup>a</sup> St. George Talbot, writing to the Secretary of the Venerable Propagation Society, July 10th, 1763, says: "At Salem they have built and almost covered a church."

<sup>b</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. B. 11.

<sup>c</sup> Religious Soc. Lib. B., p. 15.



Tompkins, Vice-President of the United States; Colonel Tallmadge and brother, and the Hon. James Kent, LL.D. "After the removal of Mr. Lewis, the institution appears to have declined for a few years. A revival of its prosperity, however, occurred about 1801, under the Rev. Mr. McNiece. This gentleman is said to have been one of the Irish patriots of 1793, who left his country at the same time with Emmet, Adrain, McNeven and others, for the same cause. He was a man of learning and an eloquent preacher of the Presbyterian denomination,



Academy, North Salem.

and the Academy under him had at one time eighty scholars in attendance. From this period the reports to the regents indicate great fluctuations in the number, as well as in the advancement of the scholars. Some years present no report from the trustees, from which we may imply that the building was not occupied as a school during a sufficient portion of the year (four months) to entitle them to a share of the literature fund, or that the scholars were not sufficiently advanced to be reported in the higher branches of study. The reports of other years indicate a better condition. And among the teachers are mentioned the Rev. Hermon Dagget, Rev. Abraham Purdy, A.M., Ebenezer Close, Dr. Samuel B. Mead, Rev. Hiram Jelliff, John C. Jones, and G. S. Tozer.

For quite a number of years North Salem Academy held a respectable standing among its sister institutions in this part of the State; sometime numbering nearly one hundred students, and generally, during the winter sessions, from seventy to ninety. The last annual catalogue contained the names of one hundred and forty-five pupils. We regret

to say that, for the last five years, the Academy has been closed for educational purposes and is now occupied as a dwelling house. The last principal was the Rev. Chas. H. Holloway. During the Revolution, the Academy was used as a jail and court house for the detention and trial of refractory Tories. Here, one Paine was tried and condemned as a spy; he was executed about half a mile from the Academy, though it appears that circumstances afterward threw some doubt upon his guilt. It is said that a reprieve was forwarded from head-quarters, and that when the unfortunate man was swung off, the bearer had just reached the Episcopal church, which was a mile as the road then ran, from the place of execution; he was, of course, too late. When the French army passed through this town in 1781, on their way from Rhode Island to Dobb's Ferry, where they crossed the Hudson to join Washington, they encamped near the Academy two days, and Rochambeau and his officers occupied the building."<sup>a</sup> The situation of the Academy is exceedingly beautiful, and the view of the Mutigticoos valley is such as can seldom be equalled.

#### ACT OF INCORPORATION OF THE TRUSTEES OF THE ACADEMY OF NORTH SALEM.

The Regents of the University of the State of New York, to all whom these Presents shall or may come, Greeting: Whereas, Benjamin Haight, Philip van Cortlandt, Jun., Joseph Travis, David Birdsall, Thaddeus Crane, Philip van Cortlandt, Joseph Browne, Ebenezer Purdy, James Duane, Richard Varick, Alexander Hamilton, John Lawrence, Richard Platt, Samuel Jones, Isaac Stoletenburgh, Peter Jay Munro, Frederick Jay, William Malcom, Samuel Barnum, Daniel Dezevard, Uriah Wallace, Daniel Purdy, Jun., John Paulding, Benjamin Wood, Hackaliah Brown, Stephen Ward, James McDonald, Israel Underhill, John Strong, Philip Pell, Junior, Samuel Lyon, Ebenezer Lockwood, Richard Sackett, senior, Isaac Webber, Richard Hatfield, Jesse Holly, John Thomas, John Delivan, and John Garrison, by an Instrument in writing, under their hands and Seals, bearing date the ninth day of November, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and eighty-seven, after stating among other things that they are Founders and Benefactors of a certain Academy at North Salem, in West Chester County, in the State aforesaid, who have contributed more than one-half in Value of the real and personal Property and Estate collected or appropriated for the use and Benefit of the said academy, did make application to us, the said Regents, that the said academy might be incorporated and become subject to the visitation of us and our Successors, and that we would signify our approbation that Ebenezer Purdy, John Delivan, Solomon Close, Samuel Barnam, Benjamin Wood, Thaddeus Crane, Philip Livingston, Benjamin Haight, Uriah Wallace, Hackaliah Brown, Ebenezer Lockwood, John Davenport, John Strong, Silas Constant, Ichabod Lewis, Samuel Mills, Philip von Cortlandt, Jonathan G. Tom-

<sup>a</sup> Communicated by Mr. John F. Jenkins, A.M., late principal of the North Salem Academy

kings, Thomas Thomas, Jesse Tinesdale and Isaac Keeler, the Trustees named in said application and their successors, might be a Body corporate and Politic by the Name and Style of THE TRUSTEES OF THE ACADEMY OF NORTH SALEM, IN THE COUNTY OF WEST CHESTER. Now, Know Ye, that the said Regents having inquired into the allegations contained in the said Instrument in writing aforesaid, and found the same to be true, and concerning the said Academy constituted for the Promotion of Literature, Do, by these Presents, pursuant to the Statute in such case made and provided, signify our approbation of the Incorporation of the said Ebenezer Purdy, John Delivan, Solomon Close, Samuel Berman, Benjamin Wood, Thaddeus Close, Philip Livingston, Benjamin Haight, Urrall Wallace, Hackaliah Brown, Ebenezer Lockwood, John Davenport, John Strong, Silas Constant, Ichabod Lewis, Samuel Mills, Philip von Cortlandt, Jonathan G. Tomkins, Thomas Thomas, Jesse Tinesdale and Isaac Keeler, the Trustees of the said academy, as aforesaid named by the Founders thereof, by the name of the Trustees of the Academy of North Salem, in the County of West Chester, being the name mentioned in and by the said request in writing. In Testimony, whereof, we have caused our Common seal to be hereunto affixed the eighteenth day of March, in the fourteenth year of American Independence.

Witness, GEORGE CLINTON, ESQUIRE,  
*Chancellor of the University.*

GEORGE CLINTON, *Chancellor.*

By order of the Regents,  
RICH. HARRISON, *Secretary.*<sup>a</sup>

About half a mile west of the Academy is to be seen a singular phenomenon, called the Natural Bridge. "Here are two streams which meet and run under the road, the one flowing from the east along the road-side, enters the ground twenty-five or thirty feet east of where it seems to cross the road; the stream from the north-east, appears to run nearly straight, directly under the road, and issues from the earth again, after falling ten or fifteen feet lower than where it enters; but the place where it issues from the earth, is, at least, twenty-five feet perpendicular, the top of which precipice is within ten or fifteen feet from the side of the road. The two streams, although they enter the ground so far from each other, unite under ground and come up together." The question how these effects are to be accounted for, is a matter we leave to abler philosophers than ourselves to determine. "Crow Hill," so named after one of the Indian Sagamores, who sold land bordering on Wepack, or Long Pond, to the proprietors of Ridgefield in 1729, lies half a mile to the north-east of the Natural Bridge. There is a lofty hill in the southern part of the town, bordering the Bedford Road, called "Turkey Hill," on account of the great number of wild turkeys that once frequented it.

<sup>a</sup> Copied from the original document in the possession of the Board of Trustees, Secretary of State's office, Albany, Miscellaneous Book, M. R.A. p. 303.

The surface of North Salem is in part covered with lofty hills; the soil, various, but chiefly composed of a graveilly and clay loam, well adapted to grass and summer crops. The course of the Mutighticoos River, through the centre of this town is marked by beautiful mountain scenery, and rich tracts of meadow land, which skirt the margin of the stream. The Mutighticoos empties into the Croton, a little south of Dean's bridge. In the north-east corner of the town lies Peach Pond, a large sheet of water covering over four hundred acres of ground. At no great distance from it, is situated Beaver Pond.



Boulder Stone.

The villages north of Salem and Salem Centre, occupy beautiful positions on the north bank of the Mutighticoos, commanding fine views of the valley and surrounding mountains. They contain about two hundred inhabitants, thirty-five dwellings, four churches, two taverns, three stores, one grist mill, and one clothiers' works.

Directly opposite the residence of the late Epenetus Howe, issuing from a bank upon the side of the Mutighticoos river, is a very fine chalybeate spring; the waters of which are said to be highly medicinal. One of the most interesting objects in the village of North Salem, is an immense granite boulder or rock, weighing sixty tons or upwards, supported about three or four feet from the ground on the projecting points of five smaller lime-stone rocks. This immense block of stone viewed from the valley beneath, on account of its sublime appearance, is calculated to inspire with awe; and has much the form and size of a huge mastadon ascending the hill. The rocks which serve as pedestals, have somewhat the appearance of pillars; whether fashioned by art, or the effect of accident cannot be ascertained—as time and weather would



long ago have effaced the marks of the tool, had any been employed. Such rocks as these were venerated by the northern natives of Europe. Toland informs us that the Druids held these consecrated rocks in such estimation, that they covered the famous stone of Clogher, in Ireland, (which was a kind of pedestal to the Kesmond Kelstack, the Mercurius Celticus), over with gold. Our native Indians, too, held them in high veneration, viewing them as holy oracles. From their weather beaten sides the Indian magician and priest deciphered the destinies of his tribe. Upon rising ground south-west of the village near the base of the Wepauck Mountain, is situated Inland vale—the residence of J. S. Libby, Esq., which commands splendid views of the surrounding country. The Mutighticoos River and valley add much to the beauty of the scenery. The building itself, constructed of a fine blue granite, is very large and commodious.

#### OBITUARY.

FATHER JOHN ORSENIGO.—The death of this well-known clergyman, for some time expected, is at last announced. John Orsenigo was born in Italy, emigrated thence and entered the Roman Catholic priesthood in this country. For many years he faithfully discharged the duties of his office as coadjutor of the late Dr. Cummings, at St. Stephen's church in this city. Later his ministry was in the district of Mahopac and Croton. It might truly be said of him—he was a Catholic. His great heart ever throbbed with pity for the unfortunate. All that he had was the common property of his suffering fellow-creatures. His life was one great kindness. His toleration was unbounded. He labored only by gentle means, and very diligently; and he steadfastly sought to ameliorate the condition of his race by example as well as precept.

Near the junction of the Kitchawan or Croton and Mutighticoos rivers, on the west border of the town, is situated Purdy's station on the Harlem Railroad. Here is quite a number of houses, two churches, post-office, the American Condensed Milk Co., Sutton & Price's marble works, grist and saw mill and two hotels, viz., the Gunery House and Croton River House. Immediately north-east of the depot is the farm and residence of the late Joshua Purdy, Esq., for many years one of the Associate Judges of the county and senior warden of the parish, now owned and occupied by his nephew, Isaac Hart Purdy.

The Croton Falls depot, on the Harlem Railroad, is situated in the north-west corner of the town. Here are, besides numerous dwellings and stores, three churches, post-office, the Croton River paper mill of Hoffman & Bros., carriage factory, D. Miller's wrench factory, and saw and grist mill.

From the road that passes over the summit of Long Pond Mountain,

in the south-east corner of the town, a fine panoramic view is obtained of the great valley of the Mutigticoos and the surrounding country. The evening is the most propitious season to enjoy the scene, when the valley and neighboring hills are richly illuminated by the setting sun, imparting an effect that surpasses description. To those who have read Bunyan's Pilgrim's Progress, it will bear strong resemblance to the "Delectable Mountains," mentioned in that beautiful similitude. The mountain sides are covered with woods in which are dark, rocky recesses and here and there verdant glades and valleys bordered with tall forest trees.

The following entry in the town book, relates to the first election of town offices.

NORTH SALEM, this sixth day of April, 1790.

"A town meeting was held at the town house in North Salem, and that John Quick, Esq., was chosen moderator (after which), the freeholders and inhabitants of said town proceeded on to choosing town officers, and doing all other business which concerned said town. And that Daniel Delavan was chosen Clerk."

JOHN QUICK, chosen Supervisor,

JOHN DELAVAN,  
JONATHAN HALLETT, } Commissioners of Roads.  
URIAH WALLACE,

THOMAS SMITH, }  
CALEB SMITH, } Assessors.  
DANIEL PURDY,

THOMAS VAIL, }  
TIMOTHY VANSKOY, } Overseers of the Poor.  
THOMAS VAIL,

TIMOTHY VANSKOY, }  
BENAJAH STAR, } Trustees to provide a place for the receipts for the  
STEPHEN BAKER, } poor.  
MICAHAH FULLER,

DAVID SMITH, }  
EBENEZER PURDY, }  
ROBERT BLOOMER, } Path Masters.  
FREDERICK KNOX,  
THOMAS WILLIAMS,  
JOHN FINCH,  
ABRAHAM KNOX,  
MICAHAH FULLER,  
ABRAHAM VANSKOY,  
JONATHAN BROWN,

BENJAMIN CLOSE,	}	Path Masters.
JACOB WALLACE,		
DAVID BAXTER,		
ISAAC KEELER,		
REUBEN ZUMP,		
SOLOMON CLOSE,		

THOMAS BAXTER,	}	Fence Viewers.
STEPHEN BAKER,		
JOHN KNOX,		
ABRAHAM PURDY,		
JOHN QUICK, JR.,		
GILBERT BAILEY,		

DANIEL DELAVAN, Pounder.

WILLIAM ROGERS, Constable.

SOLOMON CLOSE, Collector

REPORT  
OF THE  
Flora of Westchester County.  
PREPARED FOR  
BOLTON'S HISTORY OF THE COUNTY.

BY  
OLIVER R. WILLIS, A. M., PH. D.,  
Author of "CATALOGUS PLANTANUM IN NOVA CAESAREA REPERTARIUM.

---

INTRODUCTION.

---

THE following report of the Flora of Westchester County has been prepared at the request of the Rev. Robert Bolton, for publication in the revised edition of his history of the county.

It was with great reluctance that the author undertook the work; though he has, during the last seventeen years, botanized in the region, and has corresponded with and examined the collections of botanists who have visited parts of the territory not examined by himself; yet he feels sure that there are plants growing in the limits which have not been noticed by botanists, or, at least, have not been reported.

He set out, however, with the determination not to include any in the list except such as he himself, or some one in whom he had full confidence, had seen growing in the county. As no one has examined



the region with the intention of publishing a report, until within the last two years, it is reasonable to infer that many plants will yet be found that are not included in this report. The author has corresponded and held conferences with not only the botanists of the county, but with those of New York city.

The botanists of New York city are active, industrious collectors, and have absolutely exhausted most of the localities within walking distance of the city; especially such portions of New Jersey, Staten Island and parts of Long Island. The Harlem River, however, seems to have been, to a great extent, the limit to their excursions in this direction; hence, this county is less known to New York botanists than any other region within the same distance of the city. The collecting of information has, therefore, been more formidable than suspected.

The State of New York has a remarkably large Flora; but it has a territory extending about 350 miles from north to south, and nearly the same distance from east to west—giving it a wide range of climate and temperature. It has plains along the coast elevated just a little above the sea level, and mountains on the eastern border rising 6,000 feet above the ocean; it possesses every variety of soil, from the sands of the Sarenac region to the alluvial plains of the western slope and the rich bottom lands of the Head waters of the Susquehanna, and the valleys of the Mohawk and the Upper Hudson.

Dr. Torrey, in his report of the Flora of the State, stated that the number of flowering plants would reach 1,450; and the Ferns and Lycopodiaceæ, sixty.

There will be great reason, then, for wonder, when it is found that the number of plants growing without cultivation in Westchester County—a territory about fifty miles in extent from north to south, and whose average width from east to west is not half so much—is more than a thousand.

There are 1,142 flowering plants enumerated in this catalogue, and forty-six ferns and their allies.

The formation of the county is chiefly Gneissic and Limestone rocks. Limestone is sprinkled throughout, but especially along the middle, from north to south. The southern half is divided by two parallel valleys, which trend north and south—dipping towards the south—and about three miles apart, separated by a ridge of hills. The valley on the Eastern side of the ridge is drained by the Bronx River, and the other (in part) by Saw-Mill River continued by Tibbitt's Brook. This limited territory has no difference of climate and temperature.

The soil is made up of abrasions and disintegrations of Gneissic and Limestone rocks and sand, sparingly mixed with clay; forming what agriculturalists denominate "Light Loam"—a soil especially adapted to the growth of cereals—yielding abundant crops to generous cultivation. But in such narrow limits, we cannot have a wide range in the variety of soil; in fact, we have very little more than such variety as is produced by Hill and Vale, or wet, damp, hilly and rocky—which is not so much a variety of soil as a difference in the state of the same soil.

We necessarily infer that such conditions are not favorable to a prolific Flora.

There are other features, however, that must not be overlooked, that ought to give rise to variety in the plants growing in the county.

The territory is washed on one side by the Hudson—a long river flowing through nearly the whole length of the eastern side of the State. On the other side, the coast of the Sound gives it the sea beach and the salt marsh. Three railways extend through it from north to south; one of which is part of the great highway between the Atlantic and the Pacific oceans; one of the others, by its connections, reaches the shores of the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and the third extends through the middle and reaches Canada. We should, therefore, expect that the Flora would be enriched and greatly enlarged by seeds brought and sown along the lines of these great railways and floated to the shores by the waters of the Hudson and Long Island Sound. In this, however, we are disappointed; for it is remarkable that a very small number of plants are growing in the county, that have been introduced by the means above mentioned.

Of the plants herein enumerated, eighty-eight have been introduced from Europe; fifty-seven of this number are growing without cultivation and freely propagating themselves, and are said to be naturalized; the remainder, thirty-one in number, are growing without cultivation, but are not fully established.

As already stated, there has been detected in the county 1,142 flowering plants and forty-six ferns and their allies. Of the flowering plants, fifty are first-class trees, reaching a height of thirty feet and upwards; thirty-four are second-class trees which attain a height of fifteen to thirty feet; and sixty-nine are shrubs, all of which are growing without cultivation, a very few of which have been introduced.

The author would again call attention to what was stated in the beginning of this introduction, viz: all the plants named in this report are known to be growing within these limits without cultivation.

By including hardy trees and shrubs which have been introduced, and are growing in planted grounds, the list would be very much enlarged.

#### EXPLANATIONS.

The arrangement of this catalogue corresponds with that of the latest edition of *Gray's Manual of the Northern United States*, and the orders are numbered to agree with the numbers of the same orders in the *Manual*.

The words "Nat. Eu." mean the same as they do in the *Manual*, viz: that the plants after whose names they appear, have been introduced from Europe and are growing and propagating themselves freely without cultivation, and are fully established. "Adv. Eu." indicate that plants after whose names they are written, are from Europe; that they are growing without cultivation, but are not propagating themselves with such freedom and constancy as to be considered fully established.

#### AIDS AND SOURCES OF INFORMATION.

In the collecting of the material for this report, I have received valuable information and assistance from the Botanists of the county and New York city. One of the most valuable sources of information has been the *Bulletin* of the Torrey Botanical Club.

But my thanks are especially due to Prof. Alphonso Wood, Ph.D., of West Farms, Prof. W. H. Leggett, editors of the *Bulletin* of the Torrey Botanical Club, and Curator P. V. Le Roy. To Miss P. A. Mecabe of Scarsdale, Mr. Chas. C. Hexama of New Castle, Dr. G. J. Fisher of Sing Sing, and E. P. Bicknell of Yonkers.

# CATALOGUE OF PLANTS.

---

## *SERIES I.*

### PHŒNOGAMOUS OR FLOWERING PLANTS.

---

#### CLASS I.—DICOTYLEDONOUS OR EXOGENOUS PLANTS.

##### Order 1.—*RANUNCULACEÆ*. (Crowfoot Family.)

**Clematis**, L. (Virgin's Bower. Traveler's Joy.)

**C.** *verticillaris*, DC. Rare. (Dr. Mead.)

**C.** *Virginiana*, L. Common in damp thickets. Bears transplanting well.

**Anemone**, L. (Wind Flower.)

**A.** *cylindrica*, Gray. Edges of woods. Rare.

**A.** *Virginiana*, L. Damp open woods. Rare.

**A.** *Pennsylvanica*, L. Not common. (Le Roy.)

**A.** *nemorosa*, L. Common everywhere.

**Hepatica**, Dill. (Liverleaf.)

**H.** *triloba*, Chaix. Woods common.

**H.** *acutiloba*, DC. Not common.

**Thalictrum**, Tourn. (Meadow Rue.)

**T.** *anemonoides*, Mx. Woods common.

**T.** *dioicum*, L. Frequent in damp woods.

**T.** *purpurascens*, L. Not common.

*Var.* *ceriferum*. Austin. White Plains; also Riverdale. (T. C. B.)

**T.** *Cornuti*, L. Common in meadows.

**Ranunculus**, L. (Crowfoot, Buttercup.)

**R.** *aquatilis*, L. White Plains, slow brooks. Not common in this County.

**R.** *alismæfolius*, Geyer. White Plains. Very wet places, not common.

**R.** *abortivus*, L. Frequent.

*Var.* *micranthus*, Gray. Not rare.

**R.** *sceleratus*, L. Rather rare.

**R.** *recurvatus*, Poir. Frequent.

**R.** *Pennsylvanicus*, L. Not common.



**Ranunculus**, L. (Crowfoot Buttercup.)—*Continued.***R.** fascicularis, Muhl. frequent.**R.** repens, L. Common in damp places.**R.** bulbosus, L. Rare, (Nat. Eu.)**R.** acris, L. (Buttercups,) Common. (Nat. Eu.)**Caltha**, L. (Cowslips, Marsh Marigola.)**C.** palustris, L. Frequent, in wet places.**Trollius**, L. (Globe flower.)**T.** laxus, Salisb. Frequent.**Coptis**, Salisb. (Gold thread.)**C.** trifolia, Salisb. Frequent.**Aquilegia**, Tourn. (Columbine.)**A.** Canadensis, L. Common among rocks. Bears transplanting.**Actæa**, L. (Baneberry.)**A.** spicata, L.**A.** Var, rubra, Mx. Frequent, in shady woods.**A.** alba, Bigel. (White Baneberry.) White Plains.**Cimicifuga**, L. Bugbane.**C.** racemosa, Ell. (Black snake root.) Frequent in copses and woods.**Order 2.—MAGNOLIACEÆ.** (Magnolia Family.)**Lirodendron**, L. (White Wood, Tulip tree.)**L.** tulipifera, L. Not rare. This is a fine tree for ornamental purposes, and its wood is used much by cabinet makers, for drawers and linings.**Order 4.—MENISPERMACEÆ.** (Moonseed.)**Menispermum**, L.**M.** Canadense, L. Frequent.**Order 5.—BERBERIDACEÆ.** (Barberry.)**Berberis**, L.**B.** vulgaris, L. Not common. About New Rochelle. (Nat. Eu.)**Caulophyllum**, Mx.**C.** thalictroides, L. Not common. (Bicknell.)**Podophyllum**, L. (Mandrake, Love apple.)**P.** peltatum, L. Near Peekskill. Not common. (Lc. Roy.)**Brassenia**, Purgh.**B.** peltata, Mohegan Lake. (Leggett.)

**Order 6.—NYMPHÆACEÆ. (Water Lily.)****Nymphæa**, Tourn.**N. odorata**, Ait. (Sweet scented water lily.) Common in mill ponds and lakes.**Nuphar**, Smith.**N. advena**, Ait. Common in ponds.**N. luteum**, Smith.*Var. pumilum*, Gray. Near Wood Lawn. Not common.**Order 7.—SARACENIACEÆ. (Side-Saddle Flower.—Pitcher plant.)****Saracenia**, Tourn.**S. purpurea**, L. Bedford. (Hexamer.—Jas. Wood.)**Order 8.—PAPAVERACEÆ. (Poppy Family.)****Chelidonium**, L. (Celandine.)**C. majus**, L. Common about houses. (Nat. Eu.)**Sanguinaria**, Dill. (Blood Root.)**S. Canadensis**, L. Common about White Plains.**Order 9.—FUMARIACEÆ. (Fumitory Family.)****Dicentra**, Bork.**D. cucullaria**, DC. (Dutchman's Breeches.) Damp banks, not common.**Corydalis**, Vent.**C. glauca**, Pursh. Rocks about White Plains.**Fumaria**, L. (Fumitory.)**F. officinalis**, L. Riverdale. T. C. B. (E. P. Bicknell.) (Ad. Eu.)**Order 10.—CRUCIFERÆ. (Mustard Family.)****Nasturtium**, R. Br.**N. officinale**, R. Br. Banks and edges of Brooks. (Nat. Eu.)**N. sylvestre**, R. Br. (Yellow cress.) Peekskill, (Leggett.) (Nat. Eu.)**N. Armoracia**, Fries. Waysides escaped from cultivation. (Nat. Eu.)**Dentaria**, L.**D. diphylla**, L. About White Plains, not rare.**D. laciniata**, Muhl. About White Plains.**Cardamine**, L. (Bitter cress.)**C. rhomboidea**, DC. Wet places.**C. pratensis**, L. Frequent.**C. hirsuta**, L. New Castle.*Var. sylvatica*. (Bicknell.)

**Arabis, L.** (Rock Cress.)

- A. lyrata, L.** Rocky woods, not rare.
- A. dentata, Torr & Gray.** Frequent.
- A. lævigata, DC.** Common.
- A. Canadensis, L.** Frequent throughout.

**Barbarea, R. Br.** (Winter Cress.)

- B. vulgaris, R. Br.** Too common ; a troublesome weed.
- B. præcox, R. Br.** (Early Winter Cress.) (Scurvy Grass,) escaped from cultivation—Riverdale, (Bicknell.)

**Sysymbrium, L.** (Hedge Mustard.)

- S. officinale, Scop.** About dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)
- S. Thaliana, Gaud.** About dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)
- S. Alliaria, Brown.** Kings Bridge. (Bicknell—Adv. Eu.)

**Hesperis, L.**

- H. matronalis, L.** Introduced from the west. (Bicknell.)

**Brassica, Tourn.** (Mustard.)

- B. Sinapistrum, Boissier.** Cultivated grounds. (Adv. Eu.)
- B. alba, Gray.** In cultivated grounds. (Adv. Eu.)
- B. nigra, Gray.** Cultivated grounds. (Adv. Eu.)
- B. campestris, L.** Escaped from cultivation. (Bicknell.)
- B. oleracea, L.** Escaped from cultivation. (Bicknell.)

**Draba, L.** (Whitlow Grass.)

- D. Caroliniana, Walt.** Not rare.
- D. verna, L.** Mott Haven, along the railroad.

**Camelina, Crantz.** (False Flax.)

- C. sativa, Crantz.** Cultivated grounds. (Adv. Eu.)

**Capsella, Vent.** (Shepherd's Purse.)

- C. Bursa-pastoris, Moench.** About dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)

**Lepidium, L.** (Pepper Grass.)

- L. Virginicum, L.** About dwellings ; used sometimes for salad.
- L. campestre, L.** Bicknell. (Nat. Eu.)

**Raphanus, L.** (Radish.)

- R. Raphanistrum, L.** Common, and troublesome weed. (Adv. Eu.)
- R. sativus, L.** Escaped from cultivation. (Bicknell.)

**Order 11.—CAPPARIDACEÆ: (Caper Family.)****Polanisia, Raf.**

- P. graveolens, Raf.** Peekskill, (Mead.)

## Order 12.—RESIDACEÆ. (Mignonette Family.)

Reseda, L.

*R. Luteola*, L. Roadsides. (Adv. Eu.)

## Order 14.—VIOLACEÆ. (Violet Family.)

Solea, DC. (Green Violet.)

*S. concolor*, Ging. Near Tarrytown, not common. (Hall.)*Viola*, L. (Violet.)*V. rotundifolia*, Mx. Near Spuyten-Duyvil, and White Plains, sparingly throughout.*V. lanceolata*, L. Near Peekskill. (Le Roy.)*V. primulæfolia*, L. Wet grounds throughout the County.*V. blanda*, Willd. Common with the last.*V. cucullata*, Ait. Common.

## Forms.

“ *a. striata*. Petals white and marked with purple lines.“ *b. palmata*, Gray. Leaves varying from cordate entire to palmate or pedate divided.“ *c. cordata*, Gray. Very broad cordate, sometimes reniform.*V. sagittata*, Ait. Frequent about White Plains.*Var. ovata*, Nutt. In dry grounds.*V. canina*, L. Damp grounds, common.*V. rostrata*, Pursh. New Castle, not common.*V. striata*, Ait. New Castle, not common.*V. Canadensis*, L. New Castle, not common.*V. pubescens*, Ait. Common throughout these limits.*Var. scabriuscula*, Torr. & Gray. Frequent.*V. tricolor*, L. Near Peekskill, escaped from cultivation. (Le Roy—Adv. Eu.)*V. odorata*, L. Riverdale, escaped from gardens. (Bicknell).

## Order 14.—CISTACEÆ. (Rock-rose Family.)

*Helianthemum*, Tourn.*H. Canadense*, Mx. Road-sides.*Lechea*, L.*L. Major* Mx. Frequent.*L. minor* Lam. (Bicknell.)*L. racemulosa*, Mx.

## Order 15.—DROSERACEÆ. (Sundew Family.)

*Drosera*, L. (Sundew.)*D. rotundifolia*, L. Scarsdale. (Miss P. A. McCabe.)



**Order 16.—HYPERICACEÆ. (St. John's-Wort Family.)****Hypericum, L.**

- H. prolificum**, L. Riverdale. (Bicknell.)
- H. ellipticum**, Hook. New Castle.
- H. corymbosum**, Muhl. Pasture. (Leggett.)
- H. perforatum**, L. Common in fields. (Nat. Eu.)
- H. mutilum**. Damp grounds, common.
- H. Canadense**, L. Damp sandy grounds.
- H. Sarothra**, Mx. Common in sandy fields.

**Elodes, Adans. (Marsh, St. John's-wort.)**

- E. Virginica**, Nutt. Swamps.

**Order 17.—ELATINACEÆ. (Water wort Family.)****Elatine, L.**

- E. Americana**. Arnott.

**Order 18.—CARYOPHYLLACEÆ.****Dianthus, L. (Pink.)**

- D. Armeria**, L. New Castle. (Adv. Eu.)

**Saponaria, L. (Soap-wort.)**

- S. officinalis**, L. (Bouncing Bet,) common. (Adv. Eu.)

**Vaccaria, Medik. (Cow-Herb.)**

- V. vulgaris**, Host. Peekskill. (Le Roy.) (Adv. Eu.)

**Silene, L.**

- S. stellata**, Ait. Frequent about White Plains.
- S. inflata**, Smith. About White Plains. (Nat. Eu.)
- S. Pennsylvanica**, Mx. White Plains.
- S. Armeria**, L. Peekskill. (Le Roy.) Escaped from cultivation. (Adv. Eu.)
- S. antirrhina**, L. Peekskill, (Le Roy.)
- S. noctiflora**, L. Escaped. (Bicknell.)

**Lychnis, Tourn. (Cockle.)**

- L. vespertina**, Sibth. (Riverdale—Bicknell.) (Adv. Eu.)
- L. Githago**, Lam. In grain fields. (Adv. Eu.)

**Arenaria, L.**

- A. serpyllifolia**, L. (Nat. Eu.)

**Stellaria, L. (Chickweed.)**

- S. media**, Smith. Common about dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)
- S. longifolia**, Muhl. Not rare.

**Cerastium**, L. (Mouse-ear—Chickweed.)

*C. vulgatum*, L.

*C. viscosum*, L. (Nat. Eu.)

*C. arvense*, L. Peekskill. (Le Roy.)

**Sagina**, L. (Pearl-wort.)

*S. procumbens*, L. Bronx River, near Williams bridge, (Rickard.)

**Spergularia**, Pers. (Sand-Spurrey.)

*S. rubra*, Pers.

*Var. campestris*, Gray. (Peekskill.—Le-Roy.)

**Spergula**, L. Sandy field.

*S. arvensis*, L.

**Anychia** Mx. (Forked Chickweed.)

*A. dichotoma*, Mx.

**Scleranthus**, L.

*S. annuus*. (Nat. Eu.)

**Mollugo**, L. (Indian Chickweed.)

*M. verticillata*, L. Cultivated grounds.

#### Order 19.—PORTULACACEÆ. (Purslane Family.)

**Portulaca**, Tourn. (Purslane.)

*P. oleracea*, L. Common in gardens and cultivated grounds. (Nat. Eu.)

*P. grandiflora*. Escaped from cultivated grounds.

**Claytonia**, L. (Spring Beauty.)

*C. virginica*, L. About White Plains.

*C. Caroliniana*, Mx. About White Plains.

#### Order 20.—MALVACEÆ. (Mallow Family.)

**Althæa**, L. (Marsh-Mallow.)

*A. officinalis*, L. Coast. (Nat. Eu.)

**Malva**, L. (Mallow.)

*M. rotundifolia*, L. Common about dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)

*M. sylvestris*, L. (Adv. En.) Road-sides.

*M. moschata*, L. (Mush-Mallow.) Wood-lawn. (Bicknell—Adv. Eu.)

**Abutilon**, Tourn. (Indian Mallow.)

*A. Avicennæ*, Gært. About dwellings. (Adv. India.)

**Hibiscus**, L. (Rose-Mallow.)

*H. Moscheutos*, L. Near the coast.

*H. Trionum*, L. Escaped from cultivation. (Adv. Eu.) (Dr. Fisher.)

**Order 21.—TILIAEAE, (Linden Family,)****Tilia**, L. (Basswood—Linden.)**T. Americana**, L.**Order 23.—LINACEAE. (Flax Family,)****Linum**, L. (Flax.)**L. Virginianum**, L. Frequent in borders of woods.**L. striatum**, Walt. Riverdale. (Bicknell.)**Order 24—GERANEACEAE, (Geraneum Family,)****Geraneum**, L. (Cranesbill.)**G. maculatum**, L. Bears transplanting, woods, common.**G. Carolinianum**, L. White Plains.**G. Robertianum**, L. Dry soil, waste grounds.**Floerkea**, Wild. (False Mermaid.)**F. proserpinacoides**, Willd. Riverdale. (Bicknell.)**Impatiens**, L. (Jewel-weed—Touch-me-not.)**I. pallida**, Nutt. (Dr. Fisher.)**I. fulva**, Nutt. Damp grounds.**Oxalis**, L. (Wood-Sorrel—Sheep-Sorrel.)**O. acetosella**, L. In damp woods, not common.**O. violacea**, L. Along fences and rocky places.**O. stricta**, L. Along fences and cultivated grounds, common.**Order 25.—RUTACEAE. (Rue Family,)****Zanthoxylum**, Colden. (Prickly Ash.)**Z. Americanum**, Mill. Rare.**Order 26—ANACARDIACEAE, (Cashew Family,)****Rhus**, L. (Sumach.)**R. typhina**, L. Frequent on rocky hill-sides.**R. glabra**, L. Common along fences.**R. copallina**, L. Hill-sides. (Leggett.)**R. venenata**, DC. Swamps and damp grounds.**R. toxicodendron**, L. Common, especially along fences.**Order 27—VITACEAE, (Vine Family,)****Vitis**, Tourn.**V. Labrusca**, L. Damp thickets and woods.**V. æstivalis**, Mx. Thickets. (Dr. Fisher.)**V. cordifolia**, Mx. Frost Grape, along streams.

**Ampelopsis**, Mx. (Virginian Creeper,)

**A. quinquefolia**, Mx. Common in rich grounds.

**Order 28—RHAMNACEÆ, (Buckthorn Family.)**

**Ceanothus**, L. (New Jersey Tea—Red-root.)

**C. Americanus**, L. Copses and borders of open woods.

**Order 29—CELASTRACEÆ, (Staff-tree Family,)**

**Celastrus**, L. (Staff-tree—Bitter-sweet.)

**C. scandens**, L. Frequent throughout.

**Euonymus**, Tourn. (Burning Bush.)

**E. atropurpureus**, Jacq. About White Plains.

**E. Americanus**, L. Riverdale. Not common. (Bicknell.)

**Order 30—SAPINDACEÆ, (Soapberry Family,)**

**Staphylea**, L. (Bladder-nut.)

**S. trifolia**, L. Throughout, sparingly.

**Acer**, Tourn. (Maple.)

**A. Pennsylvanicum**, L. (Striped Maple.)

**A. spicatum**, Lam. (Mountain Maple.)

**A. saccharinum**, Wang. (Sugar Maple.) This is a favorite shade tree, on account of the well proportioned head it forms, and the beauty of its foliage. It is claimed that it is also a *fever tree*, *i. e.* When growing it absorbs so much water as to render malarial districts healthful. In the northern States sugar is manufactured from its sap.

**A. dasycarpum**, Ehrhart, (White Maple—Silver Maple.) This tree was no doubt introduced from the west. On account of its rapid growth, it is a favorite street tree. It however forks in such a way as to be very liable to damage from high winds.

**A. rubrum**, L. (Red Maple.) Common in swamps, bears transplanting to upland and is used sparingly for a shade tree.

**Negundo**, Moench. (Ash-leaved Maple—Box—Elder.)

**N. aceroides**, Moench, A good shade tree, though requiring care to prevent a straggling habit of growth. Growing without cultivation about dwellings.

**Order 31.—POLYGALACEÆ. (Milk Wort Family,)**

**Polygala**, Tourn.

**P. lutea**, L. New Castle, not common. (Hexamer.)

**P. sanguinea**, L. Not rare.

**P. verticillata**, L. Throughout these limits. NOTE.—There is reason to believe that several other species of this genus grow in the County.



## Order 32.—LEGUMINOSÆ (Pulse Family,)

**Crotolaria**, L.

**C. sagittalis**, L. Road-sides, frequent.

**Trifolium**, L. (Clover.)

**T. arvense**, L. Sterile fields, common. (Nat. Eu.)

**T. pratense**, L. Red clover. (Adv. Eu.)

**T. repens**, L. White clover, common.

**T. agrarium**, L. Sandy fields and waste places. (Nat. Eu.)

**T. procumbens**, L. Road-sides. (Nat. Eu.)

**Melilotus**, Tourn (Sweet Clover.)

**M. officinalis**, Wild. Waste grounds. (Adv. Eu.)

**M. alba**, Lam. (Adv. Eu.)

**Medicago**, L. (Medic.)

**M. lupulina**, L. Waste lands. (Adv. Eu.)

**Robinia**, L. Locust Tree.

**R. Pseudacacia**, L. This tree is found in all parts of the county, but in late years it has not grown well; it is attacked by a borer, and dies at the top from some other cause. (Nat. from the west.)

**R. viscosa**, Vent. Planted grounds, and found growing without cultivation near old dwellings. (From the west.)

**Astragalus**, L. (Milk Vetch.)

**A. Canadensis**, L. Rare.

**Desmodium**, DC. (Tick Weed.)

**D. nudiflorum**, DC. Throughout.

**D. acuminatum**, DC. Throughout.

**D. pauciflorum**, DC. Not common.

**D. rotundifolium**, DC. Frequent.

**D. canescens**, DC. Not common.

**D. cuspidatum**, Torr. and Gray. Frequent.

**D. viridiflorum**, Beck. Frequent in the middle of the county.

**D. Dillenii**, Darlingt. (Bicknell.)

**D. paniculatum**, DC. Shady woods, common.

**D. Canadense**, DC. Woods, common.

**D. rigidum**, DC. Hill sides throughout.

**D. ciliare**, DC. (Bicknell.)

**D. Marilandicum**, Boot. Thickets, common.

**Lespedeza**, Mich. (Bush Clover.)

**L. procumbens**, Mx. Not common.

**L. repens**, Torr. and Gray. Frequent, Southern exposures.

**L. violacea**, Pers. Not rare.

*Var. angustifolia*. Frequent.

**L. hirta**, Ell. Dry, rocky hill sides.

**L. capitata**, Mx. Rye, near the shore of the sound.

**Vicia**, Tourn. (Vetch.)

- V.** *sativa*, L. Near Peekskill. (Le Roy.) (Adv. Eu.)
- V.** *tetrasperma*, L. About Peekskill. (Le Roy.) (Nat. Eu.)
- V.** *hirsuta*, Koch. About Peekskill. (Le Roy.) (Nat. Eu.)
- V.** *Americana*, Muhl. About Peekskill. (Le Roy.)

**Lathyrus**, L. (Everlasting Pea.)

- L.** *maritimus*, Bigelow. Coast, common.
- L.** *palustris*, L. Moist places.
- var. *myrtifolius*, Gray. (Bicknell.)

**Apios**, Boerhaave. (Wild Bean—Ground-nut.)

- A.** *tuberosa*, Mœch. Shady woods and damp copses, common.

**Phaseolus**, L. (Kidney Bean.)

- P.** *diversifolius*, Pers. (Bicknell.)
- P.** *perennis*, Walt. Woods and copses.
- P.** *helvolus*, L. Not rare, sandy fence rows.

**Amphicarpæa**, Ell. (Hog Peanut.)

- A.** *monoica*, Nutt. Rich woods.

**Baptisia**, Vent. (False Indigo.)

- B.** *tinctoria*, R. Br. Common.

**Cassia**, L. (Senna.)

- C.** *Marilandica*, L. Not common; the leaves are purgative.
- C.** *Chamæcrista*, L. Frequent, damp, shady soil.
- C.** *nictitans*, L. Common, dry, sandy soil.

**Gleditschia**, L. (Honey Locust.)

**G.** *triacanthos*, L. This tree has been introduced from Southwest, and propagates itself; it is a good shade tree.

**Order 33.—ROSACEÆ. (Rose Family.)****Prunus**, Tourn. (Plum, Cherry, etc.)

- P.** *Americana*, Marshall. Sing Sing. (Dr. Fisher.)
- P.** *maritima*, Wang. Rye.
- P.** *Pennsylvanica*, L. Wood lands and fence rows.
- P.** *serotina*, Ehrhart. Fence rows, not rare.

**Spiræa**, L. (Meadow Sweet.)

- S.** *salicifolia*, L. Damp places, not rare.
- S.** *tomentosa*, L. Frequent in edges of meadows.

**Agrimonia**, Tourn. (Agrimony.)

- A.** *Eupatoria*, L. Frequent in edges of woods.
- A.** *parviflora*, Ait. Riverdale, rare. (Bicknell.)

**Poterium**, L. (Burnet.)

**P.** *Canadense*, Gray. (Canadian Burnet.)

**Geum**, L. (Avens.)

**G.** *Virginianum*, L. (Bicknell.)

**G.** *album*, Gmelin. Borders of woods.

**G.** *strictum*, Ait. Sing Sing, not common. (Bicknell.)

**G.** *rivale*, L. North Salem. (S. B. Mead.)

**Potentilla**, L. (Five-finger.)

**P.** *Norvegica*, L. Not common.

**P.** *Canadensis*, L. Along fences, and in old fields, common.

*Var.* *simplex*, Torr & Gray. Common.

**P.** *argentea*, L. Steril grounds.

**P.** *arguta* Pursh. (Hall.)

**Fragaria**, Tourn. (Strawberry.)

**F.** *Virginiana*, Ehrhart. Fields, and woods.

**F.** *vesca*, L. Fields.

**F.** *Indica*, L. Not common. (Adv. India.)

**Rubus**, Tourn. (Brier, etc.)

**R.** *odoratus*, L. Woods and damp copses.

**R.** *strigosus*, Mx. Edges of woods and fence rows.

**R.** *occidentalis*, L. Along fences, and borders of woods.

**R.** *villosus*, Ait. Pastures, fence rows and woods.

**R.** *Canadensis*, L. Pasture fields and along fences.

**R.** *hispidus*, L. Damp grounds.

**Rosa**, Tourn. (Rose.)

**R.** *Carolina*, L. Damp grounds and meadows.

**R.** *lucida*, Ehrhart. Edges of meadows.

**R.** *blanda*, Ait. Rocky places and edges of meadows.

**R.** *rubiginosa*, L. White Plains, (Nat Eu.)

**R.** *micrantha*, Smith. White Plains. (Nat. Eu.)

**Cratægeus**, L. (Thorn.)

**C.** *coccinea*, L. Thickets.

**C.** *tomentosa*, L. Frequent in thickets.

**Pyrus**, L. (Pear, apple, etc.)

**P.** *arbutifolia*, Ait. Thickets. (Hexamer.)

*Var.* *erithrocarpa*, Gray. Peekskill. (Le Roy.)

**P.** *Americana*, DC. Rocky woods. (Hexamer.)

**Amalanchier**, Medic. (June-Berry.)

**A.** *Canadensis*, T. & Gray.

*Var.* *Botryapium*, T. & Gray. Woods.

**Order 35.—SAXIFRAGACEÆ. (Saxifrage Family.)****Ribes**, L. (Currant and Goosberry.)**R. Cynosbati**, L. About Peekskill. (Le Roy.)**R. lacustre**, Poir. About Peekskill. (Le Roy.)**R. floridum**, L. Woods.**Philadelphus**, L.**P. coronarius**, L. Near Jerome Park. (Bicknell.) Escaped from planted grounds.**Parnassia**, Poir. (Grass of Parnassus.)**P. Caroliniana**, Mx. Damp grounds.**Saxafraga**, Mx. (Saxifrage—Rock-breaker.)**S. Virginiensis**, Mx. Damp rocks.**S. Pennsylvanica**, L. Edges of wet grounds.**Heuchera**, L. (Alum-root.)**H. Americana**, L. Shaded rocks.**Mitella**, Tourn. (Bishop's cap.)**M. diphylla**, L. Shaded hill sides.**Tierella**, L.**T. cordifolia**, L. Shaded rocks.**Chrysosplenium**, Tourn. (Golden Saxifrage.)**C. Americanum**, Schwein. White Plains.**Order 36.—CRASULACEÆ. (Orpine Family.)****Penthorum**, Gronor. (Ditch Stone-crop.)**P. sedoides**, L. Wet meadows.**Tillæa**, L.**T. simplex**, Nutt. Along banks of streams.**Sedum**, Tourn. (Stone-crop—live forever.)**S. acre**, L. (Leggett.)**S. Telephium**, L. Escaped from cultivation. (Nat. Eu.)**Order 37.—HAMAMELACEÆ. (Witch-Hazel Family.)****Hamamelis**, L. (Witch-Hazel.)**H. Virginica**, L. Damp woods, frequent.**Liquidambar**, L. (Sweet-Gum—Bilsted.)**L. Styraciflua**, L. Near Pelham.



Order 38.—**HALORAGACEÆ**. (Water-Milfoil Family.)**Myriophyllum**, Vail. (Water-Milfoil.)**M. tenellum**, Big. Wet places.**Proserpinaca**, L. (Mermaid-weed.)**P. palustris**, L. Swamps.Order 39.—**ONAGRACEÆ**. (Evening-Primrose Family.)**Circæa**, Tourn. (Enchanter's Nightshade.)**C. Lutetiana**, L. Damp woods.**Epilobium**, L.**E. angustifolium**, L. Not rare.**E. palustre**, L.*Var. lineare*. Damp places, frequent.**E. coloratum**, Muhl. Damp grounds.**Oenothera**, L. (Evening Primrose.)**O. biennis**, L. Common.**O. fruticosa**, L. Kingsbridge. (Leggett.)**O. pumila**, L. Rye Lake.**Ludwigia**, L. (False Loose-strife.)**L. alternifolia**, L. Common.**L. sphærocarpa**, Ell. Peekskill. (Le Roy.)**L. palustris**, Ell. Peekskill.Order 41.—**LYTHRACEÆ**. (Loosestrife Family.)**Lythrum**, L. (Loosestrife.)**L. Salicaria**, L. Between Fordham and Williams Bridge. (Bicknell.)**Nesæa**, Commerson, Juss. (Swamp Loose-strife.)**N. verticillata**, H. B. K.. Wet places.**Cuphea**, Jacq.**C. viscosissima**, Jacq., near Lake Mohegan.Order 43.—**CACTACEÆ**. (Cactus Family.)**Opuntia**, Tourn. (Prickly Pear.)**O. Rafinesquii**, Eng. Rocks near New Rochelle.Order 45.—**CUCURBITACEÆ** (Gourd Family.)**Sicyos**, L. (One-seeded Star-Cucumber.)**S. angulatus**, L. Damp grounds.

Order 46.—**UMBELLIFERÆ.** (Parsley Family.)**Hydrocotyle**, Tourn. (Water Pennywort.)**H.** *Americana*, L. Damp grounds.**H.** *umbellata*, L. Ponds common.**Crantzia**, Nutt.**C.** *lineata*, Nutt. Coast, of the Sound.**Sanicula**, Tourn. (Black Snakeroot.)**S.** *Canadensis*, L. Shaded places.**S.** *Marilandica*, L. Woods.**Daucus**, Tourn. (Wild Carrot.)**D.** *Carota*, L. Common. (Nat. Eu.)**Pastinaca**, Tourn. (Parsnip.)**P.** *sativa*, L. About dwellings, escaped from cultivation. It is generally supposed that it is poisonous, which is a mistake ; it is the Parsnip of the garden growing wild. (Adv. Eu.)**Archangelica**, Hoffm.**A.** *hirsuta*, Torr & Gray. (Leggett.)**A.** *atropurpurea*, Hoffm. Along streams.**Conioselinum**, Fischer. (Hemlock Parsley.)**C.** *Canadense*, T. & G.**Æthusa**, L. (Fools Parsley.)**Æ.** *Cynapium*, L. (Adv. Eu.)**Thaspium**, Nutt. (Meadow-Parsnip.)**T.** *aureum*, Nutt. Sparingly scattered over the middle of the County.**Zizia**, DC.**Z.** *integerrima*, DC. Not common.**Discopleura**, DC.**D.** *capillacea*, DC. Salt marshes. (Leggett.)**Cuscuta**, L. (Water-Hemlock.)**C.** *maculata*, L. (Beaver Poison.) Northern part of the county.**C.** *bulbifera*, L. Lake Mohegan. (Leggett.)**Sium**, L. (Water-Parsnip.)**S.** *lineare*, Mx. Wet places.**Cryptotænia**, DC. (Honewort.)**C.** *Canadensis*, DC. Thickets.**Osmorrhiza**, Rof. (Sweet Cicely.)**O.** *longistylis*, DC. (Damp woods.)**O.** *brevistylis*, DC. (Woods and rich copses.)

## Order 47.—ARALIACEÆ. (Ginseng Family.)

**Aralia**, Tourn. (Wild Sarsapilla.

- A. spinosa**, L. Near Van Cortland Lake. (Bicknell.)
- A. nudicaulis**, L. (Bicknell.)
- A. racemosa**, L. Shady woods.
- A. trifolia**, Gray. Woods.

## Order 48.—CORNACEÆ. (Dogwood Family.)

**Cornus**, Tourn (Dogwood.)

- C. florida**, L. (Dogwood—Spoonwood.) A small tree. Common,
- C. circinata**, L'Her. Not very frequent.
- C. sericea**, L. Not rare.
- C. stolonifera**, Mx. Edges of swampy places.
- C. paniculata**, L. Her. Fence rows.
- C. alternifolia**, L. Edges of copses, and along fences.

**Nyssa**, L. (Sour Gum—Pepperidge.)

- N. multiflora**, Wang. Damp woods and thickets.

## Order 49.—CAPRIFOLIACEÆ. (Honeysuckle Family.)

**Symphoricarpus**, Dill. (Snowberry.)

- S. vulgaris**, Mx. Rocky places. (Bicknell.)

**Lonicera**, L.

- L. sempervirens**, Ait. Edges of woods.
- L. parviflora**, Lam. Riverdale, rare. (Bicknell.)

**Diervilla**, Tourn. (Bush Honeysuckle.)

- D. trifida**, Moench. Rocky places.

**Triosteum**, L. (Horse-Gentian.)

- T. perfoliatum**, L. Edges of rich woods.

**Sambucus**, Tourn. (Elder.)

- S. Canadensis**, L. Common.

**Viburnum**, F. (Arrow-wood.)

- V. Lentago**, L. Along fences.
- V. prunifolium**, L. (Bicknell.)
- V. nudum**, L. Borders of swamps.
- V. dentatum**, L. Damp grounds.
- V. acerifolium**, L. Woods as undergrowth.
- V. pauciflorum**, Pylaie.
- V. Opulus**, L. Damp grounds. (S. B. Mead.)

**Order 50.—RUBIACEÆ, (Madder Family.)****Galium, L.** (Bedstraw—Cleavers,)

- G. aparine*, L. Moss-woods.
- G. asprellum*, Mx. Damp places.
- G. trifidum*, L. (Bicknell.)
- G. triflorum*, Mx. Woods.
- G. pilosum*, Ait. (Bicknell.)
- G. circæzans*, Mx. Open Woods.
- G. lanceolatum*, Tour. Woods.
- G. boreale*, L. Damp rocks.
- G. verum*, L. Peekskill. (Le. Roy.) (Adv. Eu.)

**Cephalanthus, L.** (Button-bush.)

- C. occidentalis*, L. Edges of meadows,

**Mitchella, L.** (Partridge-berry.)

- M. repens*, L. Shaded places.

**Oldenlandia, Plumier, L.**

- O. glomerata*, Mx. Damp places.

**Houstonia, L.**

- H. purpurea*, L.
- H. cærulea*, L. Among grass, not common.

**Order 52.—DIPSACEÆ. (Teasel Family.)****Dipsacus, Tourn.**

- D. sylvestris*, Mill. Road-sides. (Adv. Eu.)

**Order 53.—COMPOSITÆ. (Composita Family.)****Vernonia, Schreb.** (Iron-weed.)

- V. noveboracensis*, Willd. Damp places, common.

**Liatris, Schreb.** (Blazing Star.)

- L. scariosa*, Willd. Rocky hills.)
- L. spicata*, Willd. Borders of salt meadows, Rye,

**Eupatorium, Tourn.** (Thoroughwort.)

- E. purpureum*, L. Damp grounds, common.
- E. teucrifolium*, Willd. Peekskill, (Le. Roy.)
- E. sessilifolium*, L. (Bicknell.)
- E. perfoliatum*, L. Damp grounds, common.
- E. ageratoides*, L. New Castle and Lake Mohegan.
- E. aromaticum*, L. Bedford.



**Mikania**, Willd.

*M. scandens*, L. Tarrytown. (Paine.)

**Tussilago**, Tourn. (Coltsfoot.)

*T. Farfara* L. Damp shaded banks.

**Sericocarpus**, Nees. (White-topped Aster.)

*S. solidagineus*, Nees. Thickets, not rare

*S. conyzoides*, Nees. Dry copses.

**Aster**, L.

*A. corymbosus*, Ait. Woods, not rare.

*A. macrophyllus*, L. Damp shady woods.

*A. patens*, Ait. Along fences.

*A. lævis*, L. Copses, and hedge rows.

*A. undulatus*, L. Copses.

*A. cordifolius*, L. Road-sides and fence rows.

*A. sagittifolius*, Willd. Along fences.

*A. ericoides*, L. West Farms.

*A. multiflorus*, Ait. Road-sides.

*A. dumosus*, L. (Bicknell.)

*A. Tradescanti*, L. Damp grounds.

*A. miser* L., Ait.

*A. simplex*, Willd. Moist land.

*A. tenuifolius*, L. Damp grounds.

*A. longifolius*, Lam.

*A. puniceus*, L. Common.

*A. Novæ-Angliæ*, L. Road-sides and meadows.

*A. acuminatus*, Mx. Peekskill.

*A. nemoralis*, Ait. Coast.

*A. flexuosus*, Nutt. (Bicknell.)

*A. linifolius*, L. New Castle.

**Erigeron**, L. (Fleabane.)

*E. Canadense*, L. Very common.

*E. bellidifolium*, Muhl. Edges of woods, not rare.

*E. Philadelphicum*, L. Frequent.

*E. annuum*, Pers. Fields, not common.

*E. strigosum*, Muhl. New Castle, sparingly throughout.

**Diplopappus**, Cas. (Double-bristled Aster.)

*D. linifolius*, Hook. Dry copses.

*D. umbellatus*, T. & G. Damp copses.

*D. amygdalinus*, T. & G. Cortlandt Lake. (Bicknell.)

**Solidago**, L. (Golden-rod.)

*S. squarrosa*, Nutt. Riverdale. (Bicknell.)

*S. bicolor*, L. Hedge-rows,

*S. latifolia*, L. Damp shaded places.

- S. cæsia**, L. Open woods.  
**S. speciosa**, Nutt.  
*Var. angustata*. (Bicknell.)  
**S. puberula**, Nutt. Sandy fields.  
**S. rigida**, L. Along fence rows.  
**S. sempervirens**, L. Rye, borders of salt marsh.  
**S. elliptica**, Ait. Borders of salt marsh, Rye.  
**S. neglecta**, T. & G. Wet places.  
**S. patula**, Muhl. Swampy places.  
**S. arguta**, Ait. Thickets.  
*Var. juncea*, G. Thickets,  
**S. Muhlenbergii**, T. & Gray. Edges of woods.  
**S. linoides**, Solander. Swamps.  
**S. altissima**, L. Along fences.  
**S. ulmifolia**, Muhl. Damp thickets.  
**S. odora**, Ait. Peekskill. (Le Roy.)  
**S. nemoralis**, Ait. Fields and road-sides, common.  
**S. Canadensis**, L. Fields and road-sides.  
**S. serotina**, Ait. Damp grounds.  
**S. gigantea**, Ait. Along fences.  
**S. lanceolata**, L. Damp grounds.  
**S. tenuifolia**, Pursh. Rye, near the coast.

**Inula**, L. (Elecampane.)

- L. Helenium**, L. Road-sides, near dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)

**Pluchea**, Cass.

- P. camphorata**, DC. Along the coast.

**Baccharis**, L. (Groundsel-Tree.)

- B. halimifolia**, L. (Leggett.)

**Iva**, L. (Marsh Elder.)

- I. frutescens**, L. Salt meadows.

**Ambrosia**, Tourn. (Rag-weed.)

- A. trifida**, L. Fields.

**A. artimisiæfolia**, L. Said to be the plant whose pollen causes the disease called Hay Fever. In confirmation of this belief, the following statement was made to me by Rev. Dr. Samuel Lockwood, who is a sufferer. I give, as near as I can recollect, his own words: In a walk through the fields I came to a wheat stubble covered with a dense growth of Ambrosia, *Artimisiæfolia*, in a state just ready to discharge its pollen. I hesitated, but finally concluded to cross; at once I found great difficulty in breathing and when I reached the other side, I was completely prostrated and was obliged to sit for some time, and the experiment was followed by one of the most severe attacks of Hay Fever I have ever experienced.

**Xanthium**, Tourn. (Cocklebur.)

- X. strumarium**, L. Spyten Duyvil, (Leggett.)

*Var. echinatum*, Gray.

- Y. spinosum**, L. Coast. (Nat. from the south.)

**Heliopsis, L.** (Tick-seed.)**H.** *laevis*, Pers.*Var. scabra.* White Plains. A single plant in the nothern part of Scarsdale, near White Plains, found by Miss A. McCabe.**Rudbeckia, L.** (Cone-flower.)**R.** *laciniata*, L. Fields, sparingly throughout.**R.** *hirta*, L. Fields, frequent.**Helianthus, L.** (Sun-flower.)**H.** *giganteus*, L. Swampy places.**H.** *strumosus*, L. Damp thickets.**H.** *divaricatus*, L. Edges of woods.**H.** *decapetalus*, L. Along streams.**H.** *tuberosus*, L. Escaped from cultivation. The tubers of this species are used for pickles.**Coreopsis, L.** (Tick-seed.)**C.** *tricosperma*, Mx. Wet places.**Bidens, L.** (Bur-Marigold—Pitchfork.)**B.** *frondosa*, L. Damp places.**B.** *connata*, Muhl. Road-sides.**B.** *chrysanthemoides*, Mx. New Castle.**B.** *bipinnata*, L. Road-sides and fence rows.**Helenium, L.** (Sneeze-weed.)**H.** *autumnale*, L. Meadows.**Galinsoga, Ruiz & Par.****G.** *parviflora*, Car. (Adv., from S. America.)**Maruta, Cass.** (May-weed.)**M.** *Cotula*, DC. Road-sides and wastes about dwellings, common. (Nat. Eu.)**Anthemis, L.** (Chamomile.)**A.** *arvensis*. White Plains. (Adv. Eu.)**Achillea, L.** (Yarrow.)**A.** *Millefolium*, L. Road-sides, Common.*Var. rosea.***Leucanthemum, Tourn.** (Ox-eye Daisy.)**L.** *vulgare*, Lam. (Nat. Eu.) White Plains is said to have been named from the appearance of the fields when this plant was in flower. (Doubtful.)**Tanacetum, L.** (Tansy.)**T.** *vulgare*, L. Near dwellings, (Adv. Eu.)**Artemisia, L.** (Wormwood.)**A.** *vulgaris*, L. About dwellings. (Adv. Eu.)**A.** *biennis*, Willd. Along H. R. R. Road, not common.

**Gnaphalium**, L. (Cudweed.)

- G. decurrens*, Tow. Hills, frequent.
- G. polycephalum*, Mx. Edges of wood land.
- G. uliginosum*, L. Road-sides, throughout.
- G. purpureum*, L. Common in sterile soil.

**Antennaria**, Gärtin. (Everlasting.)

- A. margaritacea*, R. Brown. Woods.
- A. plataginifolia* Hook. Sterile hill sides.

**Filago**, Tourn. (Cotton-Rose.)

- F. Germanica*, L. Old fields. (Nat. Eu.)

**Erechthites**, Raf. (Fireweed.)

- E. hieracifolia*, Raf. Clearings, which have been burned over.

**Senecio**, L. (Groundsel.)

- S. vulgaris*, L. (Waste places.) (Adv. Eu.)
- S. aureus*, L. Common.

**Centaurea**, L.

- C. Cyanus*, L. (Pooley.)

**Cirsium**, Tourn.

- C. lanceolatum*, Scop. Road-sides, (Nat. Eu.)
- C. discolor*, Spreng. Damp thickets.
- C. muticum*, Mx. Wet grounds.
- C. pumilum*, Spreng. Old fields.
- C. horridulum*, Mx. Rye, and along the coast.
- C. arvense*, Scop, (Common in cultivated grounds.) This plant is found throughout, but not sufficiently abundant to be very troublesome. It fruits, if at all, very sparingly in this region.

**Lappa**, L. (Burdock.)

- L. officinalis*, Allioni. About dwellings.

**Lampsana**, L.

- L. communis*, L. Riverdale. (Bicknell—Adv. Eu.)

**Cichorium**, Tourn. (Chickory.)

- C. Intybus*, L. Road-sides and about dwellings. The root of this plant is used to adulterate coffee.

**Krigia**, Schreber. (Dwarf Dandelion.)]

- K. Virginica*, Willd. Sparingly scattered over the county.

**Cynthia**, Don.

- C. Virginica*, Don. Not common.



**Hieracium**, Tourn. (Hawkweed.)

- H.** *Canadense*, Mx. New Castle.
- H.** *scabrum*, Mx. Dry copses and open woods.
- H.** *Gronovii*, L.
- H.** *venosum*, L. Dry open woods, White Plains.
- H.** *paniculatum*, L. Woods, not very common.

**Nabalus**, Cass. (Rattlesnake-root.)

- N.** *altissimus*, Hook. Damp woods.
- N.** *Fraseri*, DC. New Castle.
- N.** *racemosus*, Hook. Hudson R. R. R. track, The seeds of this plant, have no doubt been brought from the west in grain, or other freight.

**Taraxacum**, Haller. Dandelion.

- T.** *Dens-leonis*, Desf. Road-sides and lawns, common.

**Lactuca**, Tourn. (Lettuce.)

- L.** *Canadensis*, L.
- Var. integrifolia*, T. & G. (Leggett.)
- Var. sanguinea*, T. & G. Dry grounds.

**Mulgedium**, Cass. (Blue Lettuce.)

- M.** *leucophæum*, DC. Damp grounds.

**Sonchus**, L. (Sow-Thistle.)

- S.** *oleraceus*, L. near dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)
- S.** *asper*, Vill. About dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)
- S.** *arvensis*, L. Road-sides. (Nat. Eu.)

## Order 54.—LOBELIACEÆ. (Lobelia Family.)

**Lobelia**, L. (Lobelia.)

- L.** *cardinalis*, L. Damp grounds. Very showy plant, bears cultivation.
- L.** *syphilitica*, L. Road-sides and damp places; bears cultivation well.
- L.** *inflata*, L. Fields and pastures. Used by the Thomsonian practitioners in compounding their medicines.
- L.** *spicata*, Lam. White Plains. (Miss McCabe.)
- L.** *Kalmii*, L. White Plains. (Miss McCabe.)

## Order 55.—CAMPANULACEÆ. (Campanula Family.)

**Campanula**, Tourn. (Bellflower.)

- C.** *rotundifolia*, L. Leggett.
- C.** *aparanoides*, Mx. Damp meadows, among grass.
- C.** *rapunculoides*, L. (Bicknell.) (Adv. Eu.)

**Specularia**, Heister. (Venus's Looking-glass.)

- S.** *perfoliata*, A. DC. Frequent.

## Order 56.—ERICACEÆ. (Heath Family.)

**Gaylussacia**, H. B. K. (Huckleberry.)**G. dumosa**, T. & G. Damp sandy soil.**G. frondosa**, T. & O. Damp thickets.**G. resinosa**, T. & G. Woodlands and swamps.**Vaccinium**, L.**V. macrocarpon**, Ait. The cranberry of commerce. Cranberry Pond near Kensico.**V. stamineum**, L. Dry copses and open woods.**V. Pennsylvanicum**, Lam. Dry copses and edges of woods.**V. vacillans**, Solander. sandy woods.**V. corymbosum**, L.*Var. atrococcum*, Gray. (Bicknell.)**Epigæa**, L. (Trailing Arbutus.)**E. repens**, L. Cranberry Pond, and valley of the Bronx, near the sound.—Somers near Coter's Lake, (James Wood.)—Sing Sing, (Dr. Fisher.)**Gaultheria**, Kalm. (Wintergreen.)**G. procumbens**, L. Damp woods.**Leucothoe**, Don.**L. racemosa**. Gray. (Bicknell.)**Cassandra**, Don. (Leather leaf.)**C. calyculata**, Don. New Castle. Bogs.**Andromeda**, L.**A. Mariana**, L. Along the coast of the Sound.**A. ligustrina**, Muhl. White Plains.**Clethra**, L. (Sweet pepperbush.)**C. alnifolia**, Damp grounds and borders of meadows, bears transplanting and is used for an ornamental shrub.**Kalmia**, L. (American Laureb.)**K. latifolia**, L. Woods common, four to ten feet high, a beautiful evergreen shrub, bears transplanting and is valued for its heavy green leaves and showy flowers.**K. angustifolia**, L. New Castle.**Azalia**, L. (False Honeysuckle.)**A. viscosa**, L. Not common. (Leggett.)**A. nudiflora**, L. Woods throughout.

NOTE.—Both the above species bear transplanting, and are beautiful objects in planted grounds. Shrubs three to six feet in height.

**Rhodora**, Duhamel.

**R.** *Canadensis*. Damp woods.

**Pyrola**, Tourn. (Shin-leaf.)

**P.** *rotundifolia*. Boggy places.

*Var.* *asarifolia*, Gray, not rare.

**P.** *elliptica*, Nutt. White Plains.

**P.** *secunda*, L. Woods.

**Chimaphila**, Pursh.

**C.** *umbellata*, Nutt. Woods common.

**C.** *maculata*, Pursh. Woods with the above.

**Pterospora**, Nutt. (Pine-drops.)

**P.** *Andromedea*, Nutt.

**Monotropa**, L. (Indian Pipe.)

**M.** *uniflora*, L. Dark woods.

**M.** *Hypopitys*, L. Woods.

Order 58.—**AQUIFOLIACEÆ**. (Holly Family.)**Ilex**, L. (Holly.)

**I.** *verticillata*, Gray. (Black Alder.) Damp copses.

**I.** *lævigata*, Gray. (Smooth winterberry.)

Order 59.—**EBENACEÆ**. (Ebony Family.)**Diospyros**, L. (Persimmon, Medler.)

**D.** *Virginiana*, L. Pelham. (Richard S. Collins.) A second-class tree. Fruit edible, rare in these limits ; no doubt introduced by seeds from further south.

Order 62.—**PLANTAGINACEÆ**. (Plantain Family.)**Plantago**, L. (Plantain.)

**P.** *major*, L. (Nat. Eu.)

**P.** *Rugelii*, Decaisne. (Leggett.) Common.

**P.** *lanceolata*, L. Pastures and lawns. (Nat. Eu.)

**P.** *Virginica*, L. Sandy ground.

**P.** *pusilla*, Nutt. Dry grounds.

Order 63.—**PLUMBAGINACEÆ**. (Leadwort Family.)**Statice**, Tourn. (Marsh-Rosemary.)

**S.** *Limonium*, L. Salt meadows along the Sound.

**Order 64.—PRIMULACEÆ. (Primrose Family.)****Trientalis**, L. (Chickweed-Wintergreen.)**P. Americana**, Pursh. Shady woods.**Steironema**, Rof.**S. ciliata**, L. Low grounds.**S. lanceolata**, Walt. Wet banks of streams.**Lysimachia**, Tourn. (Loosestrife.)**L. thysiflora**, L. Swampy places.**L. stricta**, Ait. Damp places.**L. quadrifolia**, L. Damp ground.**L. nummularia**, L. Escaped from cultivation. (Leggett.)**Anagallis**, Tourn. (Pimpernel.)**A. arvensis**, L. Old fields. (Nat. Eu.)**Samolus**, L.**S. Valerandi**, L.*Var. Americanus*, Gray, (Leggett.)**Hottonia**, L. (Water Violet.)**H. inflata**, Ell. Stagnant water.**Order 65.—LENTIBULACEÆ. (Bladderwort Family.)****Utricularia**, L. (Bladderwort.)**U. vulgaris**, L.**U. gibba**, L. Shoal water.**Order 66.—BIGNONIACEÆ. (Bignonia Family.)****Catalpa**, Scop., Walt. (Catalpa. Indian Bean. Smoking Bean Tree.)

**C. bignonioides**, Walt. This tree is rather a favorite as a shade tree on account of its fine foliage and showy flowers. Introduced from the West, and sows itself and grows without cultivation along the road sides. In late years nurseymen graft it, and thereby produce a more compact head.

**Order 67.—OROBANCHACEÆ. (Broom-rape Family.)****Epiphegus**, Nutt. (Beech-drops.)**E. Virginiana**, Bart. Shady woods.**Conopholis**, Wallroth. (Squaw-root.)**C. Americana**, Wallroth. Woods.**Aphyllon**, Mitchell. (Naked Broom-rape.,**A. uniflorum**, T. & G. Woods.



**Order 68.—SCROPHULARIACEÆ. (Figwort Family.)****Verbascum, L. (Mullein.)**

**V.** *Thapsus*, L. Fields common. (Nat. Eu.)

**V.** *Blattaria*, L. Fields and road sides. (Nat. Eu.)

**Linaria, Tourn. (Toad Flex. Snap Dragon.)**

**L.** *Canadensis*, Spreng. About Peekskill. (Le Roy.)

**L.** *vulgaris*, Mill. Fields and pastures, a troublesome weed. (Nat. Eu.)

**Scrophularia, Tourn. (Figwort.)**

**S.** *nodosa*, L. Damp thickets.

**Chelone, Tourn. (Turtle-head. Snake-head.)**

**C.** *glabra*, L. Borders of wet meadows.

**Pentstemon, Mitchell. (Beard-tongue.)**

**P.** *pubescens*, Solander. Edges of thickets.

**Mimulus, L. (Monky-flower.)**

**M.** *ringens*, L. Edges of meadows and wet thickets.

**Gratiola, L. (Hedge-Hyssop.)**

**G.** *Virginiana*, L. Banks or shores of ponds.

**Ilysanthes, Raf.**

**I.** *gratioloides*, Benth. (Bicknell.)

**Limosella, L. (Mudwort.)**

**L.** *aquatica*, L.

*Var.* *tenuifolia*, Hoffm. Along the coast.

**Veronica, L. (Speedwell.)**

**V.** *Virginica*, L. Woods.

**V.** *Americana*, Schweinitz. Along the edges of ditches.

**V.** *scutellata*, L. Swamps.

**V.** *officinalis*, L. Dry grounds.

**V.** *serpyllifolia*, L. Road sides and lawns.

**V.** *peregrina*, L. Waste places.

**V.** *arvensis* L. Cultivated grounds.

**Gerardia, L.**

**G.** *purpurea*, L. Damp places.

**G.** *maritima*, Raf. Rye and along the coast.

**G.** *tenuifolia*, Vohl. Woods.

**G.** *flava*, L. Woods and copses.

**G.** *quercifolia*, Pursh. Woods.

**Castilleja, Mutis. Painted-cup.)**

**C.** *coccinea*, Spreng.

**Pedicularis**, Tourn. (Lousewort.)**P.** *Canadensis*, L. Copses.**P.** *lanceolata*, Mx. Edges of wet meadows.**Melampyrum**, Tourn. Cow-wheat.**M.** *Americana*, Mx.**Order 70.—VERBENACEÆ. (Vervain Family.)****Verbena**, L. (Vervain.)**V.** *angustifolia*, Mx. Sing Sing. (Dr. Fisher.)**V.** *hastata*, L. Waste places about dwellings.**V.** *urticifolia*, L. Road-sides and borders of fields.**Phryma**, L.**P.** *Leptostachya*, L. Damp woods.**Order 71.—LABIATÆ. (Mint Family.)****Teucrium**, L. (Germander.)**T.** *Canadense*, L. Damp places.**Trichostema**. (Blue Curls.)**T.** *dichotomum*, L. Common in stubble.**Mentha**, L. (Mint.)**M.** *viridis*, L. Damp places. (Nat. Eu.)**M.** *piperita*, L. Along brooks. (Nat. Eu.)**M.** *aquatica*, L.*Var.* *crispa*, Benthem. (Leggett.) (Nat. Eu.)**M.** *arvensis*, L. Peekskill. (Le Roy.)**M.** *Canadensis*, L. Peekskill. (Le Roy.)**Lycopus**, L.**L.** *Virginicus*, L. Damp meadows.**L.** *Europæus*, L. (Bicknell.)**Cunila**, L. (Dittany.)**C.** *Mariana*, L. Old fields.**Pycnanthemum**, Mx. (Sweet Basil. Mountain mint.)**P.** *incanum*, Mx. Edges of woods.**P.** *clinopodioides*, T. & G. Copses.**P.** *muticum*, Pers. Along fences.**P.** *lanceolatum*, Pursh. Copses and along fences.**P.** *linifolium*, Pursh. Riverdale. (Bicknell.)**Origanum**, L. Wild Marjoram.**O.** *vulgare*, L. Near dwellings, escaped from cultivation. (Nat. Eu.)

**Thymus**, L. (Thyme.)

**T.** Serpyllum, L. Escaped from cultivation. (Adv. Eu.)

**Calamintha**, Moench.

**C.** Clinopodium, Benth. Edges of thickets and along fence rows.

**Melissa**, L. (Balm.)

**M.** officinalis, L. Near dwellings where it has escaped from cultivation. (Nat. Eu.)

**Hedeoma**, Pers. (Mock Pennyroyal.)

**H.** pulegioides, Pers. Old fields and woods.

**Collinsonia**, L. (Horse Balm.)

**C.** Canadensis, L. Damp shady woods.

**Salvia**, L. (Sage.)

**S.** lyrata, L. New Castle. (Hexamer.)

**Monarda**, L. (Horse Mint.)

**M.** didyma, L. Peekskill. Not common. (Le Roy.)

**M.** fistulosa, L. Old fields near Little Rye Lake.

**M.** punctata, L. Not common. Sing Sing. (Dr. Fisher.)

**Blephilia**, Raf.

**B.** ciliata, Raf. Peekskill. (Le Roy.)

**Lophanthus**, Benth. (Giant Hyssop.)

**L.** scrophulariæfolius, Benth. Edges of woods.

**Nepeta**, L. (Cat-Mint. Catnip.)

**N.** Cataria, L. Near dwellings, common. (Adv. Eu.)

**N.** Glechoma, Benth. A weed in gardens.

**Physostegia**, Benth. (False Dragon-Head.)

**P.** Virginiana, Benth. Not Common.

**Brunella**, Tourn. (Self-Heal.)

**B.** vulgaris, L. Fields and open woods.

**Scutellaria**, L. (Skullcap.)

**S.** pilosa, Mx. Jerome Park. (Bicknell.)

**S.** integrifolia, L. Along fences.

**S.** galericulata, L. Shady places along brooks.

**S.** lateriflora, L. Damp places.

**Marrubium**, L. (Horehound.)

**M.** vulgare, L. About dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)

**Galeopsis**, L. (Hemp-Nettle.)

**G.** Tetrahit, L. Waste places. (Nat. Eu.)

**Stachys, L.****S. palustris, L.***Var. aspera, Gray.* Not common. (Leggett.)**Leonurus, L. (Motherwort.)****L. Cardiaca, L.** Near dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)**Lamium, L. (Dead-Nettle.)****L. amplexicaule, L.** Weed in gardens. (Adv. Eu.)**Order 72.—BORRAGINACEÆ. (Borage Family.)****Echium, Tourn. Vipeis Bugloss.****E. vulgare, L.** Road-sides, not common. (Nat. Eu.)**Symphytum, Tourn. (Comfrey.)****S. officinale, L.** Road-sides, escape from cultivation. (Adv. Eu.)**Onosmodium, Mx. (False Gromwell.)****O. Virginianum, DC.** Hill sides.**Lithospermum, Tourn. (Gromwell. Puccoon.)****L. officinale, L.** Peekskill.**Myosotis, L. (Forget-me-not.)****M. palustris, Withering.***Var. laxa, Gray.* Along brooks and other wet places.**M. verna, Nutt. (Bicknell.)****Cynoglossum, Tourn. (Hound's-Tongue.)****C. officinale, L.** Damp places and fields. (Nat. Eu.)**C. Morisoni, DC.** (Pooley.)**Order 73.—HYDROPHYLLACEÆ. (Waterleaf.)****Hydrophyllum, L. (Waterleaf.)****H. Virginicum, L.** Shady woods.**Order 74.—POLEMONIACEÆ. (Polemonium Family.)****Phlox, L.****P. subulata, L.** Sing Sing. (Dr. Fisher.)**Order 75.—CONVOLVULACEÆ. (Convolvulus Family.)****Quamoclit, Tourn. (Cypress-Vine.)****Q. coccinea, Moench.** Banks of stream. (Nat. Trop. America.)



**Ipomœa**, L. (Morning-glory.)

- I.** *purpurea*, Lam. Near dwellings. (Adv. from South.)
- I.** *pandurata*, Meyer. Spuyten-Duyvil. (Bicknell.)
- I.** Nil, Roth. (Bicknell.) (Adv. Trop. America.)

**Convolvulus**, L. (Bindweed.)

- C.** *arvensis*, L. Sing Sing. (Dr. Fisher.) (Nat. Eu.)

**Calystegia**, R. Br. (Bindweed.)

- C.** *sepium*, R. Br.

**Cuscuta**, Tourn. (Dodder.)

- C.** *inflexa*, Eng. Damp places, Hudson R. R. track, and Lake Mohegan.
- C.** *Gronovii*, Willd. Common in damp grounds.
- C.** *compacta*, Juss. Damp places, Hudson R. R. track.

**Order 76.—SOLANACEÆ. (Nightshade Family.)****Solanum**, Tourn. (Nightshade.)

- S.** *Dulcamara*, L. White Plains. (Nat. Eu.)
- S.** *nigrum*, L. West Farms. (Nat. Eu.)

**Physalis**, L. (Ground cherry. Ground apple.)

- P.** *pubescens*, L. Peekskill. (Le Roy.)
- P.** *viscosa*, L. Road-sides, common.

**Nicandra**, Adans. (Apple of Peru.)

- N.** *physaloides*, Gærtn. Waste grounds. (Adv. Peru.)

**Lycium**, L.

- L.** *vulgare*, Dunal. Matrimony-vine. Near dwellings, rare. (Adv. Eu.)

**Hyoscyamus**, Tourn. (Henbane.)

- H.** *niger*, L. About dwellings. (Adv. Eu.)

**Datura**, L. (Simon Pumpkin. Thorn apple.)

- D.** *Stramonium*. About dwellings. (Adv. Asia.)
- D.** *Tatula*, L. (Pooley.)

**Order 77.—GENTIANACEÆ. (Gentian Fam..y.)****Sabbatia**, Adans. (American Centuary.)

- S.** *angularis*, Pursh. (Bicknell.)
- S.** *stellaris*, Pursh. Salt marshes. (Leggett.)
- S.** *chloroides*, Pursh. Along the coast.

**Gentiana**, L. (Gentian.)**G.** *crinita*, Frœl. Low grounds.**G.** *Andrewsii*, Griseb. Damp grounds.**Bartonia**, Muhl.**B.** *tenella*, Muhl. Woods. (Leggett.)**Menyanthes**, Tourn. (Buckbean.)**M.** *trifoliata*, L. Cranberry Pond. (Kensico.)Order 79.—**APOCYNACEÆ**. (Dogbane Family.)**Apocynum**, Tourn. (Indian Hemp.)**A.** *androsæmifolium*, L. Edges of thickets.**A.** *cannabinum*, L. Not rare.Order 80.—**ASCLEPIADACEÆ**. (Milkweed Family.)**Asclepias**, L. (Milkweed. Silkweed.)**A.** *Cornuti*, Decaisne. Common.**A.** *phytolaccoides*, Pursh. New Castle.**A.** *purpurascens*, L. Copses and edges of woods.**A.** *variegata*, L. Woods.**A.** *quadrifolia*, Jacq. Shady woods, frequent.**A.** *incarnata*, L. Damp places.**A.** *tuberosa*, L. Dry fields and road-sides.**A.** *verticillata*, L. Not rare.**Acerates**, Ell. (Le Roy.) (Green Milkweed.)**A.** *viridiflora*, Ell. Not rare.Order 81.—**OLEACEÆ**. (Olive Family.)**Ligustrum**, Tourn. (Privet, or Prim.)**L.** *vulgare*, L. A graceful shrub, growing frequently without cultivation, used for hedges. (Nat. Eu.)**Fraxinus**, L.**F.** *Americana*, L. (White Ash.) Throughout; a large tree used for ornamental purposes. The wood is strong, is used for oars, and also for flooring.**F.** *pubescens*, Lam. (Red Ash.) A middle size tree, not common in these limits. Sing Sing. (Dr. Fisher.)**F.** *sambucifolia*, Lam. (Black Ash.) Much used in the manufacture of strong baskets.Order 82.—**ARISTOLOCHIACEÆ**. (Birthwort Family.)**Asarum**, Tourn. (Wild Ginger.)**A.** *Canadense*, L. White Plains.

**Aristolochia**, Tourn. Birthwort.**A.** *serpentaria*, L. (White snake root.) Not common.**A.** *Sipho*, L. Her. (Dutchman's Pipe.) Planted for ornament and escaped, near dwellings. (From south-west.)Order 84.—**PHYTOLACCACEÆ**. (Pokeweed Family.)**Phytolacca**, Tourn. (Pokeweed.)**P.** *decandra*, L. Rich grounds and clearings.Order 85.—**CHENOPODIACEÆ**. (Goosefoot Family.)**Chenopodium**, L. (Pigweed.)**C.** *album*, L. A weed in gardens. (Nat. Eu.)**C.** *urbicum*, L. Cultivated grounds. (Nat. Eu.)**C.** *murale*, L. Peekskill. (Adv. Eu.)**C.** *hybridum*, L. About dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)**C.** *Botrys*, L. West Farms. (Adv. Eu.)**C.** *ambrosioides*, L. Waste grounds about dwellings. (Nat. Trop. America.)NOTE.—*The last two species are used in medicine as a vermifuge.***Blitum**, Tourn.**B.** *maritimum*, Nutt. Rye.**B.** *Bonus-Henricus*, Reichenbach. About dwellings. (Adv. Eu.)**Atriplex**, Tourn. (Orache.)**A.** *patula*, L.*Var.* *hastata*, Gray. Rye, and coast.**A.** *arenaria*, Nutt. Rye, and along the coast.**Salicornia**, Tourn. (Glasswort. Samphire.)**S.** *herbacea*, L. Rye, and along the coast.**Suaeda**, Forskal. (Sea Blite.)**S.** *maritima*, Dumortier, Coast.**Salsola**, L. (Saltwort.)**S.** *Kali*, L. Coast of Long Island Sound.Order 86.—**AMARANTACEÆ**. (Amaranth Family.)**Amarantus**, Tourn. (Amaranth.)**A.** *hypochondriacus*, L. Sing Sing. (Dr. Fisher. Trop. America.)**A.** *paniculatus*, L. Sing Sing. (Dr. Fisher. Trop. America.)**A.** *retroflexus*, L. Weed in gardens.**A.** *albus*, L. Wast places near dwellings. (Adv. Trop. America.)**A.** *spinosus*, L. About dwellings. (Adv. Trop. America.)**A.** *pumilus*, Raf. Near Rye. (Mead.)**A.** *viridis*, L. Along Hudson River R. R. track.

**Acnida, L.** (Water Hemp.)**A. cannabina, L.****Order 87.—POLYGONACEÆ. (Buckwheat Family.)****Polygonum, L.** (Knotweed.)**P. orientale, L.** About dwellings. (Adv. India.)**P. Careyi, Olney.** (Bicknell.)**P. Pennsylvanicum, L.** Damp waste places.**P. incarnatum, Ell.** (Bicknell.)**P. Persicaria, L.** Waste places; Common.**P. Hydropiper, L.** Moist grounds.**P. acre, H. B. K.** Wet grounds, common.**P. hydropiperoides, Mx.** Wet places.**P. amphibium, L.** Water and very wet places.**P. Virginicum, L.** Thickets and road-sides.**P. aviculare, L.***Var. erectum, Roth.* About dwellings with the last, but larger.**P. maritimum, L.** Coast of Long Island Sound.**P. tenue, Mx.** Dry soil.**P. arifolium, L.** Wet grounds.**P. sagittatum, L.** Damp grounds.**P. Convolvulus, L.** Cultivated fields. (Nat. Eu.)**P. cilinode, Mx.** Rocks and thickets.**P. dumetorum, L.** Damp places.*Var. scandens, Gray.* Thickets.**Fagopyrum, Tourn.** (Buckwheat.)**F. esculentum, Moench.** Escaped from cultivation. (Adv. Eu.)**Rumex, L.** Dock. (Sorrel.)**R. Britannica, L.** Damp grounds.**R. crispus, L.** (Curled Dock.) Common in grass fields, used for greens, a troublesome weed. (Nat. Eu.)**R. obtusifolius, L.****R. Acetosella, L.** (Horse Sorrel. Field Sorrel.) Troublesome weed in old fields. (Nat. Eu.)**Order 88.—LAURACEÆ. (Laurel Family.)****Sassafras, Nees.****S. officinale, Nees.** Second-class tree in woods.**Lindera, Thunberg.** (Wild Allspice. Spice-wood.)**L. Benzoin, Meisner.** Shady woods.



Order 89.—**THYMELEACEÆ**. (Mezereum Family.)

**Dirca**, L. (Moose-wood. Leatherwood.)

**D. palustris**, L. Woods, used for ornamental purposes ; small tree

Order 91.—**SANTALACEÆ**. (Sandalwood Family.)

**Comandra**, Mutt. (Bastard Toad-flax.)

**C. umbellata**, Nutt. Not rare.

Order 93.—**SAURURACEÆ**. (Lizard's-Tail Family.)

**Saururus**, L. (Lizard's-tail.)

**S. cernuus**, L. Edges of sluggish streams and pools.

**Ceratophyllum**, L.

**C. demersum**, L.

Order 97.—**EUPHORBIACEÆ**. (Spurge Family.)

**Euphorbia**, L. (Spurge.)

**E. polygonifolia**, L. Shores of the Sound.

**E. maculata**, L. Road-sides, common.

**E. hypericifolia**, L. A weed. Fields and gardens.

**E. Cyparissias**, L. About dwellings. (Adv. Eu.)

**Acalypha**, L. (Three-seeded Mercury.)

**A. Virginica**, L. A weed in gardens and waste places about dwellings.

Order 99. **URTICACEÆ**. (Nettle Family.)

**Ulmus**, L. (Elm.)

**U. fulva**, Mx. (Slippery Elm.) This tree is well-known, the inner bark is charged with mucilage, and is used largely for poultices, and as a remedy in throat diseases ; from 30 to 40 feet high.

**U. Americana**, L. (American Elm.) A large tree reaching the height of 80 to 90 feet. On account of the graceful forking of its branches, it is highly valued for ornamental purposes ; when planted in rows along avenues, the forked branches interlace, forming pointed arches.

**U. racemosa**, Thomas. (White Elm. Corky Elm.) A large tree, not so desirable as the last for a shade or ornamental tree, on account of the roughness of its branchlets which are flanked by corky wings.

**Celtis**, Tourn. (Nettle-tree. Hackberry.)

**C. occidentalis**, L. (Hackberry.) River banks.

**Morus**, Tourn. (Mulberry.)

**M. rubra**, L. (Red Mulberry.) Fields and hedge-rows, a small tree from 20 to 30 feet high, bearing edible fruit; the timber is hard and durable, the roots are much used for the knees of rowboats and skiffs.

**M. alba**, L. (White Mulberry.) This tree grows taller than the last, reaching the height of 50 feet; the timber is soft and brash, the fruit is white and edible; but insipid and less desirable than the last.

**Urtica**, Tourn. (Nettle.)

**U. gracilis** Ait. Waste, damp grounds.

**U. dioica**, L. Waste grounds about dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)

**U. urens**, L. Waste grounds near dwellings. (Nat. Eu.)

**Laportea**, Gaudichaud. Damp woods.

**L. Canadensis**, Gaudichaud. Damp woods.

**Pilea**, Lindl. (Clearweed.)

**P. pumila**, Gray. Shady places.

**Bœhmeria**, Jacq. (False Nettle.)

**B. cylindrica**, Willd. Damp shady places.

**Cannabis**, Tourn. (Hemp.)

**C. sativa**, L. Escaped from cultivation. (Adv. Eu.)

**Humulus**, L. (Hop.)

**H. Lupulus**, L. Damp rich copses.

**Order 100.—PLATANACEÆ. (Plane-tree Family.)****Platanus**, L. (Plane-tree. Buttonwood.)

**P. occidentalis**, L. (Sycamore.) This a large tree planted for ornamental purposes, especially in rows by the road-sides.

**Juglans**, L.

**J. cinerea**, L. (Butter-nut.) Grows in the hills, and the rocks seem favorite places for it. The fruit is valuable, and the wood is used for cabinet purposes. It has a coarse grain but takes a good polish.

**J. nigra**, L. (Black walnut.) A large tree reaching the height of 80 to 100 feet; planted about houses for its fruit. The wood is of a dark color and is much used for cabinet work.

**Carya**, Nutt. (Hickory.)

**C. alba**, Nutt. (Shell-bark Hickory. Shag-bark Hickory.) A large straight tree growing to the height of 40 to 70 feet. The fruit is highly valued on account of its excellence, and the thinness of the shell. The wood splits easily, and makes excellent fuel.

**C. sulcata**, Nutt. (Thick Shell-bark. Hickory.) Large tree reaching the height of 80 feet, the fruit is much larger than the fruit of *C. Alba*. It is not common in this region, and has undoubtedly sprung from seed brought from the West. The wood and bark is much like those of *C. Alba*.

**C. tomentosa**, Nutt. (White-heart Hickory. Bull-nut.) A large tree, nuts with very thick shells. Wood with straight grain, splits well, and makes good fuel.

**C. porcina**, Nutt. (Pig-nut. Broom Hickory.) The fruit, not desirable. The wood is tough, and is used for axe and hammer handles, for hubs and spokes of wagon wheels. A large tree sometimes reaching the height of 100 feet, common.

**C. amara**, Nutt. (Bitter-nut or Swamp Hickory.) Large tree, reaching 40 to 60 feet in height; wood not valuable for timber, though it makes good fuel. The fruit has a thin shell and is bitter, common.

### Order 102.—CUPULIFERÆ. (Oak Family.)

#### **Quercus**, L. (Oak.)

**Q. alba**, L. (White Oak.) A large tree reaching the height of 75 feet, or more; and not unfrequently attains a diameter of 6 feet. A very valuable tree on account of the durability of its wood, common.

**Q. obtusiloba**, Mx. (Post-oak or Box White-oak.) Small tree, wood hard and durable, used for axe and pick handles; also for fence posts.

**Q. macrocarpa**, Mx. (Bur-oak. Mossy-cup. White-oak.) A middle sized tree, 40 to 50 high, forms symmetrical head. Have not seen this tree in these limits, and put it down on the authority of Dr. Fisher, of Sing Sing.

**Q. bicolor**, Willd. (Swamp White-oak.) A fine tree, reaching the height of 70 feet. Its wood furnishes durable timber and excellent fuel.

**Q. Prinos**, L. (Chestnut-oak.) Straight growing tree of middle size in these limits; the wood makes excellent fuel.

*Var. acuminata*, Mx. (Yellow Chestnut Oak.) Leaves like those of the chestnut tree. A middle sized tree in these limits; wood soft, used for fuel.

**Q. coccinea**, Wang. (Scarlet Oak.) Large tree, wood makes good fuel; and the bark much used in tanning leather.

*Var. tinctoria*. (Yellow Bark Oak, Black Oak.) Large tree reaching sometimes to the height of 100 feet when growing in the forest. Wood used for fuel and the bark for tanning.

**Q. rubra**, L. (Red Oak.) Large tree, coarse grained, used for fuel.

**Q. palustris**, Du Roi. (Pin Oak, Spanish Oak, Water Oak.) Wet grounds; reaching the height of 50 feet or more in these limits, and three to four feet in diameter; timber hard and close, difficult to split.

#### **Castanea**, Tourn. (Chestnut.)

**C. vesca**, L. woods and fence rows. Common. A large tree, valued on account of its excellent fruit and durable timber; much used for fencing, and in late years, largely for cabinet work; the grain is coarse, but takes a good polish; reaches the height of 90 feet.

**Fagus**, Tourn. (Beech.)

**F. ferruginea**, Ait. (American Beech.) Large tree, 40 to 70 feet in height; forms a graceful head, when growing separately, and on that account is a desirable tree for ornamentable purposes; wood makes excellent fuel.

**Corylus**, Tourn. (Hazel-nut.)

**C. Americana**, Walt. (Wild Hazel-nut.) Thickets and road-sides; fruit edible. A shrub 5 to 8 feet high.

**C. rostrata**, Ait. (Beaked Hazel-nut.) A shrub like the last; fruit edible.

**Ostrya**, Michx.

**O. Virginica**, Willd. (Hop-Hornbeam. Iron-wood.) Second class tree, found in the borders of woods, and in copses; sometimes used for ornamental purposes.

**Carpinus**, L. (Hornbeam. Iron-wood.)

**C. Americana**, Mx. (American Hornbeam, Blue Beech, Water Beech.) A second class tree, reaching the height of 20 feet; used for ornamental purposes, and for hedging.

**Order 103.—MYRICACEÆ. (Sweet Gale Family.)****Myrica**, (Bayberry. Wax-Myrtle.)

**M. cerifera**, L. (Bayberry.) Shrub, sometime used for ornamental purposes, the pulverized leaves used for snuff for Catarrh; and the bark of the root enters largely into the Thompsonian remedies.

**Comptonia**, Solander. (Sweet-Fern.)

**C. asplenifolia**, Ait. Road-side, in sunny places.

**Order 104.—BETULACEÆ. Birch Family.)****Betula**, Tourn. (Birch.)

**B. lenta**, L. (Sweet Birch, Black Birch.) A large tree, making excellent fuel, and used also for cabinet work.

**B. lutea**, Mx. f. (Yellow Birch.) Large tree, sometimes reaching the height of 80 feet, and 3 to 4 feet in diameter; rare in these limits; damp cold woods; used in Nova Scotia, in ship building. The keel of the largest ship ever built in Nova Scotia, was Birch.

**B. alba**.

*Var. populifolia*, Spach. (White Birch.) A small slender tree.

**B. nigra**, L. (Red Birch.) Large tree growing along river banks, good for fuel.

**Alnus**, Tourn. (Alder.)

**A. incana**, Willd. (Speckled Alder.) A shrubby tree 15 to 18 feet high; wet places.

**A. serrulata**, Ait. (Smooth Alder.) Shrub 10 feet high; wet grounds and swampy places.



Order 105.—**SALICACEÆ.** (Willow Family.)**Salix**, Tourn. (Willow.)

- S.** *candida*, Willd. (Hoary Willow. Shrub 6 feet high.  
**S.** *tristis*, Ait. (Dwarf Gray Willow.) Shrub 2 feet high; wet places.  
**S.** *discolor*, Muhl. (Glaucous Willow.) Banks of brooks; 15 feet high.  
**S.** *sericea*, Marshall. (Silkey Willow.) Banks of streams.  
**S.** *viminialis*, L. (Basket Willow.) Shrub growing in damp ground. (Adv. Eu.)  
**S.** *cordata*, Muhl. (Heart-leaved Willow,) Small tree. (Leggett.)  
**S.** *livida*, Wahl.  
*Var.* *occidentalis*, Grey. Shrub 10 feet high. (Leggett.)  
**S.** *petiolaris*, Smith. Small tree 15 to 20 feet high.  
**S.** *lucida*, Muhl. Along streams, 15 feet high.  
**S.** *nigra*, Marsh.  
*Var.* *falcata*, Gray. Tree 30 feet high.  
**S.** *fragilis*, L. Large tree, wet grounds, and river-banks. (Adv. Eu.)  
**S.** *alba*, L.

*Var.* *vitellina*, Gray. (Yellow Willow.) A large tree, along streams and river-banks. (Adv. Eu.)

**Populus**, Tourn. (Poplar, Aspen.)

- P.** *tremuloides*, Mx. (Aspen Leaf.) Large tree.  
**P.** *grandidentata*, Mx. Large tree, taller than the last.  
**P.** *balsamifera*, L. Balsam, Poplar. (Tacamahac.)  
*Var.* *candicans*, Gray. (Balm of Gilead.) Large tree.

**P.** *alba*, L. (Able Tree.) Shade tree, introduced from France, by nursery-men, sometimes called silver leaved poplar.

NOTE.—*The whole genus suckers profusely, and is on that account objectionable for lawn purposes.*

Order 106.—**CONIFERÆ.** (Pine Family.)**Pinus**, Tourn. (Pine.)

- P.** *rigida*, Miller. (Pitch Pine.) Large tree, timber hard and filled with resin.  
**P.** *inops*, Ait. (Scrub Pine.) Small tree, wood hard but not large enough for valuable timber. Sing Sing, Dr. Fisher. (Must have been planted.)  
**P.** *mitis*, Mx. (Yellow Pine.) Large tree, good timber.  
**P.** *strobus*, L. (White Pine.) Largest of the Genus, growing to the height of 150 feet, makes excellent boards and planks.

**Abies**, Tourn. (Spruce Fir.)

**A.** *nigra*, Poir. (Black Spruce.) Large tree furnishing excellent timber. North Salem. (Dr. Mead.)

**A.** *Canadensis*, Mx. (Hemlock.) Large tree, used for ornamental and Hedging purposes. Largely used for lumber.

**Larix**, Tourn. (Larch.)

**L. Americana**, Mx. (Larch, Black Larch, Hackmatack, Tamarack.) A large tree, used for ornamental purposes, and for lumber.

**Thuja**, Tourn. (Arbor Vitæ.)

**T. occidentalis**, L. (American Arbor Vitæ.) This tree is also called Cedar, in the north where it is used in the manufacture of barrels. It is a favorite ornamental tree; largely used in hedges.

**Juniperus**, L. (Juniper.)

**J. Virginiana**, L. (Red Cedar.) A tree from 15 to 40 feet high in these limits! wood is close-grained and takes a good polish; makes durable fence posts.

## CLASS II.—MONOCOTYLEDONOUS OR ENDOGENOUS PLANTS.

### Order 107.—ARACEÆ, (Arum Family.)

**Arisæma**, Martius. (Indian Turnip.)

**A. triphyllum**, Torr. Damp places.

**Peltandra**, Raf.

**P. Virginica**, Raf. Shoal water, or very wet places. (Leggett.)

**Calla**, L. (Water Arum.)

**C. palustris**, L. Cold swampy land. Sing Sing, (Dr. Fisher.)

**Symplocarpus**, Salisb. (Skunk Cabbage.)

**S. foetidus**, Salisb. Damp grounds; common

**Acorus**, L. (Sweet Flag. Calamus.)

**A. Calamus**, L. Margins of small streams in swampy places.

### Order 108.—LEMNACEÆ. (Duckweed Family.)

**Lemna**, L. (Duckweed. Duck's-meat.)

**L. polyrrhiza**, L. Ponds. (Leggett.)

### Order 109.—TYPHACEÆ. (Cat-tail Family.)

**Typha**, Tourn. (Cat-tail Flag.)

**T. latifolia**, L. Wet places.

**T. angustifolia**, L. Wet places.

**Sparganium**, Tourn. (Bur-reed)

**S. eurycarpum**, Engelm. (Bicknell.)

**S. simplex**, Hudson. Not rare.

Order 110.—**NAIDACEÆ**. (Pondweed Family.)

**Naias**, L. (Naiad.)

**N.** *flexilis*, Rostk. (Bicknell.)

**Zannichellia**, Micheli. (Horned Pondweed.)

**Z.** *palustris*, L. Lower part of the county, now New York. (Bicknell.)

**Zostera**, L. (Eel-grass. Grass-wrack.)

**Z.** *marina*, L.

**Ruppia**, L. (Ditch-grass.)

**R.** *maritima*, L. Shoal water along the coast.

**Potamogeton**, Tourn. (Pondweed.)

**P.** *natans*, L. Ditches and slow streams.

**P.** *Oakesianus*, Robbins. Ponds and ditches.

**P.** *hybridus*, Mx. (Bicknell.)

**P.** *amplifolius*, Tuckerman. Slow rivers.

**P.** *perfoliatus*, L. (Bicknell.)

Order 111.—**ALISMACEÆ**. (Water Plantain Family.)

**Alisma**, L. (Water Plantain.)

**A.** *Plantago*, L. Shallow water and edges of streams.

**Sagittaria**, L. (Arrow Head.)

**S.** *variabilis*, Eng. Wet places.

*Var.* *latifolia*, Gray. With the last.

*Var.* *diversifolia*, Gray. With the last.

*Var.* *angustifolia*, Gray. With the last.

**S.** *calycina*, Eng. Water in flooded places.

*Var.* *spongiosa*, Gray. Along brooks with the last.

**S.** *heterophylla*, Pursh. Peekskill. (Le Roy.)

**S.** *pusilla*, Nutt. Peekskill. (Le Roy.)

Order 112.—**HYDROCHARIDACEÆ**. (Frog's-bitt Family.)

**Anacharis**, Richard. (Water-weed.)

**A.** *Canadensis*, Planchon. Slow streams.

**Vallisneria**, Micheli. (Eel-grass.)

**V.** *spiralis*, L. Slow waters. Along the coast.

Order 114.—**ORCHIDACEÆ**. (Orchis Family.)

**Orchis**, L. (Orchis.)

**O.** *spectabilis*, L. Shady woods.

**Habenaria**, Willd., R. Br. (Rein-Orchis.)

- H.** tridentata, Hook. (Leggett.)
- H.** virescens, Spreng. Peekskill.
- H.** viridis, R. Br. (Leggett.)
- H.** Hookeri, Torr. Borders of woods.
- H.** orbiculata, Torr. Pine and Hemlock woods.
- H.** ciliaris, R. Br. Wet places ; not common.
- H.** lacera, R. Br. Damp thickets.
- H.** psycodes, Gray. Wet grounds.

**Goodyera**, R. Br. (Rattlesnake-Plantain.)

- G.** pubescens, R. Br. Shady woods.

**Spiranthes**, Richard. (Ladies' Tresses.)

- S.** latifolia Torr. White Plains.
- S.** cernua, Richard. Damp roadsides.
- S.** graminea, Lindl. (Bicknell.)
- Var.* Walteri, Gray. North of Kings Bridge, (Bicknell.)
- S.** gracilis, Bigelow. White Plains.
- S.** simplex, Gray. Woodlawn Cemetery. (Bicknell.)

**Listera**, R. Br. (Twayblade.)

- L.** convallarioides, Hook. Damp woods.

**Arethusa**, Gronov. (Arethusa.)

- A.** bulbosa, L. Bogs.

**Pogonia**, Juss.

- P.** ophioglossoides, Nutt. White Plains
- P.** verticillata, R. Br. White Plains.

**Calopogon**, R. Br.

- C.** pulchellus, R. Br. Bogs.

**Liparis**, Richard.

- L.** liliifolia, Richard. Bogs.
- L.** Loeselii, Richard. (Leggett.)

**Corallorhiza**, Haller. (Coral-root.)

- C.** multiflora, Nutt. Woods.

**Aplectrum**, Nutt. (Adam and Eve.)

- A.** hyemale, Nutt. Rich wood.

**Cypripedium**, L. (Moccason-Flower.)

- C.** parviflorum, Salisb. Damp woods.
- C.** pubescens, Willd. Boggy places.
- C.** spectabile, Swartz. Bogs.
- C.** acaule, Ait. Dry woods.



Order 115.—**AMARYLLIDACEÆ**.—(Amaryllis Family.)**Hypoxys**, L. (Star-grass.)*H. erecta*, L. Meadows and woods.Order 116.—**HÆMODORACEÆ**. (Bloodwort Family.)**Aletris**, L.*A. farinosa*, L. (Bicknell.)Order 118.—**IRIDACEÆ**. (Iris Family.)**Iris**, L. (Flower-de-Luce.)*I. versicolor*, L. (Blue Flag.) Wet places.**Pardanthus**, Ker.*P. Chinensis*, Ker. Escaped from cultivation. (Bicknell.)**Sisyrinchium**, L. (Blue-eyed Grass.)*S. Bermudiana*, L. Among grass.Order 119.—**DIOSCOREACEÆ**. (Yam Family.)**Dioscorea**, Plumier. (Yam.)*D. villosa*, L. Thickets.Order 120.—**SMILACEÆ**. (Smilax Family.)**Smilax**, Tourn. (Greenbriar. Cat-briar.)*S. rotundifolia*, L. Damp thickets.*Var. quadrangularis*, Gray. With the last.*S. glauca*, Walt. Dry thickets.*S. herbacea*, L. Damp meadow edges.Order 121.—**LILIACEÆ**. Lily Family.**Trillium**, L. (Three-leaved Nightshade.)*T. erectum*, L. Woods.*T. cernuum*, L. Moist woods.*T. erythrocarpum*, Mx. North Salem. (Mead.)**Modeola**, Gronov. (Indian Cucumber-root.)*M. Virginica*, L. Rich damp woods.**Melanthium**, L.*M. Virginicum*, L. Meadows, and uplands also. Near White Plains.**Veratrum**, Tourn. (False Hellebore.)*V. viride*, Ait. Edges of meadows.

**Chamælirium**, Willd. (Devil's-Bit.)**C. luteum**, L. Low grounds; Scarsdale. (Miss McCabe.)**Uvularia**, L. (Bellwort.)**U. perfoliata**, L. Not rare.**U. sessilifolia**, L. Edges of woods and along fences.**U. puberula**, Mx. Peekskill. (Le Roy.)**Streptopus**, Mx. (Twisted-stalk.)**S. amplexifolius**, DC. Damp woods.**Smilacina**, Desf. (False Solomon's Seal.)**S. racemosa**, Desf. Copses and along fences.**S. stellata**, Desf. Along fences,**S. trifolia**, Desf. Damp places.**S. bifolia**, Ker. Moist woods.**Polygonatum**, Tourn. (Solomon's Seal.)**P. biflorum**, Ell. Edges of woods.**P. giganteum**, Dietrich. (Bicknell.)**P. latifolium**, Desf.**Asparagus**, L.**A. officinalis**, L. Along the coast. (Adv. Eu.)**Lilium**, L. (Lily.)**L. Philadelphicum**, L. Fields.**L. Canadense**, L. Meadows.**L. superbum**, L. Low grounds.**Erythronium**, L. (Dog's-tooth Violet.)**E. Americanum**, Smith. Damp Copses.**Ornithogalum**, Tourn.**O. umbellatum**, L. Leggett. (Nat. Eu.)**Allium**, L. (Onion Garlic.)**A. tricoccum**, Ait. Woods.**A. vineale**, L. Moist meadows and pastures. (Nat. Eu.)**A. Canadense**, Kalm. Damp meadows and rich pasture grounds.**Hemerocallis**, L. (Day-Lily.)**H. fulva**, L. Roadsides. (Adv. Eu.)

## Order 122.—JUNCACEÆ. (Rush Family.)

**Luzula**, DC. (Wood-Rush.)**L. pilosa**, Willd. Woods.**L. campestris**, DC. Fields and edges of woods.

**Juncus, L. (Bog-Rush.)**

- J. effusus, L.** (Soft-Rush.) Wet places ; common.
- J. Balticus, Dethard.** Along the coast of the Sound.
- J. Roemerianus, Scheele.** Coast of the Sound.
- J. marginatus, Rostkovius.** Coast of the Sound.
- J. bufonius, L.** Damp grounds.
- J. Gerardi, Loisel.** (Bicknell.)
- J. tenuis, Willd.** Damp fields and road-sides.
- J. pelocarpus, E. Myer.** Along the coast of the Sound.
- J. militaris, Bigel.** Bogs.
- J. acuminatus, Mx.** Wet sandy ground.
- J. Canadensis, J. Gay.** (Leggett.)

**Order 123.—PONTEDERIACEÆ. (Pickerel-weed Family.)****Pontederia, L. (Pickerel-weed.)**

- P. cordata, L.** Edges of muddy pools.
- Var. angustifolia, Gray.* (Mead.)

**Order 127.—CYPERACEÆ. (Sedge Family.)****Cyperus, L.**

- C. diandrus, Torr.** Damp places.
- C. inflexus, Muhl.** Sandy shores.
- C. dentatus, Torr.** Sandy wet ground.
- C. strigosus, L.** Fertile soil.
- C. Michauxianus, Schultes.** (Leggett.)

**Dulichium, Richard.**

- D. spathaceum, Pers.** Near ponds and sluggish streams.

**Fuirena, Rottböll. (Umbrella-grass.)**

- F. squarrosa, Mx.** Wet sand.

**Eleocharis, R. Br. (Spike-rush.)**

- E. equisetoides, Torr.** In shallow pools and flooded places.
- E. quadrangulata, R. Br.** East Long Pond. (Mead.)
- E. tuberculosa, R. Br.** Coast of the Sound.
- E. obtusa, Schultes.** Muddy edges of slow streams.
- E. olivacea, Torr.** (Leggett.)
- E. palustris, R. Br.** In flooded places.
- E. tenuis, Schultes.** Wet grounds.
- E. acicularis, R. Br.** Edges of ponds and slow streams.

**Scirpus, L. (Bulrush.)**

- S. pungens, Vahl.** Along the salt meadows, in the edges of pools.
- S. Olneyi, Gray.** Salt marshes, coast of the Sound.
- S. Torreyi, Olney.** Along the coast of the Sound.
- S. validus, Vahl.** Flooded places.

- S. debilis*, Pursh. Swampy places.
- S. maritimus*, L. Borders of salt marshes along the Sound.
- S. fluviatilis*, Gray. Edges of Rye Lake.
- S. atrovirens*, Muhl. Wet swampy places.

**Eriophorum**, L.

- E. Virginicum*, L. Bogs, and wet grounds.

**Fimbristylis**, Vahl.

- F. spadicea*, Vahl. coast of the Sound.
- F. autumnalis*, Roem.—Schultz. Wet grounds.

**Rhynchospora**, Vahl, (Beak-Rush.)

- R. alba*, Vahl, Bogs. Wet grounds.
- R. glomerata*, Vahl. Wet undrained lands.

**Cladium**, P. Browne. (Twig-Rush.)

- C. mariscoides*, Torr.

**Scleria**, L, (Nut-Rush.)

- S. triglomerata*, Mx. Swampy lands; common.
- S. reticularis*, Mx. Edges of ponds and slow streams.

**Carex**, L. (Sedge.)

- C. polytrichoides*, Muhl. Bogs. Common.
- C. bromoides*, Schk. Wet grounds.
- C. vulpinoidea*, Mx. Damp meadows.
- C. alopecoidea*, Tuckerman. Damp woods.
- C. sparganioides*, Muhl. Damp lands.
- C. cephaloidea*, Dew. Dry woods and fields.
- C. Muhlenbergii*, Schk. Dry fields.
- C. rosea*, Schk. Damp woods.
- C. retroflexa*, Muhl. Moist grounds.
- C. tenella*, Schk. Swamps and wet places.
- C. canescens*, L. Wet grounds.
- C. stellulata*, L.
- Var. scirpoides*, Gray. Wet grounds.
- C. scoparia*, Schk. Damp meadows.
- C. lagopodioides*, Schk. Wet shady places.
- C. cristata*, Schk. Wet grounds.
- C. foenea*, Willd.
- Var. sabulorum*, Gray. Coast.
- C. straminea*, Schk. Edges of woods.
- C. stricta*, Lam. Wet places.
- C. crinita*, Lam. Along streams.
- C. granularis*, Muhl. Wet places.
- C. pallescens*, L. Meadows.
- C. conoidea*, Schk. Moist meadows.
- C. grisea*, Willd. Moist ground.
- C. gracillima*, Schk. Wet grounds.



- C. virescens*, Muhl. Dry woods.
- C. triceps*, Mx. Open woods.
- C. plantaginea*, Lam. Shady woods.
- C. platyphylla*, Carey. Damp woods.
- C. retrocurva*, Dew. Dry woods and thickets.
- C. digitalis*, Willd. Edges of open woods.
- C. laxiflora*, Lam. Woods.
- C. oligocarpa*, Schk. Woods.
- C. pedunculata*, Muhl. Woods, fields.
- C. Emmonsii*, Dew. Open woods and copses.
- C. Pennsylvanica*, Lam. Hill-sides and open woods.
- C. varia*, Muhl. Copses and open woods.
- C. pubescens*, Muhl. Damp open wood-lands.
- C. miliacea*, Muhl. Wet grounds.
- C. debilis*, Mx. Moist lands,
- C. lanuginosa*, Mx. Wet grounds.
- C. Pseudo-Cyperus*, L. Borders of ponds.
- C. hystricina*, Willd. Wet grass land.
- C. tentaculata*, Muhl.
- C. intumescens*, Rudge. Wet grass lands.
- C. lupalina*, Muhl. Wet grounds.
- P. Squarrosus*, L. Undrained lands.

#### Order 128.—GRAMINEÆ. (Grass Family.)

##### **Leersia**, Solander. (White Grass.)

- L. Virginica*, Willd. Damp Woods.
- L. oryzoides*, Mx. Wet grounds.

##### **Zizania**, Gronov. (Indian Rice.)

- Z. aquatica*, L. Borders of sluggish streams.

##### **Phleum**, L. (Timothy.)

- P. pratense*, L. Pastures and mowing grounds. (Nat. Eu.)

##### **Vilfa**, Adans. (Rush Grass.)

- V. aspera*, Beauv.
- V. vaginæflora*, Torr. Old sandy fields,

##### **Sporobolus**, R. Br. (Drop-seed Grass.)

- S. serotinus*, Gray. Wet sandy land.

##### **Agrostis**, L. (Bent-Grass.)

- A. scabra*, Willd. Dry places.
- A. vulgaris*, With. (Red-top.) Grown for hay and pasture in damp lands.
- A. alba*, L. (White Bent-grass.) Used for hay as the above.

##### **Cinna**, L. (Wood Reed-grass.)

- C. arundinacea*, L.
- Var. pendula*, Gray. Shady woods.

**Muhlenbergia**, Schreber. (Drop-seed Grass.)

- M.** *glomerata*, Trin. Boggy places.
- M.** *Mexicana*, Trin. Damp undrained grounds.
- M.** *sylvatica*, Torr. & Gray. Wet woods.
- M.** *Willdenovii*, Trin. Shady rocks.
- M.** *diffusa*, Schreber. Dry woods.

**Brachyelytrum**, Beauv.

- B.** *aristatum*, Beauv.

**Calamagrostis**, Adans. (Reed Bent-grass.)

- C.** *Canadensis*, Beauv. Damp lands.
- C.** *arenaria*, Toth. Coast of the Sound.

**Stipa**, L. (Feather-grass.)

- S.** *avenacea*, L. (Oat-grass.) Sandy woods.

**Aristida**, L. (Triple-awned Grass.)

- A.** *dichotoma*, Mx. (Poverty Grass.) Barren fields.
- A.** *gracilis*, Ell. Near the coast of the Sound.

**Spartina**, Schreber. (Marsh Grass.)

- S.** *polystachya*, Muhl. (Leggett.)
- S.** *juncea*, Willd. Beach of the Sound.
- S.** *stricta*, Roth.
- Var.* *glabra*, Gray. Along the Sound.
- Var.* *alterniflora*. Shore of the Sound.

**Cynodon**, Richard. (Scutch-grass.)

- C.** *Dactylon*, Pers. (Nat. Eu.)

**Eleusine**, Gært. (Yard-Grass.)

- E.** *Indica*, Gært. Door-yards.

**Dactylis**, L. (Orchard-Grass.)

- D.** *glomerata*, L. Grown for hay. (Nat. Eu.)

**Koeleria**, Pers.

- K.** *cristata*, Pers. Dry upland

**Eatonia**, Raf.

- E.** *Pennsylvanica*, Gray. Damp woods and meadows.

**Glyceria**, R. Br., Trin. (Manna-Grass.)

- G.** *Canadensis*, Trin. Wet grounds.
- G.** *obtusata*, Trin. Swampy places.
- G.** *nervata*, Trin. Damp grounds.
- G.** *aquatica*, Smith. Wet grounds.
- G.** *fluitans*, R. Br. Flooded grounds.
- G.** *distans*, Wahl. (Leggett.)

**Brizopyrum**, Link. (Spike-grass.)

**B.** *spicatum*, Hook. Shore of the Sound.

**Poa**, L. (Meadow-Grass.)

**P.** *annua*, L. Cultivated grounds.

**P.** *compressa*, L. Dry, poor land.

**P.** *serotina*, Ehrhart. (Fowl Meadow-Grass.)

**P.** *pratensis*, L. This is the grass used in Bourbon County, Kentucky, for pasture, and called Blue-grass; it is misnamed, for it is green. It grows well in lime-stone regions, and makes excellent pasture.

**P.** *trivialis*, L. Damp meadows. (Nat. Eu.)

**Eragrostis**, Beauv.

**E.** *poæoides*, Beauv. Sandy grounds. (Nat. Eu.)

**E.** *pilosa*, Beauv. Sterile grounds. (Nat. Eu.)

**E.** *capillaris*, Nees. Dry soil. Common.

**E.** *pectinacea*, Gray. Sandy land near the Sound.

**Festuca**, L.

**F.** *tenella*, Willd. (Leggett.)

**F.** *elatiar*, L. (Nat. Eu.)

*Var.* *pratensis*, Gray.

**F.** *nutans*, Willd.

**Bromus**, L. (Broom-Grass.)

**B.** *secalinus*, L. (Cheat. or Chess-Grass.) Troublesome weed in grain fields, (Adv. Eu.)

**B.** *ciliatus*, L. Damp wood-lands.

**B.** *Sterilis*, L. (Leggett.) (Nat. Eu.)

**Phragmites**, Trin. (Reed.)

**P.** *communis*, Trin. Borders of ponds.

**Lolium**, L. (Darnel.)

**L.** *perenne*, L. Used for pasture. (Nat. Eu.)

**Triticum**, L.

**T.** *repens*, L. (Quick-Grass.) A troublesome weed in gardens.

**Hordeum**, L. (Barley.)

**H.** *jubatum*, L. Shore of the Sound.

**Elymus**, L. (Wild Rye.)

**E.** *Virginicus*, L. Banks of streams.

**E.** *Canadensis*, L. Banks of streams.

**E.** *Hystrix*, (Bottle-brush Grass. Hedge-Hog Grass.)

**Danthonia**, DC. (Wild-oat Grass.)

**D.** *spicata*, Beauv. Among rocks.

**Aira**, L. (Hair-Grass.)

**A.** *flexuosa*, L. Dry soil.

**Holcus**, L. (Meadow Soft-Grass.)

**H.** lanatus, L. (Velvet-Grass.)

**Hierochloa**, Gmelin. (Holy-Grass.)

**H.** borealis, Roem. & Schultes. (Leggett.)

**Anthoxanthum**, L. (Sweet Vernal-Grass.)

**A.** odoratum. Pastures and lawns. (Nat. Eu.)

**Phalaris**, L. (Canary-Grass.)

**P.** arundinacea, L. Wet grounds.

**Milium**. (Millet-Grass.)

**M.** effusum, L. Damp woods.

**Paspalum**, L.

**P.** setaceum, Mx. Sandy fields.

**P.** læve, Mx. Frequent.

**Panicum**, L. (Panic-Grass.)

**P.** filiforme, L.

**P.** sanguinale, L. (Crab-Grass.) Weed in cultivated grounds. (Nat. Eu.)

**P.** agrostoides, Spreng. Frequent. Wet grounds.

**P.** proliferum, Lam.

**P.** capillare L. Cultivated fields; common.

**P.** virgatum, L.

**P.** latifolium, L. Damp thickets.

**P.** clandestinum, L. Damp thickets.

**P.** pauciflorum, Ell.

**P.** dichotomum, L. Damp grounds.

**P.** depauperatum, Muhl. Hills; common.

**P.** Crus-galli, L. (Barn-yard Grass.) (Nat. Eu.)

**Setaria**, Beauv. (Fox-tail Grass.)

**S.** verticillata, Beauv. About dwellings. (Adv. Eu.)

**S.** glauca, Beauv. In grain stubble. (Adv. Eu.)

**S.** viridis, Beauv. Cultivated grounds. (Adv. Eu.)

**Cenchrus**, L. (Bur-Grass.)

**C.** tubuloides, L. Near the coast of the Sound.

**Andropogon**, L. (Beard-Grass.)

**A.** furcatus, Muhl.

**A.** scoparius, Mx. (Leggett.)

**A.** Virginicus, L. Sandy soil.

**Sorghum**, Pers. (Broom-Corn.)

**S.** nutans, Gray. (Leggett.)



*SERIES II.***CRYPTOGAMOUS OR FLOWERLESS PLANTS.****CLASS III.—ACROGENS.****Order 129.—EQUISETACEÆ. (Horsetail Family.)****Equisetum**, (Scouring Rush.)**E.** *arvense*, L. Wet banks. White Plains**E.** *limosum*, L. West Farms. (Wood.)**E.** *hyemale*, L. Wet banks; common.**Order 130.—FILICES. (Ferns.)****Polypodium**, L.**P.** *vulgare*, L. Shaded rocks.**Adiantum**, L. (Maiden's hair.)**A.** *pedatum*, L. Shady woods.**Pteris**, L. (Brake.)**P.** *acculina*. Thickets; common.**Cheilanthes**, Swartz. (Lip-Fern.)**C.** *vestita*, Swartz. Among rocks.**Woodwardia**, Smith. (Chain-Fern.)**W.** *Virginica*, Smith. Swamps.**Asplenium**, L. (Spleenwort.)**A.** *Trichomanes*, L. Shaded rocks.**A.** *ebeneum*, Ait. Woods.**A.** *thelypteroides*, Mx. Damp woods.**A.** *Filix-fœmina*, Bernh. Damp woods.**Camptosorus**, Link. (Walking-Fern.)**C.** *rhizophyllus*, Link. On gneissic rocks; sparingly about White Plains.**Phegopteris**, Fee. (Beech-Fern.)**P.** *hexagonoptera*, Fee. Borders of Woods.**Aspidium**, Swartz. (Wood-Fern.)**A.** *Thelypteris*, Swartz. Marshy places.

- A. Noveboracense**, Swartz. Swamps and damp woods.
- A. spinulosum**, Swartz.
  - Var. intermedium*, Gray. About White Plains.
  - Var. dilatatum*, Gray. About White Plains.
- A. cristatum**, Swartz. Wet thickets.
  - Var. Clintonianum*, Gray. About White Plains.
- A. Goldianum**, Hook. Moist woods.
- A. marginale**, Swartz. Shaded rocks.
- A. acrostichoides**, Swartz. Near White Plains.
  - Var. incisum*, Gray. White Plains.

**Cystopteris**, Bernh. (Bladder-Fern.)

- C. fragilis**, Bernh. Shaded Rocks.

**Struthiopteris**, Willd. (Ostrich Fern.)

- S. Germanica**, Willd. White Plains.

**Onoclea**, L. (Sensitive-Fern.)

- O. sensibilis**, L. White Plains.
  - Var. obtusilobata*, Torr. White Plains.

**Woodsia**, R. Brown.

- W. obtusa**, Torr. Cliffs and banks.
- W. ilvensis**, R. Brown. (Leggett.)

**Dicksonia**, L'Her.

- D. punctilobula**, Kunze. Damp shady places.

**Osmunda**, L. (Flowering Fern.)

- O. regalis**, L. Wet woods and thickets.
- O. Claytoniana**, L. Damp grounds.
- O. cinnamomea**, L. Swamps and low thickets.

**Botrychium**, Swartz. (Moonwort.)

- B. lanceolatum**, Angström.
- B. Virginicum**, Swartz. Throughout.
- B. lunarioides**, Swartz.
  - Var. obliquum*, Gray. White Plains.

Order 131.—LYCOPODIACEÆ. (Club-Moss Family.)

**Lycopodium**, L. (Club-Moss.)

- L. lucidulum**, Mx. Damp woods.
- L. dendroideum**, Mx. Not common.
- L. clavatum**, L. Woods.
- L. complanatum**, L. White Plains.

**Selaginella**, Beauv.

- S. rupestris**, Spring. Dry rocks.
- S. apus**, Spring. Damp shady places.

## A D E N D A .

### ADDITIONS TO CATALOGUE OF PLANTS.

**Lechea**, L. (p. 779.)

**L.** Nova-Caesarea, Aust. (Leggett.)

**Genista**. (p. 784.)

**G.** tinctoria. Peekskill. State. Flora and Mead. (Adv. Eu.)

**Tephrosia**, Pers. (p. 784.)

**T.** Virginiana, Pers. Throgg's Neck. (Hall.)

**Habenaria**. (p. 815.)

**H.** viridis, R. Br.

*Var.* bracteata, Reich. (Leggett.)

**Schollera**, schreber. (p. 818, after Pontederia.)

**S.** graminea, Willd. Croton River. (Mead.)

Order 126.—**ERIOCAULONACEÆ**. (Pipewort Family.) (p. 818)

**Eriocaulon**, L. (Pipewort.)

**E.** Septangulare. Withering. Ponds—common.

**Carex**. (p. 819.)

**C.** stipata, Muhl.







New York Botanical Garden Library

F127.W5 B64 1881 v.1

Bolton, Robert/The history of the severa

gen



3 5185 00070 7925

